

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Brigham Young University

















974.753  
Sm58e

HISTORY  
OF  
ESSEX COUNTY

*[WITH ILLUSTRATIONS AND BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES  
OF SOME OF ITS PROMINENT MEN AND PIONEERS]*

EDITED BY  
H. P. SMITH

---

SYRACUSE, N. Y.  
D. MASON & CO., PUBLISHERS  
1885

D. MASON & CO.,  
PUBLISHERS AND PRINTERS,  
63 WEST WATER ST.,  
SYRACUSE, N. Y

**THE LIBRARY  
BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY  
PROVO, UTAH**



# INTRODUCTORY.

---

WHILE it may seem to the uninitiated a task involving but little difficulty to prepare for publication a work no more comprehensive in character than this volume, and containing merely the history of a single county, still it is not out of place here to assure all such readers that the work is one demanding a vast amount of labor and research, watchful care, untiring patience and fair discrimination. This need not be said to any person who has had experience in similar work. In attempting the production of a creditable history of Essex county the publishers and the editor did not underestimate the difficulties of their task, and came to it fully imbued with a clear idea of its magnitude and determination to execute it in such a manner that it should receive the general commendation of all into whose hands it should fall. It is believed that this purpose has been substantially carried out, and that, while a perfect historical work has never yet been published, this one will be found to contain so few imperfections that the most critical readers will be satisfied.

It is a part of the plans of the publishers in the production of county histories to secure, as far as possible, local assistance, either as writers, or in the revision of all manuscripts; the consequence being that the work bears a local character which could not otherwise be secured, and, moreover, comes from the press far more complete and perfect than could possibly be the case were it entrusted wholly to the efforts of comparative strangers to the locality in hand. In carrying out this plan in this county the editor has been tendered such generous co-operation and assistance of various kinds that to merely mention all who have thus aided is impossible; the satisfaction of having assisted in the production of a commendable public enterprise must be their present reward. But there are some who have given so generously of their labor and time towards the consummation of this work, that to leave them unmentioned would be simple injustice. Of such are Drs. Lyman Barton and Safford E.

Hale, of Essex and Elizabethtown, respectively, who prepared the chapter on the medical profession; A. W. Boynton, esq., of Keeseville, who wrote the very interesting chapter devoted to the legal profession; the Rev. William R. Woodbridge, of Port Henry, who prepared the chapter on the Masonic order in the county; Joseph Cook, of Ticonderoga, for the use of the very valuable pamphlet written by him a number of years ago, and for other essential aid; and Hon. William E. Calkins, of the same town, for the use of much material and other unselfish assistance; General John Hammond and Thomas R. Kneil, of Crown Point, for valuable aid; Professor E. J. Owen, of Moriah, for a history of the Sherman Academy of that town; A. J. B. Ross, esq., of Essex, for the most generous outlay of time and the use of valuable ancient documents, etc.; Washington Chase, esq., of Newcomb, for valuable aid in the preparation of the history of that town; Captain R. W. Livingston, of Elizabethtown, for aid in revising military matter and press history; E. R. Wallace, publisher of the valuable *Descriptive Guide to the Adirondacks*, for use of materials, etc.; the clergy of the entire county for assistance in making the very complete church histories of the various towns; the press of the county for use of files, etc.; and lastly, though not the less important, the family and others interested in the very valuable *History of Essex County*, written some years since by the late Winslow C. Watson, for the use of information contained therein. To these names, to the possessors of which these brief acknowledgments are very inadequate, might be added hundreds of others in different parts of the county whose courtesy and unselfishness will be long remembered.

In the arrangement of the town histories herein, it was deemed proper to place that of Crown Point first, with Ticonderoga next, as embodying the oldest and most important portion of the work; following these the towns are placed in chronological order, with reference to the dates of their formation.

With this word of introduction the work is commended to its readers by the publishers and

THE EDITOR.



# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### THE SUBJECT.

PAGE.

Beginning of its History — Formation of the County — Situation and Boundaries — Extent in Square Miles and Acres.	17
---	----

## CHAPTER II.

### NATURAL CHARACTERISTICS.

General Character of the Northern Wilderness — The Mountain System of the County — The Five Ranges — Elevation of Different Localities — General Topography — Water System and Drainage — The Hudson River — West Branch of the Ausable — The Ausable — The Boquet and other Streams — Lakes and Ponds — Water Power — Geology and Mineralogy — The Non-bearing Rock — Primary Rocks — Limestone — Magnetic Oxide of Iron — Locality of Various Beds — Sedimentary Rocks — Minerals of the County — Forests and their Character — The Flora — Animals and Fish — Natural Curiosities.	18
---	----

## CHAPTER III.

### INDIAN OCCUPATION.

Improbability of More than Temporary Occupation by Indians — Lake Champlain as a Highway for Indian Canoes — Origin of the name, "Adirondack" — Legendary Indian Conquest in North Elba — Traces of Occupation Anterior to the Indians — Claimants to Territory of Essex County at the Advent of the Europeans — Tradition of the Origin of the Iroquois League — Its Peculiarities — Military Statutes of the Confederacy — Personal and Social Habits and Characteristics — Missionary Labors.	32
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

## EUROPEAN DISCOVERY AND OCCUPATION.

PAGE.

- The First European Colonists — Discoveries by Columbus and his Immediate Successors — Competition for the New World Territory — New France and its Colonization — Failure of the Scheme — The Second Attempt and its Failure — Final Success — Champlain's Advent — Explorations under De Chastes and De Monts — Champlain's Colony of 1608 — Founding of Quebec — Champlain's Expedition against the Iroquois — The First Battle — Henry Hudson and Dutch Colonization — The English Colonies at Jamestown and Plymouth Rock — Claims of three European Powers — Subsequent Career of Champlain — Fortunes of New France. 43

## CHAPTER V.

## THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

- The Champlain Valley as a Field of Warfare — End of the Dutch Régime — De Courcelles' Expedition — M. de Tracy's Incursion against the Mohawks — Events of 1666 and 1667 — Count de Frontenac — Peace of 1673 — Renewal of Hostilities — De la Barre's Proposed Expedition against the Senecas — Arrival of De Nonville — His Policy — Invasion of the Senecas' Country — Revenge of the Indians — Montreal Sacked and Burned — Return of Frontenac — Three Expeditions — Schenectady Burned — English Apathy — Failure of Two Movements against the French — John Schuyler's Successful Incursion — Deplorable Condition of the French Colonists — Famine — Frontenac's Operation against the Mohawks and Onondagas — Peace. 54

## CHAPTER VI.

## FRENCH AND ENGLISH RIVALRY.

- Relative Justice of French and English Claims — Renewed Hostilities by the French — Occupation of Crown Point by the French — Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle — Continued Hostilities — Braddock's Expeditions — The Movement against Crown Point — Ticonderoga — Arrival of Vaudreuil and Dieskau — Battle between Johnson and Dieskau — The English Victorious — French Retreat to Ticonderoga — Building of Fort William Henry. 62

## CHAPTER VII.

## FRENCH AND ENGLISH WAR.

- Plans of the Campaign — Apathy and Indecision of the English — Brilliant Deeds of the Rangers — Arrival of Montcalm — Oswego Captured — Preparation for Attacking Crown



	PAGE.
Point and Ticonderoga — Campaign of 1757 — Marin's Operations — Montcalm's Plans to Capture Fort William Henry — Council with the Indians — De Levis's March — Situation of the Fort — Webb's Pusillanimous Conduct — Fall of the Fort — Indian Atrocity upon the Garrison — Montcalm's Responsibility — The Situation at the End of the Campaign.	76

## CHAPTER VIII.

### CONTINUATION OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH WAR.

Prospects for 1758 — Disheartening Situation in France — Famine — England's Preponderance — Deeds of the Rangers under Rogers and Putnam — Campaign Plans — Three Expeditions — Fall of Louisburg and Du Quesne — Expedition against Ticonderoga — Death of General Howe and its Consequences — The French Position — First Repulse of the English — Assault on the French Lines — A Sanguinary Conflict — Heroism of the English — Abercrombie's Headquarters — French Victories — Montcalm's Effective Activity — Movements of the Rangers — Putnam's Danger — His Escape.	81
--	----

## CHAPTER IX.

### EXTINCTION OF FRENCH POWER IN AMERICA.

Continuation of the Famine — Exigencies of the French — Montcalm's Prophecies — Pitt's Zeal and its Effect — The Proposed Campaign — Abercrombie's Recall and Amherst's Appointment — His Extensive Military Preparations — Assembling His Army — Montcalm Asks so be Recalled — Capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point by Amherst — Destruction of the Indian Village of St. Francis — Rogers's Wonderful Expedition — Amherst's Fleet and its Operations — General Wolfe before Quebec — Fall of the City — Montcalm and Wolfe Killed — Strengthening of Crown Point and Ticonderoga — Campaign of 1760 — Extinction of French Power in the New World.	90
--	----

## CHAPTER X.

### FIRST COLONIZATION.

Conflicting Land Grants — The Champlain Valley thrown into Market — William Gilliland's Purchase — His Remarkable Colony — Plan of Leasing to Tenants — Departure of the Colony from New York — Extracts from Gilliland's Journal — His Arbitrary Act — Drowning of His Daughter — The Boundary Commission.	96
---	----

## CHAPTER XI.

### PREPARING FOR THE REVOLUTION.

The "New Hampshire Grants" Controversy — Its Final Settlement — Oppressive Acts of	
--	--

	PAGE.
Parliament towards the Colonists — Taxation for Revenue — The "Sons of Liberty" — The Stamp Act — Its Final Repeal — Custom House Act — Retaliation on English Trade — The Liberty Pole Attack — Skirmish in the Streets — First Bloodshed of the Revolution.	111

## CHAPTER XII.

### FROM 1770 TO 1775.

Governor Colden's Successor — Old Troubles Renewed — A Large Cup of Tea — Congress and its Declaration of Rights — Impending War — The British March to Lexington — Paul Revere's Ride — The Battle on the Green — Retreat of the British — Preparations for the Capture of Crown Point and Ticonderoga — Ethan Allen's Command — Arnold's Arrival and its Consequences — Plan of the Expedition — Capture of Ticonderoga — Surrender of Crown Point — Reassembling of Congress — Congressional Vacillation — Allen and Arnold's Naval Exploit — Indian Action in the Revolution — The Canadian Invasion — Montgomery's Initial Movements — Allen's Capture — Carleton's Plan for Relief of St. Johns — Its Failure — Capture of St. Johns and Montreal by Montgomery — Arnold's Wonderful Expedition — Montgomery Before Quebec — Demand for its Surrender, and the Reply — Montgomery's Death and the Failure of the Attack — A Disastrous Retreat — Charlotte County Created — Militia Affairs.	115
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

### CLOSE OF 1776.

The Canadian Mission — Its Failure — Hostilities near New York — Battle of Long Island — Small-Pox at Crown Point — Carleton's Pursuit of the Americans — Building a British Fleet for Lake Champlain — Counter-action by Arnold — Sailing of the British Fleet — Respective Positions of the American and British Vessels — The Engagement — Retirement of the Americans — Rapid Pursuit — Arnold's Bravery — Burning of a Portion of the Fleet — Escape of the Remainder to Crown Point — The British Retire to Canada for the Winter.	127
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

### PROGRESS OF THE REVOLUTION.

Persecution of Wm. Gilliland — His Memorial to Congress — Charged with Treasonable Acts — Plans of the English for the Campaign of 1777 — Burgoyne's Army and its Equipment — His Conference with the Indians and its Consequences — Embarrassment of the American Commanders — General Schuyler again in Command of the Northern Department — Extracts from Dr. Thacher's Journal — His Views upon the Military
--



	PAGE.
Situation — The Defense at Ticonderoga — Burgoyne's Bombast — St. Clair in Command at Ticonderoga — Weakness of His Force — The Assault — The Fatal Mistake of the Americans — Mount Defiance Unfortified — Seized by the British — Evacuation the only Alternative — Thacher's Account of the Flight — Vigorous Pursuit of the British — Battle of Hubbardton — American Despondency over the Capture of Ticonderoga — Schuyler Superseded by Gates — Battle of Bennington — Burgoyne's Increasing Perplexities — Engagements at Bemis's Heights — The British Retire — Surprise of the British at Lake George Landing — Burgoyne Surrounded — His Surrender — British Evacuation of Ticonderoga.	132

## CHAPTER XV.

### TO THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

Brief Review of the Events of 1778-79 — Their Bearing on the General Contest — Sir John Johnson's Voyage up Lake Champlain — Its Professed Object — Cruel and Bloody Slaughter in the Mohawk Valley — A Slave's Faithfulness — The Prisoners Captured — Plans for Escape from Chambly — Jacob and Frederick Sammons — Thrilling Escape of Jacob — His Journey through the Wilderness — An Unsympathetic Settler — Kindness of his Wife to the Fugitives — Raw Fish for His Food — Bitten by a Rattlesnake and the Heroic Treatment — Giving up to Die — A Hopeful Premonition — Safe at Last — Approach of the End — Carleton's Expedition up Lake Champlain — Exemption of Vermont from Devastation — Alleged Negotiations with the Enemy — An Armistice — A Separate Colony under the Crown — Sudden Termination of Negotiations by the Surrender of Cornwallis — Peace.	143
--	-----

## CHAPTER XVI.

### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Persecution of William Gilliland — Petition of the Albany Committee — His Subsequent Career — Hopefulness in Spite of Ill-Fortune — Loss of His Estates — Imprisoned in New York — Sickness and Mental Depression — Appeal to Creditors — The Melancholy End — Occupation and Settlement of the Champlain Valley — Division of Washington County — Internal Improvements — Ferries, Roads, and Bridges Built — Early Settlements in Various Localities — The First County Seat — Organization and Boundaries of Essex County — Inauguration of Courts — First County Officers — Early Roads, Mills, etc. — First Iron Industry — Early Schools and Churches — The Pioneer's Early Work — A Picturesque Account of the Settler's Life — Early Industries — Formation of New Towns.	154
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVII.

### FROM 1810 TO 1825.

Mutterings of War — British Outrages — President Madison's Address to Congress —
--

Declaration of War — Review of the Contest — Operations in and near Essex County — Invasion of New York from the North — Response in Essex County — Battle of Plattsburg — The Naval Engagement — American Victory — The Treaty of Ghent — Beneficial Consequences of Peace — Growth of Settlements — The Cold Summer — Internal Improvements — The First Newspaper — State Legislation Affecting the County — Boundaries of the County as Fixed by Law — Offer of State Lands to Promote Settlements — Early Ferries — New Towns Formed.	175
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### FROM 1825 TO THE PRESENT TIME.

An Era of Prosperity in Essex County — Lumber, Iron and Commercial Interests — Ferries and Roads — Railroad Legislation — Improvement of Water Ways — The "Patriot War" — Its Effect upon Essex County — Negro Colonization in North Elba — John Brown's Interest in the Project — Its Ultimate Entire Failure — Formation of Towns — Development of Iron and Lumber Interests — Decline of the Latter Industry — Improvement in Agriculture — Comparative Statistics — The Agricultural Society — Stock Breeding — Further Road Extension — Politics and the Outbreak of the Rebellion — Prosperity and Growth after the Return of Peace — The Great Wilderness and its future — Civil List.	184
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIX.

### ESSEX COUNTY IN THE REBELLION.

Call to Arms — Prompt Response in Essex County — First Official Action to provide for Payment of Volunteers — Details of Official Action upon the Bounty Question — Men Enlisted from each Town — Deaths in each Town — The Twenty-second Regiment — The Thirty-fourth Regiment — The Thirty-eighth Regiment — The Forty-fourth Regiment — The Seventy-seventh Regiment — The Ninety-sixth Regiment — Fifth New York Cavalry — The One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment — The One Hundred and Fifty-third Regiment — The Second New York Cavalry.	197
--	-----

## CHAPTER XX.

### LAND PATENTS, TITLES, ETC.

Early Divisions of the Public Domain — Claims of Different Nations to the Territory of New York — Conditions of British Grants to Retired Officers and Soldiers — Loans of Lands by Original Grantees — Land Patents in the County — Difficulties of Map Making, etc.	214
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXI.

### LAKE CHAMPLAIN, ITS COMMERCE, ETC.—OTHER INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS.

	PAGE.
Lake Champlain—Desirability for Navigation—Islands of the Lake—Early Passenger and Freight Traffic on the Lake—The First Steamboat on the Lake—Timber and Lumber on the Lake—Influence of the Champlain Canal—Details of its Construction—The Champlain Transportation Company—History of Steamboating on the Lake—Early Pilots, Docks, etc.—Commerce in 1868—Late Commercial Statistics—Other Navigation Projects—The Northern Inland Lock Navigation Company—Great Chazy Navigation Company—Northern Slackwater and Railway Company—Lighthouses—Railroads—Adirondack Railroad—Great Ausable Railway Company—Delaware and Hudson Canal Company's Line.	258

## CHAPTER XXII.

### COUNTY SEAT, BUILDINGS, SOCIETIES, ETC.

The First County Seat—Its Change to Elizabethtown—The First Court House—The Second Building and its Additions—The State Arsenal—The County Poor House Statistics—The Essex County Agricultural Society.	273
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### THE BENCH AND BAR OF ESSEX COUNTY.

The Judiciary of New York—Court of Appeals—Supreme Court—County Court—Surrogate's Court—Justice's Court and Special Sessions—The Bench of Essex County—General Character of the Bar—Members of Her former Bar--The Present Bar—Sketches of Eminent Dead.	278
--	-----

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### THE MEDICAL PROFESSION IN ESSEX COUNTY.

Practicing Medicine in Early Days—Difficulties in the Way of Obtaining a Medical Education—Notes of Prominent Early Physicians—Essex County Medical Society—Lost Records—Organization—Delegates from Essex County to the State Medical Society—Prominent Early Members and their Delegates—Officers of the Society—Present Membership.	306
--	-----

## CHAPTER XXV.

### THE COUNTY PRESS.

General Remarks—The Reveille, First Journal in the County—The Essex Patriot—The
---



	PAGE.
Essex Republican — Keeseville Herald — Essex County Republican — Essex County Times — A Veteran Journalist — Elizabethtown Post — Ticonderoga Sentinel — Crown Point Budget — The Death Roll of Journalism.	315

CHAPTER XXVI.

FREE MASONRY IN ESSEX COUNTY.

Age of the Local Order — Number of Lodges that have been Established in the County — First Lodge in the County — Officers — Other Lodges and Chapters.	318
--	-----

CHAPTER XXVII.

History of the Town of Crown Point.....	324
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVIII.

History of the Town of Ticonderoga.....	361
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIX.

History of the Town of Willsborough. ....	441
---	-----

CHAPTER XXX.

History of the Town of Jay.....	454
---------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXI.

History of the Town of Elizabethtown.....	466
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXII.

History of the Town of Chesterfield.....	493
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXIII.

History of the Town of Schroon.....	538
-------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXIV.

History of the Town of Essex.....	540
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXV.

History of the Town of Lewis.....	560
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXVI.

History of the Town of Moriah.....	566
------------------------------------	-----

---

CHAPTER XXXVII.

	PAGE.
History of the Town of Keene.....	609

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

History of the Town of Westport.....	615
--------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXIX.

History of the Town of Minerva.....	632
-------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XL.

History of the Town of Wilmington.....	637
--	-----

CHAPTER XLI.

History of the Town of Newcomb.....	641
-------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XLII.

History of the Town of St. Armand.....	651
--	-----

CHAPTER XLIII.

History of the Town of North Hudson.....	656
--	-----

CHAPTER XLIV.

History of the Town of North Elba.....	660
--	-----

---

BIOGRAPHICAL.

---

BOYNTON, ALBERT A. ....	689
BRADFORD, ENOS.....	674
BUCK, RAWSON CLARK.....	683
CALKINS, WILLIAM E.....	705
CLARK, GEORGE DENTON.....	690
COOK, JOSEPH.....	681
COWAN, THOMAS.....	674
DE LANO, HON. CLAYTON H.....	672
HALE, HON. ROBERT S.....	303
HAMMOND, GENERAL JOHN.....	343
HAND, HON. AUGUSTUS C.....	297

	PAGE.
HAVENS, HON. PALMER E.....	696
HOOPER, WILLIAM.....	675
KELLOGG, HON. ORLANDO.....	300
M'KENZIE, ALEXANDER.....	678
NOBLE, GENERAL RANSOM.....	668
NOBLE, HARMON.....	670
OWEN, EDWARD J.....	677
ROSS, HENRY HOWARD.....	695
ROSS, HON. HENRY H.....	292, 691
SHERMAN, GEORGE.....	686
SIMMONS, GEORGE A.....	299
SIMONDS, WILLIAM.....	684
SMITH, DR. JOHN.....	673
WITHERBEE, JONATHAN GILMAN.....	687
WOODFORD, CHARLES W.....	679

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

BOYNTON, ALBERT A.....	portrait.....	facing 688
BRADFORD, ENOS.....	portrait.....	" 336
BUCK, RAWSON CLARK.....	portrait.....	" 684
CALKINS, WILLIAM E.....	portrait.....	" 704
CLARK, GEORGE DENTON.....	portrait.....	" 384
COOK, WARNER.....	portrait.....	" 392
• COOK, WILLIAM H.....	portrait.....	" 400
COOK, REV. JOSEPH.....	portrait.....	" 362
COWAN, THOMAS.....	portrait.....	" 674
DE LANO, HON. CLAYTON H.....	portrait.....	" 426
DIESKAU'S FIRST ENGAGEMENT.....	plan of.....	" 74
DIESKAU'S SECOND ENGAGEMENT.....	plan of.....	" 75
FORT WILLIAM HENRY.....	plan of the siege of.....	" 82
GILLILAND, WILLIAM.....	portrait.....	facing 154
GILLILAND TRACT.....	fac-simile of ancient chart of part of, between 544-545	
HALE, HON. ROBERT S.....	portrait.....	facing 304
HAMMOND, GENERAL JOHN.....	portrait.....	" 342
HAND, JUDGE AUGUSTUS C.....	portrait.....	" 296
HAVENS, HON. PALMER E.....	portrait.....	" 550



	PAGE.
HOOPER, WILLIAM.....	portrait.....facing 402
HOOPER CONCENTRATOR.....	view of..... " 677
KELLOGG, HON. ORLANDO.....	portrait..... " 300
LIVINGSTON, R. W.....	portrait..... " 316
M'KENZIE, ALEXANDER.....	portrait..... " 568
MERRIAM, W. P.....	portrait..... " 616
NOBLE, GENERAL RANSOM.....	portrait..... " 668
NOBLE, HARMON.....	portrait..... " 670
OWEN, EDWARD J.....	portrait..... " 606
ROSS, HON. HENRY H.....	portrait..... " 292
ROSS, HENRY HOWARD, 2D.....	portrait..... " 542
SHERMAN, GEORGE.....	portrait..... " 686
SIMONDS, WILLIAM.....	portrait..... " 488
SMITH, DR. JOHN.....	portrait..... " 310
TICONDEROGA AND ITS DEFENSES.....	plan of, August, 1776..... 86
WITHERBEE, JONATHAN GILMAN.....	portrait..... facing 576
WOODFORD, CHARLES W.....	portrait..... " 680





# HISTORY

OF

# ESSEX COUNTY.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### THE SUBJECT.

Beginning of its History—Formation of the County—Situation and Boundaries—Extent in Square Miles and Acres.

THE history of Essex county properly begins near the opening of the seventeenth century when Samuel Champlain, with two attendants and a party of Canadian Indians, started on an expedition against the Five Nations of the proud Iroquois. Previous to that time little is known of the Champlain valley except as it is handed down through tradition and romance. Afterwards it became the theatre of most important events, chiefly of a military character, which were intimately associated with the final settlement, occupation and acquisition of the territory on both sides of the St. Lawrence river. From the date when Champlain's party of invaders entered the lake which now bears his name (July 4th, 1609) to the present time, the historic traces are generally clearly defined, gradually broadening outward towards the present advanced state of civilized occupation. Essex county was not formed until 1799, almost a century after its borders upon the eastern side, along the beautiful lake, were first beheld by the intrepid French discoverer; but a large portion of its history had at that time already been enacted. It, therefore, becomes advisable to state that the subject of this work is the territory comprised within the present limits of the county, and the inhabitants thereof, whether the events

recorded occurred before or after the beginning of the county's existence as a defined section of the State of New York. In the proper accomplishment of this task it will, of course, be necessary to often extend the record to events which occurred throughout the Champlain valley and even beyond its limits. When, therefore, "Essex County" is mentioned in connection with events occurring previous to the formation and naming of the county, it will be understood that the words are thus used to avoid unnecessary explanation, and refer to the territory now comprised in the county.

Essex county, formed from Clinton, March 1st, 1799, lies upon the western shore of Lake Champlain in the northeastern part of the State of New York; it is centrally distant from Albany one hundred miles, and contains 1,779 square miles. It is bounded on the north by Clinton and Franklin counties; on the east by Lake Champlain; on the south by Warren and Washington counties; and on the west by Hamilton and Franklin counties. The extent of the county in acres is 1,138,500, and it is the second county in the State in territorial extent, St. Lawrence alone exceeding it. In its greatest length from north to south it is about fifty miles, and its width about forty miles. The county is now divided into eighteen towns, many of which are larger than some counties of the State.

Such is a brief general description of the subject of this work — a locality which has been the theatre of events possessing great historic interest; is filled with some of nature's most marvelous works, and surrounded with an atmosphere of interesting romance.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### NATURAL CHARACTERISTICS.

General Character of the Northern Wilderness — The Mountain System of the County — The Five Ranges — Elevation of Different Localities — General Topography — Water System and Drainage — The Hudson River — West Branch of the Ausable — The Ausable — The Boquet and other Streams — Lakes and Ponds — Water Power — Geology and Mineralogy — The Non-bearing Rock — Primary Rocks — Limestone — Magnetic Oxide of Iron — Locality of Various Beds — Sedimentary Rocks — Minerals of the County — Forests and their Character — The Flora — Animals and Fish — Natural Curiosities.

THE territory of Essex county is a part of the extensive plateau nearly one hundred miles in extent in either direction and larger than many entire States, which is variously spoken of as The Great Northern Wilderness, or the Adirondacks. This plateau ranges from fifteen hundred to eighteen hundred feet above tide. It embraces nearly the whole of Essex, Warren, and Hamil-

ton counties, the southwest portion of Clinton, the south half of Franklin, the southeastern third of St. Lawrence, the eastern third of Lewis, and the northern half of Herkimer. Different portions of it are known under different names; the northern is called the Chateaugay woods; the St. Regis woods lie next below; then comes the Saranac region; then that of Raquette lake; to the eastward extend the Adirondacks; and below, south and southwesterly, are the Lake Pleasant region and John Brown's Tract. Much of this extensive territory is still an unbroken wilderness, unpenetrated except by adventurous sportsmen; and it embraces scenery unsurpassed in some respects on the continent, as will be developed in the course of this work.

Essex county is taken out of the eastern part of this territory and borders Lake Champlain, while its central and western part is the home of nearly the entire group of Adirondack mountains (properly speaking, a portion of the Clinton range, which passes nearly centrally across the county), and comprises nine-tenths of the mountain system of the entire State. The Clinton, or as it is now generally called, the Adirondack, range is the most important of the five ranges running nearly parallel across the northeastern part of the State. The three towns of Newcomb, North Elba, and Keene embrace within their limits Mounts Marcy, McIntyre, Colden and Santanoni (said to be a corruption of St. Anthony), four of the loftiest, which form the watershed of the county from which flow streams that find their way to the ocean by the way of the St. Lawrence and others through New York bay.

All of the five mountain ranges that lie north of the Mohawk valley extend through portions of the county and terminate upon the shores of Lake Champlain. Their direction is northeast and southwest, and they rise higher in succession as the northern range is approached, which is the highest. The axes of the ranges are nearly parallel and are about eight miles apart. The ranges are not, however, distinct and continuous, but lateral spurs interlock with each other and their continuity is broken by valleys and lowlands; neither are they regularly serrated, but comprise groups of sharp peaks connected by immense ridges. In the words of one of the prominent explorers, "they seem thrown together without system or order."

The most southerly of the five ranges scarcely touches the extreme southeastern corner of the county, and has been known as the Palmerton, the Luzerne, the Black, and the Tongue mountains. It constitutes the highlands that rise on both sides of Lake George and on the peninsula between the Lake George outlet and Lake Champlain. Mount Defiance, the extremity of this ridge, has an elevation of about 750 feet above the lake. It became an important point in the military operations on Lakes Champlain and George.

The second range, known as the Kayaderosseras, extends through the southeast part of the town of Schroon and about the center of Crown Point, ending in the lofty cliff that overlooks Bulwagga bay. Along the course of this range



in Schroon is a cluster of peaks, the highest of which, Mount Pharaoh, is 3,500 to 4,000 feet above tide.

The third range occupies the western and northern parts of Schroon and extends through the north part of Moriah and the center of Westport, ending in the high promontory of Split Rock in the town of Essex. Bald Mountain, in Westport, one of the noted peaks of this range, has an elevation of 2,065 feet above tide. This range is commonly known as the Schroon mountains.

The fourth range extends through the central parts of Minerva and North Hudson, the southeast corner of Keene and Lewis, the northwest part of Elizabethtown and the center of Willsboro, ending in the high bluffs which border on Willsboro bay. It is sometimes called the Boquet range, from the river of that name which flows at its base. Dix's Peak, in North Hudson, is the highest mountain in the range, attaining the elevation of 5,200 feet and, next to Mount Marcy, is the highest land in the State. Nipple-Top has an elevation of 4,900 feet. Raven Hill, in Elizabethtown, and Mount Discovery, in Lewis, are both over 2,000 feet high.

The fifth range, now generally known as the Adirondacks, extends through Newcomb, Keene, Jay, Lewis and Chesterfield, ending in the rocky promontory of Trembleau Point in the northeast corner of the county. A spur of this range extends northward on the borders of Jay and Chesterfield in a high, unbroken ridge, which has a mean elevation of about 2,000 feet.

To the northward of the Adirondack range the mountains do not lie in regular ranges, but are scattered in groups over a wide extent of territory. The groups, however, lie parallel to the other ranges. Of these, Whiteface, in Wilmington, has an elevation of 4,855 feet, and Mount Seward is 5,100 feet high, but lies just over the county line.

Essex is, by far, the most mountainous county in the State, and the region has been called the "Tyrol of America." Here in these ranges lofty rocky peaks and grand mountain masses abound, and wild broken crags and stupendous precipices, narrow ravines and deep gorges give an Alpine character to the landscape that renders it a Mecca to the lover of nature's grandeur; and yet, when we consider its situation within the limits of one of the most populous States, the fact that it is still but little known to the general public becomes a striking one.

Besides the mountains already mentioned, the following that are generally known by the names given, lie within the county: Wallface, Henderson, Haystack, Robertson, Boreas, the Dial, the Gothics and Whiteface; these, with Mount Seward in Franklin county and Blue Mountain in Hamilton, form the Adirondack group proper; Moose Mountain, Mounts Baldwin, Goodenow and Joseph; McKenzie's Pond Mountain, the Keene peaks (called Big Pitch-off, the Noon Mark and Rogers); Dix's Peak, Macomb Mountain, Owl's Head, the Dome, Bald Peak, Bulwagga Mountain, Bald Peak (in Moriah), Hoffman's and

Schroon mountains, Mounts Pharoah, Defiance and Discovery; Lead, Buck and Boquet mountains, Split Rock; the Elizabethtown peaks (called the Raven, Wood Hill, the Cobble and Hurricane Peak); Green Mountain, Little Pitch-off, Saddle Mountain, Mounts Lyon and Esther, Leggett Mountain; mountains of the Jay range (Mounts Ebenezer, Bassett, Hamlin, Clark and Haystack), Poke-o'-Moonshine, Bosworth Mountain and Trembleau Point. There are many other less important peaks with obscure names, or none at all. These mountains, with a few exceptions, rise from two to five thousand feet and more in height, Mount Marcy being 5,400 feet and almost reaching the limit of perpetual snow. This mountainous region is wild and rugged, forest-covered except the upper portions of the loftier peaks, and interspersed with ponds, small lakes and clear streams. The county has an average height of three thousand feet above tide, while the following table shows the heights of different definite localities: Lake Champlain, ninety-three feet; Mount McIntyre, 5,183; Wallface, 2,000; Mount Henderson, 3,000; Santanoni, 5,000; Whiteface, 5,000; Colden, 5,000; the Dial, 4,900; Boreas Mountain, 3,726; Dix's Peak, 5,200; Mount Pharaoh, 4,000; Schroon Mountain, 3,200; Poke-o'-Moonshine, 3,000; Bosworth Mountain, 3,000; Mount Goodenow and Moose Mountain, 3,000; Hurricane Peak, 3,000; the Raven, 2,000; Mount Discovery, 2,000; Lake Colden, 2,851; Lake Henderson, 1,936; Lake Sanford, 1,826; Preston Ponds, 1,700; village of the Upper Works, 1,889; Mountain Meadow, on side of Mount Marcy, source of the Opalescent or northeast branch of the Hudson, 4,747; Indian Pass, 2,817 (from its base); Mount Marcy, 5,467.<sup>1</sup>

Among these mountains in certain sections are quite extensive valleys, their surfaces at a high elevation, level, or gently undulating, and well adapted to cultivation; and along some of the streams are alluvial flats of great fertility. The valley of North Elba (the Plains of Abraham), Keene valley and the valley of the Boquet deserve this mention. Here civilized settlement has penetrated and made for itself peaceful and prosperous homes. Far up the slopes of some of the mountains the soil is rich and excellent for grazing; along the shores of Lake Champlain is a tract, varying in width, which, for beauty of surface and agricultural value can hardly be surpassed.<sup>2</sup>

*Water System and Drainage.* — The southwest portion of the county is largely drained by the Hudson river and its principal branch, the Schroon. The Hudson rises in the Indian Pass, the stupendous gorge between Wallface Mountain and Mount McIntyre in North Elba, and flows nearly south across the county. The Schroon rises in the Schroon mountains in North Hudson and flows southward, uniting with the Hudson in Warren county. The main stream of the Ausable's west branch (sometimes called the Notch stream) flows

<sup>1</sup> These figures were given about fifteen years ago and may have been, or will be, perhaps, modified to a limited extent.

<sup>2</sup> The topography of the towns is given more in detail in the subsequent town histories.



from the northeast portal of the Indian Pass, the springs that feed it and those that form the rise of the Hudson being so close together "that the wild cat lapping the water of the one may bathe his rear feet in the other, and the rock rolling from the precipice could scatter spray from both in the same concussion."<sup>1</sup> In times of high water the sources of these two rivers actually mingle with each other. The Hudson flows from the Pass into Lakes Henderson and Sanford, in the town of Newcomb, as the Adirondack river. It receives the Boreas river in the town of Minerva, which flows southwest across a part of the town of North Hudson and the northeast corner of Minerva. It receives several branches from the west in the towns of Newcomb and Minerva.

We have mentioned the west branch of the Ausable and its source in the Indian Pass. This branch of the beautiful river flows northeast across the towns of North Elba and Wilmington, uniting with the south branch on the north line of the county between Jay and Wilmington. The south branch of the Ausable has its source in the Ausable ponds, amid the mountain fastnesses in the southern part of Keene, flows north across that town, and then northeasterly, forming the boundary between the towns of Wilmington and Jay. From the confluence of the two branches the Ausable forms the northern boundary of the county from Ausable Forks to near Lake Champlain, into which it empties.

The Boquet river also rises among the mountains in the extreme southern part of Keene and northern part of North Hudson and flows in a general northeasterly direction across the towns of Elizabethtown, the corner of Lewis, Essex and Willsboro. The Saranac river flows northeast across the extreme northwest corner of the county, in the town of St. Armand.

Besides these principal streams there are numerous smaller ones in the county, among which may be mentioned Trout brook (Schroon and Ticonderoga), Putnam's creek (Crown Point), Mill brook and "Ti" creek, Black creek (Elizabethtown), Chub run (North Elba), and an innumerable number of still less important streams, some with names and some without, most of which will be more definitely described in the subsequent histories of the towns.

This elaborate and wonderful system of streams intertwines and unites a net-work of lakes and ponds, which is still more wonderful. They lie generally in long and narrow clefts of the hypersthene rock and range from a few acres in extent to twenty miles. Among the lake expanses are (besides the portions of Lakes George and Champlain) half of Schroon lake, Placid, in North Elba; Henderson, Sanford, Rich, Colden and Newcomb, in Newcomb; Avalanche, in North Elba; Paradox and Pharaoh, in Schroon; Moose, Delia, Harris, and others. In addition to these are nearly one hundred ponds, many of them larger than some of the lakes already named, of which the following are the more important: McKenzie's, three Preston ponds, two Ausable ponds, Moose,

---

<sup>1</sup> STREET'S *Indian Pass*.



Bennett's, two Long ponds, two Edmonds, Rattlesnake, Auger, Butternut, Copperas, Owen's, Oliver's, Round, Whortleberry, Crane, Lizard, Put's, Crookneck, Pyramid, Johnson's, Bartlett, Ensign's, Crowfoot, Bullpout, Black, Spring, Two-Story, Buck Mountain, Willis, Hewitt, Boreas, Zack, Goodenow, Otter, Frank, Bad Luck, Split Rock, Bigsby, Hayes, Wolf, Sand, Elk, Latham, Clear, Chapel, Pine, and numerous others which scarcely own distinctive names.

The waters of this labyrinth of streams, lakes and ponds arises chiefly from cold, pure springs, and they add greatly to the natural beauty and picturesqueness of scenery that is unsurpassed. Steep, wooded mountains climb high from their sides, their shadows coloring the placid surfaces of lakes and ponds, and apparently going down to unknown depths; sharp precipices tower beside the still waters; fairy bays and quiet nooks indent their shores; babbling brooks are everywhere making their unceasing music, and all seems fresh from the omnipotent hand of the Creator.

The lakes and streams of the county abound in many parts with delicious fish, and the whole region is the sportsman's paradise. Deer roam the forest and the woods often resound with the rifle's sharp crack. But all this wilderness is becoming more and more the haunt of men and the inroads of industry are penetrating it. Streams which, in the early days of settlement, turned the wheels of mills,<sup>1</sup> will now scarcely furnish a drink to the thirsty hunter.

*Geology and Mineralogy.*—The geology of this county is a subject of the deepest interest, particularly to those who are versed in that science; to the large class who are not, it may not be impertinent to state that beneath the surface accumulations of various kinds of soil the earth is divided into rocky strata of widely different natures, to which various names have been given by scientists. These strata are usually more or less inclined upward, overlapping each other as would the clapboards of a house if it lay upon the ground; and, as the geologists express it, they "crop out" at the surface. It is the office of geology to treat of these earth formations, their cause and history.<sup>2</sup>

The geological formation of the county opens a field unequalled in the State. Here is the exclusive home of the hypersthene rock, or rather the mass composed of labrador, feldspar and hypersthene, mostly of the former, but bearing the specific name of the latter. This primary gray, iron-bearing rock extends in a triangular shape through the county, forming the basis rock and a

<sup>1</sup> "In the progress of my survey I have observed, in repeated instances, the ruins of mills and dams, which, in the early occupation of the county, had ample water-power, not a vestige of which now remains, but a deep and worn ravine that once formed its channel. As the progress of agricultural and manufacturing improvements—before which forests are leveled, the country opened, and the earth exposed to the influence of the sun and atmosphere—advances, springs and streams will be dried up, and it will become imperatively necessary to adopt artificial means to control and preserve the water-power of this county."—WATSON'S *Essex County*.

<sup>2</sup> This county is embraced in the second geological district of the State, and, therefore, came under the survey of Professor Ebenezer Emmons, from whose elaborate report and from Alfred B. Street's condensation therefrom much of the following geologic data is derived.

large proportion of the surface (and in some the whole surface) of eleven towns, namely, Schroon, Moriah, Keene, Elizabethtown, Westport, Chesterfield, Wilmington, Lewis, Jay, Willsborough and Newcomb. Its northern limit is formed by Trembleau Point on Lake Champlain, in the neighborhood of Port Kent; thence its eastern line runs a little west of south through the western portion of the town of Essex, and midway between Westport and Elizabethtown, through Moriah and the west corner of Schroon; running on through the town of Minerva, the northeast corner of the adjoining county of Hamilton and southeast corner of Franklin county and re-entering Essex, it passes northeast through the town of Wilmington, returning east to Trembleau Point.

This rock, in its jointed and wedge-shaped blocks, has been uplifted (broken from a far larger mass underneath the earth) by the grand forces of nature, into the sharp cones and saw-like ridges of the Adirondack group trenching on the limits of eternal frost. It is traversed in a general east and west course by trap dikes, and although in popular belief it is volcanic, no traces of a crater, nor any distinct volcanic signs (except in these dikes) are found in the group. Among its minerals are the opalescent feldspar, garnet, mica, and (very generally diffused) magnetic oxide of iron.

These trap dikes seam the county in every direction, from half an inch to eighty feet in width; the compound mass, formed of hornblende, pyroxene, feldspar, or sienite (hornblende and feldspar), or pyroxene and feldspar, which composes them, being an injection into the natural fissures of the primary rocks. Although frequent in all parts of the county, these dikes are more numerous at Port Henry, Split Rock and Trembleau Point, opened as they sometimes are by the wedge of the frost or otherwise. They tell of the lurking iron, the dull lead, the flashing blood-red mica, the brown tourmalin, the gray zircon, the rosy spinelle, the green hornblende, the flesh-hued feldspar, the shining rich green coccolite, the golden jasper, the red of the garnet, and purple of the amethyst.

The deep chasm cloven by a stream within the terrific mural front of Mount Colden, arching toward Avalanche lake, shows the finest known specimen of this stony-veined mass, distinguished as the great trap dike. On the opposite flank of Mount McIntyre are seen the parallel fissures, from the base to the summit, of another dike; but wanting the cleavage of water, it has not been laid open.

The other primaries of Essex are granite, limestone, and serpentine of the unstratified, gneiss and hornblende of the stratified, and porphyry and magnetic oxide of iron of the subordinate rock.

Granite, the oldest and deepest of all the rocks, is found in the county only in limited patches, and insulated beds. It is seen in the town of Minerva, in several cliffs in the south part of Elizabethtown, and in a high cliff resting on primary limestone in Chesterfield. While gneiss forms some of the loftiest



ranges, granite is found but in moderate ascents. It is metalliferous but in a small degree, containing sulphate of copper with sulphuret of iron in limited quantities. It also contains crystals of feldspar, pyroxene, scapolite, and green and red tourmalin.

Limestone is an important rock in the western portion of Essex. It enters the county from Warren county into the town of Ticonderoga; but its most important belt, mingled with serpentine in the larger masses, is traced in Schroon, although not in a continuous form (in fact none of the belts are perfectly continuous), along Paradox lake, northeasterly and about eighty rods wide, through to Port Henry on Lake Champlain. Insulated beds of this igneous rock occur at Newcomb Lake (in an impure state, however, being a mixture of coccolite and quartz), and dissociated from serpentine, largely near Moriah Corners. At Edmond's ponds the primitive limestone has been bared by a slide on the Keene Summit on the southwest side of the ponds. It lies in the upper part of the slide in a vein from twenty to forty feet in width. In Chesterfield, near the village of Clintonville, the primary limestone is found associated with granite.

The limestone contains pyroxene in crystals, feldspar, rose-quartz, asbestos, the red mica, calcareous spar, zircon, graphite, yellow chondrodite, yellow, brown, and green tourmalin, pink spinelle, hornblende, and scapolite.

Serpentine is found in the towns of Lewis and Moriah. It is frequently associated with the primitive limestone and specular oxide of iron. When not blended, it is found in large irregular masses divided into angular blocks; not in veins or dikes, neither following a range nor composed in layers. When it accompanies the limestone it is translucent and compact, and shaly when found with the oxide of iron.

It is a beautiful rock, finely mottled and striped, and most commonly of a green color, although occasionally red, brown, or yellow, and veined with variegated hues. It contains galena and asbestos, the latter largely.

Hornblende and gneiss form (with the exception of the primary limestone and transition rocks) the whole southeastern and a large portion of the east part of the county.

This compound rock runs in easterly ranges up from Warren county at the south, the first of which ranges sparkles in Bulwagga Mountain (which it entirely forms), on the line between the towns of Crown Point and Moriah. The next range terminates in a precipice of sixty feet at Lake Champlain, a little below Port Henry. The third, a belt nine miles wide, after forming Bald Peak, near Lake Champlain, terminates in its northeastern course at the lake in high steep rocks, the main or middle branch of the range ending at Split Rock.

A line drawn near Willsborough falls through the towns of Westport and Moriah to Minerva; then southwest to the foot of Long lake in Hamilton county; then, in Essex again, northeast through St. Armand to Clinton county,



would define the locality of gneiss in Essex; all outside the line being that rock; inside hypersthene.

It contains in its dissociate state but few interesting minerals. Still tourmalin, garnet, zircon, brown peroxide of iron, graphite, sulphuret of iron, quartz, epidote, and pyroxene are found.

Gneiss and primary limestone are found along the eastern border of the hypersthene in Ticonderoga, and east part of Schroon, Moriah, and Westport, and west portion of the town of Essex, skirting also the west and northwest flanks of the hypersthene, and occurring largely near Newcomb lake.

Porphyry is not frequent in Essex county. Cannon's Point, a mile or two below the village of Essex, furnishes the best specimen of this volcanic rock. It is found between layers of slate; and it is seen rearing its low columnated cliffs along the lake shore in the neighborhood of the village; in the fields, in low cliffs, and in a bluff 200 feet in height, at a locality called Rattlesnake Den. Toward Split Rock the lake shore is strewn with fragments of this rock. It is spread over the surface, not like the other volcanic matter, trap, disposed in veins; and it is sprinkled with crystals of red feldspar, of which substance it is formed.

The magnetic oxide of iron is diffused throughout the county. In the town of Newcomb it occurs in a far greater degree than all the rest, particularly at and around Lakes Henderson and Sanford. The ores found here are all magnetic in character; are black in the mass, and are generally mixtures of the protoxide and peroxide, one atom of the former to two of the latter. They are known to some extent by the names of the localities where found. The Sanford ore is found on the west flank of a mountain of 700 feet, sloping gradually to the east border of the lake of that name, and two miles from what is known as the "Upper Works" (see history of the town of Newcomb.) The length of the Sanford vein is between two and three miles. This immediate locality is probably unsurpassed in its iron deposits, and numerous beds exist within an area of three miles. A vein of what is called the coarse-grained black ore lies near to and even beneath the old settlement of the Upper Works; it is computed to extend more than 3,000 feet, with a width of between 700 and 800 feet. Another vein, called the fine-grained ore, lies about eighty rods east of the site of the works, on a ridge. It extends northwest more than half a mile from the works, with a breadth of over 150 feet. On the west border of Lake Henderson, nearly a mile from the village, is another vein of the fine-grained ore; another on the west bank of Lake Sanford, and still another on the east side of Sanford Mountain. On the East river it is seen in large masses of pure ore, and on the west side of Lake Sanford, about three miles southwest from the Upper Works, is an extensive mass known as the Cheney ore bed. The foreign minerals in the Sanford vein are labradorite, hypersthene, common feldspar and the crystalline green variety and hornblende. All of this iron deposit described thus far is in the town of Newcomb.

The town of Minerva also gives evidence of great mineral wealth, and the deposit has been worked. In the town of Schroon are the Schofield and the Skiff beds, both of which have been energetically worked. Two beds have been worked in Crown Point near the Schroon line. What is known as the Moriah iron district is scarcely second to that of the Adirondacks, and about a score of beds and mines have been opened and extensively worked. This district continues into Elizabethtown and Westport, where some fifteen beds have been opened. Most of these ores produce the best of iron and steel.<sup>1</sup>

The unaltered sedimentary rocks of the county occupy but an extremely narrow belt along Lake Champlain. The Potsdam sandstone, the lowest of these rocks, is found principally at Keeseville, where it is cloven into the wonderful Ausable chasms. The southern limit of the rock in mass is in the town of Willsborough; but it is seen at Ticonderoga, at the falls of the outlet to Lake George; at Mount Defiance, and shows itself along the shore towards Crown Point; it is seen near Bulwagga Mountain, in a belt a mile wide; at Cedar Point, at Port Henry and at Westport.

The Chazy limestone is found near the village of Westport and in the neighborhood of the village of Essex, here in the form of a bluff nearly 200 feet above the lake.

The Trenton limestone is found at the village of Essex, filled with fossils, and also about two miles farther south.

The Utica slate appears at Split Rock and also a mile along the lake shore in contact with the Chazy limestone, at which points it is traversed with trap dikes and veins of calcareous spar. It is again seen a little north of Essex, its low banks with the upper surface only exposed, traversing the shore to Peru Bay. It is confined to Essex and a few miles of the lake shore north, and in it no important minerals are found.

The tertiary of Essex lies in insulated beds the shore of Lake Champlain throughout the entire length of the county.

A list of the minerals found in the county embraces labradorite, magnetic oxide of iron, quartz, pyroxene, feldspar, hornblende, serpentine with carbonate of lime, graphite, asbestos, scapolite, mica, garnet, tabular spar, chondrodite, spinelle, tourmalin, zircon, idocrase, sphene, phosphate of lime, sulphuret of iron, copper, silver, porcelain clay and soap-stone. Those that have been profitably developed are iron, graphite (see history of Ticonderoga), feldspar to a limited extent, while the hypersthene, sandstone and limestone rocks are quarried to a considerable extent, as we shall note in the town histories.

*Forests.* — The original forests of the county were largely constituted of pine, hemlock and spruce, which grew to an unusual size, and furnished the early settlers with a resource for profit that was of great benefit. Even at the

---

<sup>1</sup> Full descriptions of the various beds and mines in the county will be found in the subsequent town histories, to the industries of which they more properly belong.



present day, as will hereafter appear, the lumber interest is by no means an insignificant one. Many of the streams have been cleared of obstructions, chiefly at the expense of the State, for the more advantageous transportation of logs down their currents.

Among the hard woods that are natives of the county are the maple, beech, birch, elm, oak, hickory and butternut. The white oak was in early years exported in large quantities to Canada, and is now shipped to some extent southward. Red and white cedar formerly abounded, but the former is nearly exterminated.

Much of the woodland in the county has been cleared for lumber and manufacturing purposes, particularly near the iron beds. As the wood has become somewhat scarce in the later years, coal is gradually taking its place in many industries. Where pine and other soft wood forests have been felled, a second growth, almost entirely of hard woods, quickly springs up in its place and soon furnishes a growth that may be profitably cut.

*Flora.* — The flora of the county is, perhaps, richer than that of any other State. In reference to this subject Mr. Street says in the introduction to his work on the Indian Pass: Among the most beautiful of the flowering plants may be mentioned the species of clematis, virgin bower, one of which climbing on trees and shrubs mingles its clusters of large purple flowers with the green foliage of the supporting branches. In the valleys and about the lakes and ponds, many species of the orchis family find a home. Of these curious plants some of the finest are the *arethusa bulbosa* (bulbous arethusa); the *pogonia ophioglossoides*; the *calapogon* or grass pink, and the *orchis spectabilis*.

Seven or eight species of viola are found, and plants and shrubs of the rose tribe abound. On the summits of the highest mountains are many rare plants, some of them found elsewhere only in extreme northern latitudes. The *arenaria greenlandica* (Greenland sandroot) and *potentilla tridentata* (white cinquefoil) are only found on the loftiest peaks of these mountains, or of the White mountains, while the golden-rod of Whiteface and Mount Marcy is found on no other mountains in the State.

There are two beautiful specimens of kalmia, or laurel, found in the marshes; also two exquisite species of azalea, a pink and a white, seen in marshes and on shady hillsides; and in the meadows a very beautiful species of *iris ochroleuca* (yellow iris), a large splendid yellow flower growing in the town of Lewis.

*Animals and Fish.* — The animals that have been found in the county embrace the moose, bear, deer, fox, beaver, muskrat, mink, martin and lynx. The moose has now, doubtless, disappeared from this region; it is a number of years since one has been killed; but it is not very many years ago that they were numerous and hunting them formed the most exciting sport for the inhabitants. The deer is still numerous in the depths of the forests of portions of the county, and large numbers of them are slain every year. The salutary



game laws are gradually becoming more and more a power for the preservation of this beautiful and desirable animal. The small black bear is still met with in considerable numbers in some parts of the wilderness, and the wolf is occasionally killed. During the early settlements their depredations were a sore tax upon the limited stock pens of the pioneers.

The beaver was very plentiful here in early days; but it is believed they are entirely exterminated. Numerous remains of their wonderful works exist in different parts of the county, where they erected their dams, which caused the overflow of large sections, destroying all vegetation. These flats subsequently became overgrown with natural grasses which were of great utility to early settlers.

The smaller and fur-bearing animals mentioned were formerly numerous and of considerable value to the settlers; but, while they are still found, their numbers are greatly diminished.

Fish have always been abundant in the waters of the county and are so still. Lake Champlain is stocked with nearly all the common varieties that are found in fresh waters. Besides, if we may believe the account of the intrepid Champlain, who gave the lake its name, he found in its depths scaly monsters of hideous mien. He says: "Among the rest there is one called by the Indians, chaousarou, of divers length. The largest, I was informed by the people, are of eight and ten feet, I saw one of five feet, as thick as a thigh, with a head as big as two fists, with jaws two and a half feet long, and a double set of very long and dangerous teeth. The form of the body resembles that of the pike and is armed with scales, that the thrust of a poniard cannot pierce, and is of a silver gray color." Perhaps it is as well for our credulity that Champlain made the poor Indians responsible for the biggest of these fish. The quotation is an excellent description of the bill fish, or dog fish, which is quite numerous in Lake Ontario, and, according to Mr. Watson, still exists in Lake Champlain, but rarely taken. The muskalonge is found in the lake and attains great size. The lake shad is taken in considerable numbers in the lower portions of the lake, by the use of seines; it rarely takes a spoon or bait. The pickerel abounds in the lake and is taken in great numbers and in almost all ways; but its quality in these waters is not the finest. Two species of sturgeon have been occasionally taken in the lake; but it is not a desirable food fish. The yellow perch is very abundant and is highly esteemed. The smelt is a comparatively new comer in the lake and is much prized. Bull-heads and eels abound also, and a few other unimportant varieties.

In the clear streams of the interior and western part of the county and in many of the lakes the speckled trout, the king of table fish, is found in reasonable abundance, a fact that adds to what has already been said to convince the sportsman that here is a spot where he can enjoy his tastes to the utmost. What is known as the lake trout is found in many of the interior lakes and is

second only to the speckled trout in dainty flavor. Specimens of this fish have been caught weighing fifty pounds, while those of about ten pounds are not uncommon. Few other varieties of fish are found in these interior waters.

*Natural Curiosities.* — This chapter may be appropriately closed with a brief reference to some of the more prominent natural curiosities for which this county is noted. Chief among these and one of the most remarkable natural wonders in the country is the Indian Pass. This great gorge, a stupendous evidence of some mighty upheaval of ages ago, was felicitously named by the Indians, "Ofneyarh," the stony giants. On one side of this wonderful pass Mount McIntyre rises by a steep acclivity at an angle of about forty-five degrees, while on the other the naked and almost perpendicular rocky face of Wallface, a "mighty bastion," towers to a height of from eight hundred to twelve hundred feet, and is more than a mile in length. The base of this appalling precipice is about two thousand feet above tide water. Mr. Street in his entertaining work on this natural phenomenon gives this vivid description: "Its shape is that of a half moon curving outwardly, a mighty bastion. Directly from below up sprang the gray furrowed wall, with a *débris* of loose rocks, looking like mere pebbles, piled five hundred feet at its base, and soaring upward till it seemed it might catch the very clouds floating over it. The grand sight took away the breath, like an ascent in a balloon. The eye grew dizzy in struggling up, up, to master its height. It appeared almost like surmounting the battlements of heaven, — as if the monster had been obliged to break an opening through the sky to rear its horrible brow to its full altitude. Let it be remembered, also, that the bottom of the gorge, the lair of the monster, was lifted more than eighteen hundred feet above the sea level, and some idea might be gained of the fearful and crushing height. Although this was the loftiest point of the pass, yet far northward, with scarce less height, on waved and surged the wall, cutting the blue with a sharp, jagged sky-line. It was a magnificent spectacle, worthy the God whose finger had plowed it."

Although this is a highly figurative description and betrays the poetic side of the author's character, it is, nevertheless, not entirely an extravagant picture. The truth is, pen nor pencil can portray the sublime grandeur of this stupendous wall, and the human mind is overwhelmed with awe in its presence. "So exact and wonderful is the stupendous masonry of this bulwark," says Mr. Watson, "that it seems, could human nerve allow the effort, a stone dropped from the summit might reach the base without striking an impediment." Here nature reigns, silent, gloomy and alone, in all her wild majesty. Here starts the little rill that becomes in the course of its devious and long wanderings, the noble Hudson.

The Indian Pass is in the town of North Elba.

*Wilmington Notch.* — This is another curiosity of a similar general character to the Indian Pass, to which it is only second in grandeur and impressive-



ness. This gorge is cut through the mountains at the foot of Whiteface, which rises in an almost perpendicular ascent 2,000 feet above the bed of the Ausable, which, crowded into a narrow flume, "bursts through the mountain obstructions and thunders onward in its furious career."<sup>1</sup> Opposite Whiteface another precipitous acclivity towers upward with almost equal sublimity. The Ausable, having passed between the mountain precipices, tumbles headlong into an abyss more than one hundred feet in depth. This stream is one long succession of falls, rapids and cascades, through scenery of surpassing beauty, and developing water power of marvelous proportions.

*Ausable Chasm and the "Walled Banks."*—After flowing quietly along the valley past Keeseville, the Ausable passes through a remarkable channel or chasm nearly a mile in length and varying in depth from sixty to one hundred feet. The walls of this channel are solid rock and mostly nearly vertical. This wonderful natural phenomenon is thus vividly pictured in Stoddard's *Adirondacks Illustrated*: "This freak of nature is not alone of its kind, but one of a system of rents in the earth's surface that probably extend all over the northern portion of the State, the most noticeable of the others being at Chateaugay Falls; on the Opalescent, and higher up on the east and west branches of the Ausable. Neither are we to say how or when they were formed; the walls that now are from ten to fifty feet apart, were undoubtedly some time united and solid; projections on the one hand are often faced by corresponding depressions on the other; layers of rock on one side duplicated on the other. Prof. Emmons, State geologist, found here petrified specimens of the lowest or first orders of animal life, and ripple marks made when the rock was in its plastic state; above these, in successive layers, towers seventy feet of solid rock."

Lateral fissures extend into this chasm, through which stairways have been constructed for the accommodation of tourists; the lands on either side, with improvements made, are now in the control of a corporation.

*Split Rock.*—This natural monument is noticed by travelers passing down Lake Champlain, in the town of Essex. It rises about thirty feet from the water and is separated from the main promontory by a narrow fissure. Its surface comprises half an acre of land. It was probably separated from the promontory by the gradual action of the elements.

*Rainbow Falls.*—A beautiful cascade in Keene, on Rainbow brook about a mile from the Ausable ponds. The fall is more than one hundred feet clear and vertical. It is in a wild and romantic locality, amid scenery that well repays the visitor for his labor in reaching it.

*The Hunter's Pass.*—Between parallel precipices on Dix's Peak and Nipple-Top, on the line between North Hudson and Keene, is a pass known by the above name, which is in many respects the equal of Indian Pass. It is in the depths of a wild and rugged region and, therefore, seldom visited.

---

<sup>1</sup> WALLACE'S *Descriptive Guide to the Adirondacks*.



*Mineral Springs.* — A number of mineral springs have been found in the county and a few of them have developed excellent qualities in the water. These will be definitely described in the histories of the towns where they exist.

## CHAPTER III.

### INDIAN OCCUPATION.

Improbability of More than Temporary Occupation by Indians—Lake Champlain as a Highway for Indian Canoes — Origin of the Name, "Adirondack" — Legendary Indian Conquest in North Elba — Traces of Occupation Anterior to the Indians — Claimants to Territory of Essex County at the Advent of the Europeans — Tradition of the Origin of the Iroquois League — Its Peculiarities—Military Statutes of the Confederacy — Personal and Social Habits and Characteristics — Missionary Labors.

FEW authentic traces of permanent Indian occupation of the territory of Essex county, or, indeed, of any portion of the Great Wilderness of Northern New York, have been discovered; but that it was traversed to a considerable extent, particularly for hunting and fishing, by the tribes of the Algonquin<sup>1</sup> nation who inhabited the valley of the St. Lawrence and portions of Canada, and by the eastern tribes of the Five Nations of the powerful Iroquois, a part of whose extended domain now constitutes the State of New York, is a fact conclusively established. That the more mountainous and rugged portions of the wilderness immediately westward from Lake Champlain and constituting a part of the present Essex county, was not made the site of Indian villages, is probably due to the forbidding natural features of the region and the fact that it was frontier territory to both the northern Indian nations and the Mohawks, the eastern most tribe of the Iroquois Confederacy.<sup>2</sup>

But along the eastern boundary of this mountainous and almost impassable region extends a portion of the beautiful Champlain valley, which was formed by the Almighty into an unsurpassed natural highway for the canoes of the Indians through the waters of the long, narrow lake, reaching, with its smaller sister above (Lake George), from the very doors of the "Long House" of the

<sup>1</sup>The name "Montagners," was applied to all the St. Lawrence Indians, and was derived from a range of mountains extending northwesterly from near Quebec. — Dr. E. B. O'CALLAGHAN'S *Note on Champlain*.

<sup>2</sup>That the Adirondack (or Algonquin) nation, and after them the Iroquois, traversed if they did not inhabit the region, does not admit of a doubt. Tradition asserts that the partisan Rogers, so famous for his exploits at Lake George, destroyed in the absence of the warriors an Indian village on the "Plains of Abraham" in the present town of North Elba. He was pursued and overtaken by the warriors of the tribe at the Boquet river, just below Elizabethtown, where a battle took place. — STREET'S *Indian Pass*.

conquering Iroquois to the territory of their enemies, the Adirondacks,<sup>1</sup> and other tribes of the north and west. Who will doubt that this beautiful highway was often in pre-historic times, as it was in later days, cut by the fugitive furrows that followed fleets of bark canoes, bearing victors or vanquished from bloody encounters, or parties of triumphant hunters laden with the spoils of a wonderful hunting-ground?

Upon this feature of our subject Mr. Watson says in his excellent work on Essex County: "The long and narrow tract of water known to us as Lake Champlain was doubtless the war-path of the Huron and Iroquois in their mutual hostile and sanguinary incursions. The mind may readily portray fleets of the Indian war-canoes, caparisoned in the gorgeous trappings of barbaric pomp, bounding over the dark and still waters of the lake, while the paddles kept tune to the cadence of their war-songs; or gliding stealthily along the silent shores, upon their mission of rapine and blood."

The lake was named by the Indians in their beautifully appropriate nomenclature, and doubtless with reference to its location and use, "Caniadere Guarante," or, "The Lake that is the Gate of the Country."<sup>2</sup>

In support of the tradition, which is quite obscure, of the conflict between Rogers and the Indians on the "Plains of Abraham," which has been mentioned, is the finding of numerous relics at the scene of the traditionary battle. These relics embrace remains of war weapons of both Europeans and Indians. Other vestiges of Indian occupation exist in the town of North Elba, indicating that at some former period large numbers of Indians congregated there, at least temporarily. Traces of Indian occupancy, in the form of rusty knives, hatchets, arrow-heads, pottery, etc., have been found in other localities; but these traces are very slight, except at North Elba, as noted, and around the Saranac lakes. Although without the present boundaries of Essex county, it is proper to state that here indubitable evidences of Indian occupation, even down to a comparatively recent date, have been found.

Alfred B. Street, who made considerable research in this direction, is authority for the statement that more than a hundred years ago a large tribe of the Saranac Indians inhabited the forests through which runs the Indian Carrying-Place (the celebrated Indian Carry, between the foot of the Upper Saranac lake and Stony Creek ponds, Franklin county), an old path named by

<sup>1</sup> This Indian name is derived from the Iroquois words "Ga-ron-dah" (trees) and "Ha-des" (they eat). Hence the word "Ha-de-ron-dack" (wood or tree-eaters). It was changed by the French, who dropped the "H" and pronounced the substituted "I" like the English "E." An Indian tradition says that many years ago a nation attacked the Iroquois, who drove them north around Saratoga and Lake Champlain, where they sued for peace; this was granted by the victors, who taunted them by saying they had become so powerless that they could no longer kill game in the forests, but would be forced to "eat trees."

<sup>2</sup> *Documentary History*. "Petaoubough,"—signifying a double pond or lake branching cut into two—is another Indian appellation, referring, probably, to its connection with Lake George.—R. W. LIVINGSTON.



them "the Eagle-nest Trail of the Saranacs." The site of the clearing held their village and council-place. They claimed as their exclusive hunting-grounds not only the Eagle-nest forests, but those of the Wampum Waters (the Stony Creek ponds), the Stream of the Snake (Stony Creek) and the Sounding River (the Raquette), from the lake of the Blue Mountain to Wild Mountain at the Leap of the Foaming Panther (Perciefield Falls).

In other portions of the northern wilderness, but without the boundaries of Essex county, still more definite traces of Indian occupation have been discovered. Many of these traces also strongly indicate the presence of a people long anterior to the Indians and possessed of far more skill in the rude arts. It is not our purpose to enter at all into the fruitless argument to prove or disprove the theory of the occupation of this continent by an earlier and more intelligent race than the Indians; but many indications render such a theory plausible, or else show that the Indians themselves had retrograded previous to the coming of Europeans, as they have since. "Nothing is more common than to find along the lands that skirt the fertile bottoms which form the shores of the tributaries of the St. Lawrence, the broken remains of rude pottery, seldom sufficiently entire to enable one to determine the original form, and usually impressed, while in a plastic state, with various fanciful figures, differing from each other in fragments of different utensils, but possessing a general resemblance. Not unfrequently a rude resemblance to the human face is noticed on these fragments. The material of this *terra cotta* is usually clay and coarse sand, generally well tempered and baked. Stone axes, gouges and chisels, flint arrow-heads, amulets and beads of steatite, and other personal ornaments, implements of bone, apparently used as needles and as tools for marking impressions upon their pottery, and fragments of bones and broken shells, the remains of ancient feasts, indicate in broken and disconnected, but still intelligible language, the pursuits of our predecessors upon this soil."<sup>1</sup>

Many of these relics are now in possession of persons living in the northeastern counties of the State, and some of them show the workmanship of master hands and are equal in form and detail to the steel implements of modern days. Traces of mounds and trench inclosures have also been found, particularly in St. Lawrence and Franklin counties, all telling in mute language of a race that has passed away forever.

To conclude a necessarily brief and imperfect consideration of the subject of Indian occupation of Essex county, it may be stated that at the time of the advent of Europeans to this region, this territory and the surrounding vicinity was at least nominally claimed by the Mohawks, the eastern branch of the Iroquois Five Nations, while at the same time it was a part of the frontier of that great confederacy, as it was also of the northern and northwestern tribes.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> HOUGH'S *History of St. Lawrence and Franklin Counties*—1853.

<sup>2</sup>The Algonquins were a large family occupying (at the advent of the Europeans) all Canada, New England, a part of New York and Pennsylvania; all New Jersey, Delaware, Maryland and Virginia;



The Iroquois<sup>1</sup> Indians who, we have presumed, were the nominal possessors of the territory treated in these pages, comprised originally five related tribes or clans, mostly within the present State of New York; they were called Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas and Senecas, and were located across the State from east to west in the order just named. Indian tradition ascribes their origin to Hiawatha, the incarnation of wisdom, about the beginning of the fifteenth century. He came from his celestial home to dwell with the Onondagas, where he taught the related tribes all that was desirable to promote their welfare. Under his immediate tutelage the Onondagas became the wisest counselors, the bravest warriors and the most successful hunters. While Hiawatha was thus quietly living, the tribes were attacked by a powerful enemy from the north, who laid waste their villages and slaughtered men, women and children indiscriminately; utter destruction seemed inevitable. In this extremity they turned to Hiawatha who, after thoughtful contemplation, advised a grand council of all that could be gathered of the tribes, saying, "our safety is not alone in the club and dart, but in wise counsels."<sup>2</sup>

The council was held on Onondaga lake and the fires burned for three days, awaiting the presence of Hiawatha. He was troubled with forebodings of ill-fortune and had resolved to not attend the council; but in response to the importunities of messengers, he set out with his beautiful daughter. Approaching the council he was welcomed by all, who then turned their eyes upward to behold a volume of cloudy darkness descending among them. All fled except Hiawatha and his daughter, who calmly awaited the impending calamity. Suddenly and with a mighty swoop a huge bird, with long and distended wings descended upon the beautiful maiden and crushed her to death, itself perishing with the collision. For three days and nights Hiawatha gave himself up to exhibitions of the most poignant grief. At the end of that period he regained his wonted demeanor and took his seat in the council which, after some deliberation, adjourned for one day. On the following day Hiawatha addressed the council, giving to each of the five nations their location and degree of importance, as we have already noted. The advice of the venerable sage was deliberated upon until the next day, when the celebrated league of the Iroquois was formed and its details perfected.

Whether or not there is any foundation in fact for this traditionary source

---

eastern North Carolina above Cape Fear, a large part of Kentucky and Tennessee, and all north and west of those States east of the Mississippi. They were the most powerful of the eight distinct Indian Nations in possession of the country when discovered by the whites. Within the folds of this nation were the Huron-Iroquois, occupying a greater portion of Canada south of the Ottawa river and the region between Lake Ontario and Lakes Erie and Huron, nearly all of the State of New York and a part of Pennsylvania and Ohio, along the southern shores of Lake Erie.—LOSSING.

<sup>1</sup> The name "Iroquois" was given these Indians by the French, who prefixed the name "Huron," because their language indicated the Hurons, who were seated on the shores of Georgian Bay, to be a part of the Iroquois family, and, like them, were isolated in the midst of the Algonquins when discovered by the French.—LOSSING.

<sup>2</sup> RUTTENBAR.

of the confederacy, it grew into one of the most remarkable and powerful combinations known to history, a marvel to civilized nations and stamping the genius that gave it birth as of the highest order.

The tradition further relates that Hiawatha now considered his mission on earth as ended and delivered to his brothers a farewell address, which concluded as follows: "Lastly, I have now assisted you to form an everlasting league and covenant of strength and friendship for your future safety and protection. If you preserve it, without the admission of other people, you will always be free, numerous and mighty. If other nations are admitted to your councils they will sow jealousies among you and you will become enslaved, few and feeble. Remember these words, they are the last you will hear from the lips of Hiawatha. Listen, my friends, the great master of breath calls me to go. I have patiently waited his summons. I am ready; farewell."

As his voice ceased the air was musical with sweet sounds and while they listened to the melody, Hiawatha was seen seated in his white canoe, rising in mid air till the clouds shut out the sight, and the melody, gradually becoming fainter, finally ceased.<sup>1</sup>

Previous to the formation of the Iroquois confederacy each of the five nations composing it was divided into five tribes. When the union was established, each tribe transferred one-fifth of its numbers to every other nation, thus giving each nation their several tribes, named as follows; tortoise, wolf, bear, beaver, deer, potatoe, snipe, heron. The snipe and heron correspond with the little plover, and the hawk with the eagle of the early French writers. Some authors of repute omit the name of the Potatoe tribe altogether. These tribes were formed into two divisions, the second subordinate to the first, which was composed of the four first named. Each tribe constituted what may be called a family and its members, who were all considered brothers and sisters, were also brothers and sisters of the members of all the other tribes having the same device. It will be seen that an indissoluble bond was thus formed by the ties of consanguinity, which was still further strengthened by the marriage relation. It was held to be an abomination for two persons of the same tribe to intermarry; every individual family must therefore contain members from at least two tribes. The child belonged to the tribe, or clan, of the mother, not the father, and all rank, titles and possessions passed through the female line. The chief was almost invariably succeeded by a near relative, and always on the female side; but if these were unfit, then a council of the tribe chose a successor

<sup>1</sup> Both reason and tradition point to the conclusion that the Iroquois originally formed one undivided people. Sundered, like countless other tribes, by dissension, caprice, or the necessities of a hunter's life, they separated into five distinct nations. — PARKMAN'S *Jesuits*.

By the early French writers, the Mohawks and Oneidas were styled the lower or inferior Iroquois; while the Onondagas, Cayugas and Senecas were denominated the upper or superior Iroquois, because they were located near the sources of the St. Lawrence. \* \* \* To the Mohawks was always accorded the high consideration of furnishing the war captain, or "Tekarahogea," of the confederacy, which distinguished title was retained with them until the year 1814. — CLARK'S *Onondaga*.



from among remoter kindred, in which case he was nominated by the matron of the late chief's household. The choice was never made adverse to popular will. Chiefs and sachems held their offices only through courteous, winning behavior and their general good qualities and conduct. There was another council of a popular character, in which any one took part whose age and experience qualified him to do so; it was merely the gathered wisdom of the nation. The young warriors also had their councils; so, too, did the women. All the government of this "remarkable example of an almost pure democracy in government"<sup>1</sup> was exercised through councils, which were represented by deputies in the councils of the sachems. In this peculiar blending of individual, tribal, national and federal interests lay the secret of that immense power which for more than a century resisted the hostile efforts of the French; which caused them for nearly a century to be alike courted and feared by the contending French and English colonies, and enabled them to exterminate or subdue their neighboring Indian nations, until they were substantially dictators of the continent,<sup>2</sup> gaining them the title of "The Romans of the New World."

The military dominated the civil power in the league, and the army, which was supplied by volunteers, was always full. Every able-bodied man was subject to military duty, to shirk which was an everlasting cause of disgrace. The warriors called councils when they saw fit and approved or disapproved of public measures. But their knowledge of what is now considered military science, while vastly better than that of many of their neighbors, was insignificant when viewed from a modern civilized standpoint. They seldom took advantage of their great numbers and acted in concert as a great confederacy, but usually carried on their warfare in detached tribes or parties. Their bravery, however, and their strategy in their peculiar methods of fighting, are unquestioned. In the forest they were a terrible foe, while in an open country they could not successfully contend with European disciplined soldiery; but they made up for this, to a large extent, by their self-confidence, vindictiveness and overwhelming desire for ascendancy and triumph. There is considerable difference in the writings of authors as to the true military status of the Iroquois.<sup>3</sup>

While the Iroquois Indians were superior in mental capacity and less improvident than the Algonquins and other nations, there is little indication that they were ever inclined to improve the conditions in which they were found by the Europeans. They were closely attached to their warrior and hunter

---

<sup>1</sup> LOSSING.

<sup>2</sup> The Iroquois league or confederacy was given an Indian name signifying "They form a cabin," which was fancifully changed to "The long house," the eastern door of which was kept by the Mohawks, and the western by the Senecas, with the great council fire in the center, with the Onondagas.

<sup>3</sup> They reduced war to a science, and all their movements were directed by system and policy. They never attacked a hostile country till they had sent out spies to explore and designate its vulnerable points, and when they encamped they observed the greatest circumspection to guard against surprise. Whatever superiority of force they might have, they never neglected the use of stratagem, employing all the crafty wiles of the Carthaginians. — DE WITT CLINTON.



life; hospitable to friends, but ferocious and cruel to their enemies; of no mean mental capacity, but devoting their energies to the lower, if not the lowest, forms of enjoyment and animal gratification; they had little regard for the marriage tie, and lasciviousness and unchastity were the rule; their dwellings, even among the more stationary tribes, were rude, their food gross and poor, and their domestic habits and surroundings unclean and barbaric; their dress was ordinarily of skins of animals, until the advent of the whites, and was primitive in character; woman was degraded into a mere beast of burden; while they believed in a supreme being, they were powerfully swayed by superstition, incantations by "medicine men," dreams and the like; their feasts were exhibitions of debauchery and gluttony.

Such are some of the more prominent characteristics of the race encountered by Samuel Champlain when he floated up the beautiful lake that borders Essex county, two hundred and seventy-five years ago, and welcomed them with the first volley of bullets from deadly weapons — a policy that has been followed with faithful pertinacity by his civilized successors. These Indians possessed redeeming features of character and practice; but these were so strongly dominated by their barbaric way of living and their savage traits, that years of faithful missionary labor among them by the Jesuits and others was productive of little good.<sup>1</sup>

The society of Jesus, or Jesuits, was founded in 1539 and planted the cross amid the most discouraging circumstances, overcoming almost insurmountable obstacles, in Europe, Asia, Africa and America. When Champlain opened the way for French dominion in the latter country, the task of bearing the Christian religion to the natives was assigned to this noble and unselfish body of devotees. While their primary object was to spread the Gospel, their secondary and scarcely less influential purpose was to extend the dominion of France. Within three years after the restoration of Canada to France, in 1736, there were fifteen Jesuit priests in the province, and they rapidly increased and extended their labors to most of the Indian nations on the continent, including the powerful Iroquois.

In 1654, when peace was temporarily established between the French and the Five Nations, Father Bablon was permitted to found a mission and build a chapel in the Mohawk Valley. The chapel was built in a day. "For marbles and precious metals," he wrote, "we employed only bark; but the path to heaven is as open through a roof of bark as through arched ceilings of silver and gold." War was again enkindled and the Jesuits were forced to flee from the Iroquois; but their labors never ceased while opportunity was afforded.

---

<sup>1</sup> In 1712 Rev. William Andrews was sent among the Mohawks by the society for propagating the Gospel, to succeed Rev. Thoroughgood Moor; but he abandoned the work in 1719, failing in it as his predecessor had. Says Hammond's *History of Madison County*: "He became discouraged and asked to be recalled, saying, 'There is no hope of making them better — heathen they are and heathen they still must be.'" This is but one example of most of the missionary efforts among the Indians.

There were twenty-four missionaries who labored among the Iroquois between the years 1657 and 1769. We are directly interested only in those who sought converts among the Mohawks. These were Isaac Jogues, the recital of whose career in the Indian country forms one of the most thrilling chapters of history. He was with the Mohawks as a prisoner from August, 1642, to the same month of the next year, and as a missionary with the same nation in 1646, in October of which year he was killed. Simon Le Moyne was with the Mohawks about two months in 1655; again in 1656 and the third time from August, 1657, to May, 1658. He died in Canada in 1665. Francis Joseph Bressani was imprisoned by the Mohawks about six months in 1644. Julien Garnier was sent to the Mohawks in May, 1668, and passed on to the Onondagas and Senecas. Jacques Bruyas came from the Onondagas to the Mohawks in July, 1667, left for the Oneidas in September and returned in 1672, remaining several years. Jacques Frémin came in July, 1667, and remained about a year. Jean Pierron was sent in the same year and also remained about one year. Francis Boniface labored here from 1668 to 1673, when he was succeeded by Francis Vaillant De Gueslis.

These faithful missionaries were followed in later years by such noble workers as Rev. Henry Barclay, John Ogilvie, Revs. Messrs. Spencer, Timothy Woodbridge and Gideon Hawley, Rev. Dr. Eleazer Wheelock, Rev. Samuel Kirkland, Bishop Hobart, Rev. Eleazer Williams, Rev. Dan Barnes (Methodist) and others of lesser note, all of whom labored faithfully and with varying degrees of perseverance for the redemption of the Iroquois. But all were forced to admit that their efforts as a whole were unsatisfactory and discouraging.<sup>1</sup>

Later religious and educational work among the Indians, even down to the present time, while yielding, perhaps, sufficient results to justify its prosecution, has constantly met with the most discouraging obstacles among the tribes themselves.<sup>2</sup>

The advent of European nations on the American continent was the forerunner of the downfall of the Iroquois confederacy, and doubtless the ultimate extinction of the Indian race. The French invasion of 1693 and that of three years later cost the confederacy half of its warriors; their allegiance to the

<sup>1</sup> The Rev. Mr. Kirkland, who acts as missionary among the Oneidas, has taken all the pains that man can take, but his whole flock are Indians still, and like the bear, which you can muffle and lead out to dance to the sound of music, becomes again a bear when his muffler is removed and the music ceases. The Indians will attend public worship and sing extremely well, following Mr. Kirkland's notes; but whenever the service is over they wrap themselves in their blankets, and either stand like cattle on the sunny side of a house, or lie before a fire. — *Doc. History.*

Mr. Kirkland was one of the very ablest and most self-sacrificing of the missionaries, and what he could not accomplish in his work it may safely be concluded others could not. In reference to his labors an anonymous writer, in his *Massachusetts Historical Collection* (1792), says: "I cannot help being of the opinion that Indians . . . never were intended to live in a state of civilized society. There never was, I believe, an instance of an Indian forsaking his habits and savage manners, any more than a bear his ferocity."

<sup>2</sup> There is little existing evidence that the Jesuits labored in the vicinity of Lake Champlain, but Mr. Watson deems it improbable that they did not.



British crown (with the exception of the Oneidas) in the Revolutionary War, proving to be an allegiance with a falling power, — these causes, operating with the dread of vengeance from the American colonists who had so frequently suffered at the hands of the savages, broke up the once powerful league and scattered its members to a large extent upon the friendly soil of Canada, or left them at the mercy of the State and general government, which consigned them to reservations.

In this connection it is deemed for the interest of readers to insert a number of Indian names as applied to rivers, lakes, islands, localities, etc., in the present State of New York, or near thereto, with their probable meaning as developed by various investigators: —

“Chateaugay. — This is by some supposed to be an Indian name; but it is French, meaning gay castle. The St. Regis Indians call it ‘O-sar-he-hon,’ a place so close or difficult that the more one tries to extricate himself the worse he is off. This probably relates to the narrow gorge near Chateaugay village.

“Indian River. — On Morgan’s map ‘O-je-quck.’ The St. Regis name it by the same appellation as Black Lake, which see farther on.

“Raquette River. — A French word, meaning a snow shoe. It is said to have been first so called by a Frenchman named Parisein, long before settlements were begun in that region, and that the name was suggested by the shape of a marsh near its mouth. The Iroquois name, ‘Ni-ha-na-wa-te,’ or rapid river, is peculiarly applicable. It is said that Colonel Louis, the Indian chief, told Benjamin Raymond, when surveying, that its Indian name meant ‘noisy river,’ for which reason it has often been written ‘Raquet.’

“St. Lawrence river. — ‘Cat-a-ro-qui,’ said to be French or Huron. Signification unknown. On Morgan’s map, ‘Ga-na-wa-ge.’

“St. Regis river and village. — ‘Ak-wis-sas-ne,’ where the partridge drums.

“Salmon river. — ‘Kent-si-a-ko-wa-ne,’ big fish river.

“Black lake. — ‘O-tsi-kwa-ke,’ where the ash tree grows with large knobs for making clubs.

“Champlain. — ‘Ro-tsi-ich-ni,’ the coward spirit. The Iroquois are said to have originally possessed an obscure mythological notion of three supreme beings or spirits, the good spirit, the bad spirit, and the coward spirit. The latter inhabited an island in Lake Champlain, where it died, and from this it derived the name above given.

“Hochelaga. — Former name of Montreal, or its vicinity.

“‘O-ser-a-ke.’ — Beaver dam.

“Canada. — ‘Ka-na-ta,’ village.

“Montreal. — ‘Ti-o-ti-a-ke,’ deep water by the side of shallow.

“New York. — ‘Ka-no-no,’ signification not known.

“Quebec. — ‘Te-kia-tan-ta-ri-kon,’ twin, or double mountains.

"Saratoga. — 'Sa-ra-ta-ke,' a place where the track of the heel may be seen, in allusion to a locality, said to be in the neighborhood, where depressions like footsteps may be seen on the rock.

"Schenectady. — 'Ska-na-ta-ti,' on the other side of the pines.

"Ticonderoga. — 'Tia-on-ta-ro-ken,' a fork or point between two lakes. — HOUGH.

"Ticonderoga. — 'Che-on-de-ro-ga,' where the waters meet. It has eleven other Indian names. — STREET.

"Mount Marcy. — 'Tahawus,' he splits the sky.

"Mount Seward. — 'Ou-kor-lah,' the great eye.

"Santanoni. — 'Si-non-bo-wanne,' the great mountain.

"Mount McIntyre. — 'He-no-ga,' home of the thunder.

"Mount Colden. — 'Ou-no-war-lah,' scalp mountain, from the baring of the rocky peak by slides.

"Bald Peak. — (North Hudson) 'O-no-ro-no-rum,' bald head.

"Whiteface. — 'Thei-a-no-gu-en,' white head. With reference to the naked white rock at its summit; also, 'Wa-ho-par-te-nie.'

"Hurricane Peak. — 'No-do-ne-yo,' hill of the wind.

"Mount Pharaoh. — 'On-de-wa,' black mountain.

"'Kayadarosseras.' — The lake county.

"Indian Pass. — 'He-no-do-wa-da,' the path of the thunderer. Also, 'Osten-wanne,' great rock; 'Otne-yar-heh,' the stonish giants; and 'Ga-nos-gwah,' giants clothed with stone.

"Whiteface Clove. — 'Kur-loo-na,' spot of the death song. From the murmur of the pines in the clove.

"Ausable Forks. — 'Tei-o-ho-ho-gen,' the forks of the river.

"Flume of the Opalescent river. — 'Gwi-en-dau-qua,' a hanging spear.

"The Iron Dam at the village of the Upper Works. — 'Tsi-nag-she,' place of beavers.

"Lake Champlain. — 'Caniadare Guarante,' the door of the country. Also, 'Peta-ou-bough,' a double lake branching into two — with reference to Lake George. — STREET.

"Split Rock. — 'Re-gioch-ne,' or, Regio rock, or Rogeo. From the name of a Mohawk Indian drowned at the rock. It denoted the boundary between the Iroquois and northern Indians.

"Lake George. — 'An-dia-ta-roc-ti,' the place where the lake narrows, or, where the lake shuts itself. Also, 'Tsi-non-drossa,' and 'Caniadere-oit,' tail of the lake, namely, part south of Ticonderoga. Likewise, 'Ka-nor-do-ro,' narrows of the lake; and 'Horicon,' also tail of the lake, namely, appendage to Lake Champlain. Although the latter name was affixed by the novelist Cooper, taken from an Indian tribe, yet for its beauty, euphony, and adaptation, it should be adopted as the sole name. — STREET.



"Lake Henderson. — 'Ga-nu-da-yu,' handsome lake.

"Lake Colden. — 'Ta-wis-ta-a,' the mountain cup.

"Avalanche Lake. — 'Ta-ne-o-da-eh,' lofty lake, or, lake high up. (Lies 2,900 feet above tide).

"Pharaoh Lake. — 'On-nis-ske,' white or silver lake.

"Ausable Ponds. — 'Ga-wis-da-ga-o,' two goblets side by side.

"Schroon Lake. — 'Sca-ni-a-dar-oon,' a large lake. Abbreviated to 'Scaroon,' hence Schroon. The above is a Mohawk word found in old land papers, applied to Schroon lake. In addition, 'Ska-ne-ta-no-wa-na,' the largest lake. Also, 'Scarona,' the name of an Indian girl who leaped over a precipice from her French lover and was drowned. Likewise, 'Rogh-quanon-da-go,' child of the mountain.

"Schroon River. — 'Gain-bou-a-gwe,' crooked river.

"Hudson River. — 'Co-ha-ta-te-a,' (Mohawk) great river having mountains beyond the (Cahoh) Cohoes falls. Also 'Sha-te-muc,' (Mohegan) from 'Shata,' a pelican or swan. The reason for the name is not known."

In Mr. Street's *Indian Pass* he gives the derivation of the following names of mountains: Mount Marcy derives its name from William L. Marcy; Mount Seward, from William H. Seward; Dix's Peak, from John A. Dix; Mount McIntyre, from Archibald McIntyre; Mount Henderson, from David Henderson; Mount Robertson, from Archibald Robertson; Mount Colden (this mountain was formerly called Mount McMartin, from Duncan McMartin, but subsequently named after David C. Colden); Wallface derives from the wall of Indian Pass; Whiteface, from the white feldspar at its summit, bared by slides; the Noon Mark, from the sun standing over its top at noon; Big Pitch-off, from a leaning rock of 500 feet at the northeast corner of its crest; Little Pitch-off, from its impending appearance; and both also from Pitch-off Mountain; the Gothics, from their dark, wild aspect; the Raven derives from such a bird shot upon the mountain by the first explorer for the State road from Sandy Hill to the Canada line. Wood Hill, from its leafy look; the Cobble, generally supposed to be from the rock resting on the summit, but more evidently from its want of being "cobbled" or mended, or, as the phrase now goes, "reconstructed;" Hurricane Peak, from a lurking wind rushing at all that climb the ascent; Boquet river, named by William Gilliland, from the flowers upon its banks. Some assert it derives its name from Colonel Boquet, who encamped upon its borders, but it bore the name before his appearance. Others derive it from baquet, the French for bucket. Others again from bosquet, a thicket.

## CHAPTER IV.

## EUROPEAN DISCOVERY AND OCCUPATION.

The First European Colonists — Discoveries by Columbus and His Immediate Successors — Competition for the New World Territory — New France and its Colonization — Failure of the Scheme — The Second Attempt and its Failure — Final Success—Champlain's Advent — Explorations under De Chastes and De Monts — Champlain's Colony of 1608 — Founding of Quebec — Champlain's Expedition against the Iroquois — The First Battle — Henry Hudson and Dutch Colonization — The English Colonies at Jamestown and Plymouth Rock — Claims of three European Powers — Subsequent Career of Champlain — Fortunes of New France.

BEFORE we proceed to the consideration of events immediately preceding and directly connected with the settlement of the Champlain valley, let us briefly glance at the more prominent earlier occurrences which prepared the way for it.

It is now scarcely four hundred years since the occurrence of the event which began the civilization of the American continent by the race who are now its possessors ; and during the ages that preceded that event, no grander country in all respects ever awaited the advance of civilization and enlightenment. With climate and soil diversified between almost the widest extremes ; with thousands of miles of ocean shores indented by magnificent harbors to welcome the world's commerce ; with many of the largest rivers of the globe intersecting and draining its territory and forming natural commercial highways ; with a system of lakes so grand in proportions as to entitle them to the name of inland seas ; with mountains, hills and valleys laden with the richest minerals and almost exhaustless fuel ; and with scenery unsurpassed for grandeur, it needed only the coming of the Caucasian to transform a continent of wilderness inhabited by savages, into the free, enlightened republic which is to-day the wonder and the admiration of the civilized world.

The first Europeans to visit America were Scandinavians, who colonized Iceland in 875, Greenland in 983 and about the year 1000 had pushed their discoveries as far southward as the State of Massachusetts. But it was towards the close of the fifteenth century before the country became known to southern Europe, a discovery accidentally made in a quest of a westerly route to India and China. In 1492 the Genoese, Christopher Columbus, set out on a voyage of discovery under the patronage of the Spanish power, and in that and the two succeeding years made his tropical discoveries. The Venetian sailor, John Cabot, was commissioned by Henry VII, of England, in 1497, to voyage to the new territory and take possession of it in the name of England. He discovered New Foundland and portions adjacent. In 1500 the coast of Labrador and the entrance to the Gulf of St. Lawrence were explored by two brothers from Portugal, named Cortereal. In 1508 Aubert discovered the St. Law-



rence, and four years later in 1512 Ponce de Leon discovered Florida. Magellan, the Portuguese navigator, passed through the straits which now bear his name in 1519, and was the first to circumnavigate the globe. In 1534 Jacques Cartier explored the St. Lawrence as far as Montreal, and five years later Fernando de Soto explored Florida. In 1578 an English navigator named Drake discovered Upper California. These brief data indicate that not a century had passed after the discovery of Columbus, before the different maritime powers of Europe were in active competition for the rich prizes supposed to exist in the new world.

While the Spaniards were pushing their acquisitions in the South, the French had gained a foothold in the northern part of the continent. Here the cod fisheries of New Foundland and the prospect of a more valuable trade in furs opened as early as the beginning of the sixteenth century by Frenchmen, Basques, Bretons and Normans, held out the most glowing inducements. In 1518 Baron Livy settled there (New Foundland) and in 1524 Francis I, of France, sent thither Jean Verrazzani, a noted Florentine mariner, on a voyage of exploration. He sailed along the coast 2,100 miles in the frail vessels of the period and returned safely to his country. On his coast voyage he entered a large harbor, which is supposed to have been that of New York, where he remained fifteen days; it is believed that his crew were the first Europeans to land on the soil of the State of New York. He proceeded north as far as Labrador and gave to the whole region the name of New France, thus opening the way for the future contest between France and England.

Ten years later (1534) the same French king sent Jacques Cartier, a St. Malo pilot, to the new country; he made two voyages and ascended the St. Lawrence river as far as Montreal (Hochelaga). As he sailed up the broad stream on St. Lawrence day (August 10th, 1534) he applied to the river the name of the illustrious saint whose memory is perpetuated by that day. In the following year Cartier sailed from France with a fleet which bore many of the nobility of France, who departed for the new country filled with high hopes and bearing the blessings of the church; they were to begin the colonization of "New France." They ascended the river and "moored at what is now known as the Isle of Orleans. Cartier from this point penetrated to the Indian town of Hochelaga, and to this he gave the name of Mont-Royal, the beautiful and opulent Montreal of modern times."<sup>1</sup> The explorer was warmly greeted by the Indians who tendered him the utmost homage and hospitality. The party of Frenchmen passed the ensuing winter at the Isle of Orleans, suffering much from the rigors of the climate, and, having taken formal possession of the country with a deal more of pomp and ceremony than of real acquisition and settlement, they abandoned their colonization scheme early in the following season and returned to France. As a beginning of the long list of needless

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON'S *Essex County*.

and disgraceful betrayals, treacheries and other civilized (?) abuses to which the too confiding natives were subjected by the different European nations, Cartier inveigled into his vessel *Donnegana*, the Indian chieftain, who had been a generous and hospitable host, and bore him with several others into hopeless captivity and final death.

The failure of this colonization movement and the severity of the northern winters prevented further attempts in the same direction for several years. In 1540 Cartier was sent back with Jean Francis de Robarval, a gentleman of Picardy, who was appointed by his king as lieutenant-general over the "new countries of Canada, Hochelaga and Saguenay;" this commission conferred power over a vast territory with the plenary powers of vice-royalty.<sup>1</sup>

In 1543 Robarval came over the second time, in company with the pilot Jean Alphonse, of Saintouge, when they took possession of Cape Breton. At this time the settlement at Quebec was begun. But Robarval was no more successful than had been his predecessor in colonization or in pushing discoveries, and for the half century succeeding his advent to New France, during which period the rulers of the mother country found their hands full of business in the religious wars which were occurring at home, little or nothing was accomplished in that direction. In 1598 the next unsuccessful attempt was made to colonize the region of the St. Lawrence, by pouring out upon the country the convicts from the French prisons; and it was finally left to private enterprise, stimulated by the hope of large gains from the fur trade, to make the first successful effort towards the permanent occupation of the country.

By the year 1600 Chauvin had obtained a broad patent, which formed the basis of a trade monopoly, and repeated and prosperous voyages had been made. This commercial success stimulated others to enter the same field, and in 1603 Aylmer De Chastes and a company of Rouen merchants organized a company, the existence of which becomes of paramount historic importance as having introduced to the field of his later great work, Samuel de Champlain, discoverer of the lake and the territory of which this history treats, and the real founder of New France, as well as the most illustrious of those who guided its destinies.

"Champlain was born at Brouage, a seaport situated on the Bay of Biscay. Addicted to an intercourse with the sea by the associations of his boyhood, near the most tempestuous waters of Western Europe, he gratified his instincts by a connection at an early age with the royal marine of his native country. Although a Catholic by birth and sentiment, he followed in the civil wars of France the 'Banner of Navarre.' When that cause had triumphed he received a pension from the gratitude of his liberal but impoverished leader. Too active and ardent to indulge in the relaxations of peace, he conceived the

---

<sup>1</sup>This parchment title and these titular functions overshadowed a vast region, and extended in every direction along the gulf and river St. Lawrence, comprehending in its wide domain the present limits of New England and Northern New York. — WATSON.



design of a personal exploration of the colonial possessions of Spain, and to thus obtain a knowledge of their condition and resources, which was studiously veiled from the world by the jealous policy of that government. His scheme was sanctioned by the wise and sagacious head of the French administration. Through the influence of a relative in that service Champlain secured the command of a ship in the Spanish West India fleet. This singular position, not, perhaps, in perfect accordance with modern conceptions of professional honor, was occupied two years, and when he returned to France his mind was stored with the most valuable information and his journal, laden with the results of keen observation of the regions he had visited, was quaintly illustrated by his uncultivated pencil."<sup>1</sup>

De Champlain must have been born with the uncontrollable instinct of investigation and desire for knowledge of the material world that has always strongly marked the great explorers. He made a voyage and landed at Vera Cruz, penetrated to the city of Mexico and visited Panama. More, his journal shows that he conceived the idea of a ship canal across the isthmus by which "the voyage to the South Sea might be shortened by more than fifteen hundred leagues."

When Champlain returned to France he encountered De Chastes, who had just obtained from his government the privilege of bearing to the new country the Cross and there extending the dominion of France. Champlain saw here his opportunity, while De Chastes appreciated at its true value the peculiar qualities of the navigator. They became associated and Champlain, accompanied by Pont-Grevé, a skillful navigator, embarked in a simple vessel and sailed from Honfleur on the 5th of March for the St. Lawrence, which they reached after a short and prosperous voyage. Advancing up the noble stream to "Hochelaga" they found nothing left of the palisades described by Cartier sixty-eight years before, and but a remnant of the population that explorer had discovered, in the forms of a few wandering savages of another race and language. These natives excited Champlain's visions of immortal fame by describing to him in rough drawings the course of the majestic stream, the lakes of its source, and the surrounding rich country. He thereupon determined to give up his future years to the exploration of this new world, and returned to France imbued with that purpose. Here he found the abettor of this enterprise, De Chastes, dead; but his rights and privileges had passed to the Sieur de Monts, "a Protestant gentleman of character and high position." He had obtained from the government a patent which included in its scope a vast extent of territory, stretching from near the site of Philadelphia on the south to the Forty-sixth parallel on the north, and extending east and west indefinitely. Here he determined to found a colony which should enjoy among other blessings, freedom of religious belief and practice. But in gath-

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON'S *Essex County*.

ering his colonists his impartiality included all classes, from the nobleman to the convict from the prison, and all shades of religious conviction or of none at all. Such a gathering amid the surroundings that existed at that time on the St. Lawrence could scarcely hope to endure. De Monts made an effort to colonize Acadia, and also occupied a portion of Maine. A companion of his founded a colony at Port Royal, the first permanent European settlement north of St. Augustine. In all these projects Champlain was intimately associated, from 1604 to 1607, during which period he explored the shores of New England to Cape Cod. He published a chart of this coast, which proved to be of great value.

Finally the valuable prerogatives of De Monts were taken from him without scruple, and he conferred their privileges, as far as he was able, on the Baron de Pourtraincourt, with whom Champlain again sailed for "New France." They were accompanied by a considerable number of colonists. Reaching the coast of New England they explored it still farther and again returned to France.

In 1608 Champlain, having counseled his protectors that the banks of the St. Lawrence was a more propitious site for their new empire, he was sent with Pont-Grevé. They embarked in a small vessel laden with all of the necessities for the proposed colony, and materials with which to begin the fur trade. Sailing up the river they selected the bold promontory at the confluence of the St. Charles with the St. Lawrence and there founded Quebec. Here active and energetic labor began. The forests were felled, cabins erected and fortifications built, and a garden was planted.

In the succeeding September Pont-Grevé sailed for France, leaving Champlain with twenty-eight companions, to occupy the little settlement until his return in the spring with additional supplies and colonists. The winter was a terrible one to the little band; the scurvy broke out among them and when the vessel of Pont-Grevé came up the river in the spring, only eight survivors welcomed it and the comforts it brought for their relief.

To satisfy his thirst for exploration and conquest, Champlain prevailed upon Pont-Grevé to remain at Quebec, while he should unite with the Indians and march forth into the unknown country which they had described to him. They had said that the country they desired to conquer was thickly settled; that to reach it they must pass by a waterfall, thence into another lake, from the head of which there was a carrying-place to a river, which flowed towards the coast. This course of their intended march is clearly understood at this day as leading up Lake Champlain to Ticonderoga; thence up the outlet of Lake George past the falls; thence through Lake George to the Hudson river.

Accordingly, with this purpose Champlain made up his party of Indians (which was increased by the addition of sixty warriors at the mouth of the Sorel) and two Europeans and in May ascended that river to the Chambly rapids,



in twenty-four canoes, whence they reached "a great lake and gave it his own name." Passing along what now constitutes the eastern borders of Essex county, he saw what he thus mentions in his journal: "These parts, though agreeable, are not inhabited by any Indians, in consequence of their wars." On the other shore, though, he was assured by his companions, the Iroquois had many villages which embraced "beautiful valleys and fields fertile in corn, with an infinitude of other fruits." As they entered the great lake they saw "a number of beautiful islands filled with fine woods and prairies." "Game and wild animals abounded on these islands." He describes the larger islands and the rivers that discharged "into the lake surrounded by fine trees similar to those we have in France, with a quantity of vines, handsomer than I ever saw, and a great many chestnuts."<sup>1</sup>

Referring to the exuberance of fish in the lake, Champlain related some wild tales of his savage allies. Continuing their route on the west side of the lake, he says, "and contemplating the country, I saw very high mountains on the east side covered with snow," and he observed "others to the south not less high but without snow." The Indians informed him "that here were beautiful valleys and fields, fertile in corn, with an infinitude of other fruits, and that this country was inhabited by the Iroquois."<sup>2</sup>

In proceeding up the lake it was the practice of the Indians to send three of their canoes in advance, as night approached, and if no enemy was discovered, to retire in peace. Against "this bad habit of theirs" Champlain expostulated, but to little purpose. In this manner "they proceed until they approach an enemy's country," when they advance "stealthily by night, all in a body except the scouts, and retire by day into picket forts where they repose." Thus the party proceeded up the lake to their landing-place, a full and graphic account of which journey is contained in Champlain's journal. Following is his vivid description of his meeting and battle with the Iroquois:—

"Now on coming within about two or three days' journey of the enemy's quarters, we traveled only by night and rested by day. Nevertheless, they never omitted their usual superstition to ascertain whether their enterprise would be successful, and often asked me whether I had dreamed and seen their enemies.

"At nightfall we embarked in our canoes to continue our journey and as we advanced very softly and noiselessly, we encountered a war party of

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Watson says the wild grape vine is yet a striking feature in the natural products of the Champlain valley. He adds, "I conjecture that Champlain must have confounded the chestnut with the butternut tree, which occurs in abundance and of vast size in these localities."

<sup>2</sup> Upon this allusion Mr. Watson observes, "The presence of snow upon the mountains of Vermont, none of which exceeds 5,000 feet in height, in July is incredible, and Champlain was probably deceived by an optical illusion produced by clouds or mist. I am inclined, however, to conjecture that the words 'west' and 'east' have been transposed. From the east side of the lake he might have seen the bold and naked peak of 'Whiteface' from which that mountain derives its name. It is situated in the town of Wilmington."

Iroquois,<sup>1</sup> on the 29th day of the month, about 10 o'clock at night, at the point of a cape which juts into the lake on the west side. They and we began to shout, each seizing his arms. We withdrew toward the water and the Iroquois repaired on shore, and arranged all their canoes, the one beside the other, and began to hew down trees with villainous axes, which they sometimes get in war, and others of stone, and fortified themselves very securely. Our party, likewise, kept their canoes arranged the one along side of the other, tied to poles so as not to run adrift, in order to fight all together should need be. We were on the water about an arrow shot from their barricade.

"When they were armed and in order, they sent two canoes from the fleet to know if their enemies wished to fight, who answered they desired nothing else; but that just then there was not much light, and that we must wait for day to distinguish each other, and that they would give us battle at sunrise. This was agreed to by our party. Meanwhile the whole night was spent in dancing and singing, as well on one side as on the other, mingled with an infinitude of insults and other taunts, such as the little courage they had; how powerless their resistance against their arms, and that when day would break they should experience this to their ruin. Ours, likewise, did not fail in repartee; telling them they should witness the effects of arms they had never seen before; and a multitude of other speeches such as is usual at the siege of a town.

"After the one and the other had sung, danced and parliamented enough, day broke. My companions and I were always concealed, for fear the enemy should see us in preparing our arms the best we could, being, however, separated, each in one of the canoes of the savage Montaquars. After being equipped with light armor we took each an arquebus and went ashore. I saw the enemy leave their barricade; they were about 200 men, of strong and robust appearance, who were coming slowly toward us, with a gravity and assurance which greatly pleased me, led on by their chiefs. Ours were marching in similar order, and told me that those who bore three lofty plumes were the chiefs, and that there were but these three and they were to be recognized by those plumes, which were considerably larger than those of their companions, and that I must do all I could to kill them. I promised to do what I could, and that I was very sorry they could not clearly understand me, so as to give them the order and plan of attacking their enemies, as we should indubitably defeat them all, but there was no help for that; that I was very glad to encourage them and to manifest to them my good will when we should be engaged.

---

<sup>1</sup> The name "Iroquois," is used in the translation of Champlain's works, and also here, as best rendering the meaning clear to the reader; but it was, of course, not known at the time of the occurrence of these events. The Mohawks were known to the Dutch as the "Maquaes," and as "Agnies" to the Canadian Indians; to the latter the name of "Montagners" was applied, which was derived from a range of mountains extending northwesterly from near Quebec, as explained on the first page of this chapter.



"The moment we landed they began to run about two hundred paces toward their enemy, who stood firm, and had not perceived my companions, who went into the bush with some savages. Ours commenced calling me in a loud voice, and making way for me opened in two, and placed me at their head, marching about twenty paces in advance until I was within thirty paces of the enemy. The moment they saw me they halted, gazing at me and I at them. When I saw them preparing to shoot at us, I raised my arquebus, and aiming directly at one of the three chiefs, two of them fell to the ground by this shot; one of their companions received a wound of which he died afterwards. I had put four balls in my arquebus. Ours on witnessing a shot so favorable for them, set up such tremendous shouts that thunder could not have been heard; and yet, there was no lack of arrows on the one side or the other. The Iroquois were greatly astonished seeing two men killed so instantaneously, notwithstanding they were provided with arrow-proof armor,<sup>1</sup> woven of cotton thread and wood; this frightened them very much. Whilst I was reloading one of my companions in the bush fired a shot, which so astonished them anew, seeing their chief slain, that they lost courage, took to flight and abandoned their fort, hiding themselves in the depths of the forest, whither pursuing them, I killed some others. Our savages also killed several of them and took ten or twelve prisoners. The rest carried off the wounded. Fifteen or sixteen of ours were wounded by arrows; they were promptly cured.

"After having gained the victory they amused themselves plundering Indian corn and meal from the enemy; also their arms which they had thrown away to run the better. And having feasted, danced and sung, we returned, three hours afterward, with the prisoners.

"The place where the battle was fought is in forty-three degrees some minutes latitude, and I named it Lake Champlain."

This battle, the first of the long series that was to consecrate the locality with the blood of three contending powers, was doubtless fought near, if not directly upon the promontory afterwards occupied by Fort Ticonderoga. This opinion is advanced by the best authorities. The plan of the campaign and the route to be traveled, as described to Champlain by his savage companions, led beyond question up the outlet from Lake Champlain to Lake George. Hence there is no reason for assuming that they followed farther up the coast than Ticonderoga, and ample reason for believing that here would be their landing place. The Indians had told Champlain that after traversing the lake they "must pass by a water-fall and thence into another lake three or

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Watson says that "the allusion to this armor presents an interesting and suggestive inquiry. We know of the product of no indigenous plant, which Champlain might have mistaken for cotton. He must have been familiar with that plant. The fact he mentions implies either the existence of a commercial intercourse between the natives of the North and South; or perhaps the Mohawks may have secured the cotton as a trophy in some of their southern incursions." Without desiring to argue the question, it is still pertinent to state that it is doubtful if the Indians could at that early date have obtained cotton upon any southern incursion.

four leagues long." No clearer description of the route from one lake to the other can be written at this day.

"Standing upon his field of battle, proud and confident of the future, and gazing out upon the beautiful sheet of water which had borne him to the scene of his triumph, Champlain gave to it his own name, and as such it perpetuates his memory. An attempt was made in later years by his countrymen to substitute the name of 'Mer des Iroquois,' but this injustice was happily prevented."<sup>1</sup>

Thus was signalized the first hostile meeting between the civilized white man and the untutored Indian. Low as the latter was found in the scale of intelligence and humanity, and terrible as were many of the subsequent bloody deeds of the Iroquois, it cannot be denied that their early treatment by the Europeans was scarcely calculated to foster in the savage breast any other feeling than bitterest hostility. It is like a pathetic page from a romance to read that "the Iroquois are greatly astonished, seeing two men killed so instantaneously," one of whom was their noble chief; while the ingenuous acknowledgment of Champlain, "I had put four balls in my arquebus," is a vivid testimony of how little mercy the Iroquois nations were to expect thenceforth from their northern enemies and the pale-faced race who were eventually to drive them from their domain.

But it was an age in which might was appealed to as right oftener than in late years, and the planting of the lowly banner of the Cross was often preceded by bloody conquest. In the light of the prevailing customs in the old world at that time, we must view the ready hostility of Champlain towards his helpless enemies.

The Algonquin Indians, who had passed through a generation or more of warfare with the Iroquois and were generally getting the worst of the contest, now found themselves armed with a weapon with which they could, for a time, win victory on any field.

Let us now turn for a moment to other events which had an important bearing on the settlement of this part of the country. A few weeks after the momentous battle between Champlain and the Indians, Henry Hudson, an intrepid English navigator, then in the employ of the Dutch East India Company, moored his vessel (the *Half-Moon*), a mere yacht, in the waters of the great river that now bears his name; this event occurred on the 3d of September, 1609. He met and entertained the natives, and was hospitably received by them; but before his departure he conferred upon them experimental knowledge of the effects of intoxicating liquor — an experience perhaps more baneful in its results than that conferred by Champlain a hundred and fifty miles northward, with his new and murderous weapon. Hudson ascended the river to a point within less than a hundred miles of that reached by Champlain, returned to Europe

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON.



and, through the information he had gained, soon after established a Dutch colony for which a charter was granted in 1614, naming the region "New Netherland." In 1623 it was made a province or county of Holland. In 1614 they established a fort on Manhattan Island and one in the following year on the site of Albany. In 1621 the Dutch West India Company was formed and took possession of "New Amsterdam" under the charter granted them. For fifteen years they remained at peace with the Indians; but the harsh and unwise administration of William Kieft, who was appointed director-general in September, 1637, provoked the Indians to hostilities and opened a war which continued with but little interruption during the remainder of the Dutch occupancy, and often endangered the very existence of the colony.

Meanwhile, in 1607, the English had made their first permanent settlement at Jamestown, Virginia, and in 1620 planted a second colony at Plymouth Rock. These two colonies became the successful rivals of all others, of whatever nationality, in the strife that finally left them masters of the country.

On the discoveries and the colonization efforts we have briefly noted, three European powers based claims to a part of the territory embraced in the State of New York. England, by reason of the discovery of Cabot, who sailed under letters patent from Henry VII, and on the 24th of June, 1497, struck the sterile coast of Labrador, and that made in the following year by his son Sebastian, who explored the coast from New Foundland to Florida, claiming a territory eleven degrees in width and extending westward indefinitely. France, by reason of the discoveries of Verrazzani, claimed a portion of the Atlantic coast; and Holland, by reason of the discovery of Hudson, claimed the country from Cape Cod to the southern shore of Delaware bay. As we have stated, the Dutch became, for the time being, the possessors of the region under consideration.

In concluding this chapter it will not be out of place to make a brief reference to the later career of Champlain, intimately associated as he was with the civilized knowledge of the beautiful waters that bathe the border of Essex county, although the events noted are not directly connected with this history. The year following his discovery of the lake, Champlain passed in France; but the opening season of 1611 found him again ascending the St. Lawrence. He selected and laid out the foundations of Montreal and further advanced the interests of New France. But calamity threatened the colony, when Henry, who had been his firm ally and protector, was killed by Ravillac. Champlain turned back to France and secured the appointment first of Count de Soissons, and upon his death, of the Prince de Condé, as guardian and protector of New France, with all the powers of vice-royalty. In 1612 Champlain returned to Quebec, clothed with the power of sovereignty granted him by De Condé. In the following year he ascended the Ottawa in quest of a fabulous sea, of which he had heard tales; but he returned disappointed. Montreal soon became a

trading mart of importance, and Condé succeeded in obtaining grants conferring extended privileges, and in 1615 Champlain returned to the scene of his toils, freshly inspired. He had become equally zealous in the Catholic faith and took with him several Franciscan monks. A council was held at Montreal at which Champlain and the gathered Indians entered into a treaty of alliance for the extermination of the western tribes of the Iroquois.<sup>1</sup> At the same time Le Caron, one of the monks, unselfishly offered to accompany the Hurons to their villages, which he did, and was the first European who gazed upon Lake Huron. Champlain again navigated the perilous waters of the Ottawa, traveled to Lake Nepissing and thence was guided to the great lake. He contemplated it with admiration and gave it the name of "Merdouce," which was changed to Lake Huron.<sup>2</sup> Here Le Caron had erected the cross and a *te deum* was chanted and a mass said.

The Huron warriors assembled and, descending the lakes in great numbers, entered the country of the Senecas. Here they found a fort of great strength and constructed with remarkable skill, while their village was inclosed by strong palisades of timbers thirty feet in height. After a fruitless siege of several days, and in spite of the expostulations of Champlain, the baffled Hurons resolved to abandon the enterprise and retreat. Champlain was wounded in the knee and leg by the Seneca arrows and was bound to the back of a vigorous savage, "like an infant in its swaddling clothes," and carried many leagues, impatient and suffering. The approaching winter he passed in the lodge of a Huron chief and in visiting the remote tribes of the Algonquins.

Returning again to civilization, Champlain erected the castle of St. Louis. In 1616, at the end of one of his visits to France, he came back with a young and beautiful wife. In 1628 he heroically defended Quebec against the English, capitulating only when his almost famished garrison were forced to abandon the hope of succor. But peace soon liberated Champlain and restored Quebec to France.

"Before and subsequent to these events, the checkered career of the explorer had been impressed by perpetual trials, perplexities and vicissitudes, with alternate depressions, and a return to power and position. Vanquishing by his inflexible perseverance and profound sagacity the hostilities of rivals and the evasions of a despotic government, he returned the last time, in 1633, to the state his wisdom and zeal had created, invested by Richelieu with all his former prerogatives. Having suppressed the Indian excitement which had agitated his province, conciliated the jarring jealousies and angry feuds of mercenary traders and arbitrary officials, and amply asserted and perfected the dominion of his sovereign over a vast region, Champlain died in 1635, and is commemorated

---

<sup>1</sup> Champlain asserts that he engaged in this scheme "to satisfy the desire I had of learning something of that country."

<sup>2</sup> Champlain stood on the northern shores of Lake Huron, a thousand miles from the Atlantic, five years before the foot of the Puritan Pilgrims rested on the rock at Plymouth. — WATSON.



in the annals of the country he served so ably and with such fidelity as 'the father of New France.'"

---

## CHAPTER V.

### THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

The Champlain Valley as a Field of Warfare — End of the Dutch Régime — De Courcelle's Expedition — M. de Tracy's Incursion against the Mohawks — Events of 1666 and 1667 — Count de Frontenac — Peace of 1673 — Renewal of Hostilities — De la Barre's Proposed Expedition against the Senecas — Arrival of De Nonville — His Policy — Invasion of the Senecas' Country — Revenge of the Indians — Montreal Sacked and Burned — Return of Frontenac — Three Expeditions — Schenectady Burned — English Apathy — Failure of Two Movements against the French — John Schuyler's Successful Incursion — Deplorable Condition of the French Colonists — Famine — Frontenac's Operation against the Mohawks and Onondagas — Peace.

FROM the date of the death of Champlain until the end of French domination in New France, the friendship established by that great explorer between the northern Indians and the French was unbroken, while at the same time it led to the unyielding hostility of the Iroquois, and especially of the Mohawks. If truces and formal peace treaties were formed between these antagonistic elements, they were both brief in tenure and of little general effect. As a consequence of this and the fact that Lake Champlain was the natural highway between the hostile nations, it became the scene of prolonged conflict and deeds of savage atrocity which retarded settlement and devastated its borders. "The feuds of the peoples of Europe and the malignant passions of European sovereigns, armed the colonies of England and the provinces of France in conflicts where the ordinary ferocity of border warfare was aggravated by the relentless atrocities of savage barbarism. Each power emulated the other in the consummation of its schemes of blood and rapine. Hostile Indian tribes, panting for slaughter, were let loose along the whole frontier upon feeble settlements, struggling amid the dense forest, with a rigorous climate and reluctant soil, for a precarious existence. Unprotected mothers, helpless infancy and decrepit age, were equally the victims of the torch, the tomahawk and scalping knife. Lake Champlain was the great pathway, equally accessible and useful to both parties, of these bloody and devastating forays. In the season of navigation they glided over the placid waters of the lake, with ease and celerity, in the bark canoes of the Indians. The ice of winter afforded them a broad, crystal highway, with no obstruction of forest or mountain or ravine or river. If deep and impassable snows rested upon its bosom, snow shoes were readily constructed, and secured and facilitated their march."

We made a brief allusion a few pages back to the hostility that was provoked between the Dutch and the Indians by the ill-conceived action of Kieft, who was director-general for about ten years succeeding 1637, when he was succeeded by Peter Stuyvesant, in May, 1647, as director-general, or governor. He was the last of the Dutch officials in that capacity, and the firm and just course followed by him harmonized the difficulties with the Indians and also with the Swedes who had colonized in the region of the Delaware.

On the 12th of March, 1664, Charles II, of England, conveyed by royal patent to his brother James, Duke of York, all the country from the River St. Croix to the Kennebec, in Maine; also Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard and Long Island, together with all the land from the west side of the Connecticut river to the east side of Delaware bay. The duke sent an English squadron, under Admiral Richard Nicolls, to secure the gift, and on the 8th of September following Governor Stuyvesant capitulated, being constrained to that course by the Dutch colonists, who preferred peace with the same privileges and liberties accorded to the English colonists, to a prolonged and perhaps fruitless contest. Thus ended the Dutch régime. The English changed the name of New Amsterdam to New York.

The Dutch had, during their period of peace with the Iroquois, become thrifty and well-to-do through the energetic prosecution of their missionary work of trading guns and rum to the Indians, thus supplying them with a two-edged sword. The peaceful relations existing between the Dutch and the Indians at the time of the English accession were maintained by the latter; but strife and jealousy continued between the English and French, the former steadily gaining ground, both through their success in forming and maintaining an alliance with the Iroquois and the more permanent character of their settlements.

In the hope of avenging past injuries and to put an end to future incursions, the people of New France resolved, in 1665, to send against the Mohawks a force that would not return until their enemies were wiped from the face of the earth. On the 23d of March of that year Daniel de Runy, Knight, Lord de Courcelles, was appointed governor of Canada, and in September of that year arrived with a regiment, several families and necessities<sup>1</sup> for the establishment of a colony. In June of the same year M. de Tracy was appointed viceroy of the French possessions in America, and brought with him to Quebec four regiments of infantry. On the 9th of January, 1666, De Courcelles started with less than six hundred men on a long and perilous march of nearly three hundred miles in mid-winter, when the snow was four feet deep. "The governor caused slight sledges to be made in good numbers, laying provisions upon them, drew them over the snow with mastiff dogs."<sup>2</sup> The men traveled

---

<sup>1</sup> It is recorded that the first horses were brought to Canada on this occasion.

<sup>2</sup> Relations of the march. — *Doc. History.*



on snow shoes. Lake Champlain was thus passed and after a march of thirty-five days, during which many of the men were frozen and all suffered great hardship, they arrived within twenty leagues of the Mohawks. Here they learned from prisoners taken that the greater part of the Mohawks and Oneidas had gone to a distance to make war upon the "wampum-makers." Watson says they "were only preserved from destruction by the active, though ill-requited beneficence of a small Dutch settlement, standing on the outer verge of civilization. The potent influence and urgent intercessions of a prominent, although private, citizen of Schenectady averted from the suffering and defenseless Frenchmen the vengeance of the exasperated Mohawks" — (referring to Arent Van Corlear). His unselfish act was gratefully acknowledged by the colonial government, and De Tracy urged him to visit Quebec. Corlear accepted this courtesy in the year 1667, and while making the passage of Lake Champlain was drowned "by a sudden squall of wind, in crossing a great bay."<sup>1</sup> Deeming it "useless to push further forward an expedition which had all the effect intended by the terror it spread among all the tribes,"<sup>2</sup> Courcelles retraced his march.

The magnitude of this expedition, although it resulted in no immediate disaster to the Iroquois, prompted them to sue for peace, and a treaty was concluded in May, June and July, 1666, by the Senecas, Oneidas and Mohawks, respectively. Pending the negotiations, the Mohawks committed an outrage on the Fort St. Anne garrison, and M. de Tracy was convinced that the treaty would be rendered more stable if the Mohawks were further chastised. Accordingly in September, at the head of 600 troops and 700 Indians, he made an incursion into the Mohawk country, only to find it deserted by the wily savages. After destroying their villages and crops, he returned.

In the following year (July, 1667) was concluded the peace of Breda, between Holland, England and France. This gave the New Netherlands to the English, and Acadia (Nova Scotia), with fixed boundaries, to the French. But the period of quiet was of short duration, for in 1669 we find the French again at war with their old antagonists, the Iroquois. On account of these unceasing hostilities the French found it difficult to harvest their crops in safety; suffering and consternation prevailed and many prepared to return to France. But in April, 1672, Count de Frontenac was appointed governor and lieutenant-general of Canada, and under his efficient administration, confidence was restored and a treaty of peace again established in 1673.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Watson feels no hesitation in locating this bay as what is now known as Willsborough bay, in Essex county. He says: "I am strongly fortified in my conjecture by the statement of Dr. O'Callaghan, that an ancient map exists in the office of the surveyor-general of the State, on which this bay is named Corlear's bay."

<sup>2</sup> *Doc. History.*

<sup>3</sup> Count de Frontenac writes September 14th, 1674: "In spite of the efforts of the Dutch to get the Iroquois to make war on the French, the Iroquois came last year on solemn embassy to Montreal, brought eight children belonging to the principal families of their villages, and ratified the treaty made with them in 1673." — *Colonial History of New York.*

In 1684 another rupture occurred between the French and Iroquois. M. de la Barre was then governor of New France, and Colonel Dongan governor of New York. The Frenchman led an expedition against the Senecas, but hearing that the latter would be reinforced by Dongan with "400 horse and 400 foot," he gave up his purpose. This pretentious expedition, which ended so ignominiously, subjected De la Barre to severe censure and in the following year he was superseded by the Marquis de Nonville, who came over instructed to preserve a strict neutrality. This he found to be impossible and so informed his sovereign. Reinforcements were sent him for a determined attack upon the Senecas, and in the summer of 1687 an expedition of 2,000 French and Indians was organized and marched against the enemy. This large force impelled the Indians to adopt their customary tactics for self-preservation, and their villages were deserted, or nearly so. After destroying everything of value, the expedition returned. This bold incursion into the country of their strongest nation alarmed the Iroquois, and they applied to Governor Dongan for protection. It was promised them, of course, with accompanying advice that they should not make peace with the French; but De Nonville called a meeting of chiefs of the Five Nations at Montreal to arrange a treaty, and they decided to send representatives. Before this was consummated, and on account of alleged treachery on the part of De Nonville, the Iroquois became deeply angered against the French and burned for revenge. In July, 1689, 1,200 Iroquois warriors landed on the upper end of the island of Montreal, burned houses, sacked plantations, massacred men, women and children and retired with twenty-six prisoners, most of whom were burned alive. In October following they made a similar incursion at the lower end of the island, which was likewise devastated. These successful invasions were of incalculable injury to the French interests, and becoming known to their Indian allies, already disgusted with De la Barre's failure, caused many of them to seek an alliance with the English and open trade with them. "They would have murdered the whole French colony to placate the Iroquois, and would certainly have done it," says Colden, "had not the Sieur Perot, with wonderful sagacity and eminent hazard to his own person, diverted them."

The French colony was now in a pitiable condition, but an unexpected and welcome change was at hand. The divided counsels of the English colonies, growing out of the revolution in the mother country resulting in the accession of the Prince of Orange to the throne, gave a new aspect to affairs. The Count de Frontenac, whose previous administration had been wise and efficient, was again appointed governor May 21st, 1689, and arrived in October. He had learned the futility of prosecuting a war against the Iroquois and made earnest efforts to negotiate a peace with them. Failing, he determined to terrify them into neutrality. For this purpose he fitted out three expeditions, one against New York, one against Connecticut and the third against New England. The



first was directed against Schenectady, which was sacked and burned on the night of February 9th, 1690. A band of the French and Huron Indians, after a march of twenty-two days "along the course of West Canada creek,"<sup>1</sup> fell upon the doomed hamlet. But two houses were spared, and fifty or sixty old men, women and children and about twenty Mohawks, "in order to show them that it was the English and not they against whom the grudge was entertained." The French made a rapid but disastrous retreat, suffering from the severe weather and the harassing pursuit of their enemies. This and other assaults at other points so disheartened the people at Albany that they resolved to retire to New York; their course was altered only after a delegation of the brave Mohawks had visited them and reproached them for their supineness, urging them to a courageous defense of their homes. This heroic conduct of the Iroquois challenges our admiration; notwithstanding French intrigues and Jesuitical influence, combined with exasperating English apathy, which appeared willing to sacrifice these savage yet noble allies, they adhered to their early allegiance.

Repeated incursions by the French and Indians at last awakened the English colonists to the conviction that they must harmoniously unite in their

---

<sup>1</sup> In a foot note in his excellent work on Essex county, Mr. Watson makes the following interesting observation: "This is opposed to the generally received idea that this road was along the line of Lake Champlain. A route by West Canada creek implies an avenue of communication between Canada and the Mohawk valley different from that afforded by the usual line traversed by the French, either from Oswego or by the way of Lake Champlain. The route mentioned possibly had a terminus on the St. Lawrence, near the mouth of the Black River. Writers constantly advert to the use of such an intermediate channel; but their attention does not seem to have been directed to its locality or character. Sir John Johnson, it is stated, when he violated his parole and fled with the mass of his tenantry to Canada, consumed nineteen days, with great exposure and suffering, in traversing the wilderness by some interior line, known to him and the Indians. But no further light is thrown upon a question, which to my mind is invested with much geographical and historical interest. I will venture the presumption, that, at this period more than one familiar route had been established through the vast primeval forests, which embrace the western confines of Essex county, which still exist in their original gloom and solitudes. No other route would have been available, when both Oswego and Champlain, as often occurred, were in the occupation of a hostile power. The valleys of the streams which flow into the Mohawk and Hudson, and which almost mingle their waters with the affluents of the St. Lawrence, might have been ascended, and the lakes and rivers of the wilderness may have been used with great facility for a canoe navigation. A few trifling carrying places would have interposed only slight impediments, and when closed by the frosts of winter these waters could still afford a most favorable route of communication. Other avenues through this wilderness were undoubtedly accessible, but my own observation has suggested one which I will trace. The upper valley of the Hudson may have been penetrated, until the line is reached of a small branch, which, starting from the lakes in the vicinity of the Adirondac works, finds its way to the Hudson. Passing up the valley along which this stream gradually descends, the inaccessible range of mountains would be avoided. Thence traversing the Indian pass in nearly an imperceptible ascent, the plains of North Elba would be reached and these open upon the vast plateau of the wilderness, along which the Racket rolls a gentle current, adapted to the Indian canoe, to the St. Lawrence. This idea possibly explains the origin of the modern name which has been assigned to the wonderful structures known to the natives as 'Otneyarh,' the place of stony giants. Gentlemen of great intelligence and careful observation have assured me that they have noticed evidences in the wilderness of other ancient pathways disclosed by still open tracks, the vestiges of rude bridges and the mouldering remains of coarsely hewn vehicles calculated for manual transportation."

efforts against their enemies, if they would succeed. A convention was accordingly held in New York in 1690, constituted of delegates from Massachusetts, Connecticut and New York, at which it was resolved to combine their strength for the subjugation of Canada. Massachusetts engaged to equip a fleet and attack the French possessions by sea, while the other two States should assault Montreal and the forts upon the Sorel. The land forces mustered at Lake George in formidable numbers, embarked, in canoes and sailed to Ticonderoga. Embarking again on Lake Champlain, but little progress was made when the expedition was abandoned through failure in supplies and dissensions in the force. The failure of these efforts and the heavy expenses incurred left the colonies in a more defenseless situation than before.

In the same year John Schuyler (grandfather of Philip Schuyler of Revolutionary fame) organized a band of about one hundred and twenty "Christians and Indians" for an incursion into the French possessions. He cautiously passed down Lake Champlain and landed in the vicinity of Chambly.<sup>1</sup> Leaving his canoes in safety, he penetrated to La Prairie, far within the line of the French fortresses. The unexampled bravery of the little force contributed largely to its remarkable success. They fell upon the French colonists, who were unsuspectingly engaged in their harvest, and in the savage spirit that then controlled such movements, committed young and old alike to slaughter. The "scalps of four women folks" were among the trophies.

In the summer of 1691 Major Peter Schuyler led an expedition against the same settlement. He marched, according to his journal, on the 21st of June from Albany to Stillwater, twenty-four miles. On the 24th they proceeded to "Saraghtoga;" on the 26th to the first carrying place (Fort Mills), and thence to the second carrying place (Fort Edward). On the 28th they marched to the last carrying place (Fort Anne) where they built canoes. July 9th "came Gerard Luykose and Herman Vedder, from a party of eighty Mohawks, at a lake right over Saraghtoga [Saratoga lake, the Indian name of which was Kayaderoga] who went by the way of Lake St. Sacrament<sup>2</sup> [Lake George] and

<sup>1</sup>In Schuyler's journal he says that "they proceeded down the lake to Canaghstone" (the two rocks ten miles below Whitehall), "killing a couple of elk on the way for food." On the 15th they encamped a mile beyond "Cruyn Point" (Crown Point). On the 16th they advanced to Kanordoro (the Narrows), and the 17th proceeded to Ogharonde (Windmill Point), where plans for the attack were laid. The 23d they reached La Prairie and found the inhabitants peacefully engaged in their harvest. The savages fell upon them and slaughtered indiscriminately. Returning, the journal says they, on the 26th encamped at "the little stone fort," this being the first record of any considerable force halting at Ticonderoga.

<sup>2</sup>Saint Sacrament, literally the lake of the blessed Sacrament, which name it obtained in 1646, from Father Jogues, because he passed through it on the festival of Corpus Christi.—E. B. O'CALLAGHAN.

The common impression that the name of the lake was suggested by the singular purity of its water, is erroneous. By the aborigines, it was in one dialect called Canidere-Oit, or the tail of the lake, in reference to its relation to Lake Champlain.—SPAFFORD'S *Gazetteer*.

By the Iroquois it was named Andiatarocte, "there the Lake shuts itself."—*Relations*.

"Honiton," although redolent with beauty, seems to be a pure poetical fancy. The various names attached, as well to tribes as to places, in the difficult Indian language, often lead to confusion and error.—WATSON.



promised to meet us in six days at Chinandroga [Ticonderoga]." On the 17th Schuyler's party "advanced to Chinandroga and two hours after met the Mohauques, eighty in number; after which we fell to making canoes, the Christians having broken two of theirs coming over the falls."

This is the first record of a war party going through Lake George.

On the 19th "advanced to Crowne Point, twenty miles." Here the Mohawks presented Schuyler with a bundle of ninety-two sticks to indicate their number; likewise the river Indians (Schaghticokes) sixty-six sticks. La Prairie was reached August 1st, where they met a body of militia. Schuyler's party were cut off from their boats, which they reached only by the most courageous and impetuous fighting, with a loss of twenty-one killed and twenty-five wounded. Returning the party reached Albany on the 9th.

The Iroquois continued their incursions against the French and were, perhaps, more dreaded by the latter than by the English. The French were prevented from tilling their lands, and a famine ensued, "the poor inhabitants," says Colden, "being forced to feed the soldiers gratis, while their own children wanted bread." The French fur trade<sup>1</sup> was also nearly ruined by the Iroquois, who took possession of the passes between them and their western allies, and cut off the traders. These terrible incursions by the Five Nations exasperated Count de Frontenac to the last extremity and he determined, if possible, to end them.<sup>2</sup> He planned an expedition against the Mohawks to be undertaken in midwinter of the year 1693. He collected a force of between six and seven hundred French and Indians, secretly passed Lake Champlain on the ice, descended into the Mohawk country and captured three of their castles, meeting with resistance only in the last, and they retreated with about three hundred prisoners. Major Peter Schuyler, ever the firm friend of the Mohawks, hastily gathered a party of Albany militia and Indians to the number of five hundred and started in pursuit. So prompt was their action that the fugitives were closely pressed and suffered greatly for food, being compelled "to eat the leather of their shoes." They escaped, however, with a loss of eighty killed and thirty-three wounded.

<sup>1</sup>It is of interest to note the following prices which ruled in the Indian trade at Orange (Albany) and Montreal in 1689:—

The Indian Pays for	At Orange,	Montreal,
8 pounds of powder, .....	One beaver. ....	Four beavers.
A gun, .....	Two beavers. ....	Three beavers.
40 pounds lead, .....	One beaver. ....	Four beavers.
Blanket of red cloth, .....	One beaver. ....	Two beavers.
Four shirts, .....	One beaver. ....	Two beavers.
Six pairs of stockings, .....	One beaver. ....	Two beavers.
Six quarts of rum. ....	One beaver. ....	Six beavers.

It is a cheerful indication of the prevalent mode of dealing with the foolish natives, that while a gun could be purchased by them for five beavers, it took six to buy a gallon and a half of rum.

<sup>2</sup>June 6th, 1692, the Iroquois entered into a formal treaty of alliance and friendship with Major Richard Ingoldsby, who assumed the gubernatorial office of New York on the death of Colonel Henry Sloughter, in July, 1691. Ingoldsby was succeeded by Benjamin Fletcher in August, 1692.

After vain efforts to negotiate a peace with the Iroquois, Frontenac made preparations for a still more formidable effort to coerce them into submission. In the summer of 1695 he sent a strong force to repair and garrison Fort Cadaraqui, which then took his name. On the 4th of July in the following year he embarked from the south end of the island of Montreal, with all the militia of the colony and a large body of Indians, for a destructive incursion against the Onondagas. Although by far the most formidable invasion yet made into the Iroquois country, it was almost fruitless in results, other than the destruction of villages and crops.

The treaty of Ryswick was concluded in September, 1697. While it established peace between the French and English, it practically left unsettled the status of the Iroquois. The French, while insisting on including their own Indian allies in the terms of the treaty, were unwilling to include the Iroquois, and made preparations to attack them with their whole force; but the English as strenuously insisted on extending the terms to their allies, and Earl Bello-mont informed Count De Frontenac that he would resist any attack on the Iroquois, with the entire force of his government, if necessary. This put an end to French threats.

Peace being thus established (although the old rivalries continued without open warfare), the Colonial Assembly of New York, in 1700, sought to perpetuate it by the enactment of a stringent law imposing the death penalty upon every Jesuit who voluntarily came into the province. At the same time the English left nothing undone to strengthen and render enduring the friendship between themselves and the Iroquois. Liberal presents were distributed among the chiefs, and five of them were taken by Peter Schuyler to England, that they might become impressed with the greatness and strength of the government to which they were allied. But all this did not prevent the Indians from making peace with the French, in September, 1700, and the ratification of the treaty in 1701; and this, notwithstanding they had, less than a month previously, conveyed to Great Britain their hunting grounds in which they had "subdued the old inhabitants," lying "a thousand miles west of Niagara, all around the lakes," in the following words: "We do give up and render all that land where the Bevor Hunting is which we won in war eighty years agoe, to CORAGHKOE, our Great King, and pray that he may be our Protector and Defender there."

With the accession of Anne to the throne of England, succeeding King William in March, 1702, what is known as Queen Anne's War was soon inaugurated; it continued until the establishment of the treaty of Utrecht, April 11th, 1713. But New York fortunately escaped its consequences.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This treaty "secured the Protestant succession to the throne of England, the separation of the French and Spanish crowns, the destruction of Dunkirk, the enlargement of the British colonies in America, and a full satisfaction from France of the claims of the allies, England, Holland and Germany. This treaty terminated Queen Anne's War, and secured peace for thirty years." . . . Fortunately the Five Nations had made a treaty of neutrality (August 4th, 1701) with the French in Canada, and thus became an impassable barrier against the savages from the St. Lawrence. — LOSSING.



The Iroquois were now debarred from continuing their incursions upon the Northern and Western Indians, and their natural inclinations led them southward, where they chastised their old enemies living in Carolina. While upon this expedition they adopted into their confederacy the Tuscaroras of North Carolina, who became known as the Sixth Nation of the Iroquois. They were assigned territory west of and near to the Oneidas.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### FRENCH AND ENGLISH RIVALRY.

Relative Justice of French and English Claims — Renewed Hostilities by the French — Occupation of Crown Point by the French — Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle — Continued Hostilities — Braddock's Expeditions — The Movement against Crown Point — Ticonderoga — Arrival of Vandreuil and Dieskau — Battle between Johnson and Dieskau — The English Victorious — French Retreat to Ticonderoga — Building of Fort William Henry.

IT was during the peace that followed the treaty of Utrecht that what may be termed permanent occupation of the Champlain valley was begun; but it cannot be traced farther back than 1731. It cannot be denied that at that time the claims of England to this territory were based upon a much broader foundation of justice than those of France, and both should have been, in some degree, subject to the rights of the Iroquois as the "original proprietors." These rights were subsequently defined by Sir William Johnson (1797) in the following language: "The hereditary domains of the Mohawks extend from near Albany to the Little Falls (Oneida boundary), and all the country from thence eastward, etc., north to Rejiohne in Lake Champlain." Johnson again refers to the matter, saying that "Regiohne, a rock on the east side of said lake," bounds the claim of the Iroquois on the north. It appears that a difference of opinion exists among modern writers as to the location of this rock, some of whom assume it to be Split Rock, in the present town of Essex; but Mr. Watson, after careful examination of the subject, unhesitatingly asserts that it must have referred to what is known as Rock Dunder, which is situated almost in "the track of the steamer as she approaches Burlington from the south." He fortifies his position with the following apparently conclusive evidence: "John Schuyler, in the journal of his expedition in 1691, writes: 'Advanced from the Crown Point toward Reggio, thirty miles distant.' Johnson twice refers to it. David Schuyler, in a letter to the Earl of Bellomont, August 17th, 1700, states: 'The French guards [sent out from Canada, etc.,] met him in a canoe, within the bounds of this government, at the Otter creek, eighteen miles on this side of Reggio, the great rock, that is in Corlear lake.' These

distances were probably mere estimates, but singularly approximate to accuracy. . . . The most conclusive evidence, however, is furnished by a French map of Lake Champlain, 'prepared about the year 1731, from divers memoirs,' and copied into the documents relating to the Colonial History, Vol. IX, 1023. Between 'the River Ouinouski' (Onion) and 'River Aux Loutree' (Otter creek), directly opposite the position of Rock Dunder, there is inscribed on the map, and upon the eastern shore of the lake, the word 'Rougio.' "

While the French were in possession of New France, their influence over all the Indians within its limits was preponderant, and they even disputed with the English the alliance of the latter with the Iroquois, though with but partial and fragmentary success. But whatever may have been the foundation of French claims to the territory of Canada, or even to a portion of the present territory of New York, it can hardly be admitted that she could justly set up a claim to any of the region within the boundaries just alluded to. To be sure, four of the Iroquois nations concluded a treaty in 1665-66 with M. De Tracy, by which they placed themselves under the protection of the French king; but the Mohawks were not a party to that treaty, although it is claimed that the Oneida representatives acted for them, and continued and unsuccessful hostility on the part of the French against the Iroquois followed for years with brief intervals.

On the other hand, although England acquired in the cession of New Netherlands only the territory previously held by the Dutch, yet she secured the firm and lasting alliance of the Mohawks, in whose domain the greater part of the valley of Lake Champlain was situated; while the original charter of Virginia carried her claims to the forty-fifth parallel, and later grants extended her sovereignty to the St. Lawrence.

The treaty of Ryswick (1697) declared that the belligerents should return to their possessions, as each occupied them at the beginning of hostilities, and England put forth the unconditional claim that, at the period referred to in the treaty, their Iroquois allies were in occupation by conquest of Montreal and shores of the St. Lawrence. The French government at that time seems to have acknowledged that the Iroquois were embraced in the treaty. Thus the two European powers wrangled over the beautiful valley which was but a little while before the undisputed dominion of the Iroquois. When France disputed the claims of England and appealed to the council at Onondaga, the stern, savage orator exclaimed: "We have ceded our lands to no one; we hold them of heaven alone."<sup>1</sup>

Whether so much importance should attach to treaties in which these untutored savages were pitted against the intelligent Europeans, either French or English, as has often been ascribed to them, is questionable; especially when we consider the methods often adopted in later years to induce the Indians to

---

<sup>1</sup> BANCROFT.



sign away their domain. Be this as it may, it is now generally believed that the intrusion of France upon the domains of the Mohawks on Lake Champlain, "at the sacrifice of so much blood and treasure, justice and the restraints and faith of treaties, were subordinated to the lust of power and expediency."<sup>1</sup>

In 1731, the date assumed as marking the permanent occupation of the Champlain valley by civilized people, an unbroken wilderness extended on both sides of the lake from the settlements on the Hudson to the Canadian hamlets. It was unpenetrated except by possible Indian pathways; the waters of the lake, or its ice-covered surface in winter, was the only highway between the two regions. But English settlement had, undoubtedly, made considerable advancement in the direction of the Champlain valley previous to that date.

Crown Point, already known by its present name,<sup>2</sup> was, as early as 1690, looked upon by the English, and doubtless also by the French, as a position of importance. The common council of Albany, instructing their scouting party of that year, directed them to proceed "to Crown Point, where you shall remain and keep good watch by night and day." The historian, Lossing, designates it as an important trading station between the English and Indians prior to 1731, when the French took possession of it. Certain it is, and enough has already been written to prove it beyond a doubt, that no plan of invasion and attack, either by the English or French, could promise success at that time, unless it was made over the waters of Lake Champlain; and it may be added the government in possession of that avenue, with Crown Point and Ticonderoga as points of defense, could rest in comparative security against assaults from the other.

These were the considerations which must have impelled the French, in violation of treaties and in a time of profound peace (1731), to suddenly ascend the lake to the locality now called Chimney Point, which they seized by mili-

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON.

<sup>2</sup> "The French name of Crown Point (Fort St. Frederic) is derived from the French secretary of State, Frederic Maurepas, in whose hands the direction and management of the Court of Admiralty was at the time of its erection. It is to be observed that the government of Canada is subject to the Court of Admiralty, and the governor-general is always chosen by this court. As most of the places in Canada bear the name of Saints, custom has made it necessary to prefix the word to the name of this fortress. It is built on a rock consisting of black lime slates as aforesaid. It is nearly quadrangular, has high, thick walls made of the same limestone, of which there is a quarry about half a mile distant. On the eastern part of the fort is a high tower, which is proof against bombshells, and is well served with cannon from the bottom almost to the very top, and the governor, Mr. Lusignan, lives in the tower. In the terreplein is a well-built little church, and houses of stone, for the officers and soldiers. There are sharp rocks on all sides toward the land, beyond a cannon shot from the fort, but among them are some which are as high as the walls of the fort, and very near them." For this excellent description of the French fort we are indebted to the writings of that very intelligent observer, Kalm, whose travels in 1748 were published. The fort was then armed about as follows: two iron cannon, six-pounders; seventeen iron cannon, four-pounders; twenty-three cannon, brass, two-pounders; one iron cannon, two-pounder; one mortar; eighteen iron swivels; twenty-five iron shells. A strong armament at that period, but one that would make but a sorry defense in modern times.

tary force, and immediately afterward occupied Crown Point itself.<sup>1</sup> This movement startled New York and New England. The Assembly of the former resolved that "this encroachment, if not prevented, would prove of the most pernicious consequence to this and other colonies." They sent notice of the encroachment to Pennsylvania, Connecticut and Massachusetts, and applied to the board of trade and plantations for aid. While that body would have granted the request, Robert Walpole counseled peace.

Thirty men, only, formed the first French garrison at Crown Point, and Beauharnois was instructed to build a simple stockaded fort, "until a stronger one could be constructed."<sup>2</sup> The French, upon their occupation of Crown Point, seem to have anticipated the apathy of the English that actually followed. Three years later Beauharnois informed his government that he was "preparing to complete" his incipient fortifications. As late as 1747 it had not attained such strength or proportions as to induce the belief that it could not have been recaptured, and the garrison with it, at any time since its occupation, by the efforts of any one of the English colonies, had England seen fit to sanction the movement. An emissary of Governor Clinton<sup>3</sup> thus describes the works as they appeared in 1750, when it seems to have been considerably strengthened: "The fort is built of stone, the walls of considerable height and thickness, and has twenty pieces of cannon and swivels mounted on the ramparts and bastions. I observed the walls cracked from top to bottom in several places. At the entrance of the fort is a dry ditch eighteen feet square, and a draw bridge. There is a subterranean passage to the lake. The citadel is a stout building square in shape, four stories high, each turned with arches, mounts twenty pieces of cannon and swivels, the largest six-pounders. The walls of the citadel are about ten feet thick. At the entrance is a draw bridge and ditch." Such was the work, called by them Fort St. Frederic, which the French were permitted to build within the recognized possessions of the Iroquois, which was, by the treaty of Utrecht, guaranteed to remain "inviolable by any occupation or encroachment of France."

<sup>1</sup> In the language of Mr. Watson, "this action of France was the movement of no inconsiderate impulse, but the suggestion of a deliberate and matured policy. . . . In 1737 Beauharnois (governor of New France from 1726 to 1746) was directed to survey Lake Champlain with the purpose of introducing an armed sloop upon its waters. The views of France in reference to the importance of securing the control of Lake Champlain were neither peculiar nor unfounded. The secret councils of the colonial governments of England were constantly directed to the attainment of the same great object. A military post which commanded the lake must necessarily control the large and lucrative fur trade that sought through its waters a transit between Chambly and Albany. It was the purpose of France to anticipate and defeat the designs of England for the occupation of Crown Point."

<sup>2</sup> Louis XIV. to Beauharnois and Hocquart.—*Doc. History.*

<sup>3</sup> George Clinton was appointed governor of the colony of New York in September, 1743, and retained the office ten years. His administration was a tumultuous one, chiefly on account of his temperament and want of experience in the management of civil affairs. In his controversies with the Assembly he was ably assisted by the pen of Dr. Cadwallader Colden, afterwards lieutenant-governor. Clinton died in July, 1761.



To protect Canada from incursions by the Iroquois was the ostensible reason advanced by France for erecting the fortress at Crown Point. That there was a deeper purpose is too palpable to need demonstration. So ignorant, or indifferent, or both together, was the English government to the real situation and its importance, that the lords of trade, as early as December, 1738, confessed to Governor Clinton ignorance of the location even of French fortifications on Lake Champlain. When, soon after, the attention of the French government was called to the violation of the treaty of Utrecht, the response was a denial of "all knowledge of the projected establishment," and the unavailing assurance that an inquiry on the subject would be made. Meanwhile France, in pursuit of its early policy, was consummating the establishment of trading-posts from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico.

Long previous to the date last mentioned, France had authorized the issue of land grants in Canada. Assuming authority over the Champlain valley, also, the government of Canada had caused a survey to be made of the lake and its shores in the year succeeding the occupation of Crown Point. Relative to this survey and succeeding grants, Mr. Watson says: "Many of the names of the headlands, islands and other topographical features of the lake which are still perpetuated, are derived from that survey. In their descriptive force and beauty they almost rival the euphony and appropriateness of the Indian nomenclature. A map and chart based upon that survey was published at Montreal in 1748, and has not been surpassed, by any subsequently made, in its scientific aspect or minuteness and accuracy. Extensive grants under an ordinance of 1676, upon both sides of the lake, are delineated upon that map. A seigniory was granted to the Sieur Robart, the royal storekeeper at Montreal, in June, 1737. This grant, which seems to have been the only one issued for land within the limits of Essex county, embraced 'three leagues in front by two leagues in depth,' on the west side of Lake Champlain, taking, in going down, one league below the river Boquet, and in going up, two leagues and a half above that river. These boundaries comprehend all of the present town of Essex and a large proportion of Willsborough. The tract was soon after formally laid out and allotted by an official surveyor. We have no evidence that any permanent and actual occupation was formed under these grants. Kalm, who visited the region before 1748, asserts that few colonies, and these only in the vicinity of the fortresses, were formed by the French during their occupation. The authority from whom I have already given extracts states that in 1750, 'fourteen farms were occupied in the vicinity of Crown Point, and great encouragement given by the king for that purpose,' and that 'other colonists were approaching.'<sup>1</sup> The journal of Rogers contains repeated reference to villages adjacent to Fort St. Frederic and situated upon both sides of the lake."

In March, 1744, war was declared between England and France and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Documentary History*, VI, 582.

measures were taken for the conquest of the French possessions. The colonies of New York and New England united in an expedition to co-operate with a fleet under Commodore Warren for an attack on the fortress at Louisburg, which capitulated in June, 1745. But the country northward from Albany was continually harassed by attacks and incursions from the Indians and French, detachments for which were sent out from Crown Point and elsewhere. Saratoga was attacked late in the fall of 1745 by an expedition of five hundred French and Indians, with a few disaffected Iroquois warriors, under Marin, an intrepid French officer, and utterly devastated. This was followed by an attack on the village of Hoosick, the fortress at which place was compelled to surrender, leaving the settlements all the way to Albany open to the enemy.

More than twenty other minor expeditions were fitted out by the French at Montreal, to take the line of march for Fort St. Frederic and fall upon the English settlements and burn, pillage and slaughter. It is little wonder, therefore, that the inhabitants of New York viewed this fortress as a standing and constant menace and the key to French success in these expeditions. The following memoranda will give an idea of the character of many of these marauding parties and the consequences of their incursions: —

“ March 29th, 1746. A party set out, consisting of fourteen Indians . . . who have been in the country near Albany, and returned with some prisoners and scalps.

“ 26th (April). A party of thirty-five warriors belonging to the Soult set out. They have been in the neighborhood of Orange (Albany), have made some prisoners and taken some scalps.

“ 27th. A party set out consisting of six warriors, who struck a blow in the neighborhood of Albany.

“ May 7. Six Nepissings started to strike a blow near Boston and returned with some scalps.

“ 10th. Gatienonde, an Iroquois who had been settled at the lake for two or three years, left with five Indians of that village and Lieutenant St. Blein, to strike a blow near Orange. They brought in one prisoner. The leader was killed.

“ 12th. Ten Indians of the Soult set out towards Boston and returned with some scalps.

“ 22d. Nineteen warriors of the Soult St. Louis have been equipped. They have been made to strike a blow in the direction of Albany.

“ 24th. A party of eight Abenakis has been fitted out, who have been in the direction of Corlac (Schenectady) and have returned with some prisoners and scalps.

“ 27th. Equipped a party of eight warriors of Soult, who struck a blow near Albany, and brought back six scalps.

“ 28th. A party of twelve Nepissings made an attack in the neighborhood



of Boston, and brought away four scalps and one prisoner, whom they killed on the road, as he became furious and refused to march.

"A party of Abenakis struck a blow near Albany and Corlac, and returned with some scalps.

"June 2. Equipped twenty-five warriors, who returned from the neighborhood of Albany with some scalps.

"3d. Equipped a party of eighteen Nepissings, who struck a blow at Albany and Corlac.

"19th. Equipped a party of twenty-five Indians of the Soult, who struck a blow near Orange. One or two of these Indians were wounded. They brought away some scalps.

"20th. Equipped a party of nineteen warriors of the Soult, who went to Orange to strike a blow.

"21st. Equipped a party of twenty-seven of the same village to go to Albany. Sieur de Carquville, an officer, was of the party, which has brought in a prisoner that was on the scout to Saristean (Saraghtoga), and some scalps.

"August 10th. Chevalier de Repentigny arrived at Quebec and reported that he had made an attack near Corlac and took eleven prisoners and twenty-five scalps,"

And so on through the terrible recital. A few words briefly describes one of these numerous incursions; but who can imagine the summed-up horrors of a summer filled with such scenes! And the English seemed almost powerless against the enemy, — wily, swift, blood-thirsty as they were, and with a knowledge of every forest-path and point of vantage. Colonel Johnson sent out two parties against the French and their allies on the 4th of August, who made an attack on Chambly; but after they had considerably damaged the enemy they were drawn into an ambush and most of them killed or captured. On the 19th he wrote Governor Clinton that one of the parties, on their return, had reported that they lay two days in sight of the enemy on Lake St. Sacrament, who, to the number of between five or six hundred, were encamped on an island (Long Island).

This was doubtless a part of the force under command of Vaudreuil, a part of whose command, under La Corne, had been engaged in the affair at Saraghtoga. His headquarters were at South Bay. His orders were to protect Fort St. Frederic, which he could do only by having part of his force at the latter place and part on Lake Sacrament.<sup>1</sup>

On the 28th of August Johnson writes that he is about setting off for Lake St. Sacrament with four hundred Christian volunteers, and as many more Indians, and expected to be absent for twelve days. "It is possible they took the shorter route *via* Fish House and Luzerne to the lake."<sup>2</sup>

But measures were now taken to place the frontier in a state of defense.

<sup>1</sup> *Documentary History.*

<sup>2</sup> BUTLER.

The colonists were burning for revenge, and they were led to hope for adequate assistance from England. The government finally resolved upon an expedition against Canada in 1746, and the colonies entered into the project with zeal. New York raised sixteen hundred men for the forces directed against Crown Point and Montreal; but with its usual apathy and misunderstanding of the situation, England failed to furnish promised assistance and the expedition was a failure.

On the 9th of December, 1746, Governor Clinton reported that he had been able to raise twenty companies in all for the proposed expedition against Crown Point the next year. In the fall of 1747 Fort Clinton at Saraghtoga was burned and the guns and stores removed by order of Governor Clinton. The reason given for this action was that the assembly did not furnish requisite troops and supplies to defend it against the French and Indians.

The contest between 1744 and 1748 had, as one object, the possession of the Mississippi valley, which the English claimed as an extension of their coast discoveries and settlements, and the French, by right of occupancy, their forts already extending from Canada to Louisiana, and forming "a bow, of which the English colonies were the string." At this latter date the English colonies contained over a million inhabitants, while the French had only about sixty thousand. The Iroquois would not engage in this strife until 1746; and they were disappointed at its sudden termination, having compromised themselves with their old enemies, the allies of the French, now more numerous and dangerous than formerly. The old question of Iroquois supremacy was, therefore, renewed in a more aggravated form.

In April, 1748, was concluded the ineffective, if not actually disgraceful, treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle; while it was a virtual renewal of the treaties of Ryswick and Utrecht, it left unsettled the questions above alluded to, with others of importance to the colonies, and the fortresses of Louisburg and Crown Point were given to the French without a protest.

Opposed and embarrassed by political factions, Governor Clinton resigned his office in October, 1753, and was succeeded by Sir Danvers Osborne. The same distractions and the loss of his wife threw the latter official into a state of melancholia and he committed suicide. He was succeeded by James De Lancey, the lieutenant governor. When the assembly met in the spring of 1754 the governor in his message called their attention to the recent encroachments of the French and to a request by Virginia for aid. The assembly voted a thousand pounds and to bear its share in erecting forts along the frontier. By victories in Western Pennsylvania in 1754 the French were left in undisputed possession of the entire region west of the Alleghanies. The necessity for concerted action by the English colonies was now too apparent to be overlooked; but the old sectional differences tended to prevent harmonious action. The Iroquois were also becoming, to some extent, alienated from the English,



whose apathy and failures they did not relish. The English ministry had therefore advised a convention of delegates from all the colonial assemblies in an effort to secure the continued alliance of the Six Nations. This convention was held in Albany in June, 1754. Governor De Lancey was president, and he opened the proceedings with a speech to the Indian chiefs who were present. A treaty was renewed and the Indians left apparently satisfied.<sup>1</sup>

The final speech of Hendrick, the famous Mohawk chief, closed as follows: "Brethren, we put you in mind, from our former speech, of the defenseless state of your frontiers, particularly of this city of Schenectady, and of the country of the Five Nations. You told us yesterday you were consulting about securing both. We beg you will resolve upon something speedily. You are not safe from danger one day. The French have their hatchet in their hands both at Ohio and in two places in New England. We don't know but this very night they may attack us. Since Colonel Johnson has been in this city there has been a French Indian at his house, who took measure of the wall around it, and made very narrow observations on everything thereabouts. We think Colonel Johnson in very great danger, because the French will take more than ordinary pains to kill him or take him prisoner, both on account of his great interest among us and because he is one of our sachems.

"Brethren, there is an affair about which our hearts tremble and our minds are deeply concerned. We refer to the selling of rum in our castles. It destroys many, both of our old and young people. We are in great fear about this rum. It may cause murder on both sides. We, the Mohawks of both castles, request that the people who are settled around about us may not be suffered to sell our people rum. It keeps them all poor, and makes them idle and wicked. If they have any money or goods they lay all out in rum. It destroys virtue and the progress of religion among us. . . ."

The governor promised satisfaction to this pathetic appeal, of course, gave the Indians thirty wagon loads of presents, and the civilized inhabitants went on selling their gallons of rum for beaver skins. And the Indians have often been cursed for their intemperance.

Meanwhile, at the suggestion of the Massachusetts delegates to this convention, a plan for the union of the colonies was taken into consideration. The suggestion was favorably received and a committee of one from each colony was appointed to draw plans for the purpose. Then, the fertile mind of Ben-

---

<sup>1</sup> "It was on this occasion that the venerable Hendrik, the great Mohawk chieftain, pronounced one of those thrilling and eloquent speeches that marked the nobler time of the Iroquois. It excited the wonder and admiration of those who listened, and commanded the highest encomiums wherever it was read. In burning words he contrasted the supineness and imbecility of the English with the energies of the French policy. His hoary head and majestic bearing attached dignity and force to his utterances. 'We,' he exclaimed, 'would have gone and taken Crown Point, but you hindered us.' He closed his phillippic with this overwhelming rebuke: 'Look at the French, they are men. They are fortifying everywhere. But you, and we are ashamed to say it, you are like women—bare and open without any fortifications.'"

jamin Franklin having already conceived the necessity of union and harmony, produced a plan which he had already prepared and which was adopted. It was the forerunner of our Constitution; but the assemblies rejected it, deeming that it encroached on their liberties, while the ministry rejected it as granting too much power to the people.

Though England and France were now nominally at peace, the frontier was still distressingly harassed by hordes of Indians let loose by the French, and the colonists continued their appeals to the ministry. While the latter were hesitating, the Duke of Cumberland, then captain-general of the British armies, sent over early in 1755 General Edward Braddock, with a detachment from the army in Ireland. He soon after met the colonial governors at Alexandria and measures were devised for the protection of the colonies.

For this purpose four expeditions were planned by General Braddock (1755) — the first to effect the reduction of Nova Scotia; the second to recover the Ohio valley; the third to expel the French from Fort Niagara and then form a junction with the Ohio expedition, and the fourth to capture Crown Point. The first of these expeditions was entirely successful; the second, under command of Braddock himself, was, chiefly through his folly, disastrous in the extreme. He failed to send out scouts, as repeatedly counseled by Washington, and when within a few miles of Fort Du Quesne, the army was surprised by the lurking foe and only saved from destruction by Washington, who, upon the fall of Braddock, assumed command and conducted the retreat. The expedition against Fort Niagara was also unsuccessful. It was commanded by General Shirley, governor of Massachusetts, and many of his force deserted upon hearing of Braddock's defeat. Leaving a garrison at Oswego, he led the remainder of his army to Albany and returned to Massachusetts.

The army gathered for the capture of Crown Point was assembled at Albany and the command entrusted to Colonel William Johnson. It comprised the militia and volunteers from New York, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and Connecticut. They came together fired with zeal and enthusiasm born of the conviction that they were to fight for the safety of their firesides.

"His army, fresh from the plow and the workshop, save a few who had been engaged at the siege of Louisburg, were novices in the arts and services of war. The provincials, clothed in the home-spun garments woven by wives and mothers, armed only with their own rifles and fowling-pieces, without bayonets, but animated by the noblest impulses of patriotism and courage, and inspired by a fervid religious enthusiasm, which kindled the faith that they were battling in defense of the alters of Protestantism and for the subversion of idolatry. While the preparations were in active, but to their impatient ardor, slow progress, they were restive and impatient for the advance. On the Sabbath in obedience to their Puritan habits, they assembled to unite in prayer and to 'listen to the word,' while their swarthy allies gravely hear the interpretation of a long sermon."<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON.



The French were not idle and already their attention, or that of their engineers, was drawn to the bold and rocky cliffs at the confluence of Lake George (known to the French as Lake St. Sacrament)<sup>1</sup> and Lake Champlain, as an excellent military stronghold. In the summer of 1755 DuQuesne advised the construction of works at that point. The selection of the site and the construction of the works was confined to Lotbiniere, an engineer of the province. The original fort (which was still unfinished a year later) "was a square fort with four bastions, and built of earth and timber."<sup>1</sup> In the same year Johnson mentions Ticonderoga as an important but unoccupied position. Such was the inception of Fort Carillon,<sup>2</sup> about which was to center so much of military conflict and heroism. It is not now known just when the imposing stone battlements were erected, whose picturesque ruins inform the beholder of to-day of their original strength. In the year 1758 the French were energetically engaged in extending and strengthening the fortress; at that time Crown Point, on account of its less favorable position and the falling walls of Fort St. Frederic, became of secondary importance to them.

When the news of Braddock's movements reached France, a fleet bearing six battalions of regulars was dispatched to the aid of the troops in Canada. With it came also Vaudreuil, governor-general of New France (the last one), and Baron de Dieskau as commander-in-chief of the colonial armies. The latter laid his plans for the immediate capture of Oswego, when the governor-general received the startling intelligence of Johnson's movement towards Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Dieskau was, therefore, hurried to the defense of Lake Champlain.

Dieskau was armed with explicit written instructions from Vaudreuil to advance in force upon Crown Point and not to attack the English entrenchments except after cautious reconnaissance. These instructions were violated by the able commander, but under such circumstances as rendered the act justifiable. He had been informed by his spies that Johnson lay in an unfortified camp on Lake George, short of supplies, and that 900 militia were encamped near Fort Edward, protected merely by unfinished palisades. It was this intelligence that caused Dieskau to change the plans of the campaign and determine upon a *coup de main* instead of a regular assault or investment. Had Dieskau's army been composed of the drilled veterans over which he had been accustomed to command, his campaign, planned with skill and carried on with vigor and bravery, would undoubtedly have resulted differently. As it was, failure could scarcely be avoided.<sup>3</sup> On the 4th of September, 1755, Dieskau proceeded up

---

<sup>1</sup> *Documentary* x, 414.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Watson says the name "Carillion seems to bear the same significance as the Indian name, 'The-Onderoga,' the original of Ticonderoga, meaning noise-chimes, in allusion, doubtless, to the brawling waters."

<sup>3</sup> In the anguish of defeat and wounds he exclaimed after the conflict: "These, then, are the troops which have been so crowed up to me."

Wood creek and through the shallow waters of South Bay, leaving 120 men to guard his bateaux, and had advanced a three days' march through the woods, intending to attack the militia at Fort Edward on the morning of the fourth day; this accomplished, it was his purpose to march rapidly against Johnson, cut off his communications and destroy his force by impetuous attack. But his guides, either ignorant or treacherous, misled him, and at daylight the French commander found himself several miles on the way towards the English camp on Lake George. The Indians, having heard rumors of artillery at Fort Edward, refused to join in an assault upon it, asserting as an excuse that the land at that place belonged to England; but they were ready to attack Johnson,<sup>1</sup> and Dieskau immediately changed his course; at this juncture he received intelligence of the approach of a large detachment advancing on the road he then occupied, for the relief of Fort Edward.

When informed of the advance of Dieskau upon Fort Edward, Johnson called a council of officers, in which the aged Mohawk chieftain was conspicuous. Different plans were discussed and one finally adopted. When it was proposed to send a small body of the troops, the old Indian remarked: "If they are to fight they are too few; if they are to be killed they are too many." And when it was suggested that the force be divided into three detachments, he picked up three sticks and said: "Put these together and you can't break them; take them up one by one and you may easily break them." It was finally decided to send Colonel Ephraim Williams with 1,000 troops, and Hendrick with 200 Mohawks to the relief of Fort George. Hendrick led the force on horseback.<sup>2</sup>

The military genius of Dieskau had provided for this expected advance. He placed his forces on the road about three miles from Johnson's camp in a defile, and arranged them as a *cul de sac*, with the front open and toward the advancing enemy. The Canadians were on the right; the Indians on the left, and the regulars at the extremity, the two former being strictly ordered to not fire a gun until the French had fired. Into the midst of this invisible foe Williams entered.<sup>3</sup> At this moment, when the French commander confidently fore-

<sup>1</sup> Dieskau's original plan is thus commented upon favorably by Johnson himself in his letter to Sir Charles Hardy: "Happily for us he complied (with the proposition of the Indians), for he would have found our troops seperately encamped out of the works and no cannon there, and his victory would have probably been a very cheap one, and made way for another here." — *Documentary History*.

<sup>2</sup> It was while upon this expedition that Johnson gave to Lake George its present name. His troops reached the lake on the 28th of August, and encamped on its border to the westward of Fort George, their flank being protected by a thickly wooded swamp, "where," as Johnson wrote, "no house was ever built, nor a rod of land cleared; and the lake which the French call *St. Sacrament*, I have given the name of Lake George, not only in honor of his majesty, but to assert his undoubted dominion here."

<sup>3</sup> Williams, who a few days before, by a will executed at Albany, created the foundation of an institution (Williams College, Massachusetts), which, a memorial of his love of science, still preserves his name, was inspired by the earnest and heroic spirit of his province, was a gallant soldier, but unfutured, except in trifling Indian warfare, by any military experience. He advanced precipitately, but with little soldierly circumspection. — WATSON.



saw the destruction of the entire force of the enemy, a spark of the old fraternal spirit of the Iroquois league blazed forth and thwarted his plans, well laid though they were; in Dieskau's force were a party of Senecas, the western tribe of the Iroquois, whose fidelity he already distrusted. The moment they saw their brethren of the Mohawks, they fired their guns into the air, thus disclosing the ambush. But this event came too late to save the American force from the consequences of their rashness, and they suffered from a terrible fire that was poured upon them. Williams mounted a rock in an exposed position (the same rock that now forms the base of his monument) and was killed early in the action. Hendrick fell at about the same time, and a disastrous retreat ensued. But the troops were soon rallied by Lieutenant-Colonel Whiting and fought valorously. Meanwhile, Johnson, hearing the sounds of battle, sent reinforcements to the number of three hundred, under Colonel Cole, and under their cover the retreat was continued in good order.

The impetuous Dieskau, whose motto was "Boldness wins," did not stop to reconnoitre, but started at the head of the French and Indians in rapid pursuit of the retreating English. He hoped to thus enter and capture an unfortified camp. But Johnson and his skillful woodsmen from New England had not been idle. Trees were felled and hasty breastworks constructed, behind which a few cannon, that were hurried from the lake, were placed. When the Indians heard the roar of these guns, they again thwarted Dieskau's designs by "stopping short," and he soon saw the Canadians "scattering right and left."<sup>1</sup>

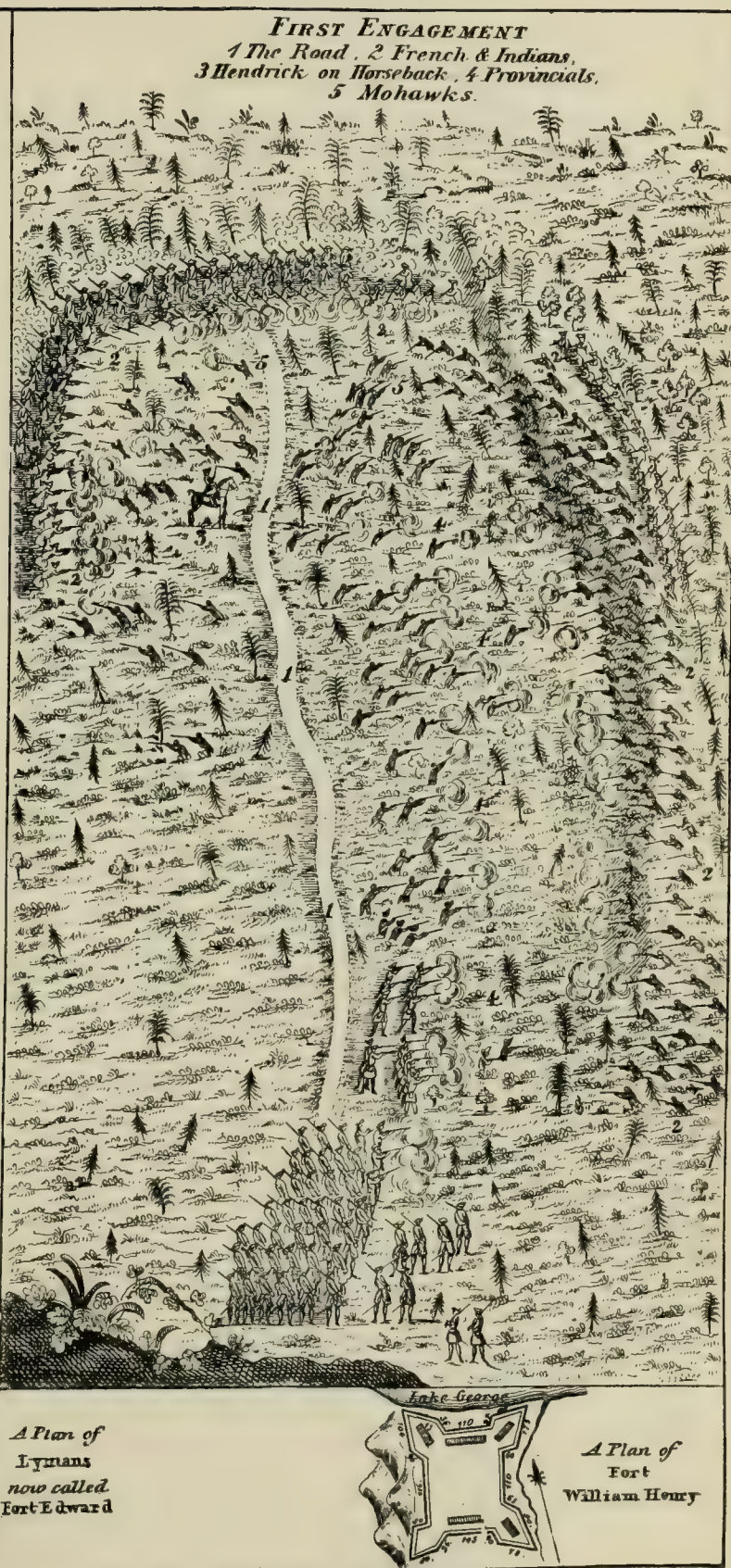
This defection forced Dieskau to make a brief halt near the works, which was of great advantage to his enemy. The second struggle of the battle now waged hotter than before and continued for more than four hours — the bloodiest and most obstinately contested the New World had yet witnessed. A vigorous assault on the center by Dieskau's regulars, was "thrown into disorder by the warm and constant fire of the artillery and colonial troops." He then assailed the left, was again repulsed and in a last desperate effort hurled his decimated force upon the right; but in vain; only a bloody repulse awaited him. The French regulars fought with great heroism, but were unequal to their undertaking. The Canadians and Indians were of but little assistance and "were dispersed by a few shots thrown into their midst."

The French general was wounded and disabled, but bravely refused to be carried from the field, and ordered his subordinate, Montrueil, to assume the command and make the best retreat possible. Two Canadians came to the relief of Dieskau, but one of them was shot and fell directly across the legs of the general, "to his great embarrassment," as he expressed it. While supporting himself against a tree, amid a hail of bullets, a refugee Frenchman came upon him and fired a bullet through both his hips, causing a wound

---

<sup>1</sup> *Documentary History.*

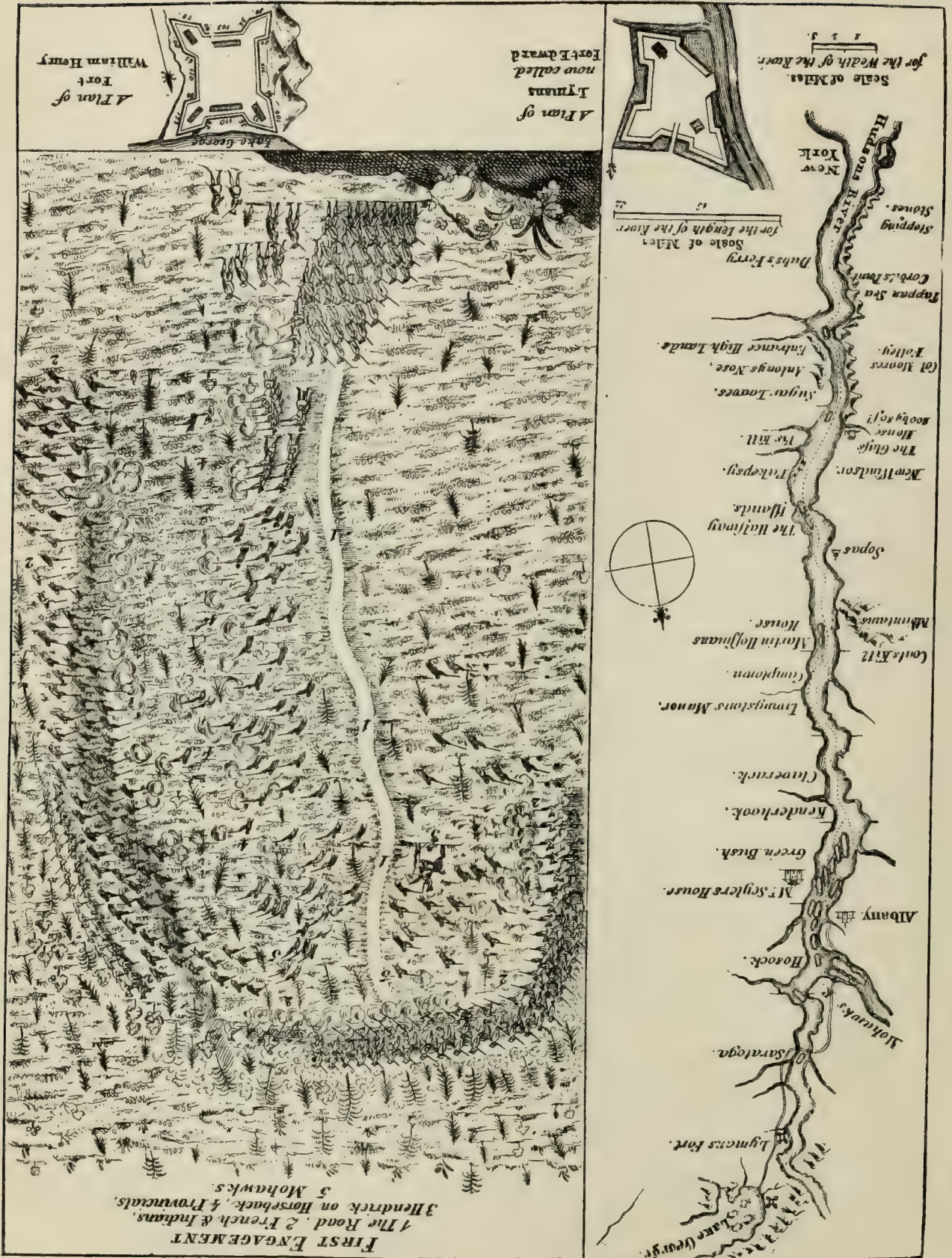




DIESKAU'S FIRST ENGAGEMENT.  
From Butler's "Lake George and Lake Champlain."



From Butler's "Lake George and Lake Champlain."  
 DIESKAU'S FIRST ENGAGEMENT.





which resulted in his death twelve years later. He was left by his king to suffer as a prisoner, neglected by his country, until the peace of 1763.

The French army was now broken and scattered, and a routed party of about three hundred were encountered by a body of provincials under McGinnis, of New Hampshire (who was killed in the action), and Folsom, of New York. The Frenchmen were put to flight in such confusion that all their baggage and ammunition was left behind for the victors.

The losses were about equal on both sides, amounting to four hundred and fifty of the French, and something less by the English and Mohawks. Decisive victory rested with neither. The British were prevented for the time from the conquest of Lake Champlain, an object of no small advantage to the French. But the colonists achieved an actual triumph of arms which, following closely upon the disasters of Braddock, filled the land with rejoicing. The French and Canadians were taught that in the New England colonies was growing an element of military strength and heroism that could not be lightly encountered — an element that in later days was to win freedom for the country.<sup>1</sup>

Johnson was wounded early in the battle, and the command was turned over to General Lyman, of Massachusetts. His enthusiastic soldiers and the impetuous Mohawks would have pursued the fleeing French and Canadians, but Johnson, either through over-cautiousness or timidity, restrained them, and the French continued their retreat, unmolested, to Carillon. A vigorous prosecution of the campaign as originally planned was urged by the people of the colonies. The French were partially paralyzed by defeat; the walls of St. Frederic crumbling and the fortress at Ticonderoga was still unfinished; but Johnson neglected what was undoubtedly his great opportunity and spent the season in erecting Fort William Henry at the head of Lake George; the Mohawks returned to their homes.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Dieskau appears not to have been adapted by temperament or manners to conciliate the attachment or to command the confidence of his savage allies. Instead of indulging in familiar intercourse and yielding to their habits and peculiarities, he maintained with them — and equally with his subordinates and the Canadians, the stately German style of seclusion and exclusiveness. This course destroyed the influence and devotion, which could only be exerted over their rude and capricious nature, by controlling their impulses and affections. — WATSON.

<sup>2</sup> Johnson's conduct seems not to have been either just or magnanimous. He ascribed all the glory of the event to himself; Lyman was not named in his report and but slight mention made of other officers. Yet Johnson was rewarded with a baronetcy, made superintendent of Indian affairs, with a grant of five thousand pounds, which was wrung from the pittance allowed the colonies for their burdens.



## CHAPTER VII.

## THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH WAR.

Plans of the Campaign — Apathy and Indecision of the English — Brilliant Deeds of the Rangers — Arrival of Montcalm — Oswego Captured — Preparation for Attacking Crown Point and Ticonderoga — Campaign of 1757 — Marin's Operations — Montcalm's Plans to Capture Fort William Henry — Council with the Indians — De Levis's March — Situation of the Fort — Webb's Pusillanimous Conduct — Fall of the Fort — Indian Atrocity upon the Garrisons — Montcalm's Responsibility — The Situation at the End of the Campaign.

STRANGE as it may appear, after the hostilities above described, it was not until the following summer that a formal declaration of war was proclaimed between England and France. In the year 1756 another force was organized for an attack upon Crown Point. Sir Charles Hardy, who arrived as governor of New York, in September, 1755, had delegated most of his civil duties to De Lancey, and in 1757 resigned. The campaign of 1756, as planned, comprised movements against Fort Niagara with six thousand men, Fort Du Quesne with three thousand and Crown Point with ten thousand, while two thousand were to advance on the French settlements on the Chaudière and to Quebec — a campaign of sufficient magnitude, surely. The population of the Province of New York was then 96,775. The expedition against Crown Point was entrusted to General John Winslow, who built a stockade at Stillwater, which was known as Fort Winslow; but lacking confidence in the number of his force, he awaited reinforcements from England. Lord Loudoun had recently been appointed commander-in-chief and governor of Virginia, with General Abercrombie second in command. Late in June the latter arrived with troops to reinforce General Winslow, but he at once blighted all prospects of success in the field by placing regular officers above the provincial officers of equal rank. Many men deserted and officers threatened to relinquish their commissions. This difficulty was finally adjusted by an agreement that the regulars should be assigned to garrison duty, the provincials to take the field. Winslow advanced to Fort Edward and Lake George, but through the dissensions, incapacity and apathetic indecision of the English commanders, little was accomplished of an offensive character against the French during the year, other than the often brilliant exploits of the American rangers, commanded by Rogers, Stark and others. In the language of Mr. Watson, "Rogers, the gallant ranger, was particularly conspicuous in these wild and daring adventures. Sometimes stealing under the cover of night by the forts in canoes, he lay in ambush far down the lake, surprised and captured boats laded with supplies, which, unsuspecting of danger, were proceeding to relieve the garrisons. Frequently he approached the forts by land, and prowling about them with Indian skill and patience, until he ascertained the intelligence he was ordered to

collect, he captured prisoners, shot down stragglers, burnt dwellings, and slaughtered cattle feeding around the works, and then defying pursuit, retreated in safety. In one of these bold incursions, which signalized the opening of the next year, Rogers and Stark had penetrated with a force of less than eighty men, to a point between the French fortresses, near the mouth of a stream, since known as Putnam's creek, and there in ambush awaited their victims. A party of French are passing in gay and joyous security on the ice toward Ticonderoga. Part are taken, the rest escape and alarm the garrison. The rangers attempt to escape, passing rapidly along the snow path, in Indian file, as was their custom, but on ascending the crest of a hill they receive the fire of an overwhelming force, posted with every advantage to receive them. A fierce and bloody conflict ensued, protracted from near meridian until evening. The rangers, retreating to a hill, are protected by the covert of the trees and there gallantly sustain the unequal conflict. Rogers, twice wounded, yields the command of the little band to Stark, who, with infinite skill and courage, guides the battle, repulses the foe with a loss far exceeding his entire force, and at night conducts a successful retreat to Lake George. . . . This courageous band, reduced to forty-eight effective men, with their prisoners, effected a retreat to Fort William Henry in safety."

A similar brilliant movement was attempted in the ensuing February by the French and Canadians to the number of fifteen hundred, led by Vaudreuil. They traversed the ice and snow of Lakes Champlain and George, more than one hundred miles, in an effort to surprise and capture Fort William Henry. But the vigilant garrison successfully defended the works, although the little fleet of bateaux and the huts of the rangers were destroyed.

The limits of our work will not permit of following in detail the numerous expeditions, battles and hardships of the brave Rogers. The reader will find Rogers's *Journal*, edited by Hough and published by Munsell, of Albany, full of interesting matter on this topic.

The Marquis of Montcalm was made the successor of Dieskau in command of the French and their allies, and succeeded, even to a greater extent than had his predecessors, in winning the confidence and utilizing the power of the Indians.

Says Watson: "The French, far more than the English, were successful in conducting military operations in association with their savage auxiliaries. More flexible in their own feelings, they were more yielding and tolerant towards the peculiar habits and temperament of the Indians. Coercion and reason were powerless with such allies. . . . They were often the most valuable auxiliaries, and achieved victory upon more than one important field; but always unreliable, no safe calculations could be placed upon their services, their fidelity or constancy. Montcalm pronounced them inestimable as scouts and spies." They were the most dreaded opponents and formidable enemies



to the brilliant and heroic operations of the rangers under Rogers, Stark and Putnam.

Montcalm<sup>1</sup> arrived at Quebec in May, 1756, and immediately made himself acquainted with the condition and prospects of his forces; and he found the situation anything but encouraging. He visited Carillon (Ticonderoga) where he had given but one day to inspection and consultation, when he was recalled by Vaudreuil. Early in August he had organized at Frontenac a force of about five thousand men, with which he rapidly advanced upon Oswego. Abercrombie was informed at Albany of the contemplated attack, but the characteristic apathy of the English at that period prevented the necessary immediate action, instead of which Abercrombie and Loudoun began deliberate preparations for a descent upon Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Reinforcements were sent to Forts Edward and William Henry. The opportunity for relieving Oswego was lost. After a brief defense the fort at that point capitulated (August 11th, 1756) and turned over to Montcalm sixteen hundred men, one hundred cannon, a large quantity of stores, and the vessels then in the harbor. Even the fall of Oswego did not awaken the energies of Loudoun. An attack was, however, made by the English with a fleet of boats upon the outworks and flotilla at Ticonderoga; but Montcalm had proceeded thither and the attack was repulsed with severe loss.

For the campaign of 1757 Loudoun made requisition for four thousand troops from the northern colonies, which were furnished, as was supposed, for the reduction of Crown Point and Ticonderoga; but the incapable official again disappointed them, and in June made an ineffectual effort to capture Louisburg. "This futile and impracticable scheme left the frontier colonies open and unprotected. The vigilant and sagacious enemy, from their watch-towers at Carillon, saw the error and prepared promptly to seize the advantage."<sup>2</sup>

In July Marin<sup>3</sup> left Carillon with a small party of Indians and surprised and attacked near Fort Edward two detachments, which suffered severely at his hands. His retreat, made in the face of superior numbers, was successfully conducted. He took thirty-two scalps. In the same summer a party of three hundred and fifty English provincials, who were proceeding down Lake George, were surprised by a force of Ottawa Indians under Corbière, at Sabbath Day Point. Only two boats and fifty men escaped.

It had now become a cherished purpose with Montcalm to destroy Fort William Henry, which was a source of constant anxiety to the Canadian gov-

---

<sup>1</sup> He was of noble birth and thorough education, and entered the French army at fourteen; distinguished himself in the war of the Austrian Succession in Germany, and gained the rank of colonel for his conduct in the battle of Piacenza, in Italy, in 1746. His career in the new world was marked by skill, heroism and humanity.

<sup>2</sup> WATSON.

<sup>3</sup> Marin was formerly connected with the French navy, but while yet young he was allured by the promised romance and daring of the border warfare in New France, and joined the irregular forces of Indians and Canadians. His deeds were valorous, often sanguinary, but sometimes redeemed by generous acts.

ernment, and he resolved to make the effort. The Indian warriors were summoned and responded in such numbers, from Lake Superior to Acadia, that Montcalm was constrained to write, "I have seized their manners and genius." This able general, with rare intuitiveness, mingled with the savages and took part in their ceremonies, made them liberal gifts, and then excited their passions with visions of rich plunder and revenge. The French and Canadian forces were rapidly assembled at Crown Point and Carillon, where they were joined by the Indians. The latter came up the lake in two hundred canoes, accompanied by the priests, the war chants blending with missionary hymns. Across the portage of between three and four miles to Lake George, two hundred and fifty bateaux and two hundred canoes were transported, a work of great magnitude, and performed without the aid of horses or oxen. The following day Montcalm called a council of his Indian allies. It should be understood that, at this time, large numbers of the Five Nations had become settled in Canada, or had joined the French cause from other points, chiefly on account of the success of the French arms and the apathy of the English. On the occasion in question these Iroquois warriors acted the host and received the other tribes with hospitality. To the Iroquois Montcalm presented the "great belt of two thousand beads, to bind the Indians to each other and all to himself." He then unfolded to them his plans. De Levis, with twenty-two hundred French and Canadians, started two days in advance, under escort of six hundred Indians, with the purpose of traversing the mountain track on the west side of the lake, leaving his baggage to come by water. On the 1st of August the remainder of the force embarked in the bateaux. After severe trials De Levis reached his destination and signaled the fact to Montcalm by means of fires at Ganaouské. On the same evening Montcalm marched toward the fort. His force comprised about five thousand five hundred effective men and sixteen hundred Indians.

The fort was garrisoned by 500 men, under the gallant veteran, Colonel Munro, and supported by 1,700 troops in an entrenched camp. General Webb was at Fort Edward, only fifteen miles distant, with 4,000 men. Colonel Munro felt strong in his position under these favorable circumstances. Webb had visited Fort William Henry just before Montcalm's investment, escorted by a body of rangers under Putnam. The latter in making a reconnaissance down the lake discovered the approach of the French, which fact he immediately communicated to Webb and urged him to oppose their landing. Instead, he ignobly enjoyed secrecy upon Putnam and hastily returned to Fort Edward. Learning of the movements of Montcalm, Johnson had already marched to Fort Edward with a force of militia and Indians, reaching there on the second day of the siege. For six days the siege was continued, during which almost daily appeals were sent to Webb for aid. None was furnished. He finally consented that Johnson should march with the militia and rangers to the relief of the be-



leaguered fortress; but the force was peremptorily recalled after proceeding about three miles. Webb sent a letter<sup>1</sup> to Munro advising surrender. It is clear that poltroons sometimes reach high station in the military as well as in civil life.

Montcalm was fortunate. On the same day he received from France dispatches promising royal favors to the army and conferring upon himself the red ribbon with the rank of "commander of St. Louis." The army was reinspired and confident.

Webb's letter to Munro was intercepted by Montcalm, who forwarded it to the fort, with a demand for its instant surrender. Further resistance was useless, and with his ammunition nearly exhausted and half his guns useless, Munro was forced to hang out a flag of truce. Montcalm agreed to honorable terms, one stipulation being that the English troops should march out of the fort "with their arms and other honors of war, and receive an escort to Fort Edward." The following night was spent by the Indians in their customary orgies in celebration of a victory; but they were disappointed that they could not glut their vengeance with more blood, and a most horrible and disgraceful atrocity followed. As the garrison were marching from the works early in the morning, the Indians gathered about and began robbing and insulting the prisoners, brandishing their tomahawks and amusing themselves with the terror inspired in their victims. Personal encounters ensued and with the first flow of blood the savages seemed transformed into demons. Slaughter began on all sides and the dismayed prisoners fled in confusion. At this juncture Montcalm and other French officers rushed upon the scene, bared their breasts and "by threats, prayers, caresses and conflicts with the chiefs, arrested the massacre."<sup>2</sup> "Kill me," cried Montcalm, "but spare the English, who are under my protection." Over one-half the English reached Fort Edward in broken squads; 400 were rescued with their property and restored under the capitulation of Montcalm, and many others through his solicitation were ransomed from the Indians by Vaudreuil. About thirty were killed outright.

Montcalm has been impassionately charged with complicity in this outrage; but it must be confessed that a calm review of the subject does not warrant such a charge.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This letter was written by an aid-de-camp, who says: "He (General Webb) has ordered me to acquaint you that he does not think it prudent (as you know his strength at this place) to attempt a junction or to assist you, till reinforced by the militia of the colonies, for the immediate march, of which, repeated expresses have been sent. One of our scouts brought in a Canadian prisoner last night from the investing party, which is very large, and have possessed all the grounds five miles on this side of Fort William Henry. The number of the enemy is very considerable, the prisoners say 11,000, and have a large train of artillery with mortars, and were to open their batteries this day (Aug. 4th.) The General thought proper to send you this intelligence, that in case he should be so unfortunate, from the delays of the militia, not to have it in his power to give you timely assistance, you might be able to make the best terms in your power;" etc.

<sup>2</sup> *Documentary History.*

<sup>3</sup> Such atrocities were utterly incompatible with his high character as a Christian noble, a gallant soldier and a refined scholar, whose sensibilities had been purified and elevated by communion with

Fort William Henry was totally destroyed and its stores and munitions captured.<sup>1</sup> And all this was effected with a loss to the besiegers of only fifty-three men. General Webb sent his personal baggage to a place of safety and prepared to retreat from Fort Edward to the Hudson. The reduction of this fortification and the possible capture of Albany had been a part of the plans of Montcalm, but for sufficient reasons (chief among which was the required presence of his Canadian soldiers in their harvest fields in order to avert a famine) he retired satisfied with his success and glory. Meanwhile Loudoun had taken his position on Long Island; the English had been driven from the Ohio and Montcalm had placed the valley of the St. Lawrence under the dominion of France. Great Britain and her colonies were humiliated and fearful of the future.

The illustration on the next page of the plan of the French attack on Fort William Henry is from Butler's *Lake George and Lake Champlain*, and was made from actual survey by Mr. Butler.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### CONTINUATION OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH WAR.

Prospects for 1758 — Disheartening Situation in New France — Famine — England's Preponderance — Deeds of the Rangers under Rogers and Putnam — Campaign Plans — Three Expeditions — Fall of Louisberg and Du Quesne — Expedition against Ticonderoga — Death of General Howe and its Consequences — The French Position — First Repulse of the English — Assault on the French Lines — A Sanguinary Conflict — Heroism of the English — Abercrombie's Headquarters — French Victorious — Montcalm's Effective Activity — Movements of the Rangers — Putnam's Danger — His Escape.

WHEN the reader of to-day reflects upon the relative situations of France and England in the New World at the beginning of the year 1758, he finds it difficult to believe that the latter government would submit to three years more of destructive warfare upon her colonies before establishing her dominion over the territory south of the St. Lawrence river, and this while her resources and military strength were constantly and rapidly increasing the disproportion between the two powers. The opening of the year named saw Canada threatened with a famine. The harvest of the previous year was a failure,

---

the poets and philosophers of antiquity. But it (history) can never exonerate his fame from the imputation of criminal negligence and a reckless disregard to the safety of those confided to his honor and protection by the most solemn act known to warfare. A moral responsibility rests upon those who set in motion a power, which they know they have no ability to guide or control. — WATSON.

<sup>1</sup> The fort was never rebuilt. Its site in Warren county is now occupied by the splendid Fort William Henry Hotel.

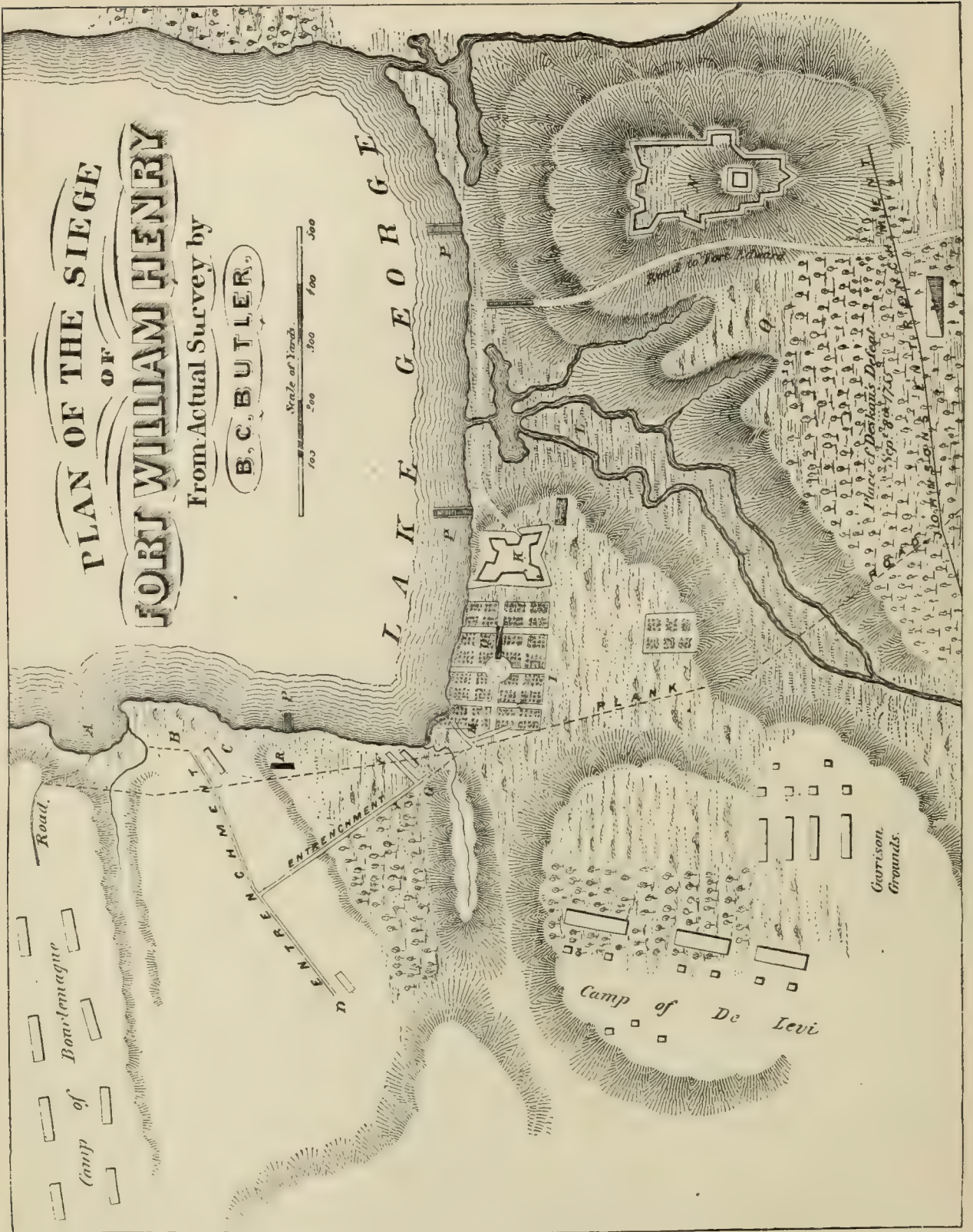


# PLAN OF THE SIEGE OF FORT WILLIAM HENRY

From Actual Survey by

B. C. BUTLER.

Scale of Yards  
100 200 300 400 500



and the home government found it difficult to transmit supplies across an ocean thronged with the enemy's ships. Montcalm wrote the French minister: "The article of provisions makes me tremble." The fact is, a scarcity of provisions followed which caused many deaths by starvation. The population of Canada was estimated at only 82,000, from which Montcalm relied upon drawing about 7,000 men, a force which he could support with nearly 4,000 regulars. These troops were "suffering and impoverished," while fortunes awaited the corrupt high officials. Frauds were perpetrated upon the king of such a flagrant character that they demanded investigation at the close of the war, and numerous other embarrassments crippled the energies and chafed the gallant spirit of Montcalm.

On the other hand, although the recent campaign had been one of disaster to the English, that fact seemed to infuse a little spirit into the ministry which found public expression, chiefly from the gifted statesman, William Pitt. A million and a half of people inhabited the British colonies and an army of some 50,000 men was subject to the commands of Abercrombie. Commercial intercourse with the mother country was almost untrammelled, and there seems no sufficient reason why the French power should not have been extinguished by one grand movement.

But this predominance of the English was considerably modified by the facts that France had gained far stronger influence over the Indians than had the English; the Canadian population was more concentrated, and above all, the French cause was kept under command and direction of far the most brilliant and able men. In the language of Mr. Watson, "Britain sent to her colonies effete generals, bankrupt nobles and debauched parasites of the court. France selected her functionaries from the wisest, noblest and best of her people, and, therefore, her colonial interests were usually directed with wisdom and sagacity."

English hostilities began in 1758 with brilliant deeds by the rangers under Rogers and Putnam, which could not, however, seriously influence the general campaign. Rogers left Fort Edward in March with one hundred and eighty men to reconnoitre the vicinity of Ticonderoga. When near the foot of the lake they encountered a body of about a hundred Canadians and Indians. These were dispersed and the march continued until the English were suddenly confronted with a large force in ambush. A desperate conflict followed, the rangers fighting with a valor born of their knowledge that it was a question of life or death. Nearly the entire detachment was slain and one hundred and forty-four scalps were carried as trophies to Montcalm. Rogers, with a few of his men, escaped. This bloody affray was fought near the rock known as Rogers's Slide, in the northeast corner of Warren county. Tradition asserts that Rogers made his escape by sliding down this precipitous rock to the surface of the lake, but the story is not generally credited. The battle



was probably fought on snow shoes, amid the rugged rocks and defiles of the mountains.

Another heroic incident may be related here. Major Putnam was employed early in the campaign in protecting the English communications and was stationed in a commanding position at a point near Whitehall, where the lake makes a sharp angle, now known as Fiddler's Elbow. He was in command of thirty-five rangers, and on the eastern cliffs he built a stone breast-work, which he disguised with green boughs. Here he patiently waited four days until, on the evening of the fourth day, his scout announced the approach of a flotilla. Clear moonlight revealed every movement on the water. When the foremost boats had passed the barricade the rangers poured destructive volleys upon them in rapid succession. An attempt by part of the French to land was repulsed by twelve of the little band. As dawn appeared Putnam found his ammunition expended and was forced to retire. His only loss was two men wounded. The location is still known as Put's Rock.

Three formidable expeditions were planned for this year against Louisburg, Fort Du Quesne and Ticonderoga, respectively. Admiral Boscawen, with twenty ships of the line and fifteen frigates, together with twelve thousand men under General Amherst, arrived before Louisburg on the 3d of June. A vigorous siege was begun which lasted until the 26th of July, when the French surrendered the position.

The expedition against Du Quesne was commanded by General John Forbes, through whose dilatory action it came very near being disastrous and abandoned. After months of wasted time Washington was sent forward, and when within a day's march of the fort they were discovered by some Indians, who carried the news of their approach to the garrison. There were then but five hundred men in the fortification, and they, on the 24th of November, set it on fire and fled down the Ohio river.

The capture of Ticonderoga and a descent upon Montreal was the more important, indeed it was the vital point in the plans of the campaign. A force of about seven thousand regulars, nearly nine thousand provincials and a heavy train of artillery was assembled at the head of Lake George by the beginning of July. This was the finest army yet organized on the western continent; but unfortunately its command was given to General James Abercrombie. Judging well of his incapacity Pitt sought to avert the probability of failure by the selection of Lord Howe, who was given the rank of brigadier-general and made the active controlling spirit of the undertaking.

At dawn on the morning of the 5th of July this splendid army embarked on Lake George in nine hundred bateaux and one hundred and thirty-five whale-boats, the artillery being transported on rafts. It was an imposing fleet, such as had not before been seen in American waters. A halt was made at Sabbath-day Point for rest and refreshment just before evening, and at ten

o'clock the army was again under headway. Early on the morning of the 6th a landing was made on the west side of the lake at a point which still bears the name of General Howe. Howe and Stark lay upon the same bear-skin the previous night and discussed the situation at Carillon; and there a feeling of mutual regard sprang up between them.

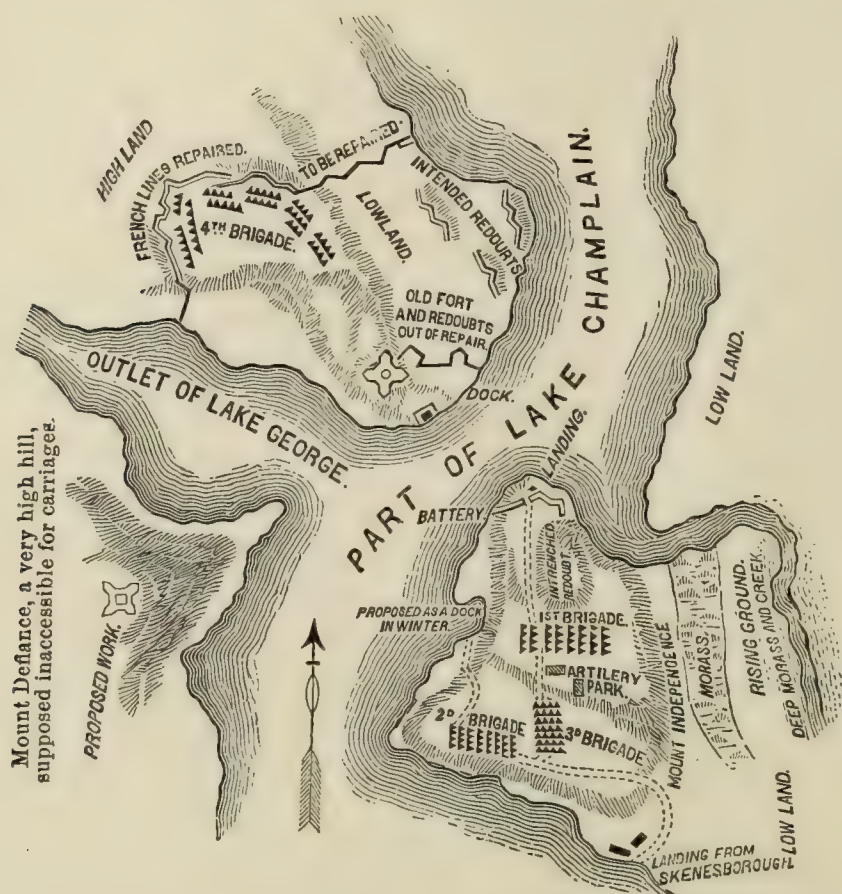
De Boulamarque had been stationed at the foot of the lake with three regiments to oppose the landing of the English, but on their approach in such overwhelming numbers he retreated to the fort, burning both the bridges across the outlet of Lake George, thus compelling Abercrombie to pursue his march through the pathless forest on the west side of the stream. He left his baggage and stores at the deserted camp of De Boulamarque and took up the march directly for the French works; but the intricacy of the forest and the roughness of the ground soon broke up the columns. While in this state of confusion they encountered a body of three hundred and fifty French, who had been detached under De Trèpesée, and had been for twelve hours endeavoring to thread their way through the almost impenetrable woods. A skirmish ensued in which the French soldiers displayed great heroism, despite their exhausted condition. It proved a disastrous event to the English, for the gallant Lord Howe, upon whom, as it developed, the success of the expedition depended, fell at the first fire. The British regulars were appalled at the death of Howe and, unused to forest fighting, faltered and broke, but were gallantly sustained by the provincials. The French general was mortally wounded and almost the entire detachment slain or captured, with insignificant loss to the English.<sup>1</sup>

With the death of Howe fled all hope of a successful campaign. The chronic imbecility and apathy of the English returned and the army of sixteen thousand men, their only immediate enemy being four thousand under Montcalm, was withdrawn on the morning of the 7th. Bradstreet took possession of the saw mill at the falls about noon, rebuilt the bridges and in the evening the army took up its position at that point, about two miles from the fort. During this valuable period the French were strengthening their defenses, whose position is thus clearly described by Mr. Watson: "The promontory held by Montcalm was a narrow and elevated peninsula washed on three sides by deep waters (see engraving) with its base on the western and only accessible side. On the north of this base the access was obstructed by a wet meadow, and on the southern extremity it was rendered impracticable to the advance of an army by a steep slope, extending from the hill to the outlet. The summit between these two points was rounded and sinuous with ledges and elevations

<sup>1</sup> If the British army narrowly escaped by this panic a renewal of the bloody scenes on the Monongahela, it is equally probable, if Howe had lived, and a rapid and vigorous advance been made after the annihilation of Trèpesée's party, that the imperfect intrenchments of the French might have been entered and captured in the disorder and alarm of the moment. But the bugle of Abercrombie sounded the retreat and the opportunity was lost.—WATSON.



at intervals. Here and about half a mile in advance of the fort Montcalm traced the line of his projected intrenchment. It followed the sinuosities of the land, the sections of the works reciprocally flanking each other." The entrenchment, which was about an eighth of a league in length, was constructed by Dupont Le Roy, an accomplished engineer. "It was formed by falling trunks of trees one upon the other and others felled in front, their branches cut and sharpened produced the effect of a *chevaux de frise*."<sup>1</sup> The abattis was about one hundred yards in width. The entire day of the 7th was spent by the French in energetic labor on this effective intrenchment, their flags flying along



TICONDEROGA AND ITS DEPENDENCIES, AUGUST, 1776, FROM A PLAN DRAWN BY  
COL. JOHN TRUMBULL.

the line and music playing, until the line arose to a height of from eight to ten feet its entire length.

De Levis, who had organized an expedition against the Mohawk valley, was recalled to reinforce Ticonderoga, which was reached on the night of the 7th by his four hundred veterans, he following at five o'clock the next morning, accompanied by the gallant De Senezergues. At about the same hour Johnson joined the English camp with three or four hundred Mohawks.

It is well settled that at this time it was Montcalm's intention to evacuate

<sup>1</sup> Montcalm's Report.

Ticonderoga; to the experienced military eye it must have seemed untenable, and it is claimed that he did not decide upon a vigorous defense until the morning of the attack. His force on that day amounted to three thousand and six hundred men, four hundred and fifty of whom were irregular troops. The number of fighting men was two thousand nine hundred and ninety-two. The troops were called to the lines at daybreak and assigned their positions for the day and then returned to improve the precious hours on the intrenchments. The meadow on the right, in front of which was a slight abattis, was occupied by the irregular troops. The fort guns commanded this opening as well as the slope on the extreme left. De Levis was placed on the right with three regiments. De Boulamarque held the left with an equal force, while Montcalm occupied the centre with two battalions and pickets. The declivity toward the outlet was guarded by two companies. Behind each battalion was stationed in reserve a company of grenadiers. At the preconcerted signal (an alarm gun) the troops left their labors on the lines and were at their respective stations under arms just as the advance of the British appeared.

Abercrombie was misled to the belief that reinforcements were on their way to Montcalm. This fact, with the added opinion of his engineer, Clarke, that the French lines were vulnerable to the infantry (although the practiced eye of Stark saw otherwise and so reported), prompted Abercrombie to an immediate attack before the arrival of his powerful artillery.

The imposing advance was made in three columns: First, rangers, bateau men and light infantry; next the provincials marched with wide openings between the regiments; behind these openings were the regulars in columns; the New Jersey and Connecticut levies formed the rear. Johnson was posted with his Indians on Mount Defiance, then known as Sugar Loaf Hill. He took little part in the battle.

The regulars rapidly advanced between the provincial regiments and hurled themselves with intrepid bravery and great determination upon the abattis in front of the French. Two columns attacked the right, another the center, and a fourth was thrown upon the left. But when the almost insurmountable barrier was reached, its impenetrable thicket broke up all military order, while from behind the works came terrible volleys with murderous effectiveness. More heroic valor or greater individual bravery has seldom been shown in battle than was exhibited by the British veterans. And seldom has the great advantage of even temporary intrenchments been more clearly demonstrated. The deadly fire of the French soldiers, protected by their intrenchments, and the cannonade from the howitzers posted at intervals along the line, told with fearful effect upon the assaulting army; but they heard no command to retreat; they had received their orders to advance, and although they could not surmount the works of the enemy, they could die in front of them. The fire of the provincials and their marksmen was perhaps more effective than the vol-



leys of the regulars;<sup>1</sup> Montcalm afterward referred to their "murderous fire."

The details of this sanguinary battle need not be further pursued; they are emblazoned on the pages of many a history. The assault was hopeless from the beginning, and while its bloody scenes were being enacted, under the watchful eye of the brilliant French general, Abercrombie looked after the welfare of his noble person amid the security of the saw-mills, two miles from the battle-field. All day long the conflict raged, and between the hours of six and seven the heroic columns still continued to charge upon the French lines. But the time for retreat had arrived; it should have arrived earlier, and regiment after regiment weary and decimated and without any general order, retired to the camp, their retreat covered by the provincials. Then followed one of those strange panics to which armies made up of the bravest material have often been subject. From some influence that is difficult to comprehend, a feeling of terror spread through the ranks and a wild flight ensued. Nothing but the prompt firmness of Bradstreet prevented further sacrifice. That immediate pursuit did not follow was due only to the comparative feebleness of the enemy and the impracticability of traversing the forest without Indian guides. De Levis went over the track of Abercrombie's army on the morning of the 10th and found only the vestiges of a routed host; and before that hour the English general had dishonorably placed the length of Lake George between him and his conquerors.

Abercrombie admitted the loss of about two thousand men, but the French placed it much heavier, claiming their own to be less than five hundred. Bou-lamarque was severely and Bougainville slightly wounded.

This terrible and probably unnecessary catastrophe was partially offset by the successful siege of Frontenac, which capitulated to Bradstreet on the 26th of August. But while Abercrombie dallied in helpless indecision, Montcalm, reinforced on the 12th of July by the younger Vaudreuil with 3,000 Canadians, and by 600 Indians, on the 13th<sup>2</sup> was vigilant and persistent, striking wherever and whenever he could detect a vulnerable point. Eight days after the battle at Ticonderoga, a body of 500 French partisans surprised an English detachment near the Half-way brook between Lake George and Fort Edward and secured forty-two scalps. On the same ground a few days later another party captured forty carts, 200 oxen, a large quantity of stores, and took eighty-four prisoners and 116 scalps. Rogers and Putnam pursued the victors with a force of 700 troops, but without success. While on this pursuit and to thwart further possible movements, they traversed the mountainous district to Woodneck and returned towards Fort Edward. Apprised of this march, Montcalm dispatched Marin with a force about equal to that of the rangers,

<sup>1</sup> "Their fire greatly incommoded those in the intrenchments." — POUCHOT.

<sup>2</sup> Abercrombie uses the fact of the arrival of these reinforcements to justify himself for attacking the French before the arrival of his artillery.

to intercept the latter. Both parties reached the region of Fort Anne and were ignorant of the proximity of each other. At this time Rogers, contrary to what would have been expected of him while in an enemy's vicinity, fired at a mark with a British officer. The shots revealed to Marin the location of the rangers, for whose reception he immediately formed an effective ambush. Unsuspicious of danger, the rangers were threading the forest in Indian file, Rogers in advance, D'El in the center and Putnam in the rear. They marched directly into the trap. The forest resounded with the war whoop and a murderous fire was poured upon them. But the English had passed through such scenes and although fighting at a great disadvantage, they promptly rallied and a bloody battle ensued, the thrilling incidents of which have stirred the hearts of Americans, old and young, for generations. "Putnam and a few others," says Watson, "were cut off from the main body. The men were slain, and Putnam captured and securely bound to a tree. As the changes of the battle surged around him, he was placed at times between the fire of the contending parties and his garments torn by the shots, alike of friend and foe. While in this helpless condition, a young Indian approached and amused himself with the strange pastime of hurling his tomahawk at the prisoner, practicing how near he could approach without striking the mark. A still more savage Canadian presented his gun at Putnam's breast, but it missed fire. He then indulged his fierce passions by inflicting upon the prisoner several severe wounds with the butt of his weapon. When the French were repulsed and commenced their retreat, his Indian captor released Putnam and extended to him that mysterious tenderness and care with which the Indians treat their victims destined to the torture. The savages encamped at night, and then the strange motive that actuated this kindness was revealed. Putnam, stripped of his clothing, was again tied to a sapling; dried fagots were piled about him; the torch applied, and while the smoke and crackling flames began to ascend, the thoughts of the brave ranger dwelt upon his happy home and prattling children. When the agony of death in this frightful form was almost passed, the generous Marin, who had learned of his peril, rushed to the spot, and bursting through the circle of shouting savages, scattered the firebrands and rescued the victim. In the ensuing autumn Putnam was exchanged and returned to new fields of glory, but to none of such appalling horror.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> On the breaking out of the War of Independence, Rogers adhered to the government, was subjected to confiscation and outlawry, went to England and there published his journal.



## CHAPTER IX.

## EXTINCTION OF FRENCH POWER IN AMERICA.

Continuation of the Famine — Exigencies of the French — Montcalm's Prophecies — Pitt's Zeal and its effect — The Proposed Campaign — Abercrombie's Recall and Amherst's Appointment — His Extensive Military Preparations — Assembling His Army — Montcalm Asks to be Recalled — Capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point by Amherst — Destruction of the Indian Village of St. Francis — Rogers's Wonderful Expedition — Amherst's Fleet and its Operations — General Wolfe before Quebec — Fall of the City — Montcalm and Wolfe Killed — Strengthening of Crown Point and Ticonderoga — Campaign of 1760 — Extinction of French Power in the New World.

WHILE the events recorded in the preceding chapter would seem to indicate an early approaching triumph of the French cause in America, the reverse was the fact. Canada was suffering the actual horrors of famine and was almost depopulated of males who had reached maturity, to swell the ranks of the military. The ocean teemed with British ships, rendering it practically impossible for France to grant the appeal: "We want provisions; we want powder; and France should send 10,000 men to preserve our colony." For three years, against odds that would, in any other hands than those of the incompetent English commanders, have crushed him in a single campaign, the brave Montcalm had preserved the French possessions; but in the spring of 1759 he wrote the government minister: "If the war continues, Canada will belong to England, perhaps this campaign or the next." And then referring to the gross corruption, jealous wrangles and insolence of the French officials towards the Canadians, added in the same letter: "If there be peace the colony is lost unless the entire government is changed." Moreover, a feeling of jealousy and ill-will had grown up between Montcalm and Vaudreuil and was fostered by the brilliant military exploits of the former; while the latter from his position of authority, carried to the throne imputations against Montcalm of insubordination, neglect of instructions, lack of adaptation to the command in Canada, and a personal deportment that alienated the alliance of the Indians. This spirit was reflected upon and infused into the army, while the savages, although still professing fealty, failed to rally to the French cause as they had formerly done. A large body of warriors had been promised Montcalm at Ticonderoga, with the aid of which he felt that he could have successfully pursued and overwhelmed Abercrombie. The warriors did not appear until too late, when they were rebuked by Montcalm.<sup>1</sup> The chiefs complained to Vaudreuil and he promptly carried their complaints to Versailles.

While this untoward state of affairs with the French was growing worse, the zeal of Pitt was stirring the sluggish British to action. The proposed cam-

<sup>1</sup> When the chiefs proposed to take the war path toward Fort Edward, Montcalm told them to "go to the d — l."

paign involved, besides the conquest of Ticonderoga, the capture of Fort Niagara and the siege of Quebec. On the 7th of July General Prideaux, who was joined by Johnson at Oswego, appeared before Niagara, but the siege had scarcely begun when he was slain. Johnson then assumed command and the siege continued. On the 24th a large body of French and Indians attempted to raise the siege. A sharp conflict ensued and the effort was defeated. The garrison surrendered the next day.

With the fall of Louisburg, as already recorded, General Amherst embarked four or five regiments and hurried to Boston, whence he marched across the country for Lake George, reaching there in October, 1758. Abercrombie had already been recalled (September) and Amherst given the command of all the forces in North America, which he assumed in November.<sup>1</sup>

Amherst<sup>2</sup> began at once his preparations for an active campaign. He proved to be the right man for the emergency; and the colonies had need of all their confidence in him and his proposed measures, for he called for more than seventeen hundred recruits, a number that appalled them, coming as an addition to their already heavy sacrifices. But inspired by the enthusiasm of Pitt and relying on the genius of Amherst, the colonies yielded up their men and means.

Amherst made his headquarters near the ruins of Fort William Henry, where his army of eleven thousand effective men was assembled by the 21st of July. On that day the bosom of Lake George was again the scene of a gorgeous array of boats bearing the army towards their enemies. A landing was made on the eastern shore, nearly opposite Howe's Cove, whence he was prepared for his successful march against Ticonderoga.

The unhappy condition of the French had already impelled Montcalm to ask repeatedly for his own recall, a request that was as often endorsed by Vaudreuil; but the home government appreciated the genius of the general at his true value and sent him the following dispatch: "You must not expect to receive any military reinforcements; we will convey all the provisions and ammunition possible; the rest depends on your wisdom and courage and the bravery of your troops." Our sympathy must go out to the gallant officer who was constrained to turn his thoughts from his family and his wasting estate and give up his life for a falling fabric. He wrote a friend in France: "There are situations where nothing remains for a general but to die with honor."

---

<sup>1</sup> Abercrombie returned to England; evaded censure; was gladdened by promotion, and lived to vote as a member of parliament for the taxation of a country which his imbecility might have lost, and which was always the object of his malignant aspersions.—BANCROFT.

<sup>2</sup> Amherst, without any claim to brilliancy or genius, was calculated to command success by the excellence of his judgment, his prudent circumspection and persevering firmness. His character and policy had secured to him the respect and confidence of the colonies. His measures were not stimulated by the arrogance of Braddock, nor trammelled by the feebleness and indecision of Abercrombie, nor dishonored by the pusillanimity of Webb.—WATSON.



Montcalm collected all his available forces, except twenty-three hundred men who were left in charge of the lake fortifications under Boulamarque, and occupied Quebec to oppose the expected attack under General Wolfe; and there both of these brave generals found their graves.

Boulamarque contemplated an attack upon the forces of Amherst while they were still in the forest, but the Indians refused to support him. He therefore "left a garrison of four hundred men at Ticonderoga, with orders to maintain the position until the investment was completed, then to blow up the fort and fall back upon Crown Point."<sup>1</sup> The investment was accomplished on the 23d of July, and on the evening of the 26th a heavy explosion announced the evacuation of Ticonderoga. The domination of France was ended. The victors occupied the abandoned fortress. It was two weeks later before the cautious Amherst moved upon Crown Point, which he found deserted and desolate. Boulamarque retreated to the Isle aux Noix. The final capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point was effected almost without bloodshed. Amherst's adjutant-general, Townsend, a brilliant officer, and about eighty men were killed.

General Amherst, mistaking the then inevitable current of events and consequently magnifying the importance of Ticonderoga and Crown Point after their capture, began the work of erecting a new fortress near the site of St. Frederic, but of vastly greater strength and magnitude. The conquest of Canada left the fortification useless and unfinished, after an expenditure of more than ten million dollars. The English general also began the vigorous construction of a naval flotilla for the lake which should permanently secure its conquest. While this work was progressing two measures of considerable importance were ordered by Amherst. The first was the construction of a military road from Crown Point to Charlestown, on the Connecticut river. This was an improvement of great value at that time and opened up a large territory to settlement earlier than would have been the case without it. It is said that the remains of the work may still be traced.

The other measure contemplated the destruction of the Indian village of St. Francis, on the river of that name, about midway between Montreal and Quebec. Rogers was selected for the undertaking and given command of one hundred and forty-two men. He descended the lake with caution and on the tenth day concealed his boats at the foot of Missisqui Bay, leaving two Indians to watch them. Two days later he was overtaken by the Indians, with the information that he was followed by the French who had captured his boats and were in ambush awaiting his return. In this emergency he conceived the bold and hazardous design of prosecuting his original purpose, after which he would march through the wilderness to the "Cohase Intervales," a point sixty miles north of Charlestown, on the Connecticut river, and the northernmost

---

<sup>2</sup> WATSON'S *Essex County*.

English post on that stream. He immediately dispatched eight of his men under Lieutenant McMullin through the wilderness to Crown Point, with a request to Amherst to send the necessary supplies to meet him at the designated point on the Connecticut. On the evening of the twenty-second day of their march the little band reached the vicinity of the Indian village, which was carefully reconnoitered. At dawn the next morning they fell upon the unsuspecting savages, of whom few escaped; about two hundred were killed. Daylight revealed to the victors the sight of more than six hundred English scalps of both sexes and all ages floating from the lodge-poles of the Indians. If this massacre of the village seems a cold and blood-thirsty deed, the finding of these dread trophies of savage atrocities against helpless Europeans must modify our deprecation of it. Rogers loaded his men with what plunder they could carry and started for the Connecticut. He was pursued by a body of Indians, who hung upon his rear, repeatedly attacking him. He was finally forced to divide his party in order to more readily procure subsistence, which policy left him still more exposed to the assaults of the Indians, who killed many and captured a number of prisoners. Rogers and the remainder of his men reached the appointed place on the Connecticut after much hardship, only to find it deserted by the men who had been sent by Amherst with supplies. Rogers then took with him one ranger and an Indian youth and started to descend the river on a raft; the journey was at last accomplished after the most perplexing trials and inflexible determination, and supplies were forwarded to the waiting rangers. Rogers returned to Crown Point on the 1st of December, and when the scattered parties were reassembled, he reported a loss of three officers and forty-six privates.

Meanwhile the construction of Amherst's navy was progressing under direction of Captain Loring, and by the 11th of October there were finished a sloop carrying sixteen guns, a brigantine and radeau mounting six cannon of large calibre. Under escort of these vessels, Amherst embarked his army on bateaux and sailed down the lake on his long deferred expedition towards Quebec. On the following day twelve of his boats were foundered in a gale and the remainder of the fleet sought shelter in lee of the western shores.<sup>1</sup> Loring took the brigantine and sloop, continued on down the lake and forced the French to destroy two of their vessels in a bay on the northeast of Valcour

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Watson concludes that Amherst probably advanced under these adverse circumstances to the vicinity of Valcour island and there on the mainland formed an encampment. In support of this conclusion he quotes as follows from the writings of Alvin Colvin, esq.: "I adopt this conclusion from the language of an English writer of the period, and from the popular traditions of the region. Those are still living who recollect an opening on the pine bluffs south of the Ausable river and directly upon the boundary line between Clinton and Essex counties, which, in the early part of the century was known as Amherst's encampment. It exhibited vestiges of extensive field-works, the habitual caution of Amherst would have led him to erect, and also remains of tar manufactories formed in the primitive manner of the pioneers. It is a singular coincidence that the tar and pitch used in the equipment of McDonough's fleet more than fifty years afterward were made on the same ground and by a similar process."



island ; a third was sunk, and one schooner only was saved by seeking shelter under the guns at Isle aux Noix. It is believed that Amherst's extreme caution, more than the exigencies of the situation, caused him to return to Crown Point after an absence of ten days, instead of pressing on to the relief of Wolfe.

This brave but fated officer found himself before Quebec in June with eight thousand men in transports under convoy of twenty-two line-of-battle ships. He landed his men on the Isle of Orleans, three miles below the town, and on the 30th seized Point Levi, opposite the city, on which he erected batteries. Several unsuccessful efforts were made to cut out and destroy the French shipping, and two months passed during which little progress had been made towards the capture of the city. Neither had any intelligence been received from Amherst other than report by the enemy that he had retreated. General Wolfe was prostrated by sickness and the future looked gloomy. But a council of officers, called at his bedside, decided to scale the heights of Abraham from the St. Lawrence and assault the town. Feeble as Wolfe was he resolved to lead the attack. The camp below the Montmorency was broken up on the 8th of September and Montcalm's attention was diverted from the real movement by seeming preparations to attack his lines. On the 12th the vessels bearing the army moved up the stream above the intended landing place. At midnight the troops left the ships and proceeded in flat boats and with muffled oars to the landing, where a ravine led up to the plains. In early morning the entire English force had reached the destination and were ready to attack the works.

Meanwhile Montcalm foresaw the coming doom and on the 24th of August wrote with realistic forecast : "The capture of Quebec must be the work of a *coup de main*. The English are masters of the river. They have but to effect a descent on the bank on which this city, without fortification and without defense, is situated, and they are at once in condition to offer me battle which I cannot refuse, and which I ought not to be permitted to gain. In fine, Mr. Wolfe, if he understands his business, has but to receive my first fire, to rush rapidly upon my army, to discharge his volley at close quarters, and my Canadians, without discipline, deaf to the call of the drum and the trumpet, and thrown into disorder by this assault, will be unable to recover their ranks. They have no bayonets to meet those of their enemy ; nothing remains for them but flight, and I am routed irretrievably."

"Mr. Wolfe" understood his business. This plan of assault, so greatly practicable to the experienced eye of the French general, was substantially carried out, and after a sanguinary battle (the details of which are beyond the province of this work) the victory was won, with a thousand prisoners and five hundred French killed, among whom was the brave Montcalm. The English loss was six hundred killed and wounded, among the former being the gallant Wolfe, who received three wounds early in the attack, the third one being

mortal. General Townsend now prepared to besiege the city itself. "Threatened famine within aided him," and five days after the death of Wolfe (September 18th, 1759) Quebec, with its fortification, shipping, stores and people, was surrendered to the English. General Murray, with five thousand troops, took possession and the fleet with the sick and prisoners sailed for Halifax.

For the fall of Quebec, Montcalm was largely held responsible and was even charged with deliberately sacrificing it to gratify his jealousy of Vaudreuil; but a calm view of the situation in the brilliant light of his previous heroic services will hardly substantiate such charges. Vaudreuil returned to France after the capitulation, and he also became an object of persecution and unjust censure.

\* A period of quiet followed these events, during which Amherst devoted his energies to the extension of the works at Ticonderoga and the erection of the great fortress at Crown Point. (See subsequent history of these towns).

A comparatively brief campaign in 1760 completed the conquest of the French in the New World. De Levis made a heroic effort to recapture Quebec in the battle of Sillery, in which Murray suffered a disastrous defeat; but it came too late to permanently re-establish the fortunes of France. Amherst's plans for the year 1760 embraced his own advance upon Montreal by way of Oswego and the St. Lawrence, for which purpose he reserved to himself by far the strongest column of the army, numbering about ten thousand men. With this invincible force he moved with his accustomed deliberation and caution and appeared before Montreal on the 6th of September. Haviland was left in command of the fortresses on Lake Champlain, from which locality several successful incursions were made against Canadian settlements under command of Rogers, while awaiting the deliberate movements of Amherst. On the 16th of August the last military pageant of this war left Crown Point and sailed down the lake. It comprised about three thousand regulars and provincials under Haviland, who were embarked in bateaux under convoy of four war vessels, with an equal number of radeaux bearing heavy armaments. Bourgainville occupied the Isle aux Noix, which he had strengthened by anchoring a fleet of small vessels on his flank. He had sixteen hundred men. Haviland reached the main land opposite the island without opposition, where he erected batteries. The vessels of the French were dispersed or captured and on the night of the 29th they abandoned the position. The fortifications at St. Johns and Chambly were evacuated at the same time, the garrisons falling back towards Montreal. Meanwhile Murray had ascended the river from Quebec and joined Amherst before Montreal, where Haviland formed a junction on the 7th of September. Here was gathered all that remained of the chivalry of France in the New World, with their allies, to oppose the last attack, the success of which would drive them from the country forever. However honorable to the French arms, the struggle was hopelessly unequal, and on the



8th of September Vaudreuil capitulated and New France, with all of its dependencies, fell into the hands of the British. Amherst made terms of generous magnanimity and the details were soon agreed upon, while England sent up a national shout of exultation. Although hostilities between the two nations ceased, a formal peace was not established until 1763, when, on the 10th of February, the treaty of Paris was signed, by which France ceded to Great Britain all her possessions in Canada.

On the 30th of July, 1760, Governor De Lancey, of New York, suddenly died and the government passed into the hands of Cadwallader Colden, who was commissioned lieutenant-governor in August, 1761. In October of that year General Robert Monkton was appointed governor of New York.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### FIRST COLONIZATION.

Conflicting Land Grants — The Champlain Valley thrown into Market — William Gilliland's Purchases — His Remarkable Colony — Plan of Leasing to Tenants — Departure of the Colony from New York — Extracts from Gilliland's Journal — His Arbitrary Act — Drowning of His Daughter — The Boundary Commission.

WAR must ever necessarily be a hindrance to the settlement of new countries. The territory of which this work is a history was no exception to the rule, and, as far as can ever be ascertained, little was accomplished in it towards permanent occupation until after the peace of 1763. Although the French had maintained their military domination over the Champlain valley for nearly a quarter of a century, the fact that it *was* a military ascendancy prevented their permanent occupation of the attractive region for purposes of clearing and improving the lands, except in the immediate vicinity of their fortifications.<sup>1</sup> While in these localities, and particularly at Crown Point, there are evidences of settlements of no inconsiderable magnitude and of a brisk mercantile business, these conditions undoubtedly grew, to a large extent, out of the war. It is believed that there was a village of between fifteen hundred and two thousand inhabitants at Crown Point during the French régime, and it is reasonable to suppose that in such a community there were many who located there in the belief that the French cause would eventually triumph and they thus be permitted to become permanent occupants of the soil they were improving. It is also possible that the settlement was one of importance even

---

<sup>1</sup> See town histories of Crown Point and Ticonderoga.

before the French occupation,<sup>1</sup> as a trading-post for French, English and Indians. But whatever may have been the extent of settlement down to the period of the war whose events we have described, the inhabitants appear to have retreated from the region before the march of Amherst's victorious armies. Between that war and the beginning of the War of the Revolution great advancement was made in the occupation of the Eastern States; and the uncertainty that surrounded the future of Canada, which had retarded settlements in the environs of Lake Champlain before the peace of 1763, was dispelled by the treaty of Paris, and the officers and soldiers of both the regular and provincial ranks, who had beheld the natural beauties of the lake and its shores, turned their attention and that of their friends and relatives in this direction. But grants of land had already been issued by the French government, covering portions of this region, which were destined to cause much annoyance to early settlers. One of these, under date of November 15th, 1758, embraced a large part of the territory within the present boundaries of the towns of Crown Point and Ticonderoga; another earlier one has already been mentioned. A proclamation by the king of Great Britain, dated October 7th, 1763, authorized the colonial governors to issue land grants which might be located in any colony chosen by the grantee. As the officers and men who had served in the then recent campaigns were to be particularly favored in these grants, it was a natural consequence that the proclamation would not only lead to rapid increase in the general occupation of the country, but would turn the hopeful gaze of many soldiers and officers towards the lovely valley where much of their service had been expended, and whose beauty and fertility they had seen for themselves. These grants often came in collision with those previously issued by the French government and a great deal of trouble was experienced in adjusting the conflicting interests in such cases. England was perhaps justified in the assumption that France never acquired any rights over the territory in question, other than by usurpation, and could not, therefore, exercise any authority which England would be bound to respect;<sup>2</sup> but the latter country

<sup>1</sup> We think the conclusion is warranted, that Crown Point was probably, at an early period, a trading-post, at which the merchandise of the French and English colonies were interchanged, and where the Indians congregated from widely extended hunting grounds to traffic their peltries. — WATSON'S *Essex County*.

<sup>2</sup> Governor Tryon to Lord Hillsborough, September, 1772: "It is a matter of real concern to me to learn the consideration of the Canada Claims has not undergone a final decision. Upon a more strict examination of the claims of the French grantees to lands within this Gov't I cannot be persuaded that the last treaty of peace, or the articles of the Capitulation at the surrender of Canada gives any valid title to such claims. The territory southwards of St. Lawrence river has been always acknowledged the property of the Five Nations, subjects or allies of Great Britain, & as the French settlements, as well as grants within that district were made, not under the sanction of Cession, purchase or conquest, but by intrusion, the justice of the title of those claimants seems to rest on His Majesty's generosity which will operate no doubt as powerfully in the behalf of those Officers & Soldiers, who now hold a great part of those disputed lands under grants from this prov'ce in consequence of His Majesty's proclamation in 1763." The details of the controversy over these grants will be found in the *Documentary History of New York*, papers relating to the French seignories on Lake Champlain.



treated the French claimants with exceeding liberality, first by issuing in 1768 an edict suspending the further granting of land claims north of Crown Point in territory already included in any French patent, and in some cases compromising with the French claimants by giving them lands in Canada of equal value. Many of the French claims were, however, ultimately repudiated.

One effect of these conflicting claims was to throw the lands into market; moreover it has always been the rule that lands granted to soldiers are, to a large extent, soon transferred to other hands, and usually at less than their real value at the time. Previous to the period under consideration, patents of extensive manors had been granted in the southern part of New York, whereon the owners exercised a sort of feudal authority. These two circumstances were probably the controlling motives which led to the establishment of a colony in the territory of Essex county and extending into that of Clinton county, which proved remarkable in many respects, and particularly so in the checkered and ultimately mournful career of its founder.

William Gilliland was at that time an enterprising merchant of New York city. He was a native of Ireland and a man of bold enterprise, unflinching determination and wise foresight. With the purpose of acquiring for himself a great estate similar to those just mentioned, his attention fell upon the valley of Lake Champlain, which he caused to be explored. Much of the territory upon the eastern shores of the lake was already appropriated, and upon the intelligence furnished by his agents, he resolved to establish his manor on the western shore along the Boquet river and extending southward along the lake to Split Rock. His first acquisition was a grant of two thousand acres, made to James Field. It lay immediately south of the Boquet and is still known as Field's Patent. Gilliland subsequently bought seven additional claims, embracing in the aggregate more than fifteen thousand acres of land. The territory comprehended in his estate "began half a mile south of the river, extending to Judd's Patent (which seems to have been previously surveyed) near Split Rock, presenting on the shore of the lake a line of about six miles, and spreading three or four miles into the interior."<sup>1</sup> His purchases being concluded in 1764, the lands were surveyed in the ensuing year. It appears to have been Gilliland's plan to retain his extensive landed estate in his own possession and to secure its occupation by a liberal system of leases and generous inducements to his tenants. He secured a large number of hardy and industrious mechanics and laborers, and amply provided with tools, provisions and all needed supplies as far as could be foreseen, the colony left New York on the 10th of May, 1765. From this date Gilliland kept a journal with entries nearly every day, liberal quotations from which will tell the story of the colonization of this portion of Essex county better than it can otherwise be done, as well as give an interesting and valuable historical record.<sup>2</sup> We therefore quote as follows:—

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON'S *Pioneer History of the Champlain Valley*.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Watson, the able historian of this region, published in 1863 a work entitled *Pioneer History*

---

“WILLSBOROUGH TOWN BOOK.

“COMMENCING THE 10TH DAY OF JUNE, 1765.

“1765, May 10th. This day I embarked at New York for Albany, having the following persons in company to settle that tract of land,<sup>1</sup> viz. :

“The Rev. George Henry, minister.

“1 John Chislm, millwright, to work 4 shillings per day and found.

“2 Robert Maclane, millwright, to work 5 pounds<sup>2</sup> per mo. and found.

“3 George Nelson, carpenter, to work 3 pounds 12 per mo. and found.

“4 John Mattoon, clerk, at 25 pounds per ann. and found.

“5 James Storkner, weaver, at 40 shillings per mo. if wanted.

“6 Robert McAuley, do do do

“7 John Mcauley, do do do

“8 George Belton, do do do

“9 Mrs. Belton, wife of the foregoing of the same name.

“10 Mrs. Chislm, wife to the foregoing of same name.

“11 Catherine Shepherd, hired to keep house.

“12 Mary Craig, indentured for four years.

“May 13th, arrived at Albany, all well.

“May 14th, Isaac Bush, and Williams Barnes, drovers, arrived at Albany, with 20 oxen, 20 cows, 1 bull, and a number of calves for me.

“May 18th, embarked in four bateaux, to proceed to Fort Edward, having to the amount of eighty barrels of stores and all the people on board ; being detained until now for two bateaux, ordered from Schenectady.

“19th, arrived at Half Moon, where we were joined the 20th, by William Luckey, cooper and farmer, to get 40 shillings per month.

“21st, arrived at Robinson.

“22d, arrived at Stillwater.

“23d, arrived at Saratoga.

“24th, arrived at Fort Miller.

“25th, proceeded upon our way to Fort Edward.

“26th, arrived at Fort Edward, where we were joined

“27th, by Martin Tayler, farmer, at 45 shillings per month.

“1765.

“JOURNAL FROM NEW YORK TO WILLSBORO.

“May 29th, arrived at Fort George,<sup>3</sup> with all the people, cattle, Bateaux and goods, and

---

*of the Champlain Valley*, which embraces the entire journal of Mr. Gilliland, with much other valuable historical matter ; we have selected from the journal such entries as seem desirable for this work.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Watson infers that the expression, “That tract of land,” indicates that this portion of the record is a continuation of an earlier document; which is lost.

<sup>2</sup> The currency mentioned in this journal, unless differently designated, is the New York colonial currency at \$2.50 to the pound. The low wages then paid, when the hardships and privations of the settlers are considered, presents a striking contrast with present customs.

<sup>3</sup> The various military campaigns against Lake Champlain and Canada, many of them emanating from Albany and its vicinity, had doubtless necessitated the construction of roads by way of Lake George



"30th, were joined by Eliachim Ayers, wagon maker, 72 shillings per month, and Samuel Jackson, blacksmith, 70 shillings per month.

"N. B. — The wages to commence payable to the whole after the arrival at Willsboro; none being engaged for a fixed time save Robert Maclane, who is engaged for twelve months after the arrival, and George Willson, to Nov. 1st.

"31st, embarked at Fort George for Ticonderoga with all the people and goods in the four bateaux, and all the cattle in the vessel called the Snow Shoe, and arrived at Saml Adams, at Sabbath Day Point, where we got the cattle on shore and lodged all night.

"June 1st, arrived at Ticonderoga landing."<sup>1</sup>

The 2d, 3d and 4th were spent in getting to Crown Point.

"5th, having left the whole of the cattle there under the care of William Luckey (except 4 oxen left at Ticonderoga with Martin Tayler and my negro man Ireland, to haul logs to the saw-mill<sup>2</sup> in lieu of 120 boards got there, and which were rafted down to Crown Point by E. Ayres and J. Wattson,) we proceeded the

"7th, from Crown Point to Willsboro, the boards having overtaken us that morning at Crown Point.

"June 8th, arrived at the mouth of the Boquet, proceeded up the river to the falls, viewed them there with John Chism in company, who thought it would be impracticable to erect mills there except at vast expense."

This fact dejected Gilliland, but the millwright's opinion was soon changed.

"June 9th, Robert McLane and Eliakim Ayres arrived at the river Boquet with the raft of boards, having been assisted by Moses Dickson, tailor, who joined us the 7th instant, at Crown Point, at 40s per mo. and be found. Proceeded in company with Robert Maclane immediately to the falls, who, having carefully viewed their situation, gave it as his opinion, that several mills might be erected there with much ease and small expense — which opinion was found afterward to be well founded. We then returned to the river's mouth well satisfied and, having thrown our fishing seine, we hauled in sixty large fish, being mostly masquenonge, bass and pickerel.<sup>3</sup>

---

to facilitate the movements of the British armies. Otherwise, in the opinion of Mr. Watson, the route either by Skeeneboro (Whitehall) or South Bay, would have been more convenient and economical for Gilliland.

<sup>1</sup> Foot of Lake George, where Abercrombie effected his disembarkations. The "Carry" is about four miles long.

<sup>2</sup> The outlet of Lake George furnishes excellent water power, and the French erected saw-mills there at an early day. That mentioned by Gilliland is the one where Abercrombie made his headquarters during the assault on Ticonderoga.

<sup>3</sup> Lake Champlain and all of its affluents abounded with fish in early days. (See town histories.) Mr. Watson says: "I have been assured by the early settlers, that when they first emigrated, the salmon were so abundant in some of the streams, as to render it dangerous to ride through them on a spirited horse; I have myself seen large schools of this fish as late 'as the year 1824 or 1825, from the bridge in the village of Plattsburgh. At that time they were taken by the spear and seine in great quantities. They have not totally disappeared from the waters of the lake. Mr. Sheldon mentions a record

"June 10th, proceeded with the goods towards the falls and landed them in Camp Island. Wages commencing this day to all, except William Luckey and Martin Taylor, whose wages commenced at the time of their separation from us on their respective employments."

The 11th, and down to the 15th, were spent in clearing a road to the falls, and in the partial erection of a house 22 by 44 feet in dimensions. The next entry is on July 10th.

"July 10th, our four carpenters began to square timber for the mill, the other hands being employed cutting wood for coal, clearing land, etc. All the cattle having been brought safe from Crown Point some time ago, by four of our people, who having swam them across the lake at Crown Point, drove them through the woods on the east side to the Cloven<sup>1</sup>Foot, from thence we ferried them to the Cloven Rock (Split Rock) in a scow hired from New England men and drove them from thence through the woods to Milltown, having now given that name to the land at the falls, four of our people, viz.: James Stockner, John McAuley, Moses Dickson and myself, having brought our four bateaux deeply loaded with boards and provisions from Crown Point, whilst the others were driving the cattle.

"19th. Begun to blow up rocks that were in the way of our mill-trough, having now judged it useless to make a dam, sufficiency of water being obtainable without it."

The time from the 23d of July to the 24th of August Mr. Gilliland was absent on a trip to Montreal and Quebec, on which he was accompanied by Rev. Mr. Henry and William Jones.

"25th July, it was agreed that the following persons should go to the meadows<sup>1</sup> and there make hay sufficient for all our cattle, the charges for which to be borne by the owners of the cattle, respectively, in proportion to the cattle they have, in which proportion they are to have their dividend of hay, viz.:

"William Luckey, Martin Taylor, James Stocker, mowers. Robert Macawley, John McAuley, Geo. Belton, Moses Dickson, haymakers and road-clearers.

"Sept. 12th, this day, with all the above mentioned, returned from the

---

of five hundred being taken in a single afternoon from the Boquet. The late venerable Levi Higby informed me that he knew, in the year 1823, of fifteen hundred pounds of salmon being taken at one haul of a seine near his residence in Chesterfield. The pickerel of the lake is esteemed a secondary fish, often marked by a rank muddy taste. But when transferred into the ponds of the interior, the influence of a change of water and food imparts a new character to the fish. Its shape becomes modified, and it is transformed into a fish of exquisite flavor."

<sup>1</sup> I cannot determine whether the meadows referred to are the marshes created by the spring overflowing of the low alluvial lands upon the shores of the lake, or those formed by the labors of the beaver, upon streams. I conjecture they were the latter. Both of these formations were of the utmost benefit to the pioneers in the settlement of a new country, before they were able to produce fodder by cultivation. The hay cut upon the marshes is very inferior to that cured from cultivated grasses. Its growth upon these natural meadows is usually a coarse and harsh grass intermingled with rushes, brakes and ferns. In places more elevated a better quality of hay is produced.—WATSON.



meadows, having finished the making of the company's hay, it being put up in tramp cocks,<sup>1</sup> as, follows :—

“ 11 tramp cocks in Elizabeth meadow.

“ 9 “ “ in Little swamp meadow.

“ 15 “ “ in Cloven rock meadow.

“ In all 35 tramp cocks.

“ Sep. 18th, employed William Lawson, mason, to build a double chimney in my house at Milltown.

“ 19th, set out on a survey, and layed out the following lots of land between the Bouquet river and Cloven rock, and adjoining the lake.”

Here follow the records and corner marks of the survey of twenty-five lots, embracing portions of the present towns of Willsborough and Essex, which is “ inferior to no tract in the State for beauty of position, native fertility and high culture.” The records of these surveys embrace the names of the occupants of many of the lots, which appear a little further on, with others. The name “ Elizabeth ” has already been quoted and frequently appears in the surveys. It refers to the site of the village of Essex, according to the best authorities, and was given to that locality in honor of Mr. Gilliland's wife, or his daughter of the same name. The name of Elizabethtown, applied to an interior town at a later date, had the same origin. Willsborough, he derived from his own name.

“ Monday, 6th October, 1765, went in a bateau to visit my tract of land at Cumberland Bay, in company with John Chislm, Eliakem Ayres, John Waltron and James Stocker. On our passage went ashore on the 2 most western of the four Islands.<sup>2</sup> Found the most eastward of those being largest of the 4 to contain 4 or 5 acres of choice land, and the westward one is rich, but all covered with brush, it may be about 3 acres, then passed close by Schyler's island,<sup>3</sup> or Isle Chapon, which looks at a distance but dry, stony light ground, little worth. About six in the evening, arrived at the high sandy cliffs, and encamped there.”

From this time to the 13th of October Mr. Gilliland and his companions, were engaged in explorations outside of the province of this work to describe. Continuing, the journal says :—

“ Returned home the 13th of October, and employed my time from now to 31st Oct., in laying out lots, filling leases, and settling accounts with the people, and gave the following leases, *viz.* :

<sup>1</sup> The term “ tramp cocks ” might have remained obscure but for the fact that Mr. Watson discovered in Stevens's *Book of the Farm* the term “ trampled picks.” These were doubtless identical with the hay-stacks of the present, which are trampled down while building. Such were undoubtedly Gilliland's “ tramp cocks.”

<sup>2</sup> A group of four beautiful islands near the middle of the lake and now known as the Four Brothers.

<sup>3</sup> This island lies near the western shore of the lake opposite Douglas bay. Tradition ascribes its name to the circumstance that John Schuyler encamped his forces there in 1690.

"John Chism, Lot No. 1, (number of acres in each case left blank); Robt. McLane, Lot No. 2; Robt. McAwley, Lot No. 4; John King and G. Hicks, ———; George Wilson, Lot No. 23; George Belton, Lot No. 24; William Luckey, Lot No. 25; Mires Dixon, Lot No. 26; Martin Tayler, Lot No. 27; Eliakim Ayres, Lot No. 28."

These are among the lots surveyed by Mr. Gilliland, as before alluded to. In the survey he speaks of lots 24 and 25, taken by Belton and Luckey, as having been named by them "Little Britain."

"November 4th. This day I give possession to the lessees, Ayres, Taylor, Dixon, Chism, McLane, McAwley, Wilson, Belton and Luckey. I proceeded to Crown Point, where I engaged prov. for my settlement until summer next and then continued my journey to New York, where I arrived the 20th of November."

The journal, during Mr. Gilliland's absence, is in his writing, and was probably made up from memoranda of his half brother, James Watson, who was designated by Gilliland as his steward; he is undoubtedly the "J. W." mentioned. There is little of importance recorded until the following:—

"27th Feb. This day J. W. returned from Crown Point having brought 1 bbl. rum, 1 bbl. molasses, and 1 bbl. pork from thence to Sloop Island, whence it was brought by a sleigh and pair from C. Point which was obliged to insure at 50 pounds. Ayres and King had been for several days absent, some thought they were hunting, others thought they ran off.

"28th Feb., this day Luckey, Hicks and Taylor,—but word being come up that Ayres and King were returned, those 3 went to them.

"1st March. This morning Ayres, King, Hicks, Luckey and Taylor came up to J. W. all armed; and offering back the goods they had bought and used, and made a charge of 6s per day and victuals for their labor, insisted in getting their notes up for that they now determined to quit the settlement, and if he did not comply with this their offer they would take their all with them. He then set off privately for Crown Point on March 3d. On the night of the 4th returned with 6 soldiers, lay all night at George Belton's, there he got intelligence that all were gone off.<sup>1</sup>

"5th March. Set out from G. Belton's for Milltown, found G. Hicks' house locked up. At Ayres' found all their cattle ready shod, brought all the cattle home and marked them W. G., leaving a guard over Ayres' house lest Mrs. Ayres or Mrs. Hicks should run away with intelligence after the fellows, who were but a little way off. Made immediate pursuit after the fellows from Ayres to Bay Perrow [Perue, or Willsborough Bay] we soon came up with a large

<sup>1</sup> It is evident from this resort to the military arm that no civil jurisdiction had been extended to this remote settlement. All power seems to have been exercised by Gilliland, and his government was usually almost patriarchal, although we shall meet with some singular exhibitions of arbitrary authority, which, however, the circumstances probably justified. These difficulties occurred during his absence, by which his influence had become diminished.—WATSON.



chest; about half way from the river to the bay found the ox sleigh well loaded, proceeded on to within 1-2 mile of the bay, where found Mr. Ayres and Geo. Hicks, returning, after sending the others off; here discovered Hicks, proceeded to the bay, but could not see any of the others, they made quite off; then returned and brought all the goods home this night."

Thus did Mr. Gilliland or his steward take the law into their own hands to capture and retain escaping tenants. For the next five weeks little of importance was recorded.

"April 14th, this day sent 3 hands to raise R. McAwley's house.

"15th April, sent to Crown Point for prov's, and got 4 barrels of flour and 5 firkins butter—all condemned. Mr. Chism staid behind; the others ret'd the 19th, at this time the runaway settlers came for their wives, and our red cow with white face died, having loss'd an old white cow the 23d March.

"19th May, this day J. W. set out for to meet me, which he did at Stillwater, and finding me sick and unable to travel, he returned with Nehemiah Smith, his wife, son and daughter, Arch'd McLaughlin, blacksmith, Catharine Welsh and Betsey Williams, who all arrived at Willsboro, 4 June.

"10th June, J. Watson set out again for Ticonderoga, where he met me, and returned to Willsboro, the 15th, with stores, &c.

"Sunday, 22d June, about 1 o'clock this day, I William Gilliland, with my wife, Mrs. Eliz. Gilliland, my mother, Mrs. Jane Gilliland, my sister, Miss Charity Gilliland, my brother Mr. James Gilliland, my daughter Miss Eliz. Gilliland, my neice Miss Eliz. Hamilton, my servant girl Rachel McFardin, and my negro man Ireland, all arrived at Milltown, in Willsborough, with 2 Bateau loads of stores, having left New York with 22 wagon loads of stores, furniture, &c., on the 28th of April last."

Succeeding this entry Mr. Gilliland gives an account of the journey from New York, his own illness and the catastrophe which caused the death of his daughter Jane, aged six years, by drowning in the Hudson river near Stillwater, through the capsizing of a bateau. The remains were buried at Stillwater on the 12th of May. Under entry of June 22d, he says:—

"22d June, proceeded on our journey, and arrived in Milltown, in Willsboro. Mrs. Eliz. Gilliland my spouse being the first lady of our family that landed in Willsborough."

*A nota bona* added to this entry says: "Let it be remembered that Samuel Jackson, blacksmith, run away from Willsboro the 10th of March, 1766. Robert McLane, and George Wilson, quit my employ the 2d, June, 1766, and went off, the former enticed away my bound servant maid Mary Craig. She being great with child to him. Whilst at Crown Point I accidentally met with William Luckey, who I had taken on my warrant for debt and brought him prisoner to Willsborough (Robert McAuley, constable), when after reflecting how much he was in my power he agreed to serve me for the amount of his

debt and commenced in my employ on the — June, 1766, at 45s. per mo. or 25 pounds per annum being — days after I arrived here.<sup>1</sup>

“23 June, from this time I continued in an indifferent state of health, sometimes better, sometimes worse, to Aug.—employed my hands, some making a fence round the garden, some going to Crown Point for prov's, some enclosing a yard in front of the house, one t'other side of the trough, making a bum proof &c. &c. to the

“14th July, then sent my men to the meadows to make hay.”

During September the commission to fix the boundary between New York and Quebec, consisting of “Sir Henry Moore, governor of New York, General Carlton, governor of Quebec province and brigadier-general of the district, Philip Schuyler, esq., Robert Harper, esq., Charles Fredenburg, formerly a captain, ——— Carlton, esq., nephew to General Carlton, and Mr. John McKesson, attorney,”<sup>2</sup> accomplished their task. Mr. Gilliland met the party at Crown Point (the first four of whom constituted the commission proper), and he notes the fact that on the 2d of September he was invited by governor Moore to “become one at his table, which I accepted.” It will readily be conceived that Mr. Gilliland was of great service to this commission, beyond the mere courtesy of aiding them in their transportation; for his knowledge of the region was probably more definite at that time than that of any other person. On the 6th of September he records the incident that he “forewarned Charles Fredenburgh, esq., against trespassing on my lands opposite Isle Valcour, in the presence of both governors Schyler, Mr. Carlton and Mr. Harper.”

Under date of September 20th we find the following:—

“20th Sept., this day Sir Henry Moore, Colonel Reid, Philip Schyler, Robert Harper and Adolphus Benzel, esq's, called and drank tea, &c., with us on their return from Astronomer's Island, having completed their observation to satisfaction, and fixed the line about three miles to the northward of Windmill Point.”

When the commission acting under the treaty of Ghent established the boundary between the British and American possessions, this line was found to be erroneous, and the accuracy of the original French survey established. The line as laid in 1766 was restored by the Webster and Ashburton treaty.

<sup>1</sup> To this entry Mr. Watson adds the following interesting observations: “This singular incident exhibits the energy and decision which are such marked features in the character of Gilliland, and which enabled him to conduct so successfully the trying scenes of his colonization. It is of interest, also, as it reveals the arbitrary means by which power was exercised in the remote settlements of the country at that early period. We have seen the steward invoking the military arm for protection from the acts of insubordinate tenants, and making seizure of their cattle without the pretense of any civil process. No political organization existed a hundred years ago on the banks of Lake Champlain. There is not the slightest allusion in this journal or elsewhere to the presence of courts or magistrates. Gilliland bore with him a commission as justice of the peace, on his return from the south. No gaol could then have existed at Willsborough. We have no evidence of any authority being exerted in this transaction except force, and such was probably in similar circumstances uniformly exercised. Yet the remedy used was evidently effective and seems to have promoted substantial justice.”

<sup>2</sup> From the *Journal*.



"2d December, the saw-mill stopped as was the turning-mill some days ago, good walking on the ice to the mouth of the river."

That Mr. Gilliland and his tenantry were not indisposed to enjoy themselves when they could is shown by the following entry:—

"Willsboro, January 1st, 1767. This day we had a shooting match at John Chism's. I won two matches, Mr. James Thompson won 1, and John McElrea, won 1 match."

Through the spring the *Journal* is made up almost entirely of records of the progress of the work on the lands, and need not be followed in detail.

"16th February, got our hay and the Bateaux brought by oxen across Eliz. Bay to Eliz. Point and halled up on the bank, went with R. McAuley, to Willson and Goodrich's house in Burton to take an acct. of their effects in the hands of their manager Wm. Hulme, which we did, they having broke up their settlement and discharged their said Steward. We took 2 sleighs loaded with the most valuable goods to the Messrs. McAuley's house, the sleighs being drawn by Hulme's men."

This is another example of Gilliland's methods of dealing with those who were not faithful to their trust. The "Burton" mentioned was an agency established by Willson and Goodrich at Flat Rock bay. Their tract comprised 2,000 acres north of the Boquet, patented to James Ross. In February Mr. Gilliland made a survey from "the sandy beach on Pine Point to the Cloven Rock," which was followed by numerous others in that month and March, both in the present Essex and in Clinton county. These will be found recorded in full in Mr. Watson's work before mentioned; but they are not now of sufficient importance to warrant their reproduction here. On the 14th of March appears the following quaint record:—

"14th, very cold clear weather. This day Mr. John McAuley acted as Vendue master in the sale of the carcass, hide and tallow of George Hicks' cow which was accidentally killed by an ox in the stall a few days ago, the sale was as follows, viz.:—

" John Chism, 1 fore quarter of beef,	£	5s 5
" Nehemiah Smith, 1 hind quarter at		12 3
" And 1 fore quarter at		5 3
" William Gilliland, esq., 1 hind quarter at		10 3
" And 1 cow and 1 calf skin at		7 3
" 1 head and tallow at		2 3
		<hr/>
	£	2 2 3

" Vendue master charges viz. :

" Advertise the day of sale the three most publick  
places in Willsborough,

" Commission on sale at 5 per ct.

£	5
	2 1
	<hr/>
	7 1

“Net proceeds to be paid to William Gilliland at  
Willsborough, for account of Geo. Hicks, £ 1 15 2.”

The frequent appearance of new names throughout this *Journal* are something of an indication of the gradual growth of the settlement, which must have been considerable.

“19th March. This forenoon he (Robt. McAuley) came with the mare, and Mr. Logan on his horse. Yesterday and to-day we had pleasant weather, fine sleighing across the lake; this afternoon we went down the river and round Chism's Point to R. McAuley's on the ice. This day the Mr. McAuleys begun to draw logs for themselves to the sawmill, and this day Smith and Burke began to clear on my mother's lot.”

It is said that the horse mentioned here is was the first one introduced into Gilliland's colony.

“April 1st, the wetness of this afternoon hurried me home (from a surveying expedition) to Milltown in order to have my trough secured, least the flood might injure it in case the river should break up. On my arrival found a considerable flood in the river, though not half broke up, the snow almost all off the cleared land.

“May 5th, John and James Young, James Gilliland and his wife and Anne Hussey arrived this day from New York.

“7th, went with the Youngs to view their land; they like the tract much.

“18th, went with the Youngs to lay out lots which they made choice of, and engaged from me at 12s. per acre, I giving each of them 50 acres at 1 pound sterling per acre forever, viz. — John Young's lot begins at a Pine tree standing at the edge of the lake on Cape Elizabeth (being William McAuley's S. E. tree) and runs from thence W. 147 1-2 ch., then S. 18 ch., then east to the lake, and along the lake to the place of beginning, containing 265 acres of land. James Young's tract begins at Elizabeth Sandy Point, and runs thence W. 139 ch., S. 21 ch., east to Lake Champlain, and along the lake as it runs to the place of beginning, containing 264 acres of land. Interest to be paid after the expiration of 12 mos. from this date.”

The last entry that occurs in the *Journal* in anything like regular order is that of June 2d, below. From that time on, the annals of the colony and the personal history of Gilliland must be made out in the light of tradition and the public documents, which will be alluded to.

“June 2d, planted the following; muskmelons, shaped 20th July; radishes, lettuce, tong grass, parsley, savory, celeri, late cabbages, mustard, leeks and onions; they all came up very short, owing I believe to dry weather.”

The next entry is under date of July 15th, 1772, and records a public sale, under the following interesting heading: “Agreeable to Advertisement published and put up at the house of Eliakan Ayres, the sale of said Ayres' farm and effects is that day brought on at his late house, for immediate payment in



ready money, produce or work equivalent, viz., etc." One of the items in the charges of the "Vendue master," and which would scarcely be acknowledged in these days as a legitimate charge against the proceeds of the sale, was "rum at the vendue, £0 2 0."

Here occurs a break of nearly three years in the *Journal* a period which witnessed great changes in the vicinity of Gilliland's colony and the birth of portentous events throughout the country. The little colony on the lake had grown apace; lands were rapidly cleared and improved and everything betokened the steady advancement of the community in all the arts of peace; while settlers were beginning to locate at other points along the lake from Ticonderoga (which see) to Canada. The progress of Mr. Gilliland's colony down to the spring of 1775 is attested by the formation of a local organization comprising the inhabitants, who bound themselves together by a somewhat remarkable covenant, which is here quoted. It appears from the writings of Mr. Watson that he considered this covenant to be the possible forerunner of other political measures on the part of Gilliland and his leading neighbors, looking to the establishment of some sort of separate province, or government, of which he should be the head; or that it at least had a deeper and more important purpose than appears on its face. Whether or not this is the fact, it is still more probable that another scheme, in which Gilliland and the Elder Skeene were the principal figures, had already been agitated, and which might have had an extended influence upon the politics of the country. It contemplated the organization of a new province, the limits of which were to extend from the St. Lawrence to the Connecticut, and from Canada on the north to an indefinite southern boundary. Skeene, then the possessor of large landed estates at Skeenesboro and other points in the vicinity of Lake Champlain, was to be made governor of the projected province, and Crown Point the capital. In support of this view Mr. Watson says in a foot note: "William Gilliland, the son of the pioneer, who at the commencement of the Revolution was a boy of fourteen, and died at Salmon river in 1847, assured Mr. Sheldon that this project was a theme of frequent conversation with his father. That he had often himself read the correspondence between Skeene and his father on the subject, and that he had letters of Skeene still in his possession. Mr. Gilliland, who was a gentleman of great intelligence, engaged to find the letters and submit them to Mr. Sheldon, but he soon after died without having opportunity to fulfill the engagement. With the permission and aid of the Messrs. Gilliland, who reside at Salmon river, on the original estate (1863), I have carefully examined the family papers, but found no trace of these documents. I learn that on the death of the younger Gilliland a portion of his papers passed into the hands of another member of the family, and I have been unable to procure a further trace of them."

If such a plan was seriously contemplated by men occupying such stations in their localities as were held by Gilliland and Skeene, and had been consum-

mated at a time when the controversy between Vermont and New York was at its height, the consequences might have been momentous. Following is the covenant of the people of Willsborough : —

“WILLSBORO, MARCH 17TH, 1775.

“We the subscribers, inhabitants of Willsboro, finding it necessary to make regulations concerning roads, fences, bridges, and hogs, have this day assembled for that purpose, and have entered into the following resolves. To be binding on us respectively, *by every tie of honor and honesty*, for the space of twelve months from this date, and also to be equally binding on such other persons as may become inhabitants of this settlement during the said term, which resolves are entered upon by a majority of votes.<sup>1</sup>

“First, concerning roads, it is thought necessary the roads should be two rods wide, but for the present year only to be made as the overseers shall think sufficient. The owners to clear the wood off his own lot for one road as far as the road goes on his lot.

“Secondly — it is resolved, that the road so far as it may pass through land not taken up shall be made in the manner before mentioned; also the bridges to be made of good lasting timber and such banks as must be dug away, shall be done by the settlement in general. Each man assisting thereat faithfully, who are capable thereof, on being thereunto named by the overseers.

“Thirdly — resolved, that as to bridges it is necessary to build one across Mr. McAuley’s creek; one across the gully, one across Plum creek; one across Mr. Ithamer Day’s creek, and the bank be dug away; one across Armstrong and McGinniss brook, one across the two brooks of George Brymers, and one across a small brook opposite to Mr. George Belton’s house; also that the road from Mr. Belton’s to Mr. Gilliland’s saw-mill shall be kept open and passable at the general charge as above; the whole to be done next fall as the overseers shall direct; and such persons as shall fail or neglect to perform their part shall pay such other person or persons as shall be hired at five shillings per day, and that neither gates or bars shall obstruct the said road.

“Fourth — as to fences, resolved, that if any damage shall be committed by small or large cattle on the land or lots of those whose fences are five feet high and otherwise close and strong, the same shall be paid by the owner of said cattle according as the overseers of the fences shall apprise, providing that hogs shall be yoked from the first of July, to the middle of October with good and sufficient yokes.

“Also that the roads shall be laid out betwixt this time and next fall by the overseers assisted by Mr. Gilliland.

---

<sup>1</sup> Here is the essence of a democratic and representative government. The majority control, make laws, and levy taxes, and those who voluntarily become members of the community are to be governed by this action. The identity of spirit and almost of language in this humble compact, and the memorable pledge which, scarcely a year later, linked together an heroic band of patriots, is somewhat remarkable. — WATSON’S *Pioneer Hist. Champlain Valley*.



“ And as to deer catching, resolved, that the owners of such good dogs as shall be employed in deer catching shall have one share and half, and each man one share, and such inhabitants as choose to join shall be admitted.

“ And, lastly, that it is resolved, that Mr. Gilliland shall be moderator, and Mr. Jotham Gardner town clerk, and Mr. Thomas Day and Mr. Martin Armstrong overseers of the road, fences and cattle.

“ To the foregoing we the subscribers do hereunto set our hands the day and date just above written.

“ WILL GILLILAND.

“ THOMAS DAY.

“ MARTIN ARMSTRONG.

“ EBENEZER WHITE.

“ GEORGE BREMMERS.

“ GEORGE BELTON.

“ WILLIAM WYKES.

“ NATHANIEL BLOOD.

“ JONATHAN FLINT.

“ THOMAS DAY.

“ WILLIAM CAMMERON.

“ JOTHAM GARDNER.

“ JACOB GARDNER.”

This impressive early document is followed by a list of the “ ear marks ” *i. e.*, the brands and slittings of the ears of animals which designated the property of one settler from that of another.

“ 14th June, 1775. Wm. Hay engages 100 acres of land to the southward of his present lot. Nathan Nichols engages 300 acres of land for himself to the southward of and adjoining to Wm. Hay's land. Also engages all the land between the farms of Henry Cross and John Byantum. Henry Cross engages 100 acres of land for himself to the southward of his present lot; Wm. Gilliland reserves for his daughter 200 acres of land to the southward of Henry Cooper's lot. John Byantum has engaged 200 acres at Monty's Chantier.”

We now find a record of the first town meeting of Willsborough, the proceedings of which convey the presumption that the inhabitants were satisfied with the working of their governmental compact of the preceding year and purposed to continue and extend its operations: —

“ Town meeting held by the inhabitants of Willsboro the 9th day of April, 1776.

“ The majority hath made choice of Mr. Thomas Day for moderator, and Jotham Gardner clerk, and Joseph Flint and James Leonard overseers, with the same power the overseers had the preceding year, which majority hath agreed that the road shall be opened and made passable for carriages from Joseph Flint's to the mouth of the river, and a bridge made across White creek.

"The following persons not having subscribed their names the last year, have hereunto subscribed their names.

"JOHN GRANT.

"JOHN DUGNIS.

"THOMAS LEONARD.

"ROBERT MCAULEY.

"JOHN WILSON.

"HAREL <sup>his</sup> × LEECH.

"JONATHIN DAY.

"GEORGE CORULL.

"ISRAEL DAY.

"Done at Willsboro the day and date above mentioned, by order of the moderator.

"JOTHAM GARDNER, Town Clerk."

The succeeding records of Mr. Gilliland, the first of which is a memorial addressed to Congress in 1777, immediately precede and belong to the period that witnessed the downfall of his fortunes and changed the close of his life from its early prosperous and peaceful character to a sad and romantic tragedy. These records will be further referred to in the proper order.

While this work of colonization was prospering in the northern part of the county, Samuel Deall, also a New York merchant and possessing many characteristics, natural and acquired, in common with those of Gilliland, was making a similar effort on the outlet of Lake George in the town of Ticonderoga. As his enterprise was restricted entirely to that town, its details are reserved for the town history. These two colonization, or settlement, enterprises show that long previous to the outbreak of the Revolution the territory of Essex county was the scene of many peaceful homes.

## CHAPTER XI.

### PREPARING FOR THE REVOLUTION.

The "New Hampshire Grants" Controversy — Its Final Settlement — Oppressive Acts of Parliament towards the Colonists — Taxation for Revenue — The "Sons of Liberty" — The Stamp Act — Its Final Repeal — Custom House Act — Retaliation on English Trade — The Liberty Pole Attack — Skirmish in the Streets — First Bloodshed of the Revolution.

LET us now turn for a moment from the peaceful scenes as we have reviewed them at and around Willsborough, to the important events occurring elsewhere in the country between the peace of 1763 and the outbreak of the great struggle that gave America her independence. In the year just mentioned



the boundary line between New York and New Hampshire became the subject of much controversy. The territory in dispute was what is now comprised in the State of Vermont, lying between the Connecticut river and Lake Champlain. Controversies had previously arisen, growing out of the indefinite character of their charters, between New York, Massachusetts and Connecticut; but the boundaries were finally adjusted by negotiation and compromise. The line between these States was fixed upon as extending north and south twenty miles east of the Hudson river. New Hampshire, regardless of justice or title, insisted upon a continuation of this line as her western boundary, and by the year 1763 her governor had issued one hundred and thirty-eight townships in grants to settlers. Against all this New York entered vigorous protest, and in December of the year named Governor Colden issued a proclamation claiming jurisdiction to the Connecticut river and commanded the sheriff of Albany county to return the names of all persons who, by virtue of the New Hampshire grants, had taken possession of lands west of the Connecticut river. This was followed by a counter-proclamation by the governor of New Hampshire. In the following year the question was referred to the crown and a decision rendered that the Connecticut river should form the boundary between New York and New Hampshire. Thereupon the government of New York declared the grants by New Hampshire illegal, and insisted that the settlers on those grants should either surrender or re-purchase the lands. This demand was opposed by the settlers, whereupon the New York government granted the land to others, who obtained judgments in their favor by bringing ejectment suits in Albany.

Although carrying us out of chronological order in recording events, the conclusion of this controversy may as well be detailed here. The civil officers of New York were opposed by force in their attempts to eject the settlers and the New York Assembly passed an act declaring such resistance to be felony. A proclamation was issued, also, by Governor Tryon, who succeeded Lord Dunmore (Colden's successor) in 1771, offering a reward for the apprehension of Ethan Allen and other conspicuous offenders. This was followed by a burlesque proclamation offering a reward for the arrest of the governor of New York. The matter neared a crisis in the spring of 1775, when New York sought to establish courts in the disputed territory; the officers were prevented from entering the court-house, upon which they collected a force, fired into the building, killing one man and wounding others. Some of the officers were then arrested and lodged in jail. The Revolutionary outbreak caused a cessation of these disputes; but in 1777 the inhabitants of the disputed territory held a convention at Windsor and declared the "grants" an independent State with the name of Vermont. They at the same time addressed a petition to Congress setting forth their motives for action and asking admission to the confederacy of independent States and seats for delegates to

Congress. This petition was disposed of by resolutions, one of which declared "that the independent government attempted to be established by the people styling themselves the inhabitants of the New Hampshire grants can derive no countenance or justification from the act of Congress declaring the united colonies to be independent of the crown of Great Britain, nor from any other act or resolution of Congress." The discord was revived and so antagonistic to New York and the colonial authorities at large did the settlers on the grants become, that it is believed they secretly negotiated with the British to become a colony under the crown; this feature of the controversy will be hereafter alluded to. After the ratification of the Articles of Confederation, in 1781, Congress offered to admit the new State, but with curtailed boundaries; this offer was rejected and for ten years it remained outside of the Union. Finally on the 10th of January, 1791, a convention at Bennington adopted the national constitution, and Vermont, having agreed to pay to the State of New York \$30,000 for territory claimed by that State, was admitted to the Union.

During the progress of these events and those described in the last chapter the British parliament continued its arbitrary and oppressive course towards the American colonists. But the time arrived when unquestioning submission to such measures could no longer be exacted. The people were heavily burdened with the expenses of the late war, the results of which gave to England a large extent of territory; yet, almost before the smoke of the battles had cleared away, the English ministry began devising plans to tax them for a revenue without their consent. In 1764 a proposition was submitted to the House of Commons for raising revenue in the colonies by the sale of stamps. Contrary to promises the stamp act was passed in March, 1765. By its provisions no legal or commercial documents were valid unless made upon stamped paper, upon which a price was placed according to the nature of the document. This act was bitterly denounced throughout the colonies and particularly in New York, and resistance determined upon. The "Sons of Liberty" were organized and meetings held to devise plans of opposition to the obnoxious act. On the 7th of October a convention of delegates from the different colonies was held in New York city and continued in session two weeks. A declaration of rights was adopted and petitions and memorials sent to parliament, in which the principles that governed the colonies during the Revolution were clearly foreshadowed.

The stamp act was to take effect on the first of November; but as the date drew near excitement increased, and on that day flags hung at half-mast, bells were tolled and other funeral demonstrations made. Governor Colden became alarmed and refused to issue any of the stamped paper, leaving the ugly duty to his successor, Sir Henry Moore, then on his way from England. The new governor soon saw the folly of attempting to oppose the will of the people in that direction. The final result was the destruction of a large quantity of the



odious paper by the Sons of Liberty and the repeal of the act in March, 1766. This action was not, however, due to the good will of parliament, nor to the appeals of the colonists, but to the solicitations of London merchants who had been deprived of their American trade through a union of colonial merchants who pledged themselves to cease importations from England.

Rejoicing over the repeal of the Stamp Act had scarcely died away, when parliament again stirred up discontent among the colonists by other unjust and oppressive acts. The Assembly was called upon by the governor to concede to the demands of the ministry in furnishing supplies for the soldiers in New York city; this created a good deal of animosity and led to hostility between the Sons of Liberty and the troops. The Assembly, moreover, subsequently refused to comply with the request of the ministry to make provision for the soldiers, for which action parliament declared the legislative powers of the Assembly annulled.

In 1767 a bill was passed by parliament imposing a duty on tea, glass, lead, paper and painters' colors imported into the colonies. This action caused renewed excitement, and in the following year the Assembly of Massachusetts addressed a circular to the other colonies soliciting their co-operation in defending the common liberties. This so offended the ministry that a letter was sent to the colonial governors forbidding their assemblies to correspond with that of Massachusetts. This mandate was absolutely opposed and disobeyed, with declarations on the part of the New York Assembly of its inherent rights in the case, denunciations of parliament and other evidences of refraction; the Assembly was thereupon dissolved by the governor. But the people sustained their representatives and returned most of them to the new Assembly of 1799.

The English merchants who were suffering from the non-importation agreement of the American dealers now joined their petitions to those of the colonists for the repeal of the obnoxious custom-house act. A circular letter assured the people in response that the duties should be removed at the next session of parliament on all articles except tea. This was something, but the principle of the right of the mother country to tax the colonies remained, and the promises of parliament were far from satisfactory. Animosity and hostility, moreover, continued between the soldiery and the Sons of Liberty. Arrangements having been perfected by which the soldiers' supplies were guaranteed, coming, too, largely from the resources of the colonists, the troops still did not hesitate to make manifest their disdain for, and hostility towards, the people. On the evening of the 2d of January, 1769, they made their second assault on the liberty pole of the Sons of Liberty in New York, and charged upon the opposing citizens, drove a party of them into a tavern which was a popular resort, and broke in the windows and destroyed the furniture. On the evening of the 16th they sawed down the pole, cut it in pieces and

piled them in front of the obnoxious hotel. A resolution of the citizens followed, to the effect that all soldiers found in the streets after roll-call should be dealt with as enemies to the peace of the city. This resolution was ridiculed in handbills posted by the soldiers, and two or three of the latter were arrested in the act of posting them. While conducting the soldiers to the mayor's office, the citizens were attacked by a party of twenty troops and a skirmish ensued in which several citizens, some of whom had not participated in the *mêlée*, were wounded. Other affrays occurred the next day, in which the soldiers generally got the worst of it. The mayor then issued a proclamation forbidding them to leave their barracks unless in company of a non-commissioned officer, and order was partially restored.

It is commonly held that the battle of Lexington was the first conflict of the Revolutionary struggle. But, although this skirmish in the streets of New York may be looked upon as a comparatively insignificant affair, still there was bloodshed, and it was the actual beginning of the great conflict, five years before the guns of Lexington were heard.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

FROM 1770 TO 1775.

Governor Colden's Successor — Old Troubles Renewed — A Large Cup of Tea — Congress and its Declaration of Rights — Impending War — The British March to Lexington — Paul Revere's Ride — The Battle on the Green — Retreat of the British — Preparations for the Capture of Crown Point and Ticonderoga — Ethan Allen's Command — Arnold's Arrival and its Consequences — Plan of the Expedition — Capture of Ticonderoga — Surrender of Crown Point — Reassembling of Congress — Congressional Vacillation — Allen and Arnold's Naval Exploit — Indian Action in the Revolution — The Canadian Invasion — Montgomery's Initial Movements — Allen's Capture — Carleton's Plan for Relief of St. Johns — Its Failure — Capture of St. Johns and Montreal by Montgomery — Arnold's Wonderful Expedition — Montgomery Before Quebec — Demand for its Surrender, and the Reply — Montgomery's Death and the Failure of the Attack — A Disastrous Retreat — Charlotte County Created — Militia Affairs.

**I**N October, 1770, Lord Dunmore succeeded Colden as governor and brought with him royal approval of the act authorizing the issue of colonial bills of credit. The duties had, meanwhile, been removed from all articles except tea. Colonial affairs were going on more smoothly. On the 18th of July, 1771, William Tryon was commissioned governor and Lord Dunmore transferred to Virginia. The old differences finally again came to the surface. The East India Company, having suffered severely through the imposition of the American duty on tea, petitioned parliament in 1773 to abolish the tax, offering at the same time to submit to double the amount of that



duty as an exportation tariff. This was refused, but, instead, the ministry agreed to favor the company by a special act allowing them to ship their teas to the American colonies free of duty as an export, while still enforcing the importation duty ; in other words the determination was clearly shown that the assumed right to tax the colonists in any way, or all ways, was not to be relinquished under any circumstances. The India company now loaded their ships with teas, appointed consignees for their reception and expected a ready sale at the low prices that could now be made. Their reckoning failed. The Sons of Liberty met and resolved that the obnoxious article should not be landed in the province under any pretense. The tea commissioners, in submission to the popular will, resigned. The first cargo arrived off Sandy Hook in April, 1774, whence the pilot, acting under his instructions from the vigilance committee, refused to bring the ship to port. In the mean time Captain Chambers, of another vessel, a professed patriot, sailed his ship into the harbor. When threats were made of a purpose to search his cargo, he admitted that he had tea on board, which he had brought over as a private venture. His chests were thereupon hoisted on deck and given a salt water plunge bath. The vessels were sent on return voyages. In the mean time a cargo of tea had arrived in Boston harbor ; the vessel was boarded by the patriotic sons of that city and the chests emptied into the sea.

The English ministry were now so enraged at the outcome of the tea tariff, in connection with other measures of resistance, or disloyalty, as it was there termed, that they resolved at once to subjugate the country. One of the steps towards this end was the adoption of the infamous " Boston Port Bill," the purpose of which was to practically close the Boston harbor and thus destroy the trade of the city. The people throughout the colonies were in earnest sympathy with their Massachusetts friends, aware that similar ruinous measures might be in store for themselves. Public meetings were held for the consideration of the common grievances and among movements for protection, the restoration of the non-importation agreement was urged and the assembling of a colonial congress.

A congress was called and met on the 5th of September, 1774, adopted a declaration of rights, and agreed upon a petition to the king and an appeal to the people of Great Britain and Canada. An adjournment was then taken until the following May. The New York Assembly was the only one that did not sanction these congressional proceedings ; but instead addressed a remonstrance to parliament, which was, of course, treated with disdain.<sup>1</sup>

The New York Assembly adjourned on the 3d of April, 1775, and never met again. Its refusal to appoint delegates to the congress gave much dissat-

---

<sup>1</sup> On the 12th of January, 1775, at a cabinet council, it was declared there was nothing in the proceedings of congress that afforded any basis for an honorable reconciliation. It was therefore resolved to break off all commerce with the Americans ; to protect the loyalists in the colonies ; and to declare all others to be traitors and rebels. —LOSSING.

isfaction, and a provincial convention of county representatives was called by the people to perform that duty.

The Americans had long felt their critical condition and foresaw that an appeal to arms must, doubtless, follow. A quantity of military stores had been collected by them at Concord, Mass. To destroy these General Gage sent a detachment of British regulars on the 18th of April, 1775, from Boston, where he had between three thousand and four thousand troops. But Paul Revere made his famous ride to Concord and aroused the people to the menaced incursion; and when, early on the following morning, the detachment reached Lexington, they found the militia drawn up on the public green. The British officer ordered them to disperse; but the order was not heeded, and the regulars fired. Eight of the "minute men" were killed and several wounded; the remainder were dispersed and the British pressed on to Concord. There the militia had gathered from all direction; the stores were secreted and the invaders were given a warm reception, causing them to retreat. As they fell back towards Lexington they were disastrously harassed by the colonists, who killed many of their number, shooting from behind fences, buildings and trees. It is probable that the whole detachment might have been cut off, but for the fact that reinforcements met them near Lexington; but the retreat was continued and many more regulars fell by the sharp shooting of the citizens. The whole country was aroused and the Revolution was begun in earnest.

The next event of importance, and one that bears directly upon the history of Essex county and Lake Champlain, was the capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. General Frederick Haldimand had been left in command of these points. He had already announced to the British government in 1773 that the fort at Crown Point was entirely destroyed, while that at Ticonderoga was in a "ruinous condition," and that both could not "cover fifty men in winter." Ethan Allen, who had been conspicuous in his opposition to New York in the New Hampshire grants trouble, and was declared an outlaw, and a hundred and fifty pounds offered for his arrest, was one of the brave spirits who first took up arms against the oppression of Great Britain. He was found at Bennington by the force which had been collected in Connecticut and Massachusetts with the design of descending upon the works at the two fortified points on Lake Champlain. The expedition numbered about forty volunteers when it reached Bennington, where Allen's powerful influence and enthusiastic assistance were secured. On the 7th of May a band of brave men numbering two hundred and seventy (all but forty-six being "Green Mountain boys," as Allen's followers were termed) had assembled at Castleton. At this inopportune time Benedict Arnold appeared on the scene, bearing a commission from the Massachusetts committee of safety, dated May 3d, clothing him with authority to effect the same purpose for which the other force was destined.



A conflict for the command ensued, which was finally terminated by the refusal of the volunteers to march except under command of Allen. Arnold reluctantly accompanied the expedition as second in command.

Noah Phelps, one of the Massachusetts committee, entered the fort at Ticonderoga in pretended quest of a barber, and thus gained definite knowledge of its condition. Captain Herrick was ordered to Skeenesborough whence, after the capture of the younger Skeene and the stores there accumulated, he was to join Allen at Ticonderoga. Douglas was ordered to Pantou to secure boats for transportation of the force. The committees of Albany and New York appear to have declined any part in these operations.

Allen's force marched with as much secrecy as possible to the eastern shore of the lake, posted pickets on all roads leading to Ticonderoga, to cut off possible conveyance to the fort of intelligence of the movement, and there waited a day and a night for the arrival of the boats. Finally, with the few boats that were at hand, Allen resolved to attempt the passage; and on the night of the 10th eighty-three men embarked at Hand's Point and landed about a mile north of the fort. Dawn was approaching and the commander realized to the fullest the importance of prompt action. He had been furnished with a guide in the person of young Nathan Beaman, son of a patriot of Shoreham, who had a perfect knowledge of the works gained during his boyhood.

Allen, in a low and earnest voice, addressed his little band, inspiring them with the importance of their mission and the glory of its success, and then told them that all who accompanied him must go voluntarily, and ordered all who were ready to poise their firelocks. Every musket was instantly raised. After again pacifying Arnold, who assumed the leadership, by agreeing that they should advance together, Allen and Arnold took the lead, with young Beaman, and the column filed up to the sallyport of the fortress. The sentinel snapped his gun as they approached and retreated through the covered way, closely followed by the Americans, who drew up on the parade in two lines, each facing the barracks. (See history of Ticonderoga). Their shouts awakened the garrison and Captain de la Place came forth from his quarters, clad only in his night apparel. He was confronted by Allen with a peremptory summons to surrender. When he requested to know by what authority the demand was made, Allen uttered his immortal response, "By the authority of the Great Jehovah and the Continental Congress!"

Allen says, in his own graphic account of the event, "the authority of the Congress being very little known at that time, he began to speak again; but I interrupted him, and with my drawn sword over his head again demanded an immediate surrender of the garrison, with which he then complied, and ordered his men to be forthwith paraded without arms, as he had given up the garrison. In the mean time some of my officers had given orders, and in consequence thereof sundry of the barrack doors were beat down and about one-

third of the garrison imprisoned, which consisted of the said commander, a Lieutenant Feltham, a conductor of artillery, a gunner, two sergeants, and forty-four rank and file, about one hundred pieces of cannon, one thirteen-inch mortar and a number of swivels. This surprise was carried into execution in the gray of the morning of the 10th of May, 1775. The sun seemed to rise on that morning with a superior lustre; and Ticonderoga and its dependencies smiled to its conquerors, who tossed about the flowing bowl and wished success to Congress and the liberty and freedom of America. Happy it was for me, at that time, that those future pages of the book of fate which afterwards unfolded a miserable scene of two years and eight months' imprisonment were hid from my view."

Allen's well-planned measures were all successful. Crown Point surrendered on the following day, with its entire armament and its small garrison of twelve men. Herrick made his capture of Skeenesborough, with Skeene and his forces, besides several boats and a trading schooner. This success was crowned by the capture of two dispatch boats by Baker, which had been sent from Crown Point with news of the fall of Ticonderoga. Amos Callandar was detached with a small party to the fort at the head of Lake George, whence he soon after conducted the prisoners to Hartford.

Although when viewed from certain standpoints, this event was not one of great magnitude, yet it was, at that particular time, one upon the success or failure of which depended momentous issues; and its success caused a thrill of joy and astonishment to pervade the country. The men who were most prominent in its brave deeds became the possessors of high military distinction before the close of the Revolution — distinction won by their own efficient heroism.

New York was slow to acknowledge the importance of Allen's victory, or to profit by it. The Albany committee, to whom John Brown bore Allen's letter of particulars of the event, with a request for such reinforcements as would prevent the recapture of the fortifications, merely forwarded the letter to the New York committee. They also refused to act in the matter and in turn forwarded the dispatches to the Congress in Philadelphia. Brown was already there and gave the august body an account of the brilliant event. Their reception of it shows that they were still uncertain and vacillating in attempting to decide what were to be the future relations of America and Great Britain; whether it might not still be the best policy not to arouse the mother country to unconditional hostility. While Congress privately exulted over Allen's conquest, it hesitated to publicly and directly assume the responsibility of it. Instead, it recommended the New York and Albany committees to immediately remove the armament and stores at the two forts on Lake Champlain, to the head of Lake George, and "indirectly counseled the establishment of a strong post at that point." As an indication of the uncertainty just alluded



to, Congress also recommended "that an exact inventory of them (the armament and stores) should be taken, in order that they might be safely returned when the restoration of the former harmony between Great Britain and the colonies, so ardently wished for by the latter, should render it prudent and consistent with the overruling law of self-preservation."

To this response Allen, as well as Connecticut and Massachusetts at large, manifested the most earnest opposition, and the plans were abandoned. When, a few months later, Washington at Boston was in sore need of artillery<sup>1</sup> the immense value of the victory won by Allen and his men at Ticonderoga and Crown Point became apparent. Henry Knox, the young Boston bookseller (afterwards a brigadier-general in the American army) transported fifty heavy guns from Ticonderoga to Washington's camp, in the mid-winter of 1775-76. This enterprise was one of almost unparalleled toil, the work being accomplished by numerous teams of oxen, and the journey extending through 200 miles of wilderness. The procession was received with an ovation.

The Continental Congress had reassembled and organized on the 10th of May, the day on which Allen captured Ticonderoga. Almost its first labors were in the direction of raising an army for general defense. New York was ordered to raise 3,000 volunteers. A provincial congress of New York convened on the 22d of May, authorized the raising of troops, encouraged the manufacture of powder and muskets in the province, and projected fortifications on the lower Hudson.

The capture of the fortifications on Lake Champlain opened the way for an invasion of Canada which, at that time and amid the then prevailing spirit of the Canadian soldiers and people, could scarcely have failed. Canada was in a peculiarly defenseless condition, many of her troops having been withdrawn to Boston, and it was believed that a large portion of her people would assume the cause of America in the event of an invasion promising success. But Congress hesitated, and although Allen had, in a communication of June 7th, declared that "with 1,500 men I could take Montreal," that body was averse to an act involving possibilities of an apprehension in the minds of many citizens of the colonies, and so thoroughly offensive in its character against the mother country.

Soon after the capture of the forts fifty men who had been enlisted by Arnold arrived at Ticonderoga. An armed schooner was then lying in the Sorel river near St. Johns. Her capture would secure the naval supremacy of the lake and Arnold and Allen resolved upon the attempt. Arnold took his fifty recruits and manned the schooner captured at Skeenesborough and on the fifth day after the surrender of the fort sailed for St. Johns. Allen accompanied him with 150 men in bateaux. Favorable winds enabled Arnold to distance

<sup>1</sup> The whole train of artillery possessed by the colonies when the war for independence broke out, was composed of four field pieces, two belonging to citizens of Boston, and two to the province of Massachusetts. — LOSSING.

the bateaux. Arriving within thirty miles of his destination, a calm overtook him; but he was not disposed to share with Allen whatever honor might be forthcoming, and accordingly embarked thirty-five men in two boats, hastened forward, surprised and captured the fort, with its guard of twelve men, and seized the schooner, making a successful retreat with his prize. Returning he met Allen and acquainted him with intelligence he had received of an approaching detachment of troops towards St. Johns; but Allen pushed on and landed. The presence of a large force with artillery compelled him to return.<sup>1</sup>

In June Allen gave up his command on Champlain to Colonel Benjamin Hinman, who brought thither 1,000 troops from Connecticut.

The course pursued by the Indians early in the Revolutionary struggle was the cause of much anxiety to the colonists and opened the way to the bloody deeds that followed their alliance with the English and their association with the Tories. The alarming encroachments of the white settlers upon the domain of the Iroquois undoubtedly had its influence in producing this deplorable result. Sir William Johnson, England's Indian agent, died in 1774, but much of his great influence over the Six Nations descended to his successor—an influence that was potent in withholding the Iroquois power from alliance with the French in the earlier war. The successor was Guy Johnson, a nephew of Sir William. Upon the breaking out of the Revolution it became the policy of the Americans to secure simply the neutrality of the Indians (which policy was successful as far as the Oneidas were concerned), while the British made undisguised efforts to effect their close alliance to the royal cause. La Corne St Luc, a bitter partisan, had declared: "We must let loose the savages upon the frontier of these scoundrels to inspire terror and to make them submit." In the spring of 1777 Governor Tryon wrote to Germain that he and the partisan named were perfectly agreed as to the employment of Indians in the war. Brant, the great Mohawk chief, had already been taken to England (1775-76), was shown marked favor by the government and employed to lead all who would follow him against the colonists. Against this inhuman policy Pitt hurled

---

<sup>1</sup> Following is Arnold's own subsequent estimate of the importance of these captures: "We were now masters of Lake Champlain, and the garrison depending thereon. This success I viewed of consequence in the scale of American politics; for, if a settlement between the then colonies of Great Britain had soon taken place, it would have been easy to have restored these acquisitions; but viewing the then future consequences of a cruel war, as it has really proved to be, and the command of that lake, garrisons, artillery, etc., it must be viewed to be of signal importance to the American cause, and it is marvelous to me that we ever lost command of it. Nothing but taking a Burgoyne with his whole British army could, in my opinion, atone for it; and notwithstanding such an extraordinary victory, we must be obliged to regain the command of that lake again, be the cost what it will; by doing this Canada will easily be brought into union and confederacy with the United States of America. Such an event would put it out of the power of the western tribes of Indians to carry on a war with us, and be a solid and durable bar against any further inhuman barbarities committed on our frontier inhabitants, by cruel and blood-thirsty savages; for it is impossible for them to carry on a war, except they are supported by the trade and commerce of some civilized nation; which to them would be impracticable, did Canada compose a part of the American Empire."



his bitterest invective and in 1777, when the policy was thus defended by one of the secretaries of state, in parliament: "It is perfectly justifiable to use all the means that God and nature have put in our hands," Pitt replied: "I know not what idea that lord may entertain of God and nature, but I know that such abominable principles are equally abhorrent to religion and humanity." He called upon the bishops to disavow such principles and "to vindicate the religion of our God." But he appealed in vain, and the colonial secretary, (Germain) gave special instructions to employ Indians "in fighting republicans."

At length, late in the season of 1775, the Congress began to see the importance of an invasion into Canada. It had, apparently, become a necessary measure for self-protection, as Governor Carleton (of Canada) had received a commission authorizing him to muster and arm the people of the province, and to march them into any province of America to arrest and put to death, or spare, "rebels" and other offenders. Major-General Philip Schuyler had been appointed to the command of the northern department (which included all of New York), with Richard Montgomery as his chief-lieutenant. An army of 3,000 men was concentrated at Ticonderoga for the proposed expedition, while Carleton, apprised of the movement, made preparations to oppose it by creating a naval force competent to maintain supremacy on the lake. To defeat this design Montgomery took the small force already assembled and rapidly descended the lake and seized the position at the Isle aux Noix. There he was joined by Schuyler and an address of conciliation was made to the Canadians, which had the effect of partially influencing the people to maintain neutrality towards the Americans. At the same time Carleton's efforts to enlist the general populace were almost unsuccessful; they would not join in active aggression against their neighbors across the border.

A council had already been held at Montreal by the chiefs and warriors of the Iroquois, Guy Johnson and Brant both taking part. Here the savages swore fealty to the king, the first act in the long catalogue of slaughter and devastation that followed.

As the first step towards the invasion the Americans, 1,000 strong, made a demonstration against St. Johns, during which they were attacked by a body of Indians who were repulsed. After erecting a slight breastwork near the fort, Schuyler fell back to his original position and erected a *chevaux de frise* in the Sorel, obstructing navigation into the lake by Carleton's vessels, then in progress of construction at St. Johns. Schuyler was now called to Albany and was there detained by sickness, leaving the command in the efficient hands of Montgomery. He soon adopted aggressive measures. St. Johns was then occupied by a garrison of 700 men under Major Preston, and was looked upon as the key to Canada. This position was considered impregnable to the force at Montgomery's command, and he resolved to assault the works at Chambly, a

few miles below. It was accomplished in the night (Oct. 19th), after feeble defense by the small garrison, and placed in Montgomery's possession several heavy guns, a large quantity of powder and other stores, all of which he was in extreme need of. This success turned the scale of Canadian sympathy more towards America and large numbers joined the army ; which spirit was fostered by Montgomery, who sent detachments of his soldiers in different directions through their country for that purpose. Two of these parties, under Allen and Brown, respectively, approached Montreal, and without orders and with apparent injudiciousness, resolved upon capturing the island. Brown failed to co-operate with Allen, as arranged, and the latter with his party was captured after gallant fighting.<sup>1</sup>

Carleton's success over Allen and Brown now led him to attempt the relief of St. Johns. His plans embraced a conjunction with Colonel McLean who was stationed with a corps at the mouth of the Sorel. Carleton started with a force of about 1,000, mostly Canadians and Indians, to make the passage of the river from Montreal to Longueil ; but Seth Warner had already occupied the eastern bank of the river with his Green Mountain boys, and apprehending Carleton's movements, he fortified his position with a few pieces of artillery and awaited the fleet. Carleton was welcomed by Warner with a terrible fire of musketry and grape shot, which sent his undisciplined troops flying back to the island. McLean also retreated to his former position and at this time, through an intercepted letter from Arnold to Schuyler, learned that a formidable force was descending the valley of the Chaudière to assault Quebec ; he accordingly hastened, with such forces as he could collect, to occupy that place. Montgomery immediately occupied the position from which McLean had fallen back, erected works at the confluence of the St. Lawrence and Sorel and, further aided by floating batteries, completely controlled both streams, cutting off Montreal and the fortifications on the upper waters of the river and lakes from communication with Quebec and the sea. This well conceived action forced Preston to surrender St. Johns, after which Montgomery marched against Montreal and that city also surrendered without making defense. Carleton relinquished the command at Montreal to Prescott before Montgomery's arrival, and escaped in disguise in the night down the river past the American batteries.

Meanwhile Washington had planned one of those remarkably bold and original movements for which he was famous, with the capture of Quebec as its object. This was no less than the march of a thousand men from Cambridge, by way of the Kennebec river, through the untrodden wilderness between that stream and the Chaudière, and the descent of the latter to Quebec.

Had it been possible for human sagacity to foresee the almost insurmount-

---

<sup>1</sup> Allen was taken a prisoner to England, where he was held nearly three years, and persecuted with all manner of indignities in loathsome prisons. At the end of his imprisonment he was exchanged and received with honors by his country.



able obstacles and hardships to overcome in this then unparalleled expedition, it would, in all probability, have been so directed as to have been entirely successful. But as it proved the heroic troops and their officers were buried in the depths of the wilderness for thirty-two days, suffering the horrors of starvation, tempestuous weather and freezing floods in the streams they were forced to ford, before reaching the Chaudière. Here actual starvation threatened, and it was still seventy miles to the nearest French settlement. Arnold, therefore, left the main body of his troops and, taking with him fifty-five men, started down the river for food. The settlement was reached and Indians sent back with supplies and to guide the troops down the river. This was all accomplished, but it took time, and it was nearly two months from the date of leaving Cambridge before they reached the St. Lawrence opposite Quebec (November 9th), decimated to 750 strong.<sup>1</sup>

It is more than probable that this expedition, bold, hazardous, and secret as it was, would have secured the prize for which it was planned, but for the intercepted letter before alluded to. The alertness of McLean saved the city from capitulation. Four days Arnold was prevented from crossing the river, at the end of which, on the night of the 13th of November, he embarked 550 men in bark canoes and landed them at Wolf's Cove, whence they ascended to the Plains of Abraham. Here he ordered his men to give three cheers, in the hope of thus calling the garrison out to attack him, upon which it was his purpose to rush through the open city gates, call around him the sympathizers he believed to be in the city and hold the situation. The regulars did not come out. Arnold was joined by the 200 men left on Point Levi across the river, and he now spent a few days in issuing proclamations and arrogantly demanding the surrender of the city. Little attention was paid to him or his movements by the enemy. Learning that Carleton was coming down the river and that the garrison were preparing for a sortie that might overwhelm his really insignificant force, he prudently retreated to Point aux Trembles, twenty miles above, and awaited instructions from Montgomery. The latter had left Montreal in charge of a force under General Wooster, and on the 3d of December reached Arnold and his "shivering troops." With the clothing he brought the complaining soldiers were reclad and then the combined force, still less than 1,000 strong, outside of 200 Canadians who had volunteered under Colonel James Livingstone, pressed forward and halted before Quebec on the 5th of December. A demand for the surrender of the city was made on the following morning, but the flag sent was fired upon, and in response to a letter from Montgomery to Carleton, the latter said he would hold no communication with "a rebel general."

---

<sup>1</sup> Their sufferings from cold and hunger had been extreme. At one time they had attempted to make broth of boiled deer skin moccasins to sustain life, and a dog belonging to Henry (afterwards General) Dearborn made savory food for them. In this expedition were men who afterwards became famous in American history — Aaron Burr, R. J. Meigs, Henry Dearborn, Daniel Morgan and others. — LOSSING.

Preparations were now made to assault the city. Colonel Lamb had brought six twelve-pound guns which were mounted upon a redoubt built of ice, and from a few mortars stationed in the lower town, shells were thrown into the city, by which a few buildings were set on fire. But Lamb's ice battery was destroyed by well-directed cannonade from the citadel, and he was forced to withdraw. Clearly this course would not succeed, and Montgomery waited two weeks in vain for reinforcements. His soldiers, many of whom had left him before his departure from Montreal upon expiration of their terms, were becoming dissatisfied; the small-pox broke out among them, and to make matters worse, Arnold, always dictatorial and obstinate, quarreled with other officers and thus farther alienated some of the troops.

At last and almost in desperation, Montgomery determined upon an attempt to carry the city by a direct assault at two points, one division to be led by himself and the other by Arnold. On the first stormy night Arnold was to attack the lower town, set fire to the suburb of St. Roque, while the main body should make an assault from the St. Lawrence river side under Montgomery. A snow storm began on the 30th of December; sickness, desertion and expiration of enlistment terms had dwindled the force to 750 effective men, but the movement was carried forward. While Arnold led his 350 men to the assault on the St. Charles side, Livingston made a feint upon the St. Louis gate and Major Brown menaced the Cape Diamond bastion. At the same time Montgomery descended to the St. Lawrence and made his way along the narrow shore at the foot of the cape. The whole plan had been revealed to Carleton by a Canadian deserter and the garrison was prepared for the assault. A battery was placed at the narrow pass on the St. Charles side and a block house with masked cannon occupied the narrow road at the foot of Cape Diamond. Montgomery approached this block house where all was still. Believing his presence was not known he shouted to the companies of Captains Mott and Cheeseman, near him, "Men of New York, you will not fear to follow where your general leads; push on, my brave boys and Quebec is ours!" At this moment a charge of grape shot from a single gun, which, tradition says, was fired by a drunken sailor (the last of the block house garrison, the remainder having fled at the approach of the Americans), swept through the narrow path with terrific destructiveness. Montgomery fell, pierced through the head and both legs; his dying form was caught in the arms of Burr. Cheeseman and McPherson, aids, and ten others were killed. The assault was doomed; the fall of the brave leader overwhelmed the troops, and Montgomery's division, now under command of Colonel Campbell, hastily withdrew.

Meanwhile Arnold's band was marching through blinding snow and heavy drifts, in single file up the defile that led to his point of attack. This could be raked by the guns of the battery and swept by the musketry from the garrison walls. Lamb had left his artillery as useless, and joined Arnold. The city



bells began ringing and drums beating. Fire was opened on the narrow pass and Arnold fell wounded and was borne from the field. Morgan took the command, and, amid desperate fighting, a battery was captured with a number of the guards and its barricade scaled with ladders. The commander was the second man to cross the works. With the aid of Colonel Green and Majors Bigelow and Meigs he succeeded in gathering about him two hundred of the troops, covered with snow and ice and suffering with the cold; but as day dawned they were imbued with renewed enthusiasm and called on their brave commander to lead them against a second battery mounted beyond the angle of a street. The advance was quickly made, but turning the angle they were met by a body of troops under Captain Anderson; the latter called on Morgan to surrender, and was immediately shot by him. The Americans now rushed ahead, planted ladders against this barricade and mounted to the top. Here they saw before them two lines of British regulars, the butts of their muskets on the ground and their bayonets towards the summit of the barricade. Many of the Americans retreated into the stone houses whence they could maintain their fire, and the conflict continued. But Carleton was enabled, through the failure of the other assaults, to throw his entire force against Morgan. After several hours of heroic resistance and waiting in vain for aid from the other detachments, the brave band was compelled to surrender after a loss of a hundred men. Thus ended the siege.

The entire loss of the Americans in killed, wounded and prisoners was about four hundred. The British lost about twenty killed.

Upon the death of Montgomery Arnold took the command and retired with the remainder of the troops to Sillery, three miles up the river, where he blockaded Quebec during the remainder of the winter. His position and his prospects were not encouraging. The troops were insubordinate and the Canadian people, prompted by the priests, were becoming disaffected towards the Americans, while at the same time disease was rampant among the troops. Arnold was relieved in April by General Wooster and a month later General Thomas took command. Arnold was transferred to Montreal, where "he revealed the cupidity and rapaciousness which, in after years, and on another stage, deformed and debauched his whole character."<sup>1</sup>

The approach of three British ships that had forced their way up the river, conveying troops and supplies, coupled with his own almost helpless situation, impelled Thomas to begin a retreat, which was done on the 5th of May. The order was for such immediate movement that most of the sick and wounded and the stores were abandoned. The retreat itself was a long series of hardships, struggles with sickness and hunger and general suffering. At Sorel General Thomas fell a victim to the prevailing epidemic and was succeeded by General Sullivan. This officer's subsequent conduct of the retreat showed the

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON'S *Essex County*.

highest generalship and was formally recognized by Congress. The capture of the post at the Cedars, on the St. Lawrence, by the Canadians and Mohawks, and the sanguinary disaster at Three Rivers, only served to hasten Sullivan's retreat, and he arrived at Crown Point in June, with the remnant of a conquered army.

It is proper to mention at this point that a territorial division had been made in northern New York in March, 1772, by which Charlotte county was created, which comprised a large extent of territory on both sides of Lake Champlain, including what is now Essex county.

A general meeting of the county committee of Charlotte was held on the 25th of January, 1776, at which it was unanimously resolved that Dr. John Williams be recommended to the Provincial Congress of New York for the command of the first battalion of the militia for this his county; Mr. Alexander Campbell, of Argyle township, for lieutenant-colonel; Messrs. Timothy Bewell, of Fort Miller, and Alexander Webster, of Black Creek, for adjutant, and Mr. Samuel Fuller, of Skeenesborough, quartermaster. At the same time and place it was unanimously agreed that Dr. John Williams and Mr. Alexander Campbell should represent the county of Charlotte in Provincial Congress till the second Tuesday in the following May.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### CLOSE OF 1776.

The Canadian Mission — Its Failure — Hostilities near New York — Battle of Long Island — Small-Pox at Crown Point — Carleton's Pursuit of the Americans — Building a British Fleet for Lake Champlain — Counter-action by Arnold — Sailing of the British Fleet — Respective Positions of the American and British Vessels — The Engagement — Retirement of the Americans — Rapid Pursuit — Arnold's Bravery — Burning of a Portion of the Fleet — Escape of the Remainder to Crown Point — The British Retire to Canada for the Winter.

THE country was now fully ablaze with the Revolution, and the remainder of the year 1776 witnessed some important occurrences. The month of March, while Arnold was yet in command at Montreal, had witnessed the failure of the commission appointed by Congress, consisting of Benjamin Franklin, Samuel Chase and Charles Carroll, to proceed to Canada and induce the people to establish a free government and join the confederated colonies. Hostilities were for the time being transferred to New York and vicinity, and the battle of Long Island, disastrous to the Americans, was fought and New York evacuated in September, while other occurrences of moment were taking place in the northern department, with which we are more directly interested.



When the retreating army had reached Crown Point, as detailed at the close of the preceding chapter, it mustered about five thousand men; but more than half of these were helpless in sickness, chiefly from the terrible scourge, small-pox. For ten days the troops remained there, suffering much from exposure, during which brief period three hundred deaths occurred. What would have happened had not Sullivan, in his wisdom, destroyed everything in his track that could have aided the British in their pursuit, may be imagined. When they arrived at Champlain their progress was stayed for want of shipping. The naval supremacy of the lake now became of perhaps greater moment than ever before. Carleton immediately began the construction of boats in the Sorel, and six large vessels which had been built in England were taken apart below the Chambly rapids and conveyed to St. Johns where they were again rebuilt in the utmost haste. The 1st of October found him with a fleet of thirty-one vessels, all armed with from one to eighteen guns and manned by seven hundred seaman and a corps of artillery.

Congress had not been idle. Here Arnold found a field for the exercise of his indomitable energy, and he saw the construction, directly from the forest trees, and equipment of fifteen vessels, armed in the aggregate with fifty-five guns and manned by three hundred and fifty men; men, however, with little experience in naval affairs.

A short period of repose followed, but neither antagonist was idle. Carleton strengthened the forts at St. Johns and Isle aux Noix and gathered a land force of 7,000 troops to march against his enemy when the lake was conquered; and Arnold cruised the lake in defiance of the foe, perfected his plans for the expected contest, and drilled his men.

Meanwhile General Gates had, through intrigue, displaced General Schuyler in command of the northern army, and concentrated his forces at Ticonderoga.<sup>1</sup>

Dr. James Thacher joined the American forces that marched to Ticonderoga from Boston. He was an intelligent man and kept a journal from 1775 to 1783, which proved of great historic value. He writes of Ticonderoga and the events about to occur in that vicinity with such clearness and evident sincerity and judgment, that we are fully justified in quoting as follows:—

“20th. — Having recovered my health and being prepared to follow our regiment, I am this day to bid adieu to the town of Boston, where I have resided very pleasantly for the last five months. I am destined to a distant part of our country, and know not what suffering and hazards I shall be called to

---

<sup>1</sup> Gates at first established his headquarters at Crown Point, but soon afterward withdrew his forces from that post and fell back upon Ticonderoga. This step was taken by the advice and concurrence of a board of general officers, but contrary to the wishes of the field officers. The commander-in-chief was exceedingly dissatisfied with this movement of Gates, believing that the relinquishment of that post, in its consequences, would be equivalent to an abandonment of Lakes George and Champlain, and all the advantages to be derived therefrom. — STONE'S *Life of Brant*, with reference to Washington's letter to Gates.

encounter, while in the discharge of my military duty. I shall commence my journey in company with Lieutenant Whiting and fourteen men who were left here as invalids.

“September. — We took our route through Worcester, Springfield, Charlestown, in New Hampshire, and over the Green Mountains to Skeensboro; which is the place of rendezvous for the Continental troops and militia destined to Ticonderoga. Here boats are provided at the entrance of Lake Champlain which are continually passing to and from this place. We embarked on the 6th instant, and with good oarsmen and sails we arrived the same day, and joined our regiment here, a distance of thirty miles.

“10th. — Ticonderoga is situated on an angle of land forming the western shore of Lake Champlain, or rather what is called South Bay; being the inlet into the lake. It is about twelve miles south of the old fortress at Crown Point, and about 110 miles north of Albany. This point of land is surrounded on three sides by water, and on the northwest side it is well defended by the old French lines and several block houses. . . . On the east side of South Bay, directly opposite to Ticonderoga, is a high circular hill, on the summit of which our army has erected a strong fort, within which is a square of barracks. This is called Mt. Independence. A communication is maintained between the two places by a floating bridge thrown across the lake, which is about 400 yards wide. The army stationed at this post at present is supposed to consist of about 8,000 to 10,000 men, and Major General Gates is commander-in-chief. We have a naval armament<sup>1</sup> on Lake Champlain, below this garrison, which is commanded by the intrepid General Arnold; General Waterbury is second in command. The British have also a naval armament<sup>2</sup> of superior force, at the head of which is the celebrated Sir Guy Carleton.”

*Carleton and Arnold's Naval Battle.* — “Preparations are making on both sides for a vigorous combat to decide which power shall have dominion on the lake. Should Sir Guy Carleton be able to defeat our fleet, it is supposed that he will pursue his victorious career by an attempt to possess himself of this garrison; and our troops are making the utmost exertion to put our works in the best possible defense. Each regiment has its alarm post assigned, and they are ordered to repair to it, and to man the lines at daylight every morning. Among our defensive weapons are poles, about twelve feet long, armed with sharp iron points, which each soldier is to employ against the assailants when mounting the breast-works.

“10th. — By intelligence from our fleet, on the lake, we are in daily expectation of a decisive naval action, as the British are known to have a superior force; our officers, here, I understand, are full of anxiety respecting the important event. Great confidence is reposed in the judgment and bravery of General Arnold, whom General Gates has appointed to command our fleet.

---

<sup>1</sup> Built and equipped by Arnold at Ticonderoga and Crown Point, as already described.

<sup>2</sup> Built at St. Johns navigated by 700 veteran seamen.



15th — "I have now to recount an account of a naval engagement between the two fleets on Lake Champlain.<sup>1</sup> The British under command of Sir Guy Carleton, advanced on the 11th instant, and found our fleet in a line of battle prepared for the attack. A warm action soon ensued, and became extremely close and severe, with round and grape shot, which continued about four hours. Brigadier General Waterbury, in the *Washington* galley, fought with undaunted bravery, till nearly all his officers were killed and wounded, and his vessel greatly injured; when General Arnold ordered the remaining shattered vessels to retire up the lake, towards Crown Point, in order to refit. On the 13th, they were overtaken by the enemy, and the action was renewed, in which was displayed the greatest intrepidity on both sides. The *Washington* galley, being crippled in the first action, was soon obliged to strike and surrender. General Arnold conducted during the action with great judgment, firmness, and gallantry, obstinately defending himself against a superior force, both in numbers and weight of metal. At length, however, he was so closely pressed that his situation became desperate and he ran his own vessel, the *Congress* galley, on shore, which with five gondolas were abandoned and blown up. Out of sixteen of our vessels, eleven were taken or destroyed, five only arrived safely at this place. Two of the enemy's gondolas were sunk by our fleet, and one blown up with sixty men. Their loss in men is supposed to be equal to our own, which is estimated at about 100."

*Preparations to Receive an Attack.* — "A large number of troops were on board the British fleet, consisting of regulars, Canadians and savages, which have been landed on each side of the lake, and it is now expected that Sir Guy Carleton, at the head of his army, reported to be about 10,000 strong, will soon invest this post. By order of General Gates, our commander, the greatest exertions are constantly making, by strengthening our works, to enable us to give them a warm reception; and our soldiery express a strong desire to have an opportunity of displaying their courage and prowess; both officers and men are full of activity and vigilance.

"18th. — It is now ascertained that the British army and fleet have established themselves at Crown Point, and are strengthening the old fortifications at that place. Some of their vessels have approached within a few miles of our garrison, and one boat came within cannon shot distance of our lower battery, in order to reconnoitre and sound the channel; but a few shot having killed two men, and wounded another, soon obliged her to retire. All of our troops are ordered to repair to their alarm posts, and man the lines and works; every morning, our continental colors are advantageously displayed on the ramparts, and our cannon and spars are in readiness for action.

---

<sup>1</sup>This engagement occurred in the strait between Valcour Island and the western shore, just north of the mouth of the Ausable. Its history cannot be omitted in the sketches of Fort Ticonderoga, because the American vessels were built and manned there.

"20th. — Ever since the defeat of our fleet we have been providentially favored with a strong southerly wind, which has prevented the enemy's advancing to attack our lines, and afforded us time to receive some reinforcements of militia, and to prepare for a more vigorous defense. It seems now to be the opinion of many of our most judicious officers, that had Sir Guy Carleton approached with his army, immediately after his victory on the lake, the struggle must have been most desperate, and the result precarious; but we now feel more confidence in our strength."

*Carleton Retires to Canada.* — "November 1st. — The enemy remain at Crown Point, and evince no disposition to molest our garrison, having probably discovered that our means of defense are too formidable for them to encounter. General Gates has now ordered a detachment of troops to march towards Crown Point, to reconnoitre their position, or to attack them. A report was soon returned that the whole fleet and army have abandoned Crown Point, and retired into Canada, where they will probably occupy their winter quarters in peace, and it is not probable that Sir Guy Carleton intends to invest our garrison, at this advanced season, unless, however, he should attempt it by marching his army over the ice, when the lake is frozen, which will probably be very practicable."

*Winter Life in the Barracks.* — "15th. — Ticonderoga is in about latitude forty-four degrees. I have no means in possession of ascertaining the precise degree of cold; but we all agree that it is colder here than in Massachusetts at the same season. The earth has not yet been covered with snow, but the frost is so considerable that the water of the lake is congealed, and the earth is frozen. We are comfortably situated in our barracks; our provisions are now good, and having no enemy near enough to alarm or disturb us, we have nothing of importance to engage our attention. Our troops are quite healthy, a few cases of rheumatism and pleurisy comprise our sick list, and it is seldom that any fatal cases occur."

Such was the sagacious physician's description of the most important naval engagement on Lake Champlain and other contemporaneous events. General Carleton was harshly and unjustly censured for his retirement to Canada. He realized the strength of the garrison at that time and properly estimated the hazards of an approaching winter, which would cut him off from rapid transportation to Canada.

While the garrison were "comfortably situated" in the barracks, as chronicled by Thacher, Washington was retreating in gloom across the Jerseys, closely pursued by Cornwallis; Forts Washington and Lee had fallen into the hands of the enemy; the militia had shown little of that heroism that was expected of them, and the Tory spirit was rife in New York and New Jersey; the American cause seemed in desperate straits. But the spirits of Washington rose to the emergency and before the close of the year he won the battle



of Trenton (December 26th), which, with Carleton's departure from Lake Champlain, revived the depressed spirits of the colonists.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### PROGRESS OF THE REVOLUTION.

Persecution of Wm. Gilliland—His memorial to Congress—Charged with Treasonable Acts—Plans of the English for the Campaign of 1777—Burgoyne's Army and its Equipment—His Conference with the Indians and its Consequences—Embarrassment of the American Commanders—General Schuyler again in Command of the Northern Department—Extracts from Dr. Thacher's Journal—His Views upon the Military Situation—The defense at Ticonderoga—Burgoyne's Bombast—St. Clair in Command at Ticonderoga—Weakness of His Force—The Assault—The Fatal Mistake of the Americans—Mount Defiance Unfortified—Seized by the British—Evacuation the only Alternative—Thacher's Account of the Flight—Vigorous Pursuit of the British—Battle of Hubbardton—American Despondency over the Capture of Ticonderoga—Schuyler Superseded by Gates—Battle of Bennington—Burgoyne's Increasing Perplexities—Engagements at Bemis's Heights—The British Retire—Surprise of the British at Lake George Landing—Burgoyne Surrounded—His Surrender—British Evacuation of Ticonderoga.

THE events just recorded were disastrous to the thriving little colony on the Boquet, and that without apparent cause. There is every reason for believing that William Gilliland was a patriot to the core and willing to give freely of his strength and means for the triumph of American independence. In the memorial written by him in 1777, from which we shall make further extracts, he says: "Your memorialist has reason to think that he was the first person who laid a plan for, and determined upon seizing Ticonderoga and Crown Point, and the king's armed vessels, and therewith the entire command of Lakes George and Champlain. That by means of your memorialist, an unhappy dispute which subsisted between Mr. Allen and Mr. Arnold (the then rival heads of our handful of people on Lake Champlain) was composed. In consequence of which, your memorialist (besides several other matters) took the liberty of recommending to your honors the embodying of the Green Mountain boys. Col. Allen delivered the letter."

Mr. Gilliland also informed Congress that he not only formed a company of minute men, "the only one formed on either side of Lake Champlain," in the ranks of which, "for example sake," he stood, and that he did his utmost towards stimulating other settlements to the same course.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In the manuscripts of Mr. Sheldon, upon which Mr. Watson drew so freely for his excellent works, it is stated that Gilliland's company comprised about thirty men from the west side of the lake and fifteen from the east belonging to a little colony founded by a Mr. Pierson; and that "they appear to have been active and efficient in the performance of their voluntary duties." Mr. Gilliland was chosen captain and Pierson lieutenant of the company.

It should be remembered that on account of Mr. Gilliland's position as the owner of a vast tract of land and the controlling spirit of a considerable number of tenants, he was a well known and conspicuous character in the eyes of both the Canadian government and the Americans. His zeal for the success of the latter was so well understood and acknowledged by the English that a reward of \$500 was offered by the governor of Canada in June following the surrender of the Champlain forts, for his arrest and return to that country. This sum was sufficient to incite several attempts to effect his arrest. Some of his tenants engaged unsuccessfully in these efforts, and finally the sheriff of Tryon county, "with four Tories and three savages," — an appropriate squad for the work — tried their hands in the business. Gilliland captured the entire party and sent them prisoners to Crown Point.

For his conduct thus far Gilliland's reward was suspicion of disloyalty on the part of some of his compatriots, which finally (in July) took the aspect of formal charges addressed to General Gates. It is sufficient to say that these charges were of a very unsubstantial character, to say the least, and were so treated by the commanding general. But the colony was, nevertheless, marked for devastation. This was begun by Arnold's men while he was patrolling the lake previous to his defeat by Carleton. They were permitted to land and ravage the crops without restraint, a practice that was continued while there was opportunity. To Gilliland's letter courteously complaining of these depredations, Arnold paid no heed, and when the former carried his case to General Gates, Arnold forwarded to the general Gilliland's letter, with charges of fraud and disloyalty — charges based upon almost childish information.<sup>1</sup>

Although it was a time when all deeds and words savoring in the least of disloyalty were looked upon with the utmost suspicion, still the whimsical character of this so-called testimony must be clear to any one; especially when it

---

<sup>1</sup> Testimony of Thomas Day, the basis of Arnold's charges, as given in WATSON'S *Pioneer History of the Champlain Valley*: —

"Thomas Day, examined on oath before Robert Lewis, one of the justices of Charlotte county, in the province of New York.

"Who saith that some time in the beginning of July last, being in company with William Gilliland esq. and William Wykes, he heard said Wykes say that he was not afraid to go to St. Johns, to the regulars, and that it appeared to him from their intimacy and being frequently together, and from sundry expressions of Gilliland's, that he contrived the plan of Wykes and Ned Watson's going off. That he heard Gilliland say, the army acted like a parcel of damned robbers. That several of Gilliland's tenants, in particular one Nathaniel Blood, bought sundry tents, axes, guns, etc., from the soldiers of the American army, for a mere trifle of rum, which said Blood had from said Gilliland, and he believes said Gilliland was concerned with said Blood. He the deponent observed to said Gilliland that he thought it very wrong to buy those articles of the soldiers, as it was defrauding the country; to which Gilliland answered, it was no matter how much they got out of the country; the more the better; and that being at Gilliland's when the army was going to Canada this spring, several officers passed by the window. Gilliland said, there comes a company of damned burglars. He was also in company with John Watson since the last retreat; he heard said Watson say that he was not afraid of the regulars if they came, for that he had several officers for relations among them, and as for the American army they had acted like a parcel of damned robbers.

THOMAS DAY."



was given by one of Arnold's subordinates; and all, moreover, in face of the fact, as stated in the memorial already alluded to, that Gilliland had at the time of the retreat from Canada, testified his "warm attachment to, and hearty affection for your northern army. He embraced every opportunity of rendering them all the encouragement in his power. From the general down to the sentinel, he has entertained three or four thousand men at his own expense — he never charged a cent for vegetables, salmon, milk or anything else he had to spare them — has supplied a numerous company under Captain Lamar, with bread and meat, as long as he or his settlers had a pound, during a long stay which they were obliged to make at his place, and thereby reduced his and the families of his tenants to sufferings they were before unused to; had every deserter which appeared at his settlement, taken up and sent to the army; has lain weeks together on straw in a common room, that sick and wounded soldiers and officers that were sent to, or stopped at his house might be more comfortably accommodated, sometimes taking them to Ticonderoga (45 miles distant) at his own charge, and had every soldier who died at his settlement interred in decent coffins with the honors of war."

When such had been Gilliland's conduct towards American soldiers (and the statement bears the impress of truth) it is wonderful that he could be charged with disloyalty; and when such thoroughly loyal conduct was followed by the most wanton outrages by American soldiers, it is *not* wonderful that Mr. Gilliland, the victim, should exclaim that the "army acted like a parcel of damned robbers."

For the campaign of 1777 the English made the most thorough preparation in the north, where General Burgoyne had succeeded Carleton. A large and fully equipped army was gathered in Canada and placed under his command, with which it was determined to crush the insurgent colonies. The force designed for this enterprise numbered more than 7,000 men, besides about 250 Canadians, to which were added some 400 Indians and a large park of artillery. The forces, with the exception of the Indians, assembled at St. Johns and Isle aux Noix. Its command, under Burgoyne, was entrusted to such brave and skillful officers as General Phillips, Frazer, Powell and Hamilton of the British troops, and Riedesel and Specht of the hired Germans. Early in June this splendid army left St. Johns in boats and reached the banks of the Boquet, where it halted ten days, to enable the commander to make a reconnaissance of Ticonderoga, drill his boatmen and hold his notorious conference with the Indians, in which they were deliberately employed to glut their savage passions upon the Americans. This conference was held on the 21st. Burgoyne made a stirring speech to the Indians who pledged themselves to carry out his behests against the colonists. There will always, doubtless, be differences of opinion as to how far Burgoyne went in this bargain and to what extent he inflamed the savages; but the fact must remain that he knew the character of the

Indians and their mode of warfare; he knew also that the Americans had not sought their alliance, desiring only their neutrality; hence the bloody scenes that followed directly upon this bargain between him and the Six Nations must, in a measure, be accredited to him.<sup>1</sup>

The plans of the English for the campaign embraced the cutting off of New England from the Middle States by the opening of communication between New York and Canada. This was to be accomplished by Burgoyne, in co-operation with General Clinton, whose operations were to be carried on down the Hudson. At the same time Sir William Howe, with an army of 16,000 men, was to withdraw from New Jersey and move simultaneously around to the Chesapeake and take possession of the Middle States.

Unfortunately for the Americans, these plans were hidden and mystified to such an extent that the commanding officers were in great perplexity in devising measures of opposition. It was the general impression that Burgoyne contemplated a movement against Boston, and that Sir William Howe was to co-operate in the subjugation of the hot-bed of rebellion, New England. Even after Burgoyne descended from the North, General Howe's movements were misunderstood by Washington, his uncertainty being strengthened by a feigned dispatch sent by Howe to Burgoyne upon the subject of ascending the Hudson; this dispatch was purposely allowed to fall into the hands of the American commander, who was thereby impelled to remain inactive and to withhold reinforcements from the northern department. As late as July 2d, Washington wrote the Congress: "If we were certain General Burgoyne were approaching Ticonderoga with his whole army, I should not hesitate a moment in concluding that it is in consequence of a preconcerted plan with General Howe, and that the latter is to co-operate with him by pushing his whole force up the North river." And July 22d he wrote: "I cannot give you any certain account of General Howe's operations. His conduct is puzzling and embarrassing beyond measure; so are the informations I get. At one time the ships are standing up toward the North river; in a little while they are going up the sound; and in one hour after they are going out of the hook." This to General Schuyler. In reality the fleet sailed for the Virginia capes on the 23d of July.

The command of the northern department was again, by the vacillation of Congress, placed in the hands of General Schuyler, only to deprive him of it the second time on the first of the following August. The immediate com-

---

<sup>1</sup> It is but just to this gallant but unfortunate officer, however, to state, that he did all in his power to restrain the excesses and barbarities of the Indians. At the council and war feast, which he gave them near Crown Point, he endeavored to explain to them the laws of civilized war; and charged them that they must only kill those opposing them in arms; that old men, women and children, and prisoners, must be held sacred from the knife or hatchet, even in the heat of battle. But it did no good. — *STONE'S Life of Brant*. The question will, doubtless, be asked whether Burgoyne should not have known, or did not know, at the time that it would "do no good."



mand of Ticonderoga and its dependencies was given to General Arthur St. Clair, an officer of ability and experience, but destined to misfortune. Here should have been concentrated an army of 10,000 men; yet Schuyler could muster but half that number in his whole department, while but 3,000 were given to St. Clair. But the works were vastly stronger than when they were so heroically defended by Montcalm. The old lines had been fortified by the erection of a block house, and new works erected at the saw-mills and the Lake George landing, all which were, however, only occupied by feeble detachments. A small fort was erected on Mount Hope, while Mount Independence, on the eastern shore of the lake, directly opposite the main fort, was effectively fortified by a star fort enclosing barracks; the base of the hill and its sides were entrenched and supplied with artillery. Ticonderoga and Mount Independence are about 1,500 yards apart. Let us quote a little further from the journal of Dr. Thacher:—

“According to authentic reports, the plan of the British government for the present campaign is that General Burgoyne’s army shall take possession of Ticonderoga, and force his way through the country to Albany; to facilitate this event, Colonel St. Ledger is to march with a party of British, Germans, Canadians and Indians to the Mohawk river, and make a diversion in that quarter. The royal army at New York, under command of General Howe, is to pass up the Hudson river, and, calculating on success in all quarters, the three armies are to form a junction at Albany. Here, probably, the three commanders are to congratulate each other on their mighty achievements, and the flattering prospects of crushing the Rebellion. This being accomplished, the communication between the southern and eastern States will be interrupted, and New England, as they suppose, may become an easy prey.

“Judging from the foregoing detail, a very active campaign is to be expected, and events of the greatest magnitude are undoubtedly to be unfolded.

“The utmost exertions are now making to strengthen our works at Ticonderoga, and, if possible, to render the post invulnerable. Mount Independence, directly opposite to Ticonderoga, is strongly fortified and well supplied with artillery. On the summit of the mount, which is table land, is erected a strong fort, in the center of which is a convenient square of barracks, a part of which are occupied for our hospital. The communication between these two places is maintained by a floating bridge, which is supported on twenty-two sunken piers of very large timber. The spaces between these are filled with separate floats, each about fifty feet long and twelve feet wide, strongly fastened together with iron chains and rivets. A boom composed of large pieces of timber, well secured together by riveted bolts, is placed on the north side of the bridge, and by the side of this is placed a double iron chain, the links of which are one and a half inch square. The construction of this bridge, boom and chain, of 400 yards in length, has proved a most laborious under-

taking, and the expense must have been immense. It is, however, supposed to be admirably adapted to the double purpose of a communication and an impenetrable barrier to any vessels that might attempt to pass our works.

"July 1st. — We are now assailed by a proclamation of a very extraordinary nature, from General Burgoyne.<sup>1</sup> . . . The militia of New England are daily coming in to increase our strength; the number of our troops and our ability to defend the works against the approaching enemy, are considerations which belong to our commanding officers. . . . One fact, however, is notorious, that when the troops are directed to man the lines, there is not a sufficient number to occupy their whole extent. It appears, nevertheless, so far as I can learn, to be the prevalent opinion, that we shall be able to repel the meditated attack and defeat the views of the royal commander; both officers and men are in high spirits and prepared for the contest."

In spite of the conclusions of this eye-witness, it is clear that St. Clair was in no condition to repel an assault from such a force as that under command of Burgoyne. He knew this to be the fact. On the 25th of June he communicated to Schuyler the perilous circumstances by which he was surrounded and the inadequacy of his resources; but he was given no alternative other than to hold the position to the last, when an early evacuation might have averted the misfortune that overtook him. The commander-in-chief and Congress were still clinging to the belief and hope that Burgoyne's movements were pretexts to cover other operations. Mount Defiance, the real key to success in operations against Ticonderoga, was still unfortified and unoccupied.<sup>2</sup>

On the first of July Burgoyne's army appeared before Ticonderoga. The small garrison at Crown Point had fallen back to this point and Burgoyne established there a hospital, magazine, store-house and base of supplies. He disposed his forces with light infantry, grenadiers, Canadians, Indians and ten pieces of artillery, under command of General Frazer, on the west side of the lake at Putnam's creek. This force was moved up to Five Mile Point. On the east side of the lake were the Germans, under Reidesel and Breyman; they were moved up to a point nearly opposite, while the remainder of the army were on board of the gunboats and the frigates *Royal George* and *Inflexible* under the immediate command of Burgoyne himself. This fleet was anchored between the wings of the army and just out of cannon shot from the fort.

<sup>1</sup> Let not people consider their distance from my camp; I have but to give stretch to the Indian forces under my direction — and they amount to thousands — to overtake the banded enemies of Great Britain. If the frenzy of hostility should remain, I trust I shall stand acquitted in the eyes of God and man in executing the vengeance of the state against the willful outcasts. — From *Burgoyne's Proclamation*.

<sup>2</sup> The imagined impregnability of these works would at once fail, in the event of this eminence being occupied by a hostile battery. St. Clair had been apprised of this momentous fact by the examination of the preceding year. Pont Le Roy, the engineer of Montcalm, evidently referred to it. . . . And we cannot doubt that the possession of Ticonderoga during more than eighteen years, had disclosed the military value of this position to the British commanders. — WATSON.



On the 2d the right wing of the British was extended on the flank, threatening St. Clair's outposts, whereupon the small force on Mount Hope and at the landing was ordered to burn the mills and the public property and fall back within the American lines. Mount Hope was immediately seized by the British, and, it is said, received its name from General Phillips, as expressive of his feelings at the time. St. Clair's communications with Lake George were now severed and the eminence was at once further fortified and artillery conveyed to its summit by almost incredible toil, which operations were carried on under a cannonade from St. Clair's guns. During these operations Burgoyne's chief engineer, Lieutenant Twiss, reconnoitered what was then called "Sugar Loaf Hill," the lofty eminence rising seven hundred and fifty feet from the confluence of Lake Champlain and the outlet and directly commanding both Ticonderoga and Mount Independence. The engineer reported in accordance with his belief, that the eminence was not only unoccupied, but could be reached by a road for transportation of cannon in twenty-four hours. This road was cut out during the night of the 4th, the sound of the choppers' axes being drowned by a cannonade from Mount Hope, the Americans remaining in blissful ignorance of the operation. Before morning several pieces of artillery, which had been landed from the *Thunderer* were transported to the top of the mountain. Holes were drilled directly into the rocks to which the guns were chained;<sup>1</sup> they comprised eight pieces, twelve pounders and eight-inch howitzers. When the sun rose on the 5th the British looked down on the strongest fortress of the Americans, confident that they could destroy its garrison and demolish its walls with the plunging shot from their guns. They thereupon, as it is said, called the eminence Mount Defiance, the name it still bears.

The astonishment and anxiety of the Americans, when the morning mists swept back from the mountain and revealed the battery almost over their heads, may be imagined. St. Clair saw that the position was doomed. A council of officers was called; but there could be but one decision, if the army was to be saved — evacuation.

Even this alternative was threatened with disaster, as General Reidesel was menacing the only avenue of escape by stretching his force around Mount Independence to command the narrow water passage towards Skeenesborough. Situated as they were, in full view of the British on Mount Defiance, it was clear that the retreat must be made in the night, and preparations were at once begun. At dusk a heavy cannonade was opened from the outer lines to cover their movements while the garrison gathered stores of all kinds, which with the sick and wounded, were placed in two hundred boats, with a guard of six hundred men and embarked for Skeenesborough, in charge of Colonel Long and accompanied by five armed vessels. At three o'clock on the morning of the

---

<sup>1</sup> These holes are still visible.

6th the troops began to cross the bridge. At this juncture, and in contradiction of express orders, a building was set on fire on Mount Independence by General de Fermoy. The brilliant illumination spread over the entire scene, the British were aroused and preparations for immediate pursuit begun. St. Clair had not the time to destroy the bridge which had cost so much money and labor, and Frazer hurried across it with a strong detachment in pursuit of the fleeing Americans. Within the next few hours Burgoyne so broke up the bridge as to admit the passage of two ships and several of his gunboats, which were crowded on after the American flotilla. Of the moonlight voyage of the latter Dr. Thacher vividly wrote as follows: —

“At about twelve o'clock on the night of the 5th instant I was urgently called from sleep, and informed that our army was in motion, and was instantly to abandon Ticonderoga and Mount Independence. I could scarcely believe that my informant was in earnest, but the confusion and bustle soon convinced me that it was really true, and that the short time allowed demanded my utmost industry. It was enjoined on me immediately to collect the sick and wounded and as much of the hospital stores as possible, and assist in embarking them on board the bateaux and boats at the shore. Having with all possible dispatch completed our embarkation at three o'clock in the morning of the 6th, we commenced our voyage up the South bay to Skeensboro, about thirty miles. Our fleet consisted of five armed galleys and two hundred bateaux and boats, deeply laden with cannon, tents, provisions, invalids and women. We were accompanied by a guard of 600 men, commanded by Col. Long, of New Hampshire.

“The night was moonlight and pleasant, the sun burst forth in the morning with uncommon lustre, the day was fine, the water's surface serene and unruffled. The shore on each side exhibited a variegated view of huge rocks, caverns and cliffs, and the whole was bounded by a thick impenetrable wilderness. My pen would fail in the attempt to describe a scene so enchantingly sublime. The occasion was peculiarly interesting, and we could but look back with regret and forward with apprehension. We availed ourselves, however, of the means of enlivening our spirits. The drum and fife afforded us a favorite music; among the hospital stores we found many dozen bottles of choice wine, and, breaking off their necks, we cheered our hearts with the nectarous contents.

“At three o'clock in the afternoon we reached our destined post at Skeensboro, being the head of navigation for our galleys. Here we were unsuspecting of danger; but, behold! Burgoyne himself was at our heels. In less than two hours we were struck with surprise and consternation by a discharge of cannon from the enemy's fleet, on our galleys and bateaux lying at the wharf. By uncommon efforts and industry they had broken through the bridge, boom and chain, which cost our people such immense labor, and had



almost overtaken us on the lake, and horribly disastrous indeed would have been our fate. It was not long before it was perceived that a number of their troops and savages had landed, and were rapidly advancing towards our little party. The officers of our guard now attempted to rally the men and form them in battle array: but this was found impossible; every effort proved unavailing; and in the utmost panic they were seen to fly in every direction for personal safety. In this desperate condition I perceived our officers scampering for their baggage; I ran to the bateaux, seized my chest, carried it a short distance, took from it a few articles, and instantly followed in the train of our retreating party. We took the route to Fort Anne, through a narrow defile in the woods, and were so closely pressed by the pursuing enemy that we frequently heard calls from the rear to 'march on, the Indians are at our heels.'

"Having marched all night we reached Fort Anne at five o'clock in the morning, where we found provisions for our refreshment. A small rivulet called Wood creek is navigable for boats from Skeensboro to Fort Anne, by which means some of our invalids and baggage made their escape; but all our cannon, provisions, and the bulk of our baggage, with several invalids fell into the enemy's hands."

While Burgoyne was engaged in these successful operations, St. Clair pursued a forced and disorderly march towards Castleton, which he reached in the following night. The three regiments constituting the rear guard of the Americans, under Warner, Francis and Hale, halted at Hubbardton to reorganize and collect the stragglers who had fallen out on the hurried retreat. They occupied a favorable position and there awaited an expected attack. Frazer was near at hand, having lain on his arms the preceding night, and without waiting for the expected arrival of Reidesel, attacked the American lines with vigor. Frazer had but 850 regulars, while the opposing force numbered about 1,300; but this disparity was soon equalized by the retreat of Hale's regiment.<sup>1</sup> A long and bloody engagement followed, in which victory seemed alternately to belong to either side. Francis fell at the head of his regiment. Warner succeeded in joining Schuyler at Fort Edward. Six miles from this battle-field lay St. Clair with his detachment, the co-operation of which might have turned defeat into victory. That he did not move for that purpose is attributed by his apologists to the fact that his militia refused to march.

The capture of Ticonderoga caused deep consternation and regret throughout the colonies and general rejoicing in England. It had been looked upon as an impregnable stronghold, and to see it fall without a battle, filled the Americans with despondency and gloom. Charges of baseness and treachery were

---

<sup>1</sup> Hale's regiment was largely composed of sick and convalescent soldiers and after a sharp skirmish, continued to retreat to Castleton; but he was intercepted by a British detachment and himself and nearly his whole regiment captured. Hale has been charged with misconduct on this occasion, but the testimony of those who were present in the engagement and of other patient investigators is to the effect that his action was justified by the circumstances by which he was surrounded.

freely indulged in towards St. Clair and Schuyler, and the latter was again superseded. Even the serene mind and cool judgment of Washington was disturbed.<sup>1</sup> The truth is, the actual force and condition of St. Clair's army had been over-estimated, both by army officers at a distance and the general public.

Burgoyne's advance was temporarily checked at Fort Anne by Colonel Long, but the latter was forced to retreat; setting fire to the fort, he fled to Fort Edward. Here was General Schuyler, his provisions nearly exhausted and with little ammunition. Being in no condition to offer effective resistance, the whole force was compelled to fall back to Albany. It was in this crisis that the soul of Washington arose to that height of hopefulness, patience and calm strength so seldom reached. Said he in a letter to Schuyler: "This stroke is severe indeed, and has distressed us much. But, notwithstanding things at present have a dark and gloomy aspect, I hope a spirited opposition will check the progress of General Burgoyne's army, and that the confidence derived from his success will hurry him into measures that will, in their consequences, be favorable to us. We should never despair. Our situation has before been unpromising, and has changed for the better; so, I trust, it will again."

Contemporaneously with Burgoyne's operations thus far described was Colonel Barry St. Leger's march from Montreal to Oswego, to form a junction with the Indians and Tories collected under Johnson and Brant, whence they hoped to penetrate to the Mohawk River by way of Oneida lake, and Wood creek, with the ultimate view of joining Burgoyne at Albany. To the office of general history must be resigned the details of this unsuccessful campaign, the failure of which formed a part of the general calamity that was to overtake Burgoyne.

Gates was now again at the head of the northern military department. General Stark was at Bennington with a part of a brigade. At this point the Americans had collected a large quantity of stores which Burgoyne, finding himself short of provisions, determined to capture and at the same time secure loyalist volunteers. An expedition was fitted out for this purpose, under command of Colonel Baume, about the middle of August. On the 14th they approached the American position and entrenched. Stark had collected a large number of fugitives from the Hubbardton disaster and Warner joined him on the 15th. The next day Stark made a brilliant attack on the British and the ensuing battle of Bennington ended with a loss of less than 100 Americans, while the Hessians lost in killed, wounded and prisoners nearly 1,000.

---

<sup>1</sup> The evacuation of Ticonderoga and Mount Independence is an event of chagrin and surprise, not apprehended nor within the compass of my reasoning. I know not upon what principle it was founded, and I should suppose it still more difficult to be accounted for, if the garrison amounted to 5,000 men, in high spirits, healthy, well supplied with provisions and ammunition, and the eastern militia marching to their succor, as you mentioned in your letter of the 9th to the council of safety of New York. — *Washington to General Schuyler, July 15th, 1777.*



Meanwhile Burgoyne's progress was slow, harassed as he was by the desolation Schuyler had wisely left in his way and continued attacks by the Americans. Gates formed a fortified camp on Bemis's Heights, on the Hudson, where he was attacked by Burgoyne, September 19th. The battle was undecided, the British retiring to their camp on Saratoga heights (now Schuylerville), to await the hoped for approach of Sir Henry Clinton from the south. The latter captured the fortifications on the Hudson Highlands and burned Kingston. Burgoyne now again attacked Gates at Bemis's Heights, but was defeated and again retired to his camp. Here, harassed by defeat on all sides, his supplies failing and finding it impossible to move forward and equally impossible to make a successful retreat, he surrendered his entire army on the 17th of October. At the opening of the campaign Burgoyne's army numbered 9,213 men. When he laid down his arms, his Indians having already abandoned him, he surrendered 5,752.<sup>1</sup>

While Burgoyne was proceeding southward, as detailed, Lincoln was engaged in collecting a force of 4,000 militia at Manchester, Vt., by which the flank of the British army was seriously menaced. A portion of this force was then detailed for an important movement which was intended should sever Burgoyne's communications and possibly seize Ticonderoga. Colonel Johnson, with a party of about 500 men, was detached and sent against Skeenesborough and Fort Edward, and with the special object of covering the retreat of the other detachments. One of these was commanded by Brown (about the same strength as the first-named), and was ordered to proceed to the landing on Lake George and rescue the prisoners held there, which accomplished he was to act upon his best judgment. Crossing Lake Champlain at the narrows above Ticonderoga, his band marched all night, kept together by signals imitating the hooting of owls, and after severe toil among the rugged fastnesses of the mountains that separate the two lakes for a distance of fourteen miles, he fell upon the enemy by a complete surprise just as day was breaking. Three hundred British troops were captured without resistance, with the works on Mount Hope and at the landing 200 bateaux, an armed sloop and a number of gunboats stationed here to protect the landing. One hundred American prisoners were liberated, which was the primary object of the expedition. Captain Ebenezer Allen was detached by Brown with a small force to assail the works on Mount Defiance. The precipitous acclivity was scaled and the battery captured without firing a gun. Early the following morning Colonel Johnson joined Brown before Ticonderoga. These united forces invested the fortress and called on the commander, General Powell, to surrender. A defiant reply was returned

---

<sup>1</sup> "It was, perhaps, no fault of General Gates, that he had been placed in command at the north just at the auspicious moment (August 1st, joining the army the 19th) when the discomfiture of Burgoyne was no longer problematical. He was ordered by Congress to the station, and performed his duty well. But it is no less true that the laurels won by him ought to have been harvested by Schuyler."

and after cannonading the works for four days, the attack was abandoned, the walls being impregnable to the small guns in possession of the Americans. At the landing Brown embarked a body of troops in the captured boats and ascended Lake George, with the design of seizing Diamond island, where Burgoyne had deposited a quantity of stores.

When the tidings of Burgoyne's surrender reached Ticonderoga, the small garrison dismantled and evacuated the works and started upon a stealthy flight down the lake ; but they were not permitted to escape unscathed, for Allen intercepted them near the site of the village of Essex, cut off and captured several of the rear boats and seized about fifty prisoners, with stores, cattle, etc.

In their operations in the vicinity of Lake Champlain Carleton and Burgoyne had spared the property of the colony on the Boquet, now deserted by its former inhabitants. But even the buildings that had been left by Arnold in his rapacity and anger with Gilliland, became food for the flame ruthlessly kindled by refugee Tories, fleeing British and their savage allies. It is the generally accepted tradition that not a structure was left by these marauders between the Boquet and Split Rock.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### TO THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

Brief Review of the Events of 1778-79 — Their Bearing upon the General Contest — Sir John Johnson's Voyage up Lake Champlain — Its Professed Object — Cruel and Bloody Slaughter in the Mohawk Valley — A Slave's Faithfulness — The Prisoners Captured — Plans for Escape from Chambly — Jacob and Frederick Sammons — Thrilling Escape of Jacob — His Journey through the Wilderness — An Unsympathetic Settler — Kindness of his Wife to the Fugitives — Raw Fish for His Food — Bitten by a Rattlesnake and the Heroic Treatment — Giving up to Die — A Hopeful Premonition — Safe at Last — Approach of the End — Carleton's Expedition up Lake Champlain — Exemption of Vermont from Devastation — Alleged Negotiations with the Enemy — An Armistice — A Separate Colony under the Crown — Sudden Termination of Negotiations by the Surrender of Cornwallis — Peace.

THE subsequent events of the Revolutionary struggle bore not so directly upon the history of Lake Champlain and its environs, as those which have been briefly detailed. The year 1777 had been fruitful in military events of a minor character, which are beyond the province of this work, yet all influencing to some degree the fortunes of the great contest. Among these were the battle of Brandywine, fought in September, ending in at least partial defeat to the Americans ; the massacre at Paoli ; the battle of Germantown, October 4th, claimed as an American victory ; the effort of Congress to secure the neutrality,



at least, of the Six Nations, December 3d, an effort which was once more repeated only to fail on both occasions. But the discouraging character of most of these operations was happily overshadowed by the successes of the north, as already described.

The opening of 1778 was signalized by a treaty of alliance with France, which was the source of renewed confidence throughout the colonies; but though the year was, like the preceding one, filled with stirring events, nearly all of them occurred far beyond the province of this work to record; the historic invasion and massacre at Wyoming; the battle of Monmouth, at first disastrous to the Americans, but saved to them by the genius of Washington; the destruction of the settlement at German Flats, and the bloody massacre at Cherry Valley, were among the more prominent events of the year, which closed without important or decisive advantage to either army. In November of this year a large British force, and several armed British vessels advanced to Ticonderoga and completed the devastation that had been begun on both sides of the lake — a course that was, perhaps, justified by the rules of warfare, but one that worked little good to the English cause, while it needlessly caused much private suffering.

The year 1779 witnessed the attempt of the British to secure the alliance of the neutral Oneidas, an attempt that did not succeed. It also saw the remarkable expedition of Sullivan and Clinton into the heart of the domain of the Six Nations and the destruction of many of their most important villages; but the general progress of the war was marked with but few signal actions; it was rather a continuation of the predatory warfare that had already distinguished much of the career of the British arms. The struggle had now been continued for five years, but the settlers of New York State were destined to still further suffering.

In the spring of 1780 Sir John Johnson came up Lake Champlain to Crown Point, at the head of a force of five hundred men, composed of British troops, a detachment of his own Royal Greens, and about two hundred Indians and Tories. From Crown Point he made his way through the forest to the Sacandaga river, and at midnight entered the north part of Johnstown so stealthily that the sleeping inhabitants were entirely unaware of his proximity. He divided his force into two bodies that they might cover more territory, and then ensued a catalogue of barbarous atrocity almost too cold blooded and ruthless to live in history. Families of men, women and children were brutally slaughtered, their dwellings burned and their property destroyed. Incidents almost without number occurred, the recital of which has brought the blush of anger to the cheek of honorable manhood and filled the childish breast with horror for a century. The Mohawk Valley was devastated in the track of the barbarous horde. The immediate object of this cowardly invasion was the recovery of some valuable plate which had been buried at the time of Johnson's

flight in 1776. Since that time it had been faithfully watched over by a former slave of Johnson's, who, with the aid of four soldiers, disinterred the silver and laid it at his former master's feet. It was divided among forty soldiers for transportation to Montreal. Common humanity will find it difficult to find, in the quest of this property, justification for the inhuman accompaniments of the expedition. At the time of this invasion Governor Clinton was at Kingston. He hastened to Albany when the first intelligence reached him, collected such militia as he could and marched to Lake George to intercept Johnson. Colonel Van Schaick, with seven hundred men, followed the invaders by way of Johnstown, in the event of their going in the direction of Oswegatchie. Descending Lake George to Ticonderoga, the governor was joined by a body of militia from beyond the lake; but it was all to no purpose and Johnson escaped with his horde, taking to his bateaux, probably at Crown Point, whence they proceeded down the lake to St. Johns. Their captives, among whom were Jacob and Frederick Sammons, were thence transferred to the fort at Chamblly. These two, of the forty prisoners taken, resolved to escape, and the thrilling story of the attempt is of such interest and so nearly relates to Lake Champlain, that we quote it as given in Stone's *Life of Brant*:—

“ On the day after their arrival Jacob Sammons, having taken an accurate survey of the garrison and the facilities of escape, conceived the project of inducing his fellow-prisoners to rise upon the guards and obtain their freedom. The garrison was weak in number and the sentinels less vigilant than is usual among good soldiers. The prison doors were opened once a day, when the prisoners were visited by the proper officer with four or five soldiers. Sammons had observed where the arms of the guards were stacked in the yard, and his plan was that some of the prisoners should arrest and disarm the visiting guard on the opening of their door, while the residue were to rush forth, seize the arms, and fight their way out. The proposition was acceded to by his brother Frederick, and one other man named Van Sluyck, but was considered too daring by the great body of the prisoners to be undertaken. It was therefore abandoned, and the brothers sought afterwards only for a chance of escaping by themselves. Within three days the desired opportunity occurred, *viz.*, on the 13th of June. The prisoners were supplied with an allowance of spruce beer, for which two of their number were detached daily to bring the cask from the brew-house, under a guard of five men with fixed bayonets. Having reason to suppose that the arms of the guards, though charged were not primed, the brothers so contrived matters as to be taken together to the brewery on the day mentioned, with an understanding that at a given point they were to dart from the guide and run for their lives, believing that the confusion of the moment and the subsequent delay of priming their muskets by the guards, would enable them to escape beyond the ordinary range of musket shot. The project was boldly executed. At the concerted moment the soldiers sprang



from their conductors and stretched across the plain with great fleetness. The alarm was given and the whole garrison was soon after them in hot pursuit. Unfortunately for Jacob he fell into a ditch and sprained his ankle. Perceiving the accident, Frederick turned to his assistance; but the other generously admonished him to secure his own flight if possible, and leave him to the chances of war. Recovering from his fall, and regardless of the accident, Jacob sprang forward again with as much expedition as possible, but finding that his lameness impeded his progress, he plunged into a thick clump of shrubs and trees, and was fortunate enough to hide himself between two logs before the pursuers came up. Twenty or thirty shots had previously been fired upon them, but without effect. In consequence of the smoke of their fire, probably, the guards had not observed Jacob when he threw himself into the thicket, and supposing that, like his brother, he had passed around it, they followed on, until they were fairly distanced by Frederick, of whom they lost sight and trace. They returned in about half an hour, halting by the bushes in which the other fugitive was sheltered, and so near that he could distinctly hear their conversation. The officer in command was Captain Steele. On calling his men together, some were swearing, and others laughing at the race, and the speed of the 'long-legged Dutchmen,' as they called the flying prisoners. The pursuit being abandoned, the guards returned to the fort.

"The brothers had agreed in case of separation, to meet at a certain spot at 10 o'clock that night. Of course Jacob lay ensconced in the bushes until night had dropped her sable curtains, and until he supposed the hour had arrived, when he sallied forth, according to the antecedent understanding. But time did not move as rapidly on that evening as he supposed. He waited upon the spot designated, and called aloud for Frederick, until he despaired of meeting him, and prudence forbade his remaining any longer. It subsequently appeared that he was too early on the ground, and that Frederick made good his appointment.

"Following the bank of the Sorel, Jacob passed Fort St. Johns soon after day-break on the morning of the 14th. His purpose was to swim the river at that place, and pursue his course homeward through the wilderness on the eastern shore of Lake Champlain; but just as he was preparing to enter the water, he descried a boat approaching from below, filled with officers and soldiers of the enemy. They were already within twenty rods. Concealing himself again in the woods, he resumed his journey after their departure, but had not proceeded more than two or three miles before he came upon a party of several hundred men engaged in getting out timber for the public works at the fort. To avoid these he was obliged to describe a wide circuit, in the course of which, at about 12 o'clock, he came to a small clearing. Within the enclosure was a house, and in the field were a man and boy engaged in hoeing potatoes. They were at that moment called to dinner, and supposing them to be

French, who he had heard were rather friendly to the American cause than otherwise — incited, also, by hunger and fatigue — he made bold to present himself, trusting that he might be invited to partake of their hospitality. But, instead of a friend, he found an enemy. On making known his character, he was roughly received.

“ ‘It is by such villains as you are,’ replied the forester ‘that I was obliged to fly from Lake Champlain.’ The rebels, he added, had robbed him of all he possessed, and he would now deliver his self-invited guest to the guard, which, he said, was not more than a quarter of a mile distant. Sammons promptly answered him that ‘that was more than he could do.’ The refugee then said he would go for the guard himself; to which Sammons replied that he might act as he pleased, but that all the men in Canada should not make him again a prisoner.

“The man thereupon returned to the potato field, and resumed his work; while his more compassionate wife gave Sammons a bowl of bread and milk, which he ate sitting on the threshold of the door, to guard against surprise. While in the house he saw a musket, powder-horn and bullet-pouch hanging against the wall, of which he determined, if possible, to possess himself, that he might be able to procure food during the long and solitary march before him. On retiring, therefore, he traveled only far enough into the woods for concealment — returning to the woodman’s house in the evening for the purpose of obtaining the musket and ammunition. But he was again beset by imminent peril. Very soon after he entered the house the sound of approaching voices was heard, and he took to the rude chamber for security, where he lay flat upon the irregular floor, and looking through the interstices saw eleven soldiers enter, who, it soon appeared, came for milk. His situation was now exceedingly critical. The churlish proprietor might inform against him, or in a single movement betray him. But neither circumstance occurred. The unwelcome visitors departed in due time and the family all retired to bed, except the wife, who, as Jacob descended from the chamber, refreshed him with another bowl of bread and milk. The good woman earnestly entreated her guest to surrender himself and join the ranks of the king, assuring him that His Majesty must certainly conquer in the end, in which case the rebels would lose all their property, and many of them be hanged into the bargain. But to such a proposition he of course would not listen. Finding all her efforts to convert a Whig into a Tory fruitless, she then told him that if he would secrete himself two days longer in the woods she would furnish him with some provisions, for a supply of which her husband was going to the fort the next day, and she would likewise endeavor to provide him with a pair of shoes.

“Disinclined to linger so long in the country of the enemy, and in the neighborhood of a British post, however, he took his departure forthwith. But such had been the kindness of the good woman, that he had it not in his



heart to seize upon her husband's arms, and he left this wild scene of rustic hospitality without supplies, or the means of procuring them. Arriving once more at the water's edge, at the lower end of Lake Champlain, he came upon a hut, within which, on cautiously approaching it for reconnaissance, he discovered a party of soldiers all soundly asleep. Their canoe was moored by the shore, into which he sprang, and paddled himself up the lake under the most encouraging prospect of a speedy and comparatively easy voyage to its head, whence his return home would be unattended with either difficulty or danger. But his pleasing anticipations were extinguished on the night following, as he approached the Isle aux Noix, where he descried a fortification, and the glitter of bayonets bristling in the air as the moon-beams played upon the burnished arms of the sentinels, who were pacing their tedious rounds. The lake being very narrow at this point, and perceiving that both sides were fortified, he thought the attempt to shoot his canoe through between them rather too hazardous an experiment. His only course, therefore, was to run ashore and resume his travels on foot. Nor, on landing, was his case in any respect enviable. Without shoes, without food, and without the means of obtaining either—a long journey before him through a deep and trackless wilderness—it may well be imagined that his mind was not cheered by the most agreeable anticipations. But without pausing to indulge unnecessarily his 'thick-coming fancies,' he commenced his solitary journey, directing his course along the eastern lake shore toward Albany. During the first four days of his progress he subsisted entirely upon the bark of the birch—chewing the twigs as he went. On the fourth day, while resting by a brook, he heard a rippling of the water caused by the fish as they were stemming its current. He succeeded in catching a few of these, but having no means of striking a fire, after devouring one of them raw, the others were thrown away.

"His feet were by this time cruelly cut, bruised and torn by thorns, briars and stones; and while he could scarcely proceed by reason of their soreness, hunger and fatigue united to retard his cheerless march. On the fifth day his miseries were augmented by the hungry swarms of mosquitoes, which settled upon him in clouds while traversing a swamp. On the same day he fell upon the nest of a black duck—the duck sitting quietly upon her eggs until he came up and caught her. The bird was no sooner deprived of her life and her feathers than he devoured the whole, including the head and feet. The eggs were nine in number, which Sammons took with him; but on opening one he found a little half-made duckling, already alive. Against such food his stomach revolted, and he was obliged to throw the eggs away.

"On the tenth day he came to a small lake. His feet were now in such a horrible state that he could scarcely crawl along. Finding a mitigation of pain by bathing them in water he plunged his feet into the lake, and lay down upon its margin. For a time it seemed as though he could never rise upon his feet

again. Worn down by hunger and fatigue — bruised in body and wounded in spirit — in a lone wilderness, with no eye to pity, and no human arm to protect — he felt as though he must remain in that spot until it should please God in his goodness to quench the dim spark of life that remained. Still, he was comforted in some measure by the thought that he was in the hands of a being without whose knowledge not a sparrow falls to the ground.

“Refreshed, at length, though to a trifling degree, he resumed his weary way, when, on raising his right leg over the trunk of a fallen tree, he was bitten in the calf by a rattlesnake. Quick as a flash, with his pocket-knife, he made an incision in his leg, removing the wounded flesh to a greater depth than the fangs of the serpent had penetrated. His next business was to kill the venomous reptile and dress it for eating; thus appropriating the enemy that had sought to take his life to its prolongation. His first meal was made from the heart and fat of the serpent. Feeling somewhat strengthened by the repast, and finding, moreover, that he could not travel further in his present condition, he determined to remain where he was for a few days, and by repose and feeding upon the body of the snake recruit his strength. Discovering, also, a dry fungus upon the trunk of a maple he succeeded in striking a fire, by which his comforts were essentially increased. Still he was obliged to creep upon his hands and knees to gather fuel, and on the third day he was yet in such a state of exhaustion as to be utterly unable to proceed. Supposing that death was inevitable and very near, he crawled to the foot of a tree, upon the bark of which he commenced inscribing his name — in the expectation that he should leave his bones there, and in the hope that, in some way, by the aid of the inscription, his family might ultimately be apprised of his fate. While engaged in this sad work, a cloud of painful thoughts crowded upon his mind; the tears involuntarily stole down his cheeks, and before he had completed the melancholy task, he fell asleep.

“On the fourth day of his residence at this place, he began to gain strength, and as a part of the serpent yet remained, he determined upon another effort to resume his journey. But he could not do so without devising some substitute for shoes. For this purpose he cut up his hat and waistcoat, binding them upon his feet — and thus he hobbled along. On the following night, while lying in the woods, he became strongly impressed with the belief that he was not far distant from a human habitation. He had seen no indications of proximity to the abode of man; but he was, nevertheless, so confident of the fact, that he wept for joy. Buoyed up and strengthened by this impression, he resumed his journey on the following morning; and in the afternoon, it being the 28th of June, he reached a house in the town of Pittsford, in the New Hampshire grants — now forming the State of Vermont. He remained there for several days, both to recruit his health, and if possible, to gain intelligence of his brother. But no tidings came; and, as he knew Frederick to be a capital



woodsman, he of course concluded that sickness, death or re-capture, must have interrupted his journey. Procuring a conveyance at Pittsford, Jacob traveled to Albany, and thence to Schenectady, where he had the happiness of finding his wife and family."

The adventures of the brother were scarcely less thrilling, but this one must suffice as an example of many similar ones happening on the frontier.

The devastation and bloodshed that had thus far marked the track of warfare upon Lake Champlain and its shores was approaching cessation. In the autumn of the year under consideration (1780) and simultaneously with the movements of Sir John Johnson in the Schoharie and Mohawk country, the enemy was actively engaged against the settlements north of Albany, between the Hudson and Lake Champlain, and also on the upper Connecticut river. In order to create a diversion in favor of Sir John, Major Carleton came up the lake with a fleet of eight large vessels and twenty-six flat boats, with upwards of a thousand men. The invasion was secretly conducted and reached Forts Anne and George undiscovered. Both of these posts were captured, with about a hundred and twenty prisoners. Stories of terrible cruelty were told against Carleton's troops; but they were positively denied by that officer.<sup>1</sup> It is certain, however, that destruction and devastation followed the invaders as far as the country offered anything to their hands, except on the eastern shores of the lake. The peculiar exemption of the territory of Vermont on this and subsequent occasions, attracted attention and leads us to the consideration of the equivocal position of that territory during parts of the years 1780-81. We have already reviewed the troubles growing out of the New Hampshire grants. The people of these grants had formally declared their independence in 1777, and under the name of "Vermont" had assumed to themselves the attitude and prerogatives of a sovereign state; they were filled with bitter hostility towards New York, growing out of the firm conviction that her claims were unjust and that Vermont had endured great wrong. In a message from Governor Clinton to the New York Legislature (1780), he communicated important information respecting the designs of the Vermont people, foremost among whom was Ethan Allen; this information was derived from two prisoners who had escaped from Canada. The substance of their statements was that several of the leading men of the grants were forming an alliance with the British officers in Canada; that mutual consultations had been held at Castleton and in Canada; that the grants were to furnish 1,500 or 2,000 men under command of Allen, etc. Color was given to these state-

---

<sup>1</sup> In reference to Carleton's expedition, Sir Frederick Haldimand wrote to Lord George Germain as follows: "The reports assiduously published on all occasions by the enemy, of cruelties committed by the Indians, are notoriously false, and propagated merely to exasperate the ignorant and deluded people. In this late instance, Major Carleton informs me, they behaved with the greatest moderation, and did not strip, or in any respect ill use, their prisoners." This may have been true, but it need not be added that such had not been the case on all occasions.

ments by the fact that the two prisoners had not been together in Canada and had escaped by different routes. By later information the governor learned further details of the purposes of the disaffected people. By this information it appeared that the territory claimed by the inhabitants of Vermont was to be formed into a distinct colony; that the government thereof should be similar to that of Connecticut, except that the nomination of the governor should be vested in the crown; that they should be allowed to remain neutral, unless the war should be carried into their own territory; that they should raise two battalions to be in the pay of the crown, but not to be called to service except in defending the colony; and that they should enjoy free trade with Canada. General Haldimand was in command at Ticonderoga, and would not assume the responsibility of deciding such important issues, but transmitted them to England.

Such was the purport of Governor Clinton's information, and so powerful was the weight of testimony that he did not hesitate to assert that they "proved a treasonable and dangerous intercourse and connection between the leaders of the revolt in the northeastern part of the State, and the common enemy." Aware of the feeling in Vermont, Colonel Beverly Johnson wrote Ethan Allen in March, 1780, the letter being personally delivered by a British soldier in disguise; this letter was not answered and a second was sent in February, 1781, which, with the first, was enclosed to Congress by Allen in the following month, accompanied by a letter from himself, in which he plainly claimed the right of Vermont to agree to a cessation of hostilities with Great Britain, provided its claims, as a State, were still rejected by Congress. In April and May following the governor of Vermont commissioned Ira Allen, a brother of Ethan, to proceed to the Isle aux Noix to settle a cartel with the British in Canada, and also, if possible, to negotiate an armistice in favor of Vermont; only eight persons were admitted to the secret design of this expedition. Allen, with a small party, made the journey and remained for a considerable time in consultation with the British officers, and many confidential consultations were held. From the beginning it seems to have been perfectly understood by both parties that they were treating "for an armistice, and to concert measures to establish Vermont as a colony under the crown of Great Britain."<sup>1</sup> Allen stated that "the people of Vermont were not disposed any longer to assist in establishing a government in America which might subject them and their posterity to New York, whose government was more detested than any other in the known world." This sentiment was gratifying to the British officers and the cartel was arranged and a verbal armistice established to continue until after the next session of the Vermont legislature, or longer if the prospects warranted it to the commander-in-chief in Canada. As Vermont had then extended her unjust claim over the territory of New York to the Hudson

---

<sup>1</sup> *Political History of Vermont*, published by Ira Allen in London, 1798.



river, that also was included in the terms of the armistice. During the continuance of the armistice the British officers were to have free communication through the State, while the inhabitants were to be gradually prepared for the change of government.<sup>1</sup>

But the suspicions of the people were aroused and the earnest Whigs became alarmed. When the legislature met, the apprehensive ones gathered in large numbers to learn of the situation; but the adroit dissimulations of those in the secret quieted the suspicions of their neighbors, and "the Allen's and their co-operators held communication with the enemy during the entire summer."<sup>2</sup> In September negotiations were renewed, the representatives of both parties meeting at Skeenesborough. But Sir Frederick Haldimand became impatient and efforts were made to induce Vermont to make an open declaration; but the Vermont commissioners pleaded for more time in which to prepare the public mind for the change, and asked that the matter might go over the winter. It was, however, stipulated that a British force might ascend the lake with proclamations offering to confirm Vermont as a British colony, if the people would return to their allegiance. The legislature of the grants assembled at Charlestown in October. General St. Leger in consonance with the arrangement alluded to, ascended the lake to Ticonderoga with a strong force. To continue an appearance of hostility to this movement, the Vermont people posted a military force on the opposite shore, under General Enos, to whom the secret was confided. Scouts and patrols were sent out in alleged mimicry of hostile operations, but with no real intention of offering injury to each other. On one of these occasions, however, shots were exchanged and a Vermont sergeant was killed. His men retreated. St. Leger saw that the body was properly buried and returned the uniform to General Enos, accompanied by a letter of apology and regret. This letter was unsealed and its contents became known. General suspicion was again aroused and a messenger was dispatched to Governor Chittenden at Charlestown; he, unsuspecting of the true situation, proclaimed the incident of the killing of the sergeant and St. Leger's remarkable letter. The consequence was general excitement and distrust at Charlestown. Major Runnels confronted Ira Allen and demanded to know why St. Leger was filled with regret for the death of the American sergeant. An evasive reply was returned. An altercation ensued, which gave the now alarmed board of war time to prepare a document embodying certain portions of General Enos's dispatches which would best serve their purpose, to be read to the legislature and the people. This action had the desired effect and the excitement was allayed.

Meanwhile the progress of the great contest in other parts of the country led up to the latest scenes and the news of the surrender of the great army of

---

<sup>1</sup> ALLEN'S *Political History of Vermont*.

<sup>2</sup> STONE'S *Life of Brant*.

Cornwallis, which virtually closed the war, reached the North. The effect of the first intelligence upon the people was such as to induce Allen and his co-operators to write the British commissioners that it would be imprudent to promulgate the royal proclamation at that particular time, and urging delay. The bearer of this dispatch had not been an hour at the headquarters of St. Leger in Ticonderoga, when an express confirmed the intelligence of the surrender of Cornwallis on the 19th of October. The effect was electric. All idea of further operations in that quarter hostile to the American cause were instantly abandoned. Before evening of the same day St. Leger's troops and stores were re-embarked and before a fair wind he sailed for St. Johns. Ticonderoga and the lake were now at peace.<sup>1</sup>

Whatever may be the reader's judgment upon this case, the early patriotism of the men connected with it can never be doubted nor the value of their services diminished. If they hoped to escape domestic tyranny, or what they considered such, even by equivocal action, it is equally true that they hated foreign tyranny and promptly came forward to aid in putting it down; and whatever may have been the designs of the leaders, the masses of the people of Vermont amply vindicated their loyalty to their country through all the afflicting scenes and events of the Revolution.

During the early months of 1782 Sir Frederick Haldimand made efforts towards a renewal of the negotiations which had been so suddenly terminated; but his advances were received with the utmost coolness by the people of Vermont. The intervention of peace relieved this region from all danger of further British invasion, but hostile feeling prevailed in the disputed territory until the final adjustment of the claim of New York in 1790 and the establishment of the boundaries.

With the close of the war the Iroquois Indians, dreading the possible vengeance of the whites, took refuge in Canada, with the exception of the Oneidas and Tuscaroras. Their lands, with the exception of certain reservations, passed to the possession of the State.

---

<sup>1</sup> This version of these remarkable events is based upon the testimony of Ira Allen, as before noted, and is the one adopted by many able writers. On the other hand, historians of equal ability and judgment, take the high ground that all the apparently disloyal movements described were actuated for the sole purpose of deceiving the enemy and thus escaping the destructive effects of war upon their own soil; that the people of Vermont never entertained the idea of returning to the allegiance of Great Britain. Stone says in a foot-note in his *Life of Brant*: "Sparks, adopting the views of early writers, has noticed the case in this favorable aspect in his sketch of the life of Ethan Allen. The author certainly agrees with Mr. Sparks in the opinion that 'there was never any serious intention on the part of the Vermontese to listen to British proposals.' But with great deference, after a full examination of the case, the same cannot be said of the *leaders* of the Vermontese. They had determined that New York should be dismembered; and if they could not force themselves into the confederation as a State, they were willing to fall back into the arms of Great Britain as a colony."



## CHAPTER XVI.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Persecution of William Gilliland — Petition to the Albany Committee — His Subsequent Career — Hopefulness in Spite of Ill-Fortune — Loss of His Estates — Imprisoned in New York — Sickness and Mental Depression — Appeal to Creditors — The Melancholy End — Occupation and Settlement of the Champlain Valley — Division of Washington County — Internal Improvements — Ferries, Roads and Bridges Built — Early Settlements in Various Localities — The First County Seat — Organization and Boundaries of Essex County — Inauguration of Courts — First County Officers — Early Roads, Mills, etc. — First Iron Industry — Early Schools and Churches — The Pioneer's Early Work — A Picturesque Account of the Settler's Life — Early Industries — Formation of New Towns.

WE have in preceding pages given copious extracts from the journal of William Gilliland, the pioneer of Essex county and the founder of the colony on the Boquet river in the present town of Willsborough. The utter devastation of the structures and other improvements of the colony, which Arnold and Burgoyne had spared, by refugee Tories and British soldiers, in 1777-78, has also been noted, with the ungrateful arrest of Gilliland on flimsy charges of treason. Let us now briefly describe the succeeding events in his career, which led to the melancholy end. At the beginning of the year 1778 Gilliland was a prisoner at Fort Albany, whence he addressed a petition to the committee of that city, dated January 15th of that year, stating the circumstances of his arrest and bitterly complaining of "the unprecedented severity of confining my person, thereby depriving me of the choicest and most valuable of privileges, my liberty, for only purchasing a free article introduced to me as part of the spoils of Burgoyne's army [this was his second arrest] picked up after the battle of the 7th of October, \* \* \* when it's not thought any crime for Major Stippens to enter my house with an armed force, and carry away and detain from me my property to a considerable amount without even proving or attempting to prove his having any right to or interest in the same." He also complains of General Gates for divesting him of his remaining slaves by offering them encouragement to desert his service, and adds, "by the losses I have sustained, and by the robbery of my cellar a few nights ago, of upwards of four hundred pounds value of liquor, sugar, etc., out of the little I have saved and brought from home with me, I am poorer by near a thousand pounds, since my confinement, exclusive of my exposure here (which for very obvious reasons is considerable), and besides the charge of supporting a large and helpless family, in times of the greatest dearth that was ever known or felt in this or any other country." This remarkable petition contains the following paragraph: "You are very sensible, gentlemen, that no laws, divine or human, justify such acts of violence and oppression, as these now practicing upon me! Will you, the guardians of these parts, be tame spectators thereof, without ex-









WILLIAM GILLILAND.





ercising that authority vested in you by the suffrage of a free people to prevent military officers (the more dangerous as they are more exalted in rank) to sap the foundation of our new constitution before it be sufficiently established, and through the persecution of an innocent individual to make the most dangerous attack and innovation upon the sacred rights and inestimable privileges of the people ; of those especially who are your immediate constituents. Where then are the benefits expected from *magna charta*, the bill of rights, the *habeas corpus* act and all other privileges now contending for, and which the subjects of free and independent states claim, and ever ought to enjoy ? Are they to be trampled upon by the military through the timidity of those in civil authority ? No, I trust not, though I dread the consequences of precedents from which evils of the most enormous size, and pernicious tendency, may originate and flow."

The oppressed prisoner called upon the officers to whom he had often shown kindness to come forward and certify in his behalf, and alleged that a number had called on him and were willing to do so, if given an opportunity ; adding, "from a handsome income arising from my tenants, farms, mills, etc., and from the greatest part of my personal property, have I fled ; those have I sacrificed to the fury of the enemy, rather than join with, aid or comfort them ; and have thrown myself, my aged mother, my motherless children into your arms, into the American arms for shelter and protection ; \* \* \* but lo ! behold the reception I have met with, the treatment I have received : instead of alleviating my distress by acts of kindness and beneficence, I am shut up in a prison."

It seems pitiful at this time, as well as unaccountable, that this pioneer, whose memoranda show that as early as the close of the war he had initiated the iron industry in what is now Essex county, and dimly advanced the idea of connecting Lake Champlain and the Hudson by navigable waters, should thus be confined, and such eloquent pleas for release go unheard or, at least, unresponded to. It can only be accounted for upon the ground that in time of war, individual injustice must often be suffered.

During the next three years, to 1780, Gilliland's whereabouts are enveloped in obscurity ; but immediately succeeding the latter date the journal shows numerous applications to him for lands, continuing down to 1784, and embracing 200 names ; this fact shows how the tide of immigration turned to the Champlain valley at the close of the war. It is deemed more than probable that Gilliland was, during this period, absent from the location of his colony. The numerous applications to him for lands, upon which it would seem he possessed the right to set a price comparative with the value of other similar tracts, would undoubtedly have placed him in a position of independence and averted the oncoming disaster, but for the fact that he had not secured the necessary patents for his tracts, embracing, as he says, "upwards of 8,000 acres, to which he is en-



titled by virtue of purchases by him made from officers and soldiers, thereunto entitled by virtue of said proclamation (that of the British king in 1763), amounting in every respect to the most solemn mandamus." This quotation is from a petition, dated Albany, December 30th, 1783, and addressed to the State Legislature, praying for the issuance by that body of the necessary letters patent for those lands. To the petition was attached the names and rank of the officers and soldiers from whom Gilliland had purchased his land. Gilliland returned to find his possessions desolated and overgrown by nature to almost their original wildness, fences and bridges decayed and roads obstructed; but he was still hopeful. He felt that he was the rightful possessor of the patent at Bessborough, the large estate at Cumberland Head, a broad tract in the present towns of Beekmantown and Chazy, Clinton county, the Isle la Motte, besides the vast estate of the Boquet. And now the opportunity seemed to have arrived when he could build up his shattered fortunes by transferring lands to others for valuable consideration. He was destined to disappointment. Through the efforts of designing and interested persons consolidated into a powerful company, his estates were seized and patents for them obtained from the State, which, in deciding between the claimants, gave judgment against Gilliland's title, thus wresting from him at one fell swoop the most valuable part of his possessions. He thereupon invested the remainder of his means and energies in a futile attempt to revive a traffic in lumber, staves, etc., etc., which he had established with Canada before the Revolution; the enterprise was confided to a faithless agent and the principal was defrauded of the entire proceeds.

We have already mentioned the charge that Gilliland brought of the attempts to incite the slaves to desertion, attempts which must have finally succeeded. It was the opinion of Mr. Watson that Gilliland laid himself liable in some manner to the law in Massachusetts, in connection with efforts to recover his slaves. In his journal he mentions "a fine" and a private judgment "in the negro business." This judgment appears in the name of Hopkins & Ingersoll, of Great Barrington, Mass. Gilliland was imprisoned in New York on this and perhaps other judgments. Following is a certificate showing the particulars of the matter: "I, Jonathan Pearsee, keeper of the gaol in the city and county of New York, do certify, that William Gilliland was committed to the said gaol on the 21st day of February, 1786, and continued in actual confinement until the 3d day of December, 1791, at the suit of Hopkins & Ingersoll.

"Signed, JONATHAN PEARSEE."

The sense of injustice under which Gilliland labored is shown through a letter which he wrote his son in July, 1791. He states that the judgment against him was for 696 pounds, and that Hopkins & Ingersoll had informed him that "a present of 40 or 50 dollars, judiciously divided between Bristol

and Flora, would satisfy all demands against me on that score." On this phase of the situation, he wrote, after being advised by friends to settle with the parties, "I answered him that if it was an advantage to the State of Massachusetts at large, that my slaves should be emancipated, it should be at the charge of the people of that State, and not by the owner of such slaves — as I might thereby be totally ruined to gratify such, their iniquitous wishes: that I had only been 2,300 days here (in the prison) and was determined to remain here several days more, rather than sacrifice my property to my utter ruin, to gratify their caprices." This smacks of his determination to suffer heroic martyrdom, rather than suffer an injustice. In the same letter he places his losses, direct and incidental, from the inception of the Revolutionary war to the year 1791, at 70,000 pounds, New York currency.

"In accordance with some family arrangement, Gilliland, soon after the re-occupation of his property, distributed among his children large portions of his estate in the Champlain valley. Heavy debts, which had accumulated under the paralysis of the times, began to press severely upon him. Money was nearly unattainable. What pecuniary means he had saved were either sunk in the wreck of the lumber speculation, or diverted to their own purposes by those to whom they had been confided. The wheels of business were again in motion, but their movements were still feeble and irregular. No property, least of all landed estates, afforded any revenue. Numerous suits were commenced against him and heavy judgments were impending. Many of these claims, such as that resulting from the slave difficulty, he considered unjust and iniquitous. Under such circumstances he determined, not wisely, I think, to place his property in a position to be protected against the demands he repudiated, and to prevent its sacrifice by creditors who had become inexorable."<sup>1</sup>

Hence Gilliland's confinement on the jail limits of New York city, as stated. Here the persecuted old man soon succumbed to his depressing surroundings and circumstances. He who had spent his days in the most active scenes of outdoor life amid nature's grand scenes, soon withered and sunk under the pressure of confinement, and disease and mental depression followed. His once powerful mind was crushed and weakened by his accumulated troubles and while he should have been in the vigor of ripening manhood, his intellect gave way. No one can read the following proposal which he made to his creditors in 1789, without the most profound pity: —

*"Proposals of Wm. Gilliland to his creditors: —*

"Gentlemen: — You have been pleased to institute suits against me for several sums of money; some of which are justly due, and some not. However, it answers no good purpose for you or me, to keep me in durance here, but quite the reverse, by tying up my hands, and thereby preventing me from collecting money to pay off all my debts, which I am persuaded I could soon

<sup>1</sup> WATSON'S *Pioneer History of the Champlain Valley*.



do, was I at liberty. But I find by woeful and long experience that it is in vain for me to depend on others. I therefore want from you, gentlemen, reasonable time for the payment of what I owe. One year for the one-half, and two years for the payment of the other, for which I will put into the hands of faithful trustees ample security, payable with interest. Some may suppose this time a long one, but you will be pleased to consider the uncommon scarcity of money, the very heavy losses I have had the misfortune to sustain during the late war, and that numbers have tripled the time granted them, who have not suffered any losses compared to mine. On the 7th of January next, I shall have been confined here four long and tedious years, to the very great injury of my health and estate. It is high time I should have it in my power to put a stop to the depredation and waste committed, and daily making on my estate, which will be beneficial to you and greatly so to,

“ Gentlemen,

“ Your most humble servant,

“ WILL. GILLILAND.”

This appeal was addressed to the attorneys of creditors, and seems not to have been effectual.

When liberated, after imprisonment of nearly six years, the pioneer returned to his ruined possessions, as far as they had not been wrested from him. But he was no longer the hardy and indomitable man who had wrought a thriving colony from the wilderness. His partial insanity was evident and he was deemed incompetent to have the charge of his affairs. He went to reside with his son-in-law, Daniel Ross, at Essex. Here he wandered about the scenes of his former successes, pitifully imagining himself still the owner of great estates and as about to enter upon gigantic projects of improvement. Knowing, however, the entire region as no other man did, he was still often sought for counsel in the location of lands and in that capacity became slightly connected with a powerful association for the purchase and location of real estate, of which Platt Rogers was the head in northern New York; in this way he created a small pecuniary interest in their operations. About the 1st of February, 1796, while on his return from a visit to Mr. Rogers at Basin Harbor, traveling on foot amid the snows of winter, he wandered from his path, “ either in an excess of his mental malady, or to examine a lot of wild land in the vicinity, which he had received from the association for services.” His continued absence excited alarm and search was instituted which resulted in the finding of his dead body in the solitudes of the mountains. Before giving up to the sickness or weakness that must have finally overcome him, he had evidently struggled desperately for life, as his hands and knees were worn to the nerves by crawling upon the frozen ground.

Mr. Watson thus vividly pictures the end of Gilliland’s career: “ The career of Gilliland was a romance. Its strange vicissitudes not only invoke our

sympathy and compassion, but are calculated to impart solemn and salutary admonition. The pioneer of the Champlain valley thus piteously perished, in what should have been the ripeness of his years, and the plentitude of his powers and usefulness — for his age was scarcely three score. The former lord of a vast domain, the generous patron and tender father, the dispenser of munificent hospitalities, the associate and counselor of vice-royalty, died far away from human care, of cold and famine, with no voice of love to soothe his sufferings, and no kind hand to close his eyes."

Such was the pathetic end of the remarkable and romantic career of the pioneer of Essex county. It is a story that no person of sensibility can read without feeling deeply for the wrongs of this once possessor of a baronial domain, where his hospitality was almost kingly, his success almost phenomenal and his energy almost superhuman; a domain to which he returned alone to die, while his once strong mind wandered in the dim border lands of insanity.

In the cemetery at Essex village is a stone bearing the following inscription: —

SACRED TO THE MEMORY OF  
WM. GILLILAND, ESQ.,  
WHO DEPARTED THIS LIFE THE 2D FEB., 1796,  
AGED 62 YEARS.  
ERECTED BY W. AND H. ROSS.<sup>1</sup>

With the return of peace a current of emigration set in to the valley of Lake Champlain, the forerunner of a hardy and energetic population. The most valuable lands along the western shore soon attracted attention and as early as 1784 Ticonderoga and Crown Point were settled. George and Alexander Trimble were among the first and most prominent pioneers to this locality. In the same year Amos and David Stafford settled on two lots on Whallon's bay. The detailed progress of these and other settlements is reserved for the subsequent histories of the various towns.

In the year 1788 Washington county was divided and the new county of Clinton organized; it embraced the present counties of Essex, Clinton and the eastern portion of Franklin. The new county was divided into four towns, Champlain, Plattsburgh, Crown Point and Willsborough; these towns were incorporated at the same time the county was formed. Charles Platt was appointed the first judge of Clinton county, and William McAuley, of Willsborough, one of the side judges. Plattsburgh was made the county seat.

Early in the reign of peace the State Legislature began to take action towards making public improvements. One of the first of these movements was an order of 1791 for an exploration and survey to ascertain the most eligible method of removing obstructions from the Mohawk and Hudson rivers, with a view to improve their navigation by the construction of canals. In the following year two companies were incorporated, the Northern and Western

<sup>1</sup> See history town of Essex, herein.



Inland Lock Navigation Companies ; the purpose of the former was to facilitate navigation by connecting Lake Champlain with the Hudson river. This company made some progress and work was actually begun ; but it failed for want of funds and the enterprise was left for later years.

At this time no road had been opened in this county from Willsborough north of the Boquet river, and the traveler in that direction was forced to trust to the guidance of "blazed" trees. The route extended through the forest to the Ausable river, which was crossed on the high bridge about three miles below the site of Keeseville. (See history of Chesterfield.) From that point a wood road led to Plattsburgh, and it is probable that a similar track was the only avenue of intercourse southward from Split Rock to Crown Point. It was seventy miles from Ticonderoga settlement to Plattsburgh, and the pioneers were compelled to travel that distance to get to the courts. In the year 1790 Platt Rogers established a ferry from Basin Harbor and opened a road from his landing to near Split Rock where it connected with the earlier road. He bridged the Boquet in the same season at Willsborough Falls, and opened a road from there to Peru, in the present Clinton county. Rogers was remunerated for these important services with large tracts of lands.

Meanwhile settlement gradually progressed. In 1792 Judge Hatch located in the town of Essex at what is now known as Brookfield, then an almost unbroken wilderness. In 1804 he removed to Northwest Bay, now Westport, eight miles distant ; the removal occupied two days and the labor of four men to open the road. A small improvement had then been commenced at Westport, and a frame house, three log houses, a barn and a saw-mill erected. No road extended south beyond the limits of the town, but a track was opened to Pleasant Valley (Elizabethtown) where a settlement had already been begun. A road also extended to the infant settlements in the present towns of Lewis, Jay and Keene, but it was almost impassable.

In 1792 the Caughnawaga and St. Regis Indians set up a claim to a vast tract of land covering almost the entire territory between the Mohawk and the St. Lawrence rivers. This claim was urged with great persistency for several years, but it was properly resisted on various grounds. The fact was amply established that this territory was originally held exclusively by the Iroquois, who had alienated and sold it to the whites.

The fertile valleys in the present town of Schroon were settled about the year 1797, when Samuel Scribner, Thomas Leland, Moses Patee, Benjamin Banker and Simeon Rawson came in from New England. The most desirable spots in the present towns of Jay, Lewis, Elizabethtown and Keene were occupied previous to 1798. One of the numerous exploring parties that penetrated the wilderness climbed an eminence of the present Elizabethtown from which a view was obtained of the lovely site of Elizabethtown village—a valley worthy the brush of any artist—surrounded by towering moun-

tains and made musical by the waters of both branches of the Boquet, and named it "Pleasant Valley," a title which still clings to it and is thoroughly appropriate.

A block house was erected in the present town of Essex in 1792, for the protection of the inhabitants against an uprising of the Indians, which it was feared might follow the defeat of St. Clair by the savages on the Wabash. This place became the first county seat when Essex county was organized in 1799, and the new block house was used as a court-house and jail. An act of the Legislature passed in April, 1807, designated Elizabethtown as the county seat, and the requisite buildings were soon erected in the "Pleasant valley" for the accommodation of the courts and other country business. (See chapter on public buildings, etc.)

While the block house was used, it was provided by law that the sheriff should have discretionary powers to commit prisoners to the Washington county jail.

The act organizing the county of Essex was passed March 1st, 1799, and gave the boundaries of the new county as follows: "All that part of the county of Clinton lying south of a line beginning at the southwest corner of the town of Peru, and running from thence easterly along the south line of said town until it intersects the great river Ausable; from thence down the river along the north bank until it reaches the forks of the river, and from thence along the north bank of the south branch until it strikes Lake Champlain; from thence due east to the east boundary of the state of New York." This established the surroundings of the county as follows: North by Clinton and Franklin counties; west by Franklin and Hamilton; south by Warren and Washington, and east by Lake Champlain. The county embraced four original towns—Crown Point, formed 1786; Elizabethtown, formed from Crown Point 1798; Willsborough, formed from Crown Point 1788; and Jay, formed from Willsborough 1798. All the other towns of the county have been formed since the organization of the county, as will hereafter appear.

There were ordered held three terms of a Court of Common Pleas and two terms of a Court of General Sessions of the Peace, to commence and end on the days following, to-wit: one term each of the Court of Common Pleas and the Court of General Sessions of the Peace to commence on the second Tuesday in May and to end on the Saturday following. One other term of the said courts to commence on the last Tuesday in September and end on the Saturday following. "*Provided*, that in any of the terms aforesaid the court may adjourn previous to the day assigned, if the business will admit; these courts to be held in the block house in the town of Willsborough for the county."

Until the completion of the census of 1800, the inhabitants of the county gave their votes as if the law of division had not been passed, their votes being delivered to the clerk of the county of Essex or one of the supervisors, who



delivered them without delay to the clerk or one of the supervisors of Clinton county, on the last Tuesday of May of each year. The votes of both counties being canvassed by supervisors from each county.

The first officers of the county were Daniel Ross first judge ; Stephen Cuyler, clerk ; Thomas Stower, sheriff ; William Gilliland, surrogate.

By an act of March, 1803, it was ordered that one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas of the counties of Clinton and Essex, with the supervisors of both counties, or a majority of them, should meet on the 1st of September, of that year, at the house of Isaac Wright, an inn-keeper in the town of Chesterfield, "and there examine and settle the accounts existing at the time of the division of Clinton county." These officials were allowed the sum of \$2 a day for doing this work. The moneys collected in this settlement were ordered paid to the treasurer of the county entitled to receive them before the 15th of April, 1804. Soon after the first Tuesday of the following May the supervisors and overseers of the poor of the county met and apportioned the poor tax for the separate towns.

It will be understood that a large share of the labor of local officials in early days was the laying out and opening of roads ; they were the first necessity of the pioneers ; saw and grist-mills the second. We have already described several of the first highways of the county. A road was authorized early in the century to run from Sandy Hill along the Schroon valley, through Elizabethtown, and Lewis, and crossing the Ausable river at a fording place near Keeseville. This thoroughfare is still known as the old State road. Another prominent early road, though of much later construction than the one just described, was laid out from Westport through Elizabethtown, the valleys of the Keene mountains and the North Elba Plains to Hopkinton, St. Lawrence county ; the commissioners to lay out this road were John Richards, Ezra Thurber and Josiah Sanford. A survey was made by James Frost, who submitted his report to the Legislature in February, 1828. The following sketch of this and other important highways from a correspondent was printed in a local paper in 1879, and is worth preservation here : —

"The road as surveyed started at the lake at Port Kent, crossed the Ausable at Keeseville and continued up the north bank of that river to the Ausable Forks, thence in a northwesterly direction to the St. Regis river. It followed the general course of that river to the turnpike in the town of Hopkinton. The road was 74 miles long. Nineteen miles west of Port Kent it entered the forest and continued through an unbroken wilderness for fifty-two miles. The public lands in that section of the State were estimated at two hundred and eleven thousand acres. In a report to the Assembly the committee say : 'A reference to the map of the State will afford, at one view, in the opinion of the committee, convincing proof of the great public importance of such a communication between the counties bordering on the St. Lawrence river and the

eastern extremity of Lake Ontario, and those situate on Lake Champlain. To the former, it will give relief from the inconveniences of their peculiar situation, by affording them a choice of markets for their agricultural products; thus securing to the State a valuable trade, by diverting it from a neighboring province. The manufacturing districts in the counties of Essex and Clinton will also share largely in its benefits, by having a cheaper and more regular supply of provisions, and by having opened to them resources, inexhaustible, for the supply of wood and coal. It will increase the population, wealth and importance of the State, by inviting the agriculturalist to the occupation of much valuable land, and by increasing, to an indefinite extent, the manufactures of that region. Such a work, for such objects, seems to the committee worthy the spirit of enlightened enterprise which characterizes the State of New York. The present condition and future disposition of the public lands through which the road is to pass, seem to the committee to present considerations of the greatest interest. These lands are, at present, uninhabited and unsalable, not for want of intrinsic value, but because they are, in a manner, inaccessible. On the other hand they doubt not that by the completion of the design, so judiciously commenced, they would soon become peopled by the enterprising and industrious from our own and other States, and that their rapid sale would more than compensate the expense of this important avenue.'

"In 1829 the Legislature appropriated \$25,836 for the construction of the road upon the line surveyed by Mr. Frost, and by the same act, the commissioners were authorized to raise the additional sum of \$12,500 by tax on the land lying within three miles on each side of the road.

"As soon as the construction of the Port Kent and Hopkinton road was decided upon a project was started by the inhabitants of the lower valley of the Saranac river to open a road through the forest from Saranac Hollow to connect with the Hopkinton road at or near the point where it crossed the north branch of the Saranac.

"In April, 1839, the Legislature appropriated \$5,000 for that purpose, to be expended under the direction of John Palmer, George Marsh and Platt Newcomb. Under this act a road was built through the forest from the mouth of the True brook in Saranac, crossing the north branch at the Forks of the river and intersecting the Hopkinton road near Loon lake. This road was completed in 1834.

"The first preliminary exploration of the Saranac road was made by the commissioners soon after their appointment. I accompanied the commissioners, and as it was my first trip in the woods, I retain a distinct recollection of the event, although it was nearly fifty years ago.

"Mr. Palmer and Mr. Marsh left the village at an early hour in the morning, with a lumber wagon filled with provision and camping traps. Mr. Newcomb joined us at his residence in South Plattsburgh, and, after a long and tedious



ride over a very rough, stony and hilly road, we reached the residence of Zeb. Baker at Saranac Hollow (the devil's half acre in No. 4) at early candle light. Baker lived in a large, rambling, unfinished, two story house near the north end of the bridge. That night we slept on the floor and the next morning, having been joined by the rest of the party, among whom I remember Jim Baker, Harry Bartlett, Ira Vaughan and Zar. Gregory, we went as far as the old Barnes saw-mill (on the True brook). This was the end of all appearance of a road. Here the provision and camp equipage were transferred from the wagon to sleds which were dragged by oxen through the woods to the forks of the river. Ira Vaughan (not the chief justice of Redford) acted as guide.

"We reached the forks that afternoon and encamped on the west bank of a small brook. The next morning Judge Palmer, Mr. Marsh and Vaughan started for Alder brook through the woods on the south side of the north branch, while Mr. Newcomb and the rest of the party remained behind to transport the provision and traps up the north branch on a raft.

"We were to meet at Alder brook that afternoon. I accompanied the land party. We reached the mouth of Alder brook early in the afternoon, and while Vaughan built a shanty, Mr. Marsh took to the river with pole and line and Judge Palmer went up the brook to examine the lay of the land in that direction. I remember that Mr. Marsh had caught a fine string of trout and was returning down the river, when his feet slipped upon the rocky bottom and he fell into the swift current. During his efforts to regain his feet he lost his fishing tackle and trout. Judge Palmer returned and reported that while making his way through a thicket he came face to face with a bear. They looked at each other a moment, and then, by 'unanimous consent,' started off in different directions.

"As we expected the other party would reach the camping place before supper time, we had brought with us only enough provision for a noon lunch, but night came without any signs of their approach, and it was not until ten o'clock that a man reached us with a pack of provision on his back. He reported that the raft had broken up, wetting most of the provisions and that Mr. Newcomb had abandoned the river and camped about two miles below. The next day the rest of the party arrived nearly empty handed, for during the night their camp of boughs had taken fire and destroyed most of the property that had escaped the perils of the river. The next day a man was sent back to the settlements for a supply of provision, while the rest of the party continued the exploration towards Loon lake.

"The commissioners not only constructed a passable road through the forests to the Hopkinton road but also repaired the road between Cadyville and Saranac Hollow which until this had been nearly impassable."

Another road, constructed under acts of 1841 and 1844, runs from Lake Champlain to Carthage, in Jefferson county, passing through the towns of

Schroon, Crown Point and Newcomb. The opening of numerous other highways will be noted in the town histories. They were of paramount importance to the early settlers, opening up the country to prospectors and enabling the pioneers of one locality to reach those of another where his wants could be supplied.

The first year of the century had not passed when the first steps were taken in the iron manufacturing business, which has since developed into a leading industry. In 1801 George Throop and Levi Higby, in connection with Charles Kane, of Schenectady, began the manufacture of anchors at Willsborough Falls. Mill and boat irons were afterward made and the foundry was subsequently transformed into a forge. For the first ten years the ore for these works was brought from Vermont and Canada. Little was known of the ore in the county at that time. Early in the century W. D. Ross erected a rolling mill on the Boquet for the manufacture of nail plates for the factory at Fair Haven, Vt., and about 1809 Archibald McIntyre and associates erected works on the Ausable in the present town of North Elba, which became known as the "Elba Iron Works." They were abandoned about 1815. Since that early period the iron interest has been extensively developed in Essex county, and its detailed history will be traced among accounts of the manufacturing interests of the different towns.

The works operated by McIntyre and his associates had the effect of calling into that remote region a large and busy community, who there found occupation. There schools were established, religious meetings inaugurated and a general era of local thrift began. This might have become permanent but for the almost universal difficulties over land titles. Nearly the whole of the township of North Elba was then held by the State. The settlers postponed the perfection of their titles, thinking it was a matter that could be attended to at a later day. At this juncture a land speculator learned of the great tract, went and inspected it and purchased from the land commissioners the entire territory. Now the settlers endeavored to purchase from him; but he put them off with the assurance that the land was not yet in the market. The prospect of going forward with their improvements, only to have their homes taken from them or be made to pay an exorbitant price some time in the future, was not a pleasant one, and they gradually abandoned most of their settlements.<sup>1</sup>

The early settlers of the county, in common with those of most other localities in the country, no sooner became located in their humble homes than they set about providing means for the education of their children, and rustic school-houses were soon scattered — often very widely scattered, to be sure — through the wilderness. Previous to 1810 we find records of schools being

---

<sup>1</sup>In 1840 only seven families remained on the eighty thousand acres which now form the town of North Elba. At this time the lands were offered for sale and emigration turned in that direction. (See history of the town.)



taught in six of the towns, the first one in Willsborough having been opened in 1787 by a Mr. Scott; in Essex by Miss Towner; in Schroon by Clark Ransom; in Keene by Asa A. Andreas; in Lewis by Levi Parsons; and in Moriah by Miss Abi Collins. Schools rapidly multiplied and were early supplemented by church buildings.

Settlements had now progressed to a considerable extent all along the shore of the lake and in many localities had penetrated deep into the primeval forests. It is one of the pioneer anomalies that a majority of the settlers showed a preference for the hills, over the lower and more level tracts of the valleys. This is, perhaps, accounted for, as an old resident informs us, upon the theory that the impression prevailed in early times that the hill land was much the most productive, besides being dry, and hence accessible in spring and fall, when the low lands were wet and muddy. This was the cause, also, of laying out many of the early roads, either directly over the hills or along their sides.

Log houses sprang up in the forests, to be followed at a date much earlier than was the case in many localities, by neater frame cottages, the building of which was made possible by the early erection of saw-mills upon the rapid streams of this region. The building of his house was the first earnest work of the pioneer. If he found a few neighbors within a circle of as many miles, he was aided generously and willingly in this work; if not, he must do the best he could with the aid of his brave hearted wife, and his boy, if he had one. In such case the dwelling scarcely rose to the dignity of a house; it was more frequently a mere cabin. When the location had been fixed, the straight trees were felled and cut into proper lengths, their ends notched and shaped, and the logs laid up for the walls. Rough poles were put up for rafters, on which were fastened strips of elm or the bark, forming a tolerably tight roof. If there was a door it was made of "puncheons" (tough planks split from straight-grained logs and hewn into shape). A doorway was cut on one side of the house, in which was hung either a blanket or a rough door made of the split planks. Greased paper covered the one or two window openings until glass was brought in from the settlements. There was here and there one, built not long after the arrival of the first settlers, a little more pretentious in size and style, but a log house sixteen feet square with a shingle roof, a board floor and a small window of glass, was a rarity, a decidedly stylish residence, and subjected its owner to the possibility of being considered an aristocrat.

Inside of these primitive houses the furniture was of a character to correspond with the other surroundings. A few early settlers were able to bring the actually necessary furniture with them, and nearly all brought a piece or two as a reminder of their former more civilized homes; but in many dwellings the bedstead was made of poles driven into auger holes in the logs of the house (which formed two sides), a post being set up at one corner. Across this frame were laid other poles and on them the bed was made. In the ab-

sence of chairs a slab was split from a log, holes bored through it and legs driven in. Necessity was the mother of invention in those days, no less than at the present time, and the pioneer housewife's needs in the way of household furniture were generally supplied in some manner by the ingenuity and skill of her husband.

After a few years, when a dozen or more settlers could be summoned within a circle of a few miles, the coming immigrant received a warm welcome. His arrival meant the clearing of another farm, another social neighbor nearer at hand, another strong and willing pair of hands for all good work and another friend in case of adversity. Then the building of a substantial log house became, instead of a tedious and toilsome job, a mere occasion of festivity interspersed with a little work. The summons went out for a house-raising on a specified day, and when a dozen or more willing men had congregated, every one of them unsurpassed in dexterity with the ax, down fell the tall, straight trees, the logs were cut and drawn together by the oxen; four of the most active and expert of the men, schooled by many a similar experience, were placed at the corners of the foundation to cut and shape the ends of the logs, and long before night the walls were raised to a height of six or eight feet, the rafters were put in place, and the dwelling was soon ready for its pioneer occupants. On these occasions the hard-working men were usually cheered in their labor by a passing whisky jug, for within a short time after the first settlement it was a cold day when a jug of whisky could not be found in almost any neighborhood. The finishing work was put on the house by the owner at his leisure; but there was no delay in beginning "to live" in those days; the house which was embodied in standing trees in the morning, sheltered the happy pioneer and his wife at the supper table in the evening on the same day.

In these dwellings, although "house-keeping" was begun under many adverse circumstances, who shall say that there were not as warm hearts, as true domestic devotion and sympathy and as pure contentment and peace as ever existed in the palaces of the world. Here the pioneer and his family began life with faith in their Creator and faith in themselves — a life that was to carry them from their present condition of trials and privations onward to the comforts of civilization. Frame dwellings followed the pioneer log house in Essex county as soon as the settlers could compass the necessary means; for mills were numerous and lumber soon became cheap and plentiful.

His house once built, the early settler found ample work for his hands in felling the forest trees, in the "logging bees" by which fields were cleared in a day by the union of many hands, in planting a little corn or wheat, in sugar-making in the spring, in caring for his limited stock and in supplying his household with venison and other game from the forest.

The forests in the region of which this work treats abounded, not only with game that was a heaven-sent boon to early settlers, but with wild beasts which



ravenously preyed upon the scanty flocks and sometimes imperiled the lives of the people. Long after they ceased to cause any apprehensions to the settlers themselves, these wild beasts, especially the wolves, were a constant source of annoyance, and every man's hand was raised against them for their extermination. This work was encouraged by the offer of generous public bounties. Under such efforts, and the gradually increasing population, the forests were cleared of these foes to man and his civilizing work.

One of the pleasantest features of pioneer life and one to which the writer may always turn with satisfaction, was the spirit of fraternity and sociability and mutual helpfulness which pervaded every locality. Most of the early settlers stood upon the same plane of life, and held the same hopes and aspirations, born of poverty and nurtured in privation, which were common to all. Each felt an impulse, dictated by the humanity that was sure to develop amid such surroundings, to assist his neighbor whenever and wherever assistance was needed, realizing that he might any day become the grateful recipient of similar service. That social ostracism engendered by caste, a relic alike of ignorance and barbarism, which it is the mission of the genius of American institutions to eradicate, and which inexorably separates the individual members of a community at the present day, was then unknown. They mingled freely with each other, and shared each other's joys and sorrows. In conversations with that venerable remnant of pioneer settlers, or rather the immediate descendants of the pioneers, we have been deeply impressed with the regretful earnestness with which they recur to those happy days of their pioneer toils, sympathies and joys.

But the pilgrimage and life of the pioneer was not all pleasure. Hardship, unremitting toil, deprivation of all luxuries and many of the mere comforts, were often his lot. An example of this fact, and one most vividly related, was given to Rev. Joseph Cook many years ago by Mrs. Adolphus Sheldon, of Ticonderoga, who came into the county in 1797. Said she, in her own expressive language: "We came through from the head of Lake George on an awful cold day on the ice. No stage, no mail, or hardly any travel, so we had no track. Mother was sick that day and lying in the bottom of the sleigh, come once or twice near fainting. We thought for our souls we never should get through where we could get water for mother. We did start to bring a little spirits in the morning but forgot it. On neither side of the lake was there any settlement except at Sabbath Day Point. There both sides and the whole length of the lake the great pines stood all around on the mountains, one unbroken wilderness. Not an axe had been heard there then or hardly a gun to scare the deer — well, we got in at the upper falls, where there were only two houses, Captain Bailey's and Mr. Cole's. We lived in a small wood house just above the rapids two weeks and then went to the Thornton place, just south of the lower village, where we lived six years.

“We had heard that Ti. was a paradise, that we should find pigs and fowls ready cooked running about with knives and forks stuck in their backs, crying ‘eat us!’ But when we got there it was all bushes. In the new roads the stubs stuck up as thick as your fingers, and down you would go at every careless step. The land was densely timbered. We had one cow and a yoke of cattle. I’ll tell you the way we built our first cabin. Father took 14-foot boards and withed them up to four staddles that stood just right and covered them over, hovel fashion. We moved in. On the 15th of April came snow breast deep and there we were. It was a terrible storm — you could walk over the fences, and we gathered sap on snow shoes. We all went to cutting logs and when we got four walls locked together, half a roof and the chamber floor, we moved in. When we wanted groceries we had to cross the lake to J. Catlin’s for them, but oftener went without them. I remember once going to a mill and dusting up flour from behind the bolt that had worms in it, picking them out and so making bread. We had brown bread, and wheat cracked in milk. Land alive! when we wanted fish, all we had to do was to run down to the brook — there were schools of them big as a washtub. Father drew out eighteen great trout one morning, I remember, in about three minutes. We had provision left back on the way at Hoosack Falls, but we could not get it. Finally father gave a man half of it for going with his team for it.

“Father had to work over the lake in Vermont to get hay for his ‘critters.’ Mother and I when he was gone used to take the axe and bush hook and go out to our clearing at the back of the barn and work all day. We used to cut out all the underbrush and staddles, and pile them up, I tell you, sir, as slick as bean poles; and then, when he came home, he cut the big timber. Once we logged there three days on a black fallow — father, and mother and I — and had not a piece of bread to eat as big as your fingers, but only fat pork. I could not eat it, but just took my fish hook and line and ran down to the brook for fish.

“No sheep. Land! You could have no sheep; the wolyes would tear you right down. You could hear them away off in the night — one would howl, then another would answer — howl, howl — then another, way off, howl, howl, howl, — till they got up such a roar that it would almost tear you down. One day I and my brother were standing on the bridge and three wolves came along the road close to us. We thought they were three gray dogs till they got near, and then we scampered, I tell you. Oh! they were awful thick and dangerous. We never had any sheep. You could not keep any.

“The animals we feared most were bears, wolves, catamounts and rattlesnakes. Deer were thick as sheep are now. Shot one from the house door once.

“Gracious! we didn’t have any calico. Calico was worth a dollar a yard! I took flax and spun it, colored it with copperas and made a dress that lasted



ten years, and I went to balls in it. Little cloth enough in ladies' dresses in those days. Two breadths, one in front and one behind, with a couple of chinks to widen out the sides, were all that we could afford, and then they were only just a little puckered up behind. Calico short gowns some had. We had to card and spin our own cotton, you understand, buying it in bales at twenty-five cents a pound. Land alive! the first calico dress I had cost me \$7.00, the next \$5.00 — callamink they called it. I had a red broadcloth cloak that cost \$21. Fur hats tied under the chin were used for dress bonnets. Girls used to wear handkerchiefs tied over their heads in turbans with a bow to dance in. Father made his own shoes. I made my own with cloth and old felt hat for soles. Went barefoot in summer. I was married in velvet shoes that father made.

"I must tell you about my marriage. You see Squire Perrego married us and he was a squire and a doctor. So lots of folks came down, having been invited. We had stew pie made for them in a three pail iron kettle, all nice, and it was a good one too, but it would be an awful thing now-a-days to boil a big kettle over a fire place.

"After we were married we moved across the valley westward to the Sheldon place where we had to tough it. I had toughed it at father's and now I had to tough it here. Only half an acre was cleared. There we lived five years without a stove or fireplace. We absolutely had no chimney. We burned wood right against the logs of the cabin and when they got afire we put it out. We used to draw logs right into the house, great backsticks and foresticks.

"Sap from the maple trees was so plenty that we could hear it in the night, drip, drip, drip, till morning. Deer used to come and stand right across the run where I used to get water, and once one knocked down the door of my oven not two rods from the house, but he didn't get the pie crust.

"Now came a trouble upon us. My husband had just got a grand fallow burned as black as a coal, had worked out and paid for seed wheat, been to get it, and coming home in getting over a log fell and almost cut his hand in two on his sickle. He come home after I was abed, groaning: 'I've cut me to death.' And he did come near bleeding to death. It absolutely bled a small pail full and run out at the door though I did every thing to stop it. I halloed and yelled to make distant neighbors hear and could hear nothing but George Cook's sheep bleat and the patter of rain on the leaves. It rained dreadfully that night. At last a woman that lived on the mountain above us came, but she could do nothing. I resolved to make a desperate attempt, for we believed that my husband would die. So I seized a great fire-brand and ran. I had no shoes or stockings but I swung my fire-brand ahead and each side to scare the wolves as I ran along the edge of the mountain and crossed the valley to my father's place. Only a few days before my husband

had come along the path with a leg of mutton. He set it down on the leaves a minute and the next day around that place half an acre of leaves was torn by the wolves. When I had crossed the brook I heard something splash in the water behind me. The rain roared so I could not hear for sure but I thought it might be something and looked back but could see nothing. I tell you the grass did not grow under my feet that trip. It was not bears or rattlesnakes this time but wolves, wolves! I was afraid of the wolves. I came back after rousing my folks, with a candle. I heard Mrs. Wardwell from my house, crying out, murder! murder! I cried back and my folks thought it was to them, and so they cried to me and the doctor a little beyond with my brother to them. I to her, they to me, and my brother and the doctor to them, and so it kept up a stream of halooes and yells through the woods. It was a wild time but I only thought of my husband.

"He was three weeks getting well. I did every thing. I used to harness up my horse, go to the woods get my staddles, draw them in and cut them up for wood. Three months I worked so, for he was obliged to go off to work. Our fallow was now ripening a nice crop of wheat. Said I to him, 'That wheat must be cut.' 'I can't do it; I must work in my place,' said my husband. 'Then I guess I shall reap it to-day, myself.' So I set to work with my sickle alone. I remember I had reaped through twice, raked, bound and set up my grain, and was coming through the third time when I found a place where the sprouts stuck up thick in the grain. I put my sickle round them and was drawing it in, when out run a great black rattlesnake from the other side. I got me a club and killed him and tried his fat. I put his body across a stump and nine days after his head was cut off, when I went there and pressed a sharp stick into him the flesh would squirm. We took fourteen sheep, but one night we could not find them to yard, and that same night the wolves killed all but one. One dead carcass we found in the crotch of a tree a good way from the ground.

"I must tell you about one or two tussles we had with bears. There was one that come into our cornfield and used to tear it down like a dozen hogs. My husband tried every way, and at last set a gun for her just before dark. 'Now old woman,' said he, 'when that gun goes off you must go with me and I will find the bear.' Just as we were getting into bed bang went the old gun. 'Here we are,' said I. He seized a big brand and I followed him out into the clearing. 'Give me the brand,' said I. 'Just as well,' said he, 'I'll go forward and find the old critter.' 'Take care,' I warned him, 'if she is wounded, old man, she will make shoe strings of your hide.' No, he would not hear to the old woman. He had not gone far when he tumbled right over the bear. He hopped up, I guess near two feet at the bear's growl, and cried, a short quick cry, 'O God!' Bear weighed 200 pounds, we tried the fat; the meat cut like pork, but I could not bear to eat it.



"When I wanted a broom I went out and cut a hickory club, dried and peeled it. Berries were thick. I remember going out to pick berries when my oldest son weighed twenty-three pounds. I laid him down among the bushes after nursing and picked two pails full. Then I picked another pailful in my great apron, and took the three pailfuls and my babe and carried them to the house. Next day I carried these over the lake to Vermont on horseback and brought back cheese, pork and flour. That was the way we got our groceries.

"I have given you a true account of how we used to live and what adventures we met with. It don't seem scarcely possible now that the woods are cleared off, that such wolf-howling and kind of work ever were in these valleys.

"When I had nothing to do I helped my husband. I did not care what I wore, had or did — anything to help him. I worked there and was black as a nigger. We lived, as you might say, on work and love."

This vivid narrative needs no comment; it is a picture of the pioneer's career which was too often experienced. But the privations and hardships of the pioneers of the county soon began to be mitigated by the advancing march of civilization, the introduction of public improvements, the influx of settlers, the opening of roads, the establishment of schools and churches and the increasing productiveness of the farms.

In the early days of the settlement of the county the productions of the soil were limited almost exclusively to the necessities of the inhabitants. If a surplus was raised there was little market for it, except at a great distance. Money was scarce, very scarce, for a number of years after settlement began, and most exchanges were made by bartering one commodity for another. Almost every dwelling had its loom; boots and shoes were made largely by itinerant mechanics; while the actual food necessities were raised from the ground. Had it been otherwise in these respects the scarcity of money would have been felt in a much greater degree than it was. One source of obtaining a little money and household necessities, which seemed almost a godsend to the pioneers, was the manufacture of what were known as black salts and pot-ash, both of them the product of lye leached from ashes, of which the people could easily provide large quantities. It brought money into the country, enabled the settlers to pay taxes and buy the necessities of life, and promoted the clearing of land. For these products early merchants paid one-half cash and the remainder in goods.

Distilleries were somewhat numerous in the county in early years, though the business did not receive the attention that it did in other regions. But whisky was almost universally drunk and was kept in almost every household; no public occasion would have been considered properly managed without the omnipresent jug. At church raisings and similar semi-sacred events, even, it was not looked upon as at all out of place, while laymen, churchmen and ministers alike drank the fiery beverage. Yet it is generally asserted that there was no more drunkenness then than at the present time.

As the early settlers cleared their lands they turned their attention more and more to agriculture and to the development of the lumber interest. In many places the soil was naturally very fertile and not difficult of cultivation. Along Lake Champlain wheat was an excellent crop and much of the labor of the early farmers was devoted to its production. The average yield on new land was about twenty-five bushels to the acre; but the cultivation of this cereal gradually declined as the soil of favorable localities became weakened. Rye and corn were also early produced to considerable extent. Agricultural operations were, however, largely sacrificed for the captivating business of lumbering. The county was covered with heavy forests of valuable pine, spruce and hemlock, interspersed with valuable hard woods, the cutting of which and transportation to market has always seemed to possess peculiar allurements to early settlers; especially so where there was water communication with markets. Down to a comparatively recent period this has been an industry of great magnitude in this county. The winters of the settlers were entirely given up to it, and the falling of the valuable timber was proportionately rapid, while agricultural interests suffered. Logs and lumber were rafted, towed and shipped in immense quantities at first to Canadian markets, and in later years, since the opening of the canal, to the south. One cause of the vigorous prosecution of lumbering was, undoubtedly, the early conflicts over land titles, which discouraged settlers from expending arduous labor in improving farms from which they feared ultimate ejection. The old French grants, embracing much of the county, had been superseded to a great extent by those of the colonial government under the British proclamation of 1763, authorizing grants of lands to be made to the reduced officers and soldiers who had served in the Canadian campaigns. These grants were purchased in many cases and sometimes located in the names of the purchasers and sometimes in the names of the grantees. (These old grants will be further described in a subsequent chapter on titles.)

The settlers, after the Revolution, found large and valuable tracts patented to individuals, and often the pioneer who located a farm, believing his title to be good, learned to his sorrow that another person had a prior claim, or at least asserted one, and was driven from his home. As will be learned from a perusal of some of the town histories herein, it often became a mere question of physical strength as to who should remain in possession of disputed territory. But these troubles were all finally adjusted and peaceful relations existed between the settlers in different sections of the county.

By an act of legislature, passed February 20th, 1802, the town of Chesterfield was formed from Willsborough. The first town meeting was held "in the dwelling of Isaac Wright, inn-keeper of the town." The next town meeting for the town of Willsborough was held at the house of Jonathan Lynde. The towns of Schroon and Ticonderoga were formed from Crown Point in



March, 1804. The first town meeting in the first-named town was held at the house of Israel Johnson, and that of the latter town at the house of William Wilson. The succeeding town meeting for Crown Point was held at the house of William Coon.

In April, 1805, the town of Willsborough was divided into three towns, forming, besides the town of that name, those of Essex and Lewis. The first town meeting of the former was held at the house of Nathaniel Rogers. That in the latter town was held at the house of Thomas Hinckley, while the succeeding meeting for Willsborough was held at the dwelling of Levi Cooley.

Moriah was formed from Crown Point and Elizabethtown in February, 1808; and Keene from Elizabethtown and Jay in March, of the same year.

These divisions were of great practical benefit to the inhabitants who had been forced to travel long distances to the courts and for other public business. In 1810 the population of the county had reached 9,525.

On the 13th of March, 1807, the Essex turnpike road company was organized and incorporated under the laws of the State. Roger Alden Hiern, James McCrea, Jonathan Lynde, Thomas Stower, Abraham Akin, Levi Higby, Benjamin Vaughan, Belden Noble, Ralph Hascall, Jonathan Steel, George Throop, Joseph Sheldon and Stephen Cuyler were the incorporators. The road authorized was to begin at "Grog Harbor" on the west side of Lake Champlain, in the town of Essex, and run northerly past the dwellings of Belden Noble, in Essex, Joseph Sheldon and Jonathan Lynde, in Willsborough, to Levi Cooley's, and from thence to "intersect the great northern turnpike in the county of Essex." There were one thousand shares of stock at twenty-five dollars per share. The commissioners were Messrs. Hiern, Hascall and Higby.

As far as we have learned this was the first turnpike stock company incorporated in this county. On the 5th of April, 1810, an act was passed authorizing the opening of a road from the outlet of Lake George to the court-house in Elizabethtown. This is the north and south road passing through Port Henry.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

FROM 1810 TO 1825.

Mutterings of War — British Outrages — President Madison's Address to Congress — Declaration of War — Review of the Contest — Operations in and near Essex County — Invasion of New York from the North — Response in Essex County — Battle of Plattsburgh — The Naval Engagement — American Victory — The Treaty of Ghent — Beneficial Consequences of Peace — Growth of Settlements — The Cold Summer — Internal Improvements — The First Newspaper — State Legislature Affecting the County — Boundaries of the County as Fixed by Law — Offer of State Lands to Promote Settlements — Early Ferries — New Towns Formed.

AGAIN was the country stirred by the mutterings of approaching war. For several years the aggressions of the British had been a subject of anxiety and regret, and feelings of animosity increased on this side of the Atlantic. The United States maintained a strict neutrality during the progress of the Napoleonic war with Great Britain, but our rights as a neutral nation were disregarded. The embargo laid by Congress upon the shipping in American ports was found so injurious to commercial interests that it was repealed and a non-intercourse act passed in its stead. In April, 1809, the English ambassador in Washington opened negotiations for the adjustment of existing difficulties, and consented to the withdrawal of the obnoxious "orders in council," as far as they affected the United States, on condition that the non-intercourse act with Great Britain should be repealed. This was agreed upon. The president issued a proclamation announcing that on the 10th of June trade with Great Britain might be opened. But when intelligence of this action reached England, that government refused to ratify the proceedings and the minister was recalled. The president's proclamation was thereupon revoked and the previous relations between the two countries were resumed.

In addition to other injuries and insults to the Americans, England claimed the right to search their vessels, seize all who were suspected of being British subjects and force them into the British service. In the enforcement of this right of search, grievous outrages were perpetrated which called loudly for redress. On the 12th of June, 1812, President Madison sent a confidential message to Congress in which he recapitulated the long list of British encroachments and declared that it was the duty of the House to consider, as it was their constitutional right to decide, whether the Americans should remain passive under the progressive and accumulated wrongs. At the same time he cautioned Congress to avoid entanglements in the "contests and views of other powers," meaning France.

War was formally declared on the 19th of June; but the measure was not universally sustained, especially in New York and New England. The antagonistic element was embraced in the Federal party, its chief ground of oppo-



sition being the alleged fact that the country was not prepared for war. The course of the ensuing contest can be but briefly reviewed. One of the early war measures had in view, like many of those during the Revolution, an invasion of Canada. Steps were taken to gather forces along the frontier of northern New York and thence westward as far as Michigan. These were arranged in three divisions. The northwestern division assembled at Detroit; the central, under command of General Stephen Van Rensselaer, with headquarters at Lewiston, on the Niagara river; while the eastern division made its rendezvous on the western shore of Lake Champlain, in the vicinity of Plattsburg. A naval force was also placed upon the lakes.

The principal operations previous to the summer of 1814, comprised an attack by a small fleet upon Sackett's Harbor, which resulted in the retirement of the fleet. An attack on Ogdensburg in October, 1812, by a British fleet, which was repulsed by General Brown. The capture in the same month by Lieutenant Elliot of the British vessel, *Caledonia*, at the foot of Lake Erie. The conquest and surrender of General Hull at Detroit, on the 16th of August, 1812. The attack on Queenstown Heights in October of that year, which resulted unfavorably to the Americans. The surrender of the American forces after a sanguinary engagement on the Raisin river. The surrender and abandonment of Ogdensburg in February, 1813. The capture of Toronto by the Americans who sailed from Sackett's Harbor under General Dearborn in April. The return of the squadron and the assault upon Fort George (Niagara river) in May, followed by the British evacuation of the other posts on the Niagara frontier. The attack of the British on Sackett's Harbor in May, and their repulse at Black Rock (Niagara river) in July.

Small bodies of the enemy appeared during this summer in the waters of Essex County and committed the same class of depredations from which the territory had suffered in the struggle for American independence. On one occasion two armed galleys and two barges entered the Boquet river for the purpose of seizing a quantity of government flour which had been deposited at Willsborough Falls. Landings were made at different points and numerous outrages committed and private property destroyed. A slight skirmish ensued between the invaders and a body of militia under General Wadhams near the former entrenchments of Burgoyne, and many of the troops in the rear galley were killed or wounded. She floated down the river a wreck and was towed into the lake by boats sent to her assistance. The flotilla then retired to the Isle aux Noix.

The next prominent event of the war was Commodore Perry's brilliant naval victory on Lake Erie in September, followed by that of General Harrison in October known as the battle of the Thames, in the northwestern department, which re-conquered the territory of Michigan. Then followed the unsuccessful attempt of General Wilkinson to invade Canada near Williamsburg, in Novem-

ber. The inglorious retreat of General McClure from Queenston and Newark and the burning of the latter place, followed by the retaliation of the British in the burning of Buffalo, in the winter of 1813-14. The attack by General Wilkinson on the British on the Sorel, in March, 1814, and his repulse; he fell back to Plattsburg and was succeeded by General George Izard. The capture of Oswego by the British in May. The surrender of Fort Erie, on the west bank of the Niagara, to the Americans in July and the bloody battle of Lundy's Lane in the same month. The repulse of the British at Fort Erie, and the brilliant sortie therefrom, in August.

During the progress of the last mentioned of these events, movements of importance were being planned in other regions with which we are more interested. The British army had been strongly reinforced during the summer of 1814. They contemplated a dismemberment of the Union by securing possession of Lake Champlain and the Hudson river from the north and the capture of New York city from the south, believing that the consequent division of the republic would result in the establishment of a separate peace with the Eastern States. The people were now fully aroused and measures were adopted for the thorough defense of New York; its fortifications strengthened and strongly garrisoned.

The invasion of New York by way of Lake Champlain was entrusted to General Prevost, who was given command of about 15,000 men for the campaign. Opposed to this fine army the Americans had but about 3,500 men, which were under immediate command of Gen. Alexander Macomb. These were gathered at Plattsburg. During the spring and summer both powers had also been energetic in the preparation of fleets for naval operations on Lake Champlain.

During all of this struggle and especially these later operations, which promised to bring the horrors of war again to the doors of the inhabitants of Essex county, much anxiety was felt throughout Northern New York. The military spirit had been fostered and organizations kept up to some degree, in this vicinity since the beginning of the century; the people of the towns were called out with tolerable regularity to perform military duty; and the motley throngs that gathered under such calls, their meagre pretense at equipment and their surprising evolutions as they marched among stumps and over logs, must have furnished a wonderful military spectacle, and the mirth of old inhabitants is still excited as they recall those "trainings."

When the news of the expected invasion was carried up the shores of Lake Champlain the inhabitants of Essex county felt that they must again rally to the defense of their homes. Neighbors went from house to house discussing the situation; their wives met and talked of the menaced danger with anxious faces, and when the warning came for the men to appear on the following morning at the principal settlements throughout the county, the rising sun



found almost every man at his post. Around the able-bodied men who had come forward at the call of the country were old men with frosty heads who had fought on the fields of the Revolution; mothers and wives to see the departure of husbands and sons, and children of all ages, all filled with the anxiety and suspense born of the expected invasion by the foe. And the Essex men marched forth to battle.

Knowing the weakness of the American force at Plattsburg, General Prevost hastily put his army in motion before the fleet was ready for operation, and on the 6th of September his advance reached Beekmantown; here their march was contested by a body of militia, who, however, soon retreated towards Plattsburg, tearing up the bridge over the Saranac and entering the entrenchments. The British advanced, took possession of some buildings near the river and attempted to cross, but were repulsed by a cannonade of hot shot. The British fleet now came out of the Sorel and up the lake. The British general announced his intention to seize and hold Northern New York as far south as Ticonderoga, and called upon the inhabitants to cast off their allegiance and furnish him with supplies. In the mean time Macomb labored with untiring energy for the defense of the menaced region. From the 7th to the 11th Prevost employed the time in bringing up his batteries and supply trains and constructing works to command those of the Americans on the south side of the Saranac. Meanwhile the naval force reached Cumberland Head. The flag ship was the *Confluence*, thirty-eight guns, and with it were one brig, two sloops of war and twelve gunboats. The American squadron was commanded by the gallant captain Thomas MacDonough and lay in Plattsburg bay; it comprised the *Saratoga* (flag ship) twenty-six guns, one brig, two schooners and ten gunboats, or galleys. The British vessels sailed around Cumberland Head on the morning of the 11th, and at the same time their land forces were moving for combined attack. MacDonough skillfully stationed his fleet for the action and then knelt on his vessel's deck and offered a prayer for Divine aid. The guns of both squadrons soon opened fire. The battle became general and was terribly destructive on both sides, lasting two hours and twenty minutes. "There was not a mast in either squadron," wrote MacDonough, "that could stand to make sail on." The contest was witnessed by hundreds of spectators on the Vermont shore. It ended with victory for the Americans. The British commodore, Downie, was killed and his remains buried at Plattsburg. The Americans lost 110 and the British more than 200 men.

During this engagement a sharp conflict took place on the land. The British attempted to force their way across the Saranac at two points, but were repulsed after a brave struggle, by the militia under Macomb and General Benjamin Mooers. Some of the British succeeded in crossing the stream near the upper bridge, and the Americans were driving them back, when the news reached them of the surrender of the British squadron. The Americans gave

three cheers, which the British assumed were indicative of victory and their lines wavered. Prevost soon heard of the naval surrender and seeing the gathering of the militia on his flanks, ceased fighting at twilight and prepared for flight to Canada. He appears to have been a timid man, and about midnight became further alarmed and fled in such haste that his sick and wounded were left behind. He was pursued by a force of Americans, but a heavy rain came on and the chase was abandoned. The British halted at Champlain, and on the 24th repaired to Montreal. Their losses in killed, wounded and deserters was nearly two thousand. The land losses of the Americans was less than one hundred and fifty.

This was the last invasion of the northern frontier, and its defeat was largely instrumental in ending the war. The treaty of Ghent was concluded on the 24th of December, 1814, and the battle of New Orleans was fought January 8th, 1815. The Americans had fought their last battle with a foreign foe.

A general conviction prevailed throughout the United States after the peace of 1814, that the country would not again become involved in war. It had twice defeated one of the strongest nations of the earth and the feeling strengthened that foreign powers would hesitate long before provoking the republic to hostility. This condition of the public mind exerted a wide-spread and beneficial influence upon the progress of settlement in all new localities, which had been seriously impeded by the last war. The people of Essex county, many of whom did valiant service in that struggle, returned to their homes and engaged with confidence and renewed energy in the arts of peace, and new settlers came in rapidly. The population increased from 9,525 in 1810, to 15,993 in 1825, and the industries of the county were rapidly developed, especially the cutting and marketing of lumber.

The various industries of the inhabitants of this county, in common with those of many other districts, were temporarily much prostrated by what is remembered as the "cold summer," or "the year without a summer." Much suffering was caused in all parts of the country by this remarkable season, especially among those who had little food or money saved up for emergencies. The sun seemed bereft of his power to give out heat to the freezing earth; ice formed in many localities every month in the year; snow fell in this county in June to a depth of half an inch or more, and crops could not grow and ripen except in the most favored situations. Those who were successful in raising crops to any considerable extent felt the extreme need of saving from them for the next year's seed time, while many who possessed the means of relieving the less fortunate, declined to do so except at such exorbitant prices as practically served to shut out the poor. During the winter and summer following the cold season, starvation came very near the doors of many of the inhabitants of the county; and many had to depend almost entirely upon the milk of a cow or two, if fortunate enough to possess one, the fish and game of



the streams and forests, and wild berries. While cases of extreme suffering were not very numerous, yet many were deprived of the wholesome food necessary to support health and strength.

An event of that character might occur at the present day without causing even a scarcity in the thickly populated communities of the country. If crops fail in one section they succeed in another, and even if it is remote, even if the ocean roll between the favored and unfavored localities, modern rapid transportation is adequate to adapt the supply to the demand in all sections; while the wealth of one region rarely rests idle in these later days while another one wants. Hence, it is difficult for the reader of to-day to realize and appreciate the fact that their ancestors of only two or three generations ago saw "the wolf at their doors" in the great Empire State, because a cold season cut off most of the crops. But the fact remains, and is vividly remembered by old residents of the county. It was a time that "tried many men's (and women's) souls." Incidents occurring as a result of the cold summer will be found in many of the town histories.

Before the close of the war the project of constructing a canal from the Hudson river to Lake Erie was agitated, and in 1817 it took tangible form and work began in the summer at Rome. This great water way was finished and opened in 1825. Almost contemporaneous with the progress of this project the construction of the Champlain canal was accomplished and it was opened for traffic in 1823. Both of these works were effectual in rapidly developing the country through which they passed and all the industries in those regions received a wonderful impetus. This was especially true of Essex county and its vast lumber interest. The tide of the traffic was turned from the northward to the opposite direction and better and more accessible markets opened. The merchants and manufacturers of the county also found it so much easier, quicker and consequently cheaper to bring their goods and stock from the great business centers that the community at large was greatly benefited.<sup>1</sup>

It was about the beginning of the second decade of the century that the first newspaper was established—an event that should be viewed as of great importance in all new communities. It was called the *Reveille*, and was started in Elizabethtown about the year 1810 by Luther Marsh. The county seat had already been established in the "Pleasant Valley," which was ample inducement for the pioneer publisher to locate his enterprise at that point. There is no means of ascertaining just how long this paper survived, nor have we been able to secure copies of it; but it probably was not printed more than five or six years, and possibly not so long, as in 1817 the *Essex Patriot* was published at the same place, by L. and O. Person. (See history of the county press).

---

<sup>1</sup> For more detailed accounts of the construction of canals and railroads, see chapter on Internal Improvements.

By an act passed by the Legislature in April, 1813, the county of Essex was made a part of the Twelfth Legislative district of the State. Its apportionment has always been one Member of the Assembly.

Legislative sanction was secured in the spring of 1817 "for opening a road from or near the house of Almon Phillips, in the town of Essex, to the Upper Falls, near the outlet of Lake George, in the town of Ticonderoga." This road was considered of great importance, and in the following year the supervisors of the county were authorized and directed to raise the sum of \$121.60 for the relief of Ebenezer Douglass, "for his services in opening and improving the road from the outlet of Lake George, near the Upper Falls, in the town of Ticonderoga, to the court-house in Essex." The words "court-house," in this connection must have referred to the old block house in Essex, which was used for that purpose a few years.

As an indication of the progress of the lumber trade, it is noted that a law of 1819 gave privileges to "extend booms in the Schroon river for the purpose of securing lumber," with a penalty of \$50 for cutting or destroying them.

In the year 1822 the boundaries of Essex county were finally fixed by act of legislature. These were the line between Washington, Warren and Essex on the south; on the west, a continuation northward of the west line of Warren county to the southeast corner of Macomb's Purchase; thence along the south bounds thereof to the southeast corner thereof; thence along the east bounds thereof to the northwest corner of township number eleven of the old military tract; thence east along the north bounds thereof to the north bounds of township number two to the northeast corner thereof; thence south along the line of the military tract to the middle of the channel of the north branch of the great river Ausable; thence down the middle of the channel thereof to the upper forks of said river; thence down the middle of the channel of said river to the south line of the Great Location; thence easterly on said line to Lake Champlain; thence east to the east bounds of the State. The parts of Clinton and Franklin counties taken in by this act, lying east of the west bounds of lots 74 and 152, in the Jay tract, were annexed to the town of Jay; those lying west of these bounds were annexed to the town of Danville, the name of which was changed to Wilmington by the same act.

It was in the same year that legislation was secured looking to the promotion of settlement in this county.<sup>1</sup> Although rapid settlement had been the

<sup>1</sup> LIBERAL ENCOURAGEMENT. — The legislature have, at their present session, passed a law offering donations of land to actual settlers. The first section of this act offers a grant of one lot of land, in township number ten, of the old military tract, lying in the county of Franklin, to every person who shall, within five years from the passing of the said act, have cleared and fenced fifteen acres of such lot, erected a habitable dwelling, and settled with his family thereon. It offers three lots to every person who shall, within four years, have built and put into operation one good and sufficient grist-mill within the said township; and one lot to every person who shall, within two years, build and put into operation one good and sufficient saw-mill within the said township. The number of lots to be thus granted in this township is limited to thirty. The same number to be granted in each of the townships



rule in some parts, the forbidding character of much of the territory operated to obstruct and delay occupation. By the provisions of the law which it was believed would lead to a change in the situation, applications were to be sent to the land commissioners before September 1st, 1822, by those persons desiring lands under the act. No application would be considered unless at least ten were received,<sup>1</sup> and each person must specify which lot he desired. In case of two persons applying for the same lot the commissioners were to have the privilege of deciding which intending occupant would best promote the objects of the law. But thirty of these grants were to be awarded. The conditions were that within five years after the application the settler should clear and fence at least fifteen acres of land and erect a habitable dwelling. Similar lots were to be granted also to every person who should, after the passage of the act, build and put in operation "one good and efficient grist-mill," and also to persons who should, within two years, put in operation one good saw-mill. A certificate of conditional grant was issued to applicants, specifying his name and the number and location of the lot; if at the end of five years he or his heirs produced sufficient evidence that he had complied with the law, a patent for the land would be issued.

These grants were, of course, to be made from the large tracts of land in this county which were still held by the State. The purposes of the act were not fulfilled to any great extent, although it is not clear why. In 1826 Ralsey Morse, Preston Thompson, Roswell Thompson and Franklin Jenkins were each granted a lot in the town of Lewis, of two hundred acres, out of the unappropriated lands. In 1828 an act was passed for the relief of James Mallory, John Huff, jr., and Wm. MacLenathan, jr., by which Mallory was given a tract upon which he was erecting a grist-mill, provided he finished it by October 1st. John Huff, jr., was to complete his improvements on lot 33, township No. eleven, before the same date; and Wm. MacLenathan, jr., to finish his saw-mill in sixty days from the passage of the act. It is presumable that these men complied with the law and secured their farms.

The manufacture of charcoal had become a prominent industry by the time under consideration, and it was deemed necessary to have official measures for the product. The town was divided into districts and a measurer designated

---

number nine and eleven of the said old military tract in the counties of Franklin and Essex. This is certainly a wise and politic measure; the State own about two hundred and fifty thousand acres of land in this quarter; and unless strong inducements are held out to settlers, they will remain on hand, an unproductive and useless property while lands can be procured elsewhere. The merit of bringing forward, and of carrying this measure through the legislature, is due principally to Judge Finch, a member from Essex county. The soil of this tract is not equal to that of the western part of the State, but the country affords advantages well worthy the attention of the industrious and enterprising farmer, who has not the means of paying for land. There are several large and valuable streams running through different parts of the tract, possessing many hydraulic advantages; and which, when the country shall once be settled, will, in a great measure, compensate for the inferiority of the soil. — *Albany Argus*, 1822.

<sup>1</sup> This provision would seem to indicate a lack of confidence in the scheme on the part of its framers.

for each district. The measures were "to be heaped," so as to give forty quarts to the bushel.

During the year 1824 the travel and traffic across the lake had become so much increased that during the same year several ferries were established, or the necessary steps taken to secure proper legislation for their establishment. One of these was authorized by a law passed in March, for the benefit of Ithiel McKenzie, who was privileged to maintain a ferry from his farm to Chimney Point, from May 1st, 1824, to May 1st, 1834. The conditions were that he should erect "a suitable dock and support suitable and safe ferry boats capable of conveying carriages, horses, cattle and people across the lake." Rates of ferriage and hours of running were to be fixed by the Court of Common Pleas, with ten dollars fine for taking a higher rate than that fixed by the court. Any other person acting as ferryman within one mile of McKenzie's line, was also subject to a fine of ten dollars. Other ferries authorized the same year and under similar regulations, were those of Sylvester Kellogg, of Crown Point, from his landing to Bridport, Vt.; James Pelling and John Howard, from Port Kent to Burlington; Henry Mayo and Timothy Follett from Douglass Bay, in Chesterfield, to their dock in Burlington, provided they obtained a release from Curtis Hurlgate of the right held by him to the same route.

On the 7th of March, 1817, David McNeil, Thomas Stowe and Isaac Finch, or any two of them, were appointed as commissioners authorized by law to lay out a highway four rods wide "from the dwelling of Josephus Merriam to the dwelling of Thomas Sheldon; thence through the town of Lewis to the inn of Isaac Finch in the town of Jay; thence westerly so as to intersect the road from Westport to Hopkinton at or near the thirty-one mile stone."

In the same year Thomas Emmons was privileged to maintain a toll gate "on the road from the dwelling house of Isaac Jones, in Willsborough, to that of Alvah Bosworth, in Chesterfield; the gate to be located between the dwelling of Norman Moor and the intersection of the road leading from Elizabethtown to Plattsburg." This road is spoken of as having a rocky bed, difficult to construct and keep in repair and the district through which it passed only slightly populated.

In addition to those towns which were formed previous to 1810 and have already been mentioned, there were formed down to 1825 Westport, which was taken from Elizabethtown in 1815; Minerva, taken from Schroon in March, 1817; the first town meeting was held at the house of Nathan West; and Wilmington, taken from Jay, as "Danville," in 1821. The first town meeting was held in the house of Reuben Sanford, on the first Tuesday of April. The next town meeting for Jay was "held in the school-house near the house of Elisha Hall."



## CHAPTER XVIII.

## FROM 1825 TO THE PRESENT TIME.

An Era of Prosperity in Essex County — Lumber, Iron and Commercial Interests — Ferries and Roads — Railroad Legislation — Improvement of Water Ways — The "Patriot War" — Its Effect upon Essex County — Negro Colonization in North Elba — John Brown's Interest in the Project — Its Ultimate Entire Failure — Formation of Towns — Development of Iron and Lumber Interests — Decline of the Latter Industry — Improvement in Agriculture — Comparative Statistics — The Agricultural Society — Stock Breeding — Further Road Extension — Politics and the Outbreak of the Rebellion — Prosperity and Growth after the Return of Peace — The Great Wilderness and its Future — Civil List.

THE beginning of the second quarter of the century found the people of the greater portion of Essex county enjoying an era of prosperity which continued many years. A period was passing when the lumber interest was prosecuted on a scale of immense magnitude, which, if it did not bring individual wealth to many of those who were largely engaged in it, kept money in circulation and furnished employment to hundreds of men. The iron interest, also, from this time onward, was rapidly developed and soon became a source of revenue in the county and activity among its population; and the commerce of the lake, stimulated to remarkable activity by the completion of the canal and consequent opening of markets, whitened the blue waters with innumerable sails and stirred them into foam by the wheels of many steamboats. Saw-mills were built at almost every available point on the swift streams (and they were very many); villages grew with the increase of manufacturing and activity in mercantile operations; new roads were opened and old ones improved to accommodate the increasing travel; schools multiplied; churches were established and grew in strength; a vigorous temperance element sprang up in many of the towns, under the influence of which and the general encouragement of people attendant upon prosperity, gross intemperance and its paralyzing evils became more and more unpopular and rare, and general progress was enjoyed.

We have mentioned the inception of the iron industry in the county, which has since grown to such extensive proportions. The details of the growth of this industry will be found in the subsequent town histories; it will suffice to state here that besides the early development of the mining and manufacturing in the town of North Elba by Archibald McIntyre, Archibald Robertson, David Henderson and others, beds were opened in Schroon in 1828; in Crown Point in 1827, leading to the later great interests of the Crown Point Iron Company; in Moriah at a very early day, but wonderfully developed to the present immense industry since about 1840; and in the Elizabethtown and Westport district, and the Essex and Willsborough and other northern towns,

subsequent to 1825, in all of which something was accomplished which aided in the general prosperity of the county.

The busy times on the lake led to demands for more ferries and soon after 1825 several were authorized by special acts. In February, 1826, Isaac Spear was privileged to run one from Putnam's Point in town of Crown Point to Bridport, for ten years, with the usual conditions; and in the same year Samuel Fort was given a similar right from Crown Point to Stone's Ferry on the eastern shore. In April, 1827, William Kirby was authorized to establish one from Ticonderoga to the town of Shoreham, Vt. In April, 1828, Lemuel H. Wicker secured a similar privilege "from Port Marshall, in the town of Ticonderoga, to Smith's ferry in Vermont." In April, 1830, Charles Hatch and Charles B. Hatch were given a ferry right from Westport to Ferrisburgh, in Vermont. Some of these lines were never operated and others were sold to second parties.

A new town was formed from Moriah and Minerva on the 15th of March, 1828, and called Newcomb. The first town meeting was held at the house of William Butler in April.

An act was passed in this year authorizing the construction of an important highway, to extend from Cedar Point on the lake westward through the towns of Moriah, North Hudson and Newcomb, to the west boundary of the county. John Richards, of Caldwell, Warren county, Iddo Osgood, of Keene, and Nathan Shearman of Moriah, were the commissioners for exploring; laying out and working this highway. Six thousand dollars were authorized to be raised for the purpose, from the sale of State lands which would be benefited by the improvement. The remainder of the cost of the road was to be raised by tax upon lands adjacent to the road, which would, presumably be increased in value thereby. Among the contractors for building this road were Messrs. Baker & Jones, who were paid in 1837, \$134.35; Darling & Graves, \$18; Edward Talbert, \$137; William C. West & Co., \$193; Warf & Russell, \$136.97; J. Green, \$32.76; Daniel T. Newcomb, \$266.08.

The opening of the road from Port Kent to Hopkinton, St. Lawrence county has already been mentioned. This was one of the largest and most important highway projects in the northeastern part of the State, and its prosecution cost large sums of money. A State appropriation of \$25,836 was secured in its aid in April, 1829, and in April, 1831, the comptroller ordered the advertisement of land sales for the procurement of these moneys. As late as this period, roads were not numerous in the interior and western towns of the county, and those that had been opened were many of them in an almost impassable condition. Travel over them was light and population to continue their improvement not numerous. In 1831, for example, the collector of the town of Newcomb was allowed by a special act, 37½ cents per mile necessarily traveled by him from his residence to the office of the county treasurer, which would indicate that his rides could scarcely be believed as pleasure trips.



The Ticonderoga and Schroon Turnpike Road Company was incorporated in April, 1832, for the purpose of constructing a highway from the Lower Falls, Ticonderoga, to the State road, through the town of Schroon.

With the development of the country and the growth of the iron and lumber interests came a demand for further internal improvements, especially for facilitating travel and transportation. Hence we find in 1832 the incorporation of the "Great Ausable Railroad Company," under the provisions of an act which was renewed in the following year. It was the avowed purpose of this company to construct a railway from Keeseville to Port Kent. The names of Richard Keese, of Clinton county; Charles M. Watson, of Essex county; William McDonald, of Warren county; John McIntyre, of Washington county; John R. Peters and George Curtis, of New York city, and Robert D. Silliman, of Rensselaer county, appear as commissioners.

In April, 1839, the "Adirondack Railroad Company" was incorporated, for the purpose of constructing a road from the Adirondack iron works, in Newcomb, "to Clear Pond, in the town of Moriah" (now in North Hudson). Archibald McIntyre, David Henderson and Archibald Robertson were the incorporators. The project was one of their baffled efforts to secure cheaper transportation for their iron products. Neither of these lines of road have been built.

Another extensive project for opening up the interior of the entire wilderness country was inaugurated in 1846, in which year the "Northern Slackwater and Railway Company" was incorporated. Briefly the purpose of this organization was to improve and add to the natural means of navigation existing between Port Kent, in the northeastern part of the country, and a point not far from Boonville, in Oneida county, whence a railroad was to connect with the latter place. Further details of this organization will be found in the chapter relating to internal improvements, in later pages.

Although the inhabitants were disappointed in the realization of their hopes for the more rapid development of their resources through the consummation of these different projects, their inception indicates the popular feeling during that period. The same may be said of the persistent efforts to open new roads and improve existing ones. The old State road running north and south through the county was a constant source of solicitude to the people and its often recurring need of repair cost the county large sums. In 1836 a law was passed taxing the inhabitants of a portion of the county to raise \$3,000 for improving this highway. The towns of Lewis, Elizabethtown, Schroon, Minerva, and that part of Moriah lying west of a line drawn from the northeast corner of Schroon to the southeast corner of Elizabethtown, were given as subject to this tax. Thomas Leland and Augustus C. Hand were made commissioners to superintend the expenditure of the money. Of the same general character and purpose was the act of 1841 appointing John I. Harris and

James D. Weston, of Warren county, and Allen Penfield and Alexander Trimble, of Essex county, "commissioners to repair and improve the State road from Glens Falls to Chesterfield." The appropriation of \$10,000 toward improving the upper waters of the Hudson river, for which Jacob Parmeter, of Essex, Daniel Stewart, of Warren, and J. Rockwell, of Saratoga, were the commissioners; four years later \$6,000 was appropriated by the State to clear the west branch of the Ausable in the towns of Jay, Wilmington and North Elba; \$2,000 to clear the rafting channel from the foot of the rapids at the head of the Glens Falls feeder pond (Warren county) to Hadley Falls; \$4,000 to improve the navigation of the Schroon and its branches in Warren and Essex counties; the improvement of the Boquet river from its mouth to Willsborough Falls (1870), for which Willis H. Adsit, of Willsborough, Hamilton N. Towner and Artemas H. Whitney, of Essex, were commissioners; and the declaration (1864) of the west branch of the Schroon from Mud Pond in North Hudson, to the main branch of the river, as a public highway, with Orson Richards, of Sandy Hill, James Morgan, of Glens Falls, and Joel F. Potter, of Schroon, as commissioners.

The Canadian Rebellion, or what was known on this side of the boundary as the "Patriot War," deserves mention in this connection, from the fact that all of Northern New York and, to bring the subject nearer to the province of this history, many of the inhabitants of Essex county became more or less involved therein. The popular complaints which preceded that outbreak in Canada were numerous, but they are chiefly referable to an irresponsible administration. The efforts of the disaffected were looked upon by the inhabitants of New York, as a rule, as patriotic and inspired warm sympathy; those efforts were well planned, under the leadership of William Lyon McKenzie, of Upper Canada, and Joseph Papineau, of Lower Canada; but the project of revolution was doomed from the first, both from local jealousies and the entirely inadequate forces for the work in hand. A number of "companies" from this side of the boundary joined the "Patriots," and so active became the sympathy with them on the northern frontier that the relations between this country and Great Britain were seriously menaced. President Van Buren finally issued a proclamation warning all who were taking any part in the movement from this side, to abandon their designs or expect the penalties incurred by their conduct.

Several engagements of considerable importance occurred, and for several weeks the insurgents had possession of Navy Island in Niagara river. General Winfield Scott was sent to the northern frontier to preserve order, and was backed by a proclamation from the governor of this State similar in purpose to that issued by the president. Yet the "Hunter Lodges," as they were called, continued their organization and meetings and the movement received the sanction and aid of numerous adventurous and reckless Americans, with



that of some who were inspired by more unselfish and honest purposes. For nearly four years this cloud hung over the frontier. Finally President Tyler issued a proclamation against the "Hunters" so severe in its admonitions that the uprising on this side was substantially throttled, as far as related to accessions to the insurgent forces. The whole movement ultimately failed; many of the rebels were arrested, some of them executed, among the number a few Americans, and others exiled. The enterprise disappeared in 1842, and in 1849 a general amnesty was passed.

The people of Essex county, although not joining in this conflict to any considerable extent, were yet near enough to its scenes to feel a deep interest in the movement; and it formed a theme of constant and somewhat anxious discussion for a long period.

While these warlike preparations were progressing to the northward and exciting so much interest in some parts of Essex county, a movement totally dissimilar in its character was being inaugurated in another part. We have already made the mere mention that a large landholder became the possessor previous to 1840 of almost the entire territory comprised in the town of North Elba. This man was Peter Smith, father of Gerrit Smith, the noted Abolitionist; to the latter these lands ultimately descended. In the course of time he became impressed with the idea that he could advance the interests of the colored race by giving them of his lands in that section, aiding them in clearing and improving the same and thus build up a thriving colony. He accordingly inaugurated the scheme and sent a number of negro families into the wilderness, giving them fifty acres or more each, which they were enjoined to clear and cultivate. While this enterprise was being prosecuted, John Brown, who was finally to die a martyr to his convictions, was becoming more and more deeply identified with the Abolition cause, and in that capacity became the acquaintance, friend and, to some extent, the confidant of Mr. Smith. About the year 1848 Brown returned from Europe, whither he went with his worldly all invested in wool; this was sold at half its value and he returned to America financially ruined. He had been conducting a wool depot in Springfield, Mass., and accepted on consignment the wool crops of many western growers, which made up his European cargo. His prospects blighted, he took his family into the wilds of North Elba and located them on a farm given him by his friend, Gerrit Smith. Here he found congenial work in addition to his labor on his farm, in counseling and instructing the almost helpless colored people who were making slow progress under the well-intentioned generosity of their patron. But the negroes were unaccustomed to the rigors of the cold northern climate and the attending toil and hardships involved in clearing and improving the rugged lands, and they gradually became disheartened and ultimately abandoned their homes. In 1850 there were only fifty free negroes in the county, all told; a few of these belonged to the North Elba colony, and the

number had reached only eighty in 1870. Brown, however, persevered and with the aid of his sons became the possessor of a comfortable home. (See history of North Elba.) This he left for a career that was to end on the scaffold; a career that is familiar to all.

In the year 1844 the town of St. Armand was formed from Wilmington; the first town meeting being held at the house of Elias Goodspeed. The succeeding town meeting in Wilmington was held at the house of Elisha Adams. In April, 1848, the town of North Hudson was formed from Moriah. The first town meeting was ordered held at the house of Thaddeus Russell, on the third Tuesday of April, 1849, Jacob Parmeter, Cephas Olcott and John Potter to preside and appoint a clerk. The town of North Elba was formed from Keene in December, 1849, and was the latest town in the county in point of its erection.

A glance at the county in the middle of the century, and in immediately succeeding years, shows it to have been in a generally healthy and prosperous condition. The population had increased from less than 10,000 in 1810 to a little over 31,000, while the development of the region had progressed in most parts in a proportionate degree. The growth of the iron interest down to that time had not been at all commensurate with the great mineral wealth of the county, owing chiefly to want of transportation from the more or less inaccessible localities that were richest in mineral deposits; yet, as will be hereafter noted, it had received the attention of men of means and energy, who had developed mining and manufacturing to an encouraging extent, which gave promise — promise that has been fulfilled — that within the next decade or two it would become the chief industry of the people in several of the towns.

The lumber interest, which reached its greatest activity from 1830 to 1840, began sensibly to decline; the greater portion of the most valuable timber had been cut off, and this has since been still further greatly reduced. Saw-mills began to go into decay and other manufactures to take their places in some localities for the utilization of the valuable water power; while many turned their attention more and more to agriculture and improved methods of farming. The improved lands of the county increased in the ten years following 1850 about 22,000 acres, and there was a proportionate increase in most crops; over 200,000 pounds more of butter were made in 1860 than in 1850. In this connection the following statistics will be of interest, as showing the relative condition of agriculture, etc., in the years 1850 and 1860: —

1850.	1860.
166,951 acres improved.	188,481 acres improved.
6,747 milch cows.	8,286 milch cows.
over 2,000 oxen.	1,841 oxen.
8,808 other cattle.	12,168 other cattle.
over 50,000 sheep.	45,265 sheep.
5,700 hogs.	about the same.
66,510 bushels wheat.	69,391 bushels wheat.



---

18,463 bushels rye.	19,638 bushels rye.
120,425 bushels corn.	94,194 bushels corn.
189,954 bushels oats.	256,325 bushels oats.
307,549 bushels potatoes.	411,777 bushels potatoes.
14,372 bushels buckwheat.	22,978 bushels buckwheat.
60,554 pounds maple sugar.	121,936 pounds maple sugar.
428,199 pounds butter.	634,289 pounds butter.
112,961 pounds cheese.	106,119 pounds cheese.

During the next five years there was a very encouraging increase in most of these figures.

The County Agricultural Society was organized in 1849, with J. N. Mecomber as president. In 1850 the late W. C. Watson was made president and R. S. Hale, secretary. Its first fair was held in Elizabethtown. This society became of great importance to the agricultural interests of the county and fostered a spirit of friendly emulation in the farming community which was of annually increasing benefit. (A proper history of this society will be found in its appropriate chapter.) Several town fairs and associations were also organized which contributed their share towards the general good. One of the results of these measures was a very great improvement in the quality of stock raised in the county, which has become an important center for fine horses and cattle. As long ago as 1858 there were many horses in the county of excellent breeding and showing speed qualities of a high order. Upon this subject Mr. Watson wrote in 1869 as follows: "In no department of its husbandry has this county exhibited more decided progress than in the quality and character of its stock. I cannot ascertain that a thorough-bred animal was owned in the county until about the year 1847. Grades of Teeswater and Durham had been introduced probably before that period. It now contains individuals of nearly every breed, that may almost maintain an equal competition with the stock of any section of the State. A race of horses, almost indigenous to its soil, is disseminated through the county, which combine properties of rare excellence. The high reputation of the Black Hawk horses has become widely diffused, and each year adds to their consideration. In no district have they been more extensively bred, or attained greater perfection than in this region."

Sheep raising and breeding also reached a state of considerable importance between 1850 and 1860, and many flocks of blooded animals were owned in the county. Vermont being one of the best wool-growing States in the Union, it was a natural result that the industry should extend across the lake. Among those who were prominently interested in sheep-breeding, Mr. Cook mentions the following in the town of Ticonderoga, in his pamphlet of 1858: G. D. Clark, W. H. and W. V. Cook, T. Delano, J. G. Hammond, O. Phelps, T. Rogers, H. Kimpton, B. P. Delano, D. S. Gibbs, C. Miller, J. Thompson, G. Grant, G. N. and C. L. Wicker, A. J. Cook and others.

While Essex county was gradually improving in the respects noted, it was

also gaining ground in other directions. In the laying out of new highways we find that in April, 1841, David Judd, of Essex county, Nelson J. Beach, of Lewis county, and Nathan Ingerson, of Jefferson county, were appointed commissioners to lay out and construct a road from Carthage eastward to Lake Champlain, "either in the town of Crown Point or Moriah." This was an enterprise of great magnitude, the road stretching across Lewis, Herkimer, Hamilton and Essex counties to Crown Point. For the improvement of the road from "the village of Moriah Four Corners to the village of Elizabethtown" and repairing "the road from the latter place to the house kept by A. R. Delano, in West Moriah." These two towns were taxed \$750 in 1846 for roads under Nathaniel Storrs and David Judd, as commissioners. In the following year John Fitzgerald, John Rogers and Elias Goodspeed were appointed commissioners to construct "a road from MacLenathan Falls, Franklin county, to the west line of Clinton county, through the south part of Black Brook, to the Port Kent and Hopkinton turnpike; also from Purmort's Rapids, in Essex county, to intersect the latter named turnpike;" seven years were allowed for making this improvement. In 1855 Sylvanus Wells, of Jay, Harvey Holt, of Keene, and Henry N. Haskell, of Newcomb, were made commissioners to "construct a road from Roderick McKenzie's, in Keene, to Newcomb." In 1857 Henry J. Campbell and Timothy S. Nash, of Essex, and James C. Drake, of Malone, were appointed commissioners to "lay out a road district from Thomas's survey, running west through North Elba to Cold Brook, Franklin county;" and in the next year Daniel Ames, of North Elba, Eli Clough and Edward C. Conger, of St. Armand, were designated to construct a road "from the old State road in Essex, to the Port Kent and Hopkinton turnpike in Franklin county." In the year 1866 Timothy S. Nash, of North Elba, and David Hinds and Charles W. Jones, of Keene, were appointed to complete a highway from the old military tract, through North Elba to Cold Brook, Franklin county. Most of these highways were opened in course of time, besides the construction of innumerable shorter roads laid out by town authorities, thus giving the inhabitants ample facilities for communication with each other and with distant points.

Other ferries, too, were meanwhile established, either as new ones or to supersede those whose privileges had expired. Abram Welding was given the privilege of establishing a ferry from Westport to Panton, Vt., in 1871; Clark P. Ives, from Port Marshal to Orville, in 1874; Charles E. Haskins from Essex village to Charlotte, in 1877, and John Holcomb, of Vermont, from Barber's Point (Westport) to Panton in the same year.

Essex county, fortunately for itself, has never been a political hotbed. While its inhabitants have always felt a deep and abiding interest in public affairs and have shown their political preferences at the polls and supported each his party with earnest deeds, still it has never witnessed the unseemly



strifes, the bitter wrangling and the persistent struggle for this or that party success, office or emolument that have characterized some localities. The county is Republican in politics and succeeding the active political campaign of 1860 gave a majority for Lincoln. But scarcely had the general rejoicing of that party ceased ere there came from the South murmurs of discontent and hostility. How they swelled and increased through the ensuing winter, how State after State fell away from its allegiance to the Union, until the whole South resounded with preparations for war, is well known matter of general history. Here, as in most other northern counties, men looked on in amazement believing to the last in a continuation of peace, and the impossibility that the stability of the republic could be endangered by the mad lunacy of secession. But it was not to be, and in April came the startling news of the bombardment and surrender of Fort Sumter. A period of unwonted excitement followed; meetings were held, the enrollment of volunteers began and ere long the county was in the midst of warlike preparations. The reader will find in the chapter devoted to a history of the county in the Rebellion, a full account of the events occurring here in that connection.

With the dawn of peace following the success of the Union arms in the South, the inhabitants again turned their attention and energies to the ordinary pursuits of life, which have not since been interrupted. The natural resources of the county have been extensively developed and manufacturing has been extended to an encouraging degree. The mining and manufacture of iron, particularly, has greatly increased, with the opening of the railroad along the lake in 1876 and the later branches to the mines giving vastly better transportation facilities; the graphite manufacture has been developed into a profitable industry; and recently the manufacture of wood pulp for paper and of paper itself has been established on an extensive scale in the town of Ticonderoga; other minor manufactures have also received encouraging attention. At the same time people have not neglected the great causes of education and religion, and schools and churches have multiplied rapidly in all directions; academies have been established and the general intelligence and morality of the different communities thereby advanced, until the county in this respect is among the foremost of the State. All of these various features of the county's progress and development are fully treated in the subsequent town histories.

What is to be the future of the great wilderness (of which the western part of Essex county embraces the most mountainous part) is somewhat uncertain. While portions of it are susceptible of cultivation and possess soil of great fertility so disposed as to favor the agriculturalist, there are vast tracts that must ever remain unfitted for such a purpose and valuable for settlement only for the timber that nature grows upon the ground or the mineral wealth that she has hoarded in the earth. There exist to-day, even in Essex county, wide differences of opinion as to the desirability of further attempts to penetrate the

wilderness tract by new avenues of communication with the outer world, by navigation, or railroads, or both. The wilderness is a great sanitarium of almost marvelous potency in building up debilitated humanity; it has become widely known as such; people are becoming better acquainted with its magnificent extent; it is, also, the sportsman's beatitude, abounding with fish and game, and the incomparable beauty and grandeur of its scenery are gradually becoming better known and appreciated among the people of the country who possess the means to erect cottages among its most picturesque scenes. For these reasons a tide of summer travel annually sets into the wilderness, which increases from year to year and is a source of revenue to a numerous class, and hotels, boarding-houses and sanitariums have sprung into existence throughout the depths of the forests, which are every summer filled with enthusiastic visitors from all parts of the country. An element has thus been created (and it is one wielding no mean influence) which does not desire the material development of this region. On the other hand, the miners, the lumbermen, the land owners, the manufacturers, and others, turning their attention to the sources of their own prosperity, favor the opening up of the region for other purposes than as a summer resort. Even now there is important legislation in progress which is likely to exert a weighty influence upon these questions, through the appointment of a commission for the proper preservation of the forests and game, and in other directions, but as the success or failure of all these measures is still a matter of conjecture, we must leave each reader to form his opinion on the subject. An elaborate topographical survey is now in progress, which was begun more than ten years ago under the direction of Verplanck Colvin, in the prosecution of which the State has expended more than \$100,000, the reports of which will serve to greatly enlarge and extend the general knowledge of this remarkable region. It will not be out of place nor without interest to quote as follows from the conclusion of his report of 1873, the first one issued: —

“The vastness and wildness of the region are better appreciated when, at this late day, we are able to find within it mountains from 3,000 to 4,000 feet in height, nameless, unascended and unmeasured. The incorrectness of the existing map is understood, when we discover that the famous Blue Mountain, or Mount Emmons, is not 4,000 feet in height (as represented), and that it is apparently inferior to the lofty neighboring summit known as Snowy Mountain, which rises to an altitude of 3,859 feet, where on the map is shown a blank.

“Again, while geographers have expatiated upon the great elevation (for this region) of the Lakes Colden and Avalanche in Essex county, a little more than 2,700 feet above the sea, they have gone blindly on, unaware that far in the south portion of the woods, the Cedar lakes — from whose shores the snows of winter depart slowly — lie on the great and most elevated plateau of the wilderness, at an elevation of 2,493 feet; not flowing to the St. Lawrence as represented on their maps, but to the Hudson River.



“As a matter of technical geographical interest, the discovery of the true highest pond-source of the Hudson river is, perhaps, more interesting. Far above the chilly waters of Lake Avalanche, at an elevation of 4,293 feet, is Summit Water, a minute, unpretending tear of the clouds — as it were — a lonely pool, shivering in the breezes of the mountains, and sending its limpid surplus through Feldspar brook to the Opalescent river, the well-spring of the Hudson.

“The question of water supply, also, is intimately connected with this proposition. I have elsewhere expressed my opinion that within one hundred years the cold, healthful, living waters of the wilderness — the home of the brook trout, a fish that cannot exist in an impure stream — will be required for the domestic water supply of the cities of the Hudson River Valley.”<sup>1</sup>

The general history of the county is closed with the following statistics and the civil list: —

The following agricultural statistics for 1880 may profitably be compared with those already given of earlier periods: —

Number of bushels of barley raised, 9,772; buckwheat, 53,277; corn, 132,379; oats, 281,903; rye, 11,175; wheat, 19,372; pounds of butter made, 101,749; cheese, 915. There were in the county, 6,212 horses; 393 oxen; milch cows, 10,638; other cattle, 14,145; sheep, 33,085; hogs, 4,323.

There were 188 manufacturing establishments of all kinds, with an invested capital of \$3,955,950; the wages paid out for the year were \$470,136; and the product had a value of \$3,008,617.

The assessed valuation of the county was \$10,932,986, on real estate, and \$833,142 on personal.

Following is the civil list of Essex county.

*Representatives in Congress, residents of Essex County.* — Benjamin Pond, 1811 and 1813; Asa Adgate, 1815 and 1817; Ezra C. Gross, 1819 and 1821; Henry H. Ross, 1825; Isaac Finch, 1829; Reuben Whallon, 1833; Augustus C. Hand, 1839; Thomas A. Tomlinson, 1841; Orlando Kellogg, 1847, 1862, 1864; George R. Andrews, 1849; George A. Simmons, 1853 and 1855; Orlando Kellogg, 1864–65 and 1866–67; Robert S. Hale to fill vacancy, caused by death of Orlando Kellogg; 1874–75 Robert S. Hale; 1879–80 and 1881–82, John Hammond.

*Supreme Court, Fourth District.* — Augustus C. Hand, 1847.

*County Judges.* — Daniel Ross, 1800; Dean Edson, 1823; Reuben Whallon, 1831; Wolcott Tyrill, 1838; Henry H. Ross, 1847; John E. McVine, 1848; Robert S. Hale, 1856; Byron Pond, 1864; Francis A. Smith, present Judge and Surrogate.

<sup>1</sup> The reader is referred to the several elaborate reports of Mr. Colvin for further information upon this region; to *Wallace and Stoddard's Complete Guide Book to the Wilderness*, and other similar works.

*State Senators.*—Reuben Sandford, 1828; Augustus C. Hand, 1844; James S. Whallon, 1847; Eli W. Rogers, 1852; Ralph A. Loveland, 1857; Palmer E. Havens, 1863; Moss K. Platt, 1866–67; Matthew Hale, 1868–69; Christopher F. Morton, 1870–71; Samuel Ames, 1872–73; Franklin W. Tobey, 1874 to 1877 inclusive; William W. Rockwell, 1878 to 1881 inclusive; Shepard P. Bowen, 1882 and to the present.

*Members of Assembly.*—William Gilliland (Clinton and Essex) 1800; William Bailey, 1802; Thomas Stower (Essex), 1803; Theodoross Ross, 1804–06; Stephen Cuyler, 1807; Benjamin Pond, 1808–10; Delavan de Lance, jr., 1811–12; Manoah Miller, 1813; Levi Thompson, 1814; Reuben Sanford, 1815–17; John Hoffnagle, 1818, 1819, 1820 and 1827; Ebenezer Douglass, 1821; Isaac Finch, 1822 and 1824; Asa Adgate, 1823; William Smith, 1825–26; Ezra C. Gross, 1828–29; William Kirby, 1830; Joseph S. Reed, 1831; Isaac Vanderwarker, 1832; Almerin Smith, 1833; Barnabus Myrick, 1834; Thomas Tomlinson, 1835–36; Gideon Hammond, 1837, 1838, 1839, and 1844; George A. Simmons, 1840–41–42; Samuel Shumway, 1843; John C. Hammond, 1845; Caleb D. Barton, 1846; William H. Butrick, 1847–48; George W. Goff, 1849–50; Abraham Weldon, 1851–52; Jonathan Burnett, 1853–54; Nathaniel C. Boynton, 1855; John A. Lee, 1856; Ralph A. Loveland, 1857; Monroe Hall, 1858–59; Martin Finch, 1850–51; Palmer E. Havens, 1862, 1863 and 1867; William H. Richardson, 1864, 1865 and 1866; Samuel Root, 1868–69; Clayton H. Delano, 1870–71; Franklin W. Tobey, 1872–73; Gardner Pope, 1874; William E. Calkins, 1875–76; Benjamin D. Clapp, 1877–78; Warren French Weston, 1879; L. Coe Young, 1880; F. B. Smith, 1881; L. Chester Bartlett, 1882; William H. Olin, 1883–84;

*Sheriffs.*—Thomas Stower, 1799; Jonathan Lynde, 1802; John Hoffnagle, jr., 1806; William Kirby, 1808, 1821 and 1822; Delavan de Lance, 1812; George Throop, 1813; Luther Adgate, 1819; Boughton Lobdell, 1815; Samuel Murdock, 1825, 1831; Leander J. Lockwood, 1828; Solomon Everest, 1831; John Harris, 1837; Alanson Wilder, 1840; Chilion A. Tremble, 1843; Norman Page, 1846; Aaron B. March, 1849; Charles W. Ensign, 1852; Jacob Parmerter, 1855; Elisha A. Adams, 1858; William W. Tabor, 1861; Ransom L. Locke, 1864; Abijah Perry, 1867; Chauncey D. Bullis, 1870; Samuel S. Olcott, 1873; Judson C. Ware, 1876; Edward H. Talbot, 1882; Rollin L. Jenkins, present sheriff.

*County Clerks.*—Stephen Cuyler, 1799; Simeon Frisbee, 1808; William Kirby, 1813; Thomas Stower, 1815; Ashley Pond, 1821; Leonard Stow, 1827; Edward S. Cuyler, 1833; Edmund F. Williams, 1839; George S. Nicholson, 1848; Elisha A. Adams, 1851; Robert W. Livingstone, 1857; William E. Calkins, 1860; Joseph A. Titus, 1872; John S. Roberts, 1878, and present clerk.

*County Treasurers.*—Safford E. Hale, 1848; John L. Merriam, 1857;



Charles N. Williams, 1860; Oliver Abel, jr., 1872; Eugene Wyman, 1884; Daniel F. Payne, present treasurer.

*Surrogates.* — William Gilliland, 1800; James McCrea, 1801; Thomas Treadwell, 1807; Ezra C. Gross, 1815; Ashley Pond, 1819; John Calkins, 1821; Augustus C. Hand, 1831; Orlando Kellogg, 1840; Robert W. Livingstone, 1844. In 1846 the duties of this office were merged in the office of county judge.

*Special Judge and Surrogate.* — Martin F. Nicholson, 1857. This office was abolished in 1860.

*District Attorneys.* — Ralph Hascall, 1818; Dean Edson, 1821; David B. McNeil, 1828; Gardner Stone, 1833; Moses T. Clough, 1844; Edward S. Shumway (resigned), 1850; James P. Butler, 1852; Hiram M. Chace, 1855; Byron Pond, 1858; Martin Finch, 1864; Arod K. Dudley, 1867; Rowland C. Kellogg, 1876 and present district attorney.

*Delegates to Constitutional Conventions.* — Thomas Treadwell (Clinton and Essex), 1801; Reuben Sanford (Essex), 1821; George A. Simmons, 1846; Matthew Hale, 1867.

*Regent of University.* — Robert S. Hale, 1859.

*Present Officers of the County:* —

County judge and surrogate — Francis A. Smith, of Elizabethtown.

Sheriff — Rollin L. Jenkins, of Moriah.

County clerk — John S. Roberts, of Elizabethtown.

Deputy county clerk — Joseph E. Houston, of Elizabethtown.

District attorney — Rowland C. Kellogg, of Elizabethtown.

County treasurer — Daniel F. Payne, of Wadham's Mills.

Under sheriff and jailer — Geo. W. Jenkins, of Elizabethtown.

Superintendent of poor — Charles N. Holt, of Keene.

Clerk of board of supervisors — Geo. S. Nicholson, of Elizabethtown.

Coroners — Wm. C. Rooney, Schroon Lake; M. W. Wilson, of Ticonderoga; Roger Hickok, Wilmington; Clark M. Pease, Crown Point.

Justices of sessions — Shepard P. Olcott, of North Hudson; Lemuel B. Treadway, of Port Henry.

School commissioners — Fayette S. Miller, of Lewis, 1st district; Chester B. McLaughlin, of Moriah, 2d district.

Loan commissioners — Charles Stevens, of Westport; George G. Tobey, of Jay.

Under the second constitution, Essex county was included in the Fourth senatorial district. Under the constitution of 1846 it was placed in the Fourteenth district with Clinton and Warren counties. In 1857 it formed, with the same counties, the Sixteenth district, and so remained until 1879 when the same three counties were made to constitute the Nineteenth district. By the act of 1797 Essex county, with Clinton and Washington counties, was made the

Seventh congressional district. In 1802 the Eleventh district was made to embrace Essex, Clinton and Saratoga counties. In 1808 Essex, Clinton, Franklin and Saratoga were constituted the Eighth district. In 1812 Essex, Clinton, Franklin and Warren and in 1813 Washington counties comprised the Twelfth district with two members. The same counties without Washington, constituted the Nineteenth district; by act of 1822 Clinton, Essex and Warren were made the Thirteenth district in 1832. In 1842 Essex and Washington were made the Fourteenth district. In 1851 Essex, Clinton and Franklin constituted the Sixteenth district. In 1862 Essex, Clinton and Warren were made the Sixteenth district. In 1873 the same counties were constituted the Eighteenth district. The county is the Fourth judicial district.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### ESSEX COUNTY IN THE REBELLION.<sup>1</sup>

Call to Arms—Prompt Response in Essex County—First Official Action to Provide for Payment of Volunteers—Details of Official Action upon the Bounty Question—Men Enlisted from each town—Deaths in each Town—The Twenty-second Regiment—The Thirty-fourth Regiment—The Thirty-eighth Regiment—The Forty-fourth Regiment—The Seventy-seventh Regiment—The Ninety-sixth Regiment—Fifth New York Cavalry—The One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment—The One Hundred and Fifty-third Regiment—The Second New York Cavalry.

IT is needless to dwell upon the promptness, enthusiasm and the patriotism with which the inhabitants of Essex county, in common with those of other sections throughout the Northern States, sprang forward at the call of the government for soldiers to put down the Rebellion organized by the hosts of misguided people of the Southern States. The subject, although never to be worn threadbare, has nevertheless been the frequent theme of the most gifted pens in song and story, and the banner of peace floated over the entire republic at the end of the sanguinary and heroic struggle. The record achieved by the brave men who gave up the comforts and safety of their homes for the dangers and hardships, the wounds and death of the battle-field, is one that may ever be looked upon with pride by every resident of the county; while the liberality displayed by those who saw it as their duty to remain at home, softened the rigors of war and gave the volunteers the most practical as-

<sup>1</sup> This chapter is largely condensed from the materials collected and published in Mr. Watson's *History of Essex County* (1869), from which we are permitted to make extracts, through the courtesy of Judge W. C. Watson, of Plattsburgh, and others interested in Mr. Watson's copyrights. That work was published at a time when data of this character was much more accessible than now, which renders the work still more valuable, and its use in these pages still more desirable. The records of several of the organizations, particularly of the 118th Regiment, have been revised and numerous necessary corrections made by Robert W. Livingston, of Elizabethtown, and others, and are supplemented by the proceedings of the board of supervisors relative to bounties, etc.



surances that their sacrifices were appreciated at their full value. As the tide of war rolled on and call succeeded call to fill the depleted ranks of the army, the county officials did not hesitate in their duty of providing for the payment of such generous bounties as would serve the purpose, which action was promptly and freely sustained by the town authorities.

As early as November 14, 1862, at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, action was taken towards raising money to pay volunteers from the several towns of the county. Hon. Palmer E. Havens addressed the board on this subject by invitation, and was followed by Hon. O. Kellogg, who gave his views relative to the propriety of raising a volunteer fund in the towns by tax. Hon. A. C. Hand also addressed the board. The following proceedings then took place:—

“Mr. Lee presented the following resolution and moved its adoption:—

“*Resolved*, That our Member of Assembly be requested to ask the next Legislature to provide means by law for raising the money paid to volunteers pursuant to the votes of any town in this county by a tax on such town and that said law provide for immediate action in the premises. Adopted.

“Mr. Lee then moved the following resolution:—

“*Resolved*, That the following are the respective sums heretofore raised in the respective towns hereinafter named for the payment of bounties to volunteers which ought to be assessed and raised by tax in said towns respectively, for the purpose of repaying said sums to wit:—

Chesterfield.....	\$ 435 38
Crown Point.....	2,850 00
Essex.....	1,470 00
Jay.....	300 00
Gene.....	50 00
Lewis, with interest.....	350 00
Minerva.....	357 63
Moriah.....	1,225 00
Newcomb.....	250 00
Ticonderoga, with interest.....	1,623 50
Westport.....	550 00

“Unanimously adopted.”

At a meeting held December 11, 1862, Mr. Prescott moved the following resolutions:—

“*Resolved*, That our Member of Assembly be instructed to inquire into the nature of the alleged abuses practiced on our volunteers as set forth in the protest and petition of Mr. Stone and others. Adopted.”

Following is a copy of the protest alluded to:—

“The undersigned citizens of Essex county, New York, beg leave to represent that they are reliably informed of serious and unnecessary hardships being inflicted on soldier citizens of said county, in the matter of pay and clothing, etc, to wit:—

“That in addition to great and grievous and unnecessary delays in the pay-

ment of their wages, we are reliably informed that there is quite a common practice growing or grown up on the part of paymasters of denying that they have government funds in hand to pay with, and then referring the individual soldiers to seeming outside parties, who, for a consideration, to wit: a discount of greater or less rate, five to ten per cent. or other rates 'will advance the amounts required,' and we are informed and believe that in all such cases where payments are past due, said practice is the result of combinations and collusions on the part of paymasters to defraud the soldiers for the benefit of the conspiring parties, and we most strenuously and seriously protest against any of our citizens being compelled to submit to such extortions, and we claim for them full and prompt pay of the sums due them without discount or defalcation, according to regulations provided for the purpose. Also in the matter of clothing we are reliably informed that many of the soldiers from the State of New York were furnished with clothing by said State for and on account of the government of the United States, that on the arrival of said soldiers at Washington they have been thus compelled to cast off said clothing and take such other as was provided at Washington in full supply, and that subsequently said soldiers have been compelled to pay for such State clothing (as they had thus received and been obliged to cast off) out of their wages due, the sums of cost having been deducted from the sums of wages due to said soldiers, thereby throwing upon individuals the burden of any dispute or misunderstanding, if such exist, between the State of New York and the United States government. And we most strenuously protest against such foul injustice to said individuals, and solicit the appointment by the Legislature of the State of New York of a competent commission to proceed to Washington at the expense of the State to investigate the truth of such charges, both as regards pay and clothing, and report to the appointing party the result of such examination for further action in the premises, or take such other steps as may seem necessary that our citizen soldiers may be protected in their rights, and obtain their just dues.

"While entering the above protest, we, the undersigned, at same time fully and equally protest our firm allegiance and loyalty to the United States government, fully believing that the best interests of said government will be found in doing justice to the last cent to our soldiers, respecting the rights of our citizens and of our State government, believing also that our best loyalty to our State governments consists in full and firm allegiance to our general government; and thus the undersigned will ever protest and pray.

"Essex county, New York, Dec. 8, 1862.

"WM. H. STONE,  
"MILOTE BAKER,  
"J. G. WITHERBEE,  
"A. B. WALDO,  
"ROBT. S. HALE,  
"O. KELLOGG,  
"O. KELLOGG, JR.,  
"GEO. S. NICHOLSON,

W. T. FOOT,  
ORRIN PHELPS,  
E. D. BABCOCK,  
JOHN A. LEE,  
E. W. ROGERS,  
L. D. BROWN,  
WM. E. CALKINS,  
SAMUEL ROOT."



At a meeting of the board held December 11, 1863, the following proceedings in substance were had: —

“ Mr. Burleigh, chairman of the committee to draft resolutions for the action of this board in relation to bounties for volunteers, reported as follows: —

“ *Resolved*, That the treasurer and clerk of the county of Essex be, and they hereby are authorized and instructed to issue in their names of office bonds, pledging the credit of the county for the payment thereof to the amounts and subject to the regulations hereinafter specified.

“ *First*, Said bonds shall not exceed in amount the sum of one hundred seventy-two thousand five hundred dollars. They shall be signed by the said treasurer and county clerk and sealed by said clerk with his seal of office, and a record of the dates, amounts and numbers of the same shall be kept by said treasurer, and a like record by said clerk. They shall bear interest at 7 per cent. per annum, and shall be payable one-fifth in one year from the 1st day of March next, one-fifth in two years and one-fifth in three years therefrom, one-fifth in four and one-fifth in five, with interest annually, payable on said days of payment above named, and shall be in the following form: The County of Essex, in the State of New York, promises to pay to the bearer the sum of ——— dollars, with interest at 7 per cent. per annum, one-fifth of the principal with all interest then accrued, on the first day of March in each of the years 1865, '66, '67, '68 and '69, at the office of the treasurer of said county. This bond is issued for the benefit of the town of ——— in aid of raising volunteers, and is first transferable only by the endorsement of a majority of the members of the Board of Town Auditors of said town, afterwards transferable by delivery.

“ Dated ———

“ [L. S.]

——— County Treasurer.

——— County Clerk.

“ *Fourth*, Such bonds after delivery to such supervisor may be sold by such board of town auditors at not less than the face thereof and the moneys raised from such sale shall be applied to the payment of bounties to volunteers under said call and on account of the quota of said town, not exceeding five hundred dollars to each volunteer or to the reimbursement of persons who may have advanced moneys for such payment to said volunteers not exceeding the same amount to each volunteer and to no other purpose whatever. The first transfer, etc., etc. . . . .

“ On motion of Mr. Butterfield, it was ordered that the report be accepted. Mr. Roberts moved as an amendment to the report that the sum to be paid to volunteers be fixed at \$300. A vote being had the amendment was lost and the report adopted.

“ G. S. NICHOLSON,

“ Clerk of the Board of Supervisors.”

On the 16th of November, 1864, at the annual meeting of the supervisors of Essex county, the treasurer of said county reported that bonds had been issued to the several towns, as follows:—

To the town of Crown Point.....	\$21,000 00
“ “ Elizabethtown.....	7,500 00
“ “ Essex.....	7,506 22
“ “ Jay.....	5,600 00
“ “ Keene.....	2,653 00
“ “ Lewis.....	9,100 00
“ “ Minerva.....	4,000 00
“ “ Moriah.....	29,000 00
“ “ Newcomb.....	1,500 00
“ “ North Elba.....	1,500 00
“ “ North Hudson.....	3,025 00
“ “ Schroon.....	2,000 00
“ “ St. Armand.....	1,500 00
“ “ Ticonderoga.....	18,500 00
“ “ Westport.....	6,952 50
“ “ Willsborough.....	7,000 00
Total.....	\$128,336 72

In pursuance to a resolution of said Board, March 15, 1864, bonds were issued as follows:—

To the town of Crown Point.....	\$6,000 00
“ “ Elizabethtown.....	1,075 00
“ “ Essex.....	4,600 00
“ “ Jay.....	2,100 00
“ “ Lewis.....	300 00
“ “ Schroon.....	2,400 00
“ “ Ticonderoga.....	4,800 00
“ “ Willsborough.....	120 00
“ “ Wilmington.....	110 90
Total.....	\$22,565 90

In pursuance to resolution of said board, August 5th, 1864, bonds were issued as follows:—

To the town of Chesterfield.....	\$25,500 00
“ “ Crown Point.....	15,600 00
“ “ Elizabethtown.....	12,000 00
“ “ Essex.....	15,500 00
“ “ Jay.....	10,000 00
“ “ Keene.....	2,500 00
“ “ Moriah.....	39,000 00
“ “ Newcomb.....	1,500 00
“ “ North Elba.....	2,500 00
“ “ North Hudson.....	2,000 00
“ “ Schroon.....	15,000 00
“ “ St. Armand.....	3,000 00
“ “ Ticonderoga.....	22,000 00
“ “ Westport.....	14,500 00
“ “ Willsborough.....	11,500 00
“ “ Wilmington.....	5,000 00
“ “ Lewis.....	19,500 00
Total.....	\$222,600 00



By the report of C. N. Williams, county treasurer in 1865, it is shown that bonds had been issued pursuant to a resolution of the Board of Supervisors, passed February 10th, 1865, to the different towns of the county as follows: —

To Chesterfield.....	\$ 8,000 00
“ Crown Point.....	15,000 00
“ Elizabethtown.....	7,827 00
“ Essex.....	6,708 81
“ Jay.....	6,600 00
“ Keene.....	3,738 00
“ Lewis.....	3,500 00
“ Minerva.....	6,000 00
“ Moriah.....	32,500 00
“ Newcomb.....	1,500 00
“ North Elba.....	1,000 00
“ North Hudson.....	1,400 00
“ Schroon.....	6,500 00
“ St. Armand.....	1,200 00
“ Ticonderoga.....	14,000 00
“ Westport.....	6,400 00
“ Wilmington.....	1,600 00
Total.....	\$123,973.81
Total amount due from all the towns at above date.....	\$61,233 06

An approximation only can be reached of the number of troops contributed by Essex county to the Union army. The official military records and the census returns which are known to be imperfect, are far below the reality, exhibits a total of 1,306. These records do not embrace the large numbers who were mingled in the various other organizations of the State, and the census returns must most inadequately exhibit the true amount. Many other residents of Essex county, estimated at the time at several hundred in the aggregate, were enlisted by the active zeal of agents from several of the New England States. The excess of \$7 per month pay, offered by Vermont, allured large numbers of the youth of the county, who enlisted into the line of that State. The archives of New York show that from the recruits credited on the quota of Essex county, 366 deaths occurred on the field of battle from wounds, accidents, and diseases incident to the exposure of the service. The actual casualties among the citizens of Essex were far heavier, and can never with any degree of accuracy be computed.

An attempt to ascertain the expenses and disbursements in their infinitely varied forms is still more difficult and unsatisfactory. The amounts actually authorized by the Board of Supervisors to be raised by the county and several towns, at different sessions and without the accumulation of interest reached a total of \$553,871.47. This great sum does not include the vast amounts realized by the liberal contributions derived from personal and local efforts nor the money expended in recruiting and equipping the early volunteers. Nor the supplies of provisions, clothing, medicines and other subscriptions essential to the health and comfort of the troops. Heavy sums were aggregated by the

individual payment of the \$300, by an early act authorized to avoid the draft, and by the purchase of substitutes. Private liberality and patriotic zeal expended in silence and secrecy vast amounts which were unknown and incomputable. The magnitude of all these contributions and expenditures can never be known, nor will human pen ever record the extent and value of these efforts.

The following tabular statements exhibit interesting statistics illustrative of the devotedness and responsibilities incurred by the towns of Essex county:—

*Number Enlisted by Several Towns.*

Chesterfield.....	92	North Elba.....	27
Crown Point.....	192	North Hudson.....	24
Elizabethtown.....	105	St. Armands.....	19
Essex.....	60	Schroon.....	94
Jay.....	93	Ticonderoga.....	128
Keene.....	47	Westport.....	58
Lewis.....	115	Willsboro.....	43
Minerva.....	50	Wilmington.....	64
Moriah.....	157		—
Newcomb.....	8	Total.....	1,306

*Died, etc.*

Chesterfield.....	28	North Elba.....	6
Crown Point.....	44	North Hudson.....	
Elizabethtown.....	19	St. Armands.....	7
Essex.....	16	Schroon.....	28
Jay.....	25	Ticonderoga.....	45
Keene.....	9	Westport.....	24
Lewis.....	35	Willsboro.....	17
Minerva.....	12	Wilmington.....	16
Moriah.....	44		—
Newcomb.....	1	Total.....	366

Besides the official action here detailed, generous sums of money were raised by volunteer subscription; the ladies of the county did wonderful work to this end in the various towns and villages and their patriotic labors to provide comforts for their fathers, husbands and sons in the army are worthy of enduring remembrance.

Following the proclamation of the president making a call for the first 75,000 volunteers, the enlistment of five companies in Essex county was almost simultaneously begun. As the enlistments in these organizations progressed, they were accelerated to some extent by recruits from outside the county lines, while many Essex county volunteers joined other organizations in various parts of the State. A company was recruited in Keeseville composed of about equal proportions of residents of Essex and Clinton counties of this organization. Gordon T. Thomas was elected captain; Oliver D. Peabody, first lieutenant, and Carlisle D. Beaumont, second lieutenant.

Another company was raised in Schroon from the southern towns of Essex and parts of Warren county. The officers elected were Lyman Ormsby, captain; J. R. Seaman, first lieutenant, and Daniel Burgey, second lieutenant.



A third company was recruited in Moriah, and other eastern towns, and elected Miles P. S. Cadwell, captain; Edward F. Edgerly and Clark W. Huntley, first and second lieutenants. These companies were distinguished as companies C, I, and K, of the Twenty-second regiment New York Volunteers, in which they were incorporated on its organization upon June 6th, 1861. On the promotion of Captain Thomas, Lieutenants Peabody and Beaumont were respectively advanced a grade, and Charles B. Pierson appointed second lieutenant of Company C.

A company raised in Crown Point and adjacent towns, embracing 108 men, of which Leland Doolittle was elected captain, Hiram Buck, jr., first, and John B. Wright, second lieutenant, was mustered into service as Company H, of the Thirty-fourth Regiment of New York Volunteers. Before the departure of this company for Albany it was supplied with every equipment except arms, at an expense of \$2,000, by the characteristic patriotism and munificence of the people of Crown Point.

The fifth company, recruited in Elizabethtown and the central towns of the county, was incorporated as Company K, into the Thirty-eighth Regiment, and was the last company accepted from New York by the government under the first proclamation. Samuel C. Dwyer was elected captain of this company, William H. Smith, first, and Augustus C. H. Livingstone, second lieutenant.

Following is Mr. Watson's account of the career of the Twenty-second Regiment: —

*"The Twenty-Second New York Volunteers.* — On the 16th of May, 1861, this regiment was accepted by the government, and Walter Phelps, jr., of Glens Falls, commissioned colonel, Gorton T. Thomas, of Keeseville, lieutenant-colonel, and John McKee, jr., of Cambridge, major. It left Albany for Washington on the 28th of June, and while passing through Baltimore on the night of the 30th, was assailed at the depot by an armed mob. A private<sup>1</sup> was killed, but the regiment was promptly formed, and returned the fire, wounding several of the assailants. Order was soon restored by the city police, and the troops proceeded on their march without further molestation. The Twenty-second was employed until the April following in garrison duty and occasional reconnaissances in the vicinity of Washington. Through the several months following it was occupied in services that most severely try the spirit, the constancy and endurance of the soldier. It was constantly engaged in marches and changes of position amid rain and darkness, or rushed from station to station, upon open and comfortless cars, and upon tedious and fruitless expeditions.

"At length the ardent aspirations of the regiment for active service seemed about to be gratified, when as a part of McDowell's corps, it was ordered to advance in support of the Army of the Potomac, but, arrested on the threshold of this movement, McDowell was directed towards the Shenandoah.

---

<sup>1</sup> Edward Burge, Company I, of Pottersville, Warren county.

After the battle of Cedar Mountain the regiment participated in the continuous engagement, which extended through several successive days in the vicinity of that field. On the 27th of August it marched with its division from Warrenton in the direction of Gainesville with the design of intercepting the retreat of Jackson, who had attempted to penetrate to the rear of the Union lines, and of breaking up his command. Ignorant of the position of the enemy, the division advanced slowly and with extreme caution. On the second day of its march Jackson was discovered near Gainesville in great force. The Federal troops consisted of King's division, and were commanded by McDowell in person.

"The line of battle was promptly formed and an action immediately, and about an hour before sunset, commenced. McDowell's position was upon the Gainesville pike, while the rebels occupied a wood about half a mile in front, with open fields between the two armies. The engagement was opened by a furious cannonade on both sides. The rebels had secured an accurate range of the road, and swept it by a continual storm of shells, and with fearful accuracy. A battery, supported by the Twenty-second Regiment, was silenced and almost entirely annihilated. A ditch running parallel to the pike afforded a protection to the regiment, while the shells and shot, passing just above them, completely furrowed and tore up the road. For an hour this firing was maintained with unabated vigor, when the enemy, emerging from the woods in a magnificent line a mile in length, charged, uttering the wildest yells as they rushed upon the Union position. All the Federal batteries, directed by McDowell personally, which could be brought to bear opened upon them with grape and cannister. At every discharge broad gaps were visible in their ranks. The Wisconsin brigade attached to this division poured upon them a terrible volley, and along both lines the fire of musketry was incessant and severe. The rebels paused in their advance, but stubbornly sustained their position until dark, and then slowly and defiantly withdrew, leaving the Union troops in possession of the field. They remained on the ground until midnight, and then, in order to receive rations, fell back to Manassas Junction. The Wisconsin brigade lost nearly half its strength in killed and wounded; but the Twenty-second Regiment owing to its protected position, escaped with only slight casualties.

"While the Twenty-second with its brigade was reposing in this brief bivouac, Fitz John Porter's corps, early on the 29th, marched past them to the front, and was soon after followed by the brigade. The fighting raged through the day, Jackson gradually falling back towards Thoroughfare Gap. The Twenty-second was not engaged until towards evening; King's division was then ordered to charge the retreating enemy, and to complete their fancied defeat. With loud and exultant cheers they were pursued the distance of half a mile, in apparent great disorder, when the Union troops were suddenly arrested by a withering discharge of small arms. The division, instead of be-



ing deployed to meet this attack, was massed in solid order and attempted to advance at double quick. In this form and unable to fire except in the front, it received destructive discharges, in front and from a wood upon the left flank. The troops by their formation were rendered almost powerless for offensive action. Darkness was approaching; the men began to give way, and the promise of victory was soon converted into an utter rout. This engagement was known as the battle of Groveton or Kittle Run.

"After this disaster the division was attached to Porter's corps. Cannonading and skirmishing continued along the whole front through the 30th until about two P. M., when the entire line was ordered to advance in a simultaneous charge. The brigade to which the Twenty-second belonged, was in the van of this division. The charging column of the division was two regiments deep; the Fourteenth New York, on the right, and the Thirtieth New York on the left, and followed by the Twenty-second and Twenty-fourth New York, at a distance of about twenty yards, Berdan's sharp-shooters being deployed as skirmishers. This force constituted the brigade. The Union troops charged through a wood into an open field. The rebels were entrenched about two hundred yards in advance, behind a railroad embankment, and immediately opened a heavy fire with grape, cannister, solid shot and shell, supported by a terrible discharge of musketry. The roar of cannon was deafening, and the air was filled with missiles, but the gallant brigade rushed forward. The Twenty-second became intermingled with the Thirtieth when within fifty yards of the enemy's line, and was compelled to halt. At that moment the rebels were abandoning their works, and scattering in every direction; many, throwing down their arms, came into the Federal ranks. But the pause was fatal to the promised success. The troops of the brigade hesitated to advance, and commenced a rapid and disordered firing. The confidence of the rebels was restored by this hesitancy, and they immediately reoccupied their strong position. The fire of the enemy, which had been partially suspended, was now resumed with increased intensity. The Union troops were rapidly falling, and it was next to impossible to remove the wounded from the field, as both flanks were swept by the enemy's guns. At this juncture a brigade was ordered to the support of the troops in their perilous and terrible position; but it had scarcely emerged from the wood before it broke and fell back. The firing on both sides continued rapid and unrelenting.

"The remnant of the brigade able to fight continued to fire until their ammunition was all expended, and then slowly withdrew, closely pursued by the enemy. The whole army soon after fell back upon Centreville. On the retreat there was neither panic nor rout, but the troops sternly retired, fighting as they retreated.

"The casualties of the Twenty-second in the battle of these bloody days were severe almost beyond a parallel. On the 29th its effective strength was

626 men. Its loss in killed, wounded and missing, according to the record of the military bureau, was 504. The regiment entered the field with twenty-five officers, and on the night on which it fell back to Centreville it retained only one captain and four lieutenants. Colonel Frisbie, commanding the brigade on the 30th, was killed while urging the troops to advance.

"Lieutenant Colonel Gorton T. Thomas was mortally wounded, and soon after died in the hospital.<sup>1</sup> Among the other losses of the regiment were, in Company C, Lieutenants C. D. Beaumont, killed, and Charles B. Pierson, mortally wounded, and Captain O. D. Peabody, wounded; in Company I, Captain Lyman Ormsby and Lieutenant Daniel Burgey, wounded; in Company K, Captain M. P. S. Cadwell, killed, Lieutenants E. F. Edgerly and C. W. Huntley, wounded, the former twice. These companies averaged in these actions a loss of nearly thirty men each.

"On the 6th of November, the Twenty-second moved from its encampment at Upton's hill to act in the Antietam campaign. Its feeble relics of 126 combatants fought at South Mountain, were closely engaged and suffered heavily. The entire brigade in this action and at Antietam was under the command of Colonel Phelps. At Antietam the regiment was constantly exposed to a raking artillery fire, and out of sixty-seven, its whole remaining strength, it lost twenty-seven men. It was engaged, with its ranks restored to 210 effective strength, at Fredericksburg and afterwards at Chancellorsville, and although conspicuous in its conduct in those actions its casualties were inconsiderable. After the disaster at Chancellorsville the brigade acted as rear guard to the army and gallantly covered its retreat. On the succeeding 19th of June, on the expiration of its term of enlistment, the Twenty-second was mustered out of service at Albany.

"Subsequent to the desolation it sustained in the battles of the 29th and 30th of August the regimental organization was restored by the appointment of Major McKie, lieutenant-colonel, and Thomas M. Strong, major. The changes which occurred in the companies connected with Essex county, from their excessive losses, were numerous. In Company C, Beaumont and Pierson were succeeded by Gorton T. Thomas, jr., and James Valteau; in Company C, Lieutenant Burgey was promoted on the resignation of Seaman, and B. F. Wickham appointed second lieutenant; in Company K, Lieutenant B. F. Edgerly was appointed to the captaincy; Sergeant John J. Baker was appointed first lieutenant in place of Huntley, discharged for disability on account of wounds, and Charles Bellamy, sergeant, promoted to second lieutenant."

---

<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant Colonel Thomas was shot in the body, but maintained his seat, until, incapable of controlling his horse, he was borne into the ranks of the sharpshooters, and there by a singular coincidence, when falling from the saddle, was received into the arms of two neighboring boys attached to that regiment. He was carried by them to a house in the vicinity, and from thence was removed to the hospital at Washington, where he died of internal hemorrhage. No braver spirit or truer patriot moved on the battle-fields of the Rebellion. The name of Colonel Thomas was the first attached to the enlisting roll in the valley of the Ausable.



Officers attached to the Twenty-second regiment when mustered out of service, June 19th, 1863 : —

Walter Phelps, jr., colonel, brevet brigadier general U. S. V. ; Thomas J. Strong, lieutenant-colonel ; Lyman Ormsby, major ; Malachi Wiedman, adjutant ; James W. Schenck, quartermaster ; Elias L. Bissell, surgeon ; Austin W. Holden, assistant-surgeon, brevet-major, N. Y. V. ; Henry J. Bates, chaplain ; Captains, Addison L. Easterbrooks, Matther L. Teller, James W. McCoy, Oliver D. Peabody (brevet-major and lieutenant-colonel), Lucius E. Wilson, Daniel Burgey, Fred E. Ranger, Duncan Cameron, Benjamin F. Wickham, Edward F. Edgerly ; First Lieutenants, Amos T. Calkins, A. Hallock Holbrook, William H. Hoystadt, Gorton T. Thomas, Henry Cook, Warren Allen, James H. Merrill, John J. Baker, Asa W. Berry ; Second Lieutenants, Patrick McCall, James Valteau, Charles H. Aiken, George C. Kingsley, Salmon D. Sherman, George Wetmore, Lester A. Bartlett, Charles F. Bellamy.

*The Thirty-fourth Regiment New York Volunteers.* — This regiment, to which the company raised in Crown Point, commanded by Captain Doolittle, was attached as Company H, was organized on the 24th of May, 1861, by the elections of William La Due, colonel ; James A. Suitor, lieutenant-colonel, and Byron Laffin, major. The original officers of Company H left the service at an early period. Captain Doolittle resigned October, 1861. Lieutenant Buck was not mustered in, and Lieutenant Wright, having been promoted to fill these vacancies, first lieutenant May 11th, and captain November 11th, resigned on the 28th of November, 1861. James McCormick, of Crown Point, was appointed second lieutenant, September 29th, 1862, and promoted first lieutenant May 8th, 1863. Simeon P. McIntyre was appointed second lieutenant January, 1863, and George B. Coates December, 1862. Each of these officers was mustered out with the regiment June 30th, 1863. The Thirty-fourth arrived at Washington the 5th of July, 1861. It was soon after assigned to duty on the Upper Potomac. It was attached to the brigade then commanded by General Stone. The regiment was ordered to Ball's Bluff, but only arrived in time to aid in the removal of the wounded. Until the following spring it was occupied in continual harassing marches, and participated in all the hard services which were at that period encountered by most of the army. The regiment at this time became attached to the first brigade commanded by General Gorman and the second division of the second corps, and remained in this organization during its subsequent services.

The Thirty-fourth landed at Hampton at the initiation of the peninsula campaign on the 1st of April, 1862. It was actively engaged in the siege of Yorktown, and was the first regiment in the enemy's works at Winne's Mills. At Fair Oaks it was eminently distinguished, and was warmly engaged for nearly three hours, with a loss of ninety-four killed and wounded. The Thirty-fourth participated in most of the operations of this campaign, and at Glendale

and Malvern Hill lost more than one hundred men, and was compelled in the first action to abandon its killed and wounded to the enemy. It was now subject to a series of the most vigorous picket and field duties, and on the withdrawal of the army of the Potomac from the peninsula, the regiment endured the terrible forced march from Harrison's Landing to Newport News. The Thirty-fourth was transferred from that point by water to Alexandria, and was at once advanced to the front, encamping without tents or shelter, amid a furious storm of wind and rain. On the eventful 30th of August it was efficiently engaged in covering the retreat of Pope's army. At Antietam the Thirty-fourth entered the field on a double quick and was moved directly to the front, where it was exposed to a wasting fire from infantry, in front and on both flanks, and by artillery on its left; but maintained its position, although abandoned by a supporting regiment, until ordered to fall back by General Sedgwick personally, who received two wounds while giving the command. In another period of the action, the regiment was again exposed to a destructive cannonade. During this bloody day the Thirty-fourth sustained a loss of one hundred and fifty men, amounting to one half the effective strength with which it went into action. Through the remainder of the campaign the regiment was employed in constant and arduous services, in severe marches, reconnaissances and picketing. On the 11th of December it led the van of the brigade, at that time commanded by General Sully, in the passage of the Rapahannock at Fredericksburg, when the enemy were driven from the town. The regiment lost on this occasion more than thirty men from the fire of the enemy's batteries. After this action the Thirty-fourth remained in camp during the winter, its repose being frequently interrupted by picket duty. At Chancellorsville and Fredericksburg the ensuing spring it was present, but only slightly engaged. On the expiration of its enlistment the regiment was mustered out at Albany on the 30th of June 1863. The Thirty-fourth had participated in seventeen battles and numerous skirmishes. In all these scenes, Company H had sustained a conspicuous and honorable attitude, and worthily received, in common with the regiment, the official encomium "That it never failed in duty to its country, or devotion to its flag."

*The Thirty-eighth New York Volunteers.* — This regiment, under Colonel J. W. Hobart Ward, was mustered into service in New York, in June, 1861. The company enrolled in Essex county, of which Samuel B. Dwyer was elected captain, William H. Smith first lieutenant, and A. C. Hand Livingston second lieutenant, was incorporated with the regiment as Company K. The Thirty-eighth regiment left the State on the 19th, and reached Washington on the 21st of June, and was soon after attached to Wilcox's brigade, and Heintzelman's division. It advanced with the Union army to Bull Run on the 21st of July, and was engaged in that battle, suffering a loss in killed, wounded, and missing of one hundred and twenty-eight men. It was distinguished by its



heroic bearing. During four hours it was in close action and exposed for a long time to a deadly fire of artillery both in front and on its flanks. Such an exposure affords the severest test to the constancy and courage of fresh troops. The regiment bore the heat and dust, with all the suffering of the early part of the engagement, with the highest soldierly resolution, and when confronted with the enemy, it firmly met and successfully repulsed the attacks of his infantry. When compelled by the disasters of the day to abandon the field, the Thirty-eighth retreated in comparative order, and returned to the camping ground from which it had marched in the morning. Company K, in this action, was in charge of Lieutenant Smith and Lieutenant Livingston, owing to the absence from sickness of Captain Dwyer. In this initial battle of the war, Company K was the only organization from Essex county engaged, and although none were killed on the field, it seems proper to record the names of the wounded and captured. Orlando R. Whiting, captured and died in prison; James A. Coburn, Henry Van Ornan, killed at Chancellorsville; Patrick Waters, Pitt A. Wadhams, killed at Fredericksburg; Loyal E. Wolcott, John M. Glidden, George Boutwell, James McCormick, died in prison; and Wesley Sumner, killed at Fredericksburg. Lieutenant Smith resigned August 2d, 1861, Lieutenant Livingston, four days afterwards. The officers who subsequently served in this company were, Fergus Walker, second lieutenant August, 1861, promoted first lieutenant May, 1862, promoted captain August, 1862; and William Warren, second lieutenant May, 1862, promoted first lieutenant December, 1862.

Until the opening of the peninsula campaign the Thirty-eighth was employed in picket duty and the construction of field works for the defense of Washington. In August the regiment was assigned to General Howard's brigade. This brigade, known as the third brigade, was successively commanded by Generals Sedgewick and Birney. Upon the organization of the Army of the Potomac, the division to which this brigade was attached constituted the first division of the third corps, and these various designations were retained during the subsequent service of the regiment.

The Thirty-eighth was at the siege at Yorktown and sustained in the operations before the works some slight casualties. Its bearing at the battle of Williamsburg was highly conspicuous, and it encountered there a loss of eighty-six men. In this engagement, the gallant Captain Dwyer, Company K, fell mortally wounded, and died a few days afterwards at St. Joseph's Hospital in Philadelphia. His body, claimed by the popular enthusiasm, was borne to the village of Elizabethtown, in his native county, of which he was a prominent citizen, and there buried with the imposing and touching obsequies due to his patriotic devotion.

The regiment was engaged in all the battles that immediately followed on the peninsula. It also fought at Second Bull Run, Chantilly, Fredericksburg

and Chancellorsville. On the 21st of December, 1862, the remnants of the ten companies of the Thirty-eighth regiment was consolidated into six companies, and marked from A to F inclusive, while the Fifty-fifth New York Volunteers was also consolidated into four companies enumerated from G to K, and annexed to the Thirty-eighth regiment. A large proportion of the regiment re-enlisted, embracing a considerable part of Company K, and when it was mustered out on the expiration of the term of service June 22d, 1863, these men were transferred to the Fortieth New York Volunteers. This regiment, both before and after the consolidation, was ranked among the most distinguished regiments of the State volunteers. In noticing the departure from the field of the Thirty-eighth regiment, the commander of the third corps in a special order paid the highest tribute to its service and reputation.

*The Forty-fourth Regiment New York Volunteers.*—A happy inspiration suggested the idea of forming a regiment to be composed of chosen men to be selected from the various towns and wards of the State, and organized and known as the Ellsworth Avengers. The design proposed at once to appropriately commemorate the name of the young hero, who was the earliest martyr to the Union cause, and to animate a just and patriotic military spirit throughout the State. Essex county promptly responded to the invitation, and most of the towns sent their representatives to the regiment. It was mustered into the service on the 24th of September, 1861, as the Forty-fourth N. Y. Volunteers. The services of the Forty-fourth were active and conspicuous in the varied operations of the army of the Potomac, and it is believed that its name and associations rendered it to the rebels an object of peculiar hostility and vindictive assault. The gallantry of the Forty-fourth was eminently conspicuous at Hanover Court House, where four times its flag was cut down by balls, and as often triumphantly raised. When the color-bearer fell, the standard was promptly raised by another hand. The staff of the torn and faded flag, deposited in the military bureau had about eighteen inches with the eagle and top shot away at Spottsylvania. When the Forty-fourth was mustered out of service, October 11th, 1864, the veterans and recruits were transferred to the One Hundred and Fortieth and One Hundred and Forty-sixth regiments, New York Volunteers.

*The Seventy-seventh Regiment New York Volunteers.*—This regiment was mustered into service November 23d, 1861, for three years at Bemis's Heights, Saratoga, and by the suggestions of the spot appropriately numbered Seventy-seventh. At this organization, James B. McKean was elected colonel; Joseph A. Henderson, lieutenant-colonel, and Selden Hetzel, major. Two companies attached to the Seventy-seventh, designated A, and I, were principally enrolled in Essex county. Company A was recruited in the towns of Westport, Jay and Keene. It was inspected on the 15th of September, and two days later proceeded to Saratoga. The company was organized by the election of Ruel W.



Arnold, captain ; William Douglass, first, and James H. Farnsworth, second lieutenant. It originally mustered ninety-five men and received fifty recruits, chiefly non-residents of Essex county, during its service. Lieutenant Farnsworth resigned January 5th, 1862, and Charles E. Stevens was promoted to second lieutenant. Captain Arnold resigned April 3d, 1862, and was succeeded by First Lieutenant George S. Orr, of Company G. In December following, Lieutenant Stevens was appointed first lieutenant and Orderly Sergeant William Lyon was promoted to his post. Captain Orr of Company G was wounded at Cedar Creek and mustered out with the regiment at the expiration of its term. Lieutenant Stevens was promoted to the captaincy of consolidated Company E, October 15th, 1864. Lieutenant Lyon was killed at Spottsylvania May 10th, 1864. Charles H. Davis was promoted to second lieutenant October 16th, 1864, and appointed first lieutenant Company E, November 15th, 1874, and captain, April 25th 1865. Company I was recruited in the northern towns of Essex and the adjacent towns in Clinton county. Mr. Wendell Lansing was largely instrumental in the enrollment of this company, but on its organization was transferred to the commissary department, in which he served about one year. The company officers on its organization were Franklin Norton, captain ; Jacob F. Hayward and Martin Lennon, first and second lieutenants. Captain Norton was promoted August 18th, 1862, to lieutenant-colonel of the One Hundred and Twenty-third New York Volunteers, and died on the 12th of May, 1863, of wounds received in the battle of Chancellorsville, on the 10th of December, 1862, Lieutenant Lennon was appointed captain of Company I, and January 3d, 1863, Lieutenant Hayward was promoted to quartermaster and remained in that capacity until the term of enlistment expired. John W. Belding was made first lieutenant, March 17th, 1863, was promoted to the captaincy of Company K, but never mustered in as such, and died October 27th, 1864, from wounds received in action. On May 19th, 1863, Orderly Sergeant Carlos W. Rowe was appointed second lieutenant. Lieutenant Rowe entered the service as corporal in Company I. At the organization of Company I, William E. Merrill was corporal. He was made a sergeant July following, and orderly sergeant February, 1863. He re-enlisted in February, 1864, was severely wounded at Spottsylvania, was made second lieutenant September 19th, 1864, and promoted to first lieutenant April 22d, 1865, and was mustered out with the regiment at the close of the war.

Immediately after being organized, the Seventy-seventh started for the field of active service, and reaching Washington in December, 1861, went into camp on Meridian Hill. The regiment was incorporated with the Army of the Potomac on its first organization, and continued connected with it until its disbandment ; it participated in all the fortunes of that army from the commencement of McClellan's campaign to the close of the war. Its earliest ex-

perience of battle was in a charge upon the enemy's works at Mechanicsville, in which a youth from Keeseville, Clifford Weston, a private in Company I, was killed, the first offering of the regiment to the country, to be succeeded by a long and heroic line of sacrifices. The Seventy-seventh was conspicuous throughout these services, and no part of it was more distinguished than the two companies from Essex county. The regiment belonged to the immortal Sixth Corps, and its torn and fragmentary flags and guidons, and their shattered staffs deposited among the archives of the State, prove its worthiness of the association.

That its services were severe is attested by the records of thirty distinct battles, and that they were gallantly performed is evident from the bloody decimation of its ranks. One or two instances will illustrate the character and endurance of the regiment. In the battle of White Oak Swamp, the division to which the Seventy-seventh was attached was suddenly assailed by a superior force of the rebels. The regiment was stationed some distance from its brigade, and could not be approached owing to the severity of the enemy's fire. Although not directly exposed to this fire, it was in imminent danger, from its position, of being cut off. "Not proposing to move without orders," as one of its gallant members writes, the regiment maintained its post. A slight suspension of the action enabled an aid to reach it with orders to change its ground. This order was promptly executed, but only in time to save the regiment from capture.

At the battle of Spottsylvania, May 10th, 1864, the Seventy-seventh was selected with several other regiments to form an assaulting column, to charge the enemy's lines. The attack continued scarcely more than fifteen minutes, but was of the fiercest and bloodiest character. The position assailed was extremely formidable, and the attacking column was not sufficiently strong to maintain it. They were compelled to fall back and abandon the position with their dead and severely wounded to the mercy of the enemy. Twenty members of the Seventy-seventh were left upon this field. In the terrible conflict at Spottsylvania the regiment lost seventy-four men, about one-fourth of its strength engaged. Lieutenant Lyon, of Company A, was killed in the charge, and Lieutenant Rowe, of Company I, was taken prisoner.

The regiment participated in the eventful scenes of the peninsula. At Mechanicsville it captured a guidon belonging to a Georgia regiment; it was at Gaines's Mills, Savage's Station, and all the operations before Richmond, which terminated at Malvern Hill. Transferred from that field it was engaged at Second Bull Run, Crampton Pass and Antietam, closing the services of that year at Fredericksburg on December 13th. In January, 1863, it encountered the horrors of the "Mud Campaign." At Marye's Heights, on the 3d of May, it captured the flag of the Eighteenth Mississippi; it fought at Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Rappahannock Station and Robinson's Tavern. In the campaign



of 1864 it was at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor and Fort Stevens. Transferred to the Shenandoah Valley, it was engaged in the battle of the 19th of September, in which Captain Lennon, of Company I, and Lieutenant Belding were mortally wounded, and died, the former on the succeeding 1st of November, and the latter the 29th of October. It was at Fisher's Hill September 22d, and at Cedar Creek on the 19th of October, gallantly aiding in the achievement of that crowning victory. In this engagement Captain Orr, of Company A, was severely wounded.

In November, 1864, at the expiration of its term of enlistment, the regiment was mustered out of service ; but it left in the field a battalion composed of veterans who re-enlisted, formed from the original organization and new recruits. This was designated the Seventy-seventh Battalion New York State Volunteers. The relics of Company A and I were consolidated into a new company designated C, and attached to the battalion. This company embraced eighty-five men and was formed of nearly equal proportions of the original companies. The officers of Company C consisted of Charles E. Stevens, captain, appointed major but not mustered in as such ; First Lieutenant Charles A. Davis, and Second Lieutenant William E. Merrill. The battalion was engaged in the final siege of Petersburg and in the assault of the 2d of April its flags and guidons were the first colors on the enemy's works. It was mustered out on June 27th, 1865. The regiment had 1,463 on its rolls, of whom seventy-three were killed in battle, forty died of their wounds and 148 of disease.

The different banners of this regiment in their torn and shattered condition, which are deposited in the Bureau of Military Records at Albany, are invested with deep and peculiar interest. In the charge up Marye's Heights, one of the color-guards of the regimental flag was killed, and the banner torn into shreds by a shell. A national flag, borne in many fields, is half gone, its ends ragged, its field in ribbons. The top of its staff was shot off at the Battle of the Wilderness. In the battle of Chancellorsville its field was torn by an enemy's shell. Among its bearers in battle Corporal Joseph Murray was killed at Antietam, Michael McWilliams in the Wilderness. Corporal Horicon of the color-guard was killed at Cedar Creek, and Corporal Myers shot through the hand in the Wilderness. Its inscription was placed upon the flag by the order of General Sheridan.

Officers of Seventy-seventh mustered out on expiration of original term of enlistment, Dec. 13th, 1864 : —

Lieutenant-Colonel Winsor B. French, Major Nathan S. Babcock, Quartermaster Jacob F. Hayward, Surgeon George T. Stevens, Assistant Surgeon Justin T. Thompson, Assistant Surgeon Wm. A. Delong, Chaplain Norman Fox, jr., Captains George S. Orr, Joseph H. Loveland, First Lieutenants Alonzo Howland, Henry C. Rowland, Lewis T. Vanderwarker, William W. Worden ; Second Lieutenants David Lyon, Carlos W. Rowe, George W. Gillis.

Officers mustered out on discharge of Battalion Seventy-seventh New York Volunteers : —

David J. Caw, brevet-colonel, U. S. V. ; Quartermaster Charles D. Thurber, brevet-captain U. S. V. ; Surgeon John C. Thompson ; Captain Isaac D. Clapp, brevet-major, U. S. V. ; Captain David A. Thompson ; Captains Chas. E. Stevens (appointed major but not mustered in as such), George M. Ross ; First Lieutenants William E. Merrill, Thomas S. Harris, Adam Flansburgh, Robert E. Nelson, James A. Monroe ; Second Lieutenants Sorrell Fountain, William Carr, William H. Quackenbush, Thomas M. White. Brevet commission issued to enlisted men : Hospital Steward Alexander P. Waldron, second lieutenant.

*The Ninety-sixth New York Volunteers.* — This regiment was wholly enrolled in the northern section of New York. Only a single company, originally organized, belonging to the Ninety-sixth, was enrolled in Essex county, although large portions of other companies were recruited in the county, and towards the close of the war numerous drafts from the county joined this regiment. Essex was therefore largely represented in the organization. Captain Alfred Weed enlisted principally in Ticonderoga a company which he commanded, and of which Thomas W. Newman was second lieutenant. This company was attached to the Ninety-sixth as Company G, George W. Hinds, of Ausable, was captain, February 18th, 1862, and promoted to major March, 1865. Earl Pierce, of Jay, originally attached to Company K, of the One Hundred and Eighteenth, was appointed first lieutenant of the Ninety-sixth, January 27th, 1864, and promoted to captain January 20th, 1865. The regiment was organized at Plattsburg, and departed for the field March, 1862, under the command of James Fairman, colonel ; Charles O. Grey, lieutenant-colonel ; and John E. Kelley, a veteran of the regular army, major. Nathan Wardner, of Jay, was appointed chaplain of the organization, John H. Sanborn, quartermaster, and Francis Joseph D'Avignon, of Ausable Forks, surgeon. The Ninety-sixth in the early stages of its services was severely depressed, through the unfavorable auspices by which it was surrounded, but after the brave and accomplished Grey was placed in command, the regiment rapidly attained a very high reputation. It had been precipitated by ill-advised councils into active service without the advantages of any adequate drilling, and was hurried into the peninsula campaign before the habits of the troops were adapted to field duty, and while they were yet unacclimated. Company G marched from Fortress Monroe, comprising more than seventy combatants, and when it entered the conflict at Fair Oaks, it retained only eighteen men fit for duty. The remainder had been stricken down by diseases incident to hard service and a malarious climate. This fact illustrates the general condition of the regiment, the efficiency of which was also deeply impaired for a season by dissensions among its officers. A number of the subordinates had resigned from this and



other causes. Captain Weed, immediately previous to Fair Oaks, was compelled by severe sickness to relinquish his command, and Lieutenant Newman, who was discharged in May, 1862, had already left the regiment. Lieutenant Newman afterwards joined a Maryland regiment, and remained in the service during the war. Captain Weed, after his health was restored, enlisted as a private in the Ninety-third New York Volunteers, and did not return to civil life until the spring of 1865. The company for a time was in charge of Orderly Sergeant Patrick English, and was ultimately consolidated with Company C, of Clinton county.

Major Kelley was killed in a picket skirmish, immediately before the battle of Fair Oaks. In that action the losses of the Ninety-sixth Regiment were extremely severe. The services of the regiment throughout the peninsula campaign were marked by great perils and hardships, and elicited from General Peck, the commander of the division, warm and unusual encomiums. It was afterwards ordered to Suffolk, enduring all the trials and sufferings of that field, and was subsequently engaged in the North Carolina expedition, and gallantly participated in all the hard services of that vigorous campaign. In the battle of Kingston, December 14th, 1862, Colonel Grey, who had already, although a youth of twenty-four, achieved a brilliant fame, was killed while charging at the head of the regiment over the bridge of the Neuse, and in the act of planting its standard upon the enemy's works. Three weeks before, in presenting a new flag to the Ninety-sixth, he had uttered a glowing and eloquent tribute to its old flag, and now this enveloped his coffin, as his remains were borne from his last battle-field to its resting place among his familiar mountains. That venerated flag is deposited in the military bureau. After this event the Ninety-sixth Regiment was for a short time under the command of Colonel McKenzie.

Early in 1864 the regiment was transferred to the army of the James before Petersburg, and attached to the same brigade with which the One Hundred and Eighteenth was connected. It was incorporated with the Eighteenth and afterwards with the Twenty-fourth Corps. The Ninety-sixth was engaged in all the subsequent operations of the Eighteenth Corps—at Coal Harbor, and in the assault on Fort Harrison, where its casualties were appalling. The Ninety-sixth and the Eighth Connecticut formed the assaulting columns, with the One Hundred and Eighteenth New York and Tenth New Hampshire on their flanks as skirmishers. The division approached the works in close order and in a distance of fourteen hundred yards was exposed to a plunging and galling fire of artillery and musketry.

It steadily advanced to the base of the hill, which was crowned by the enemy's works. Here the column, exhausted by its rapid progress, paused. The enemy perceiving the point of attack, were meanwhile pouring reinforcements into the menaced works. The crisis was imminent, and General Stan-

nard, commanding the division, sent an earnest order for an instant assault. The head of the column charged up the hill, and scaling the parapet, drove the enemy from their guns. Sergeant Lester Archer, of the Ninety-sixth, and the color bearer of the Eighth Connecticut, simultaneously planted the respective regimental flags upon the ramparts. The Rev. Nathan Wardner, chaplain of the Ninety-sixth, charged with his regiment in the advancing columns, prepared to administer spiritual consolation on the very field of carnage. The captured guns of the fort were turned upon the retreating enemy with terrible effect. The Ninety-sixth was conspicuous in opposing the repeated, resolute and desperate attempts of the rebels to recover this important position. The death or wounds of four superiors, placed Colonel Cullen, of the Ninety-sixth, at the close of this sanguinary battle, in command of the division.

The Ninety-sixth continued near Fort Harrison in camp with its brigade, after the capture of that work, until the 24th of October, when the entire division marched against Fort Richmond, at Fair Oaks. It bivouacked that night, about three miles from the fort. While the skirmishing part of the One Hundred and Eighteenth was engaged in the perilous and hopeless assault of the enemy's line, the next morning the Ninety-sixth, in common with the remainder of the division, stood idle spectators of the slaughter of those troops, although little doubt now exists that a combined and energetic attack of the fort, when the One Hundred and Eighteenth advanced and while it was occupied by a force wholly inadequate to its defense, would have secured a glorious success.

For two long and trying hours after the repulse of the One Hundred and Eighteenth the residue of the division stood under arms in front of the enemy's lines with no orders, either to advance or retreat, while the rebels were observed eagerly rushing troops into the front on foot and upon horseback. At length, when the lines by this delay had been rendered impregnable to an attack, the division was madly hurled upon the works. It was bloodily repulsed. The casualties of the Ninety-sixth were in the highest degree severe. Its last colonel, Stephen Moffitt, of Clinton county, who continued in the command until the regiment was disbanded, lost a leg in this action while gallantly leading in the fruitless and disastrous assault. He was borne from the field by Captain Earle Pierce, of the Ninety-sixth, and Captain M. V. B. Stetson, of the One Hundred and Eighteenth, the latter of whom was wounded in the generous act. The Ninety-sixth participated in the brilliant closing scenes of the war around Richmond and its final consummation.

Mr. Watson pays a high tribute to Dr. D'Avignon, of the Ninety-sixth. He was promoted to surgeon-in-chief of a division, was captured at Drury's Bluff and confined for a time in Libby prison. He was mustered out at the expiration of his term of service March 14th, 1865.

Officers of the Ninety-sixth mustered out with the regiment, February 6th, 1866: —



Colonel Stephen Moffitt, brevet brigadier-general U. S. V.; Lieutenant Colonel George W. Hinds, brevet-colonel N. Y. V.; Major Courtland C. Babcock, brevet lieutenant-colonel N. Y. V.; Quartermaster Allen Babcock; Surgeon Robert W. Brady; Chaplain Nathan Wardner; Captains Earl Pierce, Moses Gill, Moses Orr, Henry C. Buckham (brevet-major N. Y. V.), William B. Brokaw (brevet-major N. Y. V.), Merlin C. Harris (brevet-major N. Y. V.), Thomas E. Allen, Oscar B. Colvin; First Lieutenants William B. Stafford, Thomas Burke, Charles H. Hogan, Orlando P. Benson, Lyman Bridges, George J. Cady, Lucian Wood, Alexander M. Stevens, Alonzo E. Howard; Second Lieutenants Washington Harris, Stanford H. Bugbee, Alexander McMartin, Charles Sharron, Amos S. Richardson, Silas Finch, Judson C. Ware.

Enlisted men of the regiment to whom medals of honor have been awarded by the secretary of war: Sergeant Lester Archer.

The archives of the State present the following brilliant record of the services of the Ninety-sixth: Gainesville, Second Bull Run, South Mountain, Antietam, Mine Run, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bethesda Church, Petersburg, Weldon Rail Road, Chapel House, Hatcher's Run, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Seven Days' Battle, Blackwater, Kingston, Whitehall, Goldsboro', Siege of Newbern, Drury's Farm, Port Walthall, Coal Harbor, Battery Harrison, Charles City Road.

*Fifth New York Cavalry.* — At the opening of the War of the Rebellion, the government suffered severely from the absence of an efficient cavalry arm. In this force the rebels were far superior, both in numbers and efficiency. A wide defection among the cavalry officers of the army, in one instance, embracing almost an entire regiment, and the peculiar equestrian habits of the southern people, which rendered most men expert riders from early youth, combined to furnish materials for an immediate and powerful organization of mounted troops. Directly after Bull Run the government addressed itself to the task of remedying this deficiency. Agents appeared throughout the North, arousing the chivalric spirit of the country, and urging everywhere the formation of cavalry companies and regiments. This appeal reached the town of Crown Point, and was responded to with an ardor and promptness that has few parallels in all the incidents of enthusiasm that characterized the times. The fervid zeal that was inspired could not be restrained to await the formal preparation of enlisting papers, or for a regular mustering in, by the usual machinery of the department. But a written compact was at once prepared, by which each man was pledged to serve the government for three years in the mounted service, and in an incredibly short period it received the signatures of one hundred and twenty-seven of the youth of that town and its immediate vicinity. They constituted the bone and muscle of the community. To each name is attached the age and occupation of the signer. Nearly all were between the ages of twenty and thirty years, and most of them were either

farmers or mechanics. Almost every signature was an autograph; thus affording evidence of an intelligence and education rarely found in a body of soldiers hastily recruited.

Under this compact, to which all implicitly adhered, the company, without officers and without any other restraint, proceeded to New York, and were there regularly mustered into the service. The entire body of men were accepted as privates, nor were their officers elected until the company joined the regiment on Staten Island. John Hammond was commissioned captain, September 14th, 1861; major, September, 1863; lieutenant-colonel, March, 1864; colonel, July, 1864; and brevet brigadier-general, May 22d, 1866. Jonas A. Benedict was commissioned first lieutenant, and James A. Penfield second lieutenant of the company, the 22d of October, 1861. Lieutenant Benedict died in the next December, and was succeeded by Penfield, who was appointed captain in July, 1863, and resigned in May, 1865. John G. Viall was appointed second lieutenant, December, 1861; first lieutenant, September, 1862, and captain, April, 1864. Elmer J. Barker was appointed second lieutenant, September, 1862; first lieutenant, November, 1863; captain, March, 1864; and major, November, 1864. Eugene B. Hayward was appointed second lieutenant, November, 1863; first lieutenant, March, 1864; and captain, November, 1864. Lucius F. Renne, appointed first lieutenant, November, 1864; and Clark M. Pease, second lieutenant, November, 1864. This catalogue embraces all the changes in the officers of the company during its service. The company was collected mainly by the zeal and earnest exertions of John Hammond, of Crown Point. The father of Mr. Hammond, Charles F. Hammond, esq., advanced the funds for the purchase of all the original horses, amounting to one hundred and eight, supplied the company. These horses were selected with extreme care, in reference to their adaptedness to the service, and were probably superior to those of any troop in the army.

This body of men was organized as Company H of the Fifth New York Cavalry, commanded by Colonel Othniel De Forest of New York. The regiment employed the winter of 1861-62 at Camp Harris near Annapolis in constant and thorough drilling, and acquired the discipline and proficiency that rendered its subsequent service so efficient and so valuable to the country. This narrative proposes to trace the movements of Company H distinctively and the operations of the regiment, where that company or the soldiers of Essex were prominently connected with them. In April, this company was detached to Luray Valley on special service. Here, in frequent skirmishes, it gradually prepared for the toils and the scenes of peril and hardships which were approaching. It rejoined the regiment in May, and did not participate in some of its earlier achievements, but was with it in the disastrous campaign of General Banks, and the terrible retreat through the mountains incident to it. A part of the regiment, including Company H, acted as flankers to the army



in this retreat, and was exposed perpetually to severe fighting. Throughout the month of July the regiment was engaged in frequent skirmishes, often suffering severely from the want of rations and forage.

On the second of August a brigade composed of most of the Fifth and the First Vermont, approached Orange C. H. from the east under the command of General Crawford. The streets were silent and apparently deserted as the troops entered; but a sudden and heavy fire poured upon them announced a concealed enemy, and while confused by its effect they were repulsed and driven back from the town. Captain Hammond had been detached in charge of Companies G and H across the country to the Gordonsville road which penetrates the village from the southwest. He reached the road and was approaching with no knowledge of the assault and repulse of the brigade. The Confederates were equally ignorant of his presence. Ordering his command to draw sabres, he said to them: "This is the first favorable opportunity you have had to try your sword; use your hardware well and we will take the place or die in the attempt." They rushed at full speed upon the enemy in an impetuous charge and with a wild shout. Although surprised the Confederates met them by a withering discharge of musketry; but the enthusiasm of the cavalry was irresistible. The enemy were driven back to an open space, where they rallied for a moment and then broke and fled in utter disorder. More prisoners were taken than the feeble force were able to secure.

The charge was most gallantly executed and terrible in its effect. The area in which the rebels made their last stand was strewn with the killed and wounded, and with unhorsed men bearing fearful evidence of the force of the sabre's blow. When the cavalry after these events advanced along the street, they were first apprised by the dead and dying men and horses of the preceding combat. Lieutenant Penfield of Company H was peculiarly conspicuous in this brief conflict by his chivalric bearing. The enemy's force was composed of the celebrated Virginia Horse, which had been organized by Ashley.

Soon after this action a part of the regiment was engaged in the battle of Cedar Mountain. During the month of August it was occupied with brief relaxations, in toilsome marches, reconnaissances and various harassing and exhaustive duties. It participated with great gallantry in the warm engagements at Kelley's Ford and Waterloo, and on the 27th of August was broken up into detachments to perform escort services to different generals. Duties of this character, patrolling, observing roads and guarding trains, constitute an important part of the operations of cavalry, acting in a campaign under the circumstances which surrounded both armies in the War of the Rebellion; but like the trench duties of the other arms of the service, these operations were far the most irksome and onerous imposed upon the mounted regiments, attended often with greater hardships, toils and perils than actual combats;

they were not sustained by the excitement and glory of battle. The movements of the Fifth, with a few brief interludes of repose, were incessant and generally severe. Its history from May, 1862, when it entered into active duty, to April, 1865, presents a remarkable and scarcely parallel series of severe services and hard fought battles. Besides the toils and endurance of this special service, it was engaged in a mass or by detachments in one hundred and eighteen skirmishes and fifty-three battles, necessarily varied in their importance and severity.

The scope of this work will permit only a glance at some of the most prominent of these events. The Fifth was on the bloody fields of Second Bull Run, Chantilly and Antietam. Major Hammond conducting an expedition in October, came in collision with the Confederates at Leesburg, Upperville and Thoroughfare Gap, and engaged in a running fight while pursuing their cavalry from Haymarket, to Warrenton. The opening weeks of 1863 were devoted by the regiment to unremitting picket duty, charged to oppose and repel the incursions of the guerrillas that thronged the front of the Union lines. On the 26th of January a detachment was ordered in pursuit of a party which had captured a picket of the Eighteenth Pennsylvania, and at Middleburg, Major Hammond, who was in command, executed a brilliant charge through the town, captured twenty-five of Mosby's cavalry and dispersed the party. A fortnight later Captain Penfield, in command of Companies F and H, was engaged in warm skirmishing with large detachments of the enemy at New Baltimore and Warrenton. On the 9th of March Mosby by a bold movement surprised at Fairfax C. H., nearly six miles within the Federal lines, a Union detachment and captured thirty prisoners, including General Stoughton and Captain Augustus Barker, of Company L, and fifty choice horses belonging to the Fifth. These men had been detached from the regiment and were acting under the command of the provost marshal. The brigade pursued the enemy by different routes but with no success. On the 23d the regiment experienced another severe and mortifying reverse, the rebels making a feint attack on a picket retreated rapidly, pursued by a part of the Fifth in charge of Majors Bacon and White. The pursuers were arrested by a barricade across the road, and suddenly assailed by a sharp fire in front and flank. At this moment Mosby dashed upon them in an unexpected impetuous charge. The cavalry broke and precipitately retreated, with a loss of five killed and wounded and thirty-six prisoners, including one commissioned officer. It was at length rallied by the efforts of the officers and re-enforced; it in turn repulsed and pursued the enemy a distance of several miles. Yet the chagrin and mortification of the defeat remained. Whatever lustre was lost to the fame of the Fifth by this reverse was gloriously restored on the 3d of May. Early in the morning the First Virginia Cavalry while dismounted were surprised by Mosby with a detachment of the Black Horse Cavalry and a guerrilla force. Separated from



their horses, the First retreated to a house and courageously defended themselves, refusing to surrender. Mosby then ordered the building to be fired. At that critical juncture the Fifth, which, without the knowledge of the rebels, was bivouacking in a neighboring grove, burst upon them, under the command of Major Hammond. A furious fight ensued; but the Confederates fled, broken and scattered, sustaining a heavy loss in killed, wounded and prisoners. This gallant exploit was noticed in warm commendation by a special order of the division commander.

On the 30th of May the rebels by an adroit expedition arrested a train advancing by the Orange and Alexandria railroad to the Rapidan, heavily laden with army supplies, and opened upon it a fire from a twelve-pounder howitzer. The infantry guard upon the train, unable to oppose the storm of cannister, dispersed, and the whole train with its contents was consumed. The Fifth, with the First Vermont and Seventh Michigan Cavalry, was stationed on the road, and through their encampment the train had just before passed. They were startled by the report of the gun, and those not engaged on picket duty directly mounted, and taking different routes marched across the country with the hope of intercepting the rebel retreat. The Fifth first came upon them and immediately charged; but was repulsed by a discharge of small arms and the howitzer at close quarters in a narrow road which the gun completely commanded. The officer in command of the Fifth, Capt. Hasbroock, judiciously hesitated on renewing the assault, but Lieutenant Barker of Company H, unwilling to allow the enemy to escape in their triumph, and calling on the men to follow in the charge upon the gun, he dashed up a steep hill at the head of less than a score of volunteers, and when they had nearly reached the howitzer it poured forth a withering shower of cannister, by which the young leader was stricken down with two shot through his thigh, another severing the sole from his boot; his horse received three grape and two pistol balls in his body. Three of the little band were killed and most of the others severely wounded; but before the piece could be reloaded the survivors were sabreing the gunners at their post. After a brief but fierce conflict the howitzer was recaptured, for it had been taken at Ball's Bluff, and to the captors it was a proud and grateful trophy. The rebels lost two officers and several men, wounded and captured. In this movement Mosby first introduced his use of artillery.

Soon after this occurrence the cavalry division to which the Fifth was attached joined the army of the Potomac in the Gettysburg campaign. On the last day of June the cavalry division of Kilpatrick, with two batteries of artillery, were defiling through Hanover, Penn. Each regiment, in its passage, was regaled by the patriotic citizens. While the Fifth was in the act of participating in this hospitality, a cannon sounded from an adjacent height. For the moment it was supposed to be connected with the demonstration, but it proved to be a signal gun, and its echo had scarcely ceased when Stuart, at the

head of a large party of cavalry, rushed in a furious assault upon the Eighteenth Pennsylvania, which held the rear of the brigade. Stuart was unexpectedly present with 3,000 horse, supported by artillery, and was in occupation of the surrounding hills. With consummate coolness and judgment, Major Hammond, then in command of the Fifth, which in the street received the first shock of the attack, instantly formed the regiment, faced to the rear in column, and charged the enemy's front. A fearful hand to hand conflict in the narrow street succeeded, when the rebels, broke and repulsed, with a heavy loss, sought the protection of their artillery. The casualties of the Fifth were forty killed and wounded, and a few missing. Adjutant Gall was killed while charging in the street, and Major White slightly wounded. The trophies of the Fifth included the commander of a brigade, a battle flag, and a few prisoners. The division was engaged in the afternoon of the 2d of July with the enemy's cavalry on the left of their line at Gettysburg. Custer, with the Second Brigade, retained that position through the 3d. The First Brigade, including the Fifth, under Kilpatrick and Farnsworth, marched all the night of the 2d, and reached the right flank of the rebels about 10 o'clock on the 3d, and maintained a vigorous contest through the day. Repeated charges were made upon the enemy's infantry line, in one of which General Farnsworth, the commander of the brigade, gallantly fell. The Fifth, during a part of these events, was left in support of Elder's battery, and exposed to a tremendous cannonade.

On the night of the 4th the cavalry division intercepted upon the summit of South Mountain the enemy with an immense train transporting the spoils of Pennsylvania. After a sharp contest the entire train was captured with 1,500 prisoners and 200 wagons burnt. On the 6th the division was engaged in the defense of Hagerstown against the attacks of Stuart's cavalry, and in the afternoon of that day retreated before Hood's infantry towards Williamsport amid continuous and severe fighting. In one of the charges in these conflicts the horse of Captain Penfield of Company H was killed under him, and while attempting to extricate himself from the fallen animal he received a fearful sabre cut upon the head, and was taken prisoner. He suffered in the Southern prisons until March, 1865, and resigned after his exchange. The Third division, united with Burford's, maintained on the 8th upon the plains near Antietam creek, a severe engagement with Stuart supported by Hood. The conflict was desperate and sanguinary, but in a final charge by the Union cavalry towards the close of the day, the rebels were swept from the field with a heavy loss. On the 14th the division attacked the rear of the retreating enemy near Falling Water, and captured a brigade of infantry under General Pettigrew, who was mortally wounded, two flags and two pieces of cannon. During the remainder of the summer and far into the autumn the regiment was incessantly engaged in the severest field duties, attended with frequent bloody collisions with the enemy's horse. On the 10th and 11th of October the di-



vision was involved in a most critical position from a formidable attack by infantry and cavalry in the neighborhood of Culpepper, and near Brandy Station. Surrounded by the enemy, it was only extricated by one of the most daring charges led by Kilpatrick, Davies and Custer, that signalized the war. The enemy was checked and the division united with Burford's, and at night fell back across the Rappahannock. During these operations, Major Hammond, with half of the Fifth, was in support of a section of Elder's battery, while Major White was supporting the other section with the remainder of the regiment, and by a bold and opportune charge they saved the battery from capture. On the 10th of December Major Hammond and Captain Krom were ordered home on recruiting service, and returned to the regiment before the middle of March, having enlisted 500 men by great efforts and personal disbursements. A large part of the regiment at this time re-entered the service on a new enlistment.

At the approach of the new year of 1864 the Fifth were permitted to construct near Germania Ford its winter quarters; but this promise of repose resulted in only slight actual relaxation of their active patrol service. On the 28th of February the entire Third division marched upon a raid of more than usual importance towards Richmond. A detachment of the Fifth was detailed to serve in the subordinate and unfortunate expedition of Colonel Dahlgren, but it embraced no member of Company H. The division encountered in its movement extreme suffering and toil, at length reached the Union lines near Yorktown, were transported to Alexandria, and from thence reached its former camp at Stevensburg. Towards the close of April the regiment broke up its nominal winter quarters and prepared for the impending campaign. On the 4th of May the Fifth leading the division forded the Rapidan; the first regiment in this campaign that crossed that stream. Early the next morning a heavy column of infantry appeared on its flank, and a furious conflict immediately commenced. This action was the initiative of the memorable battle of the Wilderness. Colonel Hammond, after holding his ground for three hours, advised General Meade of the evidently large force in his front, with the assurance that he would "hold them in check as long as possible." By voice and example he maintained the regiment resolutely in hand. A portion of it was dismounted, and assailed the enemy with the Spencer rifle with terrible effect. Until relieved by a part of the Sixth Corps, the Fifth, with unsurpassed firmness and devotion, confronted for five hours the assailing column, and slowly and defiantly falling back, it performed most valuable service to the army, but at a fearful sacrifice to itself. After this brilliant achievement the Fifth was ordered to bivouack near the Wilderness Tavern, to be under the immediate orders of General Meade.

On the 7th the Fifth, in conjunction with two other regiments, all under the command of Colonel Hammond, was again in the advance, intrusted with

the responsible duty of guarding the fords and picketing the roads. In the afternoon the command was attacked by cavalry and artillery, and a part giving way, Hammond was compelled to make a rapid retreat down the river. When Grant effected his first flank movement, the Fifth was the last regiment that left the Wilderness. It was in the rear of Burnside's Corps, and the command of Hammond subsequently formed the rear of Hancock's Corps. Colonel Hammond was re-enforced on the 17th by the First Massachusetts, 1,200 strong, with direct orders from General Meade to destroy the Guineas Station, and make a reconnaissance on Lee's flank. He found the enemy strongly fortified on the banks of the Potomac, and a warmly contested action occurred, without dislodging their force. Four days later the regiment had another severe fight on the Mattapony. On the 23d it encountered the enemy in large force, near Mt. Carmel Church. A furious fight ensued, that brought on a general engagement between the armies, which resulted in the rebels being driven from their strong position on the North Anna. The brigade, on the 1st of June, met the rebels in a conflict of unusual severity at Ashland Station. Although inflicting a heavy loss upon the enemy, it suffered itself severely. Major White of the Fifth was dangerously wounded, and Colonel Hammond received a ball just above the ankle, that had flattened upon his scabbard. On a previous occasion he had been wounded in the hand. At Salem Church the brigade was again engaged, and on the 15th, near White Oak Swamp, the division suddenly encountered a heavy Confederate column, and after a severely contested action, the division was overwhelmed by superior numbers, suffering heavily and was compelled to fall back.

General Wilson who had succeeded Kilpatrick in the command of the Third Division, aided by Kautz's brigade of cavalry and fourteen pieces of flying artillery, on the 22d of June commenced his remarkable raid which was designed to sever the enemy's communications below Richmond. Rushing with the utmost celerity along devious roads and through unfrequented by-paths, it accomplished a vast work of devastation. It first struck the Weldon railroad; it next reached the South Side road; here and everywhere on its march destruction marked its track. Near the close of the second day it was met by a strong force of the enemy; a sharp engagement followed, protracted long into the night. The Fifth was in the skirmish line, and fought with its usual ardor and efficiency. On the 24th the expedition reached and effectually broke up the Danville road. The next day Kautz was repulsed in an attempt to burn the bridge over the Staunton River. Up to this point ten important and several smaller stations and depots had been destroyed, and fifty miles of railroad track with their bridges and culverts. The course of the expedition was now describing a wide circle gradually tending towards the Union line. The 28th it reached the Weldon road, and through the night with brief pauses was engaged in a fight with an infantry force. On the 8th day of its march it again



approached Ream's Station. The Fifth was leading, and a mile and a half in advance of the column. Here the harassed troops had the assurance of meeting a support, but instead of succor and friends, they were confronted by an impassable barrier, supported by a force of overwhelming strength. The decision was promptly made to attempt a retreat to Rowanty creek and there fortify, while scouts should penetrate to the Union lines and apprise General Grant of the critical position of the command. The execution of the plan was attempted, but while the main body was in bivouac it was irresistibly assailed by the rebels on its flanks and rear and utterly routed. It is impossible to here trace the incidents by which the command, broken up and scattered, reached the Federal lines by detachments, in small parties and individually, many after several days of severe suffering. The artillery wagons and trains were lost. Many of the troops were slain and numerous prisoners and horses left in the enemy's hands. Hundreds of slaves who had gathered in joyous exaltation around the column, were abandoned to their fate.

The shattered Fifth, after its fearful endurance in this expedition, was allowed a brief period of repose, but on the 6th of August the whole division was embarked on transports at City Point and transferred to a new field of action with the army of the Shenandoah. A number of the regiment who were disabled or had lost their horses in the raid had been previously sent to Camp Stoneman near Washington, participating in the series of battles fought the month of July in Upper Maryland. The Fifth was soon after actively engaged in picket duty in aiding to cover Sheridan's retreat from Cedar Creek, slowly falling back amid incessant conflicts. On the 25th of August the First and Third Divisions of cavalry met a heavy force of the enemy under Breckenridge, and after a protracted engagement were forced to retreat. The regiment lost a number killed and wounded, including Lieutenant Greenleaf, commanding Company A, mortally wounded. At night it moved to the Potomac, and crossing at Maryland Heights on a pontoon bridge, it did not pause until it reached Antietam creek. Two days afterwards the division recrossed the Potomac and with the army again assumed an offensive attitude.

The term of Colonel Hammond's service having expired and private duties constraining his return to civil life, on the 30th of August he bade a formal farewell to the noble regiment he had so long commanded and led through a series of such brilliant services. An infinitude of toils and privation, of perils and triumphs and a common fame, had united the officers and men of the Fifth by no ordinary ties of cordial affection and fraternal sympathy. As no man had entered the service of the country from loftier impulses than Colonel Hammond, so no officer of his grade left the army with a higher reputation. He was succeeded in the command of the regiment by Lieutenant-Colonel Bacon.

In the early part of September the brigade was constantly engaged with

the enemy's forces, and on the 13th captured at Opequan the South Carolina Eighth with its colonel and standard. On the 19th it was engaged in the terrible battle near Winchester, and during that day executed five distinct charges, four of which were against the close serried ranks of infantry. Its losses were heavy, but its bearing was eminently conspicuous. Advancing in pursuit of the enemy the regiment was exposed near Ashbury church to a furious shelling, such as it had never before experienced; but it maintained its position with unfaltering firmness and tenacity. Through the month of September it had trifling relief from incessant and harassing duty in patrolling, forming escort, and in actual conflict.

Determined to arrest the harassing assaults of the enemy upon the Union pickets and rear, Custer, with the Third Division on the 9th of October turned back upon and attacked them in one of the most spirited cavalry actions of the war. Amid the animating clangor of the bugles along the whole front, sounding the charge, the entire line rushed forward; Custer himself at the head of the Fifth dashed upon the rebels' strong central position. The issue formed a brilliant success to the Federal troops. On the 19th the division was lying at Cedar Creek with the Union army, and indulging in its fatal security. It endured the common disasters incident to the surprise and rout, and fully participated in the crowning victory wrought by the marvelous inspirations of Sheridan. Near the close of the day the Confederates made a final and desperate effort to redeem its fortunes, by a cavalry attack upon the flank of the Union army. This movement Custer was ordered to repel. Torn by the Union artillery, and at sundown assailed by the whole line, the rebels broke and fled in a disordered rout. At that moment the Third Division burst upon them in a merciless pursuit. There was no cheering, no sounding of trumpets, and the flying enemy were admonished of impending slaughter only by the trampling of pursuing horses. At length they halt and pour a volley upon the Union cavalry. Then the bugles sounded and Custer and his men were in their midst, and a scene of carnage ensued that had scarcely a parallel in the war. A bloody track, weapons broken or abandoned, the bodies of the dead and wounded, attested the horrors of the fight. For five miles the pursuit continued, until darkness spread its compassionate mantle over the frightful spectacle. Captain Barker of Company H, by the personal command of Custer, had led the charge. The Fifth, commanded in the field by Major A. H. Krom, gleaned immense spoils from the common harvest of the great victory.

The Second and Third Divisions of cavalry while engaged in a reconnaissance on the 22d of November, near Mount Jackson, were involved in a hard fought battle, and again the Fifth was peculiarly distinguished in repelling by a bold and vigorous movement a flank attack on the column by the Confederate cavalry. On the 15th the regiment was ordered into camp near the headquarters of the commanding general, and a few days after was allowed to con-



struct its winter quarters near Winchester. On the 27th of February, 1865, Sheridan moved with the cavalry of the Shenandoah towards Staunton, and on the 1st of March at Waynesboro', nearly annihilated the relics of Early's army. Fourteen hundred prisoners were among the fruits of this victory. Sheridan decided to transfer most of these to the Union rear, and the Fifth, under Colonel Boice, with broken parties of other regiments, amounting in all to about one thousand men, was detached as their escort. The distance was more than one hundred miles through a country infested by guerrilla bands, and occupied by General Rosser, an alert and energetic rebel leader. The service was difficult and perilous, but was successfully executed. Rosser made a vehement effort to rescue the prisoners, but was repulsed with a severe loss, leaving a number of his troops to augment the aggregate of prisoners. General Sheridan had detained about his own person a small detachment of the Fifth, selected for special duty. These accompanied him on his trying march to the James; participated with their wonted efficiency in the closing battles of the war, and were present at the surrender of Lee.

The main body of the regiment performed on the 19th of May its final service in an expedition to Lexington, Va., to effect the arrest of Governor Letcher, and on the 19th of July it received its last general orders, directing its return to New York to be there mustered out of service and discharged. By an auspicious fortune the Fifth had fought at Hanover, Pa., the first battle on free soil; it was the first Union regiment that crossed the Rapidan in Grant's campaign; it received the first shock at the battle of the Wilderness, and was the last to leave the field.

*The One Hundred and Eighteenth New York Volunteers.* — This gallant regiment was recruited entirely in the Sixteenth congressional district, and throughout its whole career was an object of peculiar pride and solicitude to the people of that district. Its organization embraced three companies from Warren county, A, D, G; three from Clinton county, B, H, I; three from Essex county, C, E, F; and one, K, from Essex and Clinton. The latter company was enrolled chiefly in the Ausable valley; a part in Peru, and a small portion were residents of Jay; the captain, John S. Stone was from Black Brook, Clinton county. The regiment with great appropriateness designated "the Adirondack," was mustered into service the 29th of August, 1862, with Samuel F. Richards, of Warrensburg, colonel; Oliver Keese, jr., of Keeseville, lieutenant-colonel; and George F. Nichols, of Plattsburg, major. By the successive resignations, in both cases from severe sickness, of Colonel Richards in the summer of 1863, and Keese in May, 1864, Major Nichols was promoted to the command of the regiment, and led it with distinguished skill and courage in many of the severe conflicts it encountered. Colonel Keese, during his command of the regiment, was usually in the performance of active duty in the field. At the mustering in, the officers of Company C were James H. Pierce,

of St. Armands, captain; Nathan L. Washburn, of Wilmington, first, and George M. Butrick, of Jay, second lieutenant; the two latter resigned in 1863, and were succeeded by George F. Campbell and Luther S. Bryant. Of Company E, Jacob Parmeter, of North Hudson, was captain; Joseph R. Seaman, of Schroon, first lieutenant, who was promoted to the captaincy of Company A, and came home in that command; and John Brydon, of Crown Point, second lieutenant, who succeeded Seaman, was promoted to the command of Company K, was afterwards in the ordnance department and general staff, and brevetted major. Sergeant Edgar A. Wing succeeded Brydon and Sergeant J. Wesley Treadway, promoted to second lieutenant; in November, 1846, first lieutenant Company A. Corporal M. V. B. Knox was promoted second lieutenant colored volunteers, and left the service with rank of captain. In Company F, Robert W. Livingstone, of Elizabethtown, was captain, and received the brevet of major; John L. Cunningham, of Essex, first lieutenant, was promoted in 1863, to captain of Company D, and to major in 1864, and brevetted lieutenant-colonel; and William H. Stevenson, of Moriah, second lieutenant, who succeeded Cunningham; Henry J. Northrop was appointed second lieutenant in 1864; Daniel A. O'Connor was promoted to first lieutenant in 1864, and came home in acting command of company. Charles A. Grace was promoted to second lieutenant; Henry J. Adams and Nelson J. Gibbs were promoted from this company to lieutenantcies in Companies G and I. Adams was afterwards advanced to captain and commissary of subsistence and brevet major N. Y. V. Rowland C. Kellogg, promoted to second, soon after first lieutenant Company D, and in 1864 appointed captain in commissary department. The officers of Company K were John S. Stone of Black Brook, Clinton county, captain; John S. Boynton, of Peru, first lieutenant, resigned in spring of 1864 and succeeded by Sam Sherman, of Company D. Henry M. Mould, of Keeseville, second lieutenant, resigned in 1863 and succeeded by Charles W. Wells, who was promoted to captaincy of Company C, and came home in command. Phillip V. N. McLean was promoted from this company to second lieutenant Company D. Charles E. Pruyn was adjutant of the regiment on the organization. Patrick H. Delaney, quartermaster; John K. Mooers, surgeon; James G. Porteous, assistant, promoted to surgeon in Forty-sixth; and Charles L. Hagar, chaplain.

The One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment entered the service with an aggregate of nine hundred and eighty-three men; it was re-enforced at intervals by three hundred and fifty recruits, but returned from the field at the expiration of its term with only three hundred and twenty-three in its ranks, embracing both officers and privates. Immediately upon joining the army the regiment formed a part of Peck's force, in the memorable defense of Suffolk, and was employed in the arduous raids along the Black Water. It was warmly engaged through two days, and often under heavy fire, in a continued skirmish



with the rebel sharpshooters near Suffolk and participated in the diversion north of Richmond, to draw Lee from Pennsylvania, in June, 1863. The brigade to which the One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment was attached was in the advance, and the regiment was ordered to destroy parts of the Richmond and Fredericksburg Railroad. While the regiment was engaged in executing this service, two companies, A, Captain Norris, and F (in the absence from severe sickness of Captain Livingston, commanded by Lieutenant Cunningham), were advanced as skirmishers along the railroad towards the South Anna river, and after cautiously proceeding about one mile came in contact with the rebel pickets. The command continued to advance in line under a sharp and constant fire, the enemy slowly retiring, and speedily in addition to small arms they opened a fire on the Union troops from batteries in front commanding the line of the railroad and on a flank. The companies under this concentrated fire were compelled to retreat and fell back in order, assuming a strong position in a wood, behind a ditch with an open field in front. During this movement Lieutenant Cunningham received a painful wound from a spent ball, but did not leave the field. Major Nichols soon after appeared on the field with two fresh companies, D, Captain Riggs, and a company of the Ninety-ninth New York. These companies deployed on either side, and the line thus formed made a rapid advance. A warm action ensued in which the command was subjected to a heavy fire of mingled bullets, shot and shell. The enemy were at length driven back along their whole front, except at one point in their position, which was obstinately maintained and appeared to be fortified. This point, which proved to be a breastwork of plank, Lieutenant W. H. Stevenson, of Company F, proposed to capture; and calling for volunteers for the service, selected five of the first who offered. He rapidly advanced in the dark behind a screen of bushes, which flanked the rebels' position on the right, and with fixed bayonets and loaded guns rushed upon the breastwork with a wild shout. Although surprised, the enemy attempted a resistance, but the gallant Stevenson killed one with his revolver, wounded a second and captured the remainder of the party consisting of thirteen men, who were brought into the Federal lines. This dashing exploit initiated the brief though brilliant career of the stripling hero. The courage and resolution of the regiment was first tested on this occasion, and the conduct of the officers engaged and the steadiness and discipline of the troops received the highest encomiums.

The One Hundred and Eighteenth continued attached to the column of the James until the spring of 1864, and was engaged in operations near Norfolk, and at and near Bermuda Hundred. In January it composed a portion of Wistar's command, and advanced to Bottom's Bridge from Williamsburg, in an attempt upon Richmond. It at this time constituted a part of the second brigade, first division of the eighteenth corps. General W. F. Smith com-

manded the corps, Brooks the division, and Burnham the brigade. All these officers were eminently distinguished by their fighting qualities and high reputation. Early in May the army marched upon the ill-omened expedition against Fort Darling on the James, which was terminated by the fatal results at Drury's Bluff. The march from the commencement to its disastrous issue was a constant scene of fighting and skirmishes. On the tenth Companies D, F and K, were advanced in a skirmishing line, the last held in reserve, while the remainder of the regiment was deployed. The coolness and bearing of Lieutenant Stevenson of F, and Kellogg of Company D, were conspicuous, and the steadiness of the whole line was eminently distinguished.

The One Hundred and Eighteenth, four days after, captured with small loss a series of rifle pits, redoubts and batteries, which formed a strong advance line of the enemy. This work from the form of its construction afforded no protection to the Federal troops. The enemy occupied a short distance in front far more formidable works, mounted with heavy guns, and during the whole day the second brigade was exposed to a severe fire of shell from this work. One of the missiles crushed the head of Sergeant Place, of Company K, a brave and intelligent soldier. Throughout Sunday, the 15th, the brigade maintained this exposed position, which was soon to acquire a dread and bloody prominence in one of the darkest pages of the war. Heckman's brigade, lying to the right of the second, formed the extreme right of the army line. Between Heckman's brigade and the James there was an interval of a mile in length, which was left unoccupied, except by a few feeble and scattering posts of colored cavalry. No entrenchments had been constructed either in front of the Union lines or on the flank, excepting such as were hastily thrown up under the direction of commanders of particular brigades or regiments. The ground had been previously occupied by the confederates, by whom scattered and irregular redoubts, trenches and rifle pits were constructed; but these were so arranged that they afforded no protection to the Union troops in their present position. The line held by the second brigade stretched along a deep excavation which had been made by the rebels, and at this time was filled with water. A standing place was formed for the brigade, by leveling a narrow space between this ditch and the embankment created by the earth thrown up in its construction. Slight bridges were at short intervals thrown across the trench. These precautions proved a few hours later of infinite importance. The embankment was thus converted into an imperfect defense, which in the subsequent action afforded great protection to the troops. General Brooks conceived the novel and happy idea of extending a telegraph wire in front of the brigade; but, unfortunately, Heckman's brigade was without even this feeble protection, and lay totally exposed to the assault of a vigilant foe.

At three o'clock on the morning of the 16th the One Hundred and Eighteenth was aroused and at its post, in conformity to special orders, or its



established practice. The air was loaded with a thick, dense fog, which the opening dawn but slightly dissipated. As sunrise approached the advance or movement of troops was noticed in front, but in the obscure light, the color of their uniform could not be distinguished, nor their evolutions determined. A few shots from Belger's artillery, in front of the brigade, were thrown into the ravine along which these troops were advancing, and they were seen to halt and lie down. A staff officer, who at that moment appeared on the field, pronouncing them to be Federal pickets retiring, ordered the firing to cease. Small white flags or signals were distinctly discerned, waving in the mist, and voices shouted from the obscurity, "Don't fire on your friends." The musketry had already become sharp on the right, but the second brigade had received no orders of any kind. There was a period of fearful suspense and hesitation. Captain Ramson, of Company I, unable to restrain his impatience, leaped upon the embankment, and firing his revolver, exclaimed: "This is my reception of such friends." The last chamber was scarcely exploded, when he fell, pierced by a ball that passed through his body, and shattered his arm. Doubt no longer existed of the character or purpose of these troops, and the One Hundred and Eighteenth instantly poured a volley into the advancing line. The front rank of the enemy now rushing impetuously forward, and in the dimness of the light, stumbled over the wires, and those in the rear pressing after them, all were hurled together in a promiscuous mass; their ranks broken and thrown into inextricable disorder. Many of the enemy involved in this confusion threw down their arms and surrendered, and were sent to the rear. Up to this point the One Hundred and Eighteenth had achieved a success. It was vigilant, and the contemplated surprise had been defeated; but Heckman's brigade was surprised and nearly flanked, from the undefended space on its right. It had fallen back, and at one time the whole brigade were prisoners; but in the tumult, and amid the dense mist and smoke, escaped. The Eighth Connecticut, next on the right of the One Hundred and Eighteenth, was attacked in the flank, doubled up and disappeared from the field. The One Hundred and Eighteenth was now exposed to a crushing fire in front and upon the right flank. The extemporaneous traverses which it had constructed at this crisis were most effective, affording a partial protection, and for a while the resistance of the regiment appeared to be successful; but it was enveloped by an overwhelming force, and a terrific and sanguinary conflict ensued. In the desperate aspect of the battle, each man was directed to gain the rear without regard to discipline. A few embraced the opportunity to retreat; others still sustained the fight, while the wounded implored their comrades not to abandon them, and more than one noble life was sacrificed to preserve these sufferers from the horrid calamities of a hostile prison house. The regiment was soon after rallied and made a gallant stand, but was compelled to fall back; again advanced a short space, and ultimately retreated in order. Captain Dominy,

the senior officer, succeeded to the temporary command of the regiment, on the disability of Colonel Nichols.

The dire aceldama was ennobled by deeds of daring heroism and instances of exalted devotion. An intrepid young lieutenant, Henry J. Adams, of Elizabethtown, at the moment the regiment was breaking, seized a standard, and shouting the words so familiar to scenes of home and festive joyousness: "Rally round the flag, boys," attempted to arrest the retreat and essentially aided in rallying the troops. Captain Robert W. Livingston, of Company F, early in the action moved from the cover of the embankment in order to communicate with Colonel Nichols, and while standing a moment exposed, was struck down by a frightful wound in the side and shoulder. His gallant young lieutenant, W. H. Stevenson, who was behind an embankment and in a situation comparatively secure, saw him fall, and calling on the men to bring in their captain, rushed out to Livingston's assistance, accompanied by four of the company. Livingston admonished them of the great exposure they incurred, and urged that he might be left, but Stevenson persisted in his generous purpose, and in a moment after fell dead at his commander's side, a sacrifice to duty and friendship. Two of the brave men (George Miller and William Huff) were prostrated by wounds, were captured and died in Southern prisons. Livingston, as he was borne from the field, was struck by another shot that terribly lacerated his foot and leg. He languished in great suffering fourteen months in a hospital before his severe wounds permitted a return to his home, a mutilated and disabled soldier.

The regiment was not pursued by the severely punished enemy and was immediately rallied by its own officers. It maintained a bold and defiant attitude until most of its wounded were borne from the field. In that conflict, scarcely extending over the space of half an hour, the One Hundred and Eighteenth out of the 350 men engaged lost 198 privates and thirteen officers in killed, wounded and prisoners. Amid all these disasters and sacrifices the regiment had captured and secured 200 prisoners, a greater number than it retained in men fit for duty. Among the killed on this fatal day was Captain John S. Stone of Company K. Lieutenant Stevenson was killed and Lieutenant Edgar A. Wing, Company E, a youth of high promise who had been promoted to the company only a few days before, was mortally wounded, taken prisoner and died the next day. Lieutenant-Colonel Nichols was slightly wounded in the side and hand, from which his sword was stricken by a shot; and his clothing, as was that of several other officers, was riddled by bullets. Adjutant John M. Carter lost an arm and was captured; Captains Livingston and Ransom were severely wounded; Lieutenants Treadway and Sherman were wounded, and Captain Dennis Stone, Company A, and James H. Pierce, Company C, taken prisoners. The army on the same day fell back to Bermuda Hundreds and fortified; but the stricken and fragmentary One Hundred and Eighteenth were exempted from the toil of entrenching.



On the 29th of May the Eighteenth corps, embracing the One Hundred and Eighteenth, embarked in transports, and passing down the James, ascended the Pamunky and landed at the White House. Directly upon disembarking it was rushed to the front, and on the 1st of June joined the Army of the Potomac. On that day near Coal Harbor commenced a battle which continued until the 3d, and was one of the most severely contested and sanguinary engagements of the war; but its incidents have been singularly veiled from the public eye. The Eighteenth corps occupied a position in front of the Union army. The One Hundred and Eighteenth was engaged in the bloody scenes of these conflicts, but not unconnected with its corps. Its casualties were extremely severe. At times exposed to a heavy fire in front and enfladed by a battery and rifle pits, to escape annihilation the troops were compelled to lie prone upon the earth, while a tempest of minnie balls, shot and shells, hurtled just above them. The dead could neither be removed nor buried, and their corpses were thrown upon the breastwork, with a slight covering of earth strewn upon them, and thus their decaying bodies aided to form a bulwark for protection of their living comrades. The taint from the decomposing mass became almost insufferable before the corps was withdrawn from the trenches. The sufferings of the regiment through the trying ordeal of those eight days were extreme. It lost at Coal Harbor seventeen men and officers. Among the casualties were Lieutenant Michael Reynolds, of Company A, killed, Captain Jacob Parmerter, of Company E, severely wounded with the loss of a leg. An impregnable line in front arrested all advance by the Union army, but the enemy was held in an equally tenacious and unyielding grasp. The Eighteenth Corps sustained its exposed position, and in the end formed a curtain behind which, on the 12th, General Grant accomplished his perilous and memorable flank movement which effected the change of his base. When this bold and remarkable operation had been accomplished, the Eighteenth also hastily abandoned its entrenchments and fell back unopposed to the White House, and returned to its previous field of duty. On the 15th of June the One Hundred and Eighteenth was engaged in the attack on Petersburg. Here it suffered a heavy loss in the death of Major Charles E. Pruyn, who was in temporary command of the regiment. While standing in an exposed position and in the act of surveying the works he was preparing to assault, he was struck and horribly mutilated by a shell. He had acted as adjutant in the organization of the regiment and its singular proficiency and high discipline were chiefly imputed to the skill and assiduity of his services, sustained by the field officers, pre-eminently by the military attainments and persistent zeal of Colonel Keese.<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant Rowland C. Kellogg, was also wounded by the ex-

---

<sup>1</sup> Major Pruyn had been First Lieutenant in the Ninety-seventh, but resigned and became attached to the One Hundred and Eighteenth. In the summer of 1863 he was appointed major on the recommendation of a large part of the line officers of the regiment.—*Major Livingstone's Letter.*

plosion of a shell. Captain Levi S. Dominy, of Company B, succeeded to the immediate command of the regiment.

The fierce and protracted siege of Petersburg exacted from the One Hundred and Eighteenth the most arduous and exhaustive duties. Night succeeded the day, days rolled into weeks, and the weeks formed months, but their toils had no mitigation, while their endurance and dangers were perpetual. Now exposed to the burning sun and breathing the arid sand, and now struggling in mud and water; often suffering for drink, seldom able to wash, and never changing their clothes for rest. Constantly shelled and frequently enfiladed by new batteries; burrowing in the earth to escape projectiles, against which ordinary entrenchments afforded no protection, the troops were yet joyous, patient, enduring and full of hope. Amid all these exposures and suffering, after it had recovered from an almost universal prostration by chill and fever at Gloucester Point, and although moving in a malarious region, the One Hundred and Eighteenth was always vigorous and healthy. The rigorous ordeal to which it was now subjected continued with brief relief until the 29th of July, when the regiment was withdrawn to aid in the support of the storming column, which was designed to assail the enemy's works, on the explosion of the long projected mine. They witnessed in sadness and humiliation the disastrous failure of that magnificent experiment. On the 27th of August, after a term of two months, the Second Brigade was relieved from its arduous trench duties. During the long period of 113 days the One Hundred and Eighteenth had marched and toiled, and endured, with no enjoyment of quiet repose, and almost incessantly subjected to the fire of the enemy. A single month the One Hundred and Eighteenth was permitted to repose after its prolonged and severe service, in a pleasant encampment near the southern banks of the James. In that interval the Ninety-sixth had been attached to the Second Brigade. This brigade, by the proficiency of its drill, its exact discipline and general proficiency, had become conspicuous and universally esteemed second to no other in its distinguished corps. On the 27th of September every indication presaged the renewal of active duty. Rations for two days were ordered to be prepared. An unusual earnestness and activity were manifested by the generals and their staffs. The next night the tattoo, suggestive of repose, had scarcely sounded when the brigade was ordered to move promptly and in profound silence, leaving their tents standing. Previous to breaking camp the One Hundred and Eighteenth and the Tenth New Hampshire had by especial order exchanged their Enfield guns for the Spencer repeating rifle, a tremendous weapon in the hands of resolute and expert marksmen. This selection by the corps commander was a distinguished recognition of the efficiency of the preferred regiment. At 3 o'clock on the morning of the 29th the division led by the Second Brigade was passing over the James upon a pontoon bridge, which had been completed the same hour. The sound



of the movement was suppressed by earth or other substances strewn upon the bridge. On reaching the north bank of the river, the One Hundred and Eighteenth and Tenth New Hampshire were thrown out as skirmishers and flankers, while the remainder of the command was advanced along the road in column. Soon after daybreak a brisk fire was opened by the enemy's pickets which fell back on their reserves, and the whole were forced rapidly back through a dense wood, for the distance of more than two miles when the Union column entered upon open ground. A strong earthwork was now revealed in front, and mounted with heavy guns. This formidable work was Fort, or rather, Battery Harrison, and General Stannard instantly ordered Burnham to take it by assault. The Ninety-sixth and Eighth Connecticut forming the storming column were supported by the First and Third Brigade of the division with the One Hundred and Eighteenth New York and Twelfth New Hampshire as skirmishers on their flanks. The column rushed impetuously forward along the open space, met by a furious plunging fire from the enemy's lines. When it reached, after this rapid advance along the distance of nearly three-fourths of a mile, the base of the eminence upon which the works were erected, the column, breathless and exhausted, paused in a position comparatively protected. As we have already seen, the enemy was hastening re-enforcements to the point of attack, and the commander, both of the division and brigade, sent a member of his staff to order an instant assault. Lieutenant George F. Campbell, Company C, One Hundred and Eighteenth, aid to General Burnham, dashed across the plains exposed to the whole range of the enemy's fire and unhurt communicated the order. In a strong tribute of the official address this was pronounced a 'most gallant act. The two regiments impetuously scaled the hill, mounted the parapet, and their gallant color-bearers planted simultaneously their flags upon the works. The enemy precipitately abandoned the lines, falling back to other works, while their own guns were turned upon them with deadly effect. In the act of turning one of these guns upon the fugitives, General Burnham was mortally wounded and died in a few minutes after.

While these events were in progress in the center, the skirmishing support had approached the fort, and used their terrible rifles in picking off the gunners in the works and demoralizing the defense. Lieutenant Colonel Nichols with the One Hundred and Eighteenth, after being distinguished "for his cool conduct of the skirmish lines in the general assault, captured two redoubts on the right of the fort, during the main assault. Lieutenants N. J. Gibbs and H. J. Adams were the first men in the redoubts, and promptly turned the captured guns upon the retreating enemy. Surgeon F. G. Porteous, of the One Hundred and Eighteenth, was officially noticed with strong recommendations for bravery and attention to duties, being the only surgeon in the brigade advancing with his regiment in the charging column."<sup>1</sup> The Second Brigade

---

<sup>1</sup> From General Butler's address to the Army of the James.

now moved upon two entrenchments in front, and captured them successfully, driving the enemy back upon their third and last defense on this line of works. Fort Harrison had thus been snatched from the jaws of the Confederate army, which lay in great force immediately contiguous and was too important a position to be relinquished without a desperate struggle. The last line captured by the Union troops was exposed to the fire of the enemy's gun-boats and to assault, and it was deemed expedient to fall back upon Fort Harrison. The enemy vigorously pursued and in the movement both Colonel Donohue and Lieutenant-Colonel Nichols were severely wounded. The night and the succeeding morning were assiduously employed in extending and strengthening the works, which now acquired the form and strength of an enclosed fortification. A second and third time the onset was repeated and met in the same courageous spirit, and with similar results. On the last assault, those of the assailants who survived the withering fire of the Federal troops, threw down their arms and surrendered. About noon the next day rebel troops had been massed in three heavy columns and covered by two batteries, rushed upon the new Federal lines with heroic impetuosity. The One Hundred and Eighteenth and Tenth New Hampshire were stationed at salient points in the works, and the fatal power of their new weapons was frightfully demonstrated upon the Confederate ranks. Gun-boats were constantly but with trifling effect shelling the Union position. This formidable assault was repulsed by musketry alone, and the rebels falling back to cover, abandoned their numerous dead and wounded upon the field.

In the critical period between the two first assaults a gallant act occurred that reflected the highest credit upon the bravery and zeal of Captain Brydon, of the One Hundred and Eighteenth, for which he received the brevet of major. Twenty-two pieces of cannon, several battle flags and numerous prisoners were among the results of this enterprise which secured to the Union army an important position that was never relinquished. The Confederate loss was known to be very large. Clingman's North Carolina Brigade was almost annihilated. The Federal loss amounted to nearly one-fifth of their combatants engaged. Besides Lieutenant-Colonel Nichols, Captain Dobie and Lieutenant Treadway of the One Hundred and Eighteenth were wounded.

The One Hundred and Eighteenth moved with its division from the quarters near Fort Burnham, where it had remained since the capture of that work, on the 26th of October, to a position within about three miles of Fort Richmond, erected on the former battle-ground of Fair Oaks. The regiment at that time was composed of two hundred and five men for duty, including supernumeraries. At dawn the succeeding morning it advanced. That part of the regiment embracing more than half which was armed with Spencer rifles was thrown in front as skirmishers, and the remainder held in reserve. Passing a covert of woods, the skirmishers entered upon a cleared field which ex-



tended to the fort a distance of about one-fourth of a mile. Over this space they made a rush upon the work, in the face of a terrible fire, and succeeded in approaching it within about one hundred yards. The enemy's lines at this moment were only slightly manned, but the entrenchment was heavy and formidable, and wholly unassailable by the feeble skirmishing force. Major Dominy, an officer conspicuous for his fighting qualities, commanded the regiment, and at this time passed an order for the troops to lie down, seeking any cover that presented itself, for protection against the irresistible tempest of shot that was hurled upon them. Soon after they were directed to fall back singly to an excavation on a road in the rear. The regiment made no further advance, but after the repulse of the assaulting column mentioned in the notice of the Ninety-sixth Regiment, retreated to its former encampment.

The losses of the regiment were greater in proportion to its strength than on any previous occasion. The skirmishing party entered into action with nine officers; three of these, Major Dominy, Lieutenants McLean and Gibbs returned in safety, but Captain J. R. Seaman of Company A was seriously wounded. Lieutenant M. J. Dickinson was wounded and taken prisoner with Lieutenants Saunders, Potter, O'Connor and Bryant. Captain M. V. B. Stetson in the reserve was also wounded while aiding to remove Colonel Moffitt of the Ninety-fifth from the field. When the regiment reached its former quarters scarcely forty men had gathered to its standard, but others returned until the aggregate was increased to nearly one-half the number who had marched out the day preceding. The One Hundred and Eighteenth remained in camp through the winter and on the march upon Richmond the ensuing spring its relics were engaged on picket duty and advanced as skirmishers, covering the third division of the twenty-fourth corps. It was the first organized Federal regiment that entered Richmond. The One Hundred and Eighteenth bore the noble inscription upon its national flag: "Suffolk — South Anna — Coal Harbor — Fort Harrison — Bermuda — Swift Creek — Petersburg — Fair Oaks — Drury's Bluff — Crater — Richmond." This attests its military glory, but its high qualities are still more illustrated by the remarkable fact that not a single member of the regiment was known to have deserted to the enemy. In more authoritative language than I can use, General Devens, in recapitulating its services pronounces this eulogium upon the One Hundred and Eighteenth at Drury's Bluff: "This regiment distinguished itself for great valor and pertinacity, and won the reputation it has since enjoyed of being one of the most resolute regiments in the service." He adds: "With this weapon (the Spencer rifle) they will return to your State armed, and it is a most appropriate testimonial of their efficiency." I have been guided essentially in the brief survey of the operations of the One Hundred and Eighteenth by official documents.

Officers of the One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment, when mustered

out of service, June 13th, 1845 : — Col. George F. Nichols, brevet-general U. S. V. ; Lieutenant-Colonel Levy S. Dominy, brevet colonel N. Y. V. ; Major John L. Cunningham, brevet lieutenant-colonel U. S. V. ; Surgeon William O. Mansfield ; Assistant Surgeon J. C. Preston ; Chaplain Charles L. Hagar ; Adjutant Clifford Hubbard ; Quartermaster Henry J. Northrup, brevet captain N. Y. V.

Company A. — Captain Joseph R. Seaman, brevet major U. S. V. ; First Lieutenant J. W. Treadway, brevet captain N. Y. V. from Company E.

Company B. — Captain George F. Campbell, brevet major N. Y. V. from Company C ; First Lieutenant Jas. A. Garret, brevet captain N. Y. V. from Company A ; Second Lieutenant Merrill Perry, brevet captain N. Y. V. from Company A.

Company C. — Captain C. W. Wells, brevet major N. Y. V. from Company K ; First Lieutenant L. S. Bryant ; Second Lieutenant N. H. Arnold, from Company E.

Company D. — Captain John W. Angell, from Company E ; Second Lieutenant Phillip V. N. McLean, from Company K.

Company E. — Captain Henry S. Graves from Company I ; First Lieutenant George H. Potter from Company A ; Second Lieutenant William T. Bidwell, late hospital steward.

Company F. — Captain Robert W. Livingston, brevet major N. Y. V. ; First Lieutenant Daniel O'Connor, assistant hospital steward ; Second Lieutenant Charles A. Grace from Company A.

Company G. — First Lieutenant James H. Pitt from Company H.

Company H. — Captain David F. Dobie, brevet major N. Y. V. ; First Lieutenant F. Saunders.

Company I. — Captain Martin V. B. Stetson, major N. Y. V. ; First Lieutenant Nelson J. Gibbs, brevet captain N. Y. V. from Company F.

Company K. — Captain John Brydon, brevet major N. Y. V. ; First Lieutenant John W. Calkins from Company K ; Second Lieutenant Geo. Vaughan from Company I.

Officers connected with Essex county troops who resigned or were discharged : — Samuel T. Richards, colonel, July 8th, 1863 ; Colonel Oliver Keese, jr., resigned September 14th, 1864 ; Captain James H. Pierce, discharged February 9th, 1865 ; First Lieutenant Nathan S. Washburn, discharged February 14th, 1863 ; Second Lieutenant George M. Butrick, discharged February 14th, 1863 ; Jacob Parmerter, discharged November 15th, 1864 ; First Lieutenant John S. Boynton, resigned March 12th, 1864 ; First Lieutenant Sam Sherman, discharged October 19th, 1864 ; Second Lieutenant Henry M. Mould, resigned August 1st, 1863.

Brevet commissions issued by the governor to enlisted men of this regiment : — Sergeant Cass C. LaPoint, second lieutenant ; Sergeant Major Ash-



ley S. Prime, second lieutenant. Sergeant Joseph A. Hastings, second lieutenant; Sergeant Freeman D. Lindsay, second lieutenant.

Enlisted men of this regiment to whom medals of honor have been awarded by the secretary of war. — Private Franklin Jandro.

*The One Hundred and Fifty-third Regiment New York Volunteers.* — This regiment was recruited from various sections of the State, and mustered into service October, 1862. Thomas Armstrong, of Clinton county, received the appointment of lieutenant-colonel at its organization, and resigned February, 1863. A large part of a company which was attached to the One Hundred and Fifty-third as Company I, was enrolled by John F. McGuire, of Keeseville, from Clinton and Essex counties, and in it he was appointed second lieutenant. By the successive resignations of the superior officers he was promoted in December, 1863, to the command of the company. The regiment immediately after its organization was ordered to Alexandria, and subsequently at Washington was employed in provost duty. Company I was especially detached in that service. Early in 1864 the One Hundred and Fifty-third was transferred to Louisiana and incorporated with the Nineteenth Army Corps. It was engaged in the Red river expedition and participated in all the hardships and disasters of that campaign. When the Union forces, after the battle of Sabine Cross Roads, fell back, Company I was the rear company in the retreat of the army. The Nineteenth Corps sailed from New Orleans on the third of July, with sealed orders; but its destination proved to be the Chesapeake. The One Hundred and Fifty-third and four companies belonging to other regiments, the advance of the corps on their arrival at Fortress Monroe, were instantly ordered, without disembarking, to the defense of Washington, then menaced by Early's incursion. The troops were hastened through the city amid the deep excitement and alarm of the people, to a position at Fort Stevens where they went into immediate action. After the repulse of the rebels, the One Hundred and Fifty-third joined in the pursuit across the Potomac into the Shenandoah Valley, but was suddenly recalled to the vicinity of the capital to oppose another apprehended advance of the enemy. The regiment was soon after engaged in the battle of Winchester, and Company I here sustained some slight casualties. It participated in the engagement at Fisher's Hill and in the pursuit of the Confederates from that field.

The Nineteenth Corps was at Cedar Creek and suffered heavy losses incident to the surprise and early catastrophies of that eventful day. The One Hundred and Fifty-third formed part of the picket line that enveloped Washington after the assassination of Mr. Lincoln, and discharged guard duty at the arsenal on the military trials that succeeded. In June, 1865, the regiment was ordered to Savannah, where it performed provost duty until its discharge. Captain McGuire, of Company I, brevet-major, N. Y. V., during that service

acted as acting provost-marshal of the city. In the succeeding October the One Hundred and Fifty-third disbanded at Albany.

Brevet commissions issued to enlisted men of this regiment: Sergeant James C. Bullock, second lieutenant; private Melchoir H. Hoffnagle, second lieutenant.

*The Second New York Cavalry.* — The last organized company in Essex county was enrolled in Ticonderoga in the summer of 1864, of which William H. Sanger was appointed captain, James McCormick, first, and George B. Coates, second lieutenant, each on the 8th of September, 1864. They had both belonged to the Thirty-fourth New York Volunteers. It was attached to the Second New York Cavalry as Company E, with the army of Sheridan, and performed excellent service in the Shenandoah Valley, attended him in the perilous march to the James, and was engaged with his command in the battle that preceded the surrender of Lee. This regiment was ultimately associated with the Fifth in the achievements of the Shenandoah campaign. Lieutenants McCormick and Coates were both wounded, the former very seriously at the battle of Cedar Creek. Lieutenant McCormick was discharged May 1st, 1865. Coates was promoted to first lieutenant but not mustered in as such, and remained with the regiment until it was disbanded June 5th, 1865. Captain Sanger was made brevet-major New York State Volunteers and discharged May 15th, 1865.

Medals of honor were awarded to the following enlisted men: Frank Miller, J. S. Calkins.

List of brevet commissions, second lieutenant, issued to enlisted men: privates John J. Morse, Burnet Galloway, Sergeant Fred A. M. Ball.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

### LAND PATENTS, TITLES, ETC.

Early Divisions of the Public Domain — Claims of Different Nations to the Territory of New York — Conditions of British Grants to Retired Officers and Soldiers — Loans of Lands by Original Grantees — Land Patents in the County — Difficulties of Map Making, etc.<sup>1</sup>

THE subject of the early divisions, titles and claims relative to the public domain is one of especial value. The right of the Crown of Great Britain to sovereignty over the territory of the Iroquois was set forth in a memo-

---

<sup>1</sup> This chapter was prepared by Homer D. L. Sweet, of Syracuse, a gentleman of vast experience as a surveyor in Essex county and elsewhere, and fully conversant with the records in the Surveyor-general's office. While he has availed himself of considerable of the information contained in Mr. Watson's work, he has revised it, added largely to it and given references in all cases to book and page where records of the various patents may be found, with road patents, tracts, explanatory observations, etc.



rial prepared by the commissioners of trade and plantations in 1697. This memorial recites that the Five Nations had "by many acknowledgments, submissions, leagues, and agreements, been united to or depended upon that colony" [New York], that they, "being the most warlike in that part of the world, held all their neighboring Indians in a manner of tributary subjection;" that in prospect of an invasion of their territory in 1684, by De la Barre, governor of Canada, Governor Dongan, of New York, warned that French officer, "that those Indians are the king of England's subjects, and also sent the then Duke of York's (to whom the province had been granted by the Crown) arms to be set up in every one of the Indian castles, as far as Oneygra [Niagara], which was accordingly done, and Monsieur de la Barre retired."

In a report on the province of New York, made in 1774, Governor Tryon said: "The boundaries of the province of New York are derived from two sources — first, the grants from King Charles the Second to his brother James, Duke of York. . . . Secondly from the submission and subjection of the Five Nations to the Crown of England. . . ." It is uncertain to this day to what extent the Five Nations carried their claim to the westward and northward, but there is no doubt as has been before stated that it extended to the north beyond the 45th degree of latitude, and westward to Lake Huron, their beaver-hunting country being bounded on the west by that lake; which country the Five Nations by treaty with the governor of this province, surrendered to the Crown, "to be protected and defended for them."

Such was the foundation of the English claim to sovereignty over the territory of the Iroquois — a claim which we have seen they were able to sustain. The Indians never recognized this claim in the broad sense above expressed, while the French scoffed at it. With the change of sovereignty wrought by the Revolutionary War, the three governments, France, England and the Americans, had claimed and to a greater or less extent exercised the right to grant patents to the lands in the State of New York.

The granting by the French and later by the English of patents along Lake Champlain we have already alluded to; the latter were made under royal proclamation of October, 1763, to reduced officers and soldiers who had served in the regular army in the Canadian campaigns. The grants were made and in many cases located by the grantees themselves; in others they were sold, but generally located in the name of the original grantees, though not always. The proportionate extent of the grants was 5,000 acres to a field officer; 3,000 to a captain; 2,000 to a subaltern staff officer; 200 to a non-commissioned officer and fifty to a private. "All mines of gold and silver, and all pine trees fit for masts of the growth of twenty-four inches diameter and upwards at twelve inches from the earth," were reserved to the crown. The grants were held for ten years "in free and common socage exempt from all quit-rents, and after the expiration of that term, rendering and paying in the custom house

in New York, on Lady day, the yearly rent of two shillings and sixpence sterling, for each and every hundred acres of the granted land." Other conditions made were the settlement on the granted lands "of as many families on the tract as shall amount to one family on every thousand acres thereof," and the cultivation of "at least three acres for every fifty acres susceptible of cultivation;" both of which conditions were to be fulfilled within three years from the date of grant. Neglect to do so forfeited the grant. It will readily be presumed, and correctly, that many of the grants lapsed through failure to fulfill the conditions, as well as from other causes.

A large proportion of these 'soldiers' grants were located on the eastern shore of Lake Champlain, in the present State of Vermont; a small part only of the area of Essex county being included in them. "In the confusion of the agitated period that preceded the Revolution," says Mr. Watson, "numerous cases of these petitions [for grants] remained in an inchoate condition; and in others, although the proceedings had been regular and ample, were not consummated by the colonial government." In most of these instances the succeeding State government refused to ratify the proceedings of the claimants, and large estates, as we have seen illustrated in the notice of Gilliland, were lost. The State constitution of 1777, by a provision which has been incorporated in the constitutions of 1821 and 1847, abrogated all royal grants after October 14th, 1775.

Since the Revolution large tracts of unappropriated lands in Essex county and elsewhere have been patented to individuals and the remainder was early laid out into tracts and townships, then into lots, and sold to purchasers. The proceeds of the sales were devoted to the advancement of the cause of education in the State. Considerable land in this county is still in the possession of the State.

#### PATENTS.

*Adgate.* — Mathew Adgate was granted five patents in the north part of Chesterfield, and lying near if not contiguous. The first was for 3,600 acres, February 22d, 1789, Volume XXI, page 87; the second for 200 acres, 29th of January, 1791, Volume XXIII, page 23; the third for 1,436 acres, November 22d, 1792, Volume XXIII, page 291; the fourth for 80 acres, November 22d, 1792, Volume XXIII, page 292; the fifth for 2,113, February 20th, 1793, Volume XXIII, page 391.

*Benzel.* — Adolphus Benzel was a prominent early official in the county and a wealthy resident of Crown Point. He seems to have acted largely as surveyor in locating the ancient patents. He was conspicuous in the New Hampshire grant controversies, and necessarily highly obnoxious to the settlers there. The reply of the Bennington committee to Governor Tryon, in reference to Colonel Reid's action, speaks of "the vicious and haughty aid of Mr. Benzel, the famed engineer." He was among the reduced officers in the royal procla-



mation. Southier lays down two patents in his name, one in Moriah between Small's and Legg's; the other in Crown Point adjoining south of the garrison grounds. The former is known as Springer Patent of 3,000 acres, and the latter as Benzel's of 1,000 acres. We conjecture that the former may have been applied for by Benzel, but subsequently issued to Springer and others.

*Benson.* — Richard Benson and a number of other privates reduced from the Eightieth, Sixtieth, and Forty-fourth Regiments, received a patent for 550 acres October 29th, 1765, which was located in the present town of Willsborough north of Wreisburg and west of the Montessor Patent. It appears that the Benson and also the Montessor Patent were occupied only by squatters until 1819. In that year both were purchased by Seth Hunt, of Keene, N. H. The validity of the original patent and his title were soon after established and his rights judiciously enforced. Many individuals who had been innocent purchasers under the spurious titles to these patents, were severe sufferers by this adjudication. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 11.

*Bossborough.* — This patent was granted to William Gilliland, on the 14th of August, 1784. It began at the lake, at the south bounds of Skeene's 2,400 acre patent, and then ran west, south, west, south and east, to the lake, and then to the place of beginning, containing 2,415 acres. — *Patents*, Volume XX, page 334.

*Campbell, Allen* — A reduced field officer is thus described: "Having served in N. A. during the late war, in Second Battalion of our Royal Highland Regiment of Foot." Campbell united in a petition with Lieutenant John Kennedy, praying for a grant of 7,000 acres. The boundaries indicated "extending from the first mountain west of the carrying place at the foot of Lake George," along said mountain to where it touches Lake Champlain near Crown Point, and thence to the mouth of the outlet from Lake George. Kennedy's grant embraces a portion of this highly desirable territory, but Campbell's was located elsewhere. His patent for 5,000 acres, dated July 11th, 1764, was laid out in Crown Point, on the lake shore: Benzel and Legg on the north, and Grant on the south. — *Military Patents*, Volume I, page 1.

*Campbell, Donald.* — The petition of Donald Campbell, December 17th, 1763, describes him as late lieutenant in the Royal American Regiment, and claims two thousand acres. The land his petition indicated was nearly identical with the last. Another petition, February 18th, 1773, of Quartermaster Donald Campbell, asks for two thousand acres on the south-west side of Lake George, near the garrison grounds. On November 1st, 1784, Donald Campbell filed a petition for a confirmatory grant of a tract of land surveyed for him in 1764, pursuant to the royal proclamation. No action appears upon record on this petition, but on the 25th of May, 1786, the return was filed of a survey of two thousand acres north of N. Sutherland's tract to Donald Campbell, for which he paid, on the following 28th of June, one hundred

pounds. A tract is laid down on the map under this designation between Grant's on the north and Sutherland's on the south.

*Connelly.* — John Connelly presented a petition for a grant as surgeon's mate and belonging to a military hospital. A patent was issued April 13th, 1765, for two thousand acres. It lies in Willsborough and Essex, and is one of the grants located by William Gilliland. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 31.

*Deall.* — Samuel Deall, a merchant of wealth in the city of New York, embarked in heavy land operations in the present county of Essex in 1767, and purchased about that time a tract of five thousand acres between Lakes George and Champlain. He received July 12th, 1769, a grant for one thousand acres, which was located by him in Ticonderoga and west of the village of Lower Falls. (See history of Ticonderoga.) Another tract, adjoining the above, is called and designated on the county map as Deall's Patent. — *Patents*, Vol. XIV, page 405.

*Douglass.* — A patent was granted to Asa Douglass, jr., on the 23d of February, 1789, for nine hundred acres, lying next south of Mathew Adgate, in the town of Chesterfield. — *Patents*, Vol. XXI, page 158. The beginning of the survey was at the northwest corner of a tract of three thousand acres granted to Mathew Adgate, and  $216\frac{53}{100}$  chains from the lake, nearly opposite of the south end of Schuyler's Island, 97.04 chains square, and almost surrounded by Adgate's Patents.

*Field.* — John Field was a surgeon's mate and applied by petition April 14th, 1764, for a grant of two thousand acres in pursuance of proclamation. The patent was issued April 15th, 1765, and the land surveyed on the south side of the Boquet by Gilliland as assignee of Field immediately after. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 36.

*Franklin.* — Joseph Franklin, late sergeant in the Twenty-seventh Regiment, united with Sergeant Benjamin Porter in a petition July 9th, 1764, praying for a grant to each of two hundred acres, described as "bearing west north-west thirty-nine chains from the salient angle of the king's bastion, fronting the lake half a mile, and then west north-westerly, until it completes the said number of acres." Mr. Benzel, the engineer, made a note of the survey. The patent to Franklin issued July, 1765, was laid out in conformity with the petition between the Porter and McKensie's tracts, and embraced Cedar Point at Port Henry. On the 5th of March, 1792, Franklin conveyed his title to James Graham, and April 15th, 1792, Graham devised it to his daughter, Ann Eliza. Graham was a fur trader, and the mother of his child was a half-breed. The daughter, in 1802, executed a will in New York, devising the property to St. Peter's (Catholic) Church of that city, in trust for the school of the church. The church conveyed it to J. B. Spencer under this will, whose title was judicially sustained. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 110.

*Friswell.* — John Friswell applied, as late lieutenant in the navy and having



acted as midshipman on board the *Princess Amelia*, at the siege of Louisburg and Quebec, February 15th, 1765, for a grant of three thousand acres of land on the west side of Lake Champlain. On the May following a return of a survey was filed of two tracts, containing two thousand acres; one in Plattsburg, and the other of one thousand acres nearly west of "Splittenrock," and lying upon the lake. This is one of Gilliland's locations.—*Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 48.

*Freligh*.—A certificate of location of six hundred acres of land to George Freligh, on the west side of Lake Champlain, appears in *Long Island Papers*, XLVI, 41, February 3d, 1789, and a patent in Willsborough and Essex bears this name. Patent granted February 5th, 1789. — *Patents*, Vol. XXI, page 63.

*Gilliland*.—A Gilliland patent is laid down on Southier, west of Benson's grant in Willsborough. James, a brother of William Gilliland, about 1767, settled upon a lot on the north bank of the Boquet.

"*William Gilliland and Matthew Watson*."—Their tract, which appears on the large county map, contained two hundred acres, and began, according to the certificate of location, seven chains north of the south-west corner of James Judd's patent, June 22d, 1789, and was surveyed under a title from the State. Patent granted August 8th, 1789. — *Patents*, Vol. XXI, page 263.

*Grant*.—Robert Grant is described in a patent for three thousand acres issued August 7th, 1764, as late captain in the Seventy-seventh Regiment. He was promoted to major and killed at the battle of Hubbardton, July 7th, 1777. A return of survey with map of location in the town of Crown Point was filed in the colonial office, August 3d, 1764, *Land Papers*, XVIII, 8. About twenty years after the death of Grant a spurious agent appeared in the city of New York, and pretending to hold authority from him, deeded the patent as such, with an agreement that the grantee and agent should participate in the avails. The sisters of Major Grant, more than half a century after his decease, instituted proceedings as heirs at law for the recovery of the patent. Under a commission issued in the suit and sent to Scotland in the year 1830, among other witnesses examined was Lieutenant-General Thomas Scott, then eighty-four years old, who swore that he saw the dead body of Grant on the battlefield at Hubbardton and witnessed its interment at that place with military honors and that he brought back to Scotland relics of Grant which he delivered to the brother of Grant. The claimants necessarily recovered the premises. This patent embraces a large portion of the most valuable part of the town of Crown Point. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 5.

*Guise*.—William Guise and three other non-commissioned officers in the Fifty-fifth Regiment of Foot received a grant of 800 acres, January 5th, 1773. On the county map this grant is placed on the east side of Schroon lake near the county line. By the survey and map for Guise and his associ-

ates, the location of the patent was on the northeast branch of the Hudson. There is a difficulty in locating this patent.—*Military Patents*, No. II, p. 449.

*Hasenclever*. — Peter Hasenclever and others petitioned June 30th, 1766, for a grant of 15,000 acres, on the east side (?) of Lake Champlain, and praying a survey of Franklin, Porter and McKenzie's Patent [in Moriah] so as to admit a passage to the lake and land for store house. On Southier's map the patent is laid down north of Small, but it does not appear on the county map, and the present iron ore bed tract is bounded by Small's patent on the south. This grant was probably confiscated, if ever actually consummated.

*Hicks*. — John Hicks is described as "gentleman, a reduced staff officer," and "surgeon in one of our independent companies of foot," patent April 15th, 1765, for 3,000 acres, lies in Essex and was located by Gilliland. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, p. 34.

*Hoffman Township*. — This tract was granted to Egbert Benson, Mary Hoffman, and Theodorus Bailey, as executors of Anthony Hoffman, Amaziah Cooper, Martin Vosburgh, Thomas Lewis, and John Van Benthuyzen, as a part of the Totten and Crossfield Purchase. It was to be divided into five equal shares. It lies on the west of the Road Patent, partly in Essex and partly in Warren counties. It contained 25,200 acres. Patent granted May 15th, 1775. — *Patents*, Vol. XVIII, p. 62, etc.

*Judd*. — James Judd, described as "gentleman, reduced officer and surgeon's mate in our military hospital." Patent issued April 15th, 1765, for 2,000 acres, with boundaries "beginning at Cloven or Splitten Rock, etc." Lies in the town of Essex. — *Military Patents*, Volume I, p. 35.

*Kellett*. — Roger Kellett, "gentleman, a reduced subaltern officer," late lieutenant in Forty-fourth Regiment. The grant was surveyed August 2d, and patent granted August 7th, 1764, for 2,000 acres. This patent, situated in Ticonderoga with those of Stoughton and Kennedy, was selected with great judgment by officers familiar with the beauty and value of the territory. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, p. 4.

*Kelly*. — John De Lancy and John Kelly obtained a patent for 7,000 acres on the 18th of July, 1786. The description of the tract begins at the "Bay de Roches Fendee," and lies in a north-west course from the village of Westport. — *Patents*, Vol. XIX, p. 291.

*Kennedy*. — John Kennedy, "gentleman, reduced subaltern officer," lieutenant in the Sixtieth Regiment. Patent granted August 7th, 1764, for 2,000 acres. It lies in Ticonderoga and extends from the Lower Falls along the north side of the stream to the fort ground, thence across to Lake Champlain and down its shore, and sweeping into the interior included a large part of the valuable plateau in the north section of the town. At the death of the grantee the property passed to his "oldest brother, Henry Kennedy, surgeon," who sold it September 26th, 1765, for one hundred and fifty pounds sterling, to



Abraham P. Lott and Peter Theobaldus Curtenius, "merchants of the city of New York," and they sold it December 16th, 1767, for one hundred and eighty pounds, lawful currency to Samuel Deall, "merchant, etc." Patent became Deall's on the map. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, p. 3.

*Legge.* — The singular incidents connected with the history of this patent (says Mr. Watson) have attached peculiar interest to it, and no portion of Essex county has been the subject of more bitter and protracted litigation. Francis Legge, who I infer belonged to the family of the Earl of Dartmouth, was a captain in the Forty-sixth Regiment. Under the royal proclamation he received a concession on June 26th, 1769, of 5,000 acres which had been located in the present towns of Moriah and Crown Point by a survey returned the 6th of April preceding. The early action of Legge in reference to his grant is enveloped in obscurity. A mandamus was issued by the king in council September 5th, 1765, for 5,000 acres to be surveyed to Francis Legge, captain of the Twenty-sixth, in one continuous tract on the province of New York. On the 3d of November, 1766, Captain Francis Legge presented "a petition for 5,000 acres of land on the west side of Connecticut river, with specific boundaries. He made a similar application for 5,000 acres in the township of Norwich in a wholly different section from the preceding. The identity of the name and the quantity of land solicited seem to warrant the conclusion that the several applications if made by one individual, rested upon the same claim; but it is difficult to determine why all should have been advanced. In 1809 a William Legge, assuming to be the heir of Francis, conveyed or pretended to convey this patent to one Winter, who afterwards deeded it to Shaw. One of them caused the tract to be subdivided into lots, and sold a portion of these to settlers. Subsequently Shaw brought ejectments against occupants who refused to admit his title. Another claim known as the James Brown title was founded upon a deed dated in the year 1818, and purporting to have been executed by John Legge in Ireland, who also claimed to be heir of Francis, to two persons, mother and son, by the name of Sinclair. They conveyed to James Brown, who also brought ejectments.

In 1831 suits were brought against some of the occupants upon a claim sometimes called the "Cape Ann title." It was asserted that in the year 1770 Francis Legge, while at Ipswich, Mass., residing with a Dr. Manning, executed a deed of the whole patent to one Rowe, then a child of four or five years. One of these suits was against Brown and an occupant, was tried with a verdict and judgment for the plaintiff, but this was reversed in the Court of Errors. On the trial of this suit proof was introduced by defendants tending to show that Legge died and was buried in Troy, N. Y., in 1780. In 1860 a commission issuing out of the United States Circuit Court was executed in London, by which the following series of facts were established from records in the war office and those of the state paper office and the colonial office, the

registry of the Court of Probate, in Doctor's Commons, and by exhibits and the examination of proper officials, that "Francis Legge was appointed lieutenant in Thirty-fifth Foot in 1754, captain in Forty-sixth in 1756; that at this time he was serving in America; that he was major in 1767; lieutenant in Fifty-fifth Foot in 1773, and appointed governor of Nova Scotia in August, 1783; that he was recalled, and his conduct as governor investigated in 1786; that he was buried in the parish of Primer, Middlesex, England, on 22d of May, 1783; that his will dated April 18th, 1769, was proved the May following by his executors, the Earl of Dartmouth and William Baillie, Esq., and that the Earl of Dartmouth, whom he styles in his will 'his much esteemed friend,' was his principal legatee and devisee. Personal property was left by the will to various relations. The record of his burial described him as Lieutenant-Colonel Francis Legge, late governor of Nova Scotia."

*Mallory's Grant.* — Nathaniel Mallory, on March 25th, 1799, entered the return of a survey of tract of land on west side of Lake Champlain containing 9,973 acres, situated in Jay, Keene and Wilmington. It was granted to Simeon De Witt in trust for Mallory, October 21st, 1799. — *Patents*, Vol. XVIII, page 248, etc.

*Mathews.* — This patent was granted October 30th, 1765, to James Mathews and seven others, privates for 400 acres. It lies in Ticonderoga next to Stanton. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 215.

*Maule's.* — This tract, comprising 42,969 acres, (*Patents*, Vol. XVIII, page 301), was patented to Thomas Maule, August 21st, 1800. Embracing large sections of Chesterfield, Jay and Willsborough, it also occupies a portion of Ausable and Black Brook in Clinton. In March, 1803, Maule and wife conveyed to five persons in trust about 20,000 acres of this patent in Chesterfield and Jay. This trust was for the benefit of the Farmers' Society, a benevolent organization, intended, as is now understood, to supply mechanics and others in moderate circumstances with freehold farms; but as the scheme proved a failure, there is no object for tracing its history. The trustees executed a mortgage for fifty thousand dollars on the purchase. This mortgage came into the hands of Edward Livingstone, who assigned it to his sister, the widow of General Montgomery; and the surviving trustees conveyed or released the property to her. She devised it to Edward Livingstone, and on his death he devised it to his wife. By these various owners parcels were conveyed to various settlers.

*McCormic's* patent lies next west of Kelly's and Jonas Morgan's lies next west of that. These and several other small tracts were patented to individuals, and on old maps have these names, but we have failed to find the records of them. The patents usually took the name of the person whose name was first on the petition, or the first on the patent, but it was not always the case, as in the instance of De Lancy and Kelly.



*McIntosh.* — Alexander McIntosh, late captain of the Seventy-seventh Regiment, August 3d, 1764, filed the return of a survey of three thousand acres between Crown Point and Ticonderoga. Patent issued August 7th, 1764. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 7.

*McBride.* — Patent issued April 23d, 1765, to James McBride late sergeant in Forty-seventh Foot, for two hundred acres. Lies in Willsborough, and is bounded south and west by the Boquet, and east by the lake. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 39.

*McKensie.* — Alexander McKensie, sergeant in the Fortieth Regiment, received one patent for two tracts October 29th, 1765, one of a hundred and fifty acres adjoining the Franklin patent, and another fifty acres called the Grove. Both are situated in Moriah. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 204.

*Miller.* — Paul Miller, a corporal in Sixtieth Regiment of Foot, located a patent dated October 29th, 1765, of 200 acres on the south side of Boquet, north of Wriesburgh; it lies in Willsborough. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 206.

*Montressor.* — Patent issued June 6th, 1765, to John Montressor, Francis Mee and Robert Wallace for three thousand acres, "called Ligonier Point," as also four small islands called "Les Isles des Quatre Vents," in the lake eastward of Ligonier Point. This is the beautiful tract now known as Willsborough Point. The original petition also asked for Schuyler's Island. Some doubt exists says Watson, in reference to the origin of the name Ligonier. He ventures to refer it to Sir John Ligonier, who, about the date in which it must have been applied, was commander-in-chief of the army in Great Britain. — *Patents*, Vol. XIV, page 29.

*Old Military Tract.* — An act was passed May 5th, 1786, as a memorial of public gratitude, to remunerate military service in the Revolution; to the purpose, a large territory known as the "Old Military Tract," lying north of Jessup's purchase and beginning thirty miles from the north-east corner of lands granted to Philip Skeene, July 6th, 1771, and extending twenty miles in width and to the north bound of the State, a computed distance of sixty miles, was run out into twelve large townships. Nos. 11 and 12 constitute St. Armand and North Elba; Nos. 1 and 2 were also embraced within the present bounds of Essex county. These townships were sub-divided into lots, known as the Thorne and Richard's surveys, and several patents.

*Pliny Moore.* — The Pliny Moore patent, containing 11,067 acres, lies next to the Allen Campbell patent, at its northeast corner; it lies north of and west of the Cockburn patent, in a very irregular form, taking the rough land, apparently, after the valuable portion had already been patented. The patent was granted October 8th, 1787. — Vol. XX, page 52.

*Ord.* — Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Ord, Royal Regiment of Artillery, was granted, December 23d, 1774, a patent of five thousand acres, part of lot 27 in

Totten and Crossfield's purchase. This patent lies in Newcomb.—*Patents*, XVI, page 543.

*Porter.* — Benjamin Porter, late sergeant in the Twenty-seventh Regiment, obtained a patent July 5th, 1765, for two hundred acres, next north of Franklin. Port Henry is situated on this tract.—*Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 109.

*Potts.* — This patent, issued in the name of William Potts, April 26th, 1755, for two thousand acres; located by William Gilliland. Essex village stands on the line of Potts and Hicks patents.—*Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 42.

*Ross.* — Patent issued to James Ross, "late apothecary's mate in our military hospital," for two thousand acres, April 16th, 1765. The patent is bounded on the Boquet. It was occupied in 1766 by two persons, Wilson and Goodrich, who established an agency at Flat Rock Bay, which they called Burton. The scheme was abandoned the February ensuing, and no further occupation in Willsborough north of the Boquet occurred until 1790, except one slight improvement near the river.—*Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 33.

*Road Patents.* — Zephaniah Platt and Platt Rodgers obtained a patent for three tracts of land in compensation for building the road across the county of Clinton. This was before Essex county was organized. The first tract probably covered lands that had escheated to the State, or were confiscated for disloyalty. This tract began in what is now Warren county, several miles south of Schroon Lake, embracing several thousand acres on the west side of Schroon Lake, and just above the north end; it was contracted in width to simply take the level land and extended north to the head waters of the Hudson river. This tract embraced 9,866 and two thirds acres. The second tract lies in Elizabethtown and Lewis, and contains 3,700 acres, in a very narrow strip. The third tract lies in Jay, next to Mallory's grant, which was a part of township No. 2 of the Old Military Tract. It contained 3,100 acres; patent dated 4th December, 1794. — *Patents*, Vol. XVIII, page 52, etc.

*Ryerss Grant.* — In 1791 the State granted to one Vredenburg a tract of three thousand acres, the title of which became vested in *Gozen Ryerss*. On the compromise with Massachusetts, this territory was embraced in the new pre-emption line of that State. In compensation to Ryerss for this loss, New York in 1800 patented to him a tract of eighteen hundred acres 17th November, 1801. It lies in the center of Wilmington, and is known as Ryerss's grant. — *Patents*, Vol. XVIII, page 350.

*Stoughton.* — A patent was issued to John Stoughton, late lieutenant in New York Independent Company, July 25th, 1764, for two thousand acres lying on both sides of the outlet of Lake George. (See history of Ticonderoga.) Stoughton was drowned in Lake George, leaving a widow and only child. This child became the wife of Governor Wolcott, of Connecticut, and the valuable



estate of Edward Ellice in this patent was derived from her by purchase. A question was agitated for a period in reference to the legitimacy of this child, but this has long since subsided, and the estate which had not been previously sold passed by an indisputable title by Mr. Charles Wheeler, of Ticonderoga. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 2.

*Skene.* — Patents were granted to Major Philip Skene, July 6th, 1771, one for two thousand four hundred acres, situated in the present town of Westport, and embracing a part of the village of Westport, and the other for six hundred acres, lying in Moriah and formerly referred to as the iron ore tract. (*Military Patents*, Vol. II, page 400.) The property of Philip Skene was confiscated under the attainder of Philip and Andrew Skene, and the patent in Moriah was sold by the commissioners of forfeitures under the act of 1786.

*Small.* — John Small, late captain in the Twenty-first Regiment, on April 5th, 1774, received a patent for five thousand acres. It lies in Moriah, and is occupied by Moriah Center and part of the village of Moriah. Grants were also issued to Small by the New York colonial governor, which were located in Vermont. His name appears as plaintiff in a test suit brought in the New York court, to establish the validity of these grants. — *Patents*, Vol. XVI, page 377.

*Sutherland.* — Patent issued to Nicholas Sutherland, late captain of the Seventy-seventh Foot, August 7th, 1764, for three thousand acres. Lies in Ticonderoga. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 6.

*Springer or Sharp.* — On the 10th, of November, 1766, John Springer, Elizabeth Springer and Ann Chadarin Partin, afterwards Sharp, filed a petition for three thousand acres in the county of Albany, or on Otter creek. The basis of this claim appears to have rested on rights vested in Adolphus Benzel and his associates. Elizabeth Springer was a sister-in-law of Adolphus Benzel. A return of the survey of three thousand acres, on the west side of Lake Champlain, is on record April 6th, 1772. A warrant authorizing this survey had been issued 1st May, 1771. In April, 1785, the parties presented a petition to the new government, "for land already ordered to be surveyed for them, between the Legge and Small patents." On the 10th of November following Zephaniah Platt filed a certificate of location of the same tract, praying for a grant of the same. His claim seems to have been founded on the delinquency of the original claimants, but after considerable controversy it was withdrawn March 13th, 1786, and 1st of May following the patent was granted to Elizabeth Springer and Catharine Ann Sharp, for the consideration of 150 pounds paid the State. It is situated in Moriah; three thousand acres, next west of Porter, and north of Legge's. — *Patents*, XVIII, page 9, etc.

*Soldiers Rights;* William Douglass, John McGinnis and John Harrison of the Sixtieth Regiment, John Nowland of the Fifty-fifth Regiment and James Richardson of the Forty-sixth Regiment, obtained a patent for 1,000 acres,

lying south of Ticonderoga; "beginning at a tree standing on the bank of the Lake George, at the north point of a piece of flat land; the southeast bastion of Fort Ti., bearing from the tree north 40 degrees east." — *Military Patents*, Vol. II, page 423, April 1st, 1772.

*Stevenson.* — James Stevenson, December 7th, 1765, applied for a patent in right of his father, James Stevenson, commissary of ordinance, etc., for 3,000 acres; but it was not granted until the 11th of July, 1776. This patent lies in Ticonderoga, and is usually called the Kirby patent.

*Stewart.* — A tract of fifty acres, granted May 2d, 1772, to James Stewart, is situated on Lake George, in Ticonderoga, and south of Tomlin's patent. — *Military Patents*, Vol. II, page 434.

*Summersvale.* — This tract of 15,120 acres, was surveyed in 1771, but a patent to Goldsborow, Banyar and others was not granted until August 14th, 1786, called Cockburn tract on the county map. The tract lies in Crown Point and Ticonderoga. — *Patents*, Vol. XVIII, page 29, etc.

*Thorn.* — A patent was granted to William Thorn for 1,400 acres, February 5th, 1789. It lies next west of Adgate's patent in Chesterfield. — *Patents*, Vol. XXI, page 62.

*Totten & Crossfield.* — "Experience had proved," says Mr. Watson, "that transactions for the acquisition by private individuals of Indian lands were fraught with infinite mischief and injustice. At an early period the instructions to the colonial governors, and at length, soon after the cession of Canada, a peremptory proclamation of the king, prohibited every purchase of the kind, and declared that all purchases of lands from the Indians should be made by the crown. The same wise and benificent policy was engrafted in the State constitution of 1777, and those which have succeeded.

"On the 10th of April, 1771, Joseph Totten and Stephen Crossfield, shipwrights, residing in the city of New York, presented a petition to the council, asking for a license to purchase from the Indians a tract of land lying on the west side of the Hudson, and on the 7th of June following the license was granted. In accordance with this privilege a treaty was held in July, 1772, at Johnson Hall, with all the peculiar solemnities of such occasions and under the auspices of Sir William Johnson, for the purpose of perfecting the contemplated purchase, with the Mohawk and Caughnawauga Indians. The purchase was made for the consideration of about £1,135 New York currency, and a deed formally executed for the tract, embracing about 800,000 acres and with boundaries carefully designated by courses and landmarks, but singularly vague and obscure. This interesting document is still preserved in the office of the Secretary of State, among the land papers, Vol. XXXII, 45. A written agreement of association was entered into March 27th, 1772, between 'the intended proprietors of lands about to be purchased by Ebenezer Jessup in behalf of Totten and Crossfield and their associates,' and on January 14th following a fur-



ther agreement was executed and a ballot made of twenty-four of the townships in the purchase. A catalogue of the lots drawn with the proprietors' names annexed, is on file in the Secretary's office

"Ebenezer Jessup, a large operator in lands at that period, was with the active agent in these arrangements, and purchased the tract for Totten and Crossfield and their associates. This Indian deed conveyed no legal title, the absolute fee in the land existing in the crown. It undoubtedly protected them against intrusion and conferred rights probably analogous to the pre-emptive rights existing at the present day. The government recognized these rights and issued patents in subordination to them. Jessup advises Governor Colden, December 27th, 1774, that he had agreed with certain individuals for Totten and Crossfield to convey 10,000 acres to them in the purchase, and requested that letters patent should be granted in conformity with the agreement, which was soon after done.

"The territory comprised in the Totten and Crossfield purchase lies in the counties of Essex, Warren, Hamilton and Herkimer. The west and part of the north lines were surveyed in 1772, with an outline of a portion of the township, each of which included about 20,000 acres. Slight vestiges of these surveys may still be traced. The colonial government issued patents for a few townships previous to the Revolution, some of which I have mentioned, but none of these extended to land in Essex county. Among these patents the return of a survey of 20,000 acres for Sir Jeffrey Amherst appears among the land papers under date of March 27th, 1774. Sufficient evidence exists upon which to form an estimate of the market value at that period. Jessup executed, December 3d, 1772, a receipt to Philip Livingstone for £206 and 8s., the purchase money of two townships; in July he gave another receipt to Thomas Lewis for fifty-one pounds in payment of 3,000 acres, and on April 8th the same year another to Christopher Duyckinck for £103 'in full of 24,000 acres.' These are preserved among the land papers. The action of the proprietors at a meeting, January 14th, 1773, in reference to the construction of a road, indicates that their measures for the improvement of their territory were active and judicious.

"On the 21st of April, 1775, and only a few months preceding the day established by the constitution of 1777 from which all royal grants were abrogated, Dartmouth wrote to Tryon that the king would confirm by letters patent to Totten and Crossfield and their associates, 'their lands on humble application,' and 'a disavowal of all association' with the non-intercourse measures of the colonists. The two former, at least, probably yielded their adhesion to the government. Tradition asserts that these estates were confiscated. It is certain that a large portion of the purchase reverted to the State government. The imaginary lines of all the townships were laid down on Southier's map, although a part only had at that time been practically surveyed. In the

years 1785 and 1786 numerous petitions were presented to the State for grants of large tracts in this territory, and many by the original proprietors, who thus asked the confirmation of their former claims. These applications were generally conceded, the claimants usually paying the State a valuable consideration for their grants."

*Tomlin.* — Thomas Tomlin obtained a grant of 200 acres, May 2d, 1772, located east side of Lake George and adjoining Stoughton. — *Military Patents*, Vol. II, page 433.

*Wharton.* — A patent was granted to John Wharton, Esq., late captain in Sixtieth Regiment, April 16th, 1764, for 3,000 acres, which was located by Gilliland in Essex. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 32.

*Wriesburg.* — On the same day a patent was granted to Daniel Wriesburg, late captain of Sixtieth Foot, and was located by Gilliland in Willsborough. — *Military Patents*, Vol. I, page 37.

Other patents were granted to individual soldiers long before the Revolutionary War, and in some cases were never occupied, and reverted to the State from the patentee not fulfilling the contract of settlement. Other patents were sold so soon after their survey that the name of the purchaser was placed on map and not that of the original patentee.

Beside the large number of patents in the county, there are a large number of tracts that lie between the original patents.

*Tracts.* — The White Faced Mountain tract, in St. Armand and North Elba; the Jay tract, in Wilmington and Jay; Essex tract, in Keene, Jay and Lewis; Perou Bay tract, in Lewis and Willsborough; Thorn's survey, in Keene, Elizabethtown and Lewis; Iron Ore tract in Elizabethtown and Westport; Roaring Brook tract, in Keene and Elizabethtown; North River Head tract, in North Hudson and Moriah; Paradox tract, in Schroon and Moriah; Hague tract, in Schroon; Schroon tract, in Schroon, and a tract west of the Road patent; west of all of these is the great Totten and Crossfield purchase of about fifteen full townships. This vast territory of mountain and forest has been cut up and sold to various individuals, companies and corporations, much has been sold for taxes and been bid in by the State.

*Map.* — To arrange these patents, grants, and large tracts, in their proper places in order to project a map of the county of Essex, is one of those tasks that never has been done and never will be done until the trigonometrical survey of the State has been completed. The causes that combine to defeat anything like accuracy are, first, the variation of the magnetic needle by which all these were located; second, the errors in chaining over mountains and streams; third, the allowances that surveyors made for rough land and for highways; and fourth, the laps and gores, or the interference of patent lines, and the spaces between patents.

Besides the annual and ever-increasing variation of the magnetic needle,



the local attractions were most in this county, perhaps, of any in the State. The vast quantities of iron ore in the mountains, as well as in some instances the mountains themselves, often varied the needle several degrees, and in many instances would not let the needle vibrate at all. This cause alone was sufficient to disarrange any survey made in that manner, but frequently the surveyor, in correcting up his latitude and departure, would rely on his needle, and not on the chain, and plot his courses so as to balance, making his distances agree to a single link. Surveyors of the present day know that this is utterly preposterous, and when they have the least suspicion, invariably rely on the chain. Frequently in the returns of the Surveyor to the Land Commissioners he would say in his survey bill, "as the needle pointed" in some previous year, and particularly when he was following an old line; but when he began to run a new line in the wilderness, he would invariably run as the needle happened to point at that time. Thus lines that were intended as parallel on the ground, and were so, would have a variation on the map of several degrees.

The difficulties in chaining over mountains, precipices, lakes and chasms, and getting the distances correct, is apparent to almost any intelligent man; but to make this look particularly absurd in common chain surveying, I will give an instance of a State deputy surveyor who measured a gore between the Old Military tract and the Refugee tract in Clinton county. This strip of land was quite narrow, but very long, reaching from Dannemora to the Canada line. He passed over three mountain chains, two large rivers, several precipices, and a chasm 300 feet deep; and yet his distances invariably balance. Beside this impossible feat, he made the Canada line at right angles to his north and south lines. When absolute accuracy is desired it is safe to say that no two men can chain a mile and then chain it back again and find that the two measurements agree.

It was the invariable rule in the early surveys to make the "usual allowance for roads." This was in many instances known to be five per cent. but if the patent was for a specified number of acres, the returns of the surveyor would make the distances in his return and the map also to cover the precise quantity. This five per cent. might be added to the side or to the end of a patent, and to this day which course was adopted no one can tell.

Beside this discrepancy in the measurement, the commissioners of the land office would often say in the patent: "In setting out this grant we have made due allowance for the profitable and unprofitable acres," and this may have added to a confusion already badly confounded.

The laps or interference of patent lines that must have necessarily followed such a style of surveying were not known sometimes until many years had elapsed. The starting points were often ill defined and a malicious person could with an axe in a few minutes entirely destroy them. These interfer-

ences were necessarily determined in the courts, and there is hardly a map to show such in the archives of the State. The gores that have been discovered by later surveyors have invariably been applied for, the tracts surveyed, and patents granted. Some of these were discovered in the early part of the century, and some as late as 1855. These laps and gores alone are enough to destroy the accuracy of Burr's atlas, and in a great degree all that has been subsequently published. The writer has had a double experience in plotting Essex county and a brief relation of his experience may not be entirely uninteresting.

Francis Mahler, the principal draftsman on French's Map of the State, began it by plotting Lake Champlain from the United States Coast Survey. From this he projected the line commencing ten miles north of Crown Point Fort, on the bank of the lake, which was the starting point for several patents, and the north line of Totten and Crossfield's Purchase, and the south line of the Old Military Tract. He next projected the county line between Essex and Warren counties from the survey of Joseph L. Harris. From these two lines, whose course had to be calculated for the variation of the needle for a long term of years, and the true north from the Coast Survey, and the irregular line of Lake Champlain, I was required to fit in the large tracts and the little patents, without any knowledge of laps and gores, or anything of the usual allowance for roads. It was natural to commence as near the top of the sheet as possible, and to make the longest lines first; so I commenced on his longest straight line and plotted De Lancy and Kelly's Patents and from these worked north as they appeared on Burr's atlas. I fitted them the best I could according to their given distances until I reached the Ausable river; and then began to plot the larger tracts to the west; but nothing would fit, and the work for a time was postponed. The little patents next south of the great line were next plotted, from Westport to Ticonderoga, in pencil, and about a mile's discrepancy found; and this too had to be abandoned. I next began to plot from a point in the Roaring Brook Tract, that was designated as the southeast corner of the Old Military Tract, a point thirty miles west of the lake, and from this worked north to Clinton county, and then east to the lake. After this was accomplished, the little patents were crowded or stretched as occasion required to fill their respective places.

The same tactics were used in plotting the territory south of the great line; but some difficulty was experienced in making it fit the county line, which, however carefully it might have been run, was poorly plotted with reference to lot, tract, patent, or township lines. Years afterward I read the field notes of that very costly survey, and there was not a single reference to any other line except the one he was surveying. All of the little tracts east of the great ones were forced into their respective places, and all west of the Road patent was easily got along with. From many years' experience since that date (1858) I



am confident that, with the materials I had, the feat was creditably accomplished.<sup>1</sup>

## CHAPTER XXI.

### LAKE CHAMPLAIN, ITS COMMERCE, ETC.—OTHER INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS.

Lake Champlain — Desirability for Navigation — Islands of the Lake — Early Passenger and Freight Traffic on the Lake — The First Steamboat on the Lake — Timber and Lumber on the Lake — Influence of the Champlain Canal — Details of its Construction — The Champlain Transportation Company — History of Steamboating on the Lake — Early Pilots, Docks, etc. — Commerce in 1868 — Late Commercial Statistics — Other Navigation Projects — The Northern Inland Lock Navigation Company — Great Chazy Navigation Company — Northern Slackwater and Railway Company — Lighthouses — Railroads — Adirondack Railroad — Great Ausable Railway Company — Delaware and Hudson Canal Company's Line.

LAKE CHAMPLAIN<sup>2</sup> is a long, narrow body of water stretching directly north from the village of Whitehall, Washington county to St. John's, a distance of about one hundred and thirty miles. The natural beauty of the lake and its immediate surroundings is scarcely excelled by any inland waters of the country. Its eastern shore rises gradually from the water in picturesque undulations to the foot of the Green Mountains, whose majestic peaks are visi-

<sup>1</sup> In 1868 I again plotted Essex county in connection with other counties, in making a large map of the Great Wilderness. This was on a reduced scale, but with the experience I had had, and the skill acquired with long practice, so far as the lines are concerned, the positions of the various localities in regard to one another I believe to be very good. That they are accurate I am not silly enough to claim. Verplanck Colvin says that I have not located hundreds of mountains, and dozens of lakes, and boasts that he has found lakes by the dozen. I placed nothing on the map that I did not have a surveyor's voucher for. The spaces left blank, were left soon purpose, for farther delineation, when further knowledge was acquired. It might require a mountain, or it might require a lake to fill the space, and if the lithographic stones had not been burned, we might have had a pretty good map by this time. Several streams on the map were only put on in dotted lines to show that they were only approximate, and some of the lakes that were drawn on the stones, do not show on the original plot. I suppose these were located by George Dawson, and other gentlemen who were interested in the issue of the map, and had access to the very clever engraver. To the unaided eye every lake looks shorter than it really is, and hardly any man is capable of placing a lake properly on a map according to its scale, unless he has had some practice; but sportsmen have often desired to do it for me, by guess, and were quite impatient because I would not comply. This is one of the reasons that lakes should often take the place of mountains, and mountains the place of lakes on many of the maps of the Great Wilderness. Had Mr. Merritt's guide book been published, that originally was to accompany the map, many things could have been explained about different localities that would have rendered it plain why the map was not a complete thing, and did not claim to be. — H. D. L. S.

<sup>2</sup> The most widely known Indian name of this lake is "Caniadere-Guarante," *i. e.* the lake that is the gate of the country. Upon the authority of R. W. Livingston, it was given another Indian appellation — "Petaoughbough," signifying a double pond, or lake branching out into two, referring, probably, to its connection with Lake George. This latter title has been several times published as "Pelaonbough," which is incorrect.

ble from all parts of the lake. On the west rise the no less grand Adirondacks, whose rugged and precipitous spires push their rocky shoulders directly into the waters at several points, while at others wide fields stretch backward to the mountain bases. From a width of half a mile toward its upper extremity, the lake broadens out to nearly fifteen miles opposite the northern boundaries of the county and its waters are cleft by numerous beautiful islands, differing in character from the rugged shaft of rock to the most fertile of level, garden-like spots.

The navigation of this beautiful sheet of water is clear and unobstructed through the warm seasons, while in the winters it is closed by a continuous sheet of ice, which sometimes reaches a remarkable thickness. This becomes a great public highway and is traversed in all directions by numerous teams, besides serving for trials of speed of the trotting horses that are owned along its shores. The lake at rare intervals remains open all winter; in other seasons the grip of the frost takes hold of its waters with such wonderful suddenness that horses have been driven over the ice the fifth day after the passage of steamboats.<sup>1</sup> It is the largest body of water in the United States that is periodically closed by ice so as to form a highway for teams.

Among the large islands are North and South Hero, the former eleven by two miles in extent, and the latter thirteen by four miles; Isle la Motte (named from a Captain la Motte, who fortified it at an early date of the French occupation), six by two miles in extent. Upon the authority of Mr. Watson, William Gilliland formerly possessed an interest in this island, and when his rights were abrogated he was given in exchange a tract of land near Utica. Grand Isle, which forms a town of Vermont, Valcour Island and some fifty other smaller islands.

The rivers entering the lake are Wood creek from the extreme south; the Lake George outlet; the Ausable, Saranac, Boquet and Chazy from the New York side, and the Otter, Winooski, La Moille and Missisqui from Vermont, with numerous smaller streams. The outlet is the Sorel, or St. John's river, emptying into the St. Lawrence and forming with the Chambly canal open navigation to the ocean.

The shores of the lake are indented with numerous bays, among those on the western shore being Bulwagga bay, which forms Crown Point, Willsborough (formerly Perow, or Pereu bay, and originally Corlear's bay), and others of lesser importance. The southern extremity of the lake forms South bay, in Washington county.

Samuel Champlain began the passenger business on Lake Champlain 275 years ago when he came up with his canoes and Indians to give the Iroquois their first knowledge of gunpowder and bullets and their fatal effects at short range. What was subsequently developed from this beginning, if anything, during the French dominion cannot be known; there is little reason for think-

---

<sup>1</sup> WATSON.



ing that freight of any kind was carried on these waters to any extent, until the founding of William Gilliland's colony on the Boquet in 1765. It consisted then almost entirely in supplies taken down the lake for the inhabitants. But when the shores of the lake were opened up to settlement after the Revolution and peace shed its beneficent influence over the land, the importance of the lake as a commercial highway was soon realized. As the pioneers came in with their families to locate their wilderness homes, many of them crossing the lake from the Eastern States, the hope and expectation that its waters would some day be made still more picturesque with hundreds of moving sails must have formed part of the enticement that allured them to locate on the western shores.

Ferries were established early in the century at Crown Point and Ticonderoga, but little is known of who conducted them, or to what extent they were the means of carrying the very limited quantity of surplus products from what is now Essex county to Vermont. Further information concerning them will be found in the succeeding town histories.

The first steamboat on Lake Champlain was in 1810, and in 1813 was incorporated the Lake Champlain Steamboat Company, whose charter expired in 1838. On the 11th of May, 1835, the Lake Champlain Steamboat Navigation Company was incorporated with a capital of \$100,000.

It was about the beginning of the century when ship timber and lumber began to be transported to considerable extent down the lake to the St. Lawrence. The valuable white oak and pine which then abounded in many parts of the country found a ready market and brought a profitable revenue. Ship-timber from the county crossed the ocean and was built into the vessels which gave renown to the English yards.

The winter season was chiefly given up to the collection and preparation of this valuable timber, giving employment to many men and all the available teams. The sticks were secured in coves and marshy localities where they would be protected from the spring floods, and there formed into enormous rafts. As mills were built, planks and boards of pine, and oak staves were manufactured and exported to the same market. They were transported in cribs and either towed with the rafts or piled upon them. The great rafts were helped on their way through the lake by sails and oars and were carried by current and tide down the Sorel and St. Lawrence. Timber delivered in early days on the shores of the lake cost, for oak, from six to eight cents per cubic foot. In Quebec it brought an average of forty cents, and twenty for pine. The cost of transportation was about two and one-half cents per foot. This seems to denote a very large profit, but there were many losses attendant upon going through the turbulent current and tides of the St. Lawrence, which often swept entire rafts beyond Quebec and to total destruction. It is said that the business proved, as a rule, disastrous to those who engaged in it; and it rapidly cleared the shores of the lake of the most valuable timber.

No decked vessel navigated Lake Champlain until about the beginning of the century; the very insignificant commerce being conducted in cutters, pirogues and bateaux. Wharves were not built to any considerable extent until still later. Immigrants with live stock to land ran their boats as near as practicable to some favorable point, threw the animals overboard and swam them to the shore. An old resident of the county, Norman Page, informed Mr. Watson that, in those early days, a bushel of salt was the purchase price of a bushel of wheat from the pioneers of the sparsely settled districts. The boat with the cargo of salt would come to anchor in a cove and notify the inhabitants of the vicinity, who would haul their wheat through the forest for barter. The local merchant who went southwest for goods previous to 1809 consumed a month on the journey.

With the opening of the Champlain Canal and the prosecution of other projects more or less connected therewith, in the year 1823, the commercial importance of Lake Champlain was immediately and vastly increased. The cutting of lumber in Essex county had already become a prominent industry, which now, with the almost unlimited facilities for its transportation southward, received a wonderful impetus. Dockage was improved and extended at Port Kent, Essex, Westport, Port Henry, Crown Point and Ticonderoga; canal boats, schooners and sloops rapidly multiplied and all along the lake were scenes of the most active industry. A large portion of the inhabitants of the county, and those who owned lands and were non-resident, were attacked with a "lumber fever" (for want of a better term for the mania), and looking upon their magnificent forests as apparently illimitable and inexhaustible, they began their wholesale destruction with a degree of energy and success worthy of a business that would bring them more of substantial profit.<sup>1</sup>

The Champlain Canal was begun in June, 1818, and finished from near Cohoes to Waterford in November, 1822, and to Whitehall in September, 1823. It is sixty-four miles long exclusive of the Glens Falls feeder, and cost originally \$875,000. What was called the "Northern Inland Navigation Company" was formed as early as 1792, having for its chief object the opening of navigation from Lake Champlain southward, but the company failed to raise sufficient funds for its work. There was a natural water communication, interrupted by portages, along this route, which was the highway of the Indians with their canoes. When the canal was first opened slackwater navigation was used on the Hudson eight miles above and three miles below Fort Miller, with a short canal and two locks around the falls at that point. In 1826-27 the use of the Hudson was superseded by building the canal along its banks. The canal connects with the Hudson above the State dam at Waterford by a wide cut.

The tide of Lake Champlain commerce and passenger traffic now turned

<sup>1</sup> It is the general testimony of old residents that almost none of those who engaged extensively in early lumbering, became permanently well-to-do.



southward and soon became of great importance to the people of Essex county. A large commerce was also developed in lumber from Canada. In 1826 the Champlain Transportation Company was organized and for about fifty years controlled a large proportion of the carrying business of the lake. The company was composed of energetic, enterprising men whose efforts directed first, of course, to the advancement of their own interests, were at the same time conducive to the welfare of the towns along the lake. In those days the waters were whitened with hundreds of sails engaged in lumber and other carrying traffic; the sloops and schooners going up the lake laden, as a rule, with lumber and other products of the forests and returning with various kinds of mercantile goods and stock for whatever manufacturer had then began work. "It was not unusual," said an old lake navigator of Westport to the writer, "to look out on our bay and see twenty sail at once. Now," he added, with a tinge of sadness, "we cannot see that many in a year." The same gentleman said that if a man had offered him an established mercantile business gratuitously when he was twenty-two years old, he would not have left his occupation of sailing the lake to accept it, so well did he like the business and so favorable were the prospects for accumulating a competence.

Steamboating on the lake began with increased activity soon after the opening of the canal. One of the earliest boats was the *Franklin*, Captain R. W. Sherman, who was one of the earliest and for many years most popular captains on the lake. He died in Vergennes and is reported as having amassed a fortune of nearly \$100,000. The early steamers were but insignificant craft when compared with those of later days. It was a poor sloop that could not in a fair wind make better speed than they. The *Phoenix* was another of the earliest steamers and was on the lake at the same time with the *Franklin*. She was commanded by Captain Dan Lyon, and was burned. These early boats made alternate trips from Whitehall to St. John's and consumed nearly twenty-four hours in going that distance. A smart sailing craft would often run alongside of one of the steamers, sometimes even going ahead for a whole day.

The third steamer put upon the lake was the *Burlington*, which succeeded one of the others. She was placed in command of Captain Sherman. The proprietor lived in Burlington. She was a better and faster boat than her predecessors and for a time was looked upon as entirely unlikely to be surpassed in speed. Then came the *Saltus*. The owners of the *Burlington* had still the utmost faith in the sailing powers of their boat; but Captain Sherman needed but a brief inspection to convince him to the contrary, and he told his employers that if they wanted their boat to "run" the *Saltus* they better find a man to command her. The *Winooskie* was then put on against the *Saltus* and was, perhaps, nearly her equal in speed. She was run about two years, while the *United States* was building. On this boat great hopes of speed were

placed; but the captain of the *Saltus* had ruled the waters in that respect so long that he began to think his boat invincible. The two boats started on the test trip from the foot of the lake, and during the passage to Whitehall the *Saltus* kept ahead. The next day also she started out ahead, but on reaching Watch Point her competitor gracefully passed her and the *United States* never afterward lowered her colors to the *Saltus*. "Pete" Comstock owned the latter boat, and he was hopelessly discouraged.

These boats (with the exception of the first *Phoenix*, which burned), all died, as the phrase goes, "in the bone yard."

The *America* was put on the lake next as an opposition boat, but the old Transportation Company bought her off. When the *United States* and the *Burlington* had outlived their usefulness, the *Adirondack* was built and soon afterward the *Vermont*, which is now running under the control of the Delaware & Hudson Canal Company.

About the time the *United States* "died" the *Oaks Ames* was built by the Rutland Railroad Company and ran from Plattsburg to Burlington, carrying the company's cars and freight. She was subsequently purchased by the Champlain Transportation Company and fitted up for passengers; her name was changed to the *Champlain*. This was at about the close of the last war. She left Westport in the night on one of her regular trips about the year 1870, and when she swung around the point about three miles below Westport, the pilot ran her upon a rocky projection, lifting her bow out of the water half her length. The passengers were taken off in safety. A very few feet to the right or left would have grounded her in such a position that serious loss of life would have followed.

In the early days of steamboating landings were not made at Westport, but at Basin Harbor, where passengers were ferried to the former place, and landings were made for some years afterward in small boats. If steamers carried freight they would come to the wharves.

From about the year 1830 on to the beginning of the decline in the lumber interest was the most important period in the history of Lake Champlain commerce.

Among the pilots of early days was Captain Hiram Ferris, who subsequently went west and died there. He is said to have been a special favorite with Captain Sherman. Nathan Hill, who now lives in Burke, was another prominent pilot. The man who wrecked the *Champlain* was John Eldredge. "Bill" and Grant Rockwell are remembered as excellent pilots; the former has a son living across the lake in Vermont. Phineas Durfee was pilot with Captain Lathrop for a time. He died at Westport. Reuben Bosley was another of the captain's pilots. John Brunn was a good pilot in early years.

It is related by "Phin." Durfee that he could tell where he was on the lake under any and all circumstances. In proof of this, as the incident is related,



he was asleep below one foggy night when absolutely nothing could be seen a rod from the boat. The acting pilot became bewildered and Captain Lathrop ordered Durfee to be called. He came up rubbing his eyes and promptly pulled the bell to go ahead, worked the wheel clear over and turned the boat almost square around. In half an hour he called to the other pilot, who was Reub. Bailey, saying, "You see that land right there; well, that's Isle la Motte," and went down to his bed without another word.

In 1830 the first dock below Whitehall was at Crown Point. Other landings within this county were at Ticonderoga, Port Henry, Westport, Essex and Port Kent. The latter for many years did the largest business.

The first steam towing on the lake was by boats of the Transportation Company — first by the *Washington* and later by the *McDonald*; the latter had been built for passenger traffic about 1835. Previous to that time the freighting was done under sail until the narrow channel towards the head of the lake was reached, when the vessels were navigated by sails when practicable, and when not, by "poling" or by oxen on the banks of the channel.

What is to be the future of Lake Champlain commerce it is not easy to foretell; but there is little to encourage a belief that it has not seen by far its best days. Freight and passengers may be carried on the water by sail and steam cheaper than they can by railroad; but in these times when speed seems to be the great object, and the saving of time in transportation a prime necessity, it appears a foregone conclusion that the railroads running near to the lake on both the New York and the Vermont shores must rob the water of its commercial importance. Mr. Watson, however, writing on this subject in 1869, took the following cheerful view of the matter, which is inserted for its statistical value and as reflecting the prospects at that time — prospects that have been vastly changed by the completion of the railroad on the western shore of the lake. He says: —

"The commerce of Lake Champlain is now large and every year augments. The lumber, the ore and iron fabrics of the North, combined with the grain and flour of the West, and the coal and merchandise of the South, constitute a vast trade. To their domestic resources may be added the productions of Canada, which seek a market by this avenue and the goods chiefly bonded that pass into the dominion from American ports, and much of which is returned under fresh entries, all swelling this immense internal commerce. Numerous Canadian vessels, designed for the navigation of the St. Lawrence, and readily distinguishable from American craft by their peculiar structure and appearance, reach the waters of Lake Champlain by the waters of the Chambly Canal. Vessels from the upper lakes are occasionally observed in our harbors. A large class of the population contiguous to the lake is connected with its navigation. This occupation forms an admirable school for the acquisition of nautical skill and experience, and creates a bold and expert body of mariners.

If the public exigencies shall again demand a national fleet upon Champlain, her own marine would promptly supply daring and efficient crews."

Following is a table showing the first and last trips made on Lake Champlain by the steamers, from the year 1845 to 1868, as recorded by the now venerable Alvin Colvin, of Port Kent. It is valuable as showing the dates of the opening and closing of navigation for that period:—

## LAST TRIPS.

Steamer Saranac, January 1st, 1845.  
 Schooner La Fayette, February 3d, 1845.  
 Steamer Saranac, January 3d, 1846.  
 Sloop Cashier, February 3d, 1846.  
 Steamer Saranac, January 5th, 1847.  
 Steamer John Gilpin, February 8th, 1848.  
 Steamer Ethan Allen, January 6th, 1849.  
 Steamer La Fayette, January 11th, 1849.  
 Steamer Saranac, January 15th, 1850.  
 Sail boats ran all winter, 1850.  
 Steamer Saranac, January 25th, 1851.  
 Steamer Boston, January 25th, 1852.  
 Steamer Boston, February 10th, 1853.  
 Steamer Francis Saltus, January 23d, 1854.  
 Sloop Daniel Webster, January 24th, 1855.  
 Steamer Francis Saltus, January 19th, 1856.  
 Steamer Montreal, January 9th, 1857.  
 Steamer Montreal, February 1st, 1858.  
 Steamer J. Clark, February 7th, 1858.  
 Steamer Montreal, January 9th, 1859.  
 Sail boats ran to January 25th, 1860.  
 Steamer Boston, January 10th, 1861.  
 Steamer Boston, January 1st, 1862.  
 Sail boats ran to February 1st, 1862.  
 Steamer Boston, January 21st, 1863.  
 Sail boats ran to January 28th, 1863.  
 Steamer Boston, February 13th, 1864.  
 Steamer Montreal, January 14th, 1865.  
 Lake closed January 18th, 1865.  
 Schooner Excelsior, January 21st, 1866.  
 Steamer Montreal, January 11th, 1867.  
 Sail boats ran all winter.  
 Steamer Montreal, January 4th, 1868.  
 Lake froze to Burlington, January 11th, 1868.

## FIRST TRIPS.

Steamer Winooskie, April 1st, 1845.  
 Steamer Winooskie, April 7th, 1845.  
 Steamer Saranac, May 7th 1847.  
 Steamer Ethan Allen, March 30th, 1848.  
 Steamer Saranac, April 6th, 1849.  
 Steamer Saranac, March 26th, 1850.  
 Steamer Saranac, April 1st, 1851.  
 Steamer Boston, April 25th, 1852.  
 Steamer Boston, April 15th, 1853.  
 Steamer Saranac, April 19th, 1854.  
 Steamer Boston, April 20th, 1855.  
 Steamer Boston, April 21st, 1856.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 10th, 1857.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 7th, 1858.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 2d, 1859.  
 Schooner Excelsior, March 28th, 1860.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 4th, 1860.  
 Steamer Boston, April 15th, 1861.  
 Steamer Boston, April 28th, 1862.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 27th, 1863.  
 Boat J. G. Wetherbee, March 30th, 1864.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 8th, 1864.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 7th, 1865.  
 Boat Oregon, April 11th, 1866.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 12th, 1866.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 15th, 1867.  
 Steamer Montreal, April 17th, 1868.

This list might be continued to the present time, but as it would necessarily be largely made up of a repetition of dates, it is not deemed important.

We have been kindly furnished by Deputy Collector John Martin, of Plattsburg, with the following commercial statistics relating to his district, which will to a considerable extent indicate the general condition on Lake Champlain:—

On June 30th, 1884 (end of last fiscal year), there were enrolled and licensed in this district:—



Sail.....	26 Vessels.....	Net Tonnage.....	13,60.11
Steam.....	13 “ .....	“ .....	673.11
Canal boats..	655 “ .....	“ .....	54,436.51
Barges.....	6 “ .....	“ .....	764.86
<hr/>			
Total.....	700.....		57,477.59.

The statements do not require the number of men employed. It would be safe to say that there are about three men to each vessel except the steam vessels, which would average say eight men each.

For the year ended June 30th, 1884, there entered from foreign ports into this district: —

American Vessels.....	1,102.....	Tonnage.....	105,978
Foreign Vessels.....	169.....	“ .....	15,157
<hr/>			
Totals.....	1,271 Vessels.....	Tonnage	121,135.

For the year ended June 30th, 1884, there were cleared for foreign ports: —

American Vessels.....	997 Vessels.....	96,234 Tons
Foreign Vessels.....	171 “ .....	16,001 “
<hr/>		
Totals.....	1,168 Vessels.....	112,235 Tons

For same period there were: —

Coastwise Entrances.....	56 Vessels
Coastwise Clearances.....	1,002

The total value of goods entered for consumption and warehouse, and warehouse and transportation, for the year ending June 30th, 1884, was: —

Free of duty, value.....	\$ 544,457 00
Dutiable, “ .....	3,167,342 00
Coin and Bullion, “ .....	2,046,800 00

Exports for same period: —

Domestic exports, value.....	\$1,395,286 00
Foreign re-exports, “ .....	7,589 00

As the final footings of imports and exports do not show the distinction “by boat” and “by rail” and “by land,” I cannot give you the proportions of the above by vessels.

The actual collections in district for year ending June 30th, 1884, were as follows: —

Duties on imports.....	\$296,887 43
Tonnage tax.....	9,704 89
Marine hospital collections.....	243 06
Fines, penalties and forfeitures.....	755 82
Miscellaneous customs receipts.....	126 22
Inspection of steam vessels.....	130 00
Official fees.....	7,885 75
<hr/>	
Total receipts.....	\$315,733 17

Statement showing the amount of duties collected in district during the fiscal year ending June 30th, as follows: —

1840.....	5,837 38
1846.....	10,929 55
1850.....	59,019 61
1855.....	51,021 66
1860.....	8,500 18
1865.....	15,814 00
1870.....	357,463 65
1875.....	182,796 87
1880.....	266,295 56
1884.....	296,887 43

Owing to the fact that the first half of the fiscal year which ended June 30th, 1845, is wanting, in the last table the fiscal year ending June 30th, 1846, is given, which does not, probably, differ much from the preceding year.

Following is a statement of the number, tonnage and crews navigating Lake Champlain on the 20th of June, 1868: —

	NUMBER.	TONNAGE.	CREWS.
Steamers, ships and canal boats, district of Champlain.....	672	43,512	1,800
Vermont.....	34	4,847	300
Canadian vessels.....	165	13,656	753
American vessels from other districts, (estimated).....	150	12,350	450
Total.....	1,021	73,865	

*Navigation Projects.*— As early as March 30th, 1792, the Northern Inland Lock Navigation Company was incorporated, its object being to connect the waters of the Hudson river with Lake Champlain — work since accomplished by the Champlain canal. This company made some progress and began work to a limited extent, but failed to carry out its plans for want of funds.

In May, 1836, the Great Chazy Navigation Company was incorporated, for the purpose of connecting “the lake and lower bridge at Champlain,” Clinton county.

About 1845 a plan was agitated for uniting the interior lakes and rivers of the Great Wilderness and thus forming an extensive inland navigation. The project was inaugurated under an act of incorporation of “The Northern Slack-water and Railway Company.” This company was given a life of fourteen years in which to carry out its plans.

The prominent feature of the scheme, as originally planned, was the artificial communication between Port Kent, in the town of Chesterfield, this county, and Booneville, on the Black River canal. A large portion of this route is opened for navigation to a greater or less extent, by nature, in the rivers and lakes. A report was made upon the feasibility of the project by Prof. F. N. Benedict, in which he made it appear that a natural route is formed from Piermont's Rapids, on the Saranac river, on the line between Essex and Clinton counties, to the Moose river, twenty-one miles from Booneville, with which the contemplated navigation would have to be connected by railroad, or canal; the proposed route, starting from Piermont's Rapids, passed through Essex county by the Saranac; along the lower and upper Saranac lakes; the Raquette



river, Long, Forked and Raquette lakes, and the intervening streams, to the Moose river lakes, and down that stream to the western termination.<sup>1</sup>

Professor Benedict stated that there exists on this course a navigation of fifty-six miles sufficient for steamers of reasonable tonnage, and fifty-five miles further sufficient for smaller boats. For a distance of only seven and one-fourth miles on the route occur obstructions which must be removed to open up continuous navigation for the entire distance. The lateral navigation from this line, formed by rivers and lakes, embraces thirty-three miles, navigable by steamers, and thirty-eight miles navigable by boats of ten tons, with intervening obstructions of only one-half mile. The total length of this proposed improvement is one hundred and ninety miles. The obstacles covering but seven and three-fourths miles are largely on low and marshy ground and easily overcome. Mr. Benedict's calculations and estimates were carefully made and he placed the cost of improving the main route at \$292,950, and that of the lateral branches at \$20,000, an average of \$1,611 to the mile for the entire improvement. The details of the proposed improvement need not be given here; but they embraced merely such labor as would render this natural water-way navigable as stated. The lateral branches would reach out well towards the remaining forests in St. Lawrence, Hamilton and Franklin counties to the westward; and almost to the great iron districts of the Adirondacks. Professor Benedict adds: "Extensive lines of small boat navigation, and with very few and short interruptions, traverse all considerable sections of the surface. The aggregate extent of these lines is probably no less than three hundred miles, all of which could be rendered navigable for boats of fifty tons burthen at comparatively trifling expense."

It is clear that the construction of the railroads already existing in Northern New York has modified the apparent necessity for this proposed navigation route to a considerable extent; and it is, perhaps, equally clear that if the interior portions of the great wilderness are to be reached otherwise than by foot and teams, it must be by navigation on some plan analogous to that of Professor Benedict, as it is almost inaccessible to railways.

Large appropriations have been made at different periods for the improvement of navigation facilities of several of the streams that flow from this mountain range — the Ausable, Hudson and others — chiefly to facilitate the transportation of logs; and the number that have been thus carried out of the wilderness is almost beyond computation. This was one of the prominent advantages of the region as a source of lumber supply, and though this feature of the business has sensibly declined, it is largely carried on in some parts of the county.

A large number of light-houses have been established on Lake Champlain,

---

<sup>1</sup> This route may be readily traced and apparent practicability seen, on Wallace's excellent map of the New York Wilderness.

there being no less than fourteen on what are known as the Whitehall Narrows, or that part of the lake south of Ticonderoga. These were all first lighted in 1856, except the most northern one, first lighted in 1869, in which year the others mentioned were rebuilt. The next one is situated on the shoal between Watch Point and Larabee's Landing. First lighted in 1885; its height is twenty-five feet and the light is visible nine miles. The next light as we proceed down the lake is on Crown Point near the ruins of the fort. It was first lighted in 1858. The house is of limestone and is connected with the dwelling by a covered way. The tower is eighty-five feet high and the light is visible fifteen miles. The next light is at Barber's Point in the town of Westport. It is eighty-three feet high and visible fifteen miles; was first lighted in 1873. The tower surmounts the lake side of the store dwelling. The next light is at Split Rock near Essex. The tower is 100 feet high and the light visible seventeen and a quarter miles; was first lighted in 1838 and the present structure erected in 1867. It is of limestone and connected with the dwelling. There are fourteen other lights on the lake, four of which are on the Vermont shore and the others on the west shore and islands. Lake Champlain is in the third district.

*Railroads.* — It is the general conviction of the American people that railroads never fail to benefit and develop the regions through which they pass; but it is doubtless true that Essex is a somewhat peculiar county in respect of the proportion of its inhabitants who are not anxious to see the Adirondack wilderness penetrated by railroads. It is a region that is visited by thousands of pleasure-seekers every year, whose annual contributions to the wealth of the inhabitants amount to no inconsiderable sum. Many of them have built and will hereafter build summer residences in the beautiful valleys among the mountains, to which they make annual pilgrimages with their families and friends. In the Keene Valley alone, in this county, there are already more than thirty of these summer resorts already built, ranging from a few hundred dollars in cost to many thousands. This regular influx of wealthy people gives employment to hundreds of men and women, increases the interior transportation business and adds materially to the local mercantile and manufacturing interests. Many of the inhabitants who are most favorably affected by this condition of affairs, as well as some who are not directly interested, argue that the scream of the locomotive whistle will drive away a large portion of these temporary residents and the large sporting element, even as it will the deer from the forests, while at the same time, little can be expected from the wilderness region as a whole, after its remaining forests are cleared away, unless it be the mineral ores that are developed in the eastern portion; that in an agricultural sense, Essex county for example, can never be developed to a really profitable degree. On the other hand, the larger portion of the inhabitants, probably, and those comprising the best intelligence of the community, speak confidently of



the yet undeveloped mining interests, the remaining lumber stock in the forests, and above all, of the universal undeveloped water power which will in the future turn the wheels of thousands of manufactories of all kinds, when this raw stock and their finished products can be cheaply transported back and forth by railroad. These considerations are likely to be powerfully influenced by the results of present attempted State legislation looking to the preservation of the forests in this region and the possible reservation of the entire tract for a great public park.

In alluding to the benefits arising from State appropriations for improving the streams of this region for the passage of logs, Mr. Watson says of the desirability of railroad development:—

“The same spirit has cherished and will continue to foster the constructing of railroads calculated to develop the affluence of this region. This wise policy of public munificence is calling into practical existence and utility an immense aggregate of property which has been hitherto inaccessible and valueless. While it will administer to the efforts of private enterprise and supply new fountains of individual wealth, it will return to the treasury of the State tenfold the expenditures by opening the vast public domain to market, and by the immense accession to the business by the public works it must create. Hence, it is manifest, that the labor of the settler which removes the forest and reveals the earth to cultivation, also prepares the coal for the manufacturer and the timber for transportation; and thus while he is remunerated for his toil, he is enabled to pay for his farm and adapt it to tillage.”

Of the several railroad projects which have been inaugurated in this county, or in which the county was directly interested, was the incorporation in 1839, of the “Adirondack Railroad Company,” for the purpose of “constructing and maintaining a railroad from the Adirondack iron works, in Newcomb, to Clear Pond in the town of Moriah (now in the town of North Hudson). Archibald McIntyre, David Henderson and Archibald Robertson were the incorporators. This was an effort on the part of those energetic gentlemen to so increase and improve transportation facilities that they would be enabled to more cheaply market the products of their valuable mines and forges which they were operating in Newcomb. Nothing was done towards the construction of the proposed road.

On the 30th of March, 1832, the “Great Ausable Railroad Company” was incorporated, and the act was twice renewed, the last time to continue until 1878. Messrs. Richard Keese of Clinton county, Charles M. Watson of Essex county, William McDonald of Warren county, John McIntyre of Washington county, Robert D. Silliman of Rensselaer county, and John R. Peters and George Curtis of New York city, were the first commissioners under the incorporation act. The purpose of the company was to “construct a railway from Keeseville to Port Kent.” When this incorporation act was renewed the

last time, Josiah Fisk of Clinton county, Henry H. Ross and Charles M. Watson of Essex county, Richard P. Heartt of Rensselaer county, and John Hone of New York, were designated as commissioners to open books for subscriptions to the stock. They were privileged to build "a double or single railway from the forks of the Ausable to a point on Lake Champlain near Port Kent; also to construct branches thereof in either Essex or Clinton county." Owing to local differences the result of this agitation was the construction and opening of the road from Ausable Forks to Plattsburg, Clinton county.

Many of the inhabitants of Essex county were much elated as early as 1860 by the prospect of a railroad which was proposed from Saratoga, or Glens Falls northward across Warren county and through the towns of Schroon, North Hudson, Elizabethtown, Lewis and Chesterfield and by connections to the St. Lawrence. The agitation of this enterprise, interrupted by the War of the Rebellion, was renewed at the close of that conflict and for quite a period its consummation was confidently predicted. Meetings were held and a partial survey was made of the route. The rock upon which the enterprise finally foundered was the refusal of those controlling the immense Moriah iron interests to co-operate with other towns in any proposed railroad the line of which did not extend along the western shore of the lake. This enterprise owed its conception and incipient progress largely to T. J. Durand, who subsequently became the controlling power in the Adirondack Railroad Company, whose line now ends at North Creek, Warren county, with a prospect of reaching up into Essex county some time in the future. A line of stages formerly ran over portions of this proposed route from Schroon Lake to Keeseville.

The Whitehall and Plattsburg Railroad Company was incorporated and the survey made in 1861; but owing to the paralyzing effects of the war work was not begun until February 20th, 1869, when earth was broken in the town of Crown Point. This enterprise received the sanction and hearty aid and endorsement of most of the influential men of the county, whose names will be found connected with all prominent enterprises for the public good, as detailed in subsequent town histories. A petition was presented to the Legislature asking for \$500,000 to aid in constructing the road. One-half this sum was granted and the bill received Governor Fenton's signature. Another bill for a grant of the same amount passed both houses in the following winter, but it was vetoed by the same governor, after having, it is charged, promised, inferentially at least, that if he was re-elected he would sanction this second grant. Meetings were held in the lake towns which bonded themselves, in some cases against sharp opposition, in aid of the enterprise: Moriah, \$100,000; Crown Point, \$50,000; Ticonderoga, \$40,000; Willsborough, \$——; Westport, \$25,000; Essex, \$25,000; Chesterfield, \$25,000. Liberal sums were also subscribed by firms and individuals. In about two years from the time actual work was begun cars were running between Ticonderoga and Port Henry, a



distance of about sixteen miles. Further State aid being refused and counties to the southward declining to co-operate as it was thought they should, this road was leased to the Vermont Central Company in 1871 and a connection with their line made at Ticonderoga, *via* a bridge across the lake at that point. In the same year the New York and Canada Railroad Company surveyed a route along the western shore of the lake and began work. This enterprise promised to prove a direct opposition to the prospects of the Vermont Central and the latter, therefore, sold their lease to the rival organization in 1873. Work was prosecuted on the line with vigor, but the road was one of extraordinary difficulties and expense in construction, and in order to secure necessary capital it was finally transferred to the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company, who now control it. For a considerable portion of the distance along the lake the grade of the road bed was made in solid rock and several tunnels were also necessary; but the road is now prosperous and ably managed. The fare under the law is four cents per mile.

At the same time that the Whitehall and Plattsburg company were engaged in this enterprise they constructed a branch line from Plattsburg to Ausable Forks on the northern line of the town of Jay, which gave excellent shipping facilities for the large manufacturing and other interests at that point, and forms an outlet for the people of the northwestern towns of the county.

The branch roads that connect the iron mines of Moriah and Crown Point with the main line will be appropriately described in the histories of those towns.

The subject of a railroad from Westport to Elizabethtown was first broached with a prospect of realization in September, 1883, by a gentleman from New York, who had been connected with the construction of the West Shore road. The whole subject was fully canvassed, and it being made to appear perfectly practicable to the cool heads of the best citizens of the town, money was immediately raised to defray the expense of a preliminary survey of a route, which was made in the month of October under the charge of D. E. Culver, esq., a practical engineer.

The line run was started at D. L. Allen's dock in Westport, and substantially following the turnpike to the terminus east of the iron bridge in Elizabethtown, on an average grade of sixty feet to the mile. In making the survey no very formidable obstacles were found in the way of getting a surface grade. The whole length of the proposed road was nine miles. Estimated cost \$100,000.

Two special town meetings were held, the last one on the 3d of January, for the purpose of voting upon the proposition of bonding the town in the sum of \$7,600, bonds to run nineteen years at five per cent., to enable the town to purchase that part of the W. P. & E. T. turnpike lying in Elizabethtown, and making it a free road, with the understanding that the amount so raised should be applied in aid of the railroad only. Three votes were cast against, and 142 were for the proposition.

Preliminary steps were taken to organize the company, among the directors named being: Hon. F. A. Smith, Hon. Byron Pond, Charles N. Williams, Orlando Kellogg, A. K. Dudley and H. A. Putnam. It was promised that if Elizabethtown would raise \$25,000, they would raise an equal amount. With this investment the road could be so far advanced that sufficient money could be borrowed on its security to finish and equip the line. The troubles on the West Shore road forced the abandonment of the enterprise when it seemed upon the eve of success. It is quite probable that this road will be built at an early day.

A branch railroad running from a station on the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company's road, called Fort Ticonderoga, a short distance north of Addison Junction, to Baldwin, at the foot of Lake George, was built in 1874 by the above named company. It has been and is of considerable importance to the town of Ticonderoga, and especially convenient for the great numbers of Lake George tourists.

While the building of the railroad has reduced the lake commerce and formed an avenue for the rapid shipment of the lumber, iron and other products of the county to various distant markets, it is still true that the inhabitants of many of the towns, men of good general intelligence, are ready to say to-day that the road has been of little general benefit to the county at large, while to many of the villages and distant localities, it has been a death-blow. They say to the inquirer, "Before the advent of the road the country was alive with local activity. Thousands of men and horses were employed in the transportation of ore and lumber, there was abundant market for grain and hay, country taverns were thriving by reason of the travel and teaming. The lake was covered with sailing vessels and traversed by magnificent steamers. All that has now passed away." But this must be an extreme view of the situation. It is an unvarying rule that some of the hamlets and villages upon new lines of railroads must suffer for the upbuilding of others; but it is equally true that *all* railroads eventually benefit the sections through which they pass.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

### COUNTY SEAT, BUILDINGS, SOCIETIES, ETC.

The First County Seat — Its Change to Elizabethtown — The First Court-House — The Second Building and its Additions — The State Arsenal — The County Poor House — Statistics — The Essex County Agricultural Society.

UPON the division of Clinton county and the erection therefrom of Essex county in 1799, the county seat was established at Essex, in the present



town of that name. Here the courts were held and the general county business transacted until after 1807. Daniel Ross was the first county judge, and in the absence of other public buildings held his court and confined the prisoners (when he had any) in the little block-house that was erected there by the people in 1797 as a protection against further uprisings of the Indians, a prospect which seemed to them probable after the disastrous defeat of St. Clair by the western savages.<sup>1</sup>

At the time of the division of Clinton county its population was about 8,500 and included fifty-eight slaves. Previous to the division the business of the county courts was transacted at Plattsburg and thither the inhabitants, scattered over a wider extent of territory than composes many of the present States, were compelled to travel as litigants, witnesses and attorneys. The division of the county was, therefore, like the one of ten years earlier, a great public blessing. It was effected under an act of the Legislature of April, 1799, but the county seat remained at Essex until after 1807, and the public business was transacted there until about the year 1811.

In 1807 an act was passed appointing Peter Sailley, of Plattsburg, David Thomas and John Savage, of Washington county, as commissioners to designate the proper place for the Essex county court-house, "the matter to be attended to before the first day of August, 1807." They were allowed three dollars per day as compensation for their services. Three freeholders were also appointed to superintend the building of the structure.

In 1811 the "liberties of the gaol of the county of Essex" were enlarged by statute, with the proviso that they should extend no farther than one-half mile from the court-house. The sheriff was also notified that he must compute his mileage from the new court-house. The building was evidently not yet entirely finished, as Manoah Miller, Theodorus Ross and Delavan Delance were subsequently named to superintend the erection; but the building was undoubtedly finished by or before the end of the year 1811, as in May, 1812, the county was assessed two thousand five hundred dollars for "the building and completing the Essex county court-house."<sup>2</sup>

These details will convince the reader that the first court-house was not a very imposing structure; but it sufficed for its purpose. It stood near the site of the present county buildings in Elizabethtown village. This first court-house was burned very soon after its completion. It was rebuilt on a similar plan, and again burned in March, 1823. Steps were immediately taken to rebuild on more extensive plans. Early in 1824 a law was passed authorizing the county to raise the sum of \$3,000, above the cost of collection, for the pur-

---

<sup>1</sup> There is a difference of opinion as to the date of erection of this block house. (See history of the town of Essex.)

<sup>2</sup> French's *Gazetteer*, a work of general reliability, gives the date of occupation of the new court-house as about 1814.

pose of building a court-house and jail. This amount did not suffice and the next year the county was empowered to raise \$2,000 additional to finish the building. The first installment of the present brick building was accordingly erected in 1824. It was but one story high. In 1843 the second story was added, in which the court-room was established. The last addition was made in 1880-81, by which the main part was enlarged and the wing put on for the county offices.

The consequences of the destruction of the court-house in 1823 are shown in the language of a special act of legislature, passed April 23d of that year, appointing the second Tuesday of January and April and the last Tuesday in September as the days for the meeting of the Court of Common Pleas and authorizing the holding of the then next Circuit Court "at the house of Pollous [Apollus] A. Newell in Elizabethtown," and making it lawful for "the Court of Common Pleas to designate any place in the town for the holding of the court."

In April, 1813, the clerk of the county was directed by law to keep his office within one mile of the county court-house. In 1832 the supervisors were authorized to raise the sum of \$500 for the purpose of building a fire-proof office for the county clerk. In April, 1834, the further sum of \$300 was raised for the like purpose. The county buildings are now creditable to the community, pleasantly situated and sufficiently commodious for the purposes for which they were erected.

*The State Arsenal.* — What was formerly known as the arsenal property, embracing a tract of land of thirty-six square rods, was acquired by the State in February, 1812. It is situated in the village of Elizabethtown, and its purchase and improvement was one of the last acts growing out of the war spirit that lingered after the Revolution, to be again awakened by the War of 1812. The land was purchased of Simeon Frisbee and the building, which is now used as Vinal Denton's hotel, was erected immediately afterward. A considerable armament was kept there for many years and used by the various militia organizations. But the uses of the arsenal and its stores were peaceful until the breaking out of the so called "Patriot War" in 1837. That foolhardy movement received many recruits throughout northern New York, and Essex county contributed her share. At this time a body of the hotheaded volunteers broke into the arsenal and carried off about twelve hundred stand of arms and other munitions. Some of these were recovered when the project of taking Canada was ended. Some of them were found in the following spring hidden in a school-house in the town of Chesterfield. From this time the arsenal fell into practical disuse and about 1850 was purchased of the State by Ira Marks. It has been used as a hotel since that time.

*The County Poor-House.* — The first action by the board of supervisors of Essex county towards establishing a retreat for the poor was taken on the 11th



of December, 1828, when the following resolutions was adopted: "*Resolved*, That a committee of five persons be appointed to take into consideration the propriety and expediency of placing all persons partaking of the character of paupers in the several towns of the county upon the same common footing of public support by the county, and that they report to this board." The committee appointed consisted of Messrs. Oliver Keese, 2d, of Chesterfield, Reuben Whallon, of Essex, N. S. Storrs, of Moriah, Gideon Hammond, of Westport, and Daniel T. Newcomb, of Newcomb.

The records show no report of this committee in 1829; and in 1830 the board by resolution appointed five superintendents of the poor as follows: William Smith, of Essex; Martin Pope, of Chesterfield; John F. Bartlett, of Jay; John Baker, of Schroon, and A. C. Hand. These superintendents held their first meeting at Elizabethtown on the 7th day of December, 1830, at which William Smith was appointed chairman and A. C. Hand, secretary. The superintendents were paid for their services the sum of \$52, and the amount raised for the support of the poor was \$420.80. In the next year they reported that the sum of \$1,050, should be raised for this purpose. The board this year elected as superintendents of the poor, Oliver Keese, 2d, William Smith, Robert Holley, John Baker and John Fitzgerald, and abolished the distinction between the town and county poor, to take effect in April, 1832.

A resolution was passed in this year (1832) as follows: "*Resolved*, That this board do hereby determine to erect a county poor-house for the reception of the poor of the county of Essex." The board also authorized the appropriation of \$1,600 for the purchase of land and buildings. A committee appointed to fix upon a site for the proposed building reported in favor of a farm located about one mile north of Whallonsburgh in the town of Essex, and the farm was purchased of John Winslow; it contained about forty-five acres.

In 1833 the number of superintendents of the poor was limited to three, and the following were elected: Thomas Stower, of Willsborough; William Smith, of Essex, and Gideon Hammond, of Westport. The board expended the sum of \$5,358.48 on the almshouse premises during this year. The county building has undergone several important improvements since its erection. The first was made in 1849, when \$750 were expended, and in 1859 what was substantially a new building was erected on the same site; it was a brick structure 76 by 38 feet and two stories in height, and cost \$3,000. The contractors were Dowling & Prescott, of Keeseville. It was finished in March, 1860. A further addition was made in 1873-74, consisting of a brick structure two stories high and 84 by 32 feet; and a new brick milk-house, 16 by 20 feet was erected, the whole costing in round figures, \$10,000. The builders were Prescott & Weston, of Keeseville.

The buildings now in use by the county, including out-buildings, are estimated to be worth \$20,000, while the total value of farm and buildings, stock, etc., is placed at \$35,000.

The last report of the superintendent of the poor (1884) gives the following statistics: The whole number of paupers provided for at the county house during the year was 133; the whole number admitted during the year was 70; the whole number discharged during the year was 60; the number of paupers who have died during the year are 9; the number of births are 4; the average number provided for during the year was  $70\frac{1}{2}$ ; the cost for the support of each pauper during the year was \$50.18; the cost per week for each pauper at the same time was  $.96\frac{1}{2}$ ; the cost per day for each pauper was  $.13\frac{1}{4}$ ; the whole number of paupers in the county house at this date is 70.

The products of the county farm for the last year, per report, were as follows: 50 tons of hay, 10 tons straw, 7 tons corn stalks, 265 bushels ears of corn, 442 bushels oats, 26 bushels barley, 32 bushels peas, 20 bushels beans, 1,100 bushels beets, 225 bushels carrots, 30 bushels turnips, 1,000 bushels potatoes, 300 heads of cabbage. Have also made 1,100 pounds of butter, 105 dozen candles, 21 barrels of soap.

Taking the superintendents of the poor from the year 1834, they have been as follows: 1834, Thomas Stower, James S. Whallon and Gideon Hammond; 1835 to 1839 inclusive, there were no changes; 1840, James G. Livingston, Gideon Hammond and Abel Baldwin; 1841-42, the same; 1843, Solomon Everest, Abel Baldwin and James G. Livingston; 1844-45, the same; 1846, Eli W. Rogers, H. J. Persons, and William S. Merriam; 1847 to 1851 inclusive, Hiram Fancher, Solomon Everest and James G. Livingston; 1852, Hiram Fancher and John Smith; 1853 to 1856 inclusive, John Smith; 1857 to 1862 inclusive, Daniel Platt; 1863 to 1871 inclusive, David Jones; 1872 to 1881 inclusive, Benajah Tyrrell; 1882 to present time, Charles N. Holt.

The keepers of the county house have been as follows: From the first to 1842, Asa Frisbie; 1843 to 1845 inclusive, Weston Shattuck; 1846, Samuel Flack; 1847 to 1851 inclusive, Mrs. A. H. Flack; from 1852 to 1862 inclusive, George H. Blin; 1863 to 1875 inclusive, Norman P. Rowell; 1876 to 1881 inclusive, Hosea B. Howard; 1882 and at present, Alexis Hinckley.

*The Essex County Agricultural Society.* — This society was first organized in 1849, with J. N. Macomber as president; Norman Page, treasurer, and Jonathan F. Morgan, secretary. The first fair was held in September of the same year, in Keeseville, on grounds of and in connection with the Clinton County Society. In 1850 W. C. Watson was elected president of the society, from which event the organization gained a fresh impetus and under his wise and energetic management, soon attained a position of prominence among the agricultural societies of the State. The fair of 1850 was held also in Keeseville, after which and to the year 1865, they were held at Elizabethtown. At the latter date the prospects of the society had become discouraging, its finances depressed and bankruptcy threatened. But new life was again infused into the society and it was determined to place it again on a prosperous foundation.



Grounds were leased near the southern end of the village of Westport, at an annual rental of \$150 for fifteen years. Renewed energy was displayed in the management of the affairs of the organization and successful meetings followed. In 1881 the society purchased the grounds now occupied by it, near the Westport depot, expended about \$1,200 in buildings, constructed a trotting track and paid \$1,500 for the grounds — an investment that has since been all paid up. The present officers of the society are as follows: President, Jonathan Mather, of Whallonsburgh, town of Essex; vice-president, Peter Ferris, of Westport; secretary, George C. Osborne; treasurer, A. E. Williams; executive committee, Augustus Holt, Rufus Hodgkins, H. H. Merrill, Bernard Boyle, J. S. Howard, C. B. Sprague.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### THE BENCH AND BAR OF ESSEX COUNTY,<sup>1</sup>

The Judiciary of New York — Court of Appeals — Supreme Court — County Court — Surrogate's Court — Justice's Court and Special Sessions — The Bench of Essex County — General Character of the Bar — Members of Her former Bar — The Present Bar — Sketches of Eminent Dead.

TO properly understand the history of the judiciary of any nation or community and the worth and attainments of the magistrates and practitioners at its bar, some knowledge of the origin and development of the machinery and spirit of this branch of government is indispensable.

It is commonly thought and expressed that the judicial system of New York State is largely copied or derived from the common law of England, and slightly from the civil law of the continent. It is true that many resemblances to each may be traced therein, but this arises simply from the fact that there are certain changeless principles running through the laws of every state and people, from the time of Moses to that of Victoria. Such principles are few and often obscured by the varying manifestations given to them by different law-makers. And although a close study of the laws and judicial practice in this State will disclose the possession of some principles in common with English and Continental laws, yet the same study will as surely reveal the fact that in spirit and form, the judicial system of New York is an original growth, and differs radically from the old systems of Europe. The difference in the germinal idea which underlies and gives character to the systems is strikingly manifested in the simple matter of entitling a criminal writ. In this State it is *The People vs. the Criminal*; in England it is *Rex. vs. the Criminal*. In

---

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by A. W. Boynton, Esq., of Keeseville, N. Y.

the genius of the one the requirement is an independent judiciary responsible directly to the people only ; in the other it is a court subservient to the king. But this great idea of the sovereignty of the people, even over the laws, has had a slow, conservative, yet progressive and systematic unfolding of the germ into the outward organism. In the early history of the State the governor was in effect the maker, interpreter and enforcer of the laws. He could veto any enactment of the Legislature. He was chief judge of the Court of Final Resort, and those who sat in council with him were generally his obedient followers. The execution of the English and colonial statutes rested with him, as did the exercise of the royal authority and wishes in the colony. It was not until the first constitution in 1777 that he ceased to contend for these prerogatives, and to act as though the only functions of the courts and councilors were to act as his servants and helpers ; and of the Legislature to aid in preparing such laws as he approved. By that constitution he was entirely stripped of the judicial power which he possessed under the colonial rule, and such power was vested in the lieutenant-governor and Senate, the chancellor and justices of the Supreme Court ; the former to be elected by the people, and the latter appointed by the council. Under this constitution there was the first radical separation of the judicial and legislative powers, and the advancement of the judiciary to the position of a superior department of the government, subject only to the limitation consequent upon the appointment of its members by the council. Even this restriction was soon felt to be incompatible. With the spirit of the commonwealth and by the constitution of 1846, the last connection between the purely political and judicial parts of the State government was abolished ; and with it disappeared the last remaining relic of the colonial period. From this time on the judiciary became more directly representative of the people in the election by them of its members. The development of the idea of the responsibility of the courts to the people from the time when all their members were at the beck and nod of one well nigh irresponsible master, to the time when all judges, even of the Court of Final Resort, are voted for directly by the people, has been remarkable. Yet through all this change the idea of one ultimate tribunal from whose decision there can be no appeal has prevailed.

Let us look briefly at the present arrangement and powers of the courts of the State and then at the elements from which they have grown. The whole scheme is involved in the idea of first a trial before a magistrate and jury — arbiters respectively of law and fact — and then a review by a higher tribunal of the facts and law, and ultimately of the law by a court of last resort. To accomplish the purposes of this scheme there have been devised and established, first, the present Court of Appeals, the ultimate tribunal of the State, perfected in its present form by the conventions of 1867 and 1868 and ratified by a vote of the people in 1869 ; and taking the place of the old Court for the Trial of



Impeachments and the Correction of Errors to the extent of correcting errors of law. As first organized under the Constitution of 1846 the Court of Appeals was composed of eight judges, four of whom were elected by the people and the remainder chosen from the justices of the Supreme Court having the shortest time to serve. The judges elected by the people were so classified that an election took place every odd year. The judges chosen from the Supreme Court were taken from the first, third, fifth and seventh districts each even year, and from the second, fourth, sixth and eighth each odd year, and served one year. The chief judge was the judge, elected by the people, who had the shortest time to serve. The court also had a clerk who was elected by the people, and a reporter appointed by the governor, lieutenant-governor and attorney-general, each for three years.

As re-organized in 1869, and now existing, the court consists of a chief judge and six associate judges, who hold office for the term of fourteen years from and including the first day of January after their election. Under this arrangement the first judges were chosen at a special election, held in April, 1870; each elector voting for a chief judge and four associates only. All vacancies arising from death or other cause are to be filled at the next general election happening not less than three months after such vacancy occurs; and until so filled the governor, by and with the consent of the Senate, or, if the Senate is not in session, the governor alone, may appoint a person to fill the vacancy. The court is continually in session at the capitol in Albany, except as it takes a recess from time to time upon its own motion. It has full power to correct or reverse the decisions of all inferior courts when properly before it for review. Five judges constitute a quorum, and four must concur to render judgment. If four do not agree, the case must be re-argued; but no more than two rehearings can be had, and if then four judges do not concur, the judgment of the court below stands affirmed. The Legislature has provided by statute how and when the proceedings and decisions of inferior tribunals may be reviewed in the Court of Appeals, and may, in its discretion, alter or amend the same. The judges are prohibited from holding any other office or place of public trust, or exercising any power of appointment to such place, and from practicing as attorney or counselor, or acting as referee. They are removable by concurrent resolution of both houses of the Legislature upon a two-thirds vote of each house. The judges before 1857 received \$2,500 per year salary; from that date to 1870 \$3,500; since then the chief judge receives \$7,500 and the associates \$7,000, with \$2,000 allowed each for expenses. The judges can hold office until seventy years of age only, but any judge of the Court of Appeals or justice of the Supreme Court whose term of office is abridged by this limitation, and who has served ten years or more, can draw his salary for the term to which he was elected. The court now appoints its own clerk and reporter, each at a salary of \$5,000 a year. The clerk keeps

his office at the capitol; and in it are deposited all records of the court, and of the former Court of Errors, Supreme Court, Court of Chancery and Court of Probate. Upon the re-organization of the court in 1869 its work was far in arrears, and the law commonly known as the Judiciary Act provided for a Commission of Appeals for three years — afterward extended to five — to aid the Court of Appeals. By this device the court was relieved for the time being, but is again hopelessly behind its work, and at no distant day must be again assisted to perform the immense labor imposed upon it either in a similar way, or by an addition to the number of its members.

*The Supreme Court.* — Second to the Court of Appeals in rank and jurisdiction stands the Supreme Court, which, as it now exists, is made up of many and widely different elements. It was originally established by an act of the Legislature, May 6th, 1691, and finally by ordinance of the governor and council, May 15th, 1699; and empowered to try all issues, civil, criminal or mixed, to the same extent as the English Courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas and Exchequer, except in the exercise of equity powers. It had jurisdiction of action involving \$100 or upwards, and to revise and correct the decisions of inferior courts. An appeal lay from it to the governor and council. The judges annually made a circuit of the counties, under a commission naming them, issued by the governor, and giving them nisi prius, oyer and terminer, and jail delivery powers. At first there were five judges. The court was re-organized by the constitution of 1777, under which the judges were to be named by the council of appointment, and the term of their office was limited to the age of sixty years. All proceedings were directed to be entitled in the name of the people, instead of that of the king. In 1786 a law was passed requiring the court to try all causes in the county where they arose, unless the court should order them to be tried at the bar of the court. By the constitution of 1821 many and important changes were made in the character and methods of the court. The judges were reduced to three and appointed by the governor, by and with the consent of the Senate, to hold office during good behavior, or until sixty years of age. They could be removed by the Legislature, when two-thirds of the Assembly and a majority of the Senate so voted. The judges were not subject to military duty; could hold no other office; could receive no fees; could not practice as attorneys or counselors and could not sit in any case in which they were directly or indirectly interested, nor take part in reviewing any case passed upon by them in any other court. Each justice, as well as judge, could preside at circuits and in oyer and terminer. Four times a year the full court sat in review of their decisions upon questions of law.

By the constitution of 1846 the Supreme Court as it then existed was abolished, and a new court of the same name and having general jurisdiction in law and equity, was established in its place. This court was divided into



General Terms, Circuits, Special Terms and Oyer and Terminer. Its members were composed of thirty-three justices, to be elected by the people, and to reside, five in the first, and four in each of the seven other judicial districts into which the State was divided. They were so classified that one in each district should go out of office every two years; and were subject to substantially the same restrictions and rules as under the former constitution. The term of office of any subsequently elected member was to be eight years. By the judiciary act of 1847 General Terms were to be held in each county of the State having over 40,000 inhabitants, at least once in each year, and in other counties at least once in two years; and at least two Special Terms and two Circuit Courts were to be held yearly in each county, except Hamilton. By this act the court was authorized to name the times and places of holding its terms, and those of the Oyer and Terminer; which was made a part of the Circuit Court, to be held by the justice and the county judge and two justices of sessions. Since 1882 the Oyer and Terminer consists of a single justice of the Supreme Court.

By an act of the Legislature, adopted in 1848, and entitled the Code of Procedure, all distinctions between actions at law and suits in equity were abolished, so far as the manner of commencing and conducting the same is concerned, and one uniform method of practice in all actions was provided. Under this act appeals lay to the General Term of the Supreme Court from judgments rendered in justice, mayor's, or recorder's and county courts and from orders and decisions of a justice at Special Term or Circuit, and from judgments rendered at any trial term of the Supreme Court.

In 1869 the judiciary article of the constitution of 1846 was amended, but continued the existing Supreme Court with the same jurisdiction. By this amendment it was provided that the Legislature should, from time to time, not oftener than once in five years, provide for the organization of General Terms consisting of a presiding justice and not more than three associates. It also directed the holding of General Terms in each of the districts. In case of vacancy in the office of justice, the governor, by and with the consent of the Senate, if in session, or if not, then alone, could appoint a person to fill the office until the next general election held not less than three months after the vacancy occurred. The justices were to be elected by the voters of their respective districts, and were to hold office for fourteen years, subject to removal by a two-thirds vote of the Legislature after charges preferred, and opportunity for hearing given. Their term of office was limited to the age of seventy years.

By chapter 408 of the laws of 1870 the then organization of the General Terms was abrogated, and the State divided into four departments and provision made for holding the General Terms in each. By the same act the governor was directed to designate from among the justices of the Supreme Court a presiding justice and two associates to constitute a General Term in each de-

partment. The presiding justice was to hold his place during his official term and the associates for five years. The justices of each department once in two years were to prepare appointments of Circuits, Oyer and Terminer and Special Terms and designate the justice to hold each; and if for any reason the justice named to hold any court could not do so, the governor could appoint some other justice to hold the court in his place. In June, 1877, the Legislature enacted the Code of Civil Procedure to take the place of the Code of 1848. By this act many minor changes in the practice of the court were made. Among them a provision that every two years the justices of the General Terms, and the chief judges of the Superior City Courts, should meet and revise and establish general rules of practice for all the courts of record in the State except the Court of Appeals.

By an amendment to the constitution, adopted in 1879, one additional justice was provided for in the second district. Under the authority of another amendment, adopted in 1882, the Legislature, by chapter 329 of the laws of 1883, divided the State into five judicial departments, and provided for the election of twelve additional justices to hold office from the first Monday of June, 1884; two of them to reside in each of the first, fifth, seventh and eighth, and one in each of the second, third, fourth and sixth judicial districts; and for a General Term in each department.

These are, in brief, the changes through which the Supreme Court of the State of New York has passed in its growth from the prerogative of an irresponsible governor to one of the most independent and enlightened instrumentalities for the protection and attainment of the rights of its citizens, of which any state or nation, ancient or modern, can rightfully boast. So well is this fact understood by the people that by far the greater amount of business which might be done in inferior courts at less expense, is actually taken to this court for settlement.

*County Courts.*—Next in inferiority of rank and jurisdiction to the Supreme Court are the County Courts; held in and for each county of the State, at such times and places as its judges may direct. This court had its origin in the English Court of Sessions, and, like it, at first had criminal jurisdiction only. By an act of the Legislature, passed in 1683, a Court of Sessions, having power to try all causes civil and criminal by a jury, was directed to be held by three justices of the peace, in each of the twelve counties of the province twice a year; with one additional term in Albany and two in New York. By the act of 1691 and the decree of 1699, referred to in connection with the Supreme Court, all civil jurisdiction was taken away from this court and conferred upon the Court of Common Pleas. By the constitution of 1846, which made such sweeping changes in all the courts of the State, provision was made for a County Court in each of the counties of the State, except New York, to be held by an officer to be designated the county judge, and to have such juris-



diction as the Legislature might prescribe. Under the authority of this constitution the County Courts have been given, from time to time, jurisdiction in action of assumpsit, debt and covenant in sums not exceeding two thousand dollars ; in replevin, not exceeding one thousand ; and in actions for trespass and personal injury, not to exceed five hundred dollars. These courts have also been invested with equity powers to foreclose mortgages ; to sell infants' real estate ; to partition lands ; to admeasure dower and to care for the persons and estates of lunatics and habitual drunkards. The judiciary act of 1869 continued the existing jurisdiction of County Courts and conferred upon them original jurisdiction in all actions in which the defendant lived within the county, and the damages claimed did not exceed one thousand dollars. Like the Supreme Court the County Court now has its civil and criminal side. In criminal matters the county judge is assisted by two justices of sessions, elected by the people from among justices of the peace in the county ; and sitting during the term for which they were elected as justice of the peace. It is in the criminal side of this court, known as the Sessions, that all the minor criminal offenses are now disposed of. All indictments by the grand jury except for murder or some very serious felony are sent to it for trial from the Oyer and Terminer. By the Codes of 1848 and 1877 the methods of procedure and practice and the jurisdiction and control of actions arising within the county or against citizens of the county, were made to conform as nearly as possible to the practice and jurisdiction in the Supreme Court. This was done with the evident design of attracting litigation into these courts and thus relieving the Supreme Court. But in this purpose there has been failure ; litigants much preferring the shield and assistance of the broader powers of the Supreme Court. By the judiciary act the term of office of county judges was extended from four to six years. Under the codes he can perform some of the duties of a justice of the Supreme Court at Chambers. The County Court has appellate jurisdiction over actions arising in Justice Courts and Courts of Special Sessions.

*Surrogate Courts.* — These courts, one of which exists in each county of the State, are now Courts of Record, having a seal ; and their especial jurisdiction is the settlement and care of estates of persons who have died either with or without a will, and of infants. The derivation of the powers and practice of the Surrogate Courts in New York State is from the Ecclesiastical Court of England, through a part of the Colonial Council, which existed during the rule of the Dutch, and exercised its authority in accordance with the Dutch Roman law, the custom of Amsterdam, and the law of Aasdom ; the Court of Burgomasters and Schepens, the Court of Orphan Masters, the Mayor's Court, the Prerogative Court and the Court of Probates. The settlement of estates and the guardianship of orphans which was at first vested in the Director General and Council of New Netherland was transferred to the Burgomasters in 1653, and soon after, at their request, was transferred to the Orphan Masters.

Under the colony the Prerogative Court controlled all matters in relation to the probate of wills and settlement of estates. This power continued until 1692 when by act of legislature all probates and granting of letters of administration were to be under the hand of the governor or his delegate; and two freeholders were to be appointed in each town to take charge of the estates of persons dying without a will. Under the Duke's laws this duty had been performed by the constables, overseers and justices of each town. All wills were to be probated in New York, either directly or upon proof taken before and transmitted there by the Court of Common Pleas. In 1778 the governor was divested of all this power except the appointment of surrogates, and it was conferred upon the judges of the Court of Probates. Under the first constitution surrogates were appointed by the Council of Appointment, and held office until removed for cause shown. Under the second constitution they were appointed by the governor, with the consent of the Senate, and held office for four years. The Constitution of 1846 abrogated the office of surrogate in all counties having less than forty thousand inhabitants and conferred its powers and duties upon the county judge. By chapter 175 of laws of 1851, the people were authorized to elect a surrogate in each other county to hold office for six years. By the Code of Civil Procedure surrogates were invested with all necessary powers to carry out the equitable and incidental requirements of their office, a much needed authority in view of the rule which had formerly obtained, that the Surrogate's Court was one of limited jurisdiction, and the surrogate had no powers except those which were expressly given him by statute. In its present form, and sitting weekly at the county seat of each county, Surrogate's Courts afford a cheap and expeditious medium for the care and settlement of estates and the guardianship of infants.

*Justice Court and Court of Special Sessions.*—The only remaining courts which are common to the whole State are the Special Sessions held by a justice of the peace for the trial of minor criminal offenses; Justice Courts with a limited civil jurisdiction. Previous to the Constitution of 1846 justices of the peace were appointed, since that time they have been elected by the people. The office and its duties are descended from the English office of the same name, but are much less important, and under the laws of this State, purely the creature of statute. A justice of the peace can exercise only such authority as is expressly given him by statutes. The office of justice is of very little importance in the administration of law, and with the loss of much of its old time power has lost all of its former dignity.

This brief survey of the courts of New York, which omits only those that are local in character, such as the Superior City Courts, Common Pleas of New York City, Recorder's and Police Courts, gives some idea of the machinery provided for the use of the members of the bench and bar at the time of the foundation of Essex county in 1799.



## ESSEX COUNTY BAR.

In its *personnel* and practice the bench and bar of Essex county have always stood in the front rank. Among its members have always been some of the best judicial minds in the State. Beginning with the organization of the county and continuing to the present time, there have been leaders at its circuits whose character and attainments have placed them among the first in the profession; and whose influence has been so pervading and salutary that the whole bar has caught something of their spirit, and maintained a freedom from all unworthy methods that can be found in very few communities.

*The Bench.* — In a comparatively new county like Essex, where the citizens are more occupied with the work of agriculture and the developments of the natural resources of the earth, then with thoughts of litigation; and where the subject matter of actions is seldom large or involves many parties, there is little opportunity for the judges who preside over its courts to make any extended reputation as jurists. Yet from the election of the first county judge to the present time, the offices of judge and surrogate of the county have been filled by men of force, ability and integrity.

The first county judge, Daniel Ross, was most fittingly selected to be the first of the line. Mr. Ross moved from Dutchess county to the present site of Essex village (then in the town of Willsborough), in 1784; afterwards married Elizabeth, daughter of William Gilliland, and was the founder of one of the most respected families in the county. Among his descendants were several lawyers of unusual ability. The family still occupy the ancestral home on the shore of Lake Champlain.

Mr. Ross resided for a short time in Clinton county and was its sheriff from 1794 to 1797 inclusive; and its member of Assembly in 1798. He was first elected judge of Essex county, November 10th, 1800, and held the office until January 22d, 1823, a length of service which proves the esteem in which the people of the county held him.

He was succeeded in the judgeship by Dean Edson, of the same town, who was judge until February 2d, 1831. He had also been district attorney from 1821 to 1828. About 1835 Mr. Edson removed to western New York, leaving no descendants in Essex county, and very little record of his life or work.

The third county judge was Reuben Whallon, who was elected in 1831, and continued in the office until April 18th, 1838, when he was succeeded by Wolcott Tyrell. Judge Tyrell will long be remembered as the author of a charge as sententious as it was true. At the end of a hotly-contested, and somewhat important trial, His Honor turned to the jury, and solemnly gazing over his spectacles, addressed them in this wise: "Gentlemen of the jury, you have heard all of this case, and the talk of the lawyers; you know your duty better than I can tell you; gentlemen, go out and do your duty." Yet, withal, the shrewd, hard common sense of the judge often stood him well instead of the greater erudition of some of his judicial brethren.

Henry H. Ross was the first judge and surrogate elected under the new constitution. He acted for a little over a year, and then resigned to attend to his many other duties. Of his work as judge an estimate will be found in the following sketches of eminent members of the bar.

Hon. John E. McVine was next elected county judge and surrogate in 1848, and re-elected in 1852. He was succeeded in 1856 by Robert S. Hale, a sketch of whom is given among the distinguished lawyers of the county.

The only living persons who have held the office of county judge are the Hon. Byron Pond and Hon. Francis A. Smith, the present incumbent, both of Elizabethtown. Judge Pond was elected in 1864, and held the office for fourteen years; during which time he acquired a well-deserved reputation as an able and fearless magistrate. Called, on one occasion, to preside in the place of the judge of a neighboring county, it became the duty of Judge Pond to pass sentence upon a number of offenders against the excise law. Many of them were men of influence who had been accustomed to pay a small fine in place of procuring a license, and had repeatedly violated the law, in reliance upon the influence of themselves and their friends to enable them to escape its penalties. Upon learning this state of facts, Judge Pond imposed upon them the largest fine allowed by law, and in several cases imprisonment in addition. The act was typical of his usual fearless justice in dealing with criminals.

Hon. Francis A. Smith was elected to the office in 1878, and brought to its duties great learning and untiring energy, which, united with patient and conscientious care for the interests of all parties before him, have given all his judicial acts much weight among both lawyers and laymen.

*Surrogates.* — Of the comparatively uneventful course of the Surrogate Court of the county little can be said beyond giving the names and time of the persons who have held the office. The earliest records of the court begin with the year 1802, but the first appointed to the office was William Gilliland, in the year 1800. Mr. Gilliland acted from March 24th of that year until October 29th, 1801. He represented Essex and Clinton counties in the Assembly in the year 1800.

James McRea, the next surrogate, was a lawyer who practiced in the town of Essex from about 1800 to the time of his death in 1818. He was in office from 1801 to March 14th, 1807, and was then succeeded by Thomas Tredwell, who held the office eight years.

The other surrogates down to the time when the office became incorporated with that of county judge, and the length of time they served, were, Ezra C. Gross, 1815 to 1819; Ashley Pond, 1819 to 1821; John Calkins, 1821 to 1831; Augustus C. Hand, 1831 to 1840; Orlando Kellogg, 1840 to 1844; Robert W. Livingston, 1844 to 1847. Mr. Livingston is the only one of the number who is now living, and is the oldest member of the bar in Essex county, and knows more of the men and growth of the county than any other man in it.



*Members of the Bar.* — Extended as Essex county is over an area of 1650 square miles and divided into eighteen towns, some of them greater in area than many of the counties of the State and constituting almost independent communities, it may be interesting to enumerate the members of the bar of the county with reference to their residence in the different towns; so far as they can now be ascertained, in the towns of Keene, Lewis, Minerva, Newcomb, North Elba, North Hudson, Schroon, St. Armand and Wilmington, no lawyer is recorded to have maintained his abode for any length of time.

Chesterfield. — In this town there have lived, practiced and died, the Hon. Ezra C. Gross, who was surrogate of Essex county for four years following 1815, and Member of Assembly from the same county for the years 1828 and 1829. Mr. Gross was a man of bright intellect, and for a time a leading lawyer in the county. Gardiner Stow, who was district attorney for Essex county from 1833 to 1844, and made his home at Elizabethtown, and who was a man of great learning and ability. Thomas A. Tomlinson who was a resident of the town for a great many years, and closely identified with all the business interests of the village of Keeseville in which he resided. He was Member of Assembly for Essex county in 1835 and 1836, and Member of Congress from the district which included that county in 1841 and 1842. His business career was attended with great success. The Hon. Winslow C. Watson, a lifelong resident, and the author of an excellent history of Essex county and other works. Thomas B. Watson. Hon. George A. Simmons, of whom more appropriate mention will be made among the eminent men of the bar. The Hon. Samuel Ames, who was one of the State commissioners of accounts in 1865, and State Senator from Essex, Clinton and Warren counties in 1872 and 1873. Mr. Ames was a man of great native vigor of mind and clearness of perception, and would doubtless have attained eminence as a lawyer had it not been for the demands of business in which he was largely interested, and his early death at a time when he had just reached the maturity of his powers. He was born in Napierville, Canada, June 29th, 1824, and died in Keeseville, July 4th, 1875. He studied law with Hon. George A. Simmons and afterward became his partner. While in the Senate, although a new member, his ability was so marked that he was assigned to the committee on judiciary, internal affairs, poor laws, and made chairman of the committee on State prisons. In sagacity and ability as a counselor and in the management of business affairs, Mr. Ames had few superiors.

Crown Point. — This town, although one of the wealthiest in the county, has been singularly neglected by attorneys. The only lawyers who have practiced there are Samuel A. Gibson, who moved there from Ticonderoga about 1815. Amos Bigelow, who succeeded him about 1830; Judge A. C. Hand, for a short time only; Chauncey Fenton, who spent his life there; Henry Havens, for a time and then removed to Oakland, California; Wm. McVine, for

a short time about 1850; Simeon W. Crammond and his brother William, the first of whom gave up practice and the latter of whom is deceased; and Libeus Haskill, who came there from Ticonderoga about 1832. Mr. Haskill was a man of decided talent and of extended reputation.

Elizabethtown. — This town being the county seat has always had a considerable number of attorneys. Among the number of whom record remains was John Catlin, John S. Chipman, Edward S. Cuyler, Hon. A. C. Hand, Hon. Orlando Kellogg, Hon. Robert S. Hale.

Essex. — The first attorney in this town was Daniel Ross, who resided there from 1784 until his death in 1847. Contemporaneous with him was Hon. Ralph Hascall who practiced there from about 1800 to the time of his death in 1825. Mr. Hascall was a State Senator from 1811 to 1819 inclusive, and district attorney of Essex county from 1818 to 1821. He was for a time a partner of Gen. Henry H. Ross, who was a life long resident of Essex, and a sketch of whose life and work will be given. Other attorneys of this town were Dean Edson, who has been noticed among the judges of his county; Col. David B. McNeil, who practiced there from about 1810 to 1825, and who was a colonel in the militia and in the army at the battle of Plattsburg. He was district attorney from 1828 to 1833. William Hough, who practiced there a few years about 1810; James McRea from 1800 to 1818; Edward S. Shumway from 1840 to the time of his death in 1853, and who was a school commissioner from 1843 to 1847, and district attorney from 1851 to 1852. Captain William D. Ross, eldest son of Gen. Henry H. Ross, practiced from 1851 to time of his death in the Union army in 1861. James B. Ross, second son of Judge Henry H. Ross, and now of Denver, Colorado; Henry H. Ross, son of James B. Ross, admitted in 1881, and died in 1882 at Denver, Colorado; Colonel John L. Cunningham practiced in Essex in 1859 to 1861, then went into the army, and on his return became secretary of the Glens Falls Insurance Company, a position he still holds.

Willsborough. — The one attorney whom this town boasts, either living or dead, is Martin Aiken, who was born in that town in 1791, and who built the first, last and only law office therein.

Jay. — Of departed practitioners within its bounds this town can name two, Joseph Whitley and Richard C. R. Chase. The latter was admitted to the bar in 1850 and practiced at Ausable Forks until 1876. He died in 1883.

Moriah. — In this town there were in practice from 1830, the first time at which there is any record, to the present, Zebulon R. Shipherd, John F. Havens, Benjamin F. Hyde, Jonathan Tarbell, James P. Butler, who was district attorney from 1852 to 1855; Philander Butler, Hon. John E. McVine, who was county judge from 1848 to 1856; James W. Sheehy, who was a Member of Assembly in 1881 and 1882; Hon. F. W. Tobey, who was State Senator from 1874 to 1878, Member of Assembly in 1872 and 1873, and died in 1879.



Ticonderoga. — Upon the roll of its dead this town has the names of the following attorneys: Samuel S. Bigelow, who practiced about 1810 and after; Samuel A. Gibson from 1812 to 1815 and afterwards in Crown Point; Lemuel H. Wicker; Henry Northup; Libeus Haskill, afterwards moved to Crown Point; John S. Chipman, who moved to Elizabethtown, and from there "went west" and was sent to Congress and afterwards wrote a somewhat extensive treatise upon the science of government; Jonathan Burnet, who for many years was the principal practitioner in the southern part of the county. He was born in Bethel, Vt. in July, 1799, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1819, read law with Counselor Walbridge in Lansingburgh, came to Ticonderoga in 1827 and lived there until the time of his death in 1867. He was a Master in Chancery, Member of Assembly in 1853 and 1854; and was a man of superior endowment and attainment, and through life a great student and devoted to the profession which he had adopted. Eliphalet Piersons, for some years before and after 1834, and was the preceptor of Moses T. Clough, now a successful attorney of Troy, N. Y. Mr. Clough graduated at Dartmouth in 1834, at the age of nineteen, came directly to Ticonderoga and studied and practiced law there for many years. He was district attorney from 1847 to 1850, and was a man greatly respected for his talent and character. William Calkins, who came to Ticonderoga from Vermont in 1831, was a graduate of Dartmouth, read law in the office of Judge Carpenter, of the Vermont Supreme Court, was admitted in this State in 1836 and practiced at Ticonderoga until his death in 1855. He was for many years school commissioner. Mr. Calkins left an excellent reputation and an honored memory. George R. Andrews was admitted to the bar in 1836, became a successful lawyer, was a Member of the Thirty-first Congress, afterward moved to Oshkosh, Wisconsin, and died there. Many others have engaged in the practice of law in Ticonderoga of whose history little more than their names remain. Among such are James J. Stevens, Richard Smith, Augustus Haight, Charles N. Flint, Martin F. Nicholson, Alfred Weed, Jonas Wicker, Cyrus Blanchard, M. L. McLaren and William Crammond. John C. Hollenbeck was for some years an attorney in Ticonderoga, and is now in the great West.

Westport. — This town alone rivals Willsborough in the unity of its legal profession. Mr. Charles Hatch being its only son and representative.

#### THE PRESENT BAR.

The following attorneys, named in the order of their seniority, are now in active practice of the law in Essex county: —

Hon. Martin Finch, of Keeseville, graduate of Williams College, admitted in 1840, Member of Assembly in 1862 and 1863, district attorney from 1864 to 1867.

Thomas D. Trumbull, of Ausable Forks, studied with Gardiner Stow and Dennis Stetson, admitted in 1848.

Hon. William E. Calkins, of Ticonderoga, Member of Assembly in 1875 and 1876, county clerk from 1860 to 1872.

Hon. A. B. Waldo, of Port Henry, senior member of the firm of Waldo & Grover, graduate of Burlington University, member of State Constitutional Commission of 1872, district attorney from 1861 to 1864.

Hon. Palmer E. Havens, of Essex, been in practice thirty-five years, Member of Assembly 1862, 1863 and 1867, State Senator, 1864 and 1865.

Charles F. Tabor, of Keeseville.

John C. Fenton, of Ticonderoga.

Hon. Byron Pond, senior member of Pond & Brown, of Elizabethtown, county judge from 1864 to 1878, district attorney from 1858 to 1861.

Richard L. Hand, of Elizabethtown, son of Judge Augustus C. Hand, graduate of Union College, holds his father's position as leader of the Essex county bar.

Hon. Francis A. Smith, of Elizabethtown, born in Salisbury, Mass., in 1837, admitted to New York bar in 1860, practiced for short time at Johnstown and Fonda, partner of late Hon. Robert S. Hale, of Essex county, county judge since 1878.

Hon. Marcus D. Grover, of Port Henry, Member of Vermont Legislature, moved to Granville, Washington county, N. Y., assistant district attorney, and partner of Hon. R. C. Betts, came to Port Henry and entered into partnership with A. B. Waldo and Hon. Franklin W. Tobey.

Arod K. Dudley, of Elizabethtown, district attorney from 1867 to 1876.

Milo C. Perry, of Elizabethtown.

Bovette B. Bishop, of Moriah Centre.

Rowland C. Kellogg, of Elizabethtown, son of Hon. Orlando Kellogg, graduate of Albany Law School, admitted in 1867, present district attorney.

Anthony J. B. Ross, of Essex, son of General Henry H. Ross, admitted in 1872, always practiced there, now supervisor.

T. D. Trumbull, jr., of Ausable Forks.

F. A. Rowe, of Keeseville.

Robert Dornburgh, of Ticonderoga.

Harry Hale, of Elizabethtown, son of Hon. Robert S. Hale.

Walter S. Brown, of Elizabethtown, of firm of Pond & Brown.

William R. Kellogg, of Elizabethtown.

Patrick C. McRory, Benjamin F. Beers, Kingsley C. Morehouse, C. K. Flint, Chester B. McLaughlin, graduate of Vermont University, present school commissioner Second district, Edward T. Stokes; the last six named of Port Henry.

George W. Watkins, of Moriah.

William F. Hickey, of Crown Point.

Adelbert W. Boynton, of Keeseville, graduate of Vermont University, studied law with Hon. Robert S. Hale, admitted in 1882.



Thomas F. Conway, of Keeseville, junior in firm of Boynton & Conway.

In addition to the members of the bar of Essex county already mentioned, there are many others who have removed from the county after practicing there, and achieved extended distinction. Among these are notably, Hon. Samuel Hand, of Albany; Hon. Matthew Hale, of Albany; Judge Melville A. Sheldon, of Glens Falls; Hon. Charles E. Shaw, of New York; Hon. Adolphus Markham and George Markham, of Milwaukee; Hon. A. T. Spooner, of Delávan, Wis.; James B. Ross, of Denver, Colorado.

#### SKETCHES OF EMINENT DEAD.

In the past history of the bar of Essex county there stands out the names and lives of five men, whose characters and attainments cannot be surpassed in the history of the bar of any State. They were the men whose force of mind and depth of learning, as displayed in the legal contests at the bar of their native county, led one of the most eminent judges of the State to say: "I have heard important causes tried in almost every county of the State, and I never heard more skillfully conducted trials, or more brilliant arguments than at the Essex county bar."

*General Henry H. Ross.*—Of the men who drew forth this encomium, the eldest was General Henry H. Ross. Of him it was well said by one of his professional brethren, at a meeting of the bar of Essex county, soon after his death:—

Henry H. Ross was no ordinary man. It was his lot to be so gifted by nature, his mind so improved by culture, his judgment so matured by observation and reflection and experience, to which was added large extrinsic advantages, that he was able to do much good in his day, and set an example in life worthy of praise and imitation. His well balanced mind never for a moment yielded to the novel vagaries of the day, either in theory or practice, but led him safely and successfully through the varied transactions of life.

It was natural and fit that such a man should be entrusted much with public duties. A brief review of his history will show that, though this was so to a degree, office was not even a secondary pursuit with him. But all that he accepted he discharged with marked ability and fidelity.

Henry H. Ross was born in Essex (then Willsborough), May 9th, 1790, and was the second son of Hon. Daniel Ross. He received a thorough English education when quite young at a school in Montreal, C. E., and there also acquired a knowledge of the French language. In 1804 he entered Columbia College, in the city of New York, and graduated there in 1808, and immediately after became a student at law in the office of Hon. David B. Ogden, where he remained until October term, 1811, when he was admitted as attorney of the Supreme Court. He was afterwards admitted as Solicitor in Chancery and in due time to the higher grades of the profession, counselor in the Supreme Court and counselor in the Court of Chancery, his licenses being signed by









*Henry W. Co. P*





Chief Justice and Chancellor Kent and Chief Justice Thompson. He was a member of the Nineteenth Congress from this district; was elected county judge in 1847 but which office he soon resigned. Was elected elector and made president of the Electoral College in this State in 1848.

He was adjutant of the Thirty-seventh Regiment of militia of this State at the battle of Plattsburg, and acted on the staff of General Macomb on that memorable occasion with great credit. He afterwards successfully became colonel, brigadier-general and major-general. He was also very often called upon to execute those minor, but indispensable public trusts required by every community.

He never sought office but often refused it. He could add nothing to his name, character or standing among his fellow men. He never felt the "pride of office;" to fawn or scheme for it he was incapable, and although like a good citizen he was ever awake to the public weal, and a close observer of public men and public acts, and watched the interests of his country with the closest scrutiny, private life and his own affairs were more congenial to his tastes. Blessed with a happy family and an abundance of this world's goods, his home was the seat of comfort, generous hospitality and social enjoyment. And yet he was a public man. His influence in society was great and beneficial; and his liberality in every enterprise for improvement, and in matters relating to charity and religion was munificent.

But as a professional man his worth was, if possible, the most evident. And in that character, we, as members of the same fraternity, can fully appreciate him. His knowledge of law was deep; his oratorical powers fine and persuasive; and his long professional course a success. His forensic efforts for half a century bear testimony to his great power and ability as a lawyer and advocate. Engaged in almost every cause in Essex county even up to the last term before his death, his cool judgment, acute apprehension of the points of the case, quick perception of every advantage and every danger, his indomitable energy and indefatigable industry gave confidence and frequently success to his clients, and made him a powerful opponent.

He loved the practice of the law not because he loved litigation of itself, but because it was a profession in which men of his erudition, high legal attainments, and honorable feelings have full scope for all their powers, and yet could aid in the honest and able administration of justice. His clients knew he was incapable of betraying their confidence, his professional associates knew he was incapable of trick, the Bench knew that candor and fairness were his characteristics.

But this is not all. He was conspicuous for his uniform urbanity and kindly deportment to the Bench, to his professional opponents, and, indeed, to every member of the bar. In this respect he was a model lawyer. The weight of responsibility from the importance and difficulty of the case, how-



ever great; the excitement and severity of the struggle, however keen and overpowering; anxiety, doubt, danger, or even defeat; nay even the rudeness of an adversary never made him deviate for a moment from the demeanor of a true gentleman. One of his rivals, who for most of the time for over thirty years practiced at the same bar and was in constant intercourse with him, after his death said that he never knew General Ross to use a rude expression to one of his professional brethren. Under all circumstances, firm, dignified and courteous, he was the gentleman still.

Withal, he possessed a genial soul, and rejoiced when others were happy, and was never better satisfied than when, on fitting occasions, by the exercise of his great conversational powers, made more brilliant and instructive by his sound judgment, his great knowledge of the world and men of the world, he could make his friends and acquaintances happy.

The family of General Ross has been prominent in the county of Essex from its earliest history. As far back as 1765 his grandfather on the maternal side, retiring from a successful mercantile business in New York, became the proprietor of large tracts of land on the west shore of Lake Champlain. This was but two years subsequent to the treaty of Paris, by which France relinquished to Great Britain her claim to the possession of that region, thus terminating the long contest known as the French and Indian War. The conflicting grants, however, which had been previously made by the respective governments, rendered titles for a time uncertain, producing much confusion and dissatisfaction. It was during this condition of affairs that he, in conjunction with Philip Skeene, then governor of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, and others, contemplated it is said the establishment of an independent government, comprising the territory north of Massachusetts, and between the Connecticut and St. Lawrence rivers.

All the aspiring plans, however, of the early settlers were frustrated by the breaking out of the War of the Revolution. While Skene adhered to the king's cause, his former coadjutor in schemes of political aggrandizement espoused the cause of the patriots with zeal and energy. No man, perhaps, rendered more effective service in advancing the expedition of General Montgomery into Canada in 1776 than William Gilliland, as the reader of this work has learned.

His son-in-law, Daniel Ross, father of Henry H. Ross, removed from Dutchess county near the close of the Revolution, and established himself in business on the site of the present village of Essex. The country at this time was new, the population small, yet the sounds of war which for so many years had rung along those shores had died away, and nothing remained to distract attention from the arts of peace. The difficulties which had beset his immediate predecessors, rendering valueless all their toil, happily did not prevent his enterprise from being rewarded with success. His industry secured a competency, his character commanded respect.

Henry H. Ross was the second son of Judge Daniel Ross and Elizabeth, the daughter of William Gilliland. He enjoyed excellent advantages of education, having been placed at an early age in the best schools of Montreal, afterwards entering Columbia College in New York.

Arrived now at the age of manhood, thoroughly read in the profession he had chosen, he turned away from the excitements and allurements of the metropolis to the more congenial quiet of his native village.

He applied himself diligently to the labors of his profession, and at once assumed, and to the end of his career maintained a distinguished position among its ablest members. In the conduct of his legal business he was methodical, cautious, laborious. He discountenanced rather than promoted litigation, and in his intercourse with clients, mature deliberation always preceded wise and conscientious counsel. He rarely indulged in rhetoric and never in ostentatious display. He addressed the understanding of his hearers instead of appealing to their passions, and approached whatever subject he had in hand with dignity, self-possession and in the light of principle and common sense. Upon all the political issues of his time he entertained clear and well settled convictions, and was frank and open in expression of them. His sentiments were emphatically conservative — naturally inclined to adhere to the established order of things, and not easily drawn into the advocacy of any of the isms of the day. During most of his life the principles he maintained were not in accordance with those of the prevailing party; nevertheless, a man of his mark could not well avoid being frequently pressed into the political arena, when personal influence and popularity, it was hoped, might turn the scale in a doubtful contest. Yet he was no office-seeker, but, on the contrary, a man whose elevated tone rendered him the reverse of all that constitutes that character. However gratifying might have been, and no doubt was, the confidence his fellow-citizens so often expressed in his behalf, the offices he held, and the nominations he received, always came entirely unsolicited.

In 1825–26 he represented his district in Congress. At no period in our history has there been seen in the national capital a body of men surpassing in character and ability that which composed the Nineteenth Congress. Webster and Everett, of Massachusetts; Taylor and Hasbrouck, of New York; McLane, of Delaware; Stevenson, of Virginia; McDuffie, of South Carolina; Buchanan, of Pennsylvania; Polk and Houston, of Tennessee; Mangum, of North Carolina, were among those who then held seats in the House of Representatives — men who have left their impress upon the history of the country. An examination of the proceedings of that Congress shows that all the great questions attracting the attention of the people at that time — the Panama mission — internal improvements — the judiciary system — the policy in reference to public lands, etc., received his close and careful consideration, and that his opinion in the national council, as in every other position, commanded the respect of his associates.



In 1828, although urged by many as successor to the Hon. Samuel Jones in the office of chancellor of this State, with assurances that he was the preference of the appointing power, he refused to allow his name to be used in that connection. Indeed, he seemed to possess little ambition for public place, his tastes leading him to choose the independence of private life, and the liberty to follow unmolested his private pursuits.

In addition to his strictly legal business, which was always large, the confidence in his judgment and integrity which the community entertained from the beginning, and which, if possible, increased as he advanced in years, led to his being selected to execute numerous trusts, and to manage the settlement of estates to an extent demanding no inconsiderable portion of his time. He was also for years a director and president of the steamboat company on Lake Champlain, and, in fact, but few enterprises originated in his vicinity with which he was not associated or in which his counsel and influence were not sought. A leading member of the legal profession, the trusted arbitrator of his neighborhood, an extensive landholder and agriculturist, connected with business men and business matters, he was one whose relations to society around him extended to all its interests, the sundering whereof by the hand of death will be felt as a public calamity.

He was the first judge of Essex county under the new constitution, as his father was under the old, all parties uniting in his unanimous election. The pressure of other duties, however, compelled him to resign the position before the close of his term.

Upon the dissolution of the Whig party he refused to join that portion of it which united with the Republican organization, and although never a member of the Know-Nothing order, was nominated by the Americans in the fall of 1857 to the office of attorney-general. During the presidential election of 1860 he entered warmly into the contest, advocating the claims of Douglas, and was an elector on his ticket.

General Ross married the daughter of the late Hon. Anthony Blanchard, of Salem, Washington county. In his intercourse with the world, as we have intimated, he was grave, courteous and dignified, and it was only in his own house, surrounded by his family and his guests, that he exhibited those warm, social qualities that endeared him to them all. Thousands whose fortunes have led them to his ever open door, who have walked in the shade of his pleasant grounds, will long remember his genial nature and his most generous hospitality.

The unhappy war, however, at length brought desolation and grief to his hearth as it has to so many others, darkening the closing days of his life. The death of his son, the late Lieutenant William D. Ross, of the Anderson Zouaves, was an affliction that fell heavily upon him. Added to this, he could see









JUDGE A. C. HAND.





through the gloom and darkness of the present but little hope in the future for his distracted country, and seemed to be borne down by the sorrowful thought that "when his eyes were turned to behold, for the last time, the sun in heaven, he should see it shining on the broken and dishonored fragments of the Union."

When, at last, he felt that the inevitable hour that comes to all was drawing near, with that deliberate self-possession so characteristic of him, he dictated the disposition of his worldly affairs and laid down to die. The illness that prostrated him was of short duration and he died September 13th, 1862.

*Hon. Augustus C. Hand.* — Succeeding General Ross in point of time and service at the bar stands the Hon. Augustus C. Hand, for many years the acknowledged leader of the attorneys of Northern New York. Judge Hand was descended from the English family of John Hand, who came from Kent in England, and settled on Long Island, and from there removed to Shoreham, Vermont where the subject of this sketch was born, September 4th, 1803. While upon the farm, and before any one had thought of the chance of his following any other pursuit than that of his father, it was discovered that he had possessed himself of a *Blackstone* and a few other old law books, and had been studying them in private. The inclination of his mind thus early indicated, he was wisely allowed by his parents to name the profession of his life, and the studiousness then exhibited was the precursor of that research which, in his later life, would be satisfied with nothing short of the origin of every legal principle he was called upon to apply. The early education of Judge Hand was obtained in the common schools of his native State, and under the private instruction of Professor Turner, of Middlebury College, and Calvin C. Waller, then surveyor-general of Vermont. At an early age he graduated from the then famous law school of Judge Gould, in Litchfield, Conn., and afterwards continued his legal studies with Judge Cornelius L. Allen, of Salem, New York. Soon after his admission to the bar, and in 1829, he began the practice of law in Crown Point, and remained there until 1831, when, at the age of twenty-seven, he was appointed by the governor and Senate to be surrogate of Essex county, and discharged the duties of that important office for nine years with the greatest faithfulness and care. Immediately after this appointment he removed to the county seat, Elizabethtown, and remained there until his death. He was an honored member of the Twenty-sixth Congress, and was elected thereto in a district ordinarily opposed to him in politics, at the age of thirty-five years. In 1844 he was elected to the State Senate, and served as chairman of the judiciary committee of that body during the four years of his senatorship. It was during this time that the Constitution of 1846 was adopted, and made such radical changes in the organization of the courts, and the practice and proceedings in them, that some scheme to harmonize the old and new systems became necessary. This result was effectively secured by the law, com-



monly known as the Judiciary Act, which was originated and drafted by Judge Hand. Although this act is now one of the reminiscences of lawyers, yet during its short life it was greatly appreciated; and certainly is a monument of careful and accurate thought of which any jurist and legislator might rightly feel proud.

It will also be remembered that during this time the senators, with the lieutenant-governor, the chancellor and the justices of the Supreme Court, constituted the Court of Final Resort in the State. In this body Judge Hand occupied a very high position; and the opinions which he wrote, as one of its members, and which may be found in the last four volumes of *Denio's Reports*, may well be studied as examples of patient research, legal erudition and prevailing reason and logic. Under the new constitution Judge Hand was elected a justice of the Supreme Court, and served nearly eight years in that capacity with great distinction. Something of the work which he did, and its character, may be gathered from his written opinions, reported in *Barbour's Reports*, volumes one to twenty. During the year 1855, he was a member of the Court of Appeals and wrote a few carefully prepared opinions, reported in volumes two and three of *Kernan's Reports*.

Except during his official life, as above outlined, Judge Hand spent his days in the busy details of a large legal practice at Elizabethtown. Of Judge Hand's character as a man and lawyer, no truer or more appreciative portrayal can be given than that contained in the following words of one who had known him both as student in his office, and later as opponent in many sternly contested cases — Hon. Robert S. Hale: — “For the first seven and a half years of the new Supreme Court, under the constitution of 1846, Judge Hand occupied an honored seat upon its bench. During that period the untried provisions of the new constitution, of the judiciary act of 1847, and of the codes of 1848 and 1849, were largely construed and settled, and it is not too much to say, that to no judge during that important period of our judicial history is the legal profession more indebted for laborious and exhaustive examination and sound and accurate determination of the newly vexed questions of the time, than to him.

“But to those who knew Judge Hand best, his official life and labors make up but a small part of that which was most admirable in the man and his career.

“As a lawyer his character was a model for imitation. He was always indefatigable in his labor in the examination and preparation of his causes; careful and conscientious in his conclusions and in his advice to his clients; determined and unyielding in the vindication of the rights of his client, and in his defense of the principles which he asserted with the energy of thorough conviction; properly deferential, but never more than that, to the court; courteous always to his antagonist, and never more so than when giving his severest blows,

and especially always kind and considerate in a marked degree towards the younger and more timid members of the profession.

"It was, however, as a citizen and a neighbor, that those who knew Judge Hand best will remember him most fondly. His genial and kindly presence, his liberal heart and free hand, his perfect truthfulness and singleness of mind, his uprightness and purity of life, his thorough contempt for all knavery and sham, his unhesitating assertion and support of his honest convictions, in short his Christian faith and the Christian morals and Christian life by which that faith was evinced, — these form the memories of him which will longest endure in the hearts of his friends."

*George A. Simmons.* — Of this truly remarkable man and lawyer there remains scarcely a written trace save of his official labors. Yet few lives were ever more worthy of study and imitation in minutest detail. Thrown upon his own resources in childhood, Mr. Simmons, by dint of inborn force and talent, and without other help than that afforded by his own brain and muscle, won for himself a position among the most honored in the State.

He was born in New Hampshire about the beginning of the century. His attention was early attracted toward that Mecca of the hopes of all studious youths of his native State, Dartmouth College. At the age of nineteen years he had the proud satisfaction of receiving with honors the degree of A. B. from his *Alma Mater*. He soon began the study of law and in 1834 was admitted to the bar of New York State, and settled in practice at Keeseville, where he remained until his death. He had not been long in Essex county when his worth and ability were recognized, and legal business and political honors began to be showered upon him. Besides many town trusts which were imposed upon him, he was honored with high political duties both in the State and nation.

In 1846 he was an active and influential member of the Constitutional Convention of that year, and especially instrumental in procuring the improved judiciary system which was one of the results of that convention.

In the years 1840, 1841 and 1842 he served Essex county with distinguished fidelity as its Member of Assembly.

From 1853 to 1857 he was Representative in Congress, and the records of that body will show that he was a respected and valuable member. But notwithstanding this political service, Mr. Simmons did not possess a mind to which practical politics was at all congenial. To one who like him had drunk deep at the wells of classic story, and to whom the history of the rise and fall of nations was a well known tale, the politics of his own land could never be uninteresting. But to him they were so, on their philosophical and scientific, rather than upon their office holding side. To think, to theorize, to plan for the good growth of the nation, was to him much pleasanter than to practice the belittling arts of the scheming office seeker.



This was also the character of the man in his legal work. His mind was studious rather than practical. The quiet, thoughtful determination toward scholarship which led him to obtain, unaided, a college education also led him deep into the legal learning of the past, and made the first impulse of his mind in investigating any question, to search for principles rather than expedients.

This inclination of his genius made him particularly strong as a counselor and in the domain of equity practice. Such was his reputation for sound and skillful counsel, that he became the trusted leader of a large number of the attorneys of Essex, Clinton and St. Lawrence counties, and clients came to him in large numbers from far and near.

In arguments before the higher courts where men prevail by force of clearness and ability Mr. Simmons was especially successful.

In conversation with the late Charles O'Connor, Chancellor Kent once said that George A. Simmons was the only man who practiced before him who could clearly state the distinction between law and equity. Chancellor Walworth, at one time on being applied to for autographs of distinguished men, sent one of Mr. Simmons, and to the applicant wrote, "I consider him one of the most eminent men in the State."

Such was the expression of the opinion of men best able to judge of his merits. That they expressed their real convictions is evidenced by the fact that Mr. Simmons was received and treated by them and others equally learned as an associate and companion.

Socially Mr. Simmons was eccentric. He never married. His home was with his books and his highest contentment was found in studious retirement and consequent separation from domestic inclinations. When in society he could be most genial and pleasing.

In character Mr. Simmons was a man without reproach. Neither in public nor private life was there ever an imputation of wrong to sully his fair fame. All in all his was an admirable life. A fine classical scholar, a profound lawyer, a blameless citizen, an upright public servant, a faithful friend, a trusted counselor, adequate to every call of duty, his was a life complete. He was one to whom death could not come untimely.

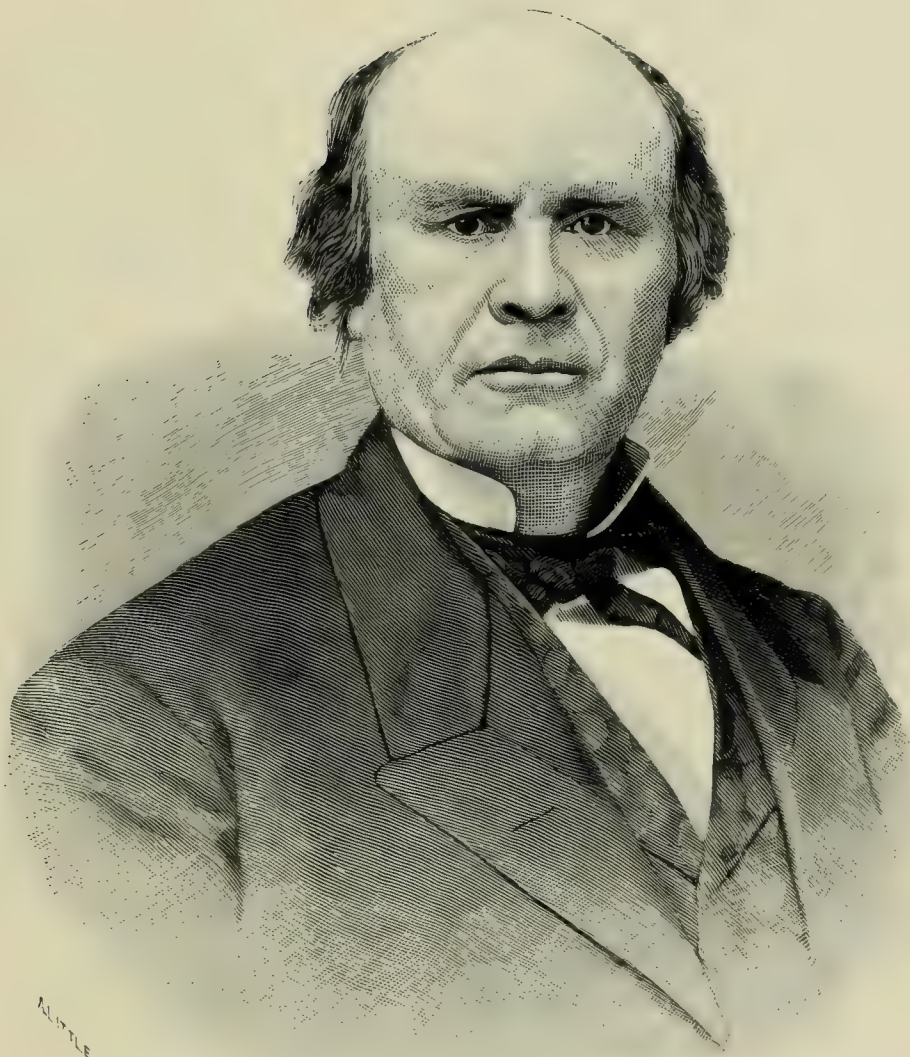
*Hon. Orlando Kellogg.* — Orlando Kellogg was born in Elizabethtown, Essex county, N. Y., in the year 1809. His father was Rowland Kellogg, only son of William Kellogg, who had been driven from his home in Wyoming, Pa., by the destruction of the settlement and the massacre of many of the inhabitants during the Revolutionary struggle. It is related that during the progress of that historic event Mr. Kellogg was pursued from his labor in the field to a fort or stockade by a stalwart Indian, known as "Captain Turkey," and whom he was fortunate enough to shoot. He was one of the earliest settlers in Elizabethtown to which place he removed from Hinesburgh, Vt.

Rowland Kellogg's wife (mother of Orlando) was Sarah Titus, an estimable









ORLANDO KELLOGG.





lady of more than average intelligence. Her husband died in the year 1826, and about seven years later she became the wife of Jeduthan Case, who is said to have been the first child born in Ticonderoga of parents who were permanently settled in that town.

Of all the lawyers who have practiced at the bar of Essex county, the most unique in character and life was the subject of this notice. Of him more truly than any other could it be said: he was the type of American manhood, and of its capabilities and limitations. He was born in Elizabethtown, New York, June 18th, 1809. His father was a mechanic and himself followed the same trade until after his majority. On the death of his father in 1826 he assumed the care and support of his mother and a large family of younger children. Onerous as was the duty and its burden, it was discharged by him with unflinching fidelity and rare success. While working with plane and saw and adz, and long before he had dreamed of other work, his friends discovered in him the germs of those qualities for which he was afterward noted, and strongly advised him to make the law his profession. Yielding with some reluctance to the opinion of those whom he considered better able to judge than himself, in 1833, at the age of twenty-two, he began the study of law. He first studied in the office of John S. Chipman and finished the long term then required by the rules of this State in the office of Hand & Livingston, and was admitted to the bar in 1842. From that time on his career was an unbroken series of successes, so far as his personal work was concerned.

In 1840 Governor Seward appointed him surrogate of Essex county, and for four years he discharged the duties of that important office with rare skill and fidelity.

In 1840 he was elected to the Thirtieth Congress and there formed the friendship with Abraham Lincoln, which continued intimate and unbroken until Mr. Lincoln's death. Upon the adjournment of this Congress he returned to the practice of his profession and followed it closely until 1862, when the people of his district, without distinction of party, elected him to the Thirty-eighth Congress, and in 1864 re-elected him to the Thirty-ninth.

Of his position and work in Congress it has been well said: "He was never a prominent or obtrusive member. Diffident and cautious of speech, he never thrust himself upon the notice of the House, and indeed rarely rose to speak, but among those who could truly appreciate such qualities, his sterling good sense, his practical wisdom, his unerring tact in the management of both men and things, did not fail to stamp him as a man who, in many of the qualities that go furthest to constitute worth for the practical every day duties of life, he had on the floor of the House few equals and no superiors." The tact and power of management here mentioned made him for many years almost unopposed in the politics of his native county. And it may be truly said that no man who ever lived could more quickly or effectually convert a political



opponent into a personal friend and party follower. It is a well known fact that the voters of one of the towns of Essex county, a large majority of whom were opposed to him in politics, were so converted almost to a man by a single speech of his.

As a stump speaker, addressing an assembly of farmers and mechanics, he was simply inimitable. The wit and pathos that brought tears of laughter and of pity almost commingled, the homely but striking illustrations, always drawn from the life of the men he was addressing, and the deep pervading earnestness of everything he said, made his appeals well nigh irresistible.

But it was as an advocate before a jury that Mr. Kellogg was at his best. There, no matter how skillfully the opposing counsel had prepared and tried the case, he was often compelled to sit by and see both law and facts which he supposed invincible swept away by the jury's verdict after one of Mr. Kellogg's arguments. Lawyers who were greatly his superiors in all the niceties of legal lore and in the training and polish of the schools, were often amazed to find their firmest logic and finest rhetoric of no avail with the jury, as against his native power and ability to convince. His magnetic personality combined with an intuitive perception of the hidden springs and motives that impel men's conduct and thoughts, almost invariably enabled him to seize upon and express just the facts and illustrations which coincided with the half-formed ideas and purposes in the minds of the jury, and to lead them to give a verdict in favor of his client because they believed that the very ideas which he had shaped in their minds were original with themselves. To this end the whole manner and language of the man were all powerful. No word or fact was ever misapplied. If the jury were farmers, his thoughts were of the farm; if mechanics, of the shop. If the occasion was one with an amusing side, his wit was boundless; sometimes merciless, but never unkind or malignant. If the trial was one where life or reputation were at stake, the pathos of his argument, in its effect, never stopped short of tears with both jury and audience. If the case was one of driest facts, his statement would transform them into an argument as attractive as the page of romance. Through the whole gamut of human feeling its master; and it was a mastery which was, in its sweep and intensity, at times nothing less than the inspiration of genius.

But it was at the fireside and in the office, in the unrestricted flow of familiar conversation that one of the most charming phases of his character exhibited itself. This was his almost limitless good humor and kindness of heart and his exhaustless fund of anecdote. This latter characteristic was one strand in the bond which drew him so closely to the lamented Lincoln. At one time when the war of the Rebellion was at its fiercest, and dread uncertainty rested upon every loyal soul in the North, a friend of Mr. Kellogg was in Washington and visited him. One night after the House of Representative had adjourned at eleven o'clock, Mr. Kellogg said to his friend: "Now we will go

over and see the president." The friend wondered at such a suggestion at that time of night but accompanied him to the White House. The two were shown into the president's private office and the friend was introduced to him. As the friend relates what followed, from that time until half past three o'clock in the morning there was no cessation to the stories and jokes and laughter of the president and Mr. Kellogg. On parting the president remarked to the friend: "If it was not for Kellogg's stories I should get blue sometimes."

The scene described was one of frequent occurrence between these two men, who, each in his own way, struggled under the weight of the destinies of the nation and at night thus repaired the strain of the duties of the day. Upon the breaking out of the Rebellion Mr. Kellogg gave heart, time and family to the service of the Union. Many anxious days and nights, snatched from his duties in Congress, were spent by him with the army in trying to alleviate the sufferings of the soldiers from his congressional district. His work there is best epitomized in the title given him by the 118th New York Volunteers.

To Mr. Kellogg's kindness of heart and sympathy with suffering in every form there was no limit. In his practice of law his impulse was always to defend rather than to prosecute even a criminal.

In his character and work as a whole there seems to have been but one thing needed to make it complete; namely, that early training in the schools and intercourse with learned and refined minds, that would have removed his native brusqueness and made his mental vision broader and more just. But even it is questionable whether what was gained in refinement and humanity would not have been lost in vigor and originality.

Mr. Kellogg had, as above stated, been re-elected to Congress at the election in November, 1864, but died before the meeting of that Congress. His decease was somewhat sudden, having been ill but two or three days, and occurred August 24th, 1865.

His wife was the youngest daughter of Roger Hooker Woodruff, of Lewis, and survived him until February, 1884. Seven children survive them.

*Hon. Robert S. Hale.* — The lawyer, among those who have made Essex county their home, most widely known is perhaps Judge Hale.

Of his character and attainments no better general estimate can be made than that contained in the remarks of Regent Curtis upon the occasion of the memorial action of the Board of Regents of the State of New York. Mr. Curtis had known Judge Hale long and intimately, both in public and private life, and spoke most justly when he said of him: "He was one of the men whose vitality is so rich and sparkling, whose interests are so varied, and whose sympathies are so generous, that their death is like a sudden chill at midsummer. His alert and incisive intelligence, his quick and flashing intellectual grasp, his blithe courage and somewhat aggressive independence, with a certain lofty and amused disdain of whatever is mean, and narrow, and low, made him one of the most interesting of men."



Add to this his affluent humor, his mental training, his generous literary taste, finely cultivated, and his memory like a well-ordered arsenal, in which every weapon of every calibre is always standing in its place, brightly bur-nished and ready for instant use, and you have also one of the most fascin-ating of companions. No man enjoyed more than he the *gaudium certaminis*. What the poet makes Ulysses say of himself he could have said,

"I love to drink delight of battle with my peers."

He rode into every intellectual contest armed *cap-a-pie*. He struck no foul blow, and victor or vanquished he was still a knight without fear and without re-proach. He was a lawyer always busily engaged in the practice of his profession. But he had the high public spirit and patriotism which was natural to the grand-son of a captain of minute men who, within twenty-four hours of the news from Concord and Lexington, mustered his company of fifty-four men out of the one hundred and fifty-eight men of the village able to bear arms, and paraded them upon the village green, ready to march to the field. This blood of the minute man always beat in his veins. With the alacrity of patriotism he re-paired to every public post to which he was summoned, and there with entire devotion he did his duty. The courts of law in which he was distinguished; on the bench and at the bar; the Congress of the United States in which he fitly represented the pure character, the high intelligence and the simple republican manners of a great rural constituency; the national and international tribu-nals before which he successfully maintained the rights of citizens entrusted to him by the government; the community in which he lived beloved and re-spected of all men; the home consecrated by that holy tenderness of affection which is the chief glory and consolation of human life, all these lament our friend."

Robert Safford Hale was born in Chelsea, Vermont, September 24th, 1822. He was a graduate of the University of Vermont, in the class of 1842. After this he taught one year in the academy at Montpelier, Vermont; studied law a short time at Chelsea, then came to Elizabethtown, N. Y., and entered the office of Hon. Augustus C. Hand, where he completed his legal studies. He was admitted to the bar in January, 1847, and immediately after formed a partnership with Hon. Orlando Kellogg. In 1856 he was elected county judge and surrogate and held the office eight years. He was chosen a member of the Board of Regents of New York State, March 29th, 1859; and was an active and influential member until his death. In 1860 he was one of the presidential electors of New York who cast the vote of the State for Lincoln and Hamlin. In November, 1865 he was elected to the Thirty-ninth Congress to succeed Hon. Orlando Kellogg; and was again elected to the same position in 1873, and served in the Forty-third Congress. Of the distinguished ability and patriot-ism with which he served in that body, no adequate idea can be given without quoting largely from the records of the work of Congress during the time he









ROBERT S. HALE.





was a member. The best commentary upon the reputation which he established there is found in the professional engagements which resulted therefrom. In March, 1868, he was retained by Hon. Edwin M. Stanton as counsel in the controversies growing out of the appointment of General Lorenzo Thomas to be Secretary of War in place of Mr. Stanton. In the following month he was retained by the Treasury Department as counsel to contest the many claims which were being presented for captured and abandoned cotton. In August, 1871, he was retained by the State Department as attorney and counsel for the United States before the Mixed Commission on British and American Claims under article twelve of the treaty with Great Britain, known as the Treaty of Washington. Under this engagement Judge Hale was confronted with a great many complicated and delicate questions of international law; yet such was his ability and fidelity to the interests of his client, that out of ninety-six millions of dollars in claims presented and urged against the government, it was compelled to pay less than two millions. When it is considered that in the contest over these claims he was opposed to many of the most eminent lawyers in the land, and that the whole mass of claims was disposed of within two years, some estimate of Judge Hale's energy and capacity for work may be reached.

Upon the organization of the State Board of Commissioners of the State Survey in 1876, he was appointed one of its members, and acted in that capacity until his death. In 1870 he was a candidate supported for a seat in the new Court of Appeals, but defeated with his party. Upon the creation of the office of circuit judge of the United States in 1869, his name was earnestly urged upon President Grant for appointment to the second circuit by prominent men in the city of New York and by the almost unanimous voice of the leaders of his party in New York, Connecticut and Vermont, the States comprising the circuit; but Judge Lewis B. Woodruff received the appointment.

The last public effort of Judge Hale was to take part in a memorial service upon the death of President Garfield, September 26th, 1881. As he spoke of the high character of the martyred president and his own friendship with him, the scene was pathetic beyond words; as every listener felt that Judge Hale himself was already within the shadow of the valley of death, and his soulful eulogy of his dead friend seemed but a premature requiem for his own impending fate. His own death occurred December 14th, 1881, at his home in Elizabethtown.

In the thousand and one details that go to make up the character of a successful lawyer, those most noticeable in the work of Judge Hale were: Indefatigable industry in collecting facts, great sagacity and foresight in collating them, broad and comprehensive views of the legal principles applicable to them, and absolute fearlessness in the presentation of his client's cause. Added to these was a memory that was almost never at fault, either regarding a fact or the law. His knowledge of the statutory law of New York, after revisers had



exhausted their capacity to obscure it, was something extraordinary. He was seldom mistaken as to the existence or force of any statute. As a preceptor Judge Hale was unrivaled. He delighted in imparting knowledge, and there could be no mind so dull as to fail to comprehend his clear statements and wonderful illustrations of legal principles.

In all his professional work his acts were those of a master in the use of his favorite implement. Although the duties of life called him to other and different employments, yet the law and its practice was his joy and his ornament.

---

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### THE MEDICAL PROFESSION IN ESSEX COUNTY.<sup>1</sup>

Practicing Medicine in Early Days — Difficulties in the Way of Obtaining a Medical Education — Notes of Prominent Early Physicians — Essex County Medical Society — Lost Records — Organization — Delegates from Essex County to the State Medical Society — Prominent Early Members and their Delegates — Officers of the Society — Present Membership.

SETTLEMENT was commenced in the county of Essex as early as 1760, but progressed very slowly even up to 1812. This county was largely an unbroken wilderness and did not offer very promising inducements for physicians to settle here even in as late as 1820. We can only obtain very meagre accounts of the pioneer physicians that came here previous to that date and many of the towns along the lake at that time had to go to Vermont for a physician in case of any severe illness.

The facilities for obtaining a medical education at as early a day as 1800 were very poor. The State of New York had done very little to encourage medical science and there were no schools of medicine nearer than Boston or Philadelphia, that were worthy of the name, and very few young men could afford to go there to qualify themselves for a profession that offered but little pecuniary inducements; consequently the custom was for a young man who intended to follow that calling to enter the office of some old physician and read such books as were then extant for two or three years, and at the same time go with him and witness his methods of practice, and then find some vacant place and commence "*on his own hook*."

Among the names of physicians in the vicinity of Keeseville, in early times we hear of a Dr. Clark, Dr. Aaron Goodman and Dr. Samuel Weeks. The first physician of any distinction in Keeseville was Dr. B. Fox. He died there in 1842 of an epidemic erysipelas prevailing at that time. He was in the prime of life and highly respected by all that knew him. Dr. Fox was a very

---

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Dr. Safford E. Hale, of Elizabethtown, and Dr. Lyman Barton, of Willsborough.

devoted Christian gentleman and many of his patients claimed that his prayers did them more good than his medicines — and were much more pleasant to take.

Dr. Jacob Blaisdel died in Keeseville about 1868. He was a native of New Hampshire, received his education at Dartmouth Medical College, practiced a short time in Jay and removed to Keeseville about 1835, where he practiced his profession till attacked with cancer of the stomach, of which he died.

Dr. Adrian Weston died in Keeseville in 1882, aged seventy years. He commenced his practice in Keeseville and continued to follow his profession there till a short time before his death with the exception of a few years when he was in Glens Falls. Dr. Weston had a very large practice for a large part of his life and many ardent admirers.

Dr. Frank M. Hopkins,<sup>1</sup> born in Montgomery, Vt., on the 15th day of September, 1823, died at his home in Keeseville, November 16th, 1879, aged fifty-six years. Dr. Hopkins was the oldest of a family of three brothers and five sisters.

His early youth was passed at the home of his parents, where he was employed with the usual labors of farm life till his desire to obtain a better education than his own town afforded impelled him to attend the academy at Enosburgh and afterwards at Bakersfield, Vt.

At the time when he began to look forward to a fixed pursuit in life his attention was turned to the ministry, and if circumstances had been somewhat more favorable, he would doubtless have entered that profession; as it was he determined to study medicine, and in due time began to attend the lectures at the then flourishing Medical College at Woodstock, Vt., from whence he graduated in 1849. He began medical practice in Clintonville, N. Y., in June of that year and was married to Marietta Maynard, of Enosburgh, Vt., in the succeeding July. In the fall of 1853 he removed to Keeseville and continued his profession until by the partial failure of his health he was compelled to relinquish it for other pursuits. In 1861 he was elected school commissioner of Essex county and served the usual term of three years. From this time until 1871, when he resumed the practice of his profession in Keeseville, he was engaged as assistant assessor and medical examiner and agent for the Travelers and Equitable Insurance Companies. In 1873 he was appointed physician to Clinton prison, where he remained until 1876 when he returned to Keeseville and entered into business as a druggist. He was for many years identified with the Masonic order in this State and occupied a prominent position of honor and influence in connection therewith. When he was sixteen years of age he made a public profession of religion and united with the Congregational Church in Montgomery, from whence his connection was removed to the Pres-

<sup>1</sup> From an obituary published soon after Dr. Hopkins's death.



byterian Church of Keeseville in 1869. For many years he was the leader of the singing in church and was also superintendent of the Sabbath-school. His funeral was attended on the 19th of November by a large concourse of his fellow citizens and friends, who, with tearful evidence of their sorrow, gathered to lay down in the welcome grave the noble form which they had learned to respect and love through all his busy years. Dr. Hopkins died of Bright's disease caused by exposure at his brother's funeral.

Among the early doctors who settled in Essex the name of Dr. Dryden is remembered, but not much is known of him except that he died young. Drs. Mead and Shumway came to Essex about 1820 as near as can now be remembered by those living at that time. Dr. Abial Mead was from Middlebury, Vt., and studied for his profession in the Pennsylvania Institute, Philadelphia. He practiced his profession in Essex up to 1850, when he removed to St. Albans, Vt., where he died a few years after. He left no descendants in this county, although he had a large family of daughters and one son, consequently no very exact history can now be made out. The writer knew him very well as a neighboring physician and remembers him as a man of more than ordinary ability and as being distinguished especially as a surgeon.

Dr. Samuel Shumway came to Essex from Washington county, N. Y., where he was born, and practiced medicine there and in adjoining towns till within a few years of his death, aged eighty-four, which occurred in June, 1874, at Whitehall, at his daughter's where he had been living for a few years. His remains were brought to Essex for burial. Dr. Shumway had quite a wide reputation as a judicious and skillful physician, and was often called quite a distance to consult with his brethren in difficult cases. He was an active and useful member of the Essex County Medical Society and often represented that society as their delegate to the State Society, and in 1852 he was elected permanent member of the Medical Society of the State of New York. In 1845, when Dr. Shumway represented Essex county in the Legislature, the Medical Society of the State presented his name to the Regents of the University for the honorary degree of Doctor of Medicine, which was granted agreeably to request. Dr. Shumway held several offices of honor and trust in his town and also represented the county as member of the Legislature. Dr. Shumway for many years was an efficient member and deacon of the Presbyterian Church in Essex. He had three sons and one daughter. His oldest son was a young lawyer of much promise; after marriage with Judge Gould's daughter, of Essex, he was established in Chicago where he contracted malarial fever from the effects of which he died at his father's in Essex. His youngest son, Dr. Charles Shumway, after practicing a few years with his father, removed to Chicago about 1856 where he had a large practice, but was stricken with diabetes miletus, of which he died in 1884.

The following obituary was published in a county paper on the death of Dr. Dewey : —

“ Benjamin Waterman Dewey, M.D. — This honored physician died at his residence in Moriah, N. Y., on the evening of January 13th, 1873. He was a native of Lebanon, N.H., and was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1819. His professional studies were pursued at the medical school in Castleton, Vt. After acquiring his profession Dr. Dewey assumed the charge of the academy at Shoreham, Vt. Among his pupils was Senator Foot, who, in the days of his eminence, pleasantly remembered his old preceptor and sent him his portrait. The doctor had a year or two of professional practice in Putnam, N. Y., and then settled in Moriah. Thenceforward during forty-nine years he was continuously employed in healing the sick of the town and its vicinity. His wife — Harriet Cole — was connected with several of the conspicuous families of Connecticut. At the time of his death he was in his seventy-ninth year. Dr. Dewey had much acuteness of mind and accuracy of judgment. His independence was remarkable and was often exercised in the maintenance of his personal opinion against that of a whole council of his brethren.

“ It often proved that he was in the right. His sincerity was equally remarkable, and in speaking he was wont to express what he thought rather than that which another might be pleased to believe that he thought. The doctor was a devout man and a member of the Congregational Church. His prayers were memorable. They were most child-like and confidential, and they were uttered with a certain quaintness of style which was extremely enjoyable. Once to have heard him was to have something to remember for a life-time.” At a meeting of the Essex County Medical society held at Port Henry, October 14th, 1873, resolutions of respect and condolence were passed in honor of Dr. Dewey and a copy sent to his surviving daughter and one preserved in the archives of the society. Dr. Dewey had but two children, a son, a lawyer, who died in Chicago several years before his father's death, and a daughter now living in Moriah.

Doctor Isaac Hatch settled in Moriah about the same time that Dr. Dewey did, *i. e.* about 1824. He came there from Keene, N. H., studied his profession at Dartmouth Medical College.

He practiced his profession in Moriah till about the year 1835 and then removed back to Keene, N. H., where he died about two years after of typhoid fever. Dr. Hatch was a man of good-natured abilities, quick of apprehension, and would often arrive at a diagnosis of disease by a sort of intuition and was seldom mistaken in his conclusions. He had a large practice in Moriah and vicinity and his patrons regretted very much to have him leave.

Rollin E. Warner, M.D., was a native of Cornwall, Vt., born in the year 1826. He entered Middlebury College in 1845 and remained there for two years, when he left for want of means to continue his collegiate studies. He studied medicine under Doctor Porter, of Cornwall. He entered the Castleton Medical College, Vt., from which institution he graduated June 19th, 1850.



The following winter he taught school and practiced in the town of Addison, Vt. In the spring of 1851 he came to Port Henry, Essex county, and bought out Dr. Cheney (Dr. Cheney came to Port Henry from Addison, practiced there for two or three years and removed to Chicago where he died a few years after). Dr. Warner remained in Port Henry, having a large and lucrative practice till his death, which occurred on the 29th of June, 1883, aged fifty-three. Bright's disease was the cause of his early death. Dr. Warner left a wife and four children, three daughters and a son, Dr. C. B. Warner, who succeeded his father in the practice of medicine in Port Henry. Dr. Warner held a good many positions of trust, was postmaster for eight years, was a Free Mason, a man of sterling integrity, of good judgment and iron will; he was kind and charitable to the poor and the leading physician in that town up to his death.

Dr. William H. Richardson was born in Montpelier, Vt., received the degree of M.D. from Castleton Medical College of Vermont and practiced his profession for a short time in Winouski, Vt., and came to Westport, Essex county, N. Y., in 1857, where he died in March, 1880. Dr. Richardson was three times elected to the Legislature from Essex county, and when in the Legislature was elected permanent member of the Medical Society of the State. Dr. Richardson was physician to the county almshouse for some ten years. He left a wife and three children.

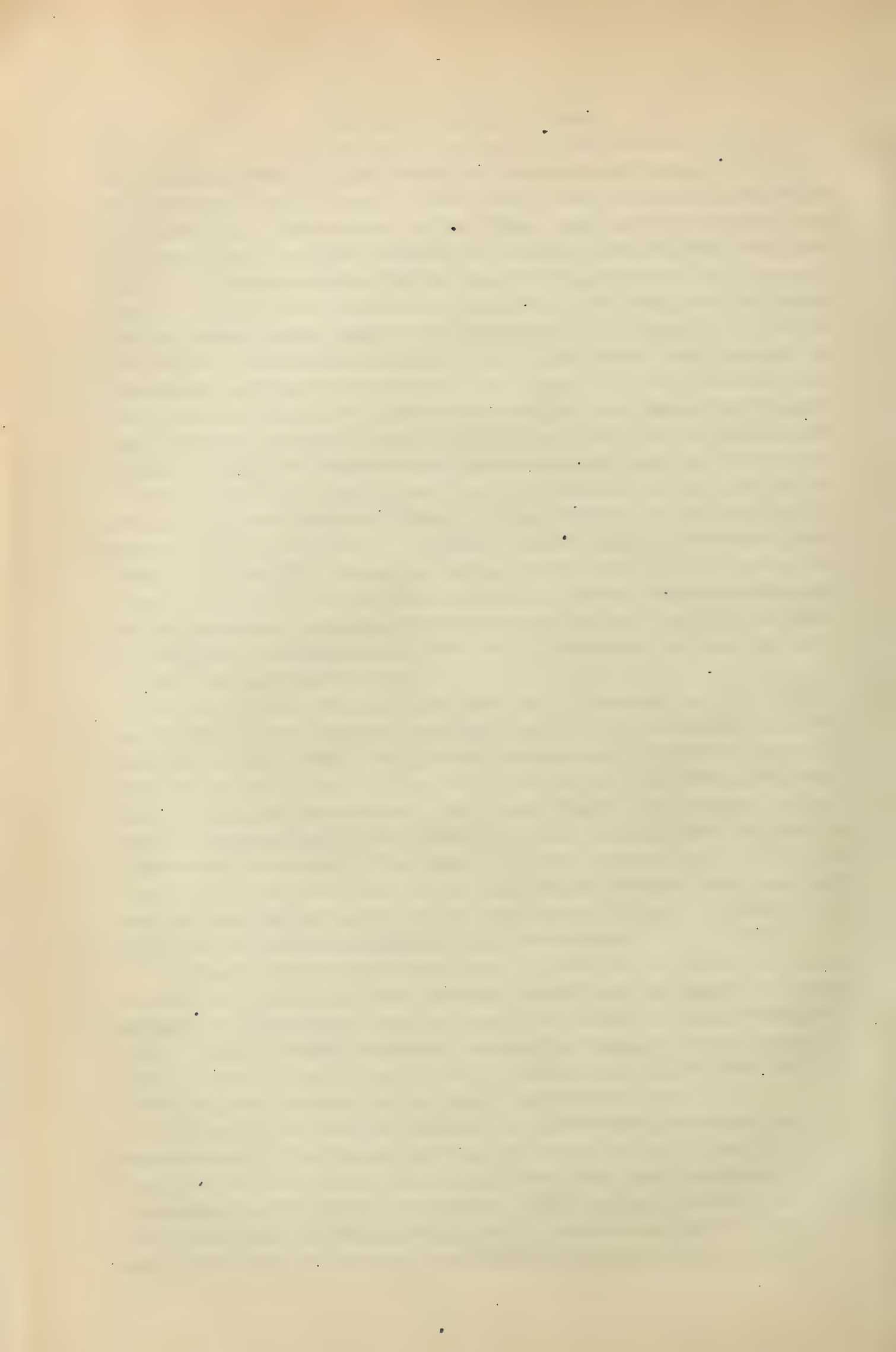
Among the early physicians that settled in Willsborough were Dr. Clemons and Dr. Towner, who still have descendants living in this town. Dr. Truman Towner was a man of considerable distinction as a physician in the early days of this town. He was born in Connecticut in 1758, died in Willsborough in 1832, aged seventy-two. Dr. Towner studied his profession in Connecticut, practiced medicine in Bridport, Vt., some ten years and then came to Essex county previous to 1800, where he had a laborious practice, riding on horseback, as the roads were not in condition for carriages, nor were such vehicles known here at that early day. Dr. Towner is kindly remembered by some of the old settlers that still remain in this vicinity.

Dr. Morris Smith from Vermont came to Willsborough about 1819, as near as can now be ascertained, and practiced here for some ten years; was much esteemed by all that knew him; he removed to Panton, Vt., retired from practice and took up farming and is said to have died suddenly while following the plow. After Dr. Smith there came to Willsborough Dr. Forsyth and Dr. Wheelock, who remained here for only a short time and left.

Dr. Levi Wilcox came into the town of Ticonderoga probably as early as the beginning of the century, and may be considered the pioneer physician here. He attained a large practice and about 1822, upon the advent of Dr. John Smith, the two formed a partnership. This continued, however, but three years, after which Dr. Wilcox continued his practice alone until his death. He was almost the sole reliance of the inhabitants for medical aid for nearly twen-









DR. JOHN SMITH.





ty-five years, and his practice was extensive for many years later. Dr. R. C. Wilcox, at present practicing in Ticonderoga, is a grandson of Dr. Levi Wilcox.

Dr. John Smith was born December 10th, 1794, and came to Ticonderoga from Shoreham, Vt., in 1822 or 1823, and formed a partnership with Dr. Levi Wilcox, the pioneer physician of the town. This partnership continued for three years, during the last one of which Dr. Smith was located at the Upper Falls. He there established a small drug store, which was subsequently removed by him to the Lower Village. Dr. Smith received his general education in the Newton Academy, at his native village of Shoreham, and pursued his medical studies in the institution at Middlebury, Vt. He secured a large practice at a time when the life of a physician was one calling for almost heroic qualities. His ride extended over a large extent of country and was made perforce on horseback; and a large share of the practice of physicians of those days was unremunerative. But prudence and economy were marked characteristics of Dr. Smith, and although proverbially considerate in his claims against the poor, he still was able to accumulate a competence. He secured and maintained a character for the most unflinching integrity and entirely won the respect of his townsmen. He was elected to several town offices; was superintendent of the poor for several years and supervisor in 1837-38. He died on the 23d of April, 1869. His venerable widow, at the age of ninety years, still lives in Ticonderoga and four children survive him.

*Essex County Medical Society.* — The Medical Society of the County of Essex was probably organized at an early day after the first organization of the State Medical Society, but unfortunately all the records of the society previous to the year 1859 are lost.

In 1806 an act was passed by the Legislature of the State, establishing county medical societies and a general State Medical Society, repealing former acts.

In 1813 this act, with subsequent amendments, was embodied in another act incorporating the several societies of the State and admitting subsequent incorporation of medical societies.

The Medical Society of the State was duly organized on the first Tuesday of February, 1807, by the election of officers and enacting certain by-laws, and then adjourned to the first Tuesday of February, 1808.

At the meeting in 1808 appears among the members the name of Alexander Morse, of Essex county.

In 1809 we again find the name of Dr. Alexander Morse as present and reading a dissertation on the topography, mineralogy and diseases of the county of Essex.

In 1814 Dr. Alexander Morse presented his credentials from the Essex County Medical Society, and was duly admitted as a delegate. This is the first mention found of the Essex County Medical Society. From that time



forward we find the County Society represented frequently in the State Society; and this is about all the record we are able to find of its existence.

Dr. Alexander Morse, who seems to have been an active man in the County Society, came to Elizabethtown from Dorset, Vt., in the year 1800, when the county was very young, and lived there until his death at the age of seventy-seven years.

Another active member of the society was Dr. Asa Post, of Elizabethtown, who came to the county from Saybrook, Conn., in 1803 and lived there until 1858, when he died at the age of ninety-two, a remarkable instance of longevity in a consumptive; for he has often told the writer that he was sent to the wilderness when a young man to cure his consumption.

Another instance of the salubrity of the climate was the case of Dr. Wm. Livingston, who came from Hebron, Washington county, to Lewis, Essex county, in 1817, where he lived until 1828, and then moved to Chautauqua county, returning to Lewis in 1842 and dying there in 1860, at the age of ninety-two.

In 1817 Dr. Joseph Gilbert was the delegate from Essex county to the State Society. Dr. Gilbert came from Brookfield, Mass., at an early day in the history of the county and settled in the west part of the town of Essex. He was a man of considerable importance in the medical fraternity of the region. He died about the year 1829.

In 1821 Dr. Diadrus Holcomb, of Westport, represented the County Society as its delegate in the State Society. He lived a long and useful life in Westport where he died leaving a large and respectable family.

These are all the names of delegates to the State Society found in the published transactions previous to 1840.

Some of the more prominent physicians of the county at that time were Dr. John Smith, of Ticonderoga, Dr. Henry Haile, of Crown Point; Drs. Shumway and Mead, of Essex; Dr. S. W. Ranney and Dr. Pollard, of Westport; Dr. Davey, of Moriah; and Dr. Alpheas Morse, an elder brother of Dr. Alexander, previously spoken of. He came to the west part of Essex about 1830, after the death of Dr. Gilbert, from Dorset, Vt. After spending a few years in Brookfield (as the west part of Essex was called), he moved to the town of Jay, where he practiced until his death at more than ninety years of age.

It was rather an unusual thing for three physicians to be living in adjoining towns at the same time all past ninety years of age, as was the case with Dr. Morse, of Jay, Dr. Livingston, of Lewis, and Dr. Post, of Elizabethtown.

After the passage by the Legislature in 1844 (?) of a law removing all restrictions from the practice of medicine, the Essex County Society languished and finally ceased to meet for a number of years.

In 1859 a number of physicians of the county thought it advisable to resuscitate the society, and Drs. Shumway and Hammond, of Essex, and Dr.

Barton, of Willsborough, called a meeting of physicians of the county at Essex, on the 13th of July, for the purpose of re-organizing the society. A respectable number were in attendance, and organized by appointing officers, adopting a constitution and by-laws and adjourned to meet at the court-house in Elizabethtown on the 22d of September.

At the adjourned meeting in September a large number of the physicians of the county were present, and the interest in the society was so manifest that it was resolved to hold a semi-annual meeting at Essex in the June following.

Dr. Shumway of Essex was elected president, and the other offices filled and able addresses made.

From this re-beginning the society has continued to flourish and prosper and a great share of the reputable physicians of the county have belonged to it.

In 1874 a new set of by-laws and with the code of the American Medical Association were adopted.

This remains still, with slight amendments, the law of the society.

The question of a code of ethics, which has for a few years so agitated the State Society, has been fully discussed in the County Society, and at the annual session in 1883, with a very full attendance of members, the following resolution was adopted (only three votes being cast against it):—

“*Resolved*, That the Essex County Medical Society disapprove the code of ethics adopted by the State Medical Society, and re-affirm their allegiance to the code of the American Medical Association.”

Officers of Essex County Medical Society from time of reorganization, in 1859:—

Year.	President.	Secretary.	Delegates.
1859.	Samuel Shumway,	F. H. Stevens,	
1860.	Samuel Shumway,	F. H. Stevens,	
1861-2.	Lyman Barton,	F. H. Stevens,	(S. M. S.) <sup>1</sup> F. M. Hopkins.
1863.	Lyman Barton,	F. H. Stevens,	
1864.	Samuel Shumway,	A. Pollard, <i>pro. tem.</i>	
1865.	Lyman Barton,	S. E. Hale,	
1866.	Lyman Barton,	S. E. Hale,	
1867.	Lyman Barton,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) S. E. Hale.
1868.	A. Pollard,	S. E. Hale,	
1869.	J. N. Oliver,	S. E. Hale,	
1870.	S. S. Holcomb,	S. E. Hale,	
1871.	E. F. Edgerly,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) E. D. Ferguson.
1872.	E. F. Edgerly,	S. E. Hale,	
1873.	E. D. Ferguson,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) C. E. Nichols.
1874.	E. D. Ferguson,	S. E. Hale,	
1875.	M. J. Moore,	S. E. Hale,	

<sup>1</sup> State Medical Society.



---

1876.	Conant Sawyer,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) E. F. Edgerly.
1877.	C. A. Hopper,	S. E. Hale,	
1878.	S. E. Hale,	M. H. Turner,	
1879.	E. T. Strong,	S. E. Hale,	
1880.	Warner Cleveland,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) C. Sawyer.
1881.	L. Barton,	S. E. Hale,	
1882.	A. Pollard,	S. E. Hale,	
1883.	E. F. Edgerly,	S. E. Hale,	
1884.	P. W. Barber,	S. E. Hale,	(S. M. S.) M. H. Turner.
1885.	Robert T. Saville,	S. E. Hale.	

## List of present members of the society : —

Date of admission.	Name.	Residence.	Time of graduation.	School of graduation.
1877.	Pliny W. Barber,	Westport.	1875.	Hosp. Coll. of Med., Ky.
1839.	Lyman Barton,	Willsborough.	1838.	Dartmouth.
1885.	Edgar S. Bullis,	Schroon Lake.	1884.	Iowa Coll. Phy. & Surg.
1875.	F. J. D'Avignon,	Ausable Forks.	1874.	Louisville Med. Coll.
1885.	Frank T. De Land,	Westport.	1883.	Albany Med. Coll.
1881.	Sam'l F. Dickinson,	Westport.	1845.	Berkshire Med. Coll., Mass.
1868.	Edward F. Edgerly,	Moriah Center,	1864.	Albany Med. Coll.
1885.	A. C. Grover,	Port Henry.	1866.	Albany Med. Coll.
1842.	Safford E. Hale,	Elizabethtown.	1841.	Dartmouth.
1874.	Chas. A. Hopper,	Port Henry.	1873.	University New York.
1883.	Edwin S. Howe,	Black Brook.	1880.	University Vermont.
1881.	Frank E. Kendal,	Low r Jay.	1880.	University New York.
1880.	Martin J. La Bell,	Lewis.	1879.	University Vermont.
1874.	Albinus J. Merrill,	Upper Jay.	1872.	University Vermont.
1840.	Joseph B. Murray,	Moriah.	1839.	Vermont Med. Coll.
1867.	John N. Oliver,	Ticonderoga.	1857.	University New York.
1868.	Dudley Palmer,	Schroon.	1867.	University Vermont.
1881.	Warren E. Pattison,	Westport.	1880.	University Vermont.
1839.	Abiathar Pollard,	Westport.	1836.	Castleton Med. Coll.
1883.	Hannibal W. Rand,	Keene.		
1882.	Ezra A. Robinson,	Jay.	1881.	University Vermont.
1881.	Rob't T. Saville,	Mineville.	1881.	University New York.
1868.	Conant Sawyer,	Ausable Forks.	1864.	Albany Med. Coll.
1871.	E. T. Strong,	Elizabethtown.	1869.	University Vermont.
1882.	Frank E. Sweatt,	Willsborough.	1881.	University Vermont.
1874.	Melvin H. Turner,	Hammondsville.	1874.	Albany Med. Coll.
1882.	Sam'l S. Wallian,	Bloomingtondale.	1861.	Philadelphia University.
1880.	Chas. B. Warner,	Port Henry.	1880.	Bellevue.
1881.	Joseph Warner,	Crown Point.	1853.	Castleton Med. Coll.

1884. Geo. E. Whipple, Elizabethtown. 1883. Albany Med. Coll.  
 1882. Rollin C. Wilcox, Ticonderoga. 1879. Licentiate.

Present officers of the Society: President, Robert T. Saville; vice-president, Charles B. Warner; secretary, S. E. Hale; treasurer, E. T. Strong.<sup>1</sup>

## CHAPTER XXV.

### THE COUNTY PRESS.

General Remarks — The Reveille, First Journal in County — The Essex Patriot — The Essex Republican — Keeseville Herald — Essex County Republican — Essex County Times — A Veteran Journalist — Elizabethtown Post — Ticonderoga Sentinel — Crown Point Budget — The Death Roll of Journalism.

ESSEX has not been prolific in newspapers. The somewhat remote situation of the county and particularly of many of the interior towns, with their sparse population and absence of large villages have operated against the establishment of public journals and also been the prime cause of the death of many papers from which their projectors expected some degree of fame and, undoubtedly, a similar degree of fortune. It is a very sterile and thinly populated district in this great country of ours where at least one man cannot be found who believes himself born to be a journalist; and nothing can ever dispel this prevalent belief but the hard lesson of experience. Hence the number of newspapers that have been started in the county, insignificant as it is when compared with those of many other localities, cannot be counted on one's fingers and toes; and those that have survived the struggle for existence have been and are a credit to the county, to their editors and proprietors, and have wielded a vast influence in the various communities and no little power in the politics of the State.

As is commonly the case, there are no copies of the first Essex county newspaper in existence, as far as we have learned. Too little attention is always paid by citizens to the preservation of newspaper files of local journals. No one appreciates this fact so fully as the local historian. The moment he starts out upon the quest for early facts and incidents he is met on every hand by obstacles so numerous and varied in character that the real marvel is that it is at all possible to accomplish creditable local historical work. But when complete files of papers published in the district in hand can be obtained, the task is shorn of half its difficulties; and no authority derived from people's memories can compare for reliability with that embodied in files of early news-

<sup>1</sup> Further brief records of the present physicians of the county will be found in the town histories in later pages.



papers ; they were made on the spot, if the expression may be permitted, and seldom went very much astray.

The *Reveille* was the stirring title of the first public journal of the county, and it was issued in Elizabethtown about the year 1810, by Luther Marsh. Beyond this meagre statement little is known of the paper, what was its success, the exact date of its birth or death ; it may be conjectured, however, that it passed from existence in its early youth, for we find the *Essex Patriot* published at the same place in 1817-18 by L. & O. Person. This paper was continued at Elizabethtown until 1820 or a little later, when it was removed to Essex, re-christened the *Essex Republican* and published about five years by Lewis Person ; it then passed into possession of W. N. Mitchell, in whose hands it suspended. The *Republican* was revived or started anew about 1822, by J. K. Averill and was continued by him and by Walton & Person until about 1830. Probably the next journal in the field was the *Keeseville Herald*, which was started at Keeseville in 1825, by F. P. Allen ; he was succeeded in the proprietorship by A. H. Allen, by whom the paper was continued, with some brief interruptions, until 1841. In the mean time the *Keeseville Argus* was begun at the same place by Adonijah Emmons, and continued five or six years.

In September, 1839, the *Essex County Republican* was established by Wendell Lansing, who still, after forty-five years of nearly continuous newspaper work, and at the age of seventy-eight years, stands at the helm of his journal. In the year 1843 he sold out his establishment to John C. Osburn ; the latter was succeeded by Milliken & Morgan, and a little later Mr. Morgan published the paper alone. Glen Tarbell then took the editorial chair and in 1854 turned the establishment over to Joseph W. Reynolds. He conducted it to about the beginning of the late war, when he died and N. C. Boynton took the establishment and conducted the business until 1867 when it was burned. In the mean time Mr. Lansing returned to Keeseville, having been engaged in farming operations for the benefit of his health, and started the *Northern Standard*, which he successfully conducted until 1860 ; at this time he entered the service of the country, selling his establishment to Mr. Reynolds before mentioned. Mr. Lansing returned to Plattsburg from the South to establish a paper there, which he continued four years, when, in compliance with the generally expressed desire of the people of Northern Essex, he returned to Keeseville and re-established the *Essex County Republican*, which he has continued to the present time, lately in connection with his son, A. W. Lansing. This journal has occupied a leading position among the representative country weeklies of the State and has wielded a large influence in State politics from the Republican side of the fence. Mr. Lansing is a native of Madison county and obtained his education at the local schools and the Cazenovia Academy. At the age of twenty-one years he entered a printing office in Greenwich, Wash-









R. W. LIVINGSTON.





ington county, and eight months later was conducting a paper. In 1839 he came to Keeseville, as stated. He was prominent in the anti-slavery movement and has always taken a radical stand in his party. He raised a company for the 77th Regiment of New York Volunteers and remained in the service until failing health forced him to withdraw. He is a vigorous writer and enjoys the esteem of the community.

In the year 1832 R. W. Livingston came to Elizabethtown from the town of Lewis and there established the *Essex County Times*. Three months later he sold his establishment to Cyrenius S. Newcomb, who conducted the paper fifteen months and failed. This paper was not a very pretentious affair and was printed on an old "Ramage" press. Mr. Livingston had arrived at the conclusion that the legal profession offered advantages not to be secured in the field of local journalism and began the study of law in the office of Judge Hand; he was admitted to the bar in 1837. He became a partner of the judge, continuing to 1842, when he permanently retired from the profession. In 1851 he established the *Elizabethtown Post*, using material upon which had been printed a paper in Westport. Mr. Livingston continued the *Post* until February, 1858. The paper passed into possession of A. C. H. Livingston in 1860, his father, R. W. Livingston, having raised a company in the 118th Regiment of Volunteers and went into active service with that heroic regiment. He was severely wounded and bears the scar of battle to-day in an almost helpless arm. A. C. H. Livingston continued the publication of the *Post* until 1871, when he sold out to John Liberty. He transferred the establishment to A. M. Lewis, and in January, 1879, Mr. Livingston bought it back and has continued the publication since, adding to its name, *Gazette*, having purchased the Port Henry paper of that name and incorporated it with the *Post*. It is now a bright country journal of democratic proclivities, and enjoys a liberal patronage.

Continuing the list of newspapers that are still living: The *Ticonderoga Sentinel* was established in 1873 (February), by Martin Tobin. It was a small sheet and continued three years and eight months, when it was sold to R. R. Stevenson. He continued it until August, 1883, having meanwhile enlarged it to an eight column paper and otherwise improved it. From August, 1883, J. E. Milholland published the paper, changing its form to quarto. In March, 1885, he sold the establishment to T. R. Knell, formerly principal of the Crown Point school. It is now a successful and ably edited journal.

There was no newspaper in Crown Point until the year 1878, when, on the 1st of January, R. W. Billett issued the first regular number (preceded by a prospectus number) of the *Crown Point Budget*. It was then the smallest of small newspapers and began its existence under very unpromising surroundings. Its proprietor was not a printer and his materials were very meagre; but he was something of a natural mechanic and he was bound to succeed, so



he did. The first issue was of eight pages but there were only two short columns to the page. The little journal was liberally supported from the outset, and in March after its first publication a column was added to each of the pages, but the number of pages was reduced to four. In October, 1877, it was again enlarged by two columns to each page. September 15th, 1880, the name was changed to the *Essex County Times and Budget*; the latter title was dropped in March, 1882. Another column was added to each page when the first change was made in the name and another when the second change was made in the title, making it now a handsome seven column sheet. The *Times* is Republican in politics and enjoys a large circulation.

The *Port Henry Herald* was started in 1873 by J. A. Morris, who was succeeded by Wm. H. Case, who conducted the paper from 1876 to 1882, when on the 25th of May, he transferred it to George W. Guy, the present proprietor. The *Herald* is a handsome seven column paper, and has always been quite ably edited.

During the establishment and growth of these several living journals, several have been brought into existence only to find early graves. Among them was the *Ausable River Gazette*, which was started at Keeseville in about the year 1847 by D. Turner; it was published five or six years.

The *Old Settler* was started at Keeseville by A. H. Allen in 1849, and subsequently removed to Saratoga Springs. A paper called the *Northern Gazette* was published a few years at Keeseville from 1851.

The *Mountain Echo* was published about five years at Ausable Forks by D. L. Hayes, and discontinued in 1883.

The *Berean Guide* was published one year in Essex, by Rev. M. Bailey.

The *Westport Herald and Essex County Advertiser* was started in Westport in 1845 by D. Turner. It did not live long; and in 1847 passed into possession of A. H. Allen, who changed its name to the *Westport Herald* and continued a few years. The *Essex County Times* was published at Westport for a time after 1851. The Westport material was sold to Mr. Livingston, of Elizabethtown, as above stated.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### FREE MASONRY IN ESSEX COUNTY.<sup>1</sup>

Age of the Local Order — Number of Lodges that have been Established in the County — First Lodge in the County — Officers — Other Lodges and Chapters.

THE institution of Free Masonry has been represented in the county from the early part of this century. It has been extended here, as elsewhere,

---

<sup>1</sup> This chapter was prepared by the Rev. Wm. R. Woodbridge, of Port Henry.

whenever a sufficient number of the brethren initiated in other places have been found ready and able to sustain a lodge, and have applied for a charter to the Grand Lodge of the State of New York. There have been fifteen lodges established, of which eight have ceased to exist, most of them having been closed during the strong anti-Masonic political excitement between 1830 and 1840. There have also been at least three chapters of Royal Arch Masons, of which one is extinct. Now there are seven lodges and two chapters. The first lodge established was *Essex Lodge No. 152* at Essex village, whose charter is dated February 14th, 1807. No records can be found but it seems to have existed as late as 1822.

In the same village *Iroquois Lodge No. 715* was chartered June 7th, 1862, with the following officers: James B. Ross, W. M.; Andrew J. Tucker, S. W.; and George Alexander, J. W. The successive Masters have been James B. Ross (two years), Franklin D. Bennett, Andrew J. Tucker (five years), John B. Cuyler (four years), and Charles J. Merriam (two years). Its present officers are Charles J. Merriam, W. M.; Wilber M. French, S. W.; and Orrin E. Hays, J. W. The meetings are on the first and third Tuesdays of the month. In 1885 there were fourteen members. Most of the original members of this lodge came from Sisco Lodge No. 259, which was then meeting at Whallonsburgh.

At Ticonderoga a number of brethren with the recommendation of Whitehall Social Lodge No. 145, petitioned the Grand Lodge in 1810 for a dispensation to organize as *Mt. Hope Lodge No. 254*, the following signing the petition: Peter King, W. M., Levi Wilcox, S. W., Ahira Griswold, J. W., Ebenezer Hopkins, Levi Thompson, M. D., Abel Potter, Thomas Hunter, Barnabas Moss. The officers were installed in August, 1810, by Rev. Salem Town.

After considerable delay a regular charter was granted them with sixteen members. Their meetings were held on the Monday before the full moon. In 1817 there were twenty-eight members, and in 1818 forty members, John Curtis being Master both years. In 1821 the lodge received permission to hold alternate meetings in Ticonderoga and Crown Point, because the members lived mostly at Schroon, Crown Point and Moriah. The last that can be learned of it is that the principal officers in 1831 were Horace Stowell, W. M.; James Nelson, S. W.; John W. Pickett, J. W.

A new charter was given June 7th, 1861, to *Old Ti. Lodge No. 503*, with the following officers: John Smith, W. M.; Curtis Allen, S. W.; D. S. Smith, J. W. The successive Masters were John Smith (two years), Curtis Allen, (two years), John Craig, Edmund Burt (three years), Clayton H. Delano (two years), James H. Bailey (two years), A. M. Pinchin (two years), Clayton E. Pond (two years). The charter was suspended February, 19th, 1878.

*Schroon Lake Lodge No. 436*, in the village of that name, seems to have been established in September 6th, 1815, on the recommendation of Essex



Lodge No. 152, with the following officers: Fred H. Stevens, W. M.; Hiram S. Potter, S. W.; Lucius S. Rawson, J. W. Its history is lost in obscurity until June 11th, 1858, when a new charter was granted. After this the successive Masters were Hiram S. Potter (three years), Lucius S. Rawson (nine years), James L. Leland (two years), Mason T. Burbank, Henry S. Haskell (three years), Dudley Palmer. The lodge was closed and the charter surrendered voluntarily December 22d, 1877, because its seventeen members were too far scattered to meet.

*Prester Lodge No. 268* at Jay village, on the recommendation of Essex Lodge No. 152, received a charter November 9th, 1816, with the following officers: Reuben Sanford, W. M.; Ahira Beach, S. W.; Allen Peck, J. W.; and eight other members. In 1818 there were twenty-four and in 1819 twenty-six members, with the same officers. In 1826 Samuel Cook, was Master with forty-two members and in 1828 William Otis, 2d, was Master with forty-six members, and no further record can be found.

*Valley Lodge No. 314*, at Elizabethtown received a charter September 6th, 1818 on the recommendation of Essex Lodge No. 152, signed by H. H. Ross as W. M. Its first officers were Ezra C. Gross, W. M.; Luman Wadhams, S. W.; John Barney, J. W.; and its other members were Theo. Ross, Jacob Day, Norman Newell, Augustus Noble, Hannibal C. Holden, Appleton Woodruff and Norman Nicholson. The meetings were held the second Monday of the month, in Mr. Mark's store below the bridge. In 1819 it reported twenty-six members with William Livingston as Master. No later record is found until 1830 when a great freshet carried away and destroyed all their property. The anti-Masonic excitement was very great in town at that time, but no member is known to have renounced his allegiance.

In the same town *Adirondack Lodge No. 602* was chartered July 6th, 1866 with the following officers: Dewitt Stafford, W. M.; Rowland C. Kellogg, S. W.; and Francis A. Smith, J. W., who with the other four members, A. C. H. Livingston, A. K. Dudley, G. S. Nicholson and S. C. Williams, had all come from Sisco Lodge No. 259, at Westport. The successive Masters have been Francis A. Smith, A. C. H. Livingston (four years), Rowland C. Kellogg (three years), John Liberty (two years), George S. Nicholson (three years), John W. Chandler (two years), Arod K. Dudley (three years). The present officers are Arod K. Dudley, W. M.; John Liberty, S. W.; Wm. H. Palmer, J. W. In 1885 there were seventy-seven members. The lodge meets on second and fourth Tuesdays of the month.

*Mt. Moriah Lodge No. 424*, in Moriah (Corners) was established under a dispensation from Grand Master Joseph Enos, February 3d, 1825, with the recommendation of Mt. Hope Lodge No. 254, to sixteen petitioners, including the following officers: Henry C. Day, W. M.; Buckley Olcott, S. W.; Nathan Sherman, J. W. Several meetings were held and degrees conferred, and

the installation of officers took place March 23d, 1826, when by vote of the lodge, "the installation discourse of Brother Stebbins" was published. The meetings were held on the Thursday at or preceding the full moon at 2 P. M. There is a record of their uniting to celebrate St. John's day June 24th, 1825, with Mt. Hope Lodge, at Ticonderoga, and June 24th, 1827 with Morning Sun Lodge of Bridport, Vt. It is noticeable that Bro. Alex. McKenzie, who was the first white child born in the town, was one of the petitioners for this lodge, became Junior Warden the next year and Senior Warden all the rest of its existence. He was a most enthusiastic Mason, and died November 19th, 1873, aged eighty-eight years, being then a member of Morning Sun Lodge No. 142, at Port Henry. Under the tremendous pressure of anti-Masonic excitement eight members of Mt. Moriah Lodge published a renunciation of Masonry September 28th, 1834, but one of them recanted and was received into membership at Port Henry in 1849. In 1835 the charter was forfeited and finally returned to the Grand Lodge in 1843. The largest number of members seems to have been thirty-two in 1827. The number initiated was twenty-two, one being a Baptist minister, Rev. Gershom Lane, and one a physician, Dr. Isaac Hatch. The successive Masters were Henry C. Day (three years), Josephus Cook (two years), and Buckley Olcott.

*Morning Sun Lodge No. 142* at Port Henry, was established under dispensation, August 17th, 1848, granted to thirteen petitioners (eight from the old Mt. Moriah Lodge No. 424), with the following officers: Chester Stephens, W. M.; Alex. McKenzie, S. W.; George H. Blinn, J. W. Its regular charter was dated June 12th, 1849, the officers being George H. Blinn, W. M.; Alex. McKenzie, S. W.; Jona. Tarbell, J. W., twenty-one other members being present at the first meeting under the charter. The other Masters have been Alex. McKenzie, John C. Douglass (eleven years), Lynde S. Conn, Ira C. Sprague, Dr. R. E. Warner, Milton McKenzie (three years), William F. Gookin (three years), Hosea B. Willard (four years), E. B. Hedding (three years), John W. Whitehead (three years), John S. Hicks, William R. Woodbridge (three years), and Dr. Charles A. Hopper (two years). There have been in all 283 members, of whom twenty-eight joined from other lodges and the rest were initiated in this lodge. The first place of meeting was in Pease's hotel, afterwards destroyed by fire. Next it met for many years in what was once the Academy building, afterwards Lewald's store, which was also burned, and the present Opera house built on its site. In 1861 the lodge removed to what is now called Sprague's hotel, and in 1872 it took possession of its present large and elegantly furnished hall in the McKenzie block. Three of its members have held offices in the Grand Lodge, viz., William F. Gookin, who was Deputy Grand Master for the Thirteenth District in 1877 and 1878, John W. Whitehead, who was assistant Grand Lecturer in 1882 and Deputy Grand Master for the 13th District in 1884-85, and Elijah B. Hedding, who was assistant Grand Lecturer



in 1880 and 1881. The present officers are Charles A. Hopper, W. M.; Andrew Tromblee, S. W.; Chester B. McLaughlin, J. W., and there are eighty-two active members. The meetings are held on the first and third Tuesday evenings of the month.

*Ausable River Lodge No. 149*, at Keeseville, was chartered June 20th, 1849, with the following officers: Ira Haywood, W. M.; Winslow C. Watson, S. W.; William H. Brockway, J. W. The successive Masters have been Ira Haywood (two years), Herman Garlick, Caleb D. Barton (two years), David Pitkin, George Miller, Oliver Keese, jr. (three years), Dr. Frank M. Hopkins (nine years), George C. Wilkinson (twelve years), Horace Tousley (two years), N. Culver Boynton (three years), and Frank C. Morey. For many years Dr. F. M. Hopkins held the office of assistant Grand Lecturer with great honor to himself and benefit to the fraternity. The present officers are George C. Wilkinson, W. M.; Willis G. Pope, S. W.; and Matthew A. Thomas, J. W. The present number of members is forty. The meetings are on the first and third Thursdays of the month. In 1885 fifty-six members of this lodge with six others united in forming a new lodge in their residence at Ausable Forks, which is chartered under date of June 4th, 1885, as *Tahawus Lodge No. 790*, their petition being approved by lodges at Malone, Plattsburg, Elizabethtown and Keeseville. But finding the best place for a lodge room on the Clinton county side of the Ausable river (which divides the village), this lodge now properly belongs in Clinton county. Its first officers are William J. Gillespie, W. M.; George A. Everest, S. W.; N. B. Slater, J. W. It was regularly constituted June 30th, 1885, by R. W. J. W. Whitehead, D. D. G. M.

*Sisco Lodge No. 259* at Westport (by recommendation of Morning Sun Lodge No. 142) was chartered June 13th, 1852, with the following officers: George H. Blinn, W. M.; John Bowers, S. W.; C. B. Hatch, J. W. From 1856 to 1870 the meetings were held at Whallonsburgh and then it returned to Westport where it had a good and well furnished hall which was destroyed by fire with all its contents August 15th, 1876. A new charter was granted June 7th, 1877. The dedication of their new hall September 26th, 1877, by R. W. G. M. Stillman, of Greenwich, N. Y., was a great event. It was attended by De Soto Commandery Knights Templar, of Plattsburg, Knights Templar from Burlington, Vt., accompanied by the Queen City Band, with many Masons from neighboring lodges and from Vermont. More than 3,000 people witnessed the ceremonies, and the ladies having relatives in Sisco Lodge provided bountiful refreshments for the 500 Masons present. The successive Masters have been George H. Blinn (three years), Asa P. Hammond (two years), Lewis Cady, John Burt, jr. (six years), Willett E. Rogers, Eli W. Rogers, Philetus D. Merriam (nine years), John J. Greeley (seven years), Nelson J. Gibbs, Henry I. Stone (two years). The present Master is Henry I. Stone. Its meetings are held on the first and third Saturdays of the month. Two hundred and ten

members have belonged to the lodge; twenty-five are actual members in 1885.

*Molang Lodge No. 370* at Crown Point was chartered July 2d, 1855, with the following officers: Leland L. Doolittle, W. M.; Darwin Rider, S. W.; Lemuel B. Treadway, J. W. The successive Masters have been L. L. Doolittle (six years), Chauncey Fenton (seven years), Hiram Buck (two years). In June, 1870, because of violation of the constitution, the Grand Lodge declared its charter forfeited. Some of its members with others united in forming *Rescue Lodge No. 772*, which was chartered June 17th, 1876, with the following officers: James D. Hardy, W. M.; James E. Pond, S. W.; James West, J. W. The other Masters have been James E. Pond (seven years), Levi B. Carlisle (two years), and Sylvanus Taylor Master in 1885, with Harvey D. Spicer as S. W., and Hyde R. Barnet, J. W. It has fifty-three members in 1885, meeting on the second and fourth Tuesdays of the month.

*Whiteface Mt. Lodge No. 789*, at Bloomingdale, has a charter dated June 4th, 1885. The first officers are Richard H. McIntyre, W. M.; W. S. Hough, S. W. and C. J. Stickney, J. W. It has twenty-eight members, meeting on the second and fourth Wednesdays of the month. It was formally constituted July 1st, 1885, by R. W. J. W. Whitehead, D. D. G. M.

Royal Arch Masonry in the county began, it would seem, with the establishment of *Westport Chapter No. 127*, at Westport, February 27th, 1827, with Joseph Cook, High Priest, Orris Pier, King and Calvin Willey, Scribe. After making reports to the Grand Chapter for two years it disappears from the records.

*Split Rock Chapter No. 243, R. A. M.*, was organized at Essex, June 7th, 1869, under dispensation from M. E. John W. Simons, Grand High Priest, and received a warrant in February, 1870, with the following officers: John Ross, High Priest, Franklin D. Bennett, King and William Hoskins, Scribe. The other High Priests have been as follows: Dr. Everard D. Ferguson, Anthony J. B. Ross, and Dwight E. Field. The number of companions in 1885 was twenty-one with Dwight E. Field, H. P.; David S. Hayward, K., and Henry R. Stower, S. In 1885 there are twenty-one members.

*Cedar Point Chapter No. 269, R. A. M.*, at Port Henry, received its warrant February 4th, 1874, with the following officers: Benjamin M. Beckwith, High Priest; Hosea B. Willard, King, and Albert Salmon, Scribe. The other High Priests have been Hosea B. Willard, Charles Satterly, John W. Whitehead and Andrew Tromblee. In 1885 there were thirty-two members with these officers: Andrew Tromblee, H. P.; Elijah B. Hedding, K., and Milton McKenzie, S.

There are no other secret societies known to be in the county at present. But the Sons of Temperance had several Divisions at one time (about 1850), one of which was *Boquet Division S. of T. No. 497*, at Elizabethtown, whose



charter is dated March 17th, 1849. It was broken up at the beginning of the war in 1861 and there was about the same time (1849) a Division at Port Henry, the records of which cannot be found. To both of these there was attached an organization of Cadets of Temperance for the boys. A lodge of Knights of Pythias was organized in Port Henry, January 1st, 1875, which disbanded after two years. Its name was Adirondack Lodge, No. 132, K. P.

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

THE territory within the limits of Essex county was originally a part of Albany county formed in 1683 and then embracing all the northeastern part of the State. Albany county was divided in 1772 and the northern section, embracing both sides of Lake Champlain, was organized into a new county and named Charlotte. In 1784 the name of Charlotte county was changed to Washington and the subsequent settlement of the Vermont controversy (1791) limited its territory in the Champlain Valley to the western side of the lake. In 1788 Clinton county was formed from Washington, and embraced the territory which now constitutes the counties of Essex, Clinton and the eastern portion of Franklin. This large county was divided into four towns, Champlain, Plattsburg, Crown Point and Willsborough; these towns were formed at the same time of the organization of Clinton county. Essex county was formed from Clinton on the 1st of March, 1799; its boundaries have not since been changed except the taking off of a corner in the formation of Franklin county in 1808. When Essex county was formed it comprised the town of Crown Point, as then constituted, and the greater part of Willsborough as then constituted; the latter town then embraced three of the present towns of Clinton county. Crown Point being, therefore, the oldest town in Essex county (aside from the portion of Willsborough just mentioned), we shall give it the first place in the succession of town histories, following with the others in chronological order as far as possible.

---

### HISTORY OF CROWN POINT.<sup>1</sup>

THE town of Crown Point was formed on the 23d of March, 1788, as a part of Clinton county, and received its name from the old French fortress situated on a point of land extending into the lake in the northeastern

---

<sup>1</sup> There are two opinions as to the derivation of this name, each, perhaps, equally entitled to respect. One is, that the important site received its name in honor of the Crown of the nation first occupying it; the other, that it was so called from the conspicuous position and prominence of the point.

corner of the town. In its original limits it embraced the present town of that name, with the present towns of Ticonderoga (taken off in 1804), Moriah (1808), Westport (from Elizabethtown 1815), Elizabethtown (1798), Schroon (1804), Minerva (from Schroon 1817), Newcomb (from Minerva and Moriah 1828), North Hudson (from Moriah 1848), and a part of Keene.

Crown Point lies upon the shore of Lake Champlain southeast of the center of the county. The central part of the town is broken, the hills gradually rising into the mountainous district in the western part. A strip of nearly level, highly cultivated and productive land extends along the lake shore. The principal stream is Putnam's creek which rises in the ponds among the mountains. In its course are numerous falls and it furnishes considerable water power at several points. The soil on the lake shore is a deep, rich, clayey loam; in the interior it is of a light character. The town abounds in rich iron ore and mining has been extensively developed. There are also beds of natural phosphate of lime, and graphite and colored marble are found in abundance and are profitably worked. About a mile and a half from the shore of the lake is a mineral spring.

The "Point," which gives the town its name and which has formed such a conspicuous landmark in the early history of the county,<sup>1</sup> is a beautiful and fertile peninsula formed by Bulwagga bay, which extends southward out of the lake, thus directing the head of the peninsula northward. In earlier pages of this work we have referred to the strong probability that previous to or early in the period of French occupation, a large and busy village stood upon this peninsula where to-day not even a hamlet exists. While the inference has not been clearly proven, we are warranted in the belief that previous to the French occupation the place had assumed considerable importance as a settlement and trading post between the French, English, Dutch and Indians; and it is known that an important traffic existed between the French and English possessions previous to the Revolution, the great highway for the transaction of which was Lake Champlain. In any event, it is certain that long anterior to the Revolution Crown Point was the site of a thriving village. This fact is revealed by evidences of a street extending from near the fort towards the mainland and sidewalks which still exist. Ruins of cellars on each side of this street are also visible, in such proximity to each other as to indicate close settlement; while the narrowness of the street strongly suggests similar avenues in ancient French-Canadian villages. Along the margin of the bay "the ground has," in the opinion of Mr. Watson, "been graded and formed into an artificial slope," and the shores improved for the landing of bateaux and canoes. Fragments of walls and fruit trees indicating inclosed gardens and orchards are still to be seen. Plum trees of varieties now rare except in Canada, still bear

---

<sup>1</sup> For a summary of military events in which Crown Point was directly or indirectly involved, see history of Ticonderoga immediately succeeding that of this town.



fruit from year to year. During the French occupation large tracts of land were cleared between Crown Point and Ticonderoga, which has since largely grown up with a second forest; and traces of buildings, of burial grounds (one near the garrison and one about three miles south), and other less prominent indications, point unmistakably to the conclusion that this region was once numerously populated. Mr. Watson has recorded the fact that "Nathan Beaman, the youthful guide of Ethan Allen, informed Mr. Sheldon that he recollected several stores transacting business at Crown Point previous to 1775." Rogers, the ranger, refers in his journal to the growing crops on the fields of Crown Point and to settlements on the east side of the lake,<sup>1</sup> here not much more than one-fourth of a mile wide, one of which was two miles from the fort, and speaks of the presence of "three hundred men, chiefly inhabitants of the adjacent villages." He also alludes to the firing of the village itself at Crown Point.

The ruins of the fortifications at Crown Point, as well as at Ticonderoga, still indicate their former strength and magnitude. At Crown Point indistinct landmarks are left of the original fortress of St. Frederic, while the remains of the magnificent works erected at so much expense by Amherst are in such a state of preservation that the fort might be restored in its original form. The form of the extensive stone barracks which enclosed the esplanade is distinguishable, although one side has been demolished and another partially removed, a desecration that was carried on for the purpose of transporting the building materials elsewhere. The walls of two of the barracks, 192 and 216 feet in length respectively, still stand bare, roofless, without floors, their beams charred by fire, mutely attesting their former greatness. The whole circuit, measuring along the line of the original ramparts, was a little less than half a mile. Around the ramparts was a broad ditch cut in the solid limestone, from which the massive barracks were constructed. A well was dug also in the solid rock within the inclosure to a depth of ninety feet, with a diameter of about fifteen feet. The interesting ruins of this historic fortress are now saved from further destruction by the purchase of the site of the ruins by the State. The Crown Point Iron Company owns the adjoining lands and holds a lease of the State's purchase, but the ruined fort cannot be further molested.

To-day portions of the cleared and improved tract on the "Point" which awaited the triumph of the Americans in the Revolution, are forest-covered again and give little outward indication to the casual observer, that cultivated crops and orchards smiled upon the producers more than a hundred years ago; that a thickly-settled community dwelt where now but a few isolated farm-houses stand, to be driven away and their possessions left to return to their original wildness by the devastating hand of war.

---

<sup>1</sup> Chimney Point on the eastern shore of the lake derives its name from the remains of habitations found there in early days.

The military and other history of this town has already been fully detailed in these pages — history that will forever present Crown Point as one of the most prominent landmarks in the continued struggles that ended only when freedom and independence were secured for America. With the end of the Revolutionary struggle emigration followed quickly in the wake of peace, and the Champlain Valley was among the first destined localities to feel its beneficent influence. The embarrassments caused by conflicting land claims were largely ended; Gilliland's colony to the north, although its fortunes as far as he was concerned were about to decline, had become numerous and prosperous; the natural attractiveness of the region could not be excelled, and therefore a hardy and industrious population came up from the northward or crossed the lake from the east and made permanent settlements which formed the foundation of the present prosperity of this and other towns.

The first town meeting of Crown Point was held in December, 1788. At that time, when a town often embraced more territory than now constitutes many counties, the local offices were filled by methods different from those that prevail at the present time. It was commonly admitted that the town officers should be appointed to the various prominent settlements. These localities held primary meetings at which persons were designated for the specified offices which the respective localities were entitled to. These nominations were sent to the general town meeting, where they were, as a rule, confirmed. The general election occupied three days. A half day from the first two days the polls were opened at four different points, and the third day at some central or more populous settlement. When a town was twenty or thirty miles in extent, this method facilitated the election and was, indeed, about the only one by which it could be hoped the people at large would be fully represented. In the little history of Crown Point published by Samuel S. Spaulding in 1873, he says, under date of 1806: "I remember well when the sheriff brought a ballot box and some votes to my father and told him that he was appointed, with Samuel Foot and Alexander McKenzie, to travel the regions of Crown Point all over and collect every legal vote that could be found in town, and to meet at McKenzie's on a set day and count them, etc. This was accordingly done, and forty-four votes were all that could be obtained."<sup>1</sup>

The settlers that came in, not only to this town but throughout the county, were almost wholly of New England origin. In this growing population was sufficient of the leaven of intelligence and morality to lay the foundations of the later high social standard of the various communities. At the same time there came in, as is always the case in new settlements, a large element of discord, dissipation and immorality of one kind or another. This element was increased and rendered more active through the baneful influences of the Revolutionary War, and the state of society was for a few years deplorable; there was little

---

<sup>1</sup> The loss of the town records by fire prevent our giving the first town officers and other details of the town organization.



restraints of government upon the naturally lawless and in too many cases, might was considered right. Of this state of society Mr. C. Fenton observed to Mr. Watson, as recorded in his work on this county, "When an individual wished to secure a piece of land, he erected upon it a cabin, and repelled others by physical force; if unsuccessful or absent, his cabin was prostrated, and the last aggressor took possession of the coveted premises and claimed the title. The parties with their partisans and a supply of whisky met on the soil and 'tried their wager of battle.' The victor maintained the possession." The venerable S. L. Herrick, now of Iowa, writing in 1883 of the town half a century previous, said: "I learned that there was a very good reason why there should be a lack of improvement on farms in some portions of the town. The right of soil could not be obtained. People bought and sold merely the possession. Large sections were owned by persons or their heirs in England, to whom the British government had given patents before the Revolution. Their claims were good and the possessors might be driven off at any moment. When the right of soil could finally be obtained, which was after 1830, there was more encouragement to make improvement by cultivation and building."<sup>1</sup>

To correct these evils an association was formed and a system adopted which required a person desiring to occupy a lot to perfect a survey of the premises and to file a transcript with the secretary of the society. The title thus established was held sacred for the purpose of that community.

Law courts were then of the most primitive character — more or less of a burlesque upon justice. They were held as a rule in taverns, the landlord often being the justice, and the numerous petty suits born of neighborhood wrangles of no consequence except to the disputants, and of very little to them, were more influential in bringing patronage to the bar-room of the justice than in promoting the welfare of the community.

This condition of society was not at all peculiar to this town, but prevailed throughout the county; and, as we have said, there was sufficient of a better element among the earlier settlers to rapidly turn the tide in favor of order and morality and blot out the influences of the war. Industry in the clearing of the forest-covered lands increased and with it grew a spirit of frugality that was soon apparent in all of the settlements; and the good work was advanced by the early establishment of schools and religious organizations.

The author just quoted (Mr. Herrick) says: "As I go back to 1826 and call up the faces of the people as pictured on the tablet of my memory, I see but little fault in any of them. As a whole the people were kind, generous, friendly and desirous of deserving and maintaining a respectable position in society. The exceptions were so few as to render them scarcely worthy of notice. The solitary hoodlum went about as a lonely wanderer, respected by no one and despised even by himself. Such are my present impressions."

---

<sup>1</sup> See history of town of Ticonderoga.

It is well known, however, that a very different social code existed in those early days relative to intemperance and the general use of spirits than prevails at the present time. Whisky was then almost universally used, not only by those without church organizations, but also by a large proportion of church members, and even in many cases by preachers themselves; and the habit was not looked upon as necessarily carrying with it that tinge of social disrespect now attaching to it. Few public occasions passed without being surrounded by the aroma of whisky; town meetings and public meetings of all kinds, "bees," as they were called, where neighbor assisted neighbor in some arduous task, "raisings" (even the raising of church frames), all were carried on amid the stimulus of ardent spirits. This state of social affairs could not but contribute to the general feeling of free license towards outlawry of one kind or another. But this general indulgence in a dangerous agent gradually passed away. Temperance organizations of various kinds sprang up and aided in the general reform. Mr. Herrick notes the announcements that Judge Murdock's only daughter would be married without the provision of wine on the occasion, and that Dr. Hale's barn would be raised without appeal to the "elevating" influence of whisky, as conspicuous events in the gradually growing determination of the community to consume less liquor.

Closely following upon the desolated farms and homes in the track of the Revolutionary War came the pioneers. The first judge of Clinton county (organized 1788) was Charles Platt, and William McAuley, so frequently mentioned in Gilliland's journal, was a side judge. Plattsburg was the county seat.

It is probable that there was but one road then leading northward from Ticonderoga to Split Rock, and that of the most primitive character. Previous to the year 1800 the interior of the town was but very little known to settlers, possibly not at all to any who subsequently located there. Hunters and trappers had reported a tract of excellent land for occupation about ten miles square and embracing Putnam's creek and its tributaries. West of this inviting section, it was said, rose the mountain peaks that overtopped the sources of the Hudson. When intelligence of the locality reached the New England States, men and their families who met for social intercourse discussed the advisability of migrating to the "promised land," just as in later years families in New York State consulted over plans of "going west." These discussions and consultations were the prime cause that started the pioneers of 1800 and subsequent years for the western shores of Lake Champlain, a number of whom found future homes in this town. One of the first to arrive was Stephen Spaulding (father of Samuel Spaulding mentioned on a preceding page). He lived in Salisbury, Vt., and caught the "New York fever," as it was termed. With several others he started in September, 1800, to make an exploration of the interior district of Crown Point. They purposed ascending every hill or mountain until they should find one that overtopped all the rest, whence they could,



like the great man of the Bible, see the land "flowing with milk and honey," and of which, unlike him, they could take possession. On the third day of their expedition, late in the afternoon, they were on the summit of Rhodes's Hill. From this eminence they obtained the fine view which they desired of the lands surrounding, with Lake Champlain and the hills of Vermont in the distance. Upon their return they pronounced the country, to use their own language, "splendid to behold."<sup>1</sup> They returned to Vermont the next day.

In June, 1801, Mr. Spaulding, in company with Abner Newton and Solomon Chase, returned to "the wilds of Crown Point," built a woods camp and worked together until they had cleared each a fallow of about three acres, when they again returned to their homes. In September they again crossed the lake to their clearings. By this time a few others had followed in the track of the pioneers and made similar clearings. All now united their labors, burned off their fallows and soon had each his log cabin ready for the reception of his family.

In the following February Mr. Spaulding moved his family, then consisting of himself, his wife and three children, the youngest, Samuel, being but two months old. From that time emigration to the town was quite continuous and rapid, and with the lapse of two years about forty families had located in the interior of the town. These lands had not then, as far as known to the settlers, been surveyed or claimed by any one. In 1805 William Cockburn and Goldsbrow (Goldsboro?) Bangor came from Kingston, Ulster county, laid claim to the lands, surveyed them and sold them to the settlers at prices ranging from three to four dollars per acre. Mr. Spaulding writes: "My father's lot proved to be No. 47 in Cockburn's patent, now (1873) owned by Edwin Floyd."

Among these first settlers were Israel Douglass, Abner Newton, Solomon Chase, John Eastman, John Sisson, Joseph Lockwood, Ephraim Towner, Daniel Bascom, Elisha Rhoades, Levi Rhoades, Wm. Barrows, Josiah Converse, Simon Hart, Abijah Nichols, Asa Nichols, Elder Lamson, Amos Lamson, Enos Lamson, Joseph Searles, John Chillis and Thomas Scott. During the same period the following families are named by Mr. Spaulding as having located in the eastern and central parts of the town: Robert Walker, Aaron Townsend, George and Alexander Trimble, the Barnetts, Murdocks and Brooks, James Morrow, Samuel Foot, Dennis Meagher, Andrew Hardy, the Heustis, Crossman, Bigelow, Drake, Davis, Rogers, Hildreth, Newell, Stanton, Strong and King families, John Renne, Elijah Grosvenor, Rodolphus Field (the first physician) and perhaps others. The point of settlement of many of these and others, will be given a little farther on.

Before the energetic labors of these men and their families forests were felled, lands cleared, buildings erected, mills built, shops started and schools and religious meetings established, and soon the new town began to take on the aspects of civilized happiness and prosperity.

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. SPAULDING's pamphlet.

Elisha Rhoades opened a small store — merely a little stock of household necessities—in the same room in which he lived, and supplied the pioneers as well as he could. At the same time he bought ashes from all who brought them, which he manufactured into potash and exchanged again for his goods. This was a very important source of revenue for pioneers in all parts of the country; indeed it was almost the only one at a time when it was nearly impossible to get cash from any quarter or for any article. The pioneers found little difficulty in hoarding large quantities of ashes, which they were forced to make in clearing their lands and they were always marketable, for the demand for potash was constant.

The first school, an institution that has always closely followed the settlement of pioneers in a new country, was opened about this time (1805 or '6), which was also kept in the same room where Mr. Rhoades had his store and his living accommodations, and was taught by his wife. She had five scholars, who were seated on the flat (would that we might also write the "soft") side of a pine slab in which were stuck pieces of round limbs for legs. That was the extent of the school furniture.

When it is known that many deer roam the forests of the Adirondacks at the present day, it will readily be conceived that, when the pioneers settled Crown Point and meat was not available except at the muzzle of the hunter's gun, many famous Nimrods dwelt among the settlers, while there were few who could not amply provide for their families in this respect. Mr. Spaulding mentions one of the "mighty hunters," named Comfort Towner, "whose name is still familiar to the oldest inhabitants." He made his home with Stephen Spaulding for a year or more, and he asserted that he killed the first year more than forty deer within a mile of Mr. Spaulding's clearing. Fish were plenty, also, Putnam's creek abounding with trout. Mr. Spaulding says: "My brother Miles, who was some five years my senior, would go with the neighboring boys and take me with them. We would go about a mile from our place in a southwest direction, by the aid of marked trees, to the high falls on Put's creek, now known as Penfield's grist-mill, and fish down stream as far as Rhoades's, the distance of about a mile, and would generally capture about thirty pounds of the speckled beauties, weighing from one-fourth to one and one-half pounds each."

The military spirit engendered by the Revolutionary War was still abroad, and the people of separate localities were annually (or oftener) called on for military duty in the form of drills and practice in the manual. In 1806 the inhabitants of Crown Point, with those of Schroon, Moriah and Ticonderoga, were called for this purpose. The entire force mustered numbered less than eighty men. They went through a crude drill exercise, marching about among the stumps and brush-heaps that still encumbered the fields.

Mr. Spaulding chronicles his memory (probably in the first decade of the



century) of riding with his parents from the top of "Amy Hill" to the lake, when there was but one house from that place to Hammond's Corners (Crown Point village), and not one from there to the lake; all a forest of pine until they neared the lake, when "the timber dwindled down to scrub oak bushes and small pines;" this was doubtless second growth timber.

Lake Champlain itself at that time could boast very little of its present activity. There were, perhaps, half a dozen small sloops and a few schooners, which sufficed for its entire commerce and not a "wharf or a ware-house from Essex to Whitehall."

As early as 1807 Elisha Rhoades built a tavern and dancing hall. It still stands at "Buck Hollow" and is known as "The Old Rookery." He finished the structure in time to dedicate it with a New Year's ball. A large party assembled, coming with ox teams or on foot, and the affair was a pronounced success. It was not exactly a modern dancing party in high society, but it sufficed just as well and was, doubtless, just as much enjoyed by the participants as are the more elaborate social events of modern days.

Almost the first necessity of the pioneer is milling facilities. The impulse given to a new community when it becomes known that grain can be ground and boards obtained near by home, can scarcely be comprehended. Therefore, it is not surprising that James Morrow, who must have been a man of enterprise, built a mill at Crown Point Center. He also established the first tavern and store there, both about the year 1800. In 1810 Allen Penfield, a young man of some means and a good deal of energy, built a grist and saw-mill at what is now Ironville. To his property there he made subsequent extensive additions and retained it until his death, when he had reached the venerable age of eighty-seven years. In the next year (1811) Ebenezer Hopkins built a saw and grist-mill a mile farther down the stream at Buck Hollow, as it is called. So it will be seen that the early settlers in this town were much better supplied with milling facilities than was often the case in new communities.

The people of this town were frequently agitated early in the troubles of 1812 and reports often reached them that a formidable force was on the way from Canada to devastate their homes. In September, 1814, an alarm came that stirred every heart in the town. It was in the evening, and the warning flew from house to house that the enemy were approaching and that every man who could bear arms must appear at the rendezvous the next morning. These orders were transmitted to all the settlements of the county. The gathering the next morning must have made an exciting and picturesque scene. Mr. Spaulding says: "Here were men and women of all ages and conditions, from the old frosty head of eighty winters down to the infant in its mother's arms. Here were men and women assembled together, all one common family and one common cause. Here was borrowing and lending of guns, hats, coats, boots

and money — anything to help or facilitate the march. One old man named McAuley, a cripple from birth, lent his hat and coat and offered to loan his crutches ! ”

It must, indeed, have been a motley army that started about ten o'clock for Plattsburg. For the next few days exciting rumors reached the town, and there was much anxiety. The battle was fought on Sunday, the 11th of September, and on the following Tuesday Captain Archibald Smith, of Whitehall, sailed his sloop up the lake and spread the news of the victory. Congratulations and general rejoicing succeeded, as the welcome intelligence spread over the town.

From this time on the “grizzled front of war” was not seen nor feared in Crown Point, and the inhabitants returned to their ill-paid avocations of clearing land, burning trees and making potash, or manufacturing during the winter seasons lumber, shingles, staves, brooms, baskets, etc., by the sale of which they could earn a little money or secure what was a good equivalent, household goods. Large quantities of maple sugar were made annually for many years after the settlement, and, according to Mr. Spaulding, tons of it were transported on men's backs to Vermont, where it found a market. In the same laudable desire to provide for their families and better their situations generally, many of the men made a practice for many years of going across to Vermont to help the farmers through their haying and harvesting.

About the year 1813 the inhabitants of the town derived some temporary benefit from what constituted one of the first commercial incidents on the lake. A considerable number of troops were stationed at Skenesborough (now Whitehall), and some fortunate individual conceived the idea of shipping the surplus products of the community to the encampment for sale to the soldiery. Samuel Renne then had a ferry across the lake here ; a scow was hired from him by a dozen or more of the inhabitants and loaded with a cargo of potatoes, onions, squashes, melons, butter, honey, etc. The contributors to the cargo all went along, so the crew was a large one, considering the size of the boat. Blankets were hoisted for sails, and before a good breeze this early commercial venture sailed away for Whitehall about the first of October. The cargo was sold out to good advantage and all returned in safety.<sup>1</sup>

At this point we will introduce the assessors' roll of the town for the year 1818, which undoubtedly gives the names of a large majority of those who permanently located here previous to that date. It is as follows, the spelling of the names being given as they appear on the records : —

---

<sup>1</sup> “One of the party named Seaver, who always admired a good horse, said on his return that ‘he had no idea they had such good horses in the Southern States until he went and saw them for himself!’ ” — SPAULDING'S Pamphlet. If this incident is true it only indicates the feeling of remoteness from large settlements entertained by the pioneers of Crown Point, with perhaps a little lack of geographic knowledge.



---

Jewit Armstrong,	Abijah Chilcott,	Alexander Griswoold,
Benjamin Allen,	Thomas Cummings,	Barney Hews,
George Adkins,	Justine Chapin,	Leonard Hildreth,
Abraham Amy,	Zebade Cooper,	Benjamin B. Hustice,
Rodman Austin	Calvin Chapman,	Timothy Huestice,
Levi Adams,	Abraham Chellis,	James Hildreth,
Seth Adkins,	Elijah Converse,	Stephen Hunter,
David Allen,	Jonas Cutter,	Ebenezer Hopkins,
John Amy,	Edmond B. Chapin,	Jeremiah Hildreth,
Obed Abbot,	John Chellis,	Wm. B. Hustice,
John Bigelow,	Josiah Converse,	Joshua Holden,
Eben Bigelow,	Amos Cole,	Joshua Holden,
Stephen Butterfield,	Amos Cram,	Jeremiah Jenks,
William L. Burrows,	Abraham Clark,	John King,
Daniel Brooks,	John Crossman,	Sylvester Kellog,
Simon Bradford,	Ira Crossman,	O. P. Kemp,
Daniel Bascom,	Elijah Crossman,	Stephen Lamson,
James H. Barnett,	John B. Catlin,	Wm. Livingstone,
Nathan Barrit,	James Dudey,	Jesse Lyon,
Joel Boyington,	David Drake,	Horace Lamson,
Asa W. Barnett,	Joseph Drake,	James Lewis,
Lewis L. Bennet,	Elijah Davis,	Ezekiel Lamson,
Israel Burdet,	John Dibble,	Elder Lamson,
Amos Bigelow,	Hammond Davis,	Henry G. Lane,
Levi Bigelow,	David Drake,	Joseph Lockwood,
John F. Bishop,	David Drake,	Berny Magowan,
Jonathan Brooks,	Horace Dunlap,	John Magennis,
Ethan Bouge,	Daniel R. Davis,	Samuel Murdock,
John Blackman,	Willard Davis,	Joseph Meritt,
Allen Breed,	Stephen Edmund,	Robert Makenzie,
George Balou,	Joseph Fuller,	Royal Munroe,
Reuben Barrit,	Thomas Farnsworth,	Susan McAlly,
Samuel Barrows,	Jesseniah Farewell,	Spaulding Miles,
Wilder Butterfield,	Samuel J. Foot,	Abner Maynard,
Jesse Burrows,	Franklin M. Foster,	Heman Maynard,
Moses Bartlet,	Aron Fuller,	Moses McIntyre,
Samuel Barker,	Samuel Foot,	Benjamin Morse,
Amos Chilcott,	Rodophus Field,	Andrew Nichols,
Charles Coburn,	John Gedding,	Wm. Newel,
Aaron Chapin,	Jonas B. Griswoold,	Wm. Nelson,
Justice Chapin,	Elijah Grosvenor,	Seth Newel,
John Chilcott,	Thomas Glidding,	Joshua Newel,

---

Asa Nichols,	John Rogers,	Thomas Scoot,
Zadock Nichols,	Elisha Rhoads,	Reuben Smith,
Amasa Nichols,	John Renne,	James Smith,
Aaron Nichols,	Wm. Russel,	Samuel Smith,
Rufus Nims,	Nehemiah Russel,	Thomas Turner,
Asa Nichols, 2d,	Henry Rowley,	Timothy Taft,
Albe Nichols,	Hiram Rowley,	Amos Thompson,
John Nichols,	Benjamin Reed,	Ephraim Towner,
Aaron Nichols (Sugar Hill)	P. Nathan Simond,	Aaron Townsend,
Israel Ober,	Royal Stowel,	C. A. Trimble,
Benjamin Ober,	Samuel Shattuck,	Harvey Tuttle,
Samuel Ober,	Benjamin Stratten,	Joseph Town,
John Ober,	Perly Seaver,	Ira Town,
Wm. Perkins,	John J. Sisson,	Silas Town,
Amaziah Phillips,	Benjamin Smith,	William Treadway,
Clark Phipin,	Asa Stowel,	James Walker,
Amos Pulcifer,	David Stowel,	Roswell Ward,
W. John Pickett,	Nathan Sprague,	E. Aaron Wheeler,
Reuben Phillips,	Joseph Searl,	Asa Wilcox,
Martin Quantemas,	John Sisson,	Phineas Wilcox,
Levi Rhoads,	Ephraim Sawyer,	Daniel Wilder,
George Reed,	Jabes Stratton,	Isaac Wilkins,
Daniel Rogers,	Isaac Scoot,	Thomas Witherbee.

---

The assessed valuation of the town was then \$81,155 on real estate, and \$20,062 on personal.

Of these men, according to the authority of Foster Breed, who came to the town in 1815 and is now one of the oldest residents, Jewit<sup>1</sup> Armstrong, George Adkins, Israel and Benjamin Ober, Josiah Converse, Amos Pulcifer, Jesse Lyon, Henry G. Lane, Timothy Taft, Moses McIntyre and Benjamin Reed lived in the western part of the town. John and Eben Bigalow, Joel Boyington, Nathan Sprague, and William Treadway lived in the "Upper Hollow" and immediate vicinity. James Walker, Benjamin and Timothy Huestis (the latter still living at about ninety years of age), Abraham Clark, Asa W. Barnett (of whom Foster Breed bought his farm), Samuel Shattuck and a few others located on "Sugar Hill." Daniel Brooks, on the "Vineyard road." John Chellis in the "white meeting-house" neighborhood. Asa and David Stowell, David Drake, Aaron Fuller, William and Nehemiah Russel, Alexander Griswold, located on the road from the lake to and along Bulwagga mountain and in that immediate vicinity. Seth and Joshua Newel located near the "white meeting-house." Heman Maynard, the Lamsons, and Reu-

---

<sup>1</sup> The spelling of these names is from the roll and is undoubtedly incorrect or at least different in some instances from that now followed.



ben Phillips, on the road leading to Port Henry. John and Abijah Chilcott, Samuel Murdock, and Thomas Turner on the lake road. Samuel Foote at Long Point, John and Ira Crossman on the south side of Sugar Hill, or between that eminence and the lake. Some others we have been unable to definitely locate.

General progress was the rule throughout the town until the year 1816, when the people were afflicted by what has ever since been known as "the cold summer." An event of that character might occur at the present day when the country is thickly settled and every community possesses the wealth necessary to bring to its doors by the aid of railroad and steamboat from distant localities, supplies of the necessities of life ample to tide over any transient famine; but in those days, when everybody was living, to use a homely phrase, "from hand to mouth;" when extreme scarcity of crops in one section was aggravated by the facts that there was little money in frontier communities with which to purchase in older towns, and inadequate means of transportation from distant points, then such a season as that of 1816 meant almost if not positive starvation to many who had little or nothing laid by for time of need.

That summer was a remarkable phenomenon and its like has not been experienced in this country since. The sun seemed to give out but little of its accustomed heat; ice formed in some localities in every month of the year; flurries of snow were frequent; in this town half an inch, or more, fell on the 8th day of June; crops could not grow and ripen, except in the most favored localities, and the people felt the necessity of saving for seed in the next season. When that time arrived, starvation was near the doors of many pioneers. It is at such times that the inborn natures of men come to the surface; and while there were many instances of the noblest unselfishness on the part of those who had food, towards those who had not, there were, on the other hand, many who refused the aid it was in their power to render, except upon the most exorbitant terms. If it is asked how the people lived; the answer is, that they depended on their limited number of cows, the fish and game of the streams and forests, and the wild berries. While extreme cases of suffering were not general or numerous, wide-spread want prevailed. An interesting instance of the privations and hardships of the time has been related by the late John Ober of this town, which Mr. Spaulding gives in his own language as follows:—

"I got completely up a stump. I heard that Col. Howe, of Shoreham, had some flour to sell, I took 96 lbs., of potash in a bag, and my father took 45 lbs., in another, and we started for Shoreham 12 miles distant, about sun rise, and when we got within about three miles of Col's., my father gave out, and I took his load in addition to my own, and carried it the rest of the way, we sold our potash, bought our flour and started for home again; I had the flour of two bushels of wheat, and ten pounds of coarse flour of my own, and father had what flour his potash came to, and we had not got more than half-way home,









Gen. Brainerd





before my father gave out again, then I took his load in addition to my own and carried it home, arriving after midnight. I tell you, the next day we were pretty tired and sore."

It was about this period that a young man left his home in Pittsford, Vt., for an extended business and prospecting tour in what was then the "far west;" but not finding in that section sufficiently attractive prospects to induce him to permanently locate there, he returned to his eastern home, which he reached in May, 1822. He had been as far west as St. Louis. This young man's name was Charles F. Hammond. He carried with him the following letter:—

"PITTSFORD, April 10th, 1817.

"*To whom it may concern* :—

"Mr. Charles F. Hammond, the bearer hereof, a son of Hon. Thomas Hammond, esquire, etc., of a very respectable family, in affluence in this town, who is about to journey into the State of New York and elsewhere, partly on account of his health, and with a view to establish himself in business corresponding with his taste, and having been bred with us and we being personally acquainted with his reputation, feel happy in commending him as a young gentleman of good moral character, possessing a good mind and disposition and of strict integrity and worthy of the attention of the virtuous and good part of the community, and to such we are happy to recommend him as deserving all encouragement, civility and attention that a young man of such reputation justly merits. Respectfully, we are,

"GORDON NEWELL,

"AMOS KELLOGG, Justice of the Peace.

"CALEB HENDEE, JR., " " "

"ANDREW LEACH, } Selectmen."

"ISAAC WHEATON, }

Charles F. Hammond and his future sons were destined to exercise a mighty influence upon the fortunes of Crown Point, whither he came soon after he returned from the West. Arriving here he hired out to Colonel Job L. Howe at one dollar per day to oversee the clearing of timber land and building a dam at "the Overshot." He first camped out in a shanty, but afterwards built a log house to live in. Colonel Howe employed about fifty men, keeping a small store from which he largely paid his help in goods. A good chopper was then content to work for sixty-two and one-half cents a day, and a man with an ox team was paid only one dollar a day. Yet cotton sheeting and calico cost thirty-seven and one-half cents a yard and other goods in proportion—a vivid contrast with the wages and prices of the present day. The consequences of the prevailing figures of those days were, the people cultivated simpler tastes; they wore less sheeting, calico and other goods.

Mr. Spaulding, whose reminiscences we have often quoted, worked for Colonel Howe on his dam and thus quaintly speaks of the enterprise: "We



sometimes thought the colonel rather steep in his prices, as he only had to go to Middlebury for his goods, but I suppose it was about as well as he could do by us; at any rate it was as well as we could do; there was no striking in those days for higher wages or better times, the men were glad to find a chance to work on almost any terms. It was my fortune at that time to drive an ox team for six weeks, drawing logs and timber for that dam; the colonel subsequently built several other mills which were supplied by this dam, which were in operation for several years, to his advantage and the commonwealth of Crown Point and vicinity."

The nearest road was three miles from them and they were obliged to back all of their provisions in there. When cold weather came on and the men could no longer work to advantage, Mr. Hammond returned to Pittsford declaring that he was through with Crown Point. Soon afterward he received an offer of a position as clerk in Colonel Howe's store. This store<sup>1</sup> stood near the present "Hammond Corners;" the young man accepted the offer.

Returning to Crown Point on the 4th of December, 1822, Mr. Hammond entered into co-partnership with Job L. Howe, Eleazer Harwood and Allen Penfield, under the firm name of C. F. Hammond & Co., for the purpose of carrying on mercantile business and for cutting and transporting lumber in the town. This was about the beginning of the active lumber trade in Crown Point. In October, 1822, Mr. Hammond's father had presented him with a farm of seventy acres in Pittsford, but he had only between \$300 and \$400 in cash when he formed the co-partnership. The combined nominal capital was \$9,000.

But there was that in the firm which was, perhaps, the very best substitute for money or land, persevering energy. The mill at the Overshot was finished and a small business begun in cutting lumber. From this grew up a great mercantile lumber and later an iron business, that for over fifty years has been the chief industry of the town and inured to its general prosperity to a degree that can scarcely be comprehended.

In a series of historical sketches written by a member of the Hammond family, he says of this period: "Before the days of railroads this section was exceptionally well situated as compared with the rest of northern New York. In a letter from his (Charles F. Hammond's) friend Judd, who lived at Massena, St. Lawrence county, dated 1832, we find the following: 'You know our local situation is such that we labor under many disadvantages.' And again, a few years later, 1838: 'I expected to have been at your place during the winter with a load of grass seed, but the disturbance in Canada<sup>2</sup> prevented my getting the seed.' Indeed, before the building of the Ogdensburg and Lake

---

<sup>1</sup> The old store building now forms a part of the dwelling of Norman Bly, near the Howe mill pond.

<sup>2</sup> The so-called Patriot war.

Champlain railroad the only outlet of that very large portion of the State was by Lake Champlain.<sup>1</sup>

“ Again, the dependence of another section which hardly ever visits Lake Champlain now for trade is shown by the following extract from a letter of Samuel Renne, who was at that time making a clearing in the heart of the Adirondacks :

“ ‘ LONG LAKE, June 17th, 1843.

“ ‘ I have one hand with me now, a full-blooded Indian, and a good chopper, works by the month — expect another just like him. I started for Crown Point last March with 446 pounds of trout, but a great snow storm came on so I could not get any further than Newcomb. We have not so much as one slice of pork, but we have trout and venison and venison and trout. We should like to swap a little for pork and no mistake.’

“ All the back country from Long Lake out came here for trade and barter. For some time everything seemed to be in favor of the new concern and their business increased very fast, and finally in their lumber business and buying of timber land, the company purchased property that afterwards proved very rich in iron ore. After a few years Mr. Hammond was joined by his younger brother, John C., and in September, 1828, the latter bought out Colonel Howe’s interest in the concern. Mr. Harwood died and in 1830 the other partners bought the interest of his heirs. The firm name then became Hammonds & Co., and there was no other change in its *personnel* until the death of John C. Hammond in January, 1858.” The firm and later that of J. & T. Hammond became one of the most prominent in the county, and did more to advance the general interests of this town than any other, as will sufficiently appear further on.

One of the chief obstacles to growth and general advancement in new communities is the lack of transportation to more populous centers. Crown Point was not exempt from this situation until the construction of the Champlain Canal (described in preceding chapter on internal improvements), which was opened from near Cohoes to Whitehall in 1823 ; it was begun in 1818. This improvement gave not only this town, but all of this northern region, water communication from Lake Champlain to the Hudson River and developed commercial activity on the lake to a wonderful degree. The surplus produce of the town found a convenient outlet and, what was of still greater importance, placed a prospective value upon the forests of the Adirondacks and the immense deposits of iron ore by which it had already become known they were underlaid. Explorations for desirable sites for the manufacture of lumber, iron, etc., were stimulated to renewed activity.

---

<sup>1</sup> The Champlain Canal was opened in 1823, as detailed in preceding pages, and immediately stimulated commerce of all kinds in northern New York and especially the lumber trade along the western shores of the lake.



In 1821 a prominent company was formed in this town for the prosecution of the lumber business in the mountains. It comprised the following named gentlemen: Deacon Allen Penfield, Deacon Phineas Wilcox, Deacon Ebenezer Hopkins and John Pressy, who was not a deacon. (He was a poor man in those days who could not sport at least one title, military, civil or otherwise.) They purchased a site and a quantity of pine lands on Paradox creek, at a point since known as the old Dudley mill. This point was then four miles in the forest depths. About a dozen men were employed, a site for the building was soon cleared, and in four weeks the hewn timbers were ready to "raise." Those "raisings" of olden times were events of no little importance and a source of unbounded enjoyment as well as good, practical work. As was the common custom a general invitation was sent to the inhabitants of the town and about forty assembled. The following quaint and graphic account of this raising is given in Mr. Spaulding's pamphlet, and will serve as an example of hundreds of other similar pioneer occurrences in the county: —

"They were elated with the thoughts of having something like business going on in their midst, where they could find employment near home at a specified time. About forty men turned out to raise that portion of the mill which was not finished the first day, consequently they must stay over night; well, there was enough to eat and drink; the reader must understand this occurred in days of yore, when bread was considered to be the staff of life, and whisky, life itself; when good fellows were plenty, but good templars rather scarce. The proprietors had furnished two or three large gallon jugs of whisky for the raising; it was understood that one was to be spared for the second day, the other was finished at a late hour the first night. The evening passed away pleasantly, each in turn telling stories, and singing such songs as were suitable on such an occasion, all then turned in for rest. The next morning found all on our feet, ready for a little whisky, but to our astonishment the jug was gone, whisky and all; some one had stolen and carried it away; here was a great dilemma and long faces by the dozen, everything as silent as the tomb, except the birds in the trees, which seemed to raise their notes higher than ever, and rejoice at our calamity; I suppose it was because they had no use for whisky. Still no one knew anything about the lost jug, but from some unmistakable signs suspicion rested on one of our number by the name of Parker, an old soldier; who was told very promptly to produce the jug or take the beach wythe; so he provided himself with a forked stick or mineral rod used in searching for minerals, and after lining and cross lining for some time the spot was centered and the jug found; here we were, every man, deacons and all, following the old soldier around searching in every nook for the lost treasure. There was another change, the whole company vociferously shouting, which was answered by the owls, every face as bright as the rising sun."

Samuel Buck and Abel Bailey came into the town early and began exten-

sive lumbering operations. Mr. Bailey was son-in-law of Mr. Buck and the firm became Buck & Bailey. They bought large tracts of pine lands, built mills, and for about ten years manufactured and shipped large quantities. Hiram and Helon Buck became the owners of the property and subsequently sold out to engage in other business. Mr. Helon Buck still lives in the town.

Other individuals and firms who early engaged in lumbering in this town were Allen Breed, Ephraim Towner, M. & S. Spaulding, Wright & Pond, Wm. & H. Phelps, Jonathan Breed, and Messrs. Rhoades, Stratton and Brown, Penfield & Taft.

*The Iron Interest.*— Charles F. Hammond was the leading spirit in discovering and developing the iron interest of this town. He foresaw, apparently from the outset, its importance and the possibilities of turning it to profitable account. The writer of the sketches already alluded to says in quoting Mr. Hammond's own words: "I had analyses made of the ore and had it worked in a forge and the iron rolled into round and band iron, and also into nails and tested by the Peru Iron Company at Clintonville. Some of the bar iron I had made at Penfield's and some at Vergennes, Vt., where there were forges at the time. The foreman and his workmen at Clintonville said when rolling it that they never saw iron that would roll into thin 4d plate for 4d nails without cracks or fractures on the edge, before this; that their Peru iron was called the best, but it would not stand the test for strength and toughness by the side of mine. I then got out about twenty tons of the ore at great expense and trouble for the want of a road, being obliged to use oxen on a wood-shod sled to haul it to the Wooster place on bare ground, and from there I drew it to the wharf on a wagon. I shipped it to Greenbush and took it from there by rail to Stockbridge, Mass. It was there worked in a small charcoal furnace, yielding a very fine quality of pig iron. During all of the time John C. stood aloof and would not say anything in favor of what I was doing and not much against it, and finally came into the arrangement to build a furnace in 1845, after I had found and engaged a man to join us that had experience in building and running furnaces."

Such is Mr. Hammond's own account of his persevering determination to learn all there was to learn of the Crown Point iron ore and the first steps towards its manufacture. The man who joined the Messrs. Hammond to build the furnace, was Jonas Tower. His experience was ample for the undertaking. In the fall of 1844 C. F. Hammond, Mr. Tower and Allen Penfield went to locate the site for the furnace, and a tree was felled across the site of what is now known as the site of the "old furnace," and thus the clearing was begun.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Spaulding says: "The old iron company's ore bed was first discovered by Timothy P. Hunter in 1821, while hunting for bees; he brought some small specimens from the bed in his pocket, which he exhibited to his friends who kept it secret for about two years, at length it leaked out, and the location was generally known; it never benefited Mr. Hunter, he lived and died a poor man. Miles



The first "Crown Point Iron Company" was organized and embraced C. F. Hammond, John C. Hammond, Allen Penfield and Jonas Tower. Preparations for building the furnace were made in 1845 and it was finished and the first iron turned out by January 1st, 1846. The iron produced immediately took the highest rank. It was made exclusively from the "Hammond ore," and the first steel made in this country under the Bessemer patents was made from this iron.<sup>2</sup> In the fall of 1852 Mr. Tower sold his interest in the company to Wm. H. Dyke and E. S. Bogue. He subsequently went to Ironton, Wis., where he died. The company continued in existence until the organization of the second one of the same name which will be noticed further on.

What were known as the Irondale (Ironville) Iron Works had their beginning at what is now known as Ironville about 1828, where Penfield & Harwood (Allen Penfield and Mr. Harwood, father of A. P. H.) built a forge. The ore was taken from what is, or was known as the Penfield Bed.<sup>3</sup> This entire property finally passed to J. & T. Hammond and is now owned by the Crown Point Iron Company. The iron made by Penfield & Harwood had an excellent reputation. Mr. Spaulding is authority for the statement that, owing to the excellent quality of this iron, the government in 1829 gave the company an order for a large quantity for use in making cables for the navy.

Samuel Renne discovered in 1818 what was later known as the Saxe bed in the central part of the town. He opened it about 1822 and it was afterwards worked by Jacob Saxe. The ore was mixed with other ore and worked to good advantage; but it was abandoned a number of years ago. John Renne had a small forge, the first in the town, near Crown Point Center in 1823. The ore worked by him came principally from the Cheever bed, in Moriah, with a little from the bed opened by Samuel Renne, until the discovery of the Penfield bed, after which he used that ore. All of these beds and the entire iron industry of the town is now controlled by the Crown Point Iron Company.

We have spoken of the "old furnace," referring thereby to the first one built by the original company. This was burned down in 1863, but was immediately rebuilt and operated successfully until 1870.

The brick store at Crown Point (Hammond's Corners) was built by the Messrs. Hammond in 1827, and in 1833 the brick portion of the Crown Point

---

Spaulding and Otis Bradford were the first men that opened said bed, and took therefrom some eight or ten hundred pounds of ore, which they carried in bags on their backs through the wilderness over one mile to a road where a team could be had, which hauled it to Ticonderoga where it was tested and pronounced genuine; but through the treachery of some of their confidentials, their chance of fortune was lost and also their labor."

<sup>2</sup> This steel was used in building Captain Ericsson's first monitor which encountered the rebel iron clad *Merrimac*, in 1862.

<sup>3</sup> This bed "was discovered in 1826, by a boy named R. L. Cram, while hunting, by his taking hold of a small bush to help him up the mountain; the bush was detached from the rock and there lay the shining ore. He carried specimens to his father, who owned the land. He opened the bed and subsequently sold it to Penfield & Taft." — SPAULDING'S Pamphlet.









GEN. JOHN HAMMOND.





House was erected by them for use as a boarding-house for their numerous employees. On the corner where Chas. F. Hammond lived stood, in very early days, a tavern which was kept about 1816 by a Widow Willcox. It stood out near to the street. This corner was subsequently bought by Mr. Hammond, the building moved away to later become the dwelling of C. L. Hammond, and the brick mansion erected.

Chas. F. Hammond died December 12th, 1873, the immediate cause being the shock of the death of his son Thomas, wife and children on the ill-fated steamer *Ville du Havre*, which went to the bottom of the Atlantic November 22d, 1873. His widow died August 28th, 1882. Of their ten children but three are living, General John Hammond and two daughters.

General John Hammond was born in 1827. When the Rebellion broke out he raised Company H, Fifth Cavalry and in the service soon rose to the command of the brigade. He was largely instrumental in the formation of the Crown Point Iron Company, and in advancing the railroad facilities of the town. He was president of the Iron Company from its formation until a recent date. He was elected to the Forty-sixth and Forty-seventh Congresses and declined a re-election. He now enjoys the unqualified respect and confidence of the people of his entire county. His ancestry were distinguished in connection with the early military history of the country. His grandfather was Thomas Hammond, who was an attendant upon an officer in the Revolutionary army and was present at the execution of Major Andre. His great grandfather was Daniel Hammond, who participated in the old French and English War, and was for a time stationed at Crown Point and Ticonderoga.

*The Crown Point Iron Company.* — The second organization under this name was effected in October, 1872, under "an act to authorize the formation of corporations for manufacturing, mining, mechanical or chemical purposes." The capital stock was \$500,000 in 5,000 shares. The first board of trustees was as follows: —

Thomas Dickson, Scranton, Pa.; George Talbot Olyphant, of the city of New York; John Hammond, of Crown Point, N. Y.; Thomas Hammond, of Crown Point, N. Y.; and Smith M. Weed, of Plattsburg, N. Y.

The 5,000 shares of stock were distributed as follows: —

John Hammond, 1,250; Thomas Hammond, 1,250; George T. Olyphant, 1,200; Thomas Dickson, 1,200; S. M. Weed, 100.

In November, 1872, the stock of the company was increased to \$1,200,000 and in September, 1873, to \$1,500,000. The present officers of the company are as follows: L. G. B. Cannon, president; H. M. Olmstead, secretary and treasurer; A. L. Inman, general manager; H. L. Reed, assistant general manager. Following are the names of the superintendents of the various departments of the company's works: Furnaces, W. S. Green; mines, Thomas Montague; railroad, James McMann; forge, James W. Stower; machine shop, C. W. Sanders; mines store, Theo. H. Locke; lake store, F. H. Pierce.



The company's forge of eight fires is located at Ironville (formerly Irondale) on the line of their narrow gauge railroad and midway between the blast furnace (which is on the lake shore) and the mines at Hammondville. The product of the blast furnaces is known as Bessemer pig iron, and is used to a great extent in Troy, N. Y., and Scranton, Pa. At the forge the product comprises blooms and billets. The iron turned out by the company is not excelled for the manufacture of Bessemer steel in this country. The capacity of the two furnaces may be roughly set down at one hundred and fifteen tons per day of pig iron. The capacity of the mines at present is 75,000 tons annually. The works and the mines are not now running to their full capacity on account of the general depressed condition of the iron industry. The old Penfield bed is about exhausted, but prospecting and exploration has been constantly continued in the vicinity and new deposits discovered, which may be said to be practically inexhaustible.

In addition to its many other benefits to the town it has built a church and school-room at Hammondville at a cost of about \$3,000, which was donated to the employees about the mines.

The railroad forming a connection with the main line along the lake and running to Hammondville was begun in the fall of 1872. It forms a part of the property of the Iron Company.

The point of land from which the name of the town is derived, exclusive of the ruins of the fort as before explained, is also owned by this company, who purchased it chiefly for the valuable stone which are quarried there.

As the lumber interest became less profitable in the town and particularly as the land already cleared became more productive and easier of cultivation, the inhabitants turned their attention more and more to agriculture. A decided change in this respect is noticeable from about the year 1830 and a little later. The farmers found occupation winters in hauling lumber or ore which added in a substantial manner to their incomes. Thus, as Mr. Spaulding puts it, "Vermont lost her Algerines." The town at the present time is, in an agricultural sense, one of the foremost of the county, and her dairy products, which are considerable, stand well in the markets.

As the lands were cleared and the inhabitants became more prosperous, the rude log houses gave way to the neat frame cottages and many of these in turn to more pretentious and valuable houses.

The people of the town needed railroad communication, and it is a peculiarity of American communities that when two or more of them desire railroad connection with each other, or with more distant points, the men and means are forthcoming for their construction.

The Whitehall and Plattsburg railroad was surveyed in 1861 and work was begun on it in this town on the 20th of February, 1869. In addition to aid received from the State and the bonds of other towns, Crown Point bonded her-

self for \$50,000. This action was opposed by many good citizens who felt that the town was still sufficiently burdened with the then recent war expenses ; but a majority favored the enterprise and it was carried through. The section from Ticonderoga to Port Henry was completed within two years from its commencement. In 1871 it appeared impossible to extend the road farther without other aid and it was, therefore, leased to the Vermont Central Company. The lake was bridged at Ticonderoga and a line built from there (Addison Junction) to the Vermont Central's main line. The New York and Canada railroad was surveyed in 1871, but as its line was to run almost parallel with the Whitehall and Plattsburg road from Ticonderoga to Port Henry, the former company bought the lease and a consolidation was effected by an act of the Legislature in 1873.

The following named citizens of this town contributed the sums stated towards the building of the first railroad: Chas. F. Hammond & Sons, \$12,500; E. S. Bogue, \$3,000; Penfield & Harwood, \$2,000; C. P. Fobes & Co., \$1,000; J. C. Breevoort, \$500; Crown Point Iron Company, \$1,000.

As the reader of this work has already learned in the pages devoted to the military history of the county, the town of Crown Point was not deaf to the call of the country in her time of trial. The leading men of the town gave up their time, their money and their personal service in the field with a degree of patriotism and generous liberality not excelled in any locality in the surrounding country; and the town officials in various public meetings seconded the action of the Board of Supervisors in the payment of bounties sufficiently large to induce prompt enlistments to fill the quotas under the various calls of the president for volunteers. The widows and children of those who fell on the battle-field were not forgotten, the town records show that those who remained at home were ready to share the burdens of the great struggle. Of the 650 voters then in the town, 290 enlisted and sixty-seven laid down their lives for their country. The reader is referred to the military chapter in preceding pages for details of the subject.

The early records of this town have been destroyed, depriving us of a valuable source of historical matter and the records of early town meetings and officers. We are, however, enabled to give the list of supervisors from 1818 as follows: 1818 to 1821 inclusive, Samuel Murdock; 1822, Samuel Renne; 1823 to 1825 inclusive, Samuel Murdock; 1826, Chas. F. Hammond; 1827, Amasa B. Gibson; 1828, C. F. Hammond; 1829, Amasa B. Gibson; 1830, C. F. Hammond; 1831, Chilion A. Trimble; 1832, C. F. Hammond; 1833-34, Chilion A. Trimble; 1835, John C. Hammond; 1836-37, George Brown; 1838, Chilion A. Trimble; 1839, Juba Howe; 1840, Henry Haile; 1841, Juba Howe; 1842-43, George Trimble; 1844-45, John C. Hammond; 1846, John B. Goodrich; 1847-48, John B. Brooks; 1849-50, Wm. H. Dyke; 1851-52, Samuel Russell; 1853 to 1856 inclusive, John C. Hammond; 1857-58,



Levi Rhoades; 1859, James F. Moore; 1860 to 1873 inclusive, Julius C. Brevoort; 1874-75, Theo. Hunter; 1876 to 1878 inclusive, Elmer J. Barker; 1879-80-81, C. L. Hammond; 1882 to the present time, Julius C. Brevoort.

The present officers of the town are as follows: —

Town clerk — Garrison W. Foote.

Justices of the peace — Clark M. Pease, E. R. Eaton.

Assessor — Norman Bly.

Collector — Clark W. Little.

Commissioners of highways — E. Brooks.

Overseer of the poor — Samuel Buck.

Auditors — John C. Burdick, Zephaniah K. Townsend.

Inspectors of election, Dist. No. 1 — L. B. Carter, Oliver C. Pond.

Inspectors of election, Dist. No. 2 — Wm. C. Northey, Frank T. Locke.

Constables — C. W. Little, Charles Garvey, Viceroy Moore, 2d, Edward Bradford, Thomas Hocking.

Game constable — Hiram Cheney.

Pound master — Albert Peasely.

Sealer of weights and measures — George C. Robbins.

Commissioner of excise — Hiram Newell.

*Lawyers* — Crown Point does not appear to have been a fruitful locality for the legal fraternity. The inhabitants have as a rule been peaceful and little given to the differences and disputes that have to be settled at the bar of justice; and the attorneys have generally turned their faces towards the county seat, or other more enticing fields. "Squire" Chauncey Fenton practiced law here for many years and was justice of the peace. He has left behind the record of an honorable man. His son, bearing his father's name, is a justice of the peace and attorney in the village of Ticonderoga. Amos Bigelow and Harvey Tuttle were former lawyers at Crown Point Center and taught school at an early day. Libeus Haskill is also remembered as an attorney of much native ability. Judge A. C. Hand, who passed the later portion of his life at Elizabethtown, began his professional career at the Center.

W. F. Hickey is at present the only practicing attorney of the place. He studied with B. B. Bishop, of Moriah, and was admitted to the bar in May 1879. He followed his profession for about two years in Minerville and then removed to this place.

*Physicians.* — Rodolphus Field, one of the early settlers at Crown Point Centre, was probably the first permanently located physician in the town. Dr. ——— Cornwell located very early about one-half mile from the Centre on the old east and west road. Both of these physicians removed from the town. Dr. John R. Goodrich practiced here a few years and removed to Michigan, and Dr. Henry Hall removed, after some years' practice, to California. They were succeeded by Dr. H. K. White, who lived at the Center and

died there. Dr. Jacob Thrasher mingled the practice of medicine with "pettifogging" for a number of years.

Dr. George Paige, of Crown Point Center, is a graduate of Middlebury Medical College, Vermont, 1840. He attended lectures at Hanover, N. H., and Woodstock, Vt. In 1842 he graduated from the Medical department of Yale College. His practice began and continued seven years at Pittsford, Vt. He then removed to Kentucky, coming to Crown Point in 1853, where he now enjoys the confidence of the community and has a large practice.

Dr. Joseph Warner studied for his profession at Castleton, Vt., with Dr. M. Goldsmith. He graduated from the Medical College at that place in 1853, and practiced four years thereafter in Louisiana. He then removed to Bridport, Vt., where he followed his profession twenty-two years, coming to Crown Point in 1881. His success here has been gratifying.

Dr. E. R. Eaton attended lectures at the Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, in the winter of 1878-79, and at the New York Homeopathic College in the winters of 1880-81 and 1881-82, graduating in March of the latter year. He located in Burlington, Vt., in the summer of 1882 and came to Crown Point in January, 1883.

Dr. Melville Turner is located at Hammondville. His professional studies began at Crown Point and he graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1873 and began practice at Crown Point in January, 1874. In 1877 he removed to Lewis, returning in March, 1879, and has been at Hammondville since that time.

Dr. Enoch Kent came from Vermont to Ironville a number of years ago. He refuses statistics of his career for this work.

*Present business, etc., of Crown Point.* — At the "Corners," as it is termed, the principal store is kept by Elmer J. Barker, in the old brick Hammond store, where J. and T. Hammond did business for many years. Mr. Barker, in company with J. W. Wyman, bought out the Messrs. Hammonds in 1870, and in 1881 Mr. Barker purchased the interest of his partner.

Lewis & Elkins keep a general store, succeeding Mr. Lewis in the spring of 1884.

H. F. Davis has a clothing, hat and cap and furnishing goods store, which he opened in 1882, where Lewis & Elkins now are. He removed to his own building in 1884.

F. E. Huestis began the hardware trade in his present store, which he owns, in 1875. His stock is general hardware and furniture, the only establishment of the kind in the town.

Fred. H. Ingalls began the drug business in July, 1878. He was preceded by Dr. E. L. Strong, now of Keeseville. The latter was associated for a time with a Mr. Nichols.

E. M. Johnson conducts a photograph gallery which he has had for about ten years.



S. P. McIntyre carries on wagon-making, undertaking, etc.

Taylor Brothers carry on shoe-making and selling.

In 1818 a Widow Wilcox kept a tavern which stood between the street line and what is now the Hammond chapel and near to the street. This building was subsequently purchased by Mr. Hammond, removed across the street and rebuilt into the residence formerly occupied by Thomas Hammond. After the erection of the Crown Point House it was kept for a time by a Mr. Benedict, who removed from the town. The present proprietor, A. S. Viall, has kept the house to the eminent satisfaction of the public since 1866.

The Spaulding House was opened in 1884 by McNutt & Kelly. It was originally built by Isaac Spaulding.

A. J. Wyman began a banking business in April, 1881. His establishment is a great convenience to the inhabitants of the town.

*Post-Offices.* — The post-office was established at Crown Point early in the century, but the year we have been unable to learn, as well as the name of the first postmaster. Charles F. Hammond had the office before 1833 and officiated for many years. He was succeeded by George Brown and he by Chauncey Fenton, who was in the position about four years. George Brown then filled the office again until 1861, since which date the present postmaster, W. D. Capron, has occupied the position and grown gray in the service.

Post-offices have been established since the organization of the iron company at Hammondville, where T. H. Locke officiates and keeps the store; and at Ironville where James N. Stower has the office and is general manager for the company.

At Crown Point Center the office was established early in the century. Henry Wyman is postmaster and Miss Ingalls deputy.

*Press.* — There was no newspaper in the town until the year 1878, when, on the 1st of January, R. W. Billett issued the first regular number of the *Crown Point Budget*. Probably no public journal ever made its first appearance under more unpromising circumstances, if we except the fact that the iron and other interests of the town were then in a very thriving condition. The first issue of the *Budget* was an eight-page sheet, but had only two short columns to the page. Mr. Billett was not even a practical printer; but he had natural aptitude for both the practical and the literary part of his work, which, coupled with industry and perseverance, enabled him to surmount many formidable obstacles. His paper was a success and he received the support of the community. In the following March he enlarged the paper, making it three columns to the page and four pages. In October, 1879, he again felt justified in making a further enlargement and two columns were added to each page. September 15th, 1880, the name of the paper was changed to the *Essex County Times and Budget*, the latter title being dropped in March, 1882. When the name was first changed another column was added to each page, and on the

date last mentioned, still another was added, making the *Times* a handsome seven-column sheet. The proprietor has increased his printing material as his business grew, and now runs two power presses with other excellent facilities. The *Times* is Republican in politics and has a large circulation and advertising patronage.

*The Hammond Chapel.* — This institution is the former residence of Charles F. Hammond. It was built by him about the year 1837, and for those days and much later was a conspicuously fine dwelling. Since the death of Mrs. Hammond (1882), General John Hammond and his two surviving sisters presented the property to the First Congregational Society as a memorial of their mother. The gift was made in July, 1883. The upper portion of the house has been fitted up as a hall and library rooms, in which is established the chapel library, which is an outgrowth of a small circulating library that was in existence here. Mr. Hammond and others have circulated many valuable books and the institution promises to be of great benefit to the town.

*Forest Dale Cemetery.* — The village of Crown Point is provided with a beautiful cemetery, for the benefit of which the inhabitants are indebted to General John Hammond. It is situated on a picturesque eminence just off from the main street and is laid out into two hundred lots, among which are winding avenues and paths. Many of the lots have already been taken and are beautified with handsome memorials of the dead.

*The Soldiers' Monument.* — This beautiful memorial of the dead soldiers of this town is also a monument to the patriotism and liberality of Charles F. Hammond. When the war broke out no man came forward more promptly to aid the government in its peril, than he. All of the original horses for company H of the Fifth New York Cavalry were purchased with funds advanced by him and he in various other ways testified how deep was his sympathy with his country in her trial. When the struggle was over he was prompted by the same feelings to erect the beautiful monument to those who had fallen on the battle field. It is of Westerley granite, thirty-four feet in height, and surmounted by a statue of a soldier in uniform with his gun at rest. On three of its sides are inscribed the names of the dead heroes and on the fourth the following inscription : —

“ TO THE  
MEMORY OF THE BRAVE VOLUNTEERS OF CROWN POINT,  
WHO GAVE THEIR LIVES AS A  
SACRIFICE FOR THEIR COUNTRY AND HUMANITY IN THE SUPPRESSION OF THE GREAT REBELLION  
OF 1861—1866.  
THIS MONUMENT IS ERECTED BY THEIR GRATEFUL FELLOW CITIZEN,  
C. F. HAMMOND.”

*Trotting Park.* — On the 8th of May, 18—, the “Put's Point Trotting Park Association” was incorporated with a capital stock of \$10,000.

#### CHURCHES.

*Baptist Church, Crown Point.* — The first meetings of the Baptists of this



town were held in "Slab Hollow" school-house. As a result of this early work seven or eight were baptized and united with the Ticonderoga society. The organization of the society here, about 1827, was effected under the missionary labors of Rev. E. Andrews. The society comprised fifteen members. The first preacher was Ebenezer Mott, who at that time suffered considerable persecution because of his Baptist proclivities. He staid here but one year. In the year 1831 meetings were held in the Union church. By the year 1836 thirty-one new members were added to the church. Down to the year 1863 the number of members received into the society was 266. In 1867, for various causes, the membership had fallen to thirty-two and the church closed its active work. During its career C. A. Hewitt, David Foot and Ira D. Burwell were licensed by it to preach. It was chiefly through the persistent efforts and liberality of John Burwell that the church was long kept in the Essex and Champlain Baptist Association; he went about and offered to give dollar for dollar on all that might be subscribed for the sustenance of the society. Deacon Wood and Mr. Burwell bought the rights of the Congregationalists in the "old white meeting-house," until the Baptists owned nearly all. Six pastors were called to the church: Ebenezer Mott, L. Smith, J. Goodrich, Charles Berry, I. D. Burwell, Ira P. Kellogg. The report for forty-three years notes fifty-seven baptisms and forty-three added.

The present brick edifice was built largely through the instrumentality of the late Colonel Job L. Howe and the Messrs. Hammonds. It is sufficiently commodious and pleasantly situated, fronting the village park.

*First Congregational Church, Crown Point.*—This church was organized on the 10th of September, 1804, by Benjamin Wooster, of Vermont, missionary. The original number of members was sixteen. Others soon joined, and the number gradually though slowly increased from year to year. For many years the stated ministrations of the gospel were not enjoyed except for limited periods of six months or a year, more or less. The church, however, regularly maintained public worship on the Sabbath, looked well to the discipline of its members, and attended with much regularity to the ordinances. The first settled pastor was Rev. Samuel C. Bradford, who was ordained June 26th, 1822. His labors were commenced the year previous. He was regularly dismissed the 14th of June, 1826. On the 8th of October following Stephen L. Herrick was settled as pastor and continued in that position until 1852. Rev. Ira D. Burwell, "a Baptist minister," supplied the pulpit for six months. Rev. John Bradshaw was settled as pastor, 1853, and left in 1866. Willard Child, D.D., acted as supply from September, 1866, until September, 1873. W. H. Utley supplied the pulpit from September, 1873, for one year and a half; Rev. F. P. Tomkins from 1875 for one year and eleven months. Rev. I. L. Beman was settled as pastor in 1877 and continued until 1881. Rev. J. W. Cowan succeeded until 1883, in April of which year Rev. James

Deane assumed the pastorate and still continues his labor. The church has a prosperous Sabbath-school.

Following are the names of the first sixteen members of this church: Joshua Moss, Samuel Moss, Israel Branch, Dennis Meagher, Martha Wiswell, Robert Hopkins, Phebe Hopkins, Ichabod Brooks, Sarah Brooks, Aaron Townsend, Phebe Townsend, Moriah Wilcox, Mary Wilcox, Elenor Morrow, Martha Moss, Abigail Moss, Eli Moffit.

The brick church, now occupied by the Congregationalists of Crown Point, was erected in 1833 and dedicated February 13th, 1834. It is a substantial, commodious and good-looking edifice, in excellent condition. The value of the church property, including parsonage and the Hammond chapel, is \$12,000. A prosperous Sabbath-school is connected with the church. Revivals of widespread beneficent influence were experienced by this society in 1832, 1836, 1841, 1855 and 1878.

Present Trustees — General John Hammond, Z. K. Townsend, E. J. Barker.

Deacons — S. F. Murdock, George Page, W. G. Foote, Z. K. Townsend.

In 1843 the church was built at Ironville and dedicated October 11th of that year. Sarell Wood was the first preacher.

*Second Congregational Church of Crown Point.*<sup>1</sup>— As early as 1827 Rev. S. L. Herrick, pastor of the First Congregational Church of Crown Point, began holding religious services at the place now known as Ironville, in a large hall in the house of Deacon Allen Penfield. These services were more or less regularly maintained till the spring of 1843, when it was decided to organize a second Congregational society and erect a house of worship. The first meeting of the society was held April 15th, 1843. The trustees chosen were Allen Penfield, John Taylor and Jonathan Train; and these with Timothy Taft and J. E. Moore were the building committee. The by-laws and act of incorporation were drawn up by Messrs. Penfield, Taft and Harwood. A. P. Harwood was the first clerk, and he continued in this office most of the time for nearly a quarter of a century, his last date in the records being April 10th, 1865. Others who have filled the office are James F. Moore, J. A. Penfield, Hervey Spencer, E. J. Morgan, D. V. N. Harwood, H. F. Turner, Thomas J. McMurtry, A. D. Cady, William Brando and Charles McIntyre.

The trustees, in addition to those already named, have been Timothy Taft, Asa Crain, James F. Moore, A. M. Bunnell, Hervey Spencer, Albert Taft, Thomas B. Locke, J. A. Penfield, E. J. Morgan, H. F. Turner, Levi R. Dudley, T. J. McMurtry, and J. N. Stower. Philetus Sawyer, now United States Senator from Wisconsin, was one of the original members and for two years collector of the society.

The house of worship was erected during the summer of 1843 and ded-

---

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Rev. W. C. Sexton, pastor of the church, 1885.



icated in October of that year. It cost, exclusive of the basement, \$1,600, for which Deacon Allen Penfield became responsible. He also built the basement, designed for school purposes, as an additional private investment. The edifice was deeded to the society by him, on condition that preaching be maintained in it. In case the society fails to do this for two years, the property reverts to his heirs. The entire property is now valued at \$2,500. After the edifice was dedicated Rev. S. L. Herrick occupied the pulpit once in four weeks until the spring of 1844, when Sarell Wood, a licentiate, was engaged as a supply for one year.

At a special meeting of the society, January 13th, 1846, a movement was inaugurated for the organization of a church. An ecclesiastical council was called, and on the 11th day of February, 1846, the "Second Congregational Church of Crown Point" was duly formed, with the following named persons as members: Allen Penfield, Timothy Taft, James F. More, Huldah M. Lawrence, Eunice Fuller, Sophronia More, Phebe Chapin, Louisa F. More, Ann H. Harwood, Caroline K. Penfield, Sarah M. Crain, Emily McIntyre, Anna Penfield, Lucy Crain, Rebecca Durand, Elizabeth Bascomb, Sophronia Moore, Sybil Honsiger, M. Rhoades, Hepzibah Stiles, Patty Phillips, Parmelia More, Harriet Ward, Hepzibah Taft, Hepzibah Rollins, Margaret Barrows, Lovina Wright, Sally Wright, Lucy Worcester, Asa Crain, Polly Durkee, Lovisa Hitt, Charles F. Hammond, 2d, Frederick Bostwick, Allen P. Harwood.

The articles of faith and covenant of the First Congregational Church of Crown Point were adopted as the basis. The first pastor was the Rev. Chauncey Coe Stevens, who was installed on the date of the organization and continued in the pastoral office until February, 1873, when he retired from service on account of the infirmities of age. Rev. D. W. Cameron began labor November 16th, 1873, and continued until May 1st, 1874. Rev. John T. Marsh began November 1st, 1874, and closed his labors February, 1877. The pastorate of Rev. A. T. Clarke began October, 1877; installation August, 1878; pastoral relations dissolved September 22d, 1884. Rev. W. C. Sexton, the present pastor, began labor January 4th, 1885.

The first deacons were Allen Penfield and James F. More. The others have been Timothy Taft, Levi R. Dudley, Thomas J. McMurtry and John W. Towner; the latter three are still in the office.

The first Sunday-school was organized in 1830, and prior to the erection of the church edifice was held either in the school-house or in Deacon Penfield's hall. John Taylor was the first superintendent. The others have been A. P. Harwood, Hervey Spencer, E. J. Morgan, A. J. McMurtry, T. J. McMurtry, J. W. Towner, and Levi R. Dudley, the present incumbent.

The most important revival in the history of the church occurred in 1877, under the labors of J. D. Foote, an evangelist. Thirty-four persons, chiefly the fruits of this revival, were received to membership December 2d, 1877, by

Rev. A. T. Clarke. The next largest accession was that of ten persons, January 2d, 1881. The present membership is fifty-five.

The benevolent contributions have been unusually large for a rural church of its size. Not far from \$8,000 have been distributed in gifts to the various benevolent causes, making an average of about \$210 per annum, not including one personal gift of \$1,000. Besides, the church has very generously responded once or twice for the relief of western sufferers.

*Church of Christ, Hammondville.* — In 1875 and 1876 Rev. J. T. Marsh, acting pastor of the Congregational Church at Ironville, preached occasionally to the Protestant population of Hammondville. In October, 1877, Rev. A. T. Clarke was called to the pastorate of the Congregational Church at Ironville and preached in a school-house in Hammondville once in two weeks for nearly a year. In the summer of 1878 the Crown Point Iron Company erected an elegant house of worship with commodious rooms for a school beneath it. This house was dedicated on Sunday, September 29th, 1878, at which time the following statement by the Iron Company, prepared by A. L. Inman, general manager, was read: —

“The company, having a due regard for the welfare of its employees, at its annual meeting in May last, determined on the erection of a building at its mines, for the purpose of a church and school building, the necessities of which have long been apparent, and to that end have expended in the construction and furnishing of the house we now occupy a little less than \$3,000. The lower room has a seating capacity for 135 scholars, and is to be used as a school-room. The upper room, with seating capacity for 225 persons, to be used as a union house of worship for the religious services of all denominations. And the company does now give it to its employees to be used for such purposes only, with the hope and belief that it will prove a source of profit to both old and young.”

After the dedication of the house of worship religious services were held every Sabbath afternoon by the pastor at Ironville, and a church organization was soon talked of, to be consummated on a liberal evangelical basis. A constitution was drawn up by Rev. A. T. Clarke, and printed, bearing date 1878, but for various reasons no public action was taken upon it until Saturday evening, March 29th, 1879, when it was adopted, and officers were elected as follows: Deacons, William Northey, and William S. Yole; clerk, William S. Rowan; treasurer, Josephy Stone; trustees, the foregoing, with A. McDonald, esq., superintendent of Iron Company.

The first communion season was observed on Sunday afternoon, April 13th, 1879, when ten persons assented to the confession of faith and covenant, thus completing the organization. These ten persons were William Northey, William S. Yole, William S. Rowan, John Kest, Martha Bennett, Etta J. Parkhurst, Mary Scafe, Cordelia Stone, Elizabeth E. Stone, Josephine U. Stone.



Rev. A. T. Clarke continued the first acting pastor of the church until September 22d, 1884. The present acting pastor, Rev. W. C. Sexton, began labor January 4th, 1885.

The first Sunday-school was organized in June, 1875, and held in a school-house until the church edifice was dedicated. William Northey was the first superintendent. The others who have held the office are Mrs. Alexander Kee, James Cruikshank, William Trenery and Rev. W. C. Sexton, the present incumbent. Owing to removals and other causes the church membership has remained small. Nine members were received May 4th, 1884, as the result of revival services conducted by Rev. A. T. Clarke, and the largest accession at any one time since the date of organization.

The membership at present is twelve. Alfred Knowlton is deacon, and the present trustees are Theodore Locke, Alexander Kee and Thomas Montague, superintendent of Iron Company.

A large church edifice was erected and dedicated January 20th, 1830, on the site of the present "white meeting-house," in the central part of the town, and was occupied as a union church by the different sects then desiring to hold services there, embracing Congregationalists, Baptists, Methodists and Universalists. It gave way in the year 1882 to the present edifice, which is now occupied by the Wesleyan Methodists, who are ministered to by the Rev. W. A. Hathaway.

*Lutherans.* — The Swedish Lutherans of Hammondville have formed the organization of a church society recently and have occasional services by a non-resident pastor.

*Roman Catholic.* — There has been a Roman Catholic Church organization here more than twenty years, but the present church was erected in 1876. Rev. Father Mullin was the last priest who officiated in the church. He left the church in 1884 and services are not now held. Rev. Father Butler, from Ticonderoga was the first pastor, and comes to the church for occasional services.

*Schools.* — We have heretofore alluded to the first school taught in this town, in 1804 or 1805, by the wife of Elisha Rhoades, in the building which was a combined store, dwelling and school-house. But it was a beginning, and others soon followed in different parts of the town. It has never been a characteristic of American pioneers to let their children fold their hands and grow up in ignorance. Better that they should tramp miles through forests, over rough roads, or no roads at all, in the most inclement weather (they were needed at home in the planting and the harvest), and sit the day through upon the hardest of seats, with no support for their backs, and pore over a very limited selection of school books; and the foundation for many an excellent education and for many a strong and enlightened character has been laid under just such circumstances as these.

John Catlin came across the lake from Vermont and taught school here before 1818, and Harvey Tuttle taught from 1818 to 1820. Foster Breed, who came to town with his father in 1815, attended the school. The next teacher he remembers was a lady, who subsequently became his wife (now deceased), Miss Sarah Washburn. She was from Middlebury, and taught in a building that stood where Elmer J. Barker's house is. As settlers located in different parts of the town, districts were divided and schools rapidly multiplied.

The present Union Free School was established at Crown Point in 1878. It embraces three schools in the building at the village and one at the lake, and has been very successful from the first, nearly all the districts in the town (eighteen, besides the four mentioned) being represented among its pupils. L. B. Carlisle was the first principal and was succeeded in 1880 by Professor Thomas R. Kneil. He was educated at the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., whence he graduated in 1875. He was born in Westfield, Mass., in 1851, and is a young man of excellent native ability. Under him as teachers are Miss Addie M. Bunnell, intermediate; Miss Clara A. Stanton, first primary; Miss Frank M. Locke, second primary (lake). The average attendance is about one hundred and seventy. The school passed under the control of the Regents of the University in 1881 and graduated its first class in 1883.

*Free Masonry.*—Molang Lodge, F. and A. M., No. 370, of Crown Point, was chartered July 2d, 1855. Its charter was forfeited in June, 1870.

Rescue Lodge, F. and A. M., was organized in 1876, with the following charter members: J. D. Hardy, James West, J. E. Pond, G. G. Gage, William Scott, H. J. Potter, Robert Taylor, C. N. Mead, L. B. Carlisle, E. T. Strong, S. Taylor. The officers under the dispensation were: J. D. Hardy, M.; James E. Pond, S. W.; James West, J. W.; Robert Taylor, treasurer; L. B. Carlisle, secretary; G. G. Gage, S. D.; C. N. Mead, J. D.; William Scott, tiler; E. T. Strong, S. M. C.; S. Taylor, J. M. C. The first officers chosen under the charter were: James E. Pond, M.; George G. Gage, S. W.; S. Taylor, J. W.; Robert Taylor, treasurer; M. H. Turner, secretary; Adelbert Barse, S. D.; Eugene Wheelock, J. D.; Otis Breed, S. M. C.; L. A. Porter, J. M. C.; Hyde R. Barnett, tiler; S. Taylor, James West, B. P. Treadway, trustees. The present officers are: S. Taylor, M.; H. D. Spicer, S. W.; Hyde R. Barnett, J. W.; L. R. Berry, treasurer; F. H. Ingalls, secretary; T. R. Kneil, S. D.; E. E. Spaulding, J. D.; C. N. Mead, tiler; Z. C. Sherman, S. M. C.; Adelbert Barse, J. M. C. James E. Pond is the only resident P. M.

The C. F. Hammond Post No. 533, Department of New York, G. A. R., was organized January 24th, 1885. Following are the names of the charter members and officers: Thomas F. Allen, Solomon Allen, Elmer J. Barker, Egbert A. Braman, Henry Betts, William Barrows, James Bryden, James Deane, Charles F. Dunckler, Elbert M. Johnson, John H. Kelly, Sidney



Knights, William P. Lamson, Simeon P. McIntyre, Alpharis H. Moore, Vice-roy Moore, Clark M. Pease, Nelson Smith, John W. Treadway, William H. Taylor, Hiram Underhill, Henry E. Wyman, Franklin Waite, Robert Waterman. Officers: Commander, James Deane; senior vice-commander, Elmer J. Barker; junior vice-commander, Simeon P. McIntyre; surgeon, John W. Treadway; chaplain, Egbert A. Braman; adjutant, Clark M. Pease; quartermaster, Henry E. Wyman; officer of the day, Thomas F. Allen; officer of the guard, John H. Kelly; sergeant-major, Elbert M. Johnson; quartermaster-sergeant, Franklin Waite.

*Crown Point Center.*—The settlement at this point, about three miles up the creek from the lake, was made a little earlier than at what was called Hammond's Corners. The road now from the latter hamlet to the Center passes through Factoryville, which is only another section of the well-settled district beginning at the lake and extending westward—as though a populous village away up the creek had been caught by one of the floods for which that stream is not unknown and carried down stream, portions of it being left along on the banks.

There has been a post-office here and at the "Lower Hollow," as it is locally called, since early in the century. The office was located at the "Upper Hollow" permanently some twenty-five years ago, while at the Lower Hollow there was continual strife in early years to secure its location permanently at Hammond's Corners; and it vibrated from one of these points to the other. "'Squire" George Bunn kept a store on the site of the present brick store at the Center as early as 1825, and "'Squire" Chauncey Fenton was located at "The Corners." As the post-office was changed from one locality to the other it invariably also passed from the control of one of these worthy gentlemen to the other, the name of the office remaining the same—Crown Point. The office at the Center is now in charge of Miss Ingalls, as deputy, under Henry E. Wyman. Mr. Wyman succeeded A. S. Palmer.

The early settlements in "Buck Hollow" and vicinity have already been sufficiently noted. A grist-mill at the Hollow that was operated for many years fell into ruins in 1884, and there is nothing there indicating business except a small store kept by A. Bailey. There was a saw-mill there in early days, and another at the Upper Hollow. These mills were a part of the great lumber business that was extensively carried on in the town in early years.

William Fuller is the oldest merchant at Crown Point Center. His father was Cornelius Fuller, who located near the old "red store" in 1818. He removed, however, but came back in 1824 to what was known as the Cummings farm. He died in the town in 1829. William Fuller was employed as clerk for A. B. Chipman, and in 1851 took the position of agent in the Union store, which was operated by the New England Protective Union, a co-operative organization. He continued in that capacity for twenty-one years. In

1873 he bought the store and has since that time continued the business on his own account. His store burned in 1875, when he erected his present substantial brick building.

A. G. De Poutee has a general store, where he began trade in 1871 with Henry E. Wyman as a partner, whose interest he subsequently purchased. He was preceded by J. T. Hill.

The firm of Trimble & Buck carry on a general store in a building which was erected in 1866 by P. S. Russell. The first firm was Russell & Trimble; then Russell, Trimble & Co., and Trimble & Buck since 1869. The firm is composed of James K. Trimble, who is a son of Chillion A. Trimble, one of the early settlers already mentioned, who located on the Point, and Rawson C. Buck.<sup>1</sup>

The wagon factory here is owned by Chauncey Dudley, and Samuel Crawford runs the business.

There has been a hotel here since an early day. Elijah Grosvenor had an early tavern where Moses De Poutee now lives. M. Willcox had the first tavern on the site of the present hotel. The house, as it now stands, is the result of several changes of structure, and numerous proprietors have tried its fortunes. Samuel Russell, Nathan Ingalls, Henry McNutt and Alexander Freeman were among the proprietors; it is now kept by John Donnelly. Samuel Russell was one of the early settlers.

Alexander Turner has kept the harness shop since 1884, in a building that was put up for the post-office on one of the occasions when the Hammond's Corners people were temporarily deprived of it. John Little had a harness shop here formerly.

Rufus Fassett carried on the tinsmith business here for fifteen years. It is now, and for a year past, in connection with hardware, in the hands of John Donnelly.

The grist-mill is operated by Henry E. Wyman.

A. M. Buckman manufactures butter tubs, etc., on the site of the old saw-mill. This mill was reconstructed from the old forge that was built here many years ago.

Moses De Poutee keeps a grocery.

The old woolen factory at the Upper Hollow was built about 1840 by William Treadway. It has been operated for thirty years by William Clure.

John M. Locke, one of the early settlers in the neighborhood of the White Meeting House, on the homestead now occupied by his son, formerly drove a stage through this region. Wm. Fuller, the merchant, taught a school in that neighborhood in 1833.

The road as it now runs through the valley was not opened until about

---

<sup>1</sup> Since this history was prepared R. C. Buck has died. See biographic sketch in latter pages of this work.



1834. Previous to that time the hill road was used. In early days roads were opened either over or along the sides of hills, to avoid the mud that was sure to be found in spring and fall in the valleys, at a period when teams were not so numerous as now.

The first church in the White Meeting House neighborhood was the one that gave the name to the locality, derived from its own color; it was not every church that could in those days boast a coat of paint of any color. It was located near the center of the town and there were good reasons for believing that a hamlet or village might be built up there. The town meeting was held in the old church the first year after it was built. Mr. Fuller remembers that it was necessary to place a guard about the pulpit to prevent the enthusiastic electors from breaking it down. The present church was built on the site of the old one in 1882.

*Factoryville.* — This is a mere hamlet midway between Crown Point and Crown Point Center. A post-office is maintained by private effort.

The Crown Point Manufacturing Works are located here and now operated by James E. Pond. G. W. Foote is in charge of the store. This manufacturing establishment was started for the production of sash, doors, blinds and pails, by Flint Brothers, some twenty-five years ago. They were succeeded by C. P. Fobes, who was associated with the Hammonds. Mr. Fobes bought out his partners' interest and formed the C. P. Fobes Manufacturing Company. This continued to 1880 when the business took its present name, with C. L. Hammond as proprietor. About two years later it passed to the present ownership.

The Mason Wheel Company began business here in 1880, manufacturing patent wagon wheels; but the business was abandoned in about a year.

Two saw-mills are operated here by Mr. Pond, before mentioned.

*Gunnison's.* — There are two ferries from Crown Point across the lake, one of which is south of the mouth of Putnam's creek and the other north of it. The one first mentioned is now operated by Gunnison & Brooks and the other by Wolcott & Rogers, and by Timothy Huestis from this side. A ferry called Wilkinson's ferry was run from Long Point.

George Gunnison some fifteen years ago erected the large hotel that stands near his wharf on the lake shore. Its proximity to the railroad and the expectation that it could be filled with summer guests were the reasons for its erection; but the hopes of patronage were not realized and the handsome house is used only as a sort of boarding-house.

Following are the names that appear on the assessors' roll of the town for the year 1835, which is worthy of preservation here as indicating the settlers who had become property owners at that time. The real estate valuation had then reached \$91,361; personal property, \$4,800. The spelling of some of the names is undoubtedly incorrect:—

---

George Adkins,	George Baker,	Stephen Drake,
Martin Armstrong,	Zoraster Barrows,	Benjamin S. Davis,
William Alden,	John B. Brooks,	Ezra Dudley,
James Austin,	Jared Breed,	Lemuel Derby,
Jewet Armstrong,	Brooks & Floyd,	Henry Davis,
Samuel Avrel,	James Barber,	John T. Ewen,
Levi Adams,	Hiram Buck,	Alfred A. Edmunds,
Milo Aldin,	George Brown,	Abijah Farr,
Benjamin Allen,	Daniel Brooks,	Moses Foster,
Jedediah Barnett,	Orren Bradford,	Samuel Foot,
James Barnett,	Henry Barrows,	Thos. Farnsworth,
John Baldwin,	Samuel B. Bailey,	John Floyd,
John Burwell,	Stillman Clark,	Leonard Fisher,
Jonas Benedict,	John Chilcott,	Aaron Fuller,
Allen Breed,	Charles Coburn,	Chauncey Fenton,
Nancy Burge,	Warren Cross,	John Giddings,
Joseph Barret,	Asa Cram,	Alex'r Griswold,
Amos Ballou,	George Conn, jr.	Asahel Glidden,
Hiram Ballou,	Ira Crossman,	Osro P. Gray,
Samuel Barker,	Luther Call,	Robert Gracy,
Reuben Barret,	Lewis Cory,	Nichols Gileo,
Jacob Bixby,	Josiah Converse,	Gabriel Gibson,
George Ballou,	Leon Cummings,	James Gracy,
John F. Bishop,	Aburn Crossman,	Elijah Goodrich,
Otis Bradford,	William Cross,	Josiah Glidden,
Lucian Barret,	Abijah Chilcott,	George Gunnison,
John Bigelow,	Daniel Cleaveland,	John Groves,
Gerome Bishop,	Aaron Chapin,	Stephen Hunter,
Forrest Brown,	Charles Cutter,	Thos. Hodgman,
Foster Breed,	Calvin Davis,	Lemuel D. Howe,
Jonathan Brooks,	Hammond Davis,	Juba Howe,
John Barrows,	Bradley M. Davis,	Libeas Hascall,
Joel Boyington,	Jona Douglass,	Timothy Heustice,
Eben Bigelow,	Lyman Drake,	Norman Hildrith,
Jonathan I. Breed,	David Drake,	James Hutchinson,
Enos Bradford,	Elisha Davis,	Hollis Hildrith,
Asa W. Barnet,	Orson Davis,	Bernard Hughes,
Silas Buckman,	Thomas Dibble,	Henry Howe,
Allen Breed,	Timothy Dean,	Joshua Holden,
Eumanas Bartlet,	Lyman Drake,	Benj. Heustice,
Barker & Fenton,	Franklin F. Dike,	Timothy Hodgman,
Abel Bailey,	Lucius Dunkley,	Henry Hale,



---

Thomas Hildrith,	Micager McIntyre,	Ward Rogers,
Chas. F. Hammond,	Loyal Monroe,	Phineas Smith,
Hammonds & Co.,	Amasa Nichols,	Frederick Smith,
Daniel Huestice,	Aaron Nilson,	Samuel Spaulding,
Daniel D. Huestice,	Zadok Nichols,	Joel Stanard,
Samuel H. Ingalls,	Asa Nichols,	Spaulding & Hatch,
Hibbard Ingalls,	Amos Nickerson,	John Sisson,
Elias Jackson,	William Nilson,	Amos Stratton,
Jeremiah Jencks,	Joshua Newell,	Hiram Simmonds,
Timothy Johnson,	Aaron Nichols,	Austin Smith,
Arrial A. Kibby,	Rufus Nims,	Hiram Sprague,
John King, jr.,	Nilson & Allen,	Amos Stanton,
Arthur Knowles,	William Newell,	Nathan Sprague,
Caleb Kendal,	John Ober,	Samuel Stiles,
Thomas Knowlton,	Joseph Ober,	Joseph Searles,
John King,	Benegar Pond,	Abel Sawyer,
Stephen Lamson,	William Perkins,	Alex S. Sturtefant
Martin Leeland,	William Porter,	Ira Spaulding,
Robert Lane,	Amos Pulsifer,	S'n Spaulding, 2d,
John M. Lock,	Jacob J. Parmerter,	Weston Shattuck,
Jedediah Lawrence,	John Pressy,	James Stanton,
Samuel Lewis,	Harvey Phillips,	Alden Spear,
Wm. Livingston,	Penfield & Taft,	Phineas Smith,
Lorenzo Mason,	Ameziah Philips,	Miles Spaulding,
Susan McAully,	Paris I. Prible,	Caleb Spaulding,
John Maginnis,	Moses Potter,	Ransom Searls,
Sam'l Murdock, jr.,	Abraham Prible,	Hiram Sisson,
William Moore,	John Petty,	Chan'y P. Sawyer,
Abijah McIntyre,	Solomon Petty,	Stephen Spaulding,
Roswell H. Morgan,	Charles Pratt,	N. T. Simmins,
Lyman & L. Morton,	John Rogers,	Colburn Strong,
William Mills,	Hubbard Russell,	Elisha Stanton,
Samuel Murdock,	Jonathan Russell,	Royal Stowel,
John Moore,	Levi Rhoades,	David Stowel
John E. Moore,	Elisha Rhoades,	William Scofield,
Smith McAully,	Randal Reed,	Shaler Towner
John R. Mott,	Harris Reed,	Ephraim Towner,
Joel Morton,	Foster Reed,	Ephrim I. Towner,
Loyal Morton,	John Renne,	Ichabod A. Towner,
Aaron Maginnis,	Sam'l Russell (blacksmith),	Ira Towner,
James Murdock,	Sam'l Russell (inn-keeper),	Silas Town,
Levi Moore,	Daniel Rogers,	Trimble & Murdock,

---

John Taylor,	Jonathan Train,	Jotham Wood,
William Titus,	George Thompson,	John Woodworth,
Moses B. Townsend	George Trimble,	Chauncey Whitman,
Tyrell & Chipman,	Septamus Turner,	Peter Wright,
Benj. F. Towner,	John Townsend,	Joseph T. Wilder,
Job Town,	Abel Wood,	Witherbee & Wood,
Oka Thompson,	Ariel Wolcott,	John I. Wallace,
Chilion A. Trimble,	Aaron Wheeler,	Isaac Wilkins,
Daniel Taylor,	Benj. Whitman,	Samuel Wright,
Aaron B. Townsend,	Moses Wolcott,	John Wallace,
James Tyrill,	Wilder & Gray,	Geo. Wrightonten,
Henry Thrasher,	Thomas Witherbee,	Wright & Eaton,

---

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF TICONDEROGA.<sup>1</sup>

FEW localities in this country can boast a historic record of deeper interest than that of this town; a record shared to a large extent by its sister town of Crown Point, within which its territory was formerly embraced. This record is traced into the past more than two hundred and seventy-five years, dimly a first, but for a century and a half it stands vividly emblazoned on many a living page; and we are, perhaps, justified in the presumption that long before the waters of the beautiful lake were first ruffled by a white man's oar and the forest-covered highlands first echoed the blast from Champlain's arquebus, the region was the scene of conflicts between contending tribes of native Americans, equaling in desperate deeds of savage valor, those of later years. Three times the military post from which the town derives its name has passed from one to another of hostile nations without a battle, and one unsuccessful attempt to capture the fortress left two thousand dead and wounded Britons on the field,

---

<sup>1</sup> It is deemed advisable to place the history of this town immediately after that of Crown Point, on account of its paramount historical importance and intimate connection with that town, although it is thereby thrown out of its proper chronological order. All subsequent town histories will be given in chronological order in respect to the dates of their formation. In preparing the history of Ticonderoga we have availed ourselves liberally of the invaluable work of Joseph Cook, who, almost thirty years ago, devoted much time and labor to the writing of a pamphlet devoted to this subject. No comprehensive history of the town could now be prepared without drawing largely upon this old pamphlet, as many of those from whom the details were then obtained have since passed from earth. We have intended, as a rule, to give Mr. Cook credit in each instance for matter taken from his pages; but, lest this should not be noted by the reader and to embrace the numerous paragraphs which have been condensed and rewritten from his work, we cheerfully give his early and valuable little book this broad and just credit.



almost within the sound of the brawling waters that now turn the wheels of Ticonderoga village.

Let us very briefly summarize the most important events that have occurred upon this heroic soil: As far as we can know with certainty, the first echo of the sound of battle among the hills of Ticonderoga was in the summer of 1609, when Samuel de Champlain, with his party of northern Indians, paddled their canoes to a point near the present ruined fortress — perhaps directly to that spot — and encountered a body of Mohawk Indians, long the inveterate enemies of their northern neighbors. And there, amid scenes of nature's grandest handiwork and peaceful repose, the simple-minded Iroquois received from the muzzle of a gun their first introduction to the civilized race who were eventually to wipe them out of existence. There is something almost pitiful in reading in the graphic language of the great explorer how "the Iroquois were greatly astonished seeing two men killed so instantaneously, notwithstanding they were provided with arrow-proof armor." No wonder they were astonished! Of course they were quickly defeated, being armed only with bows and arrows made by their own hands; and thus France laid the foundation of her claim to the territory that was to cost her so much good blood, and that fruitlessly.

Sanguinary conflict continued for more than a century, with brief intervals of peace, between the Iroquois on the south, soon reinforced by the English, and the Algonquins and Hurons, with their new French friends on the north; conflict in which the real issue was between the French and the English, the latter in the maintenance of their claims founded upon the patent granted to the Duke of York by James II, and the profitable fur trade that had been developed chiefly by the Dutch from whom it was wrested by the more powerful nation. Lake Champlain and its shores were the theatre of much of this warfare, and the lofty promontory which commanded at once the lake and the stream that connects it with Lake George, was the key to the situation between the hostile forces. The possession of this point and the no less commanding one of Crown Point was coveted by both contending nations. The French erected forts at Chambly and Sorel to protect New France from the destructive incursions of the Iroquois; but Montreal fell before their valor in 1689, inspirited and aided as they were by the English. Crown Point was especially desired by the French.

The struggle continued until 1713, when it was temporarily ended by the treaty of Utrecht, which defined the boundary of the Iroquois possessions on the north and guaranteed on the part of the French that they should remain "inviolate by any occupation, or encroachment of France."

In direct contravention of the terms of the treaty, the French in 1731, in the face of the then inefficient authorities of New York, proceeded up the lake to Crown Point and there erected Fort St. Frederic. The only reason they offered for this unwarrantable act was to protect their territory from possible













incursions by the Iroquois; and the fort was built far within the limits of the Iroquois domain! The outrage was permitted with only ineffectual protests from the torpid representatives of the English, although Crown Point was and long had been one of their important trading stations with the Indians. To further this ostensible purpose, Fort Carillon (chime of bells) or Ticonderoga was begun by the French in 1755; and all this time the colonists were complaining bitterly of French encroachment and urging the government to oppose it. At last Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, who seems to have appreciated the situation, appealed indignantly to New York and aroused the governor's interest by directing his attention to the exposed condition of the frontier. An army was raised which was placed under command of Sir William Johnson and General Lyman. This army marched against the French on Lake Champlain, erecting Fort Edward on the way, and on the 8th of September, 1755, was met by Dieskau at the head of Lake George, defeated him in a bloody battle, took the wounded commander prisoner and many of the troops. Had this victory been followed up, Fort St. Frederic, then falling into premature decay, and Fort Carillon, only just begun, must have easily fallen into English hands with little loss; but Johnson fell back and spent the summer in erecting Fort William Henry at the head of Lake George. Meanwhile the colonists besought England for aid; but they were left largely to their own resources; and in the warfare that followed the brave rangers, Prescott, Stark, Putnam, Pomeroy and Rogers, learned the lesson that was later to win liberty for the country. The French proceeded with the building of the fort at Ticonderoga. England was at last aroused and demanded the demolition of the works at Crown Point. This was refused and in 1756 England declared war. The following year Montcalm besieged, captured and destroyed fort William Henry.

England, now thoroughly aroused, fitted out what was then a magnificent army of 16,000 men, placed the command in the hands of the impotent Abercrombie, and the force sailed down Lake George in all the splendor of battle array, to encounter an enemy one-quarter as numerous, but wisely entrenched by the sagacious and gallant Montcalm behind breastworks, the lines of which can still be traced at a distance from the ruins of the fort. The English landed at Howe's Landing on the west shore of Lake George. Abercrombie, oblivious of any possibility of defeat and with a degree of regard for his personal safety that his real importance scarcely justified, established his headquarters a mile from the fatal field, at the falls which are now the life of the busy village. Abercrombie's inefficiency was not unknown to his government, and to compensate for it as far as possible, Lord Howe was given a command next to the general-in-chief, and he took the immediate direction of the army at the opening of the battle.

Before noon of July 6th Stark and Rogers were pressing around toward



the French lines, nearly four miles distant. Fearing the arrival of expected reinforcements to Montcalm, Abercrombie pressed his attack without awaiting the approach of his artillery; but even with it, the result might have been the same. The first advancing column was led by the gallant Howe. Trout brook was reached not far from the site of the present lower village where a small body of the enemy was encountered, apparently confused in the forest in an attempt to regain the fort. A skirmish ensued and almost at the first fire Howe was slain. Reinforcements came up and, although momentarily wavering through the loss of their general, the troops fought valorously and nearly the entire body of French and Indians were killed or captured. The army now returned to their landing, disheartened by the unhappy fall of their leader and wearied with their encounter with the foe and with methods of warfare in which they had no experience. With the early morning the French lines were hurriedly surveyed by a scouting engineer, who pronounced them comparatively slight and vulnerable; upon this report an immediate assault was determined upon.

But Montcalm had not been idle. All night long spades and axes had been active, and the sun rose upon a breastwork nine feet high, twenty feet thick at the base and ten at the top. It continued for a long distance so as to defend the fort, was laid out with numerous angles, a deep ditch in front and mounted with artillery. Beyond this the timber was fallen with the tops towards the foe, forming an entangled mass of limbs difficult to penetrate. But all this is reported to Abercrombie as a comparatively flimsy work. And up towards it from the outlet march the refreshed battalions, little foreseeing their fate. Behind the embankment thousands of loaded muskets await their coming and the artillery men are at their posts; and over all was the intrepid general, his coat off, and nothing escaping his watchfulness. Waiting until they "could count the buttons on the Englishmen's coats," a line of flame ran along the embankments and the forests are filled with death and groaning in an instant. Heroically the English soldiers fought, returning again and again to the assault, only to be hurled back in disorder. A few of the impetuous Highlanders reached the entrenchments, scaled the side and sprang in among the French only to die at their feet. Abercrombie, from his place of safety, ordered forward battalion after battalion, and each in turn fell back shattered and defeated. The retreat sounded. Routed, conquered, the remnant of the proud army started for their landing at Lake George — a retreat that became a rout, and the rout a panic; wounded left on the field; dead unburied; stores sacrificed.

Abercrombie was very properly recalled and superseded in the following year by Lord Amherst. Again an army of 11,000 men sailed down Lake George and appeared before Ticonderoga July 26th, 1759. The fortress was won without bloodshed. His purpose was to capture the fort by a prolonged

siege ; but the force left in possession by Montcalm (under Boulamarque) was not large, and had been greatly weakened for the better protection of Quebec against the oncoming of Wolfe, and four days after the investment the fort was set on fire and abandoned. The English general immediately began to enlarge and strengthen the works. Crown Point was also soon evacuated to be occupied by Amherst, who spent \$10,000,000 in the erection of a magnificent fortress at that point.

At Ticonderoga was established a small ship yard and a flotilla built, which brought on the first naval engagement on Lake Champlain, by attacking the French fleet at Plattsburg. Amherst and his army remained at Crown Point and Ticonderoga during the ensuing winter.

It was in the winter of this year (1758) that occurred the event which gave the name to Rogers's rock. This is a precipitous rocky elevation rising from the western shore of Lake George to an altitude of 600 feet, just south of the boundary between Essex and Warren counties ; its face stands at an angle of twenty-five degrees from the perpendicular. The story of Rogers, the ranger, is well known but often misstated. With a small scouting party he was returning in the winter from the vicinity of Crown Point to Fort George. The French then occupied Fort Ticonderoga and had outposts along the outlet of the lake. Avoiding these he plunged across the plateau into the forests of Trout brook valley, hoping to reach Lake George without a skirmish. The spot is still pointed out where the party first discovered an Indian lying down and drinking from the brook. Firing upon him, they soon found that they were in a large ambushade of infuriated savages. A fierce battle ensued on the sloping ground between the brook and the East mountain. Numerous arrows, bullets, knives, tomahawks and other relics have since been plowed up on this ground, seeming to attest the truth of the traditionary battle. All of Rogers's men were killed, and he retreated on snow shoes up the gorge, closely pursued by the Indians. Traversing the summits of the mountains separating the valley from Lake George, he soon came to its abrupt southern terminus, having meanwhile devised a possible means of escape. With the savages not half a mile in the rear, he walked boldly down to the edge of the precipice and hurriedly unlashed his knapsack and slid it down the face of the rock. Then unbinding the tight thongs of his snow shoes, he turned himself about on them, taking care to scuffle the snow somewhat, and retreated, thus reversing his tracks along the southern brow of the rock, descended a gorge, came around to the foot of the "slide," reshoulderred the knapsack and fled on the ice to Fort George. This ruse, of course, left two tracks from different directions meeting at the edge of the precipice. The savages on coming up supposed that two individuals had met there and cast themselves down the rock, either in a scuffle, if they were foes, or in fear, if they were friends, rather than fall into savage hands. Many a deer forced to leap off that height had been crushed to death,



and what was therefore their astonishment to behold the active major hurrying off, alive and with legs unbroken, after a fall of 200 feet. The savages at once concluded that a man who could pass unscathed through such an ordeal, must be under the miraculous care of the Great Spirit, and they pursued him no farther. From this incident has come down the name of "Rogers's slide."

Lake Champlain was now in the hands of the English, with the two strong fortifications on its shores; but they seemed to scarcely need it until their own tyrannical acts brought down upon their heads the great strike for liberty in 1776. During this period the busy hand of time had initiated the decay of Ticonderoga, while the works at Crown Point reached a still weaker condition. In 1773 General Hildebrand was in command of the two fortresses, and he announced to his government that the fort at Crown Point was "entirely destroyed," and that at Ticonderoga in a "ruinous condition," and that both would "not cover fifty men in winter." This was doubtless an exaggerated statement, as fifteen years could scarcely have worked such havoc upon these strongholds. However, weakened as they doubtless were, the commanding position and natural defenses of the two situations could not be altered. Aroused by the guns of Lexington, the inhabitants of the colonies who were widely separated from each other, turned their attention to the capture of the Lake Champlain forts. Accordingly in May, 1775, Ethan Allen, at the head of eighty-three Green Mountain Boys, appeared at dawn before the sally-port of Ticonderoga. The sentry was doubtless surprised; but he snapped his gun, which missed fire, and retreated into the fort closely followed by the patriots. Had his gun, pointed directly at Allen's breast, been discharged, who can say what momentous changes it might have wrought in later events. The little band of Green Mountaineers marched in upon the square, an alarm was raised and Allen demanded the appearance of the commander, Captain de la Place. He came from his peaceful couch and received the demand for instant surrender of the garrison, upon the "authority of the great Jehovah and the continental congress." The garrison consisted of only forty-nine men, whose capture constituted the first prisoners taken in the Revolution. Ticonderoga again changed hands without a battle. On the following day Crown Point, with its then insignificant garrison of twelve men, fell into the hands of the Continentals. Upon this feature of our subject Joseph Cook wrote in his pamphlet to which we have alluded: —

"So important to the colonies was this victory and so romantic the circumstances under which the surprise was executed, that the memory of Ethan Allen will be co-existent with history. It may be doubted, however, whether the bravery of his exploit has not been overstated. The forces were eighty-four men, wide awake, with reinforcements at their back, against forty-nine asleep. Besides, the fort was in a dilapidated condition; its sentinels were inefficient; duty and discipline were exceedingly lax. Phelps, one of the com-

mittee who gave Allen his official power, and who had visited the fort as a barber the day before its capture, reported these facts to Allen. It was a reckless, well-executed providential surprise; and, though full of bravery, was by no means so conspicuous a display of that military virtue, as the Green Mountain Boys and Allen had often before made. Was it anything remarkable that at Crown Point 100 men fresh from victory should surprise and take a sergeant and ten lazy Red coats in a garrison that had been reported two years before as 'entirely destroyed?' Arnold, it will be remembered, whose reputation for courage and reckless daring has never been impeached, however infamous his other qualities, marched by the side of Allen from the poising of the fire-locks on the shore to the triumphant entrance into the parade. Of course, La Place, with one-third of his forty-eight men taken prisoners, the enemy in the heart of his fortress, Allen's sword over his head allowing him neither time to argue nor power to resist, could do nothing but surrender. The true merit of the exploit consists in the wary approach to the fortress, the bold and sudden onset, and the imperative demand at the commandant's door, which made the whole attack such a complete surprise, and which Ethan Allen, of all men, was best fitted to execute. Yet, after all, providential aid was the turning point, for had not the sentinel's gun missed fire, or had the boats been procured twenty minutes later for the crossing, it would be difficult to say what would have been the fate of the enterprise."

Timid and still loyal to Great Britain, Congress ordered that the stores and armament of Ticonderoga be removed to the head of Lake George and a strong fortification erected there. An inventory of all property so removed was also ordered taken, "in order that they may be safely returned when the restoration of harmony between Great Britain and her colonies, so ardently desired by the latter, shall render it prudent and consistent with the over-ruling law of self-preservation." This proposal was not executed and the armament of Ticonderoga subsequently became of great value to the Americans in operations near Boston.

On the 11th of September, 1776, occurred the beginning of the memorable naval battle on Lake Champlain between the fleets of Sir Guy Carleton and Benedict Arnold, near Valcour Island, which was continued farther south on the 13th. It ended in the defeat of the American vessels, and had this success been promptly followed up by Carleton, it is certain that a desperate conflict would have ensued, the result of which would have been, to say the least, doubtful. In expectation of such an event the fort at Ticonderoga was put in better condition by the American forces stationed there. But Carleton retired to Canada.

Quiet reigned at Ticonderoga until the summer of 1777, when General John Burgoyne, upon whom rests the stigma of having deliberately hired the savages to aid him in conquering the Americans, came up the lake, scattering



boastful proclamations that were intended to terrorize the inhabitants and render his victory still more easy. The occasion was a critical one. Major-general Schuyler was then in command of the northern department, with General St. Clair in immediate command of Ticonderoga and its dependencies. Burgoyne's army comprised in gross about 7,500 men. The small garrison at Crown Point abandoned that position and fell back to Ticonderoga, before which the British encamped on the 1st of July. Energetic efforts had been put forth to strengthen the works and much had been accomplished (see Chapter XIV); but Sugar Loaf Hill, the lofty eminence directly west of the fort and overlooking it (Mount Defiance) had not, unfortunately, been fortified. The fact was undoubtedly occasioned by a prevailing belief that it was almost inaccessible, and the lack of sufficient men to accomplish the work. Mount Hope also, now the peaceful resting place of the dead, which commanded the outlet and the communications with Lake George, was not fortified. These important facts were soon discovered by the British, who were stationed on both sides of the lake and on two frigates and several gunboats. St. Clair hoped and believed that the British assault would be made against the old French lines, and therefore withdrew his troops at the saw-mill and from the block-houses on the outposts. The British thereupon took immediate possession of Mount Hope, their sanguine expectations from that event leading them to give it the name it has since borne. There they entrenched, hurriedly building lines which can be faintly traced to this day. During two days of arduous labor they dragged a battery of cannon to this eminence.<sup>1</sup> Meanwhile Sugar Loaf Hill had been reconnoitered by Burgoyne's chief engineer. It was, of course, reported as unfortified, perfectly overlooking and commanding the fort, and what was of vastly more importance to them, could be reached by a road for cannon in twenty-four hours. From that moment Ticonderoga was doomed. All night long the British axes rang in the forest that climbed the steep acclivity, as once before the French axes had disturbed a night on the plain below. The noise of the choppers on the present occasion was drowned by the continued pounding of artillery from Mount Hope, which was answered from the old French lines.

At this juncture appears Rev. Thomas Allen,<sup>2</sup> who from 1764 was forty-five years pastor of the First Congregational Church of Pittsfield, Mass., chaplain with General Lincoln at White Plains in 1776, and again at Ticonderoga in June and July, 1777, and also serving as a volunteer with musket in hand. He collected money and clothing for the poorly clad and poorly paid soldiers,

---

<sup>1</sup> Mount Hope is an abrupt and rocky elevation on the west side of the outlet of Lake Horicon (George) near the lower falls. It is especially rough and precipitous on the northeast side. Ranges for breastwork, angles for cannons, etc., enclosing about four acres are yet to be seen upon this interesting locality; also near by a log bridge over a marsh, built for the transportation of the cannon.—MR. COOK'S Pamphlet.

<sup>2</sup> Uncle of the mother of Colonel William E. Calkins, of Ticonderoga.

and, as the historian of Pittsfield well says, "appears to have managed what answered for a Christian and sanitary commission." His diary kept while at Ticonderoga, throws much light upon the campaign of that memorable summer. A few hours before Ticonderoga was evacuated by the Continental troops, and when, with the enemy in full sight, a battle or siege was imminent, Mr. Allen addressed the soldiers, and a portion of his patriotic, devout words is well worth quoting as showing the spirit of the man and the times: "Valiant soldiers, should our enemies attack us, I exhort and conjure you to play the man. Let no dangers appear too great, let no suffering appear too severe for you to encounter for your bleeding country. Of God's grace assisting me, I am determined to fight and die by your side rather than flee before our enemies, or resign myself up to them. Prefer death to captivity; ever remember your unhappy brethren made prisoners at Fort Washington, whose blood now cries to Heaven for vengeance, and shakes the pillars of the world, saying, 'How long O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not avenge our blood on them that dwell upon the earth?' Rather than quit this ground with infamy and disgrace, I should prefer leaving this body of mine a corpse on this spot.

"I must finally recommend to you, and urge it upon you again and again, in time of action to keep silence; let all be hush and calm, serene and tranquil, that the word of command may be distinctly heard and resolutely obeyed.

"And may the God of heaven take us all under his protection and cover our heads in the day of battle, and grant unto us his salvation."<sup>1</sup>

The sunrise breeze of the 5th played with the floating banners of the British on the pinnacle overlooking the fortress. The Britons felt the impregnability and power of their position and named it Mount Defiance. They could look down on every movement of their enemy and could toss red-hot shot directly into their works. No wonder St. Clair called a council of war. His situation was pitiful. To evacuate the fort was to lose his reputation; to hold it was to sacrifice his army. His defenses were strong enough, but he had been given but about 3,500 men, the fort was weak in supplies of all kinds and his men poorly armed. Immediate evacuation was determined upon. As the British could perceive every movement of the beleaguered fortress, the evacuation must be made in the night and with the utmost caution. Then followed a heavy cannonade from the lines to cover the noise of preparation; the lights were put out and stores, sick and women hastily prepared for the retreat. At three o'clock on the morning of the 6th the troops began to cross the bridge to the eastern shore. All went well. Suddenly the heavens were illuminated by the fires of a burning building which had been ignited in direct contradiction of orders. Then followed the swift pursuit, the moonlight voyage to Skenesborough, the hurried retreat of the land forces through the Vermont forests, the battle at Hubbardton and the final escape of the broken army to

<sup>1</sup> Substantially. — *History of Pittsfield, Mass.*



Fort Edward, which scenes have been already described in detail in our early chapters.

The next and last military event that has left its halo of historic interest around the crumbling walls of Ticonderoga, occurred in September, 1777. While Burgoyne was pressing down the valley of the Hudson towards Albany, General Lincoln, in command of the troops to the east of that river, made an attempt to recover Ticonderoga and the other posts in the rear of the invaders. He detailed Colonel John Brown with five hundred men for this purpose. Brown landed at the foot of Lake George, and by rapid movements surprised the posts between there and Ticonderoga. He took possession of the old French lines of Mount Hope and attempted the occupation of Mount Defiance, capturing 290 prisoners, 200 bateaux, several gunboats, and released 100 American prisoners. "He found it impracticable with his force to hold Ticonderoga and Mount Independence opposite, and rejoined Lincoln." On hearing of the retreat of Burgoyne at Saratoga the British garrison left at Ticonderoga retreated to Canada, were pursued, and forty-nine of their number, with cattle, horses and boats, taken by the Green Mountain rangers; but the fortress was again occupied in 1780 by the British General Haldibrand, and "became the scene of those diplomatic negotiations between Vermont and England which have been so often discussed and which historians have enveloped in such obscurity. Public documents, however, are not wanting to show that the armistice established between Haldibrand and the Vermont authorities and the negotiations which followed were not dictated by any disloyalty to Congress on the part of Allen, Chittenden and others who were engaged in them, but by the most consummate political sagacity. A masterly diplomatic bait and inactivity were used to shield the whole northern frontier, and effectually arrested for a long period the action of Haldibrand's tenthous and troops. Soon came peace, then destroying time, crumbling walls, venerableness, and visitors, to the present day."<sup>1</sup>

Perhaps we can do no better in describing the present condition of the historic ruins of Ticonderoga than to use the language of Mr. Cook, as the changes wrought by time since the date of his publication are insignificant. The grounds surrounding the ruins and extending outward to embrace six hundred acres were purchased many years ago by Archibald Pell, and the Pavilion Hotel was erected by Beecher Higby, a Glens Falls architect. The grounds were handsomely laid out and included the supposed site of the battle between Champlain and the Indians. This house was opened as a public hotel in 1838. Mr. Pell occupied it, but he was destined to enjoy his property only a short time. He had a small cannon with which it was his custom to salute the approaching steamers. In firing this on one occasion it burst, killing him instantly. The property has, however, remained in the Pell estate to the present time. Mr. Cook wrote: "In approaching the ruins of Fort Ticonderoga,

---

<sup>1</sup>MR. COOK'S Pamphlet.

as a majority of visitors do, walking up along the road from the lake or the Pavilion Hotel, the first object of interest is the old well by the roadside at the right, which supplied water to the garrisons. Though not as safe as if within the fortress, it is protected from capture by its nearness to the covering bastions of the fort, and by its position on a side on which the enemy would not be likely to approach. The sally-port of the fortress is upon the opposite side. You notice the size and depth of the well. Its inner diameter is seven feet and four inches; the depth to which a pole can now be run down ten feet and three inches; the thickness of the wall thirty inches. Though an unfailing spring, the water is rendered unfit for use by the old rotting logs and green moss and slime that are allowed to fill it. Bunches of elder cling to the inner wall and the frogs on the floating slabs are not too far down to be out of the sunlight.

“Turning to the left from the well you follow a path up the ascent to the opening of the covered way which led out to the well. That path is the very one along which, in the gray dawn of the May morning, guided by Nathan Beaman, a Vermont boy familiar with the passages of the garrison, Ethan Allen and his eighty men approached the fort. Those two elm trees, covered with vines, stand just beyond the wicket gate or entrance to the covered way, where the sentinel snapped the fusee. This was the back door of the fortress, and Ethan entered without knocking. You cannot enter the covered way, for it is now filled up and marked only by a lengthened hollow. On each side of this, however, especially nearer the outer extremity, under the trees, you can trace the walls of the passage along the surface of the ground, thirty-three inches apart, and if you care for relics, may gather a lock of moss or pound off a piece of the limestone from the very opening of that marked spot in history. There is no doubt about the locality: Ethan Allen’s narrative, other accounts, tradition, the position of the well, the sunken way, and walls before you, all go to establish the identity of the spot. You follow the depression to the left twenty-five paces to the edge of the counterscarp, which you mount, and tumbling across the ruins of the eastern line of barracks, at the extreme southern end, of which the foundations only remain, you find the passage entering the parade ground at its southeast corner, seven feet wide. Here with swift feet poured in Ethan Allen’s men; on the two longer sides they were arranged; forty in a row facing the barracks, so as to be ready to receive the garrison, then waked by the invading parties’ tremendous cheers.

“To have a clear idea of Ethan Allen’s memorable surprise, you must imagine the ruined barracks on the south, east and north to be restored, windows in, oak doors on their hinges, roofs renewed, a gallery running around the entire inclosure in front of the second story, and this bright flood of summer light exchanged to the deep shadows of the hour before sunrise. In the northwest corner of the parade ground toward Mount Defiance you must see



a pair of wooden stairs mounting to the gallery. Up these stairs Ethan Allen hurries, with young Beaman at his elbow, and stands before the first door in the second story at the south end of the west line of barracks. You hear the loud rapping with the hilt of his sword; you see La Place open the door, yet in his night dress, with a candle in his hand; you see his pretty wife peeping over his shoulder, shuddering while the barrack doors are beaten down. You hear the parley, the demand, the expostulating, the ring of Ethan Allen's sword, and oaths, and the surrender. Then, if you wait, you may see the garrison paraded without arms. The wild delight of the victors, that sunrise which Allen recorded as one of 'superior lustre,' while all the while around the counterscarp boom the cannon that announce to the continent the first victory of American liberty. If you turn back to Ethan Allen's own graphic account of the scene you will find nothing to contradict the correctness of your information as to localities. The persons and events are not more sure. The testimony of Isaac Rice, whose brother was with Ethan Allen at that time, and who himself performed garrison duty here under St. Clair, often given to the writer and to travelers, establishes all other traditions and records, that the door in the upper story, south end of the eastern line of barracks, was actually that of the chamber of La Place. Some curious tourists take the trouble to carry away a bit of the plaster from that chamber or of limestone from the casing of that door, and whatever value one's taste may set upon the relics, their authenticity cannot be questioned.

"You stand now in the center of the fortress, an open square made by two-story barracks, substantially built of limestone. Those to the west are yet standing; those to the south, partially ruined; those to the east and north, entirely destroyed, except the foundations and cellar walls. This square was the parade ground. You pace it, and make it one hundred and sixty feet long by about seventy feet broad. The thistles stand thick about the stones scattered over the green sward on which the lengthening shadows of the ruins fall. Roofless, doorless, windowless, the old barracks have a ghastly appearance as they stare at you across the parade ground. Two stories, each with six ghastly window holes with no panes but air, no sash but spider webs and ivy, remind one strongly of the dilapidating power of time. Yet Fort Ticonderoga is one of the best preserved ruins of its age and material on the continent. You enter the barracks and find the old plaster firm yet on the walls of the apartments. Large fire-places, with chimneys carried up within the walls, remind you of the cosy times officers and men must have had there when wood was plenty and enemies few. Yet cosy times bred indolence, and indolence riot and desertion, and so punishment was needed now and then. In this alley, between the ends of the west and south barracks, was a gallows, and that portion of a burnt and rotten beam standing out of the wall is said to have been a part of it.

“Immediately before you as you leave the alley, ten feet wide, toward Mount Defiance are several abrupt grassy mounds, said to have been made by the blowing up of the magazine, an underground room located under them, in this exposed part of the fortress.

“In the warm sunlight of this summer’s day, the time will be well spent if you find your way down the steep bastion toward the south and sit down to rest a moment upon the extreme edge of the outer wall overlooking the outlet of Lake George toward Mount Defiance and study the landscape with its associations. It is a descent of one hundred feet down the steep edge of this spur corner, along the bushes and the little bit of pasture to the water of the lake. A regiment of young sumachs press up the acclivity of the ruins at the foot of the fall and almost scale the summit; over them twines the ivy, forming stacks of green shadow, and conquering by gently winning tendrils, where the soldier with bayonet and cannon might strive in vain, mounts to the very top and looks into the inclosure. The song of the cricket undulates in the warmth of the sunlight. The chirps of bird and squirrel among the bushes mingle with the scarce heard plash of water on the beach and the sounds from a distant farm-house. The lumber-loaded craft on the lake remind you of the invaluable water power at Ticonderoga. A steamer has just passed and leaves a white track on the still water, where once, beneath the guns from this fort, nothing above the surface could pass and live. That track you will remember is that for the command of which two great nations struggled, poured out the blood of armies and treasure by millions.

“Opposite your resting-place in Vermont, the well-wooded slope of Mount Independence, 750 feet above ‘Champlain,’ mantled in the sun with deep green and heavy shadows. The table land of its summit has three rich spots of earth; burial grounds of soldiers, all save one indistinguished graves with little rough headstones with no inscriptions,—and that one a name unknown. The hospital was on Mount Independence. Should you give yourself the pleasure of a boat ride across the waters between Grenadier’s battery at the end of this promontory yonder, and Mount Independence, over the very waters passed by the bridge and boom broken by Burgoyne, you would find the edge of the pasture in which you land flanked by a battery next the water, and on the summit the horse shoe battery of the old picket fort enclosing a platform and table of picnic parties, beside the ruins of the hospital and the graves. In the depth of a July moonlight night you might see that mount as it looked when St. Clair retreated over it, leaving this fortress to Burgoyne. Travelers ought to visit Mount Independence, but it will be something more than a majority can boast if you look at it and know what is there.

“Across the outlet of Horicon the bold and rocky side of Mount Defiance, sloping to the sun, presents a glory of light and shade. Its summit commands us. Ten bristling cannon there, though two miles away, would defeat a hun-



dred mounted here. They knew it in St. Clair's time, but they had not men enough to man the mountain. The mere sight of the red coats and their battery, commanding there, drove St. Clair's army out of these strong walls. Looking yonder, Montcalm, returning from the old French lines where Abercrombie had sacrificed two thousand troops in a vain attempt to take the fort, made his proud boast that he could take Carillon with two cannon and six mortars. The beautiful clouds in a sky than which earth had not a bluer, are at this moment the background against which the mountain pines pencil their forms — living green against silver white and both aglow in blue. Peacefully fall the shadows of the orchard trees; peacefully spread the farms and rise the wooded lots; peacefully the cattle yonder, wading from the low point, standing in the cool splash of the waves among the lillies; yet, over these same hills roamed Rogers, Stark and Putnam in another age; over these same waters and valleys echoed martial music, boom of musketry and cannon, shouts of combat, groans of infuriated hosts, in days long gone by. War's stern traces only become sublime by contrast with the scenes of peace.

"The broad spreading elm between you and the lake, stands in a lengthened sinking of the pasture which they tell us was the underground passage to the lake. It has never been explored, yet you may mark distinctly what seems to be the place where it entered the walls. It is the shortest cut to the water's edge, and no doubt was used as a protecting though not probably as a secret passage.

"One tradition before you rises. This bastion has a story, reported in some rare books and apparently well authenticated. An Indian girl of remarkable beauty, taken during the French wars, was confined in this fortress. Her attractions cost her the coarse and dogged attentions of a French officer, whom all her scorn and vehemence could not cast off. Completely in his power, her life became a continual torture. Walking by compulsion with him one night upon the walls, she saved her virtue by leaping from this giddy parapet upon the rocks below. The very limestone of this wall is ennobled, the very ruins among which she fell are glorified, by the touch of feet upbearing such a spirit and soul as hers. You will never forget the spot where, distracted, mangled, and dying, that Indian girl fell, nor regret the savage vehemence which pursued her murderer and his garrison.

"As you rise now and follow the outer walls to the north, you soon come to a break with an inleading path, which marks the old spot of the entrance and sally-port. It is well to stop and think how many commanders and soldiers have gone in and out, sometimes with hearts trembling before battles, sometimes exulting in victory — Montcalm, Amherst, Allen, Gates, St. Clair, Breyman, Haldibrand. The whole fort is in the form of a star, with nine sharp spangles. You notice also that the entire north side of the fortress, as you walk around it, keeping on the counterscarp (fifteen to thirty feet wide), close

to the outer wall, was protected by a deep trench or covered way of sixteen feet wide by ten deep, flowing in two places, one near the entrance and the other opposite the northern barracks around high bastions. This side was the most exposed, the height of the parapet not being increased here as on the opposite by the precipitousness of the ground, and this being the side next the line from which an enemy would naturally approach. No trench was needed on the south side, the height of the walls forming a sufficient defense against any attack possible from that quarter. Sharp angles in the counterscarp are matched by curves in the trench which, leading in and out, and standing so firmly after more than a century, must have been a splendid piece of masonry. Climbing up the side of the bastions, and weaving across the wide trench, the ivy covers the nests of birds in the straggling shrubs, and adds its strength and protection to the mortar in the walls. In crossing to where you entered, you go down to the bottom of the trench near its east end. A soft carpet of green grass now mantles the place where the old floor lay. Instead of the tramp of feet, the jay sings sharply out to you from the solitary fallen pine that overshadowed the ramparts. Sombre is your walk: There are the marks of the old blasting iron, held and driven by hands long since cold.

"But you climb a steep ascent out of the trench and stand, perhaps unconsciously, above one of the best preserved portions of the ruins. It is the oven, entered by a passage way through the cellar in the north end of the ruins of the east line of barracks, directly in the corner of the parade ground toward the Pavilion. It is visited daily by scores in the season of travel, as the countless names on the walls testify.

"A squirrel chirps and runs into his hole as you stoop through a low square door and enter an arched underground apartment, twelve feet wide and thirty in length, perfectly bomb proof. It is some ten feet high and the bottom covered with stone and earth fallen in. As the iris expands in the darkness, you notice two ovens in the farther end, ten feet deep, eight broad, and nearly six in height. There is a tradition that a passage runs from these underground to the lake; but it has never been explored and from the distance to the lake in this direction, it is exceedingly uncertain. A substantial and safe kitchen is this room, however. Shot or shell could hardly reach here, that is, with the old guns, for with our modern artillery Ticonderoga's walls could doubtless be battered down. But the mortar is thick and strong yet; the old engineers were not chary of the limestone on which and with which the fort is built. A sky-light five feet by three, opens on one side of this arched roof, through which provisions were probably let down into the store-room. You look up to see the frown of no armed watch, no steady-pacing, sober sentinel; but, instead of these, the white flowers of the daisy or the yellow of the golden rod, a bush of alder, and far above, the blue depths of the sky.

"As you come out of the oven and find yourself in one of the old cel-



lars of the barracks, you notice that some of the old beams and posts are standing. A knife applied to their heavy gray corners will show that they are of oak from the magnificent hard wood forests of the old times.

“Standing again on the grassy mound above the underground room just left, there remains but one more look to take; an extended landscape is around you, rarely surpassed in natural beauty or in richness of historical associations. The lake and the clear outlet of Horicon circle and defend the promontory on every side but one. In the woods on the fourth side to the north are the old French lines. These, the most interesting portion of the fortress for immense loss of life, can be seen from the road leading to the village. The breastworks can be traced for a thousand paces through the woods, full of angles and fronted by a ditch. The bloody battle-field was just in front of them. Mounts Independence and Defiance are close at hand, while high in the distance to the east rise the Green Mountains, clothed in softest blue seen through a crystal atmosphere. It is said by travelers that nothing in America is so like Italy as the view of the Green Mountains from the New York shore of Lake Champlain. That point of the Vermont shore nearly over the Pavilion is that from which Ethan Allen debarked, and the shore opposite clothed in alders, where he landed. Call up now all the history connected with the spot, all the fierce struggles of the past for the possession of those gray walls, as you may, and their grim quiet and desolation, their solemn, mournful smile in the sunlight as you say farewell, is sufficiently impressive. Over the grounds, instead of gleaming steel or cannon ball, the soft thistle downs float in the rising wind. Instead of the Cross of Saint George, the tricolor or the stripes, the ivy leaves rustle on the ramparts, and in and out at the broken windows go undisturbed the singing birds, with nests within the walls. At times as you stand in reverie listening to your thoughts — perhaps in a summer evening when the ruins are most impressive — the scarce heard plash of waves around the promontory, and the sighing of the lake wind among the leaves and broken angles of the ramparts, seem transformed to a still, mysterious voice, as of a spirit in the air. ‘It is gone — gone — gone,’ saith the pulsating sound, keeping harmony with your thoughts, ‘Montcalm, Abercrombie, Howe, Amherst, Allen, St. Clair, Burgoyne — Indian, French, English, Colonist — burning torch — savage cry — pouring blood — booming gun — nevermore — nevermore — nevermore.’ And the waves, irregular, beginning low and growing louder with glad emphasis along the shore, seem to answer: ‘Evermore, evermore, — peace, peace, peace.’ These are among the lessons of all military ruins, especially of Fort Ticonderoga. No visitor should leave the scene of the first victory of American liberty without heartier gratitude for the immense results of the struggle here begun and a profounder sense of duty in the conflict of the present day, on which depends their enlargement and transmission. The old ruins proclaim that for the freedom of America the battles of military hosts are passed, those

of mind with mind remain. Peace, O, Carillon, we leave with thee, and go forth thoughtfully, less noble soldiers in nobler wars than thine."

Since these lines were written, and contrary to their confident prediction, America, whose peace seemed so secure, has passed through an internecine struggle beside which the battles of Ticonderoga were but insignificant skirmishes; but the Republic again triumphed; freedom and the union are maintained and liberty lives.

As a contribution to the descriptions of the vicinity of Ticonderoga, let us see what the observing Dr. Thacher, of St. Clair's army wrote in 1777, under the heading, "View from a high mountain;" said he:—

"By way of amusement I went with three gentlemen of our hospital, to endeavor to explore a high mountain [undoubtedly Mount Defiance] in this vicinity. With much difficulty we clambered up and reached the summit. From this commanding eminence we had one of the most singularly romantic views which imagination can paint. Northward we behold Lake Champlain, a prodigious expanse of unruffled water, widening and straightening as the banks and cliffs project into its channel. This lake extends about 100 miles towards Quebec, and is from one to five miles wide. On each side is a thick, uninhabited wilderness, variegated by hills and dales; here the majestic oak, chestnut and pine, rear their lofty heads; there the diminutive shrub forms a thicket for the retreat of wild beasts. Looking southwest from our stand, we have a view of a part of Lake George, emptying its waters into Lake Champlain near Ticonderoga. Turning to the east, the prodigious heights called Green Mountains, ascending almost to the clouds, are exhibited to view, with the settlements in that tract of territory called New Hampshire grant. The ancient fortress at Crown Point is about twelve miles north of this place; it is by nature a very strong position but it has been abandoned by both armies."

*Formation and natural characteristics.* — Ticonderoga<sup>1</sup> was formed from the old town of Crown Point, on the 20th of March, 1804, at the same time that the town of Schroon was organized. It lies in the southeast corner of the county, upon the shore of Lake Champlain. The surface of the town is made up of a plateau of about twenty square miles in the northwest part of the town and reaching back from Lake Champlain; a valley about six miles long and averaging a mile in width which runs centrally south to the shores of Lake George, a small section of the foot of which extends within the limits of the town; the mountains that rise from nearly one-half of the territory chiefly in the west and north parts; and the streams and ponds that form the drainage and supply one of the finest water-powers in the State. "The broad field of clay, sloping from the feet of Miller and Buck Mountains to the lake, forming the north part of the town and including its richest farming section, is evidently

---

<sup>1</sup> The Indian names, "Tsinondrosie," or "Cheonderoga," signify "brawling waters," or "where the waters meet." There are eight or nine other Indian titles.



an ancient alluvial deposit. The channel of the creek and the valley once rose, according to geologists, as high as the plateau mentioned, and Lakes George and Champlain were united; the waters stood level from this town to the Green Mountains. This was long before man came upon the earth. As the great waters in the course of the Creator's wisdom were drained away, the mountain bowls still held the young lakes and gathered from the clouds the early sources of the streams; these channeled the earth into valleys. Hence the village of Ticonderoga stands in a great hollow scooped out by the outlet of Lake George, and all the valleys and ravines were dug by the flowing streams. The mountains that have withstood the changes of ages were lifted from the surface by the action of internal fires and then cooled into the shapes they have ever since maintained; but along their sides jutting out under the soil, we find sandstone and level strata of rocks showing the ridges made by the washing of waves, far from any flowing waters ever known to man — marks of the great sea which once overspread and molded this region, as it did all other sections of the continent."

The Ticonderoga plateau now lies 200 feet above the level of Lake Champlain; the lower village about 100 feet and Trout brook valley slopes from 300 to 150 feet above the lake. Upon the plateau are few water courses or springs, and it was once covered with a massive and dense pine forest.

\* Trout brook flows northeastward from near the southern boundary of the town at about the center of the line, and making a graceful bend at the westward of the Lower Village, flows eastward and joins the outlet at the Lower Falls. The valley of this stream is lovely beyond description in natural beauty; bounded on both sides by the majestic mountains, and likewise closed at its southern end, whose frowning and rugged sides look down upon a fertile, winding strip of cultivated lands, dotted with groves and neat dwellings. It seems in summer time almost an earthly paradise.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Cook made the statement that in 1858 in a grove of this valley could be seen the elm, maple, butternut, basswood, beech, pine, black birch, white birch, ash, ironwood, oak, hemlock, red cedar, walnut and poplar, all within a circle of a dozen rods—fifteen different woods, and all planted by nature's hand.

Between the cliffs about the foot of Lake George and the shores of Lake Champlain, the original forest was undoubtedly almost a dense labyrinth. We have read of war parties becoming bewildered and lost in its depths. The Indians, endowed with peculiar faculties fitting them for their forest life, could penetrate these vastnesses with impunity; but the whites were forced to open pathways before they could safely carry on their operations. On the outlet the French built a saw-mill while the erection of their fort was in progress, and before the revolutionizing and destructive armies and the inroads of set-

<sup>1</sup> Owing to the rugged character of portions of the surface about the southern end of the valley, the locality acquired in early years the possibly picturesque, but inelegant name of "Toughertown"—a name that should be foresworn by all inhabitants of the town.

tlers, the grand old forest fell. A second growth sprang up over most of the region; soft wood following as a rule where hard wood grew in the first instance, and *vice versa*. In these forests and on the mountain sides the deer roamed in great numbers, and Trout brook derives its name from the thousands of this unsurpassed fish that were found in its waters by the pioneers. Mr. Cook wrote in 1858 that the "harvest fields of Trout brook valley are often enlivened by a deer crossing" them; "Through the pastures, where they are sometimes seen feeding with the cattle, and even through the gardens more than once a summer do they yet follow their runway to the waters of Hori-con." Peaceably they can wander here, for they are not hunted as farther back. Learned Rich, the old hunter, whose father Nathaniel planted the first orchard of the valley near the time of the Revolution, shot many a buck and doe without leaving his door-yard. Bears and wolves were somewhat numerous in early days, and rattlesnakes were exceedingly numerous, old settlers stating that they "were literally as thick as toads." They infested barns and out-buildings and were even found on pantry shelves and ensconced between the logs of bed-room walls.<sup>1</sup> These dangerous reptiles have now almost entirely disappeared, though they were somewhat numerous at what was known as Rattlesnake Den near Rogers's Rock on Lake George down to a recent date.<sup>2</sup>

This town is rich in mineral wealth, the chief products being iron and graphite. The opening and working of these valuable deposits will be treated further on. In the south part of the town the naturalist finds ample attractions. Augite, Plumbago, Feldspar and Titanium (first discovered here), the four combined in one mass, are now represented in cabinets in all parts of the world. Garnet, red, yellow, black and green coccalite, and other specimens are also found.

We have alluded to the great value of the water-power developed on the outlet of Lake George. This stream falls more than one hundred and fifty

---

<sup>1</sup> *A Rattlesnake by the Tail*.—Soon after my arrival here, a soldier had the imprudence to seize a rattlesnake by the tail; the reptile threw his head back and buried his fangs into the man's hand. In a few moments swelling commenced, attended with severe pain. It was not more than half an hour when his whole arm to his shoulder was swollen to twice its natural size, and the skin became a deep orange color. His body on one side soon became affected in a similar manner, and a nausea at his stomach ensued. The poor man was greatly and justly alarmed; his situation was very critical. Two medical men beside myself were in close attendance for several hours. Having procured a quantity of olive oil, we directed the patient to swallow it in large and repeated doses, till he had taken one quart; and at the same time we rubbed into the affected limb a very large quantity of mercurial ointment. In about two hours we had the satisfaction to perceive the favorable effect of the remedy. The alarming symptoms abated, the swelling and pain gradually subsided, and in about forty-eight hours he was happily restored to health.—DR. THACHER'S *Journal*, 1777.

<sup>2</sup> The writer once knew an old man, who had lived for many years in the great wilderness, who often related around the camp-fire his experiences in capturing rattlesnakes at this den and in the vicinity with long pairs of wooden tongs, skinning them and extracting from their bodies the valuable oil, which was supposed to be a specific for rheumatism. He also often boxed up a number of the reptiles, took them to Albany and exhibited them.



feet in a distance of about a mile and a half; and the rapids and falls which drew from the Indians the musical name, have become the nucleus of great manufacturing interests. The course of the outlet is thus described by Mr. Cook: "As the waters emerged from the vast mountain bowl, within which they lie with scarce any perceptible current, their motion quickens into rapids at the head of the outlet. The quiet ripples gird up their loins for a race. Along the meadow shores for half a mile the broad stream gurgles gleefully to the bridge of the upper village. Entering here between rocky banks it approaches the edge of the upper falls and takes the leap. A foaming cataract now—broken, bounding and booming adown the cliffs . . . A slight turn heaves the volume of water some distance between a high rocky bank, surmounted by a thick stratum of clay upon the one side and the road upon the other, descending eleven feet to Split Rock, and thence, foaming over stones and eddying around islands of drift-wood, fourteen feet more to its confluence with Trout brook. This point is midway between the upper and lower villages. The broad and shallow stream hastens on, foaming around boulders that bathe in its currents, eddying past jutting rocks, growing wild and gleeful as it dances over its bed of stones, makes a descent of seventeen feet to the first bridge of the lower village. Its swift current is divided here, and then flows into a natural channel in the sandstone, where it descends forty-four feet before taking its plunge into the basin at the foot of the rapids; thence it foams past rocks and dams and then spreads out in the pond at the head of the lower falls. A widening here pours the volume in a steady sheet nearly two hundred feet in length, thirty feet over and adown a nearly perpendicular ledge of stratified rocks to the foot of the lower falls. Here the descent ends and a broad, navigable creek, flowing between banks of classic ground, empties the waters into the turbid currents of Champlain beneath the ramparts of Ticonderoga."

It will be seen from this description that the water-power available upon this stream is almost unlimited. It was a favorite topic and an ardent hope of the town half a century ago, that great factories for the manufacture of cotton goods, such as had been built in the Eastern States, would be erected on the outlet, and lay the foundations of a thriving city. Other kinds of mills and factories and forges would, it was confidently hoped and predicted, also be established here. The capacity of the immense water-power was estimated and the general plans of prospective structures on the banks of the stream discussed. Freshets are seldom destructive on the outlet and there was but one mile of land transportation between the upper falls and the navigable waters of Lake Champlain, while at the lower village, "by a natural harmony of arrangement unsurpassed and invaluable, vessels can come close up under the mills and load and unload at the very edge of the falls. Were the docks which commerce would call into existence constructed, the volume of water,

thrown into a narrow space, would channel the slight shallows of the creek, until water craft of the largest burthen could lie beam to beam with flouring mills, factories and forges."

Some of these advantages have been utilized; many have not. A large share of the water-power of the outlet was controlled by the agents of the English land-holder (the Honorable Edward Ellice), and not until since our last war was it placed in market upon such terms as could offer attractions to capitalists.

*Indian Battle Grounds.* — The aboriginal possessors of the continent had few dwellings between Lakes George and Champlain. Upon these rugged mountains, through arching forests, rocky pass and dark ravine, was spread the terror of civil butchery, of wild hate, of bloody revenge. It was the place where two great waves of Indian warfare met, struggled, sank and left their ruins. Few sounds, save of the war whoop and the wild birds and beasts; few movements save of human or brute forms, crouching, contending, retreating or simply passing by, disturbed the western shore of Champlain in its earliest ruggedness and beauty. "These parts, though agreeable," writes Samuel Champlain, in his journal of 1609, as he glided along the eastern shore of our county, "are not inhabited by any Indians in consequence of their wars." Upon the eastern shore of the lake, however, toward the Green Mountains, the Iroquois, the Hurons assured him, had many villages, which embraced "beautiful valleys and fields fertile in corn, with an infinitude of other fruits"—but along its gloomy and fearful western borders, few vestiges of Indian dwellings have been discovered. Weapons of war, however, some of early, but most of late date, are disturbed by the spade and plow-share with painfully significant frequency. Arrows from six inches to half an inch in length, of the most perfect finish; mortars, pestles, chisels, gouges, turned with the most surprising ingenuity; long knives of stone, shaped to a point and thickened at the back for strength; tomahawks of various sizes and states of preservation; Indian tobacco boxes, as they are called, curiously hollowed out of rounded stones; stray specimens of pottery, of great hardness, plowed up on the plateau at the north part of the town, along the creek, the flats of Trout brook, and especially near the rapids at the head of the outlet where the early carrying-place between the waters began, together with the bullets, gun-trappings, knives, buckles, buttons, coins and other traces of a later race, bear sad, eloquent and undeniable testimony to the history of savage passion, ingenuity, struggling and extermination, and also of pioneer discoveries, dangers and sacrifices.

In the warlike operations of which all these relics speak so eloquently, Lake Champlain was the highway of travel which perforce passed through this town in reaching Lake George. This was the route from the days of Champlain, as so clearly shown in his graphic journal, to the close of the Revolutionary War, over which contending forces marched and countermarched—ample reason



why it was never made a place of permanent occupation by the Indians, and scarcely more so by the whites until hostilities were ended.

*Settlements.* — The valley of Champlain offered little inducement to the settler, beautiful and fertile as it was, until after the close of the English and French war. The cession of Canada to England and the proclamation of the British king issued in October, 1763, authorizing the colonial governors to issue grants of land on either side of Lake Champlain, opened the way to purchase, immigration and settlement. Large grants were made to former British officers and soldiers who participated in the recent campaigns. We have mentioned the existence of the French saw-mill on the outlet, the building of which was contemporaneous with the erection of Fort Carillon. This mill undoubtedly furnished planks for the different constructions of that period between Crown Point and Lake George. This mill was destroyed during the war. For the site of what was known as the old "King's saw-mill" erected soon after the close of the first war (1763) a reservation of land was made by the crown, beginning, according to the deeds, "One chain above the High Falls," at Ticonderoga; the land reserved was all on the south side of the outlet at the south end of the Lower Falls. The irons for this mill were brought from England. Samuel Deall erected mills some years later on the opposite side of the stream. The reservation of crown lands, extended along the south shore of the creek to the long bridge (the ruins of which could be seen twenty years ago) where the military road from Crown Point and Ticonderoga to Fort George crossed the outlet. This then important spot lies exposed immediately under the old French lines on the east, Mount Hope on the west and Mount Defiance on the south. A broad road, most of which is now in the public highway, was cut through the forest from this bridge one mile to the head of the rapids at the place of embarkation on the eastern shore of Lake George. Here fifteen acres of ground were reserved by the crown for the erection of a block-house, used as a place of storage, a hotel, dwelling house and as a place of winter quarters and repairs for the ferry boats on the lake. After the Revolution, however, General Schuyler, who had been appointed by the Legislature to make a report of all the lands reserved for military purposes in the State, made no mention of these lots along the creek and at the rapids, merely presenting them as unlocated lands, left out of all deeds and grants and belonging to no one. He then influenced the land office, of which he was a member, to make them over to himself by special grant; in this grant he laid claim to the territory at the King's saw-mill, the military road, the reservation at the landing, and, what was of vastly more importance, to all the land *under* the creek.

Among the British officers who received grants of land from the crown, John Stoughton, Richard Killett and John Kennedy secured possessions "in the county of Albany in the province of New York between Ticonderoga and Crown Point," " (in pursuance of Our Royal Proclamation of the Seventh Day

of October, in the Third Year of our Reign) at Our Fort, in Our City of New York," August 7th, 1864. These old parchment letters patent of "George the Third, by the Grace of God, of Great Brittain, France and England, King, Defender of the Faith," etc., from which we quote, are queer documents — brown, blackened and mouldy, and bearing the great wax seal of the province of New York stamped with the British arms and figures of aborigines kneeling to the king with furs and game, a seal some three inches in diameter. "All mines of Gold and Silver, and also all White or other Sort of Pine Trees fit for Masts of the Growth of Twenty-four Inches Diameter and upwards, at Twelve Inches from the Earth," were reserved unto the king and his successors forever. The grants were to be held for ten years "in free and common Socage, exempt from all Quit Rent, after the expiration of the said Ten Years, then Yielding, Rendering and Paying therefor yearly, for every year thereafter, unto Us, our Heirs and Successors, at our Custom House in Our City of New York, unto Our or their Collector, or Receiver General there for the Time being, on the Feast of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called *Lady Day*, the yearly Rent of *Two Shillings and Six pence Sterling* for each and every hundred Acres of the above granted Lands." To "settle as many Families on the Tract of Land as shall amount to one Family for every Thousand Acres thereof;" "to plant and effectually cultivate at the least Three Acres for every Fifty Acres of such of the hereby granted Lands as are capable of Cultivation," both improvements to be made "within Three Years" from the date of the grant; to abstain from injuring any of the reserved pine trees without royal license; to register the grant at the secretary's office and docket the same at the auditor's office in New York, were conditions "provided always," which if unperformed annulled the grant. A line encircling the fort at a distance of fifteen hundred yards from its bastions embraced the military reservation for the fortress, and is the general starting point in the old deeds, at its intersections with the creek and lake, for all the boundaries of the neighboring grants.

The land of John Stoughton, as appears from the old maps, lay in the general form of a trapezium bounded by straight lines, of which the four corners may be roughly stated as the old block-house on Mount Defiance, the white rocks near Charles Wicker's, Daniel Cook's and Bugby's Point, across the lake. It lay thus wedged between the mountains, the broad end northward, and extending from the lower village to Lake George on both sides of the creek, without including, however, General Schuyler's claim above mentioned and the land "*under* the creek." The sudden death of Lieutenant Stoughton, by drowning in Lake George, left this property to "Mrs. Stoughton and child," as appears by Samuel Deall's letters, without any will and in considerable confusion. By purchase from the hands of this child, after she had become the wife of Governor Wolcott, of Connecticut, the title of the Rt. Honorable Ed-



ward Ellice came into existence. Of the legitimacy and consequent heirship of this child, grave doubts were entertained at one period; but these were cleared away and the title firmly established. Mr. Ellice held his lands with a firm grip and at high prices, as we have already stated, and it was not until a comparatively recent date that they passed to their present owners or immediate predecessors.

The grant to Roger Kellet, bearing date August 7th, 1764, is thus bounded: "On the west side of the river of Waters which empty out of Lake George into Lake Champlain, Beginning at the North West Corner of a Tract of Land lately granted to Lieutenant John Stoughton, and runs thence North nine degrees forty-five minutes, East 125 Chains; then north seventy-seven degrees thirty minutes East 237 Chains to the aforesaid River or Waters. Then up the stream thereof as it run to the North East corner of the Tract lately returned for Lieutenant John Kennedy; then along the line of his Tract North eighty degrees West 140 Chains and South nine degrees and forty-five minutes West 154 Chains to the North side of the aforesaid River or Waters; then up along the said North side of the aforementioned River of Waters as they run to the above mentioned tract granted to Lieutenant John Stoughton; And then along his line, North fifty-three degrees and forty Minutes, West seventy-one Chains to the place where this tract began; Except as much of the said lands as shall be sufficient for a Public Road, of the Breadth of Six Rods, to be laid out through this and other Tracts, in the most convenient manner, from the Landing Place at the North End of Lake George to the Fort at Crown Point."

The tract granted to John Kennedy extended from the lower falls along the north side of the creek to the fort grounds; thence across to Lake Champlain and down along its shore, from which his north line took in a broad flank of the plateau of the north part of the town in its course to the mountains. At his death this property came into the hands of "Henry Kennedy, Surgeon the oldest brother of John Kennedy, gentlemen deceased," who sold it September 26th, 1765, for a hundred and fifty pounds sterling to Abraham P. Lott and Theobaldus Curtenius, "merchants of the city of New York," who sold the same to Samuel Deall, "merchant," etc., December 10th, 1767, for £180 lawful money.

Such were the early grants of much of the territory embraced in this town. While these grants were being awarded William Gilliland and his colony, which has been clearly described in preceding pages, were making their improvements on the Boquet river in the northern part of the county, and other settlers were taking up or purchasing tracts, in some cases beginning slight improvements which were to be swept away by the tide of war in the Revolution.

Contemporaneous with Gilliland and in many respects of similar personal character and aspirations, was Samuel Deall, the wealthy New York merchant,









GEORGE D. CLARK.





whose name we have mentioned as the purchaser of the Kennedy grant. He thus became the owner as early as 1767, of 5,000 acres between Lakes George and Champlain. He was endowed with similar energy, broad intelligence, foresight, business capacity and benevolence which characterized his cotemporary, Gilliland, and entered upon the improvement of his possession with wonderful zeal, whole-heartedness and beneficent desire to contribute to the general development of the region. He was the father of trade, manufactures and agriculture in Ticonderoga. His memory deserves ample recognition here.

Mrs. Ethelinde Deall, wife of a son of Samuel Deall, was living when Mr. Cook wrote his pamphlet (1857-58), and gave him access to valuable papers, letters, etc., bearing upon this first settlement of the town. Among them were numerous letters from Mr. Deall to Lieutenant Stoughton, who was his partner in trade, and to others in his employ at this point. Some of these letters are inserted; they are full of interest as showing the condition of trade, transportation, mill building, and other pioneer affairs. These letters are given *verbatim*: —

“NEW YORK, May 4th, 1767.

“*To Mr. John Stoughton, at Ticonderoga Landing*: —

“We was glad to hear you was got safe to your Landing, we often Pitied Mrs. Stoughton and the young Ladies. I shall first write you Business and then News. I have agreeable to your desires, got and shall ship on board an Albany sloop, about Wednesday next, the 7th, at your and my Risk, on acct., 4 casks fine Jamaica Spirits, 2 do Powder sugar, and 1 do Molasses, and 1 box or cask which will contain Captain Morris' box and your clothes, the fish hooks and a few seeds, all which I hope in God will come safe to you. . . . You had better send down your own team, as the Load will be heavy. . . . Pray send a careful hand and not trust, to them Dutch Waggoners, as it will be your Risk as much as mine. . . . The Spirits is very fine and high. And you may add six gallons of w. to each of those casks to bring them down to Common Rum.”

“NEW YORK, November 4th, 1767.

“*To the same*: —

“I have not had time to answer to this day (two or three letters from you), was prevented by 2 London ships coming in with a large cargo for me, and since have been twelve days on the Grand Jury — the afternoon I was dismissed I got Rum taster and we searched the Town for Spirits, which is very scarce and high from 5s. to 4s. 6d. I have taken 2 Hhds. of the latter of G. W. Beekman for cash directly. I don't think it is so high as the first I sent you, but it is very good and the best in York, we may not get so good as the first was, and at the price this seven years again. . . . I am glad you have got all your cattle safe home and that the sheep came to so good a market, hope that the next will do the same.”



“NEW YORK, December 28th, 1767.

“*To Mrs. Ruth Stoughton:—*

“Yesterday I rec'd your melancholy acct. of Poor Mr. Stoughton's death (in Lake George, where his boats and goods sunk.) You may depend on the Strictest Honor and Justice, on my part in your unhappy situation, and all the advice and assistance in my power for you and your dear child. . . . Mr. Stoughton and I am not only jointly concerned in the goods I have sent up as such but in the Purchase of some Lands also. . . . I am surprised Mr. Stoughton never informed you of the agreement we made of being jointly concerned in the sale of the goods sent up by his order and the Risk of Loss or Damage of these goods coming up. . . . I had promised myself much pleasure of spending next summer in your neighborhood to build a new Saw Mill. I have bought all the land between the King's Saw Mill and the Fort Land. I Beg the Shingles, the Boards and the Timber that is cut for me, may be taken care of till I come, as likewise my Mare.”

“NEW YORK, January 9th, 1768.

“*To Mrs. Ruth Stoughton at the carrying-place, at Ticonderoga Landing:—*

“I hope you do not think of leaving the Landing or Neglect your improvements as I intend if please God to be up next Spring to begin building a Saw Mill and other improvements which will be to the advantage of both yours and my land. I have the land from the Fort to the Mountains.”

“NEW YORK, December 23d, 1768.

“*To Mr. John Jones, at Fort George:—*

“I hope your Team will be able to bring up all my goods that is now at Albany, as I think your Man Abel is very Honest and careful. The Mill Stones is very heavy—they will require strength and Great Care in the Carriage of them, the best way to carry them safe will be to lay them on a good Bed of Hay or Straw on the Sled, or otherwise they may Break and that will be a great Loss.”

“NEW YORK, December 29th, 1768.

“*To Captain John F. Pruyn, at Albany:—*

(Ordering the boat afterwards used on Lake George and made the subject of many careful directions to his hands) “to be made. Beg you will have her made of the best Materials and neat and make her with a Rudder to steer her with, instead of steering her with an Oar, let her have Seats in the Stern for Passengers to set on, and 4 Good Oars, tell the Builder to give her a Little Raise in the Head and Stern, she will look the better for it and will keep out the water better if it Blows hard.”

“NEW YORK, January 16th, 1769.

“*To Fox and Huntington, at the saw mills near Ticonderoga:—*

“I beg you will let me know on what Terms Mr. Fox you will take care of my “petty-auger,” [see succeeding note] and Battoes on Lake George next

summer, to live in the Block House at the landing and keep Tavern, and Mr. Huntington you Assist at Building my Mills or anything Else I shall have occasion to Employ you about. . . . I think I ordered the shingles to be cut 2 feet long, 18 inches will be too short. I was in hopes I should have seen one or both of you at York with a load of Venison before this. Beg my compliments to Mrs. Fox and all Friends, &c."

All of these various enterprises were vigorously and enthusiastically prosecuted. Fox & Huntington cut timber during the winter for Mr. Deall; Samuel Adams was to draw it in for the mills; James Sparding, with their assistance and that of Mr. Jones, of Fort George, were to "get the petty-auger<sup>1</sup> afloat and rig out her cordage and sails early in the next spring." In May in which Mr. Deall was to be at Fort George "with his team all complete for use," the "petty-auger" was to traverse the lake "if any freight offers worth going over;" and, if Mr. Fox and family "found it more convenient," they were to move into "the Block house at the Landing to the two Rooms at the North End up Stairs till I come to fix it otherwise;" but in March, 1769, Mr. Deall writes to John Jones of Fort George: "I think I shall be obliged to defer my Mills for this Summer; by what I can learn of Mr. Mackintosh, he is very angry with Fox (for a debt of ten pounds). I don't think I shall be able to get up my Mill-Stones this Winter, would not have them up in a Wagon by no means;" also he sends "walnuts to be put into earth till spring, then to plant out; at the same time I sent Peach Stones &c., to Mr. Fox, should be glad if you could send him the Walnuts and order him to dig the ground where Mr. Stoughton's Hay Rick stood and sow them all there as soon as he can." Whether the numerous walnut trees that afterwards covered this region were the result of this early work of Mr. Deall was not known.

In reply to Mr. Jones's communication about encroachments upon his land, under date of March 30th, 1769, he speaks of his lands and purposes thus definitely: —

"I am much obliged to you for your kind information. The Gentleman's Power is not so extensive as he imagines. Be assured he has no Power further than fifteen Hundred yards from the Fort, and from that between the two Waters I have Five Thousand Acres of Land that no man Living has any Rights to but myself. That other Gentleman knows it very well tho' he deceives his Friends. I am sorry to be dissappointed this Summer of Building my Mills but hope next to compleat them."

Mr. Huntington was engaged to build the saw and grist-mill in August,

<sup>1</sup>Mr. Cook's rendering of this word as given in Mr. Deall's spelling, is "petty auger." We find William Gilliland speaking in his elaborate journal of "periaugres" upon which some of his freighting was done. It is not improbable that this word is a corruption of the Indian word "piragua," or "perriauger," whence is derived, pirogue, defined by Webster as a canoe formed of the trunk of a tree; or two canoes united; or a narrow ferry boat carrying two masts and a lee-board. Deall's MSS., as Mr. Cook assures us, were not always correct in spelling.



1769, "provided you will engage to finish them in the most workmanlike manner, which is my full intent to have done." Mr. Deall then adds: —

"I cant spare but one Acre of the Clear Meadow next to the Mill, to Run up from the Mill Dam to the Road that crosses from the Clear Land Down to the great Swamp that the Army made to go to the Breast Work, and you may Clear and work as much of the Land as you please between that Road and the River."

On the 26th of October, 1769, he wrote to John Sparding as follows: —

"You give me pleasure to hear you are going to clear some land for Wheat over the Bridge, as I hope Mr. Huntington will have the Mills ready to grind it. I hope you and every one will do all they can to forward so useful an undertaking. I am in some Hopes I shall see you all next Summer and I hope in God I shall find you all friends and trying to serve each other."

Owing to the sickness of Mr. Huntington, the saw-mill was not finished until the winter of 1771 and the grist-mill till about the summer of 1772.

This wise and energetic land owner was not long to enjoy his labors and their increasing benefits. He died in New York and his family returned to England during the Revolution, leaving their possessions in the Ticonderoga forests to the ravages of war and the slower but more certain dilapidations of time. The end of Mr. Deall's career was far less mournful than that of his contemporary, Gilliland, but their pioneer labors and hardships were alike without permanent benefits to themselves. Too often the pioneer sows for others to reap. Deall was an inveterate loyalist, firm and outspoken against the American rebels; but it may not be doubted that he was governed by his earnest convictions of what was right and politic.

While the improvements above described were in progress, the old fort at Ticonderoga, garrisoned by a force of lazy British, was falling out of repair. Letters accompanying boxes of "spirits," and "sushong tea," sent to the order of the commandants of Carillon and Crown Point, are among the interesting revelations of the state of society prevailing in the fort in those quiet days from 1763 to the Revolution. Mr. Deall mentions a white heifer calf that was roaming about the fort grounds, which he bought at what he considered a low price. Francis Arthur was a relative of Mr. Deall and was sent to oversee his mills. He often dined with Captain la Place, whence, although a strict temperance man, he found it nearly impossible to get away sober. The captain lived high, one of the delicacies of his table being "rattle-snake soup," for the production of which he paid twenty-five cents apiece for the reptiles. It was during this period, also, that the men of Vermont were so bitterly opposing the Legislature of New York in its action relative to "the New Hampshire grants," proceedings already described in these pages.

It has generally been assumed that the settlement of this town began at the close of the Revolution; but the reader has conclusively learned the con-

trary. With the end of that heroic struggle, which left nearly or quite all of the first efforts at settlement along Lake Champlain in desolation, pioneers began to come into the beautiful region which many who had served in the army had seen and, we may assume, described to their friends and relatives. The western shores of the lake were, however, looked upon by many as a region almost without the pale of civilization ; a fact due, probably, more to its rugged character than to any other cause.

Among the pioneers who laid the foundations of settlement and improvement in this vicinity, after the Revolution, were John Kirby, Judge Charles Hay, George and Alexander Tremble (or Trimble, as the name is now commonly spelled), Gideon Shattuck, Abner Belden, Judge Kellog, Samuel Cook, and others, who co-operated with Governors George Clinton and John Jay in developing this town and promoting its rapid and permanent occupation. Let us glance briefly at the settlements made by these and other pioneers. Among the points jutting into the lake to the northward of Fort Ticonderoga was one known in former years as Kirby's Point. Here John Kirby dwelt previous to the Revolution. He was in the service and his family were often left alone while he was stationed at Fort George. While on a mission from the head of Lake George to Saratoga, on one occasion, he violated his trust and started to visit his family ; but was captured by the Indians and violently maltreated. He was rescued by Captain Fraser and sent to St. Johns, and Carleton came and took his family from the point in bateaux, and sent them to Canada after the beginning of the Revolution. He recovered a considerable sum from the British government for damages to his property during the war, and returned to his possession in 1792. He was probably the first settler in the north part of the town, though Mr. Munroe and Mr. Thompson located farther back soon after. Mr. Kirby became a prominent citizen, was justice of the peace for thirty years, and conducted a large business.

At the beginning of the Revolution there lived in Montreal Charles Hay, a wealthy merchant. In common with many others, he was ordered by the British king to take up arms against the "Rebels," or quit the country and leave his property for confiscation. He was offered any commission he might choose and his wife added the following counsel : "Go, take up arms and save your home and property and life perhaps. You can shoot over their heads or the other way, if brought to battle." The reply was, "I make no false pretensions ; the cause of the colonists is just, and I shall not prove false to it, though I lose all." This resolution governed his conduct. Letters written to his brother, Udney Hay, later on a colonel on St. Clair's staff, were afterward intercepted and testimony thus obtained which led to the confiscation of his property, and he was thrown into prison and held three years. The term expired, he was permitted to return to his unsafe and impoverished home. But he began suit before the Queen's Bench for false imprisonment, and his wife,



who had witnessed the destruction of their property in the streets of Montreal, was forced to cross the ocean three times to testify in the case, which resulted in the award of damages barely sufficient to cover her expenses. Mr. Hay left Canada at about the close of the Revolution, thus finally sacrificing all claim to his property. He went to Poughkeepsie, where he remained three years, and then removed to Fort George, at the head of Lake George. During his residence of two years here, he conducted what was known as the old "King's store," near the present landing from Champlain at Ticonderoga. A Mr. Nesbit was his clerk in charge of this store. Judge Hay sent forward to him cattle, implements, and grain, with which to inaugurate work on a farm, and a large cargo of merchandise for the store. The infamous employee sold the entire property, took the proceeds and crossed to the Vermont shore, where he enjoyed (?) his ill-gotten gains in defiance of law. The old store was then occupied by Judge Hay and his family. Mr. Hay was made a judge soon after his arrival, which honorable position he held until his death. He opened a hotel in the old King's store, where passengers to and from Vermont and elsewhere found good accommodations for that period. It was at Judge Hay's house that the elections of Crown Point, then embracing Ticonderoga, Moriah, Westport, Elizabethtown, Schroon, Minerva, Newcomb, North Hudson, and a part of Keene, were held. The first town meeting of this immense town was held in December, 1788. The town business was transacted, and religious and all public meetings held there for a period. Mr. Cook says: "The old King's store stood until a few years ago (1857-8); so low-roofed as to almost touch the ground on the upper side, and but one story on the lower side, where boats came up to a stoop built to receive provisions. It was laid out in large apartments, and in every way an eulogy upon the mortar and skill of the French builders, who erected it in 1755, with Fort Carillon." Mrs. Joseph Weed, now living at Ticonderoga, Mrs. Jane Hair and Mrs. E. B. Coville are granddaughters of Judge Hay.

George Tremble obtained possession of the site of the mills of Samuel Deall through the before-mentioned location of General Schuyler, and had a saw and grist-mill there as early as 1792. He was the first man to establish business at the Lower Village after the Revolution; he purchased all the wheat that was sold in the vicinity; shipped flour to market and lumber to the north and south, and was a man of energy and business ability, accumulating a competence. He was justice of the peace several years. The Legislature eventually restored the mill property to the heirs of Samuel Deall. After the death of George Tremble, his brother Alexander began law proceedings to recover the property. He died about 1818. "Tremble Mountain" takes its name from these pioneers, and their descendants are among the worthy citizens of Crown Point.

Isaac Kellog lived on the east shore of the rapids at the outlet of Lake

George, and was a man of broad education and excellent natural ability; he represented his district several years in the State Legislature. He was taken when a boy by the Indians and was fond of crediting many of his habits, particularly his worst ones, to their example. He is said to have resembled George Washington in personal appearance, and was the ablest man of the early settlers. His family passed many of their winters in Albany, but at their home here they seemed to have none of the luxuries of civilization. Mrs. Deall told Mr. Cook that the last time she called on Mrs. Kellog their house was so poor that blankets were hung up to keep out the cold. "Yet this woman was the one who tied an Indian to her bed-post with a bark rope for his insolence, and left him there all night to be jeered at by his companions, and who was noted for a heart and hand ever open to the poor." They had a son drowned, and are without descendants.

Gideon Shattuck came to the town in 1793, across the rapids around Rogers's Rock, through Cook's Bay and into the southern end of Trout brook valley. He became a hunter of local fame and used to say that he had seen the time when he could sink a canoe in Lake George in six hours' fishing. Descendants of this pioneer are now among the prominent inhabitants of the town.

Elisha Belden settled about the same time with Mr. Shattuck and near him. He was also a hunter of note. Mr. Cook wrote of this pioneer: "Father Elisha was famous for hunting rattlesnakes, which he sent from the rattlesnakes' den near Rogers's Rock, as curiosities to various parts. The stories of his captures of the reptile with a crotched stick, and of his peculiar power over them, are no less wonderful than well authenticated. On one of his trips to the den, on a Sabbath afternoon, he was badly bitten, but he said 'it was because the varmints did not know him, as he was dressed up and had on white stockings—they thought he was Judge Kellog.' At last, going out one day alone to fill a basket with this dangerous game, the old man did not return. When found, he was sitting upon the rocks, leaning back, frightfully swollen and blackened with poison—dead. A snake, cut to pieces with his jack-knife, lay by his side, with fragments of the flesh, thought to be a remedy for the poison, which he had applied to the bite beneath his arm, to which, it is supposed, the chafing of his side against the cover of the basket as he carried it, had let out the heads of the reptiles. It was said, as before, that a change of clothes he had lately made put it beyond the wisdom of the rattlesnakes to recognize him, and hence his power over them was lost; but a better explanation was a half empty whisky bottle found near the spot, whose contents had so fatally palsied the truly remarkable courage and skill of the old hunter." No descendants are now living in this section. The mother of James and John Ramsay was a Belden.

Samuel Cook was born in New Milford, Conn. After the Revolution he



emigrated to Ticonderoga and made the first clearing by the "cold spring" north of the Gallows gate back of the Lower Village. He settled there in 1796. He was a forage-master in the army of the Revolution. He became a prominent farmer and introduced improvements in the early methods of agriculture and better breeds of stock. He was well known as having more horses and cattle than any of the other pioneers at that time. Friend's Point, so called, just over the county line on Lake George, to which Mr. Cook afterward removed, was covered with conflicting titles. Mr. Cook purchased his title in good faith from a Mr. Lester and wife who had settled there and built temporary improvements. Some time afterward, it is said, brothers of Lester came on from New York to claim the title as legal heirs, but they found Samuel Cook standing in the door of the cabin with a cocked musket, prepared to defend his home against all comers; they failed to take immediate possession of the premises and were no more successful in subsequent legal proceedings. Mr. Cook is remembered as a man of great energy, practical common sense, and generous impulses; although he occasionally, in common with almost everybody at that time, indulged too freely in liquor, when he was more or less pugnacious and prodigal of his money.

One of Samuel Cook's sons, who much resembled him in traits of character, was Warner Cook, a prominent citizen with large interests in the saw-mills and farms of the Lord Howe Brook valley.

William H. Cook, a son of Warner Cook, died at his home in Lord Howe Brook valley on the 19th of March, 1885. He was in many respects one of the leading citizens of the town. An obituary published at the time of his death says, among other tributes to his memory:—

"Mr. Cook was never a wealthy man, as the world counts wealth, though never a poor man. First and last, he expended large sums of money on the education of his son (the Rev. Joseph Cook, of Boston). His plan for a thorough education included not only academy, college and professional schools, but foreign travel. Through all these he insisted that his son should go. Besides theology he always wanted his son to study law for at least a year or two, and also medicine.

"His love of reading was not stimulated by companionship with educated men, nor by the necessity of teaching others. He read for the purpose of improving mind and heart and gratifying both. He was always physically industrious in a remarkable degree, but, coming in from work he often gave his evenings to solid reading.

"Though never connected with politics or public life, beyond a town or county office, his interest in national politics was always strong and eager. Webster and Clay, Seward and Sumner were his favorite statesmen and Horace Greeley his favorite editor.

"He had an intense love of nature. The sublime and beautiful moved him









WARNER COOK.





profoundly. He would lie down on the grass and look at the approaching summer thunder shower, studying the lightnings and the roll of the clouds until the rain fell in his face. He selected a site at the top of Rogers's rock, with a commanding outlook, as a fit place for a summer-house, and was the first to suggest the building of a study and small observatory there.

"His enthusiasm for reform was so marked a feature of his character that his son affirms that his father was his chief teacher in Anti-Slavery, Anti-Dram shop and Anti-Mormon sentiment. Mr. Cook was early and always opposed to slavery. Intemperance and the liquor traffic were his abhorrence. He was always profoundly moved by the wrongs of workingmen in the conflicts of labor with capital.

"Mr. Cook became a member of the Baptist Church when he was about forty-five years of age. The preaching which moved him most at the time was that of the Rev. William Grant, of Whitehall, for whose character and public work he had high respect. He was baptized by the Rev. Stephen Wright, and was for some years one of the officers of the Baptist Church in Ticonderoga.

"He called himself a very good Methodist and a fairly sound Congregationalist or Presbyterian, while his reverence for the book of 'Common Prayer' allied him to the Episcopalians. He cared little for forms, ceremonies and badges of sect; but everything for the essentially biblical and evangelical spirit in public worship and Christian doctrine.

"He was born September 2d, 1812; so was seventy-two years and six months of age when, on March 19th, at a quarter before nine o'clock, his son repeating Scriptural texts at his bedside, he passed into the world into which all men haste."

William Cook, a colonel in the War of 1812 and a leading citizen, was another son of Samuel and father of Andrew Jackson Cook, a prominent landowner, who was father of Carleton, Rollin L. and Dalthus Cook, who now represent the family in the county. William Cook, son of Colonel Cook, resides at the family homestead, which is just south of the Essex county line, on the shore of Lake George.

Among other early settlers in the town the following have been furnished us by the venerable Benjamin Delano, now living in the village at the age of eighty-one years:—

Nathan Delano came from Cornwall and settled at the Upper Village. He was formerly from Massachusetts. His sons were Benjamin, Thomas, Asa and Milton, all of whom have been residents of the town. Benjamin was born on the 10th of March, 1804, and is, therefore, ten days older than the town as an organization. He is father of Clayton H. and Arthur Delano. Thomas is the father of Frank and Dr. Delano, of Westport.

Isaac Morse settled in the south part of the town, where Jackson Cook



lives, before 1815; and Ebenezer Douglass located adjoining Judge Kellog. Levi Thompson settled early (by the beginning of the century) in the northern part of the town. C. H. Delano's wife is his granddaughter. Two families of Millers located in the north part of the town at an early day. Robert Hammond settled on the lake shore, north of the village road to the lake, and raised a large family who removed west. Thomas Rogers settled just south of Hammond; he has a son of the same name now living in the town. James Tefft located about 1813 in the town. Dr. J. W. H. Tefft, of Ticonderoga, is a son. Benjamin Burt settled in the town at the "Street" early in the century and built the first tannery here in 1806. He was grandfather of Prentiss and Charles Burt, now living in the town. John Porter was an early settler, a blacksmith, and Levi Cole, at the Upper Village, had a shop as early as 1797; his son Samuel followed him in the same business. Captain Elijah Bailey was one of the very early settlers at the Upper Village, where he lived in 1797. Liberty Newton came here at the beginning of the century and built a forge at the Upper Falls about 1801; there was a forge at that point a year or two earlier, built by Mr. Tombleson. John and Timothy Harris were engaged in mercantile business at the Upper Village in 1813. Joseph Weed came into the town before 1812, carried on business at the Upper Village up to 1838, then moved down to the old Weed store at "Weedsville," now a suburb of Ticonderoga village, and built the brick house near by, which he occupied up to the time of his death, in 1860; he was the most prominent man in the town for many years in the lumber and mercantile business. Frederick, George C., Alexander H. and Albert Weed, now of the village, are his sons, and Colonel William E. Calkins, also of the village, is his son-in-law. Abel Potter was an early settler at the Upper Village, where he kept a hotel in 1811. Francis Arthur came here in 1800 and settled near the lake; he was from Dutchess county and a native of New York city. W. A. G. Arthur and Francis J. are his sons, and Mrs. John McKown, Mrs. M. L. Royce and Sally Ann Arthur, now living in the town, are daughters. Two daughters and two sons died many years ago: Jane, who married William Douglass; Betsey, who married General Joseph S. Weed (he built and occupied for some years the old Weed store and brick house near by, above mentioned); Richard D., who was a capable, energetic, active man, prominent in business and public affairs; Robert G., a man of pleasing address and good ability, who died in California.

William Wilson came to the town in early years. The venerable Melancthon W. Wilson, still living in the town at the age of seventy-nine years, is a son of William. He has held various local offices and been prominent in the public affairs of the town.

The names of many other settlers in the town down to recent times will appear in the course of our description of the different industries; but those above given are entitled to much of our admiration and gratitude for the he-

roic struggle made by them in subduing the wilderness and firmly establishing the foundations upon which have since been built up the prosperous community. They lived under vastly different conditions from those existing at the present period. Many of them obtained their land by "squatting" on it; then they built a rude dwelling, made a little clearing and actually wrung a portion of their sustenance from among the stumps; hunted and fished a good deal; had a cow or two, if especially favored; raised a little corn, potatoes, and later on some wheat; brought most of their provisions from Vermont, when they had anything with which to pay for them; there were few accessible markets for any surplus products, but there was little surplus to dispose of. Mr. Cook vividly pictures the times as those when "men scraped their own axe-helves, made their own ox-yokes by the blazing fire on long winter evenings; and bent their own ox-bows; and smoothed their own whip-stocks; and braided their own whip-lashes; and put handles to their own jack-knives; and peeled their own brooms out of white birch or sweet walnut, or braided them out of hemlock; and shaved their own barrel staves; and hooped their own beer casks; and sewed up their own harnesses; and shaped their own horse shoes; and run their own bullets; and tapped their own boots; and swingled their own flax; and hollowed their own wooden dishes; and ironed their own ox carts; and mended their own bob-sleds. And, as the men worked, the crackle of the big fore-sticks and back-sticks mingled with the hum of the little linen wheel, or the large spinning-wheel, or the rattle of the shuttle and treadles; for there, too, before the fire, the women picked their own wool and carded their own rolls, and spun their own yarn, and drove their own looms, and made their own cloth and cut their own garments, and did their own making and mending entire (and made then not half so much fuss and ado about it as modern ladies make who have simply to buy the cloth and see it put together), and dipped their own candles and tried their own soap, and bottomed their own chairs and braided their own baskets, and wove their own carpets and quilted their own coverlids, and picked their own geese feathers. These pioneer women milked their own cows, and tended their own calves and pig pens, and went a visiting on their own feet, or rode to meeting or weddings on an ox-sled with a bundle of straw under their feet, and at their backs two hickory stakes and a log-chain."

In those days neighbor helped neighbor in all tasks that required more than one pair of hands, and there was a feeling of mutual dependence so strong that "some who would refuse to pay a note of hand, did not dare stay back from a logging bee or raising." All hands turned out cheerfully on all such occasions, and no gathering was considered properly managed where the oft-circling jug of rum was absent, and "now and then fiery spirits, men used to muscular effort and the open air, got ablaze, and a free fight enlivened the smoking fallow or made the timbers of the raising echo laughter; and by-and-



- by, after the friendly interchange of labor had helped raise the house, clear the land and secure a livelihood, when death came, the neighbor was borne to his last home, not in a hired hearse, but upon the shoulders of strong-armed friends, somewhat lacking in culture, maybe, but not in heart or mind." The reader has already found a vivid description of life in those old days, in an early chapter of this work as related by a former lady, Mrs. Adolphus Sheldon, who came into this vicinity in 1797.

*Early Schools and Religious Meetings.*—The early school teachers on the western shore of Lake Champlain came mostly from Vermont or still farther east. Examinations into the qualifications of a teacher in pioneer days were not made upon the elaborate systems of the present day; if a teacher could impart a reasonable knowledge of reading and writing, and had the muscle to keep order, it was commonly deemed sufficient, though many were better qualified. The first school-house in Ticonderoga probably stood a little south-west of the "gallows gate," where so many of Abercrombie's men fell before the fire of the French lines. A Mr. Hethington is said to have been the first teacher. Judge Hay found him at Poughkeepsie, put him in business, but he was *dissipated and so he put him in school!* A black girl from Samuel Deall's family was among the early pupils, but it is related that the little ones of 1800 would not sit on the same seat with her; so she was sent home. Of the early schools Mrs. Deborah Cook, for many years a teacher, said to Mr. Joseph Cook in 1857 (it was in 1805 that Mr. Rich, the old hunter, went over to Shoreham after her): "I had only an old lame horse, and was obliged to bring my things in a pillow-bier, tied on behind. They all laughed at me at my starting-place, as I rode off, for coming to such a place as *Toughertown*. I was glad when I got out of sight. My gallant trustee left me to find my way alone down to Shoreham ferry. After we landed on York side I could no more give you a description of our ride than I could take you back to it—but he went by the side of my horse and helped me along. It was nothing but mud and woods. A road had been cut out and worked some, to be sure, but such a road! Old logs to tumble over, long limbs to rake you off the horse, dripping leaves, rocks, slough holes, mire and mud, mud, mud, and my old lame horse scarcely able to carry my pillow-bier, half staggering with my weight. There was not much of anything at the lower village. At the upper village there was a little more, and out through Trout brook valley, George Cook, Handy and Rich had made claims. Much heavy timber we rode under, beech and maple mostly, some pine on flats and hills; no underbrush and a great many wind-falls. Went on by the school-house to the Rowley place; all woods there, and then on to Wilson Spencer's log house and orchard, and there rested for the night—(some people from Vermont), and boarded there that summer. We used to take a big red dog to protect the children going to school through the woods in the morning. My education was not very extensive; I knew a

little of grammar and geography, but taught them very little, nor did I have any scholar, even in the winter school, in arithmetic. To read, spell and write was all they thought necessary. My wages were \$1.25 a week, a great price in those days; no one hardly could get more than six or eight shillings. Parents came in often at my school, and once we had a party for the scholars, with tea. We always gave presents or some trifle on the last day of school. I had pieces learned and spoken by boys and girls, too, and now and then we had a regular exhibition." A more graphic account of educational advantages and experiences in pioneer days has seldom been written than this.

The early school-houses, built between 1790 and 1800, were warmed by great open fire-places. The furniture was made up of a chair for the teacher and rude benches, commonly made by boring holes in slabs and inserting legs on the rounded side, the children sitting on the flat side. The structures themselves were mostly of logs, and it was not unusual to hear the howling of wolves while the teacher called the roll at dusk before closing school. With the growth of the town and the decay of these old buildings, a slightly better class of school-houses took their places, with considerable improvement in the interiors; but still very far from comfortable. Many a resident of the town acquired such education as has carried him through a successful career under circumstances and amid surroundings that were scarcely less than cruel. As early as 1850 most of these rude school-houses fell into disuse, and the neat and comfortable structures that are now scattered thickly about the town took their places.

The worship of the Creator in some public form has always accompanied the first steps of the pioneer into new regions. If there was no one to preach the Word, the few who could get together, strong in the faith, would meet in a school-house or oftener in a settler's dwelling and offer up the homage to God that was just as welcome as if it rose from the grandest cathedral. A pioneer said on this topic to Mr. Cook: "When we came here in 1800-9, there was no man to care for our souls. We came, most of us, from New England. We had been trained to love the Bible and to uphold the church and ministry which expound the Word of God as the law of life. Pious men were here, but they were few, separated, and without organization, leader, or instructor. Some of us used to cross the lake to Shoreham and other towns in Vermont to receive the instruction and consolation of religious exercises. Now and then a minister from Vermont preached for us at some neighbor's dwelling or in a school-house. We had traveling missionaries, too, at times, who came on horse-back or more often on foot, to explain the book of truth to the people. The absence of regular religious instruction and worship was felt in the community by the greater prevalence of a covetous spirit, want of refinement, unkindness between neighbors, litigation, and private immorality. Not that we were worse than other towns deprived of religious privileges, for these evils



arise everywhere where the Bible is not studied and obeyed. We had what were called 'reading meetings,' in which a deacon or some active member of the church led the exercises and read a printed sermon. Usually these were respectably attended, and we remember seasons when much good was done to wavering brethren within, and to immortal souls without, yet unresolved in duty. Some of the good men and women with whom we sung and prayed have gone down to the grave — and we are going after them — but we remember the precious times of old when we sat together, and the voice of praise, thanksgiving, or supplication, went up from the same seats out of all our hearts, even to those seats in heaven where we hope to sit with them again, in the church triumphant! Many without pastors lived holy lives and died in peace. It was between 1815 and 1820 that we began to think of regular ministrations of God's Word and of building houses of worship. Large meetings had been held before in large private houses, in barns, or in the open air." "I was converted," says one, "in yonder barn, on that rising hill at the foot of the mountain." "The first sermon I ever heard which caused me to resolve to do my duty," says another, "was heard as I stood in a stable and the minister preached from the barn floor to people seated on slab-benches, blanketed and stayed up in the bay, stable, granary, and lofts." "I was baptized in a barn;" "I in such a neighbor's house;" "I where the willows bend over such a flowing stream;" "I through a square hole cut in the ice of Lake Horicon." "We remember a few families in this period who maintained family worship, few who thoroughly understood their Bibles or the practical duties of life; for all were sheep without a shepherd. And if we had preaching it was not always instructive, so enlightened, or so arousing, as homely, practical, and adapted to common minds. It led onward, perhaps, but not much upward. Our exhorters came, not from the seminary and the study, but from the plow, the axe, and from practical life; whereas they ought to have come, not from one of these means of preparation, but from all of them harmonized and combined. Brief, energetic, unstudied, but powerful words were uttered then as now by practical men, illiterate, yet earnest and full of piety. We blessed God that though unlearned and ignorant of many things, we could yet know the path of duty, of joy, and of eternal life. We had little money to pay for the gospel, but it was borne to us without price upon the wings of human benevolence, and of providential surroundings. Yet without actual organization and effort we had difficulty in maintaining our own strength, and failed to exert much positive influence for the purification and elevation of society."

The complete history of the church societies of the town will be found a few pages further on.

*The Lumber Interest.*—The chief occupation of the inhabitants of this town for many years was lumbering. This region was heavily timbered, and the town was the natural outlet for the lumber product of an extensive territory

outside. For many miles on both sides of Lake George the heavy primeval forest stood, awaiting the lumberman's axe, while in the direction of Schroon were Lake Pharaoh, Put's creek, Pyramid pond, Paradox lake, Alder brook, Alder meadow, Crane pond, Long pond and Brant lake, from all of which localities timber came to and through Ticonderoga. For an extended period more lumber was shipped from this point than at any other on the lake. Much of the timber was of valuable pine, and the unparalleled water power turned the wheels of scores of saw-mills, which ran night and day until "they were almost shut out of sight by the fruits of their own labor. Below the Lower Falls lumber was piled high on both sides of the creek awaiting transportation over the great highway, Champlain." In 1857 Mr. Cook said that about twenty-five saw-mills had existed in the town, and the products of more than forty came through it for shipment.

This great manufacturing interest and traffic began as early as 1814, was continued vigorously until the opening of the Champlain canal, which event gave it a great impetus. It continued unabated until a little after 1840, after which it began to diminish. Its greatest activity was during the years 1834, '35 and '36. Joseph Weed came to Ticonderoga, as before stated, in 1812. He was a man of energy and great business capacity; was the first postmaster in the town, and held other positions of trust. His name is more prominently connected with the lumber business of the town than that of any other man. He settled first at the Upper Falls (then locally known as Alexandria village). He had control at one period of about a score of saw-mills, employed some thirty teams in summer and about a hundred and fifty in the winter. He shipped in one year three hundred and forty boat loads of lumber, and was in all respects the foremost man in the business; he also became connected with the iron interest of the town. Colonel William E. Calkins, his son-in-law, was interested with him at one time. Others who were prominent in the lumber trade were John Harris, William and Warner Cook, Russell Bly, Alonzo Moses, and later, George C. Weed, who has been interested in it for thirty-five years, and others also.

This interest is now abandoned to a large extent, as it is in other parts of the county. The magnificent forests are gone. Few men accumulated wealth in the lumber trade, no matter how extensively they engaged in it; but it "cleared up the woods, opened commercial highways, set millions of money moving, and prepared the rural districts for the agricultural period." In 1858, according to Mr. Cook, the manufacture of lumber in the town amounted to about 300,000 pieces in the year, of which about half was pine, and the remainder hemlock, spruce and hard wood. This amount was mainly cut by the three mills then remaining at the Upper Falls, the others at that point having been burned in 1853.

*The Iron Interest.*—The first forge in town was started at the upper falls as



early as the year 1800, by the father of Beers Tombleson, and Liberty Newton built one there in about the next year; a third one followed soon after. The ore used in these early forges came from the Port Henry vicinity and was brought down the lake. The establishment of the forges was merely an enterprise engaged in as promising profit in the manufacture, through the use of a portion of the valuable water-power. "A good many dabbled in the forge business," says Mr. Cook, "but with little profit. Perhaps Joseph Weed and George Grant did most and best. In 1814 Mr. Weed began a prosperous business with two fires and continued it two years. Iron was very high during the war of that period. The fire on the north side and the lower one at the upper falls were run by Mr. Grant quite prosperously until about 1835. Trout brook valley heard the heavy beat of the forge hammer from 1848 to 1850, in the establishment of Asa P. Delano. It had heard the grinding of stones, the shaking of seives, the filing of saws and the rattle of planks since 1835, in the grist-mill and saw-mill built on its excellent water-power by Warner Cook and prosperously conducted by him and by William H. Cook, his son, up to 1845." These mills long ago disappeared.

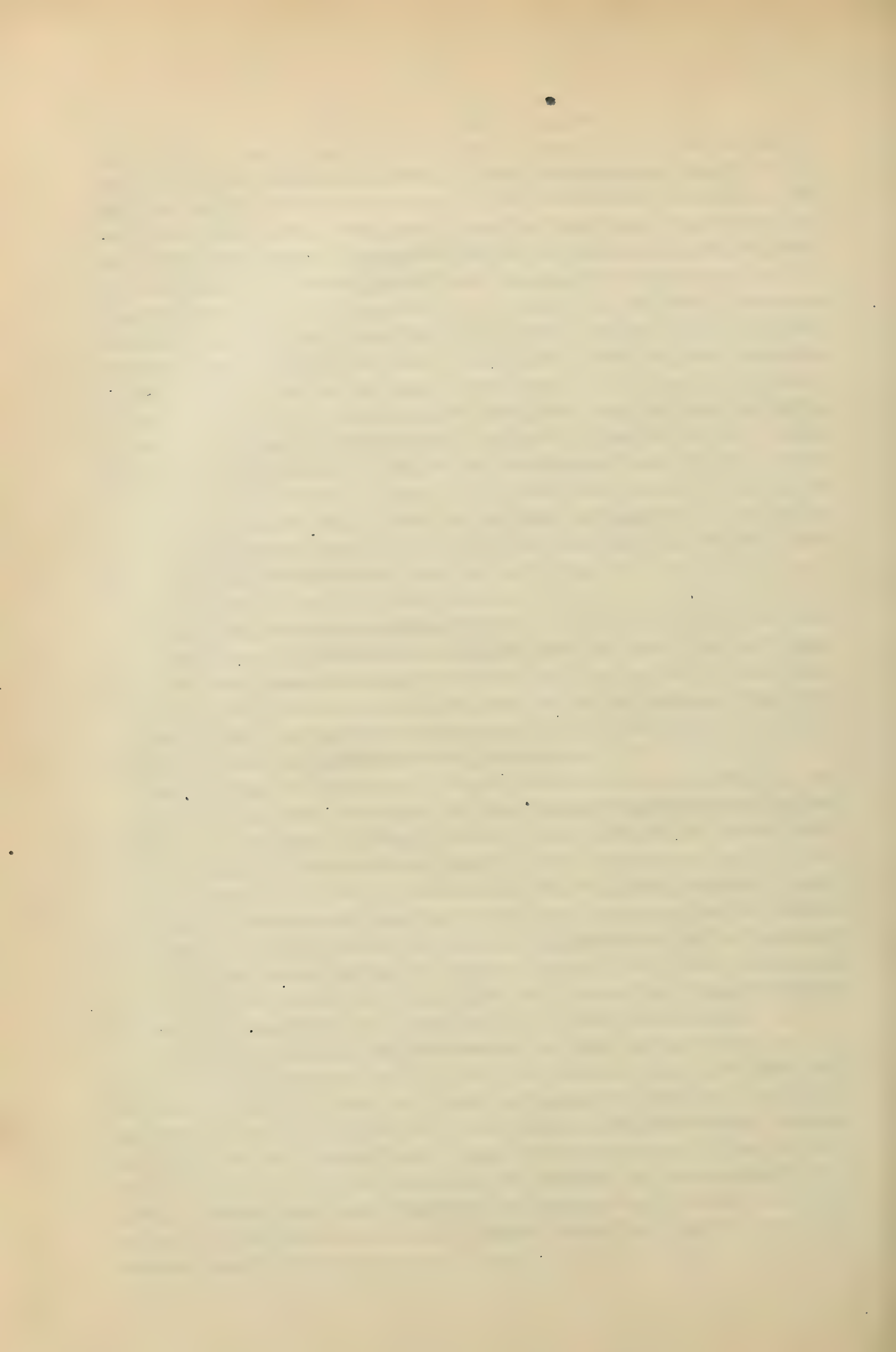
Albert Weed opened a deposit of iron ore in the western part of the town about forty years ago, from which considerable ore was taken; and the "vineyard" bed was opened later, but found to be fatally impregnated with sulphur. Weed & Burleigh opened a vein of magnetic ore on Mt. Defiance about 1870 and sunk a shaft; but the town cannot be said to have developed, as yet, iron ore that promises very profitable mining operations.

Near the close of the last war (1864-65) the Horicon Iron Company was organized in New York city, mainly by stockholders of the American Graphite Company. Col. Wm. E. Calkins happened to be in the city in March, 1864, and was sought by the prominent officers of the companies to act as general superintendent of the two companies, R. H. Manning being president of each company. Terms agreed upon, he returned and commenced active work in the responsible position on the 14th day of April following, and so continued for about two years; having the valuable assistance of William Hooper, in the working and oversight of the graphite mill, and of Capt. Arnold Hulet as overseer of "wood jobs," up Lake George, and under his direction.

The forge of six fires was built—one of the most substantial structures of the kind in the county, and still standing near the lower falls. Ore from local deposits was used for a time, and then that mined at Long Pond; the transportation of the latter cost so much as to render its use unprofitable. Various ores were then used during the few years that the forge run; it has been idle since. The company owned large tracts of woodland on the shores of Lake George, whence wood was transported on barges towed by a tug to the foot of that lake, where it was burnt into charcoal in five large kilns; this product was then carted over the two miles' distance to the forge. The product of the









WILLIAM HENRY COOK.





works in 1865 was about four hundred and fifty tons, and something less the following year.

A "pocket" furnace was built at the lower falls in 1832 by John Porter & Son, who continued it until 1840, at considerable financial loss, but at great gain in experience. In the last named year they built a cupola furnace and better success immediately followed. Here various kinds of stoves, plows and machinery were cast and made. It was burned in 1851; but was immediately rebuilt. This establishment passed into possession of Clark, Strain & Hooper, the firm now running it being William Hooper & Co. (D. C. Bascom). General machine work and foundry business is carried on. A machine shop was established in the town as early as 1838 by a Mr. McHerd; he built a shop at the Lower Village in 1852 and for some years did a prosperous business.

*The Graphite Industry* — In going back to the early history of the discovery and development of the graphite of Ticonderoga, we must be indebted largely to Mr. Cook's researches in 1857-58. "The sugar-loaf elevation in the northwestern part of Ticonderoga was originally known as Grassy Hill, from the pasturage it afforded to cattle before lands were cleared. One afternoon, about sunset, the story goes, Mrs. Zuba Pearl was driving home her cows down the slopes of the mountain. One of them slipped and broke, in sliding, the wet moss from off a sloping rock at a place yet pointed out, and there lay the shining ore. It was black lead, graphite, plumbago, pure and unmixed. Such is one account of the discovery of this valuable mineral deposit which soon gave to Grassy Hill its name of Lead Mountain. Another account is that it was discovered by William Stewart & Sons; and another still, which seems well sustained, that it was first found by Charles Wood about 1815. It is probable that all these discovered deposits, though in different places.

"Considerable strife took place as to the profits of the discovery of the lead mines. Charles Wood, as his son Rufus relates, discovered the deposit while after his cattle, by rapping the moss accidentally with his hatchet. He carefully put the dirt back in its place and went and made a bargain with Francis Arthur, owner of the land, to work the lead mine upon reasonable terms. Two boxes were soon sent south which sold readily at twenty cents a pound. Any discoveries of fresh deposits were kept as secret as possible. Rufus Wood relates that he once saw William Stewart and N. Delano going into the woods, and supposing them to be prospecting for lead, he followed them. They soon came to a place where they began to put the crowbar into use, when, dropping down behind a root, he watched them. They seemed very cautious and greatly elated. Stewart driving his bar down vigorously and working it to and fro, asked Delano to come up and look in; 'Heavens and earth, Delano, that's nice!' 'Yes,' said Delano, whereat with a yell and a loud laugh Wood leaped from his concealment. 'Zounds! we're gone!'



exclaimed the astonished discoverers, and the spy found himself received with very little courtesy.

"No one at first understood the art of grinding the graphite. Guy C. Baldwin was the first to grind it in millstones with iron ore, about 1818. After its preparation its use was not well understood, stoves to black at that date being few. About 1830 Mr. Baldwin invented a process of making large solid black lead pencils, and also a process for making the ever-point pencil leads. This business he pursued with his three sons for about fifteen years, under a patent obtained in 1833; their annual trade was from one to three thousand dollars. W. G. Baldwin continued the business at the Upper Village until about the breaking out of the Rebellion."

William Stewart and Nathan Delano were the first to mine the graphite to any considerable extent, and after them Francis Arthur and sons. Apollus Skinner, Mr. Stewart's son-in-law, engaged in the business from about 1833 at the Lower Village. He sold out to C. P. Ives, who associated with himself W. A. G. Arthur. They subsequently separated their interests, Mr. Ives locating at the Upper Village and Mr. Arthur at the Lower. Their goods, under the name of "Ticonderoga silver lead," acquired an excellent reputation.

Mr. Cook thus described the condition of the lead mines in 1857-8: "We had a brisk beat about in the woods, without guide, to find Mr. Arthur's mine. It is situated near the northeastern base of Lead Mountain, and though operations are rarely carried on at the mine except in winter, we saw enough to prove the large extent and value of the deposit. One vein had been mined to the depth of one hundred and ten feet, the breast of pure ore being from four to eighteen inches wide and six to eight feet deep, shading off into mixed material, between walls of quartz rock. Several other openings have been made. About 50,000 pounds of pure lead have been manufactured from this mine in some past seasons, the average number of pounds now being about 40,000. Farther up the slope of the mountain and within a few rods of the summit, on the southeast side, lie the mines of C. P. Ives. We came away satisfied that the mountains are by no means the least valuable portions of the town. In a walk of half a mile across Mr. Ives's premises we passed a dozen deep veins in lines running nearly north and south, parallel, of purest ore, from three to eight inches wide, which have been worked at various lengths, some five, some twenty, some forty and some seventy feet in perpendicular depth. The deepest cut, now quit on account of water, is of the vein over which the cow slipped, when first discovered, and has been worked one hundred feet in length, over seventy in depth, with a vein of pure graphite ten inches wide, and when in it last, Mr. Robinson, a miner, obtained three hundred pounds of pure ore in an hour. Several other openings, one of a hundred feet horizontally for the most part, have been made for a mixed material yielding one-fourth pure lead." The above refers to this industry as it existed about 1860.









WILLIAM HOOPER.





Finally the lead interest of Mr. Arthur was sold to Butler & Clough, of New York, and it, with the entire control of the other mines, became the property of the American Graphite Company, of New York city. The company sent hither as superintendent, in 1863, William Hooper,<sup>1</sup> a man of experience in the handling of minerals and ores. Under his supervision a large factory was built, put in operation, new processes of working the ore adopted, their principal features being the result of Mr. Hooper's experience or inventive genius, and a very large business built up, which continues to the present time. A new mine has been taken on Lake George, four miles west of Hague, Warren county, from which ore is now transported to the works.

The other industries and mercantile interests of the town will appear in connection with the history of Ticonderoga village.

*Agriculture.*—The soil of the lower lands of the town, the flats, beds of brooks and low land generally is a rich alluvial loam; that on the higher grounds, the plateau at the north of the town and generally the midway elevations, is a strong and fertile clay, shading off to lighter soils in places; while on the still higher grounds, where the land begins to rise towards the mountains, the soil is a stony, loamy sand. Above these rise the ledges, fit soil for the oak and pine and affording valuable pasturage. About three-fourths of the surface is susceptible of cultivation. With the decline of the lumber business, the inhabitants turned more of their energy to agriculture, and many good farms have resulted. Wheat was raised on the plateau to a considerable extent, and a yield of forty-seven bushels to the acre is on record. Hay, oats, corn and potatoes have been the principal crops. In later years considerable dairying has been done. Mr. Cook wrote in 1857: "Ticonderoga should be known chiefly as a wool-growing, stock-raising and horse-breeding town; and latterly, the sheep, the cattle and the horses have been of the best kinds." These statements may, in a general way, especially as relates to horses, be applied to the present time. Many horses of excellent speed qualities and good blood have been raised, and many are now owned in the town.

The general agricultural interest of the town was greatly stimulated and benefited by the organization of the "Farmers' and Mechanics' Fair" in 1857. This project had been discussed considerably for several years previously, but was brought into practical shape only in the year named, and largely through the efforts of C. H. Delano and William E. Calkins. The latter gentleman has always been associated with every movement looking to the welfare of the town, since his advent here in 1830, at which time his father removed from Whitehall; his name was William Calkins, and he died in 1855; he was a lawyer by profession; he took a deep interest in the educational, moral and religious interests of the town. William E. was bred to business pursuits and was either a merchant or clerk from 1832 to 1860; he was also connected with the lum-

---

<sup>1</sup> See biography in later pages.



ber interest, and subsequently purchased largely of real estate in the village, which has become valuable. He spent some years in the management of a farm, but in later years he has found sufficient occupation in the settlement of estates and other business trusts, which his fellows have placed in his competent hands. He was town clerk in 1843, 1844 and 1845, and has been supervisor about fifteen years, nine of which (1873 to 1881) were consecutive, and was chairman of the board several years, declining the nomination in 1883; has been inspector of elections, coroner, delegate to State and National convention (1868) and to the judicial convention (1870); served in the militia (1835 to 1844), whence he derives his title of "Colonel;" was county clerk from 1860 to 1873, and declined further nomination; was Member of the Assembly, 1875 and 1876, and rendered efficient service as member of the War Committee of the county during the Rebellion. His name, therefore, necessarily appears prominent in detailing the history of the town.

A general call was issued for a meeting to consider the project of organizing the fair association, and the meeting was held on the 12th of September, 1857. It was well attended by the representative men of the town, who resolved, after proper discussion, to organize "The Farmers' and Mechanics' Association of Ticonderoga." William E. Calkins was made chairman of a committee to report a preamble and regulations, and read in that report as follows:—

"That experience has taught us that much benefit may be derived from the formation and proper management of town agricultural and mechanical associations, affording opportunity, as such associations legitimately do, by bringing the people together, with their animals and products, to compare, notice and suggest improvements and to interchange opinions, thereby encouraging laudable ambition and fostering social and kindly feelings, all being mutually useful and joint contributors to rational and mental enjoyment.

"Convinced of the truth of these positions, the undersigned agree to form themselves into a society to be called the Farmers' and Mechanics' Association of Ticonderoga, its object being to promote improvement in agriculture, horticulture, and rural taste and the mechanic and household arts."

The annual membership fee was fixed at \$1.00 and premiums were to be simple certificates of rank, with numbers. Organization was effected and the following board of officers elected: President, B. P. Delano; vice-presidents, G. D. Clark, W. A. G. Arthur; secretary, William E. Calkins; treasurer, George Wright; executive committee, B. F. Frazier, J. McCormick, C. N. Chilson, A. J. Cook.

The first fair was held on the 15th of October of that year, on the high grounds afterwards occupied by the academy, on Main street, in front of William E. Calkins's residence, and was successful. The entry list showed about one hundred contributors. Rev. Joseph Cook and C. H. Delano addressed the assemblage. Many farmers from adjoining towns were present and the

occasion was a very gratifying one. The other fairs were held on the same location, after which they were held on Mount Hope, until the association ceased to exist, in 1876.

*Prominent Public Events.*—The inhabitants of Ticonderoga are patriotic and venerate the historical associations of their town. The existence of this sentiment has resulted in the celebration of several anniversaries and other ceremonials calculated to perpetuate some of the historic deeds that have occurred here. The first of these was:—

*Ticonderoga's Centennial.*—This event was celebrated in an appropriate manner on the 25th of July, 1864. The following gentlemen were the committee in charge of the ceremonies: William E. Calkins, William G. Baldwin, Clayton H. Delano, Thomas Delano and Hiram R. Field. A salute was fired from the high ground near Mount Hope at sunrise, and the exercises took place at the old French lines and on the academy grounds. The procession marched from the village to the lines in the following order:—

The Ticonderoga band; Iroquois chief in full costume and war paint; French officer on horseback, bearing the French ensign; English officer, the same; pioneer in shirt sleeves, with leather belt, axe, rifle, representing Ticonderoga before the Revolution; American officer on horseback; school children; carriages; two couples on horseback in dress of the last century; two couples in modern riding dress; boy carrying grain to mill on horseback; boy driving an express wagon; farmer in dress of last century, driving an ox cart, his family seated on hay, as representing the ancient style of attending church; industrial car containing specimens of the earlier and present industrial processes and products of the town; poet and orator, clergymen and gentlemen. Colonel Wm. E. Calkins was chairman of the committee and president of the day. The speaker's stand was placed on the slope of the old French lines, and tables of collations near by in a grove. Colonel Calkins introduced the exercises by a very graceful speech and was followed by Clayton H. Delano, who was the poet; he read a very able historical poem. Rev. Joseph Cook then delivered the historical address in his customary eloquent manner. Letters were read from many distinguished men, toasts read, etc. Rain forced the closing of the ceremonies to be given in the "Old White Church."

*Anniversary of the Capture of Fort Ticonderoga.*—The most conspicuous of the public events of the town was the celebration of the anniversary of the capture of the fort by Ethan Allen, which was carried out on a grand scale on the 10th day of May, 1875. The leading men of the town gave their best energies to the proper celebration of the event; wide publicity was given it, not only through the press of the entire State, but that of many surrounding States. The great New York daily papers had correspondents on the ground for several days previous to the anniversary, and their columns teemed with accounts of the stirring deeds of the preceding century, descriptions of the old fort and



surroundings, the busy village, etc. The preparations were inaugurated by the sending out to the public of the following card : —

“ CARD.

“ *Friends* — Owing to our very disastrous fire, which reduced to ashes almost the entire business portion of our village, retarding business pursuits and making us feel poor, our Centennial Committee have found it wholly impracticable and impossible to carry out the original programme proposed to commemorate the capture of the fort by Ethan Allen. But there has been expressed, at home and abroad, such a desire to commemorate the day, that we, members of Post Alfred Weed, G. A. R., feel it our duty to take the matter in hand, present a simple programme, welcoming all comrades and guests, and assist to the best of our ability in making the exercises of the day pleasing to all who may attend.

“ Taking into consideration our limited means and the short time in which to make arrangements we can only prepare tables and ask you to join us in a grand union picnic.

“ All are hereby invited to attend the one hundredth anniversary of the capture of Fort Ticonderoga, May 10th, 1775, by Ethan Allen and his Green Mountain Boys.

“ Following the echo of ‘ the shot that was heard around the world ’ went out a voice from Ticonderoga, just 100 years ago on the day we celebrate, which carried terror to the hearts of the foes of our forefathers. Let us all do honor to the memory of that voice. Very Respectfully,

POST ALFRED WEED, G. A. R.

“ Ticonderoga, N. Y., April 26th, 1875.”

The following is the programme : —

“ In the name of the great Jehovah and the Continental Congress.”

1775

ETHAN ALLEN  
CENTENNIAL

1875

at

TICONDEROGA,

Monday, May 10th, 1875,

commemorating the capture of the fort.

ORDER OF EXERCISES.

FORENOON.

Sunrise — Reveille — One hundred guns.

9 to 10 o'clock — Reception of invited guests by Post Alfred Weed.

11 o'clock — Consolidation of organized bodies and review, under command of General Hammond.

12½ o'clock — Refreshments — picnic.

AFTERNOON.

1½ o'clock — Formation of line — organizations and citizens.

2 o'clock — Procession moves to fort grounds over the route taken by Ethan Allen, May 10th, 1775, and is drawn up about the speaker's stand.

2½ o'clock — Music by consolidated bands.

Prayer.  
 Music.  
 Addresses by prominent men.  
 Music.  
 Grand parade and military tactics.  
 Ranks broken and places of special interest visited.  
 Escorting of guests to cars and boats.

## PARTING SALUTE.

The above card is explanatory of the causes of a change in the original programme, which, however, was not divested of its most interesting features. Upon the anniversary the proceedings were threatened with rain in the morning, but at a seasonable hour the rain ceased falling and the foreign arrivals began to come in. On the train from Rutland arrived the Barlow Greys, of St. Albans; next the steamer *Curlew*, from Vergennes, the oldest city in New England, brought an immense concourse of people, and later the large and elegant steamboat *Montreal* appeared steaming down the waters. Meanwhile thousands upon thousands of carriages, wagons, carts and vehicles of every description were coming from all directions over the country roads until at last the great promontory presented a scene of the richest and most imposing splendor. Tents crowded the rugged heights. As the Burlington boats came in a round of cannonade greeted them and myriads from the breasts of the old earth-works cheered lustily as the prow of the steamers touched the shore.

## THE PROCESSION.

The procession was formed at about half-past one P. M., as follows: —

General Joseph Egloff, Marshal.  
 Senior Vice Commander, G. A. R., Department of New York.  
 Barlow Greys of St. Albans.  
 Orators of the day.  
 Sherman Cornet Band, Winooski, Vt.  
 Ethan Allen Hose Company, Burlington, Vt.  
 Vergennes Cornet Band.  
 Stephens's Hose, Vergennes.  
 Bristol Band and Rutland Brigade Drum Corps.  
 Post Roberts, Rutland, Vt.  
 Burlington Band.  
 Post Stanard, of Burlington, Vt.  
 Ticonderoga Cornet Band.  
 Post Alfred Weed.  
 Whitehall Cornet Band.  
 Citizens of Whitehall.  
 Band, citizens and invited guests.

The route of the procession was over the path Ethan Allen took his men on the morning of the attack, and has already been fully described in these pages. The line passed from the lake up the hill toward the fort. The fort



was distant about a mile and the journey was over a rough, rocky path. The citizens standing on the high promontory above in densely packed lines hurrahed as the line neared them, and finally in about thirty minutes the place was reached, about 7,000 people clustering about the speaker's stand.

The sight was a grand one. The bright uniforms of the soldiers, the gleaming of bayonets and the flourish of the brazen instruments wrought up a scene of more than ordinary splendor. Just at this time, too, the sun broke forth gloriously and the sombre mountain sides were diffused with light. Every cloud was swept from the surface of the heavens and the morning of May 10th, 1875, was like that grand and joyous one upon which in the gray of the dawn Ethan Allen won the fort by his daring for the colonies.

Colonel William E. Calkins, president of the day, made a brief but eloquent address of welcome, speaking as follows:—

“Members of the Grand Army of the Republic—Ladies and Gentlemen:—While centennial camp fires are burning thick around us, it seems proper that we too should catch the inspiration and gather from valley, hillside and mountain glen, to celebrate the centennial of an event which stands out in bold relief upon the page of American history—an event freighted with the progress of mankind, to-wit: the capture of Fort Ticonderoga by Ethan Allen and his band of Green Mountain Boys, in the name of the Great Jehovah and the Continental Congress.

“We are told by the bold and daring commander that the surprise was executed in the gray of the morning of the 10th of May, 1775; that the sun seemed to rise on that morning with a superior lustre; and Ticonderoga and its dependencies smiled to its conquerors. I regret that the same sunlight which illumined in so marked a manner the morning of a hundred years ago is partially crippled by clouds, yet, in behalf of Post Alfred Weed, of Ticonderoga, and Post William H. Stevenson, of Moriah, and their assistants of the Grand Army of the Republic, to whose unflinching energy and perseverance the celebration of to-day is chiefly due, I tender to one and all a hearty welcome. Here on this consecrated ground was the first harvest of prisoners; here the first place where drilled regulars of a foreign foe stacked arms to the yeomanry of America; here the first intimation that crowns might crumble and kingdoms pass away; here the enamel of monarchy and despotism was punctured and men learned to assert and maintain their inalienable rights to life, liberty and happiness. Trusting that all will join heart and hand in the celebration of the day, we cannot be unmindful that the actors of a hundred years ago heed not the drum beat of to-day, but we feel assured that their spirits ‘are marching on.’ And when the marble which marks the resting-place of Ethan Allen and his eighty-three Green Mountain Boys shall have yielded to the crumbling hand of time, their memories and example will live, gathering brighter lustre with increasing centuries—and I trust New York, the home

of my adoption, will take no exception if I *particularly* welcome the large delegation of my native State, Vermont. And I cordially welcome the representatives of her press, her bar and bench, and State officials, so ably represented here to-day."

The Rev. Joseph Cook then delivered an eloquent address (the principal oration), which opened as follows:—

"This, fellow-citizens, is soil older to fame than Plymouth Rock. In 1609, eleven years before the *Mayflower* began her voyage, Samuel Champlain fought a battle with the Iroquois, on the shore yonder not far from the spot where Ethan Allen one hundred years ago this morning landed in the gray dawn. We are assembled in a fortress which was one link of a chain of French posts extending from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to that of the Mississippi, and designed to shut the English up behind the Alleghanies. Over that long path from the iceberg to the palm hovered the anxious thoughts of Chatham, of Colbert, of George IV, and Louis XIV, when as yet it had not been decided whether America was to be English or French. By virtue of her discoveries of the valleys of the St. Lawrence and Mississippi, France claimed all territory traversed by water flowing into those rivers; but by right of her paramount sovereignty over the Iroquois (five nations), England claimed the territory from the Green Mountains to beyond Niagara. Here was an issue between the gripping giant fingers of the glittering hand of France and the sinewy hand of England, on the decision of which, at Quebec, a continent hung at hazard. Over this soil have waved the competing flags of three nations. One hundred and sixteen years ago Ticonderoga was French and became British; one hundred years ago at dawn this morning it was British and became American. We tread in the footsteps of Montcalm, Abercrombie, Howe, Amherst, Allen, St. Clair and Burgoyne."

After paying a glowing tribute to Allen, Mr. Cook closed his remarks as follows:—

"Prince Albert said that a good citizen's duty was to find out which way God was moving and move with him. That sentiment England writes beneath Prince Albert's statues. *Deum sequi*, to follow God, was, according to Seneca, the sum of political wisdom. In America every man has a certain princely responsibility. Every free citizen is under political obligation to find out which way God is moving and to move with him. For 200 years representative institutions have been spreading. The gulf stream of modern history is democracy. De Tocqueville stood in awe before this historical tendency as a revelation of a divine decree. But chaos must come from the progress of democracy unless the diffusion of conscientiousness keeps pace with the diffusion of property, of intelligence and of liberty. I believe that the diffusion of conscientiousness is what Providence intends to accomplish. Assuredly God intends the diffusion of liberty and of intelligence. Providence intends to bless, and



not to curse the world. Only one safe world is possible under universal suffrage — a thoroughly good world. The Lord is, not was. God was, is, and is to come. These are the ultimate grounds of my interest in the past, and the only sources of my hope in the future of America. God means to diffuse conscientiousness assuredly, as He has diffused liberty, intelligence and property, and so to perfect His own work.”

Other orators followed, letters were read by the president from Governor Tilden, of New York, Governors Peck, Page and Stewart, of Vermont, Colonel Ethan Allen, of New York, and others. It was a fit commemoration of one of the prominent historical events of the country.

*Unveiling of Lord Howe's Monument.* — The town of Ticonderoga owes its honored townsman, the Rev. Joseph Cook, a debt of gratitude for his gift of a fine marble monument which commemorates the death of Lord Howe, who fell at the head of his army on the 6th of July, 1758, when about to assault the French in the fort. The monument stands just below the upper falls on the bank of the outlet from Lake George, and bears this inscription : —

NEAR THIS SPOT  
FELL  
JULY 6TH, 1758,  
IN A SKIRMISH PRECEDING  
ABERCROMBIE'S DEFEAT OF MONTCALM,  
GEORGE AUGUSTUS  
VISCOUNT HOWE,  
AGED 34.

*Massachusetts erected a monument to him in Westminster Abbey.  
Ticonderoga places here this memorial.*

The monument was unveiled on the 5th of September, 1878, on which occasion an interesting programme was carried out. Hon. C. H. Delano was made chairman and R. R. Stevenson secretary, and the former inaugurated the ceremonies with these words : —

“Ladies and Gentlemen :— I thank you for the honor you have conferred upon me in asking me to preside at this ceremony on this historic spot. On centennial day, I, with others, was selected to secure suitable memorial stones or monuments, to be erected on spots of historic interest in Ticonderoga, and I am ashamed to say that I had forgotten the fact until a distinguished son — I may well say the most distinguished son — of Ticonderoga called on me the other day and invited me to be present at the unveiling of a monument to the memory of Lord Howe, upon this spot, near where he fell. And he farther said that the monument was purchased and paid for. So I am pleased to say that there is no mortgage upon it. It seems to me eminently fitting that the citizens of Ticonderoga, whose sons, through all the conflicts of the past, since the settlement of the town to the close of the last Rebellion, have honored their ancestors, their town and themselves, should gather here to-day to do honor to the memory of one who was of the flower and chivalry of England, and the

idol of the army whose fortune he shared, and who, on this spot, met the death of a heroic soldier."

The Rev. Joseph Cook was then introduced to the assemblage and delivered a very eloquent and patriotic address. Colonel William E. Calkins was then loudly called for, and followed with one of his characteristic speeches, leaving his listeners as usual in the best of humor. Just previous to the closing benediction Hon. C. H. Delano suggested that an expression be taken, and by an overwhelming *viva voce* vote of the assembly the name of Trout brook was changed, up to its first large branch near the red school-house, to Lord Howe brook, in honor of the soldier and friend of America.

*In the Rebellion* — This town was one of the first to respond to the call of the country for aid in maintaining the Union. Meetings were held, recruiting pushed, money raised and, more than all, large numbers of volunteers promptly stepped forward to fill the ranks of the Union armies. The wealthy men of the community generously voted of their means for the payment of liberal bounties, and a general spirit of patriotism prevailed, as it did in most northern towns. The long roll of the dead who gave up their lives to perpetuate the integrity of the Republic contains many from this town whose deeds and deaths number them among the country's heroes. The reader will find this topic fully treated in a separate chapter herein.

The following is a list of the names of the soldiers from Ticonderoga who served in the late civil war. While it is not complete, it is as nearly so as can at this day be made: —

## TICONDEROGA LIST OF SOLDIERS.

Francis E. McCormick,	S. V. R. Bigalow,	Harmon C. Miller,
James McCormick,	David Wakefield,	John Miller,
Nelson M. Barney,	John Hammell,	Oliver Mayotte,
Roswell G. Bates,	Reuben Kilmer,	Frank Blanchard,
Wm. H. Smith,	Patrick Melaney,	Philander Woodard,
Orville C. Bigalow,	George Wiley,	Zephaniah Woodard,
George Burns,	Horace Sturdevant,	Jefferson Oskins,
Geo. B. Coates,	Abraham Little,	Warren Johnson,
Judson E. Cook,	Stewart Bradford,	Hugh McCormick,
Jotham A. Huestis,	Joseph Brean,	Daniel McCaulay,
Almeron S. Burns,	Anson Moore,	James O'Brien,
Wm. McAllister,	Frank Sartwell,	John Pinchin,
Patrick Conly,	Al Hayfords,	Alexander Ramsay,
Adam Hovenden,	Edwin T. Hayfords,	John Sprague,
Albert O'Connor,	Erastus Hayfords,	George Wheeler,
Nelson P. Dolbeck,	Neice McGowan,	Thomas Moore,
Wm. Smith,	Ebenezer McGowan,	George Armstrong,
Robert Hogle,	Edward E. Wilson,	James May,



---

James Furgeson,	Joseph D. Myers,	Joel W. Bennett,
Moses Boudrye,	Patrick McCaughlin,	Patrick H. Bly,
John Dudley,	Charles H. Holcomb,	Myron Bennett,
Samuel Bailey,	Simon Town,	Henry Dunton,
Thomas E. Bailey,	George L. Town,	Alanson H. Tradway,
Samuel G. Bryan,	William Lively,	Palmer Carr,
Prentice J. Burt,	William Lively, jr.,	Chamberlain Marshall,
William Cossey,	James Lively,	Jesse Lewis,
Ashley B. Covill,	Al Lively,	Captain Alfred Weed,
Henry Dudley,	Charles Gilleo,	Alex. H. Weed.
John M. Farr,	Henry Gilleo,	Asa Bacon,
Henry Garfield,	John McGhee,	John Hall,
Horace Henry,	William Sampson,	Fletcher Ingalls,
Loyal' Ives,	Henry Sampson,	Jed Walker,
George Ives,	Neal Murray,	John Walker,
Edwin Lampson,	George G. Scott,	Robert Bristol,
Willard H. Lampson,	Walter Scott,	Charles Chilson,
Capt. Wm. H. Sanger,	John Scott,	—— Glazier,
George W. Bryan,	Sidney McClenathan,	David Walker,
George H. Rowley,	James Burnet,	John Roberts,
Sheldon Hildreth,	George Delano,	David Roberts,
Charles Lapier,	Walter G. Ramsay,	George Roberts,
Charles Gay,	Silas Neddo,	Gerrit Smith,
John Furgesson,	Harrison Rich,	Dyer S. Sharp,
George W. Lincoln,	Martin Hogle,	Edward Sharp,
Jefferson Clark,	Edward Frenette,	Frank Sharp,
Edward Hams,	George Frenette,	Frank Johnson,
David E. Jackson,	John Oskins,	John Nulty,
James Keyes.	John F. Barnes,	Patrick Nulty,
Thomas Stewart,	James Joubert,	Daniel W. Odell,
George W. Smith,	James Garrow,	Nelson E. Porter,
Peter Neddo,	James L'Esperance,	Hiram Sexton,
Edward Champagne,	John C. Moody,	John W. H. Teft,
Henry Odell,	Ulysses Carey,	Moses Wells,
Ira More,	James Armstrong,	James O'Neale,
Henry More,	Charles Armstrong,	James Garrow,
William Garfield,	Felix Hiberty,	William Dennsmore,
William Frenette,	George Covill,	Joseph Peppin,
Harvey D. Spicer,	Thomas Covill,	Zadock Lapell,
Patrick Donally,	Ira Hulbert,	William Johnson,
Joseph Ozier, jr.,	Louis King,	George D. Barber,
Perry Johnson,	Reuben Bly,	Thomas Letson,

---

Peter W. Palmer,	James Bryan,	Joseph Porter,
Ira Cook,	William J. Bryan,	Samuel Bristol,
Albert N. Shattuck,	William Bramble,	George Clark,
Patrick English,	Isaiah Perkins,	Henry Griffin,
Thomas W. Newman,	Lester G. Hack,	Doransy S. Carr,
Alex. McDougal,	James D. Potter,	Robert Hovenden,
Horace Spaulding,	Edward Armstrong,	Adam Hovenden,
Joseph Fernette,	Charles A. Boudrye,	Frank Sampson.

---

*Town Records.*— Fire has several times swept over the village of Ticonderoga with disastrous effects and the early records of the town are destroyed; this is the common report in very many towns—the records are either destroyed or lost, and in many where they are still intact, they are kept with the grossest carelessness, as if they are of no possible value; while, in truth, much of the early history of every town exists nowhere else than on those musty pages. The following extracts, some of them more quaint than really valuable, were made by Mr. Cook in 1857, before the records were destroyed, and they shall be preserved here:—

*Wolves, 1805.* — “Voted, that Forty Dollars be raised for the purpose of Destroying Wolves, and that five Dollars be paid to any Person that does actually Ketch and Kill a full grown Wolf within the limits of this town, until the whole sum of 40 dollars be Expended.” In the next year thirty dollars were expended in the same manner. In 1808, twenty-five dollars were raised, of which two dollars and fifty cents should be paid for “each whelp killed.” In 1812 the same bounty was offered for “each whelp that can walk alone.” In 1814 the definition was made still more specific, embracing “each whelp which is not able to take care of itself, provided they have their eyes open and can see.” This is the last recorded bounty for the killing of wolves.

*Foxes, 1811.* — “Voted, that eight dollars be raised for the purpose of Destroying Foxes, and that twenty-five cents be paid for killing each,” etc.

*Crows and Blackbirds.*— “Voted, that ten dollars be raised for the purpose of destroying Crows and Blackbirds; three cents for each crow, and one cent for each blackbird.”

*School Districts.*— On the 20th of June, 1813, Samuel Biglow, Francis Arthur, and Levi Wilcox, Commissioners of Schools, divided the town into six school districts, “in conformity to the requisitions of the Act entitled, An Act for the establishment of common schools, passed the 19th day of June, 1812.” These districts were subsequently changed in boundaries, subdivided and otherwise altered.

*Roads and Bridges.*— From 1804 to 1820 the town records, as is commonly the case, are largely made up of descriptions of new roads, improvements ordered in those already laid out, and the building of bridges. In the language of Mr. Cook, “To lay out the roads and erect the bridges of a single



town, with all the conflicting array of local interests, is by no means a fool's business. The Upper Falls bridge was built in 1807 and sixty dollars raised for that purpose. Bridges had existed at the Lower Falls from the earliest military possession of the territory."

*Slavery.*—The only trace of the institution of slavery which tradition or public documents have afforded us in this town, is the following record made about the time that the abolition movement began in the State laws: "A record of the birth of a female black child.—This may certify that I, John Arthur, of the town of Ticonderoga, Essex county, State of New York, have had a female black child born (the services of which I claim), by the name of Sylvia, which child was born on the eleventh day of December, the year one thousand eight hundred and fourteen. Given under my hand this eighth day of December, 1815. John Arthur."

*Stray Cattle*, 1808.—"Voted, that the cow-yard of Richard Handee be appropriated for the use of a Pound, and that he be pound-keeper." Other yards in various parts of the town were subsequently made pounds, but there is no record of other regular public inclosures.

*Civil List.*—Following is a list of the supervisors of the town from its formation to the present time, with the years of their respective service:—

1804-8, Levi Thompson; 1809, Manoah Miller; 1810-11, Peter Deall; 1812-14, Ebenezer Douglass; 1815, Levi Thompson; 1816, Ebenezer Douglass; 1817-20, William Kirby; 1821, Francis Arthur; 1822-23, Isaac Kellogg; 1824-26, Ebenezer Douglass; 1827-28, Joseph Weed; 1829, Almeron Smith; 1830, Joseph Weed; 1831, Almeron Smith; 1832-34, Joseph S. Weed; 1835, Melancthon W. Blin; 1836-37, John Smith; 1838, Levi Thompson; 1839, John H. More; 1840, Levi Thompson; 1841, Henry B. Hay; 1842-43, Thomas J. Treadway; 1844, Palmer M. Baker; 1845, George R. Andrews; 1846, George Grant; 1847-8, Joseph Weed; 1849, Cornelius Van Vechten and Jonathan Burnett; 1850, Francis Arthur; 1851, William E. Calkins; 1852, Levi Thompson; 1853-54, William E. Calkins; 1855, Moses T. Clough; 1856, Henry F. Hammond; 1857, Benjamin H. Baldwin; 1858, William E. Calkins; 1859-60, Henry G. Burleigh; 1861, Benjamin H. Baldwin; 1862, W. H. Cook; 1863-65, Henry G. Burleigh; 1866 to 1872 inclusive, Clayton H. Delano; 1873 to 1881 inclusive, William E. Calkins; 1882, Dominick J. Gilligan; 1883 and to the present time, Thomas J. Treadway.

Following are the present officers of the town: Supervisor, T. J. Treadway; Clerk, John C. Fenton; Overseer of the poor, Judah M. Brown; Commissioner of highways, Alex. H. Weed; Assessors, Andrew Stowell, Dorus C. Bascom, W. A. G. Arthur; Collector, Edward D. C. Wiley; Auditors, James F. More, Austin N. Persons, J. W. H. Tefft; Constables, Edwin H. Armstrong, John Woodward, Lucius W. Thatcher, Charles Burns,

Warren Johnson; Game constable, James Corpron; Commissioners of excise, Joseph Keeton, Wm. W. D. Jeffers, Lyman Malcolm.

*The Medical Profession.*—Probably the first physician to settle in this town was Dr. Levi Wilcox, who located here as early as 1800. He followed the uninterrupted practice of his profession for over thirty-five years, and attained a large practice and a reputation that was enviable. In the spring of 1822 he received as a partner Dr. John Smith (which partnership continued for three years), who practiced here until near the time of his death in May, 1869. In 1838 he removed an apothecary's shop, that he had kept at the Upper Village, to the Lower Village, and there kept a stock of remedies which proved a great convenience to the inhabitants and his brother physicians. He died on the 23d day of April, 1869. An obituary published at the time speaks in the highest terms of his integrity and professional accomplishments. He held the office of superintendent of the poor and was a prominent member of the old Ticonderoga lodge of Masons, which order passed a series of eulogistic resolutions upon his character and attainments. Dr. Smith had one son, Charles Darwin Smith, who died on the 12th of April, in the same year that his father died, at the age of forty-nine. Dr. Smith's widow is still living with her son-in-law, W. A. G. Arthur, in Ticonderoga.

Between the years 1830 and 1839, several young physicians practiced in the town for periods of varied lengths; among them were Lemuel Weeks and Alexander Spencer. In 1839 Dr. A. R. Nickerson came here from Crown Point and practiced for many years. After 1840, Drs. C. Hall, H. S. Smith and Vaughan followed the profession in the town for transient periods. Dr. W. P. Gannon came to Ticonderoga in 1854 and practiced until his death in 1879. Dr. Brobencher also practiced here for a time. Dr. M. J. Moore, a brother-in-law of Dr. Gannon, practiced and died here.

The present physicians of the town are: Dr. James H. Bailey, who studied his profession in the University of Vermont, at Burlington, and graduated in 1858. He practiced a year and a half in Chicago, and then at Williamstown, Vt., three years. He was in the army as surgeon one year, at Barry, Vt., two years, and came to this town in 1867, where he has continued in practice since, gaining the confidence of the community.

Dr. J. N. Oliver studied at Rouse's Point, and graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1857. He then practiced six months at Alburgh, Vt., and at Constable, Franklin county, until the war broke out. He was in the service as surgeon to the close of the war, and practiced in Essex from 1865 to 1882, when he removed to Ticonderoga.

Dr. N. D. Peck studied his profession at Cornwall, Vt., and graduated from the Cleveland Homeopathic College in 1871. He practiced with Dr. George E. E. Sparhawk at Gaysville, Vt., two years, and came to this town immediately afterward.



Dr. C. A. Groves is a graduate of the New York Homeopathic Medical College, 1881. He has practiced in Ticonderoga since that date.

Dr. R. C. Wilcox graduated from the medical department of the University of Vermont in 1883, and has practiced here since ; he also practiced six years previous to this period under a diploma from the State censors. He is a grandson of Dr. Wilcox, the pioneer physician.

The dental profession is represented in the village by Dr. J. W. H. Tefft, who studied two years in Poultney, Vt., beginning in 1855. He then practiced one year in Troy, and came here, where he has enjoyed an extensive patronage since.

*The Legal Profession.* — S. A. Gibson practiced law after the fashion of early days at the Upper Village in 1814, and was the first attorney in the town of which we can obtain any information. Libeus Haskell, Lemuel Wicker, and a Mr. Northrup were lawyers of Ticonderoga in 1822 and for some years later. They were succeeded between 1824 and 1834 by Richard Smith, Jonathan Burnett, James J. Stephens, and Eliphalet Pearson. The next decade witnessed the advent of George R. Andrews, William Calkins (father of William E. Calkins, who is still living in the village), J. C. Wicker, and Moses T. Clough; the latter practiced the profession down to about the date of the war and is now in practice in the city of Troy, N. Y.; Augustus Haight, M. F. Nicholson and C. N. Flint were engaged here for short periods. In 1858 Mr. Cook says the only lawyers in the place were Hon. J. Burnet, Alfred Weed, and M. A. Sheldon. The latter is now in practice in Glens Falls. Since 1858 the profession has been represented here by John C. Hollenbeck, Stephen L. Wheeler, William R. and Simon Crammond, with those now in practice.

John C. Fenton studied his profession in New York and was admitted to the bar in 1859. He has been in active practice here since 1868, and now holds the offices of notary public and clerk of the town.

Robert Dornburgh studied at Chester, Warren county, and was admitted in May, 1880. He was surrogate's clerk in Elizabethtown to May, 1881, and then went to Port Henry, where he remained to February, 1882, at which date he came to Ticonderoga.

Mr. Cook writes as follows of those who held some of the important offices in State politics: "Of representatives to the Legislature from Ticonderoga, Manoah Miller was the first in 1813; Levi Thompson followed him in 1814. Ebenezer Douglass was in the Assembly in 1821 and about the same time Ticonderoga and the county were represented in the Senate by Judge Kellog. In 1830 William Kirby was sent from Ticonderoga to the Assembly; in 1831, Joseph S. Weed; in 1833, Almeron Smith; Jonathan Burnet, who had been county judge from 1841 to 1845, was sent to the Assembly for 1853-54; he was a leading debater in the House during a very active session in which the canal enlargement, the impeachment of Mather, and the prohibitory law were

prominent subjects of discussion." Clayton H. Delano was sent to the Assembly in 1870 and 1871; William E. Calkins in 1875-76; George R. Andrews was sent to Congress from 1849 to 1851.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Ticonderoga Village.* — The situation and surroundings of the village of Ticonderoga have, perhaps, been sufficiently dwelt upon. It remains for us to consider its growth in mercantile and manufacturing interests, and the attendant increasing prosperity of its institutions.

Judge Hay occupied and conducted the "old King's store," which stood near the steamboat landing at Ticonderoga, and supplied the inhabitants of a large section of territory with their household necessities before the beginning of the present century. The old building was used for many years as a combined hotel, store, church, and town-house. (See preceding pages.) John Stoughton, who has been alluded to as associated with Samuel Deall, sold goods here as early as 1767, which were shipped from New York by Mr. Deall, coming by sloop to Albany, where they were met by wagoners and carried overland to the head of Lake George, whence they continued onward by boat. It was in the transportation of merchandise down the lake that Mr. Stoughton was drowned.

Judge Isaac Kellog was a merchant at the upper village as early as 1800; he was joined by Ebenezer Douglass, after having carried on business alone for several years, and the firm was Kellog & Douglass; this business was continued until about 1814.

John and Timothy Harris traded in an old yellow store at the upper village in 1813. John Harris continued the business prosperously until 1832. Mr. Cook says: "For a public-spirited and energetic man like Mr. Harris the mercantile business of this day presented an attractive field of activity. Crossing to the roads of Vermont in summer and on the ice of Champlain in winter, the transportation wagons were usually eight days in bringing goods from Albany and Troy to Ticonderoga by land, for which the charges were from eight to ten shillings a hundred."

John A. Arthur was in mercantile trade at the Lower Falls in 1813, and Dyer Spencer had a store at the Upper Village from 1832 to 1835, a part of that period in the old yellow store mentioned; this building has now disappeared.

In 1816 Joseph Weed became a partner with Ebenezer Douglass, formerly of the firm of Kellog & Douglass, in the same store at the Upper Village; this partnership continued seven years, after which Mr. Weed began business in the old red store at the Upper Village. From 1823 to 1838, according to Mr. Cook, "this building contained some of the best assortments and was the scene of the heaviest mercantile business ever carried on by a single man in Ticonderoga. It is estimated that the business of this store for about ten years previous to 1838 amounted to over \$100,000 annually."



Other stores at the Upper Village, which were intimately connected with the lumber trade in early years, were those of A. H. Coats, begun in 1836 and closed in 1838; and the grocery of P. M. Baker, carried on from 1832 to 1844, when the proprietor built his store at the Lower Village and carried on a successful business for many years.

Mr. Cook gives the following account of the early stores on the north side of the creek at the Lower Village, which we shall extend so as to bring the records down to date: John Arthur traded in the old Tefft house as early as 1810. John A. Arthur, his son, built the store opposite Tefft's Hotel, and traded there in 1814; this building is now occupied as a dwelling on Elm street. Mr. Arthur vacated the building in 1816, Edward Vaughn taking his place, and built the structure occupied in 1858 by Mr. Snow, and opened it as a store. Wheeler & Blin traded in a building which stood near the lower bridge in 1826, and were followed the next year by Park Freeman, and he by Rumsey & Wheeler in 1829.

In 1820 Joseph S. Weed came here from Saratoga county, and built a large store below the lower falls on the south bank of the stream near the present site of the pulp-mill. For five years he carried on a heavy business; the traveled thoroughfare between the lakes then passed the site of his store, and lumber was brought there in large quantities every winter. In 1828 Mr. Weed built his store at what soon became locally known as Weedsville, now a suburb of Ticonderoga, on the high ground to the westward of the village. He also built the brick house, then and long after one of the best residences in the village, and still occupied by Mrs. Weed, widow of Joseph Weed; the old store building is now used as a barn connected with Mrs. Joseph Weed's residence. Joseph S. Weed occupied the store five or six years with Richard D. Arthur as his partner. Other occupants of the store until 1838 were J. H. More & Co., David Smith & Co., George Grant, Grant & C. Van Vechten. In the last-mentioned year Joseph Weed purchased the premises from Mr. Grant, removed thither his other business interests, and continued prosperously until 1842. For a number of years William E. Calkins, then a young man, "but destined to become one of the most prominent and able merchants of the town," was a partner of Mr. Weed. Mr. Weed subsequently, and very little through his own fault, became embarrassed financially; but he diligently and honorably prosecuted his business interests as far as he was able, until forced by increasing years to abandon them. He died in 1860.

In 1821 Hiram Fields began business in Ticonderoga as a hatter and book-seller. His store was on Exchange street and was built for him by Mr. Blin. There had been a previous hat store at the Upper Village,<sup>1</sup> the people in that

---

<sup>1</sup> "It is exceedingly inconvenient that the streets of Ticonderoga village have no names, so that it is impossible to designate accurately the location of public buildings. For purposes of convenience in these sketches we are compelled to take the liberty of originating names for streets as follows: The street running a little west of north from the fair grounds past the brick church, lawyers' offices, hotel

day depending for their head coverings on small factories scattered about the country. The work of making fur hats was carried on by Mr. Fields for fifteen years, and was sufficiently extensive to keep employed three or four hands. Here the furs of the town and vicinity found market. After 1846 Mr. Fields devoted his attention to the sale of books and stationery.

In 1832 Richard D. Arthur built the brick structure which formerly stood on the southeast corner of Main and Exchange streets, and kept a store there two years, when he died. It was afterward occupied by L. Doolittle & Fletcher, Elisha Pike & L. Doolittle, J. H. More (1837 to 1840), a part of this period with Hiram Wilson as partner; Craige & Harris, S. More & Powers, Hiram Wilson, and William E. Calkins (1845), Mr. Wilson having purchased the building; these gentlemen did a thriving business here until 1850. At this time, owing to depression in lumber and iron traffic and failure to realize on what was their due, the firm became embarrassed and in 1852 made an assignment, but liquidated their indebtedness in an honorable manner. In 1854 G. C. Weed and J. Q. A. Treadway occupied the brick store, and after one year Mr. Treadway continued the business alone. The building was burned in the great fire of March 31st, 1875, which swept away most of the business portion of the village, entailing a loss of \$200,000.

What was once known as Bugbee's store (now a dwelling occupied by Orlando Rowell) was built on the south side of Elm street in 1836 by William Calkins and William E. Calkins, and rented for several years, and finally sold, to Carlos Bugbee. Here Mr. Bugbee did a large business in provisions, with the towns of Crown Point, Schroon, Moriah, and in towns south of and across Lake Champlain. It is said that thirty-three per cent. of a heavy trade came from the then vast lumber interest of Schroon. Mr. Bugbee was joined by Smith Weed in 1841, and the partnership continued to 1855, when Mr. Weed went out. Mr. Bugbee continued trade for some time after.

In 1836 H. & T. J. Treadway built a store on Exchange street, where a

---

and other principal buildings, across the creek, and ending at the foot of Mount Hope, we shall call Main street. The one beginning at the store-houses and boat yards on the creek, rising past the lower grist-mill and machine shop, crossing Main street at right angles, and extending through Weedsville and into Trout Brook valley, we shall name, from its principal building and the mercantile and boating business done on it, Exchange street. On the north side of the creek, running from the hotel of James Tefft, past C. Bugbee's store to the village school-house, on account of the trees that fringe the foot of Mount Hope, we have Elm street. Water street, if you please, is the road along the shore of the creek from J. Tefft's to the foot of Cottage hill; and from there past the cold spring through Gallows gate to the old French lines, we ought to find Battle street, on account of the military engagements that have made every foot of that road historic ground. As indicating the direction of the lumber woods towards Schroon, and of the blacks lead mines, and as being the entrance thence to the village, we shall name the north and south road at Weedsville Corners, Forest street."

Such is Mr. Cook's designation of streets in 1857-8, and several of the more important ones have retained these names. He adds: "Exchange street we are obliged to divide into its three natural sections, the upper, or Weedsville; the central, from the bridge along the center of business to the machine shop hill, and the lower section from the foot of the hill to the docks. Upper, central, and lower correspond to the height of the ground."



very large trade was carried on in connection with their vast lumber and factory interests; their business here amounted to more than \$50,000 a year, and was closed in 1845.

The brick store at Weedsville, now occupied as a dwelling, was erected in 1838 by Asa P. Delano, and was occupied several years by him in company with L. H. Persons. From about 1848 to 1850 C. P. Ives and W. A. G. Arthur did business there. A wooden store building was in existence long before the brick store at Weedsville, and was occupied by Asa P. Delano, Nelson Rogers, and the firm of Delano & Jones. It then passed through the different stages of a harness shop (Mr. Lester's), a barn, and is now a dwelling.

What was known as the G. C. Weed store, Exchange street, was built by George C. Weed in 1843 and first occupied by Cornelius Van Vechten; he removed to the West, and from 1847 to 1848 the store was used by the firm of G. C. Weed & J. Q. A. Treadway, when business there was discontinued.

George Thompson built a store on Exchange street in the same vicinity in 1842; the building is now used as a dwelling. Mr. Thompson died in 1849, and was an energetic and prominent citizen of the place.

In 1842 what was long known as "The Exchange" was built by M. A. Perkins, on the northeast corner of Main and Exchange streets. This site had previously been occupied by a wooden store and used by Wheeler & Blin, from about 1833; F. Skiff & L. Doolittle; M. A. Perkins & Lathrop Burge, and J. B. & Walter Chipman & Company. Each of these firms traded there about two years, when increasing business demanded the larger store; this was first occupied by Walter Chipman & Hiram Wilson; in 1844 Wilson & Calkins traded there, and from 1845 to 1848 J. M. Bishop & Company. G. A. Austin became associated with the firm, and the style was changed to Bishop & Austin. Mr. Cook says: "A strong rivalry, favored by other business operations, then going on and much to the benefit and awakening of the town, existed between Bishop & Austin and Wilson & Calkins, the buildings of these two firms facing each other from opposite sides of Central Exchange street. Wilson & Calkins having built a blacksmith shop on Main street, Bishop & Austin built the one opposite the post-office in competition." In the fall of 1848 G. C. Weed & J. Q. A. Treadway removed from Upper Exchange street, and for six years did a prosperous business as successors to Bishop & Austin. In 1854 they removed across the street and the Exchange remained empty. It was burned in the great fire in 1875.

Palmer M. Baker, already mentioned, erected in 1844 a large store on Exchange street, near the southwest corner of Main and Exchange; here he did a prosperous business until 1849. He was succeeded by Alonzo Moses for about a year. At this juncture several inhabitants of the town became impressed with the idea that a "union store" would prove a profitable venture. Accordingly an association was formed and shares in the enterprise issued.

William H. Cook, Benjamin P. Delano, and Joseph Thompson, prominent farmers, became responsible as directors for a stock of \$3,000, and W. F. Jones, a former clerk for Mr. Baker and then keeping a small stock in that store, was selected to purchase the goods for the new concern. The basis of sales was at a profit of seven per cent. to stockholders and twelve per cent. to outsiders. The store was successful from the start, but various causes, which need not be entered into here, resulted in its discontinuance in August, 1852. The stock was sold to the firm of Baker & Jones, which continued trade until 1855, when Mr. Jones removed to Glens Falls and was succeeded by A. P. Wilkie. The firm of Baker & Wilkie continued prosperously until the year 1863, the business being greatly indebted for its success to the general oversight and superintendence of William E. Calkins. In 1863 A. P. Wilkie bought the whole interest and continued business for several years, but was finally unsuccessful.

Chipman & Sunderland kept a store for several years in a building erected in 1846 on the northwest corner of Main and Exchange streets. It was afterwards occupied by J. McCormick as a clothing and tailoring shop, Jonas Lade, merchant, and others, until it was burned in the great fire of 1875, after purchase by William E. Calkins. (Calkins finally sold this "site" to Orwell people in 1882 for \$3,000; George C. Weed and C. E. Bennett bought it and erected thereon a fine brick block of stores, dwelling apartments, and banking rooms of C. E. Bush.)

Mr. Cook notes the fact that there were, in 1858, seven groceries of various degrees of importance in the village, a number that is not reached at the present time, though the magnitude of business done in this line is greatly increased.

Much of the present business portion of the village has been built up anew since the fire of 1875, and now presents a handsome and thrifty appearance. L. C. Drake began a general mercantile business in 1873 on North Main street, and removed to his present site in 1882, having rebuilt on his first location after the fire. During the first three years of his business he was associated with Mr. Haskell, as Drake & Haskell; this continued the three years, after which he was alone until 1882, when the firm became Drake & Bennett, continuing thus one year; since that date Mr. Drake has continued alone. He built his present handsome store at a cost of \$12,000.

John A. Wiley began a general mercantile trade in 1874 and still continues a prosperous business; he built his present store. Aaron Washburn has been engaged in the sale of dry goods, boots and shoes on Exchange street since 1877. Jonas Loeb & Brother began trade in dry goods and clothing on West Exchange street in 1873, renting a store of William E. Calkins, until the fire in 1875. Since 1879 the business has been conducted by Jonas alone. W. G. Wiley carried on a general store at Weedsville from 1868 to 1870, when he removed to Main street. He closed out his stock in 1873 and



in 1881 founded the New York clothing store for Wilson & Gross of Albany. He removed to his present store in September, 1884. E. Kampf began trade in clothing and hats and caps on North Main street, in November, 1884. Rowell & Shattuck began selling clothing and boots and shoes in 1872 on the north side of the river and moved to their present site in 1879; no change in firm.

Gilligan & Stevens began trade in groceries, crockery, and boots and shoes in 1868. They built and own their present store on West Exchange street; there has been no change since the firm was formed. Wicker & Wear opened a grocery on North Main street in 1883; Duross & Co., on West Exchange street, in July, 1884; C. H. Sentenn on East Exchange street, in July, 1884; D. W. Easton began in February, 1882, on the site of the post-office, and removed to his present location in 1884.

Fred Weed began the druggist trade with A. N. Pond in 1866; the partnership continued until 1868, after which until 1875, Mr. Weed carried on the business alone; in that year he took J. A. Fleming as a partner, who retired in 1880. Mr. Pond was one of the early druggists of the place and married a daughter of Dr. John Smith, one of the early physicians already mentioned. Mr. Weed was a school teacher of Ticonderoga before he engaged in trade. He has built up a successful business; has been postmaster of the place since 1864 and is one of the representative men of the village. J. A. Fleming, mentioned as a partner of Mr. Weed, began trade in the same line at his present location in 1880.

The drug firm of Cook & Delano was formerly in 1873 the firm of Pond & Cook. They were burned out in the great fire, after which C. Cook and C. E. Bennett formed the firm of Bennett & Cook and began trade in what is now Hulett's cabinet and furniture factory. Six months later they removed to Robert Bryan's store on North Main street. They remained there one year and then came to their present location. In 1882 Dr. F. T. Delano became a member of the firm, Mr. Bennett having retired, and the firm took its present name.

H. R. Hulett began the jeweler's trade in Wiley's block in 1874; the next year he removed to Main street, and thence to the Weed block in 1880; in 1884 he took his present store in Weed & Bennett's block. Loren Baldwin was an early jeweler in the village, and was followed by E. A. Prescott. C. A. McFarland began the business, corner of East Exchange and Main streets, in 1880, and Charles E. Cragg in May, 1884; the latter proprietor has a store also in Port Henry.

C. E. Pond began business in manufacturing and selling tinware in 1858, on the site of the present bank. He subsequently occupied the old hotel building and added stoves to his stock. He next occupied a part of his dwelling and then removed to a store on the site of the present Exchange Hotel. In

1883 he occupied his present store on West Exchange street. William Hooper & Company, who have been mentioned in the manufacturing interests, have a large stock of general hardware and do a very large business.

M. L. Royce, boots and shoes, on North Main street, began business on Exchange street in 1868, where Mr. Washburn is now located. He removed to his present site after the fire. A. W. Kincaid began trade in this line in March, 1885.

The furniture business and undertaking is carried on by Henry E. Hulett, who began with Edward T. Downs in 1874; they built their shop and store; Mr. Downs retired in 1876; also by Benjamin F. Frazier, for many years on the north side of the creek on "North Main street;" also by Lyman Malcolm, adjoining the "post-office block" on the east.

The banking business of the town is successfully conducted by C. E. Bush, who began it in March, 1883.

E. C. D. Wiley opened a music store on West Exchange street in 1882, and still continues it.

*Hotels.* — We have already alluded to one or two of the very early hostelries which furnished accommodations to the pioneers of the town. Upon this subject Mr. Cook wrote: "Prince Taylor, a negro, kept a place of public entertainment in the house now (1858) occupied by Mrs. Holcomb at the Upper Village, in 1811. Prince has left a noble memory behind him as a man of wit, of good parts, and withal of sincere piety, and few were the weddings, or parties, or festivals in town, in which his art as cook, waiter, and chief director of the eatables was not brought into contribution. Another public house was opened near the later residence of W. G. Baldwin, by Abel Potter, in 1811. The large hotel, with its two-story piazza in front, its suite of chambers and parlors, and its ball-room with arched ceiling and springing floor, was framed also in 1811. There being no other hotel in town for many years this public house at the Upper Village enjoyed a very satisfactory patronage. Though the summer travel between the lakes was not as great as now (1858) until about 1826, yet, from the building of the "Lake George" at the rapids in 1816, there had been many passengers between the two waters for pleasure or for business, whose only stopping place, up to 1825, was at the Alexandria Hotel. Cephas Atherton was one of the keepers of this house, and was succeeded by several others, down to about 1855, when it was substantially closed as a hotel.

"In 1825 James Tefft, father of Dr. J. W. H. Tefft, dentist, built the first hotel at the Lower Village, a stately building for that day and place, on the north of Elm street. (It is now used as a dwelling.) Its site was excellent, overlooking the old French lines, Mount Defiance, the ruins of the old fort, and the outlet, while just by its side foamed the lower falls, and it stood itself upon the historic foot of Burgoyne's Mount Hope. Fashionable travel, then on the



increase, with boarders among business men, gave this house, known as the American Hotel, a prosperous business for twenty years, up to 1846." From that date the patronage of the house declined, though Mr. Tefft continued to occupy it for many years after. "In 1828 Park Freeman erected the building which formerly stood on the site of the present Burleigh House, at the Lower Village, and opened its north room as a store, using the rest as a dwelling house. It was first opened as a hotel by Richard D. Arthur, its first landlord being S. D. Clark, and the next P. L. Goss. In 1836 it was bought and greatly improved by P. M. Baker, who owned it down to about the year 1856. It was successively occupied during this period by Joel W. Holcomb, R. T. Howard, Mr. Durfee, Joel W. Holcomb again, Byron Woodward, and Jonas Bennett." This site has ever since been a prominent one as connected with the hotels of the town. Town meetings were formerly held here, and the larger portion of travel made its headquarters in the house. The corner was swept by fire in 1875, and immediately afterward B. W. Burleigh began the erection of the present splendid hotel, the Burleigh House. Its cost was about \$50,000. It was first kept by W. C. French, who was succeeded by the present popular proprietor, T. E. Bailey; a livery is kept in connection with the house. Gordon Burleigh, father of B. W. and H. G. Burleigh, came to Ticonderoga in 1845, from New Hampshire. He became a prominent citizen, and his sons are among the foremost men in the community; have been extensively connected with the lumber, iron, and boat-building interests. Henry G. Burleigh (now Member of Congress) commenced his business education at about thirteen years of age, in 1845, in the store of Hiram Wilson and William E. Calkins and continued with them some seven or eight years, and finally succeeded them in business in the "old brick store," and, from a beginning of \$50, \$75, and \$125, salary for three years, can now boast his tens of thousands.

Down to 1858, according to Mr. Cook, there had been ten hotels in the town. One of them was the Exchange, built in 1842 and occupied as a hotel for about five years, when it was given up as such for want of profitable patronage; the Thatcher House, at Weedsville; the Lake House, built by A. J. Cook, at the Lake George Landing, and the Street House, by Mr. Cheney.

The attractions about the ruined fortress drew many travelers to that vicinity, and do yet, which led Archibald Pell to erect near there the Pavilion Hotel in 1826; it was not, however, opened as a hotel until 1838. Mr. Pell, who was from New York city, purchased six hundred acres of the fort grounds, including the site of the house, the grounds around which were carefully and attractively laid out, and the hotel became widely known and popular. Mr. Pell was subsequently killed by the explosion of a cannon which it was the custom to fire as a salute to approaching steamers. The house afterward passed under the management of Messrs. Low, North, the widow of Cephas Atherton, Fortis Wilcox, James Tefft, B. B. Brown and others. It is now kept open summers by Messrs. Gilligan & Stevens.

The Hall House was built at the Lower Village by T. E. Bailey in 1879. He kept it a short time and turned it over to C. B. Hall. A year later J. E. Herring took and kept it one year, when it returned again to Mr. Hall's proprietorship.

The Rogers's Rock Hotel is a commodious and pleasant summer resort which is conducted by the Treadway Brothers near the foot of Lake George; it has accommodations for two hundred and fifty guests, and is sought by many tourists in the summer months.

*Manufactures.*—The village of Ticonderoga is most favorably situated for the profitable prosecution of various kinds of manufactures, and it was long the fond hope of the inhabitants that it would become a busy center of such operations; but these hopes have been realized only in part. The attractions of the lumber business, the impossibility of securing water rights at a time when other circumstances favored manufacturing, and other causes, drew attention away from the establishment of extensive and permanent industries which must have inured to the very great benefit of the town. Within comparatively a few years, however, several manufacturing industries have sprung up which have already attained great prominence and promise still further development; the example of such enterprises, too, is almost sure to lead to others equally as important in the progress and prosperity of the town.

In briefly referring to early manufactures in the town (in addition to those already described), we should mention the early woolen factory of John Arthur, which was built in 1808, at the north side of the lower falls. John Porter set up the first carding machine there, and as much as 15,000 pounds of wool were carded in some single seasons, much of it coming from surrounding towns. In 1814 James Tefft began work as a cloth-dresser, and did a business of \$3,500 the first year; he continued prosperously until 1826. Another factory was erected in 1818 on the south side of the lower falls and operated for several years by Mr. Pike, Mr. Case, and E. Harwood. This factory and the one on the north side were purchased by H. & T. J. Treadway, and from 1826 to 1840 they did the largest business in carding and dressing wool of any establishment in this section of country. After 1840 this firm manufactured cloth extensively and had a large trade with lumbermen. Since about 1850 this business has been gradually diverted to other points, mostly in New England. The Treadway factory is still operated a portion of the time.

A considerable tanning interest has existed in this town. Deacon Benjamin Burt established the first tannery at the street as early as 1806. At the Upper Village Paul Harvey built the first vats and tannery about 1809, and subsequently followed the same business in Trout brook valley with Augustus Moses, having sold his works at the Upper Village to S. Morse about 1812. The latter carried on the business very successfully for six years and died; the



tannery was then leased by his apprentice, Jedediah Rice, who in 1824 built the vats at the foot of Exchange street. After six years in the tannery at the Upper Village, William Spencer in the spring of 1832 erected the houses and vats on the north side of Exchange street, where he carried on an extensive business down to 1854. Since the last-named date very little tanning has been done here.

In earlier days the building of boats was one of the chief industries of this town. In writing of this business in 1858, Mr. Cook said: "With the exception of one or two stores, boat building is the largest business in Ticonderoga at the present time. The first load of Lake Pharaoh lumber that turned from its usual course through Lake George to the Hudson and sought an outlet southward by the Champlain canal, was drawn to the Ticonderoga docks by Stephen Sayre, in 1820. From that time the business of building and running canal boats has employed a considerable share of the industry of the town. The Ticonderoga was the first boat built, and launched in 1819. From 1820 to 1825 the boat yards were intensely active in supplying the orders of several business men of the town. Park Freeman, John Harris, William Stewart, Joseph Weed, Alexander McDole, Almeron Smith, and Nathan Delano were all building boats together. . . . Among the mechanics engaged in boat building, Asa Eggleston was foremost from about 1825 to 1835. Asa Simmons has been a prominent boat-builder at Port Marshall for the last thirty years (down to 1858). Henry Cossey, who began business with Simmons, has been engaged in boat building at the foot of Lower Exchange street since 1843." Down to 1858 ten boats a year was given as the average number launched. In 1846 there were fourteen; in 1847 there were seven and one large schooner; in 1857 there were thirteen. The timber used in these boats was all obtained from the town or the immediate vicinity until about 1855, when long pine began to be shipped from Canada. The first boats were made with spruce bottoms, no decks, were steered with an oar, and made solely for the lumber transportation; their cost was from \$600 to \$700. Better crafts were soon constructed, which cost from \$800 to \$1,000, and these in turn gave place to the best modern boats. In 1858 more than forty of the boats running between New York and Lake Champlain ports, hailed from Ticonderoga. The cargoes brought back were composed of merchandise of all kinds.

But all this is now changed. The building of boats has declined to almost nothing, while the once great commercial traffic on the lake is rapidly being supplanted by the railroads.

According to Mr. Cook, Luther Stoddard and Abel Potter were the principal wheelwrights of Ticonderoga previous to 1837. Joshua Holcomb first began business at the Back Street, and continued it at the Upper Village for thirty years; he did a large business down to 1840 and considerable to 1844.









CLAYTON H. DELANO.





In 1845 J. B. Ramsay built the shop at the Lower Village, and either alone or with some of his brothers continued to do a large business for many years ; he is still engaged in the business. William M. Wiley began as a carriage-maker at Weedsville in 1846 ; in 1848 he built a new shop and continued there many years. Dennis Maxham began work with Mr. Holcomb at the Upper Village in 1828, located at Weedsville in 1840, and still carries on the business there ; he is now one of the oldest working mechanics in the place. A. Ostiguy is also engaged in the wagon-making business in the village.

Nathan S. Clark was one of the earliest cabinet-makers in the town and continued it for a number of years. B. F. Frazier began the business in 1835 and still continues it successfully. He, in connection with his brother, built a planing and matching-mill on the north of the lower falls, one of the first in this region. A new planing-mill, and sash, door and blind factory was purchased by Frederick Ives in April, 1883, and burned in December of the same year. He immediately rebuilt, and in the fall of 1883 a saw-mill was added. The original sash factory was built in 1872 by Delano & Sons. In 1875 it was sold out to the Lake Champlain Manufacturing Company. The machinery was taken out in 1879 to make a place for the first pulp-mill. There was not sufficient power at this point for the new industry, and a new company was organized and the machinery removed to the works of the Ticonderoga Pulp Company ; the former sash and door machinery was then replaced in the factory and sold to Mr. Ives, as stated.

One of the new branches of manufacture to which we have merely alluded as likely to prove of great benefit to the town, is the production of pulp for paper and the making of paper itself. The second-growth forest that springs up in many localities to the westward of Lake Champlain is a species of poplar, which is admirably adapted for working into the pulp which has within a comparatively brief period become a staple in the manufacture of paper. The Ticonderoga Pulp Company, the first of the kind in town, was organized chiefly through the efforts of Clayton H. Delano, one of the representative business men of the town. The Lake Champlain Manufacturing Company, to which we have alluded, was also organized by him, and the Pulp Company was its successor. Mr. Delano made himself familiar with the processes of pulp manufacture as carried on at other points, and believed that Ticonderoga was just the place to carry on the business profitably. He inspired others with the same faith, and the company was organized and their extensive water rights purchased in 1877. The manufacture was started at first for the production of what is known as ground wood pulp by mechanical means. This business was continued about five years, when the Ticonderoga Pulp and Paper Company was organized with a capital of \$80,000, which is increased in 1882 to \$150,000, and the franchises of the old company passed to the new one ; at the same time the manufacture of pulp was begun by chemical means. In



1884 the large paper-mill of the company was erected and one of the finest Foudrinier machines put in at a cost of \$20,000. This mill was started March 1st, 1885. The company now employs about 100 hands; uses thirty cords of wood per day, and produces eight tons of chemical pulp and six tons of book and writing paper per day. About one-half of the pulp is sold to other mills and the other half worked up. About \$8,000 a month is paid out by the company; the wood delivered at the mill brings \$4.50 per cord. The present officers of the company are C. H. Delano, president; Cyrus Jennings, vice-president; C. E. Bush, treasurer; M. R. Hack, secretary.

In 1877 George C. Weed, A. T. Weed and James C. McIntyre began the manufacture of what is known as dry pulp, used to some extent in the manufacture of paper, but more extensively in the production of giant powder, nitro-glycerine, etc. A stave factory belonging to Mr. Weed was used for the incipient business. The industry continued to 1884, but had declined in importance and the works burned. Before this occurrence and about 1880, a mill was built for the manufacture of mechanical pulp for paper, which was sold largely to the mills in Fort Edward. About ten hands were employed and a product of two tons in twenty-four hours was made. In 1882 the Lake George Pulp and Paper Company was formed, with George C. Weed as president; W. I. Higgins, secretary; and John Lambert, superintendent. This company took possession of the property, erected a paper-mill, and worked up their own pulp product, with additions from other factories. About four tons of paper are now made in twenty-four hours.

*Glens Falls Pulp Company.* — This company began business in 1879, being composed of Jonathan M. Coolidge, George W. Lee, T. S. Coolidge and W. W. D. Jeffers; these gentlemen are prominent Glens Falls business men, with the exception of Mr. Jeffers. The machines for the manufacture of pulp then cost a heavy royalty; but Mr. Jeffers secured patents for devices which were successfully used up to 1884, producing about twelve tons of mechanical pulp per week. In October, 1884, the company bought the property of the Lake George Cotton Manufacturing Company, exclusive of machinery; this cotton factory had been established some ten years previously, but was not a successful enterprise; the machinery was finally taken out and sent to Lowell, Mass. The Pulp Company now occupied the cotton factory building, and had secured from J. Q. A. Treadway and others a large undeveloped water power. Improved Brokaw machinery for the manufacture of wet pulp was put in, which will turn out a product of six tons per day; this goes largely to the Glens Falls Paper Company. The Pulp Company now own a water power of about ninety-eight feet in gross, and capable of propelling extensive works.

The custom grist-mill of S. J. Moore & Son was built by them in 1879-80. The mill now operated by Merchant & Wilbur was formerly a plaster-mill. A grist-mill was built adjoining many years ago, which was taken by this firm in

September, 1883, and was burned in November of that year. The plaster-mill with one run of stone was then changed for grinding feed. A new flouring-mill will be erected soon.

Mr. Cook mentions among early blacksmiths of the town Levi and Samuel Cole of the Upper Village as probably the first in the town, except those who may have been connected with its military occupants. Michael Spicer, Chellis Johnson and Dyer Beckwith were blacksmiths in the town as early as 1800. In 1805 there were Eleazer Spears, Benona Thornton, Oliver Ormsbey, Peter Atherton, E. Sherman, and Samuel Dow, who was a brother of the famous preacher. Levi and Samuel Cole built a trip-hammer forge on the north side of the lower falls. John Porter with his sons, and John Pinchin and his sons, have been prosperous blacksmiths of the town. The elder Pinchin came to the place in 1819. We have alluded to the two blacksmith shops built by Wilson & Calkins and Bishop & Austin, and their rivalry, which gave quite an impetus to that branch of mechanics. The Port Henry Iron Company built in the year 1847 seven canal boats and a schooner at Ticonderoga, and most of their irons were fitted on the anvils of the Lower Village. Nelson Porter told Mr. Cook he had often seen thirty horses at the door of his brother's shop waiting to be shod, and double crews worked night and day in order to turn off the work, from 1838 to 1846. C. P. Sawyer worked at this business at the "Back Street," Tolman and T. D. Spicer on Chilson hill, Silas Gibbs at Weedsville, L. Thatcher at the Lower Village, and Hopkins Norton at the upper falls.

*The Press.* — The Ticonderoga *Sentinel* was established in February, 1873, by Martin Tobin; it was a small sheet of course. He conducted it three years and eight months. In February, 1877, R. R. Stevenson took possession of the establishment and conducted the paper until August, 1883, enlarging it in the mean time to eight columns to the page, and otherwise improving it. In August, 1883, J. E. Milholland took possession of the establishment and changed the form of the paper to a quarto, as at present. In March, 1885, he sold out to Thomas R. Kneil, who is making the paper a successful and popular journal.

In the spring of 1880 a paper called the *Eagle* was started by A. D. Cady. It lived about a year and was suspended. Merrick Brothers then took the material and published a paper called the *Lake George Herald*; in three months J. L. McArthur took it and conducted it a year under the same name, when it was changed to the *Ticonderogian*. A year later it passed into possession of William H. Tippetts, who ran it to September, 1883, when Mr. Milholland purchased it and consolidated it with his paper.

*The Ticonderoga Water Works Association.* — The frequent and severe losses of the village by fires made the subject of an adequate water supply one of prime importance, and finally led to the incorporation of a company. It was



accomplished in 1873, by the following named gentlemen: George C. Weed, B. W. Burleigh, C. H. Delano, A. M. Pond, H. C. Burleigh, William E. Calkins, D. M. Arnold, William S. Fleming, E. A. Prescott, A. O. Ameden, C. P. Ives, William Hooper, and George E. Marshall. The water works were constructed, taking the water from the outlet just above the falls, and bringing it to the village in direct pipes. Water was turned on just after the great fire. The company became somewhat embarrassed and the stock was pledged to the Orwell bank and finally passed to the possession of Charles E. Bush. There are now seven fire hydrants in the village and a few private hydrants. The water is liberally patronized and the people have on several occasions been saved from severe loss by fire since the works were put in operation. The stock is now \$20,000.

The officers of the water company are: J. B. Ramsay, president; C. E. Bennett, superintendent and secretary; C. E. Bush, treasurer. These, with O. Rowell, E. T. Downs, Samuel Wear, and T. J. Treadway, are directors.

William E. Calkins was the heaviest stockholder on the start and president of the company up to 1884.

Defiance Hose Company was organized since the water company began operations. The present foreman is D. J. Gilligan; John Riley, captain; H. D. Spicer, secretary. The company is well equipped, its property having been purchased with funds raised by subscription and by the giving of various entertainments which have been generously patronized by the citizens.

*The Opera House.*—In the year 1875, after the great fire, Frederick Weed erected the handsome opera house of the Lower Village. Its cost, with the building in which it is located, was about \$20,000. It has a stage eighteen by twenty-four feet, four hundred chairs, and will seat six hundred people. It is a credit to the place.

*Schools.* — We have given a description of some of the vicissitudes that awaited the efforts of the pioneer school teachers in this town, as well as in other parts of the county. In alluding to the early schools of this town, we must again fall back upon the work of Mr. Cook in 1858. He says: "Among the early settlers of the town not a few were men of education themselves, and these, deeply imbued with regard for the district schools which had been one of the first objects of attention in New England towns from which they had chiefly emigrated, early sought here the same advantages for their children. Again, during the activity of the lumber trade the vigor of effort in that department seemed to be imparted to the supervision of education also, and some excellent select schools were enjoyed. Next, as academies rose round Ticonderoga in the State, many of the young men and some of the young ladies of the town were sent abroad to enjoy their privileges. Lastly, an important movement was made to supply the home wants and improve the town in the founding of the Ticonderoga Academy. Such are the four periods in the educational history of Ticonderoga.

"The first school-houses built between 1790 and 1800 were warmed by large open fire-places. Children of the present generation would be somewhat startled to be sent to school in the morning with a large dog to keep off the bears, to study all day by the crackle of great back-sticks and fore-sticks and the nibbling of snow against the narrow window panes, to hear the howling of wolves as the mistress called the roll at dusk, and to see her take down a heavy rifle or musket, perched all day above the door, to guard the way home. Such, however, were the scenes in 1800 in many a backwoods district school.

"Somewhat later a second class of school-houses was built; they were nearly all planned with an entry in one corner; a single tier of elevated desks running around the four sides for the larger scholars; in front of these a low seat for the little children, and a large square space, the master and the stove, in the middle. Nothing could have been less economical of heat except open doors and windows, and when time began to loosen the clapboards, shake apart the window frames, jar open the ceiling, and heave asunder the foundations of these old houses, it was one man's full work to keep them warm.

"About 1850 by the efforts of school superintendents, commissioners and trustees, the districts were aroused and several new district school-houses were built of an improved style. The houses at the Street, the Upper Village, and in Trout brook valley built about this time were of this character.

"Of select schools it may be stated generally that Ticonderoga has enjoyed their discipline nearly every year from 1820 to the present time (1858), [a statement that may now be extended to the present time.] The teachers have usually been well qualified, many of them college graduates. Among the teachers' names which we have been able to recover in the absence of records pertaining to these schools, are those of Miss Hemmenway, of Bridport, who taught a ladies' school at the Upper Village previous to 1820; Amasa Stewart, a graduate of Middlebury College, teaching in 1820 in the second story of the old red grist-mill at the lower falls; Mr. Beebee, from Chester, who about 1826-27, taught in the house now occupied by Mr. Barber (1858); Rev. Burt, an Episcopal clergyman, teacher from about 1827 to 1830; Joseph Delano, a teacher previous to 1830."

Of those teachers of select schools who became permanent citizens of the town, Mr. Cook continues, relative to William Calkins, father of Colonel William E. Calkins: "After a two years' course of study at Dartmouth College and experience as a teacher at Burlington, Waterbury, and Stowe, Vt., and Whitehall, N. Y., he came to Ticonderoga in 1831 and for several years was teacher of a large district school at the Upper Village. In 1833 he established a select school at the same place with about fifty scholars from all parts of the town, which he continued up to 1835, when he removed to the Lower Village and began the practice of law. As commissioner, and by virtue of that office under the old law, inspector and also as superintendent for many years in succession,



he remained always actively devoted to the educational interests of the town, and perhaps did more in that direction than any other citizen. All of the children, all the families of the town, lost a friend by his death in 1855." Dr. John Smith, as commissioner and superintendent, always took a profound interest in educational interests down to the time of his death in 1869. Captain L. C. Larrabee, Hon. J. Burnett, Colonel William E. Calkins, William H. Cook, W. A. G. Arthur, the Delano families, and many others have been prominent in this direction.

"Several excellent select schools were kept in the Spencer building on Exchange street, between 1837 and 1850. The first teacher there was Lucia Calkins (sister of Colonel Calkins); one of the most prosperous terms was that taught by Mr. Barker and his wife. Abner Benedict, later an eminent lawyer in New York city, was a successful teacher next after Mr. Barker. In what was known as the Son's Hall, in the Exchange, in the brick store and under the former store of Mr. Fields, a large number of select schools were taught, many of them by young ladies of the town, and none of them without an excellent and beneficial influence. An excellent select school was taught by George W. Barrows in the period mentioned—later, Rev. G. W. Barrows, pastor of the Congregational Church of Salisbury, Vt., for about eighteen years, and pastor of the Congregational Church at Elizabethtown, Essex county, N. Y., about the same length of time up to his death in 1881. Mr. Barrows married Lucia Calkins, above named, who died about 1863, and subsequently her sister, who still survives him.

*The Academy.*—The inception of the Ticonderoga Academy was due to the Rev. Joseph Cook, who took the first steps that led to its establishment, in January, 1858. He was then teaching school at the "Back Street," and when he had become imbued with the necessity of a higher school in the town he communicated with W. H. Cook and E. Downs first, and later with others, by whom the idea was enthusiastically endorsed. He accordingly drew up the following paper as embodying the propositions for establishing the institution and the arguments in its favor:—

"*Formation Paper for a High School or Academy in Ticonderoga, N. Y.*

"It is believed that Ticonderoga (1) needs a good high school, and (2) that the town is able to support one.

"1. The number of young men and women in our district schools; the amount spent yearly in sending children from our town to other places for instruction; the uncertain and inferior privileges offered by our present select schools; the desire of parents for some institution near home less expensive and permanent and worthy, in which their children can receive that education fitted to the growing demands of the age, are among the considerations which show the need of the proposed high school, not to mention how much such an institution would restrain social evils, strengthen moral reforms, elevate

courteous tastes, invigorate public sentiment, and favor the financial interests of the town.

“ II. To show the ability of the town to support such a school, the above necessity is to be first considered ; then the wealth and enterprise of the town ; the number of its young men and women ; its location in the center of a large district unsupplied with any but district schools ; its situation upon the very thoroughfare of fashionable travel ; the attractiveness which an institution, otherwise unworthy, might acquire abroad, from standing on Burgoyne’s Mount Hope, facing the Green Mountains and overlooking the outlet of Lake George, the scene of Abercrombie’s defeat, Mount Defiance, and the ruins of Fort Ticonderoga ; the success of similar institutions ; the plan of financial support hereinafter proposed ; the power of wise, united and persevering effort in a good cause, from which considerations it will appear that in starting the proposed institution there would be no extraordinary obstacle, but nearly every ground for confidence in beginning and surety in executing a permanent success.

“ Therefore, it is proposed, by the favor of Providence, to take measures for founding and sustaining a *permanent and worthy high school or academy* in Ticonderoga, N. Y., after the following plan :

“ Citizens of the town shall be stockholders of the institution to incur first all expenses of starting the school, and to receive in return all of the proceeds arising from tuition or board furnished by the establishment, from which teachers’ salaries and all other outgoes necessary for the worthiest support of the school shall be paid, and the surplus, if any, distributed rightfully to the stockholders as a revenue. Shares shall be transferable, in case of the removal of the holders from town, always, however, to citizens of Ticonderoga. A competent board of trustees and directors shall be chosen to oversee and regulate, under the guidance of a constitution and by-laws, the business matters and various interests of the institution.”

This plan and a subscription paper were presented to prominent citizens of the town and the enterprise was liberally supported. Russell Bly was the first to subscribe, taking \$100 in stock, with the only provision that there should be “ no sham, no failure.” D. S. Gibbs, G. D. Clark, Messrs. Kimpton, Phelps, Grant, B. P. Delano, T. Delano, D. McCaughin were next called upon by Mr. Cook, and a thousand dollars were pledged to the undertaking on the first day. A public meeting was called at Tefft’s Hotel for February 10th, 1858, to further consider the subject. The meeting was attended by the leading men of the town ; the shares of stock were placed at \$25 each and a formal paper drawn up for subscriptions. B. P. Delano, Russell Bly, A. J. Cook, W. H. Cook and William E. Calkins were appointed a committee to propose size, cost and site of the proposed building, and William E. Calkins, W. A. G. Arthur and G. D. Clark a committee to solicit subscriptions. On the adjourn-



ment \$1,400 dollars had been subscribed, which was raised to \$2,000 by the date of the next meeting. This was held on the 18th, and William E. Calkins reported from the committee on the site of the building in favor of a spot "just south of the summit of Mount Hope, overlooking Lake Champlain, the fort grounds, Mount Defiance, the creek and the two villages." This site was adopted and the plan of the building in general to be like that of the Whitehall Academy. On motion of William E. Calkins, the stockholders proceeded to formal organization as the "Ticonderoga Academy Association."

At a meeting on March 8th the number of trustees was fixed at nine, and the following gentlemen were appointed: Benjamin P. Delano, William G. Baldwin, William H. Cook, Benjamin H. Baldwin, Russell Bly, William E. Calkins, G. D. Clark, H. G. Burleigh and George Grant. The latter declined and his place was filled by the election of George C. Weed. It now developed that the proposed site, which was the property of the Orwell Bank, could not be purchased without the whole tract of land belonging to it was also bought; meanwhile an offer had been made by the "Ellice party" of a free site for the institution on the south side of the creek. Therefore, at a meeting held on the 1st of April, the following motion made by Mr. Joseph Cook was carried: "In view of the failure to obtain a site on Mount Hope; in view of the *preference* of districts containing a majority of the scholars of the town; in view of the cost of any other location; and in view of the fact that this land is a free gift to the association by Mr. Ellice, through his agent, that the stockholders do fix upon lot No. 6 and a part of lot No. 8 of block No. 6, as represented on the donor's map, these lots containing about one acre and lying in the woods between the present premises of H. G. Burleigh and William E. Calkins, for the location of the proposed academy." This resolution was reconsidered at the meeting of April 17th, and preference given to what was called the "Snow site" on the north side of the creek, the vote being twenty-nine to twenty-five in favor of the latter; but this action was so distasteful to the residents on the south side of the creek, that the whole undertaking seemed likely to go by default, and after several somewhat stormy meetings the trustees agreed, May 12th, to call the stockholders together once more and pledged themselves "to carry out the will of the majority of said meeting." The vote taken on this occasion resulted in a majority of *two* for the Snow site. But the residents of the south side still declined to go ahead with the enterprise if that site was to be occupied, and several weeks of delay, discussion, ridicule of the project and almost despair on the part of those who really desired what was best for the whole town, succeeded, the details of which would be out of place here. Finally while the small majority believed that the site on the north side of the creek was the just one under the circumstances, they yielded to expediency and the Ellice gift was accepted. A contract for the erection of the building was finally closed by the building committee, G. D. Clark, G. C. Weed and William E. Calkins; the

structure was to be 36 by 56 feet, to cost \$2,300 and to be finished by November 15th, 1858. C. P. Fobes, of Crown Point, and Benjamin Cheney, of Ticonderoga, were the contractors. The corner stone was laid on the 21st day of August and the building erected as planned.

Dr. Samuel Abbott was the first principal of the academy and continued in that office for several years and with gratifying success. He was succeeded by Benjamin Wormelle, Rev. Mr. Severance, Dr. Eddy, now of Middlebury, and John C. Earl, now of Whitehall. The institution promised success, but for various reasons, chief among which was perhaps the limited population on which it could draw for patronage, it gradually declined to 1871, when the Union Free School system was organized and the trustees leased the academy building to the new corporation for ninety-nine years at \$50 a year, which makes it practically a gift. The building was enlarged in 1881 and otherwise improved at a cost of \$4,000, and furniture costing \$500 put in. Four districts are united in the Union system and there are two other school-houses. A new house at Weedsville was erected in 1884 at a cost of \$2,500. L. S. Packard is the present principal of the Union School; Edith R. Potts, assistant; and Jennie McVeigh, Hattie Millington, Ida S. Bacon, Ida Weed, Lizzie McCambridge and Maud Royce, teachers.

Board of Education — William E. Calkins, president, Thomas A. Riley, William Hooper, John C. Fenton, secretary, Orlando Rowell, B. W. Burleigh, James H. Bailey, W. W. D. Jeffers and Dorus C. Bascom.

#### CHURCHES.

*Congregational Church.*—The Congregational society was organized in 1809, but from then until 1819 no records are found to show what was done, except that from 1810 Revs. Abial Jones, Chapin and Ball preached occasionally. In 1819, aided by the Baptists and Episcopalians, they built on Mount Hope, about a mile from the village, a large wood house for a union church. From that time to 1839 the structure was used in part by the three societies, and the names of Revs. Stone, Manly, Wilder, Brown, Kinney, Tuttle, Baldwin, Miner and Cady appear as pastors, staying a year or more each.

In 1839 Rev. Jedediah Burchard, an evangelist of note, came to town, and a wonderful revival, that affected all churches, followed. In 1840 Rev. Mr. Bailey was pastor; 1843, D. Gibbs. In that year, by the united efforts of Deacon John Harris and a few others, the building was removed from Mount Hope across the fields to the top of a knoll near the center of the village, completely repaired, and a fine bell placed in the tower. From 1843 to 1850 the pulpit was supplied by Revs. Howe, Schermerhorn, Woodruff, Haynes and Eastman; from 1850 to 1852, Rev. Henry Merrick. A destitution then followed for three years; then Rev. D. N. Gould came till 1858, at which time there were about sixty members. Rev. Ashel Bronson, an aged divine, was pastor for a short time, but the church was rapidly declining.



For about six years there was but little if any service. In 1866 Rev. Mr. Holmes came and reorganized the church, and a great revival was experienced. Then for a number of years they again depended on occasional service by some near-at-hand pastor. In 1871-72 Rev. Mr. Danforth did much good work here. In 1873 Rev. Mr. Price came and set about raising funds for a church. A site large enough for church and parsonage was purchased on the east side of Lake George avenue for \$600. During 1874 the church was built, and dedicated on December 17th, 1874, Rev. Harvey Ketchel, D. D., of Middlebury, Vt., preaching the sermon. Mr. Price was followed by Rev. T. W. Jones, who brought the church into a much better state. By his efforts a heavy debt was cleared and the church re-dedicated. Rev. Mr. Lansing succeeded him; then came Rev. N. P. Bake, who was pastor during four years, and on Sunday evening, March 22d, 1885, closed his labors. The church is at present without a pastor. Present valuation of property, \$10,000. Present deacons, Mr. R. R. Stevenson and Dr. Groves; trustees, C. H. Delano, Martin Shattuck, Professor Packard, Mr. Roberts and E. D. Downs.

The present membership is ninety-five. A Sabbath-school has been held at various times, but in 1872 it was organized according to its present system and has been kept up ever since. Martin Shattuck is present superintendent. The average attendance is nearly ninety.

*Baptist Church.* — There were some Baptists among the first settlers of this town who belonged to the Baptist Church of Shoreham, Vt. In 1820 their numbers had so increased that they organized as the First Baptist Church of Ticonderoga, with twenty-seven members. May 24th, 1820, a council of pastors and brethren from the Baptist Churches of Shoreham, Cornwall, Middlebury and Bristol, Vt., convened. Elder Henry Green was moderator and Elder Isaac Becklin, clerk. The following are the names of the original membership from the church in Shoreham who were then residents of this town: Robert Hammond, Ruamah Hammond, Nathaniel Miller, Aura Miller, Philip Smith, Rebecca Smith, Chester Church, Lavina Church, Jane Phelps, Lois Smith, Polly Swinton, Sarah Bennet, Calvin Stewart, Lucy Stewart, Theodoris Ferris, and Emeline Burrows; by letter, Giles Phelps and Silas Mills; by baptism, Matilda Church, Hannah Rogers, Daniel Bennet, Mary Flemming, Ira Waste, Thomas Rogers, Elias Archer, Sarah L. Bennet and Minerva Skinner. The recognition service was conducted by Elder Isaac Becklin, of Middlebury, Vt., the other visiting ministers taking part. Calvin Stewart was ordained first deacon; was also first clerk. For seventeen years they had no particular place of worship, but met in school-houses and private houses. During that time they had no regular pastor, but the records show the names of Elders Stearns, Mott, Lane, Husford, Hastings, Chamberlain, Fuller, Barker, Schofield and Wescott, as having preached to them now and then. The Baptists

contributed largely to the building of the Union Church and held alternate service once in two weeks with the Congregationalists. In 1834 Elder Sidney A. Estes became the first settled pastor. During his four years' stay a large lot was purchased on South Main street and a handsome brick church built. It was dedicated early in 1837. He was followed by Elder James De Laney, and Elder Thomas Brandt. Elder Jacob Huntington spent three years and raised the required sum to free the church from a heavy debt. In 1847 Elder Addison Laine was pastor; 1850, Elder Thomas Morley; 1854, Elder Stephen Wright; 1860, Rev. Edward Ashton. During his stay he was ordained and the society built a fine parsonage. In 1865, Rev. A. J. Allen; during his stay the society spent several thousand dollars in completely rebuilding this church and completing the parsonage. In 1874, Rev. J. J. Muir, whose pastorate was marked by a large increase of membership; 1876, Rev. A. J. Wilcox; 1878, Rev. E. B. Jones, who was ordained here and under whose pastorate large additions were received; 1880, Rev. W. Gussman; 1883, Rev. A. McGeorge, the present pastor. During his stay the church has again been remodeled and repaired, a large session room added in the rear and modern furnaces put in. A large addition to the membership has also been received. Total membership 533; present membership 151. Valuation of property \$10,000. Present deacons, B. F. Frazier, J. B. Ramsey. Deacon W. H. Cook died March 19th, 1885. Clerk, J. B. Ramsey; trustees, G. D. Wright, Lyman C. Drake and Orlando Rowell.

Previous to the year 1865 the Baptist Sunday-school was maintained at intervals only; the sessions when held in the summer season depending on the weather and the disposition of those who spent the hour of intermission before the afternoon sermon. Rev. A. J. Allen assisted in the organization of the Sunday-school on its present system. It is now one of the most flourishing in the county. There are no historical records of the school, but we find the names of Baldwin, Fields, Frazier, Ramsey, Cook, Fleming and E. B. Jones as the superintendents. Rev. A. McGeorge is the present superintendent. The average attendance is one hundred.

*Episcopal Church.*—Older than the town itself is the Protestant Episcopal Society of this town. In 1800 this form of worship was established, nearly all of the prominent citizens of the town becoming members. Services were held at the school-houses at the Upper and Lower Villages and at the hotel of James Tefft. On the subsequent visitation of a bishop one of the churches was secured. From 1815 to 1819 Rev. Stephen Jewett, missionary at Hampton and Granville, N. Y., visited Ticonderoga and held service. In 1816, October 23d, the society reorganized as St. Paul's P. E. church. In 1819 the society assisted the Congregational Society in building the union church on Mount Hope, and held their services there for several years. From 1819 to 1824 Rev. Moses Burt, a teacher at the Upper Village, officiated as



rector, and in 1825 became resident rector, till 1829. For ten years onward no regular service was held; there was occasional service by visiting clergymen, and the church almost disbanded.

In 1839 Rev. Palmer Dyer, rector of St. Paul's Church, Whitehall, N. Y., came to town, and on May 15th, 1839, again reorganized the church and changed the parish name from St. Paul's to the "Church of the Cross." The wardens were Jonathan Burnet and Lucius Larrabee, with Robert Bryan, John McAllister, James Tefft, G. W. Prime, E. N. Hyde, Bush Fitch, William Baldwin and G. B. Fitch as vestrymen. From then onward the names of Revs. Cleaveland, Davis and Wadhams (now Bishop Wadhams of the R. C. Church) appear on the records. Between 1840 and 1845 measures were taken to build a church. A site was presented to them in a fine location at the upper falls by Mr. Ellice of England. Stone and timber were drawn to the spot, but the work was never accomplished. From 1845 to 1869 was another period of rest to the society; no services, except occasional supply. In 1869 Rev. F. N. Luzon, of Trinity Church, Whitehall, came to town and revived the society. The second time the question of building a church was brought up. Soon \$800 was raised and a site purchased from Mr. G. C. Weed, on the west side of South Main street. The corner stone was laid September 3d, 1869, by the Bishop of Albany. He was followed by F. H. Stubbs, then a deacon. Rev. William Ogden for a few months was a temporary supply. While he was here the church was finished and first occupied on Advent Sunday, 1870. Rev. Mr. Stubbs then returned to the parish and remained three years. Rev. Mr. Ogden was rector two years; Rev. Mr. McElroy, rector three years; Rev. Mr. Cook, rector four years. The present rector is J. E. Bold, who came here as deacon; was ordained to the rectorship of the parish. In 1876 the society built a parsonage, but soon after sold it to free themselves of debt.

In January, 1884, the church was burned directly after morning service. Early the following June the society commenced to rebuild on a larger scale and purchased more land. In February, 1885, their new church was ready for use. The valuation of the church property is about \$9,000. Present wardens, J. C. Fenton and D. C. Bascom; vestrymen, H. C. Burnet, C. Baldwin, W. G. Baldwin, B. W. Burleigh, L. Malcolm, F. Ives, C. C. Cook and Morton Butler; John C. Fenton, clerk. Present membership is ninety-four communicants. Sabbath-school has been maintained at various times, and at the present a regular school exists with an average of fifty members.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The historical record of the Methodist Church seems to have been lost or destroyed if ever there was any kept; but little aside from the list of preachers can be found. The circuit through Ticonderoga was formed in 1811, and embraced that town and a part of Hague, Warren county, and at later periods a part of Schroon, Crown Point, Moriah and

Westport. From 1811 to 1858 the following preachers have resided in the town, their average residence being one year: 1811, John Haskins, first preacher; 1812, Timothy Miner; 1813, John B. Stratton; 1814, Jacob Beeman; 1815, J. S. Adams; 1816, Moses Amidon; 1817, Phineas Doane; 1818, Eli Barnet; 1819, Seymour Landon; 1820, James Covell; 1821, Seymour Landon; 1822, Ibri Cannon; 1823, Orrin Pier; 1824-25, Solomon Stebbins; 1826, Asa Bushnell; 1827, Orrin Pier, A. Bushnell and Cyrus Meeker; 1828-29, Cyrus Meeker; 1830-31, Samuel Eighmey; 1832, Amos Hazleton; 1833, Alanson Richards; 1834-35, U. R. Coleman; 1836, A. S. Cooper and William Hickman; 1837, A. S. Cooper; 1838, Alberd Champlin; 1839, Albert and Alpheus Wade; 1840, G. S. Palmer and E. Noble; 1841, G. S. Palmer and Ira Holmes; 1842, A. Jones and W. H. Hall; 1843, Peter H. Smith; 1844, R. H. Robinson; 1845-46, L. D. Sherwood; 1847-48, S. W. Clemmens; 1849-50, G. H. Townsend; 1851, J. H. Burnham; 1852-53, R. M. Taylor; 1854-56, ———; 1857-58, L. H. Beaudry; 1858, A. J. Ingalls.

No church had yet been built by the Methodists. The school-houses at the Upper Village, Chilson Hill, Warner Hill, the Back Street and "Juffertown," served for meetings, and interesting revivals occurred at various periods. From 1858 to 1869 the church was under the Crown Point charge and was served at times by ministers from there.

In 1870 Rev. William Mooney came to town and began the task of raising funds for the erection of a church. During 1870-71 a site was purchased on West Exchange street and a chapel built at the total cost of \$3,500. The successive pastors since have been Revs. J. L. Slason, J. H. Stewart, S. W. Edgerton, Hitchcock, Baskerville, Jesse Brown, and E. J. McKernon, who is the present pastor. In June, 1882, the corner stone of a chapel at Street Road, two miles out from the village, was laid on a site presented to them by a Congregational deacon. A neat wood chapel was built costing \$1,800, and dedicated on October 2d, 1882. Regular service is held there by the village pastor, as it belongs to that charge. In the fall of 1884 the society completely rebuilt their chapel in the village into a large and elegant church, adding a session-room in the rear, and a fine bell, thereby expending several thousand dollars upon it. The society own a parsonage on Lake George avenue. Their present property is valued at about \$7,500. Present membership 135 in full communion.

Till 1870 but feeble attempts were made to maintain a Sabbath-school. Since then a regular school has existed; the present attendance is 109; superintendent at the village school, Frank Wier; at Street Road, Altus Adkins, with a membership of forty.

Rev. Hibbard Ingalls, a gentleman now eighty-three years old, a lifelong resident of this town, has served the Methodist cause for over fifty years, working during the week on his farm and on Sundays and evenings preaching



to some of the back districts. He is probably one of the oldest ministers in the circuit. Last winter he attended a birthday donation party given in honor of his eighty-third birthday in one of the districts where he had preached for many years. After doing his farm work he walked several miles to the house, attended the party and returned in the same manner.

*Catholic Church.*—Many years of the religious history of the town bear no record of a Roman Catholic Church, but occasionally a missionary would hold service or mass. Some time during the decade of 1830 Edward McCaughn, a wealthy land owner on Mount Hope, built on his own farm a small chapel for the use of the society. Services were held in it for a time and people from the adjoining towns gladly availed themselves of the privilege of attending. No resident priest officiated, however, for some years. In 1848-49 measures were taken to erect a church and the funds raised. John McCormick, one of the influential men, had secured from Mr. Ellice (the English land holder of the town), the gift of a lot on what is now a sightly spot, on Second street, and a church was built of wood and commodious in size. For ten years following Rev. Father Michael Olivetti, of Whitehall, N. Y., held monthly services here. In 1850 Father Harney became resident priest and was followed in succession by Fathers Du Ross, Carrighor and Butler, the present priest. The society is large, both French and Irish Catholics being united in the one body. The church has never been completely repaired although several times some money has been expended on it. About ten years ago a neat parsonage was built adjoining the church. The present valuation of the property is about \$4,500. A large Sunday-school is conducted by the priests on Sunday afternoons.<sup>1</sup>

*Universalist Church.*—The Universalist Church was never a perfectly organized body in this town. There were quite a number of that faith, and services were held occasionally during the early history of the town. In 1810 Rev. Mr. Kerog, of Shoreham, Vt., held services here and Rev. William Farwell, of some place indefinitely stated as "New England," followed soon after. Rev. Caleb Rich, of Shoreham, Vt., also occasionally preached; then Rev. Hozea Balleau. Rev. Kittridge Havens, of Shoreham, was an occasional supply in later years. At no time has regular Sabbath service through the year been held. Their services were held in places most convenient until 1841, when a building was purchased and made over at considerable expense into a church. After a few years the membership rapidly diminished and time's destroying hand threw the mantle of annihilation over the church and its society as an organization.

---

<sup>1</sup> For many years past and at the present time there is a remarkable feeling of friendliness and sympathy given by the Catholics toward the Protestant churches, particularly to the Baptists. The present priest is a great worker in the temperance cause.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF WILLSBOROUGH.

THE town of Willsborough, so named by and from William Gilliland, was formed March 7th, 1788, at which time the old town of Crown Point was divided. Willsborough then, in addition to the land now within its own limits, embraced the territory now included in the towns of Lewis, Essex, Chesterfield, Jay, Wilmington, St. Armand, North Elba and a part of Peru and of Keene, which was added to it in the division. Its original area was about 900 square miles. Jay was taken from it in 1798, Chesterfield in 1802, and Lewis and Essex in 1805. Upon the formation of the county, in 1799, a portion of Peru was re-annexed to the northern part of this town.

The country bounded by the limits of the town of Willsborough lies upon the shore of Lake Champlain, a little north of the center of Essex county. The eastern portion of the town is low and level, or sloping gently, almost imperceptibly, down to the lake. Toward the west the surface grows more broken and mountainous, until, in the extreme western part, the Willsborough mountains proudly bear testimony, by their huge masses of towering rocks, to some prehistoric volcanic upheaval. These mountains are a spur of the Adirondacks and are known as the Boquet range, extending from Perue bay southwesterly to Fulton county. The highest elevation of this range is Dix Peak, in Keene, 4,970 feet in height. They resist all efforts at cultivation, and render the entire western part of the town little better than a wilderness. To the northwest Rattlesnake Mountain lifts its precipitous sides into acclivities which in places are inaccessible. At its western base lies one of the favorite resorts of sportsmen, made beautiful by the sparkling waters of Warm pond and Long pond, and valuable by the fish that abound between their shores.

Through the southeastern corner of the town flows the Boquet river, which irrigates the valley which marks its course, and by its water power bestows upon the village of Willsborough the most important industries of which her people boast. It is forty miles in length and flows into Lake Champlain, a little south of the foot of Willsborough Point. It has its source in a gorge of the Boquet mountain range, between Dix Peak and Mount Nipple Top, more than three thousand feet above the level of the sea. From the same gorge the Schroon river flows in the opposite direction into the Hudson. The origin of the name has long been a disputed question. An early tradition attributed it to General Boquet, a British general in the French wars, but there is little or nothing for this theory to rest upon, as it is not known that he was ever connected in any way with the Champlain valley. Another theory, more plausi-



ble, is that the name is descriptive of the abundance of flowers which cover and adorn the banks of the river, and for that reason was given to it by William Gilliland. Mr. Watson (*Pioneer History*, page 96, note) thinks the most probable origin is found in the French word *baquet*, a trough, which he deems highly descriptive of the stream below the falls.

This river is navigable a distance of several miles from its mouth. "A part of Burgoyne's flotilla entered this stream and the legend states that he used the trough referred to for the purpose of drilling his sailors in the management of the bateaux."<sup>1</sup>

The eastern part of the town presents a different variety of scenery. Willsborough Point juts out into Lake Champlain and forms the famous estuary, called Perue or Willsborough bay. The name Perue bay can probably never be traced to its origin, though it has been a subject of much curiosity and research. An ingenious theory has been offered that the name must have been derived from a French *Monsieur Le Perue*, who may have been attracted by the beauty of the spot to locate a temporary residence there. At an early period it was called Corlear's bay, from the fact that a Dutch philanthropist, while on a mission to Canada in behalf of the Indians, perished beneath its waters.<sup>2</sup>

The point is in many places densely wooded, and has long been a favorite resort for summer pleasure-seekers and valetudinarians, who have erected a number of beautiful cottages. Along the shore of the lake and east of the river the soil is formed principally of clay, while toward the interior and west of the river it is a sandy loam.

*Resources of the Town.* — No town in the county is more wealthy in its general resources than Willsborough. The eastern half forms one of the most fertile farming sections along the lake. The cereals and hay have been raised here in great abundance, and for dairying and sheep-raising the locality cannot be surpassed. Considerable blue limestone, susceptible of a high polish, has been quarried here for ornamental and building purposes. Many of the most prominent buildings now standing in the village of Willsborough were constructed of this material in early days, while the excellent quality of the stone is attested by the interesting fact that from here was taken the material which forms the foundation of the capitol at Albany and the anchors of the New York and Brooklyn bridge. Quicklime and waterlime have been obtained from other quarries in the town.

<sup>1</sup> Anthony J. B. Ross, of Essex, offers the following valuable suggestion in this connection: "The Raquette river, in the Adirondack wilderness, flowing to the St. Lawrence, was named about the same time as the Boquet by a Frenchman (Parisian), from the resemblance of the morass or meadow at its mouth to a *snow-shoe*, or raquette. It seems to have been the custom of early explorers to name new places, rivers, etc., from striking natural resemblances to familiar objects about them. This you will find throughout the history of different places; mountains, lakes, rivers and lands are so designated, not more by explorers than by aborigines. May not the analogy be referred to in this case, in support of the theory that Bouquet or Boquet is a corruption of Baquet?"

<sup>2</sup> The name is now variously spelled Perue, Pereu, Perou, and Peru.

Iron is found in places, but all attempts at making the iron industry profitable in this town of late years have failed, owing, undoubtedly, to the great cost of production and the insufficient quantity of ore in any one vein.

*Settlement.* — Willsborough was one of the earliest settled towns along the lake. On the 8th day of June, 1765, William Gilliland and his colonial party arrived at the mouth of the Boquet river, and Gilliland, in company with one John Chism, proceeded up the river to the falls. Chism expressed the belief that no mills could be erected at this point without the expenditure of more time and money than the project promised to repay, and they returned in dejection to the party at the lake. On the next day he came a second time to the falls in company with Robert Maclane, who confidently thought that mills could be built there with ease and safety. On the 10th of June the whole party landed at Camp Island,<sup>1</sup> a short distance below the falls, and proceeded without delay to the construction of Mr. Gilliland's house and the mills. The site of the house could still be pointed out but a few years ago. It was built of logs cut forty-four feet by twenty-two feet. Mr. Watson, in his *History of Essex County*, expresses the opinion that this was the first house erected by civilized man on the western shore of Lake Champlain, between Canada and Crown Point. Mr. Gilliland succeeded in establishing at this place a flourishing colony before the Revolutionary War. He called it Milltown. It was almost exterminated by the British during that war, and the incidents in its history form one of the most thrilling of all romances that can be authenticated as actual occurrences. The details of this man's romantic career, together with a description of his splendid abilities, the brilliant promise of his efforts in this county, and his melancholy end, can be found in earlier chapters of this work, while a reference to his family and descendants is written in the history of the town of Essex.

Although by virtue of the permanent influence of William Gilliland's work in this town he may be termed its first settler, there is a tradition of an earlier visit paid to the mouth of the Boquet river by an Englishman named Wilson, who came here with his wife, and two children, aged eight and ten years, and landed at the famous flat rock. His wife died within the first three months of their life here, and he did not long survive her. The details of this tradition vividly portray the sufferings of his two children, who buried their father in a grave so shallow that the rain uncovered his feet, and who subsisted on fish and berries until friends from New York heard of their destitution and secured their conveyance to their English home.

This is merely tradition, but all the details of circumstances connected with the biography of William Gilliland are taken from records which cannot be disputed. The earliest authentic record extant of him in this town is now in

---

<sup>1</sup> Camp Island still retains the name given it by Mr. Gilliland, though it is sometimes called Beulah's Island.



the hands of Frederick Fairchild, in the shape of a release, on parchment, dated November 8th, 1769, between James McBride, "late a sergeant in His Majesty's Forty-seventh Regiment of Foot, of the one part, and William Gilliland, of the city of New York, merchant, of the other part," which, in the quaint language of the times, witnessed "that said James McBride, for and in consideration of the sum of Thirty Pounds, lawful money of New York, to him in hand paid by the said William Gilliland," etc., conveyed to the latter "all that certain tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being on the west side of Lake Champlain in the County of Albany, within the Province of New York, beginning at a pitch pine tree marked with the letters IB, which stands on the north side of the mouth of the River Boquet, and runs thence along the said lake north eighteen degrees east, sixteen chains. Then north twenty-five degrees and thirty minutes east, nine chains and two rods. Then north fifteen degrees west, twenty-six chains. Then north fifty-nine degrees west, thirteen chains. Then from the said Lake west to the said River Boquet, and down the north side of the River Boquet as it runs, to the place where the tract first began, containing two hundred acres of land and the usual allowance for highways, and all houses, out-houses, buildings, orchards, gardens, lands, meadows, commons, pastures, feedings, trees, woods, underwoods, ways, paths, waters, water-courses, easements, profits, commodities, advantages, emoluments, and hereditaments whatsoever to the same belonging or in any wise appertaining," etc.

James McBride undoubtedly held these lands under a patent from the king of Great Britain for military services, a system which is plainly one of the last and most fundamental relics of feudalism which his majesty endeavored to engraft upon the colonies of the New World.

Mr. Fairchild has another instrument dated March 30th, 1791, by the terms of which the title to the same land is transferred from John McAulay, one of the grantees of William Gilliland, to Aaron Fairchild, grandfather to Frederick Fairchild, above named. Since that date the Fairchild family have retained the title and possession to the southern half of this tract, and Frederick Fairchild now lives on the same farm.

On a beautiful, well-cultivated hill in the eastern part of this farm General Burgoyne encamped in June, 1777, on his way to the defeat of Saratoga, and made his famous treaty with the Indians, according to the terms of which they took up savage arms against the Revolutionists. Indian arrow heads and bullets are found there occasionally and must once have lain there in careless abundance.

The country, of course, retained its primitive appearance some years into the present century. Previous to 1790 there was no road north of the Boquet river; the only route over the Willsborough mountain was marked by blazed trees. It extended to the Ausable river about three miles below the site of Keeseville. From there a wood road had been opened in Plattsburg.

In 1790 Platt Rogers constructed a road from Willsborough to Peru in Clinton county, and built a bridge over the Boquet river on the site of the present village of Willsborough.

Among the other early settlers who came here prior to 1800 are Stephen Cuyler, who appears to have come before the Revolutionary War; Aaron Fairchild, mentioned above; Jonathan Lynde, Melchor and John Hoffnagle, John and William Morhous, Hooker Low, Stephen Taylor, Elisha Higgins, Peter Payne, Daniel Collins, James King, Abraham Aiken, Thomas Stower, Daniel Sheldon, Benjamin Vaughn, William Donaghy, Ely Vane, Daniel Hoskins, John W. Southmade, John Cochran, jr., Ezekiel Lockwood, Benjamin Stafford, Joseph Higgins, Joseph Sheldon, Thomas Pray, Benjamin Stewart and Edmund Sheldon.

Of these a number, including Jonathan Lynde, Benjamin Vaughn, William Donaghy, Benjamin Stafford, Benjamin Stewart and Abraham Aiken, were granted inn-keepers' licenses.

The year 1784 witnessed a very considerable immigration of pioneer families to this town. Joseph Sheldon, Abraham Aiken, John and Melchor Hoffnagle, John Morhous, and twelve other families, purchased land largely from Gilliland and established homes along the Boquet river. It is stated that at the first town meeting Melchor Hoffnagle was elected supervisor and Daniel Sheldon town clerk. Daniel Sheldon is mentioned in the records of 1796-97, and from 1799 to 1803 as supervisor from the old town. In 1798 Thomas Stower is named as supervisor; John Morhous was town clerk for a number of years preceding the beginning of the present century.

John Hoffnagle, father of Joseph Hoffnagle, who still lives in the Highlands near the Chesterfield line, was born near Sandy Hill, Washington county, N. Y., in 1777, and removed to Willsborough with his father, John, June 5th, 1784. The tract which they first occupied and cleared, and of which the farm now possessed by Frank Hoffnagle was a part, contained six hundred acres of land, and lay between the villages of Essex and Willsborough. It was purchased, probably early in 1784, by Melchor Hoffnagle, great grandfather to the present venerable Joseph Hoffnagle. It was obtained from Melchor Hoffnagle by his son John Hoffnagle, who, as above stated, moved there in 1784 with his family, consisting of his children John, Michael, and Lois. Melchor Hoffnagle was a German. His name appears in some old legal papers as "Mellicca." Joseph Hoffnagle was born in the house now occupied by Frank Hoffnagle, March 8th, 1798. On the 1st day of January, 1823, he married Polly B. Higby in the house just opposite his present residence on the east end of Warm Pond. His mother was a Sheldon. The Hoffnagle, Morhous, Sheldon, and Higby families, by continued intermarriages have become closely related, and it has been said that the bulk of the population of the town is comprised of members of these families.



John Morhous came to Willsborough in the same boat with John Hoffnagle in 1784, and settled on an adjoining tract of land. He was born in Saybrook, Conn., and married Rosanna Hoffnagle. One son, Charles Morhous, born in 1798 is living still, about one and one-half miles west of Willsborough village. Another son, Michael Morhous, father to Michael Morhous now living about a mile south of the village, was born in June, 1789, and lived until March, 1882, when he died at the age of ninety-three at the farm now owned by his son.

Just north of the early residence of the Hoffnagles, lived at the close of the last century Joseph Sheldon and Abraham Aiken. Edmund and Daniel Sheldon were sons of Joseph Sheldon, and Martin I. Aiken and Abraham Aiken, jr., were sons of Abraham Aiken, sr.

The first inn-keepers in the town were Jonathan Lynde and Stephen Taylor. The location of their taverns has not been ascertained. John Hoffnagle kept the first store, about two miles north of the village of Essex, until 1805 or '06 when the building was converted into a school-house.

In 1800 George Throop and Levi Higby together built a forge on the site of the present dismantled forge owned by Belden Noble. They kept it running until about 1820, and numerous successors have managed it nearly all the time up to within a few years. It was destroyed by fire before 1820, but immediately rebuilt by Throop & Higby. The legal title to the property rested in William D. Ross from the beginning for many years.

In the early history of the region we find the lumber business to have been very prominent. Prior to the opening of the canal between Troy and Whitehall in the latter part of 1823 the lumber market at Quebec received large supplies from this town. Abraham Sheldon and Daniel Ross were probably the most prominent lumber merchants in the early part of the century.

The material interests and prospects of the town have been greatly improved by the construction of the railroad through it. The manufacturing facilities have been so greatly increased as to be practically beyond computation. The town had no lake commerce to be injured by the building of the road, and hence can speak of the benefits it has derived therefrom without qualification.

Reminiscences dating not earlier than 1810 are abundant and trustworthy in character. The shipping of lumber to Quebec was then most active, and persons still living can remember seeing ten or twelve rafts of logs at a time starting for the north. George Throop and Levi Higby kept a potash factory in Willsborough village, just east of the store now occupied by Shedd & Richardson. It was the only one in this town until about 1830, when Abraham Weldin started one on the east side of the river in the village.

In 1810 there was a distillery east of where the Riverside House now stands, owned and managed by Levi Higby. It partially supplied the army

with whiskey in 1812, and is said to have been the only one ever kept in the town.

Daniel Sheldon owned a blacksmith-shop on the west side of the river where William Lyon's shop now is. There was no shoe-shop here as early as 1810, shoemaking and shoemending being done by a guild of itinerants, who lived with each family in need of shoes until the family was supplied.

The town suffered rather more extensively than most of her neighbors from the depredations of the enemy during the War of 1812. The Boquet river furnished a convenient and expeditious avenue for the small boats of the British, and it is related that at one time they sailed up the river as far as the falls.

They had with them two galleys and two barges, their errand being to seize a quantity of flour which the government had deposited at the falls. This was in 1813. They committed many depredations along the banks of the river on private property. General Wadhams, of Westport, at the head of a body of militia, repulsed them near the old encampment of General Burgoyne, nearly destroying the rear galley of the flotilla. The British thereupon returned to the Isle aux Noix.

The cold months of 1816 also affected this town in a manner more pleasant in the memory than in the occurrence. In the summer of 1817 wheat rose to the prodigious price of three dollars a bushel, and was hard to obtain even at that figure. Provisions of all kinds were very scarce. Many Willsborough families were without bread for weeks. The mountains were all a wilderness, sparsely inhabited by men who earned their livelihood by hard work from day to day. During this bitter season they used to make and leech ashes in the woods, and take them to William D. Ross, who paid for them in provisions while provisions lasted, and then paid in cash. In some instances rye flour was sold for eleven dollars a barrel.

In 1818 a tannery was built where the tannery of Allen & Ellsbury now stands.

There were two saw-mills here in 1810, one on one side of the river, near the present site of the stone grist-mill, and the other on the site now occupied by the saw-mill of Edmund S. Higby. The grist-mill of William D. Ross, the same one now run by Abram Hoffnagle, was then the only one in the town.

Two stores were kept in the village. The stone store now occupied by Shedd & Richardson was built and kept in that year (1810) by Throop & Higby. The store which they occupied until they removed into the stone store was afterwards kept by Stephen Cuyler. It stood on the west side of the river. In 1810, or a short time previous thereto, Isaac Jones built a tavern on what is now the site of the Riverside House. Levi Cooley also kept a sort of tavern in a low building on the other side of the river.



A district school flourished in its own peculiar way here before 1810. In that year the sceptre was probably swayed by one Mark Prindle. The school-house was at first on the hill east of the stone store. In 1814, the old structure having been burned, a new one was erected about twenty rods north-east of it.

No church edifice having assumed existence, primitive worship was held in this old school-house for many years.

By this time the "Point" had become quite thickly settled. Adam Patterson, William Stroud, Daniel Bacon, Samuel Barney, — Hoskins, Jacob, Samuel and K. Adsit (three brothers), and Truman Nash, all lived there. The only descendant now known of any of these men is Buel D. Bacon, of Essex, grandson of Daniel Bacon.

Paul B. Boynton, still living, came to Willsborough with his father, Job Boynton, from Shelburne, Chittenden county, Vt., in 1810. He was born at Shelburne in 1808. His wife Rosamond was a daughter of Abraham Aiken, who came here in 1784.

Stephen Cuyler married Charlotte Gilliland, daughter of William Gilliland, and originally settled at the mouth of a brook which for years was known as Cuyler brook. He died near the village of Essex on what is now the Noble place. He left a son, John Cuyler, who died in August, 1839. John B. Cuyler, the present supervisor from Willsborough, and son of John Cuyler, was born April 18th, 1837, in Willsborough. He was brought on to the farm he now owns, about two miles south of Willsborough, in 1840. He has in his possession a half-length, life-sized portrait of William Gilliland, painted in 1879 by a New York artist, from which the engraving was made for this work.

Mrs. Eliza Higby, now residing in the village of Willsborough, was born here in August, 1800. She was a daughter of Edmund Sheldon, who came here in February, 1784. Her mother's maiden name was Mary Ann Haight. Mrs. Higby is the widow of Levi Higby, who was born in this town in September, 1798. His father, also named Levi Higby, was one of the most eminent men in the town for years during the latter part of the eighteenth century, and for twenty years in the present century.

Every town in Essex county gave generously of its blood to preserve the Union during the dark struggle of the Civil War, and Willsborough's record will compare favorably with them all. The young men left their workshops and farms and volunteered their services without stint. Those also who were possessed of means gave freely of their wealth. The courage of her soldiers is attested by the wounds which they received during the war, and the dead which were left to whiten into skeletons on southern soil.<sup>1</sup>

Following are the names of the supervisors of this town from 1796 to the

---

<sup>1</sup> There is a post of the G. A. R. in this town named "Oakley A. Smith Post," from a brave and gallant soldier from the town, who fell in battle in the front ranks of his regiment.

present time, with their years of service: 1796-97, Daniel Sheldon; 1798, Thomas Stower; 1799 (the year of the formation of the present town) to 1803, inclusive, Daniel Sheldon; 1804, Douw; 1805-6, Levi Higby; 1807 to 1809, inclusive, Jonathan Lynde; 1810 to 1812, inclusive, John Morhous; 1813 to 1817, inclusive, Levi Higby; 1818-19, John Morhous; 1820, Levi Higby; 1821 to 1826, inclusive, John Hoffnagle; 1827-28, George Throop; 1829-30, Thomas Stower; 1831 to 1833, inclusive, George Throop; 1834 to 1836, inclusive, Michael Morhous; 1837 to 1841, inclusive, Abraham Weldin; 1842, Henry Weldin; 1843-44, William W. Morhous; 1845, Lyman Barton; 1846-47, Joseph Hoffnagle; 1848, Daniel Putnam; 1849-50, Aiken E. Sheldon; 1851, Michael Morhous; 1852 to 1856, inclusive, Daniel P. Putnam; 1857-58, Lyman Barton; 1859-60, Alvah B. Morhous; 1861, Edmond S. Higby; 1862, Edwin Higby; 1863, W. F. Smith; 1864, E. S. Higby; 1865 to 1868, inclusive, Jesse Adams; 1869-70, Lyman Barton; 1871-72, Lewis H. Clark; 1873 to 1875, inclusive, Edmond S. Higby; 1876-77, Jesse Adams; 1878-79, H. A. Towner; 1880 to 1884, inclusive, Orville A. Smith; 1885, John B. Cuyler.

Following are the present officers of the town: Supervisor, John B. Cuyler; town clerk, Abram W. Hoffnagle; assessors, B. D. Smith, Elbert Richardson, William Severance; commissioner of highways, Aiken Currier; overseers of the poor, James Brown, Hiram Jones; collector, Frank S. Jones; commissioner of excise, Ephraim Rand.

*Population of Town.*—1810, 663; 1825, 1,166; 1830, 1,316; 1835, 1,253; 1840, 1,667; 1845, 1,424; 1850, 1,932; 1860, 1,519; 1865, 1,432; 1870, 1,719; 1875, 1,761; 1880, 1,450.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Willsborough.*—The only village in the town of Willsborough is the one bearing the same name. This is a thriving settlement of not more than five hundred inhabitants, situated on both banks of the Boquet river about two miles from its mouth. Visible in the southwest are the Boquet mountains and in the west and north the Willsborough mountains. In the northern part of the village the river makes a descent so precipitous as to create a fall which affords the various industries on its banks an abundance of water power.

The village is one of the oldest in the county, there being evidences of quite a settlement here as early as 1800, in which year, according to Mrs. Eliza Higby, the post-office was established. Levi Higby, sr., was the first postmaster, and continued in office until about 1820. His son, Levi Higby, jr., succeeded him and remained postmaster until 1845, when he was superseded by Charles Towner. From 1849 to 1857 Charles Sheldon distributed the mail to the citizens of Willsborough. Dudley Jones held the office from 1857 to 1861. Mr. Sheldon then returned to the duties of the office and presided until 1871, when Mrs. A. M. Sheldon became postmistress. She has held the office ever since, and has always had a general store in connection with it.



The early mercantile interests of the town and village being identical, have been sufficiently set forth in the preceding pages of this chapter. The oldest building in the village now used as a store is the one occupied by Shedd & Richardson. As has been stated before, this building was erected in 1810, and used for some time as a store by George Throop and Levi Higby. It passed through the usual vicissitudes of a building devoted to mercantile interests, and has been occupied since March, 1884, by George M. Shedd and Charles E. Richardson as a general store. At that time they bought out Belden Noble, who had kept a store there for more than twenty years excepting a brief period when it was in the hands of James Stower.

George W. Palmer opened a general store in May, 1877, in the Dudley-Jones building. In March, 1884, he moved into the building which he now occupies and which he built himself. Wesley G. Lyon carries on a large general store in the building owned by George Shedd.

H. R. Field began the drug business in May, 1884, in Mrs. White's building. On May 1st, 1885, he moved to his present quarters.

The grist-mill on the right bank of the Boquet river was originally built by William D. Ross in 1810. It was burned in 1843 and immediately rebuilt by W. D. Ross with the aid of Oscar Sheldon. The present proprietors are Abram W. Hoffnagle and H. D. Scott. Mr. Hoffnagle had a half interest in the mill since 1864. Before then the proprietors for many years were Abram Weldin and Edmund Hoffnagle. Mr. Weldin retained his interest in the business and property until his death in 1871. It is the only grist-mill in the town. It has the capacity for grinding forty bushels of wheat or two hundred and forty bushels of feed in every twelve hours. Its dimensions are 50x35 feet.

The present owner of the saw-mill, Edmund S. Higby, has had title to the property, and charge of the business of running it since 1877. He followed Abram Weldin and his administrators. Mr. Weldin built the present structure in 1867 on the foundation of the old mill erected before 1800, which has been mentioned in an earlier page. Its capacity is given as 5,000 feet *per diem*.

The tannery now owned and managed by James Allen and James Ellsbury under the firm style of Allen & Ellsbury was built in 1818 by one Gilbert. Edmund S. Higby, above named, conducted the tannery business from 1857 to 1863.

The Champlain Fibre Company, a stock company, received its charter in 1881, and immediately thereafter erected the works now in use by them. The first officers were: President, Judge Henry C. Gildersleeve, of New York; vice-president, Wesley G. Lyon, of Essex; secretary and treasurer, Edward W. Richardson, then of New York city, now of Willsborough.

The present officers are R. H. Emerson, of Jackson, Miss., president and treasurer; Julian O. Fuller, of New York, secretary. Directors, R. H. Emerson, J. O. Fuller, A. G. Paine, William L. Pomeroy, Seth M. Milliken.

From the beginning in November, 1884, Homer F. Locke was the superintendent. Since then there has been no regular appointment of a superintendent, the management of the business falling naturally into the hands of Mr. Emerson. Edward W. Richardson has charge of the works at Willsborough.

The company employs in all about one hundred and fifty men, about seventy of whom are at work in the mills. The factory has a capacity of turning out about ten tons of dry chemical fibre every twenty-four hours, men being at work there night and day. The machinery is propelled by both water and steam.

The pulp is made from young poplar trees growing in the mountains of Willsborough and Lewis. This business is rapidly becoming one of the chief industries of the county.

The site covered by the Riverside House has been used for hotel purposes ever since 1810, when, as has been before observed, Isaac Jones distributed "sperrits" to the thirsting palates at and about "The Falls." This old tavern was destroyed by fire in 1835, while a Mr. Remington was the ostensible proprietor. The present hotel building was reared soon after by Michael Morhous, father to the gentleman of that name now living south of the village. The present proprietor, Warren Shepard, has had charge of the business since May 1st, 1880. The house was closed the year prior to that date. Gideon Hoffnagle was the last proprietor before this brief suspension.

The Bay View House, near the station, was opened by the present proprietor, Benjamin Ames, the year that the railroad was finished (1875).

Albert Smith recently started a butter factory near the station. It can yet be named, however, only as an experiment.

*Physicians.* — The oldest living physician now in practice in Willsborough is Dr. Lyman Barton, who began the practice of medicine here in June, 1839. He was graduated in the previous year from the medical department of Dartmouth College, New Hampshire. In 1841 he moved on to the premises he now occupies, though he did not build the present residence until 1849.

Dr. T. E. Sweatt came here in September, 1881, shortly after being graduated from the medical department of the University of Vermont, at Burlington.

Dr. H. R. Field received a diploma from the Albany Medical College in 1862. He has been here since 1884. He carries on a drug store.

*Churches.* — The first church in the village, or indeed in the town of Willsborough, was unquestionably a Congregational Church, which, it is said, was organized before the year 1800. Its activity, however, must have been somewhat intermittent for some years, until the organization of the present Congregational Church on the 25th day of January, 1833. The old Congregational Churches of Willsborough and Essex were united until about 1830, but then separated and this organization completed as stated. Prominent in the



councils of the first meeting were Revs. Cyrus Comstock, Joel Fisk, and Dr. A. P. Mead, from Essex, and Rev. S. Williams, jr., and Deacon R. Morse, from the church at Lewis. The first members were : Daniel F. Lynde, Aaron Fairchild, Molley Lynde, Elizabeth Fairchild, Eliza Gayger, Espatia Lynde, Annis Manley, Nesmus Manley, Ira Manley, jr., Caroline Slater, Abiel Anderson, Marshall Shedd, Obadiah Thayer. At subsequent meetings large numbers were added to the church, and the membership was soon large. The Rev. Marshall Shedd was the first pastor. He had preached in Willsborough even before the organization of the church, in 1831, and remained until December, 1833. The organization of the church was due largely to his efforts. John Hoffnagle and Daniel F. Lynde, were the first deacons and John Hoffnagle was the first clerk. The following is the list of pastors that have had charge of this church down to the present, and the dates of their ministration as accurately as they can be learned from the records, assisted by the active memory of Dr. Lyman Barton, to whose kindness may be attributed all that we give concerning this church: Rev. Julius Doane, 1834-35; Rev. Ira Manley supplied the pulpit some of the time during the year 1835, and a few sermons were preached by Rev. Joel Fisk, then of Essex; Rev. Stephen Cook, 1836-38; Rev. Marshall Shedd (supplied), 1849-40; Revs. Joel Fisk and Ira Manley (supplied), 1840; Rev. Marshall Shedd, 1841-47; Rev. Ebenezer Newhall, 1848-52; Rev. Stephen A. Barnard, 1853-65; Rev. A. D. Barber, 1866-69; occasional supply by Rev. C. N. Wilder, 1870-74; Rev. R. O. Post, 1874-76; Rev. C. N. Wilder (here and in Essex), 1877-81; present pastor, Rev. G. A. Curtiss, 1882.

The first church edifice was begun immediately upon the organization of the church in 1833, and was completed at a cost of about \$3,000. It has been several times improved in the interior. The present value of the church property, including the parsonage, is about \$6,000. The present membership of the church is eighty.

A Sunday-school was organized during the pastorate of the Rev. Stephen Cook, and has been maintained without interruption ever since. The present superintendent is Abram Hoffnagle.

*M. E. Church.* — Owing to the fragmentary condition of the records of this church, it has been found difficult to obtain a complete and perfectly accurate history, but with the assistance of William Smith, who has been with the church from its inception, we can give a tolerably clear outline. The Methodist Church of Willsborough was organized in 1830. James Smith was the first class-leader and the Rev. Joseph Ames one of the first pastors. This was the time when two preachers traveled in a given circuit.

Meetings were held in the old school-house east of the "stone store" until 1846, when the present edifice was built at a cost of about \$3,000. Revs. Seymour Colman and Taylor were then pastors. Prominent among the very

first members were William Smith, James Smith, Hannah Lyon and Alinza Lyon. There has been no interruption or suspension of regular preaching since the beginning. Rev. C. F. Noble, the present pastor, came in the spring of 1883.

The present officers of the church are: Stewards, William Smith, William Helm, Orville A. Smith, M. A. Moss, Edmund Lyon, Aaron Nichols, Frank Adams, Walter Smith and H. M. Smith; leaders, Albert Morhous, James Ellsbury, William Helm, Frederick Lyon, C. Conger, A. G. Forbes, E. F. Smith; trustees, George W. Moore, Thomas Ellsbury, H. M. Smith, James Ellsbury, E. T. Smith, Burton Hawley, M. A. Morse, E. O. Smith, George W. Lyon. Soon after the organization of the church a Sunday-school was started, first at Willsborough Point, where the services were held until the expiration of three or four years, when it was removed to the village. The present superintendent of the Sunday-school is E. F. Smith; the assistant superintendent is Dr. F. E. Sweatt. There is at present a Sunday-school membership of about one hundred and twenty-five, and a church membership of two hundred and six. The present value of the church property is estimated at \$4,500.

*School.* — Willsborough does not possess a union school, but has instead a graded district school, in which two teachers are employed. The former school districts Nos. 1 and 15 were connected February 28th, 1842. At the first meeting of which there is any record, dated on that day, Michael Morhous was chosen moderator of the meeting; John Richardson was elected school clerk; Abraham Weldin, Michael Morhous and Levi Higby, jr., trustees; John Richardson, librarian, and Eneas Towner, collector. On May 11th, 1846, it was voted to remove the old school-house northeast of the "stone store." In August, 1847, the trustees were empowered to prepare a plan for the new school-house, and in 1852 the present brick building was erected. There is now an average annual attendance of pupils at the school of about eighty. The present officers are: Committee, Frank E. Sweatt, M. D., and Abram W. Hoffnagle, who is district clerk. Frank Wickes and Miss Sarah Richardson are the teachers.

A post-office (Willsborough Point) has been recently established at Willsborough Point. The postmaster is Caleb Conger.

---



## CHAPTER XXX.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF JAY.

JAY was separated from the original town of Willsborough January 16th, 1798, and received its name from Governor John Jay. At first it embraced, besides its present territory, parts of Keene, Wilmington, and Elizabethtown. The following is the notice of application by the inhabitants of Jay (or Mallory's Bush, as it was then called) to be set off in a town by themselves:—

“Notice is hereby given that the inhabitants of Mallory's Bush, in the Town of Willsborough, northwest district, have called a meeting and unanimously agreed to make application to the Town of Willsborough to be set off and to be incorporated into a town by themselves, and have chosen John Cochran, jr., to attend the annual meeting, Willsborough, to do said business of the application. The boundaries of said Town so to be set off are as follows: Beginning where the military line intercepts the south of Willsborough, then north to the 12-mile tree, then north 45 degrees east to the south line of Perue, then west to the southwest corner of said Perue, or west line of Clinton county, then south to the northwest corner of Crown Point, then east to the place of beginning.

ELY VANE, Clerk.

“Dated at Mallory's Bush the 12th of March, 1797.”

Afterwards (1822) the town was enlarged by the annexation of parts of Peru in Clinton county, and Chateaugay in Franklin county. The present town is situated in the northern part of Essex county, between Chesterfield and Lewis on the east, and Wilmington and Keene on the west. Along the western boundary extend the Ausable mountains, of which Mounts Clark, Hamlin, and Bassett, all reaching an elevation of more than two thousand feet above tide, are the highest peaks. The southern strip of territory projecting between the towns of Keene and Lewis contains a number of the Adirondack peaks. This is the wildest and most picturesque part of the town, and is surpassed in grandeur by few sections of the entire county. The east or south branch of the Ausable river, having its source in the Ausable ponds in the extreme southern part of Keene, and draining some of the most mountainous regions in Northern New York, flows north through the west of Jay, and joins the other branch at the “Forks.”

The whole of this town is elevated, and the surface broken by lofty and precipitous mountains. The soil is chiefly a light sandy and gravelly loam, and in the valleys vigorous and fertile. Upon the table-lands, which extend in parallel ridges through the entire town, the soil is highly productive. Veins of black lead have been discovered in quantities too small to be worked with

profit. Iron exists in great abundance, and but for the difficulty of transportation, owing to the broken and uneven surface of the country, the town would unquestionably be an inexhaustible fund of wealth to the county.

There are three villages in the town, Ausable Forks, lying between the junction of the two branches of the river of that name in the north line of the county; Jay, situated on the south branch of the Ausable near the center of the town, and Upper Jay on the same stream about four miles farther south. Several considerable settlements were made in various parts of the town previous to its formation in 1798, by emigrants attracted hither by the fertility of the soil, the almost unlimited quantities of lumber, and the rich promise held out by the numerous veins of iron ore existing in various parts of the town.

The earliest settler was Nathaniel Mallory, who came to the present site of the village of Jay as early as 1796 and probably gave the village its early name of Mallory's Bush. Among the other early settlers were John W. Southmayd, an early farmer and iron manufacturer who was here prior to 1814, and who lived until about 1855 two miles south of the village of Jay; Joseph Storrs, a farmer living near Jay, who died some time before Southmayd, and John Purmort (before 1798), an iron man who, in pursuance of a scheme initiated by Joseph Storrs, virtually established the iron business afterwards carried on by J. & J. Rogers. He had a forge in Jay before 1812. Robert Otis also lived here before the beginning of the present century. Ezekiel Lockwood lived here in early days. Nathaniel Ray was connected with the building of the forge at the village of Jay. Josiah Way and Joseph Fowler attained some prominence when the country was the home of pioneers. William Mallory built the first mill erected in the town, and in company with Nathaniel Mallory (probably a brother) owned a grist-mill, saw-mill, and later a forge and carding-machine. Anson Bigelow was born in Chesterfield in 1804 and came to the site of Ausable Forks about 1819. Stephen Griswold came to the Forks about 1812. In the vicinity of Upper Jay were Elisha and Charles Prindle, Isaac Williams, James B. Wood, Daniel Williams, Samuel Cook, and Josiah W. Hewitt, a wheelwright.

These are a majority of the most prominent pioneers of the town. There were others who deserve, perhaps, as much credit as these, but it is impossible to give all, even of the early inhabitants, the words of praise which their efforts might entitle them.

Of course the industries remained in a crude and incipient state until the avenues of transportation not only on the lake but to and from the lake, over the lofty mountains and through the almost impenetrable forests, were opened and made passable.

The oldest living inhabitant takes his pipe from between his lips and tells us of the forges and saw-mills at "The Forks" and Mallory's Bush, and we are prone to erect in our imaginations an image of the solid and formidable



forges and saw-mills of the present day. But these pictures are rudely blotted out by the succeeding portrait which our informant draws with vivid hand, of the aboriginal grist-mill, constructed from a stump hollowed into a convenient basin which was used as a hopper, and a weight depending from the nearest sapling as a grindstone. These infant industries were all "brought up by hand."

The earliest road to Mallory's Bush was a primitive passage-way through the woods between that place and Westport, then called North-West Bay. It could not have been used earlier than the year 1796. About the same time or soon after, the road which leads along the west bank of the south branch of the Ausable river was constructed. The road on the east bank of the same stream between Lower and Upper Jay was not ready for wagon traffic in 1812.

The pioneers of this region were not, however, barbarians. Considering their meager opportunities they supplied their own wants with surprising ingenuity. Between 1800 and 1812 schools and religious meetings were established in the most thickly populated districts. There was a school in Jay long before 1812, and by that time Methodist classes had been formed for religious exercitation and discipline. A Baptist Church was formed here in 1798.

Lumbering was one of the earliest industries of the town. At the beginning of the War of 1812 huge spars were cut in this town and drawn to the lake, and thence floated north to the English market at Quebec. Josiah Fisk was one of the most prominent of the pioneer lumbermen. A Mr. Sleeper at one time with seven yoke of oxen drew an enormous spar to the lake from Mallory's Bush. A short time after the period just mentioned square timbers came into great requisition, and were shipped in large quantities over the same route. In the vicinity of Upper Jay the lumber business was killed as early as 1820, by the girdling of all the trees to facilitate the clearing of land. At Ausable Forks the most enterprising lumber dealers were Burt & Vanderwarker, the firm comprising George and Justus Burt, and James and Isaac Vanderwarker. Their lumber was taken to Port Kent *via* the Ausable river.

The iron business has received mention. The first forge was built at Mallory's Bush, now Lower Jay, in 1798. Joseph Storrs, John Purmort and G. A. Purmort & Co. were interested in it. In 1809 the works were extensively enlarged. Before 1820 Apollos A. Newell constructed and ran a two-fired forge about a mile south of Lower Jay, which was destroyed by the freshet of 1856. It had soon after its erection to compete with the forge of Jesse Tobey and Robert G. Hazard. Long before 1825 a forge was built at Ausable Forks and run by Burt, Vanderwarker & Co. Taverns, distilleries, asheries, saw-mills, and several stores abounded. William Mallory built a saw-mill near the site of Jay in about 1798. Though liquor was dispensed in many private houses, there is no remembrance of a tavern here (Jay) until about 1820, when Jesse Tobey and Elihu Bartlett opened houses which they kept until about

1830. Both buildings were, soon after that year, destroyed by fire. For some time prior to 1823 a man named Cook kept an inn on the site of Coppin's present house in Upper Jay. Elisha Wells managed a distillery and grist-mill in Upper Jay in 1823. In the same place and year Steven G. Williams and Daniel Williams conducted an ashery. Not much business of any kind excepting lumbering and the manufacture of iron was done in Ausable Forks until 1825.

The calls for volunteers during the Rebellion were promptly and heartily responded to by the inhabitants of the town. Other towns of greater population may have furnished a greater number of men and contributed more largely of their money to the cause, but they were more thickly inhabited and more affluent. Not one of them, however, could have given money more willingly or offered men of greater bravery. Further details on this subject will be found in the chapter devoted to the military history of the county.

*Town Officers.* — The first town meeting was held in 1798, at which Elisha Bingham was elected supervisor and Ely Stone town clerk. The commissioners of highways were Leonard Owen, John W. Southmayd and Ezekiel Lockwood; and the assessors were Zenas Graves, David Clemmons and John Donlap.

Following is a list of supervisors from the year 1800 to the present time, with the respective years of their service: 1800, Ezekiel Lockwood; 1801–2, John Cochrane; 1803, John Douglass; 1804–5, Robert Otis; 1806–7, Ely Stone; 1808 to 1811 inclusive, Joseph Storrs; 1812, Jonas B. Wood; 1813 to 1815 inclusive, Joseph Storrs; 1816, William Finch; 1817–18, Reuben Sanford; 1819, Joseph Storrs; 1820, Reuben Sanford; 1821 to 1826 inclusive, Joseph Storrs; 1827, William Wells; 1828, Joseph Storrs; 1829, William Wells; 1830–31, Isaac Vanderwarker; 1832 to 1836 inclusive, Joseph Storrs; 1837, Thomas Brewster; 1838, Joseph Storrs; 1839, Josiah W. Hewitt; 1840, John Purmort; 1841, Jesse Tobey, jr.; 1842–43, Benjamin Wells; 1844, Josiah W. Hewitt; 1845–46, William H. Butrick; 1847–48, Daniel Blish; 1849, Thomas D. Trumbull; 1850, Samuel West; 1851, Thomas D. Trumbull; 1852, Daniel Blish; 1853, Monroe Hall; 1854, Heman G. Powers; 1855, Jeremiah B. Briggs; 1856, Samuel West; 1857 to 1859 inclusive, Nathaniel C. Boynton; 1860, Henry D. Graves; 1861, N. C. Boynton; 1862, George S. Potter; 1863 to 1867 inclusive, Gardner Pope; 1868–69, Henry Smith; 1870 to 1872 inclusive, Henry D. Graves; 1873, Gardner Pope; 1874–75, Henry M. Prime; 1876, Richard D. McIntyre; 1877, Henry Smith; 1878, A. S. Prime; 1879–80, Amos Bosley; 1881, Spencer G. Prime; 1882, John C. De Kalb; 1883–84, Silas W. Prime; 1885, Fred E. Trumbull. The present town clerk is John A. Simpson.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Jay.* — This village was without doubt settled the earliest of the three



which are now comprised in the township of Jay. It was near here, as has been mentioned, that the Mallorys and Purmorts wielded their iron influence in primitive times. It has always been best known for the iron manufactured in its forges and the timbers hewn upon the mighty shoulders of its hills. George Griswold, who came here in 1812, has a clear recollection of the condition of the village when he came. A small school was partly filled with a small number of small pupils, and had been in existence then a number of years. A man named Parsons brought the "daily papers" on horseback to the bustling populace of Jay, while Elihu Hall, general merchant, who had control of the post-office department here, regulated the distribution of the mail matter. Mr. Hall was postmaster for a number of years. It is not known who followed him until 1834, when Elihu H. Bartlett officiated. Since that year G. G. Tobey, the present postal dignitary, has been in office almost without intermission. He was out several years immediately preceding 1864, when A. M. Pitcher, N. C. Boynton and Byron Boynton filled the position in chronological order as named.

The hotels of the past in Jay have had troublous and precarious careers, and have been almost invariably overtaken by a tragic fate. The hotels which Jesse Tobey and Elihu Bartlett kept in the second quarter of this century, burned. About 1830 Jesse Tobey built another hotel on the corner directly opposite the site of D. K. Day's store. The ownership fell soon to G. G. Tobey, who sold it in 1856 to Mrs. Caroline Green. She owned it when it too was destroyed by fire. It has never been rebuilt. The hotel now in operation has been under the superintendence of Nelson Patterson since December, 1884.

The oldest store in the village is D. K. Day's. Mr. Day opened a store in the same building he now occupies in 1869, when he bought out Monroe Hall. Hall had been a general merchant in the place a long time. The village in population and thrift was then about what it is now.

G. A. Purmort & Co., who had formerly owned the forge at Jay, were dealing in merchandise in 1869, and had been since early in the century.

George Slyter came to Jay in December, 1884, and opened a grocery and furniture store and began the undertaking business.

J. & J. Rogers's Iron Company have a general store in connection with their iron business, which provides for the wants of their employees.

The forge now owned by the J. & J. Rogers Iron Company, whose headquarters are at Ausable Forks, was started in 1809 by John Purmort. Afterwards the title was in G. A. Purmort & Co., from whom it passed into the hands of the present owners in 1864. It has now six fires. (For account of their works, see Ausable Forks.)

The village possesses three physicians, Dr. Ezra Robinson, of about three years' practice here, Dr. St. Pierre Fuller, who has been here many years, and

Dr. Frank Kendall, of eight or ten years' standing. There are no lawyers here.

*Churches.* — The Baptist Church of Jay was organized in 1798, although at the beginning it was a part of the Peru Church, and the same pastor, Rev. Solomon Brown, officiated at both places. The records from 1799 to 1807 are lost. Licentiates who preached for these churches then were Dana Clark, Cyrus Call and Eli Stone. The last-named were ordained in 1817. In 1815–16 Abel Bingham, an Indian missionary, was one of the deacons. Eighty members were added to the church in that season. In 1818 Cyrus Call preached and was paid a salary. About this time, through some difficulty with a refractory member, the church was disbanded, but it was reorganized in 1822, with a membership of only thirty-seven. Stephen Wise, of Chazy, was ordained in 1826, and Joel Peck in 1827. The Saranac Church was separated from it in 1828. A church edifice was commenced the same year, but was not ready for dedication until 1835. Meanwhile, 1830, the church was agitated considerably by the Masonic and temperance excitements during the pastorate of Revs. Conant Sawyer and Isaac Sawyer. Notwithstanding these impediments, there were very fruitful revivals under the ministrations of both the Sawyers. In 1835–37 Rev. Bryant was pastor. There have been twenty-one pastors called to this church, and four ordained. Rev. Isaac Sawyer was succeeded by Rev. John A. Dodge. Since his time the following have officiated: Revs. Charles Berry, William Kingsley, Joseph W. Sawyer, J. J. Babcock, H. Steelman, J. J. Townsend, W. H. Pease, C. D. Fuller, A. W. Stoekiom, M. F. Negus and G. N. Harmon.

Besides the revivals during the labors of Revs. Conant and Isaac Sawyer, there were important additions under Revs. Charles Berry and J. J. Babcock. There have been in this church (in September, 1884) 416 baptisms, 152 additions, 256 dismissed by letter, sixty-nine expelled, 106 died, sixty-five dropped. Five licentiates have been sent out. The Sunday-school was started in 1830. The bell which swings from the cross-beams in the belfry of this old stone church is widely known as of a rich and mellow tone. The rivers that find their sources near at hand and flow in diverse directions, find their outlets as far apart as Long Island Sound and the Gulf of St. Lawrence. The idea suggested by this and its situation has found expression in the following beautiful poem by Frank Daniel Blish: —

“The bell at Jay, the rivers, breeze,  
To North and South send greeting;  
Beneath the Adirondack trees  
The Hudson's heart is beating.  
O Bell sublime!  
In ancient dust  
Earth's archives rust;  
But not thy rhyme!  
Thy voice is clear;  
I hear it here,  
Subdued by time!



"Thy counterfeits resemble thee  
 As murmurs in commotion  
 Upon the tongue-tied midland sea  
 The speech of unbound ocean.  
 While music fills  
 And echoes mock  
 Responsive rock;  
 While grandeur thrills  
 Thy tones will last;  
 Thy zone was cast  
 Between the hills!

"My wish for fame I'll gladly spurn  
 As youth's companions meet me  
 When I to childhood's home return  
 If thy glad welcome greet me.  
 Thy slender fronds  
 Of brake and fern  
 May shake and turn;  
 At lips of bronze  
 Thy challenge fling;  
 Thy welcome ring  
 My heart responds!"

*Methodist.* — The Methodist Episcopal Church of Jay dates its organization about the year 1815, when it was a part of the old Plattsburg circuit. There was a class here in 1812. The first quarterly meeting was held in 1816 in Elihu Hall's barn. The first church edifice (frame) was erected in 1820, across the square from the present brick church, which was built a year or two prior to 1850. One of the first pastors was the Rev. — Eighamy. About 1816 the Revs. Eli Barrett and Jeremiah McDaniels were here. These early preachers traveled about from one place to another in their circuit on horseback. Since 1817 the following pastors have officiated: Revs. J. Boyington and Moses Amidon; Gilbert Lyon and Harvey De Wolf; Cyrus Silliman and Phineas Doane; Harvey De Wolf and Cyrus Prindle; Darius Stephens, Ibri Cannon and Hiram Meeker; Orrin Peer and Phineas Doane; James Coville and Jacob Leonard.

In 1861 Rev. J. S. Mott was the pastor, and was succeeded by pastors as follows: Revs. W. W. Foster, Edward Turner, I. Le Barron, D. C. Ayres, A. C. Lyon, A. S. Bigelow, R. J. Davies. In 1879–82 Rev. E. J. McKernan preached here, and was followed by the present pastor, Rev. F. K. Potter, who came in the spring of 1882. The present membership of the church is two hundred and seventy-two. The church property is valued at \$4,500.

The Sunday-school was started soon after the first church was built, and has continued to the present. The first superintendent was George Griswold. G. G. Tobey is the present superintendent.

*Upper Jay.* — The early industries of Upper Jay have been spoken of in the introductory matter of this chapter. The oldest inhabitant now living in the village is Henry Prime, who came here in 1823. According to his recol-

lection the hotel which in 1823 was run by Mr. Cook went into the possession of Benjamin Wells about 1830. Shortly afterwards Alanson Hayes kept it about two years, when Henry Prime bought it. During the first two years of Prime's ownership George Kline kept it for him. The hotel was burned in 1865. An old carding-machine and dye-shop, which had been owned by Isaac Williams some time before 1820, was moved on to the site of the old hotel a few months after the fire by Charles Smith, who purchased the land of Mr. Prime. The present hotel has been kept by Charles Coppins for the past three years.

In the spring of 1867 A. S. Prime started a general store here and continued sole proprietor of the business for five years. For three years after that Silas W. Prime was his partner. Then Spencer G. Prime went in with them. This relation subsisted until 1883, when A. S. Prime went out. The business has grown to large proportions. They expend from \$100,000 to \$125,000 annually in the purchase of stock.

In January, 1885, a grist-mill owned by Prime Brothers and John T. Heald was destroyed by fire. It was built in 1847 by Sylvanus Wells.

About a mile north of Upper Jay a saw-mill is owned and run by W. & W. Nye. There are also two wheelwright shops here, one owned by A. S. Prime, and another by Charles Fish. George W. Stickney owns a carding-machine, and conducts a cloth-dressing shop and cider-mill all in the same building. Ellbridge Storrs is the undertaker for the village. Dr. A. J. Merrill has practiced medicine here a number of years. The only lawyer in the place is George Smith, who has been located here about five years.

The present postmaster is A. P. Prime, who is of about ten years' standing. For forty years or more before his entrance to the office Benjamin Wells officiated.

*Ausable Forks.* — Ausable Forks is the largest and most thriving though not the oldest village in the town. A considerable portion, both of its population and business, is in Clinton county, on the north bank of the Ausable river. Most of the territory now occupied by the village of Ausable Forks was once owned by Zephaniah Palmer. In 1825 Burt & Vanderwarker bought the property of Palmer, and built several saw-mills on the Ausable. In 1828, in connection with Keese, Lapham & Co., they erected a four-fired forge, which was then supplied with ore from the Arnold bed and Palmer Hill. About this time a second saw-mill was put up. A stock company was organized in 1834, and entitled the Sable Iron Company, Reuben Sanford, Arder Barker, James Rogers, John Fitzgerald, Richard H. Peabody, Robert B. Hazard and Calvin Cook being trustees. In 1835 the business was conducted for the company under the management of their agent, John Woodman. Owing to business embarrassments, operations were suspended in 1836 and until 1837, when James and John Rogers purchased the entire property. In 1848 they



erected a forge on the dam on the west branch of the river, consisting of four fires. The most important of the works are situated on a point of land extending into the south branch of the river from the southern bank. The rolling-mill was built in 1834.

The J. & J. Rogers Iron Company had its origin in a business established at Black Brook, Clinton county, in 1832, by two brothers, James and John Rogers. As above stated, they became the owners of the works at the Forks in 1837, although they held prominent interests there in 1834. In 1864 they bought out the Purmort iron interest at Lower Jay, and immediately enlarged the works at that place.

In 1870 (December 29th) a joint stock company was organized, called the J. & J. Rogers Iron Company, which succeeded the former partnership interests at these three villages. The first officers were: President, James Rogers; vice-president, John Rogers; trustees, James Rogers, John Rogers, Halsey Rogers, son of James, and Thomas Rogers, son of John. In 1871 Halsey Rogers died, and in the same year Henry D. Graves, son-in-law of James Rogers, was elected to fill the vacancy thus caused in the board of trustees. In 1872 Thomas Rogers withdrew from the company by reason of ill health. Hiram W. Stetson succeeded him as trustee. James Rogers retired in 1876, and in January following his son-in-law, George Chahoon, became a member of the board. John Rogers was then elected president, and Henry D. Graves vice-president. John Rogers retired in May, 1879 (and died in a few days), and his position was filled by the election of Benjamin E. Wells. Henry D. Graves was then elected president, Hiram W. Stetson vice-president, and Benjamin E. Wells secretary.

The company runs four fires at Ausable Forks and six at Jay. The business here and at Jay is under the supervision of H. D. Graves and George Chahoon, while Hiram W. Stetson and Benjamin E. Wells conduct the works at Black Brook. The general superintendent at Jay is Ezra Fairbanks. In addition to their iron business at Jay, this company is largely engaged in the manufacture of brick.

The ore is taken exclusively from the Palmer bed, two miles north of the Forks, in Clinton county, and is the finest of Bessemer. The products of the company's works are charcoal blooms, and bars for conversion into cast steel, Peru horse-shoe iron, round and square iron, and Sable-cut nails.

Although the aggregate result of the industry and capable exertion of the leading spirits of this company pronounce their efforts a wonderful success, they have been many times subjected to the severest of reverses. The well-remembered freshet of 1856, and another in 1857, caused fearful devastation among the works on both branches of the river at Ausable Forks, and the Messrs. Rogers lost by each flood no less than \$25,000. In 1864 they lost \$90,000 by fires.

*Mercantile.*— In July, 1864, Henry Smith and George Featherston entered into partnership and, under the firm name of H. Smith & Co., began the sale of general merchandise in the building which they still occupy and which they then erected. They started with a stock of about \$10,000 value and are now quoted as carrying from \$50,000 to \$70,000.

W. J. Gillespie started a drug store here in April, 1874, and removed into his present quarters in October following. In March, 1880, his brother, H. E. Gillespie, purchased an interest in the business. They have two stores in Ausable Forks — one on either side of the river, and one in Bloomingdale. The total value of their stock is estimated at \$24,000.

Smith & Prime have a drug store on the Clinton side.

John C. De Kalb came here in August, 1882, and established a general store on Main street, Essex side. He owns the building, which he built himself. He carries a stock valued at about \$12,000.

*Hotels.* — The American House, Clinton side, was built by James Rogers. John Hargraves assumed control of the property and business in 1868. In 1870 his son-in-law, E. D. Fillmore, went in with him. This relation was dissolved January, 1885, by the death of Mr. Hargraves. Mr. Fillmore is now the sole proprietor.

What is now called the Ausable House was built in 1832 by George M. Burt, and was one of the earliest frame houses in the village. At the time of its erection it was the largest hotel between Whitehall and Plattsburg. It had no name until about 1854, when Justus G. Failes kept it under the name Tawas House. It took its present name when Parker Torrance ran it. Torrance bought it in 1862 of Joseph Downey. He was followed by H. H. Sherburne, now of the Valley House in Elizabethtown. Patrick Hogan kept it about eighteen months after Sherburne left. In 1876 C. H. Kendall, now of Saranac Lake, became the proprietor and remained until February, 1883, when the present proprietor, A. E. Barrett, came into possession. H. Smith & Co. have owned the hotel property since 1875.

*Tannery.* — Isaac Lake now owns a tannery on the Clinton side, which was begun about 1840. Benoni Lake owned it originally.

*Professional Men.* — Thomas D. Trumbull was admitted at Plattsburg in 1844 as attorney and in 1848 to general practice. He opened an office here in 1845, in the same building he now occupies. He passed his preliminary period of study with Gardner Stowe, then of Keeseville, four years, and with Lemuel Stetson, of the same place, six months. His son, Thomas D. Trumbull, jr., occupies the same office as his father, but conducts an independent practice. He was admitted in Michigan in 1875, and re-admitted to practice in this State at Albany, November 18th, 1881, after a clerkship of eighteen months in his father's office. The Messrs. Trumbull are the only attorneys in the village.



Dr. Conant Sawyer began to practice medicine on the Essex side in 1867. He was educated for his practice in the Albany Medical University. His first office was in the Graves block.

Dr. Francis J. D'Avignon commenced practicing in Ausable Forks September 12th, 1875, after an experience of eighteen months at Clintonville. He was just before that graduated from the Louisville Medical College of Louisville, Ky.

Dr. Andrew W. Riley was graduated from the medical department of the University of New York in 1880. In March, 1880, he opened an office in Clintonville. He came here January, 1st, 1882, and formed a partnership with Dr. D'Avignon, which still subsists. On the 1st of December, 1883, they were burned out, their office then being over the drug store of Smith & Prime. They removed into an office over Gillespie's drug store, where they remained until their last change, January 1st, 1885, at which time they came into their present office.

*Press.* — There is no newspaper in Ausable Forks at present. D. L. Hayes began the publication of a weekly paper called the *Mountain Echo* about 1878, but after a flickering struggle for existence of about five years it expired.

*Fire Company.* — The Ausable Forks Fire Department was organized June 29th, 1878, with the following officers: Chief engineer, George Chahoon; assistant chief engineer, Peter Fremyea; treasurer, H. D. Graves; secretary, John Brenan. It comprises three companies: Graves Hose Company No. 1, Engine Company No. 2, and the Adirondack Hook and Ladder Company No. 3. The membership of the entire department is sixty.

*Masonic Lodge.* — Tahawas Lodge (U. D.) was established October 6th, 1884, with the following officers: W. J. Gillespie, master; George A. Everrest, senior warden; N. B. Slater, junior warden; George Chahoon, treasurer; J. G. McKinnon, secretary; J. H. Smith, senior deacon; George L. Gray, junior deacon; D. G. Cronk, tyler; Emerson Featherston, Benjamin E. Wells, H. G. Graves, trustees. The first registry shows a membership of fifty-seven.

*School.* — Prior to July 24th, 1883, Ausable Forks had only a district school. At that time, however, the present union system was adopted, and the following board of education chosen: James Rogers, George Featherston, Dr. A. W. Riley, William Hopkins and George L. Gray. In 1882 the old school-house had been entirely rebuilt at an expense of about \$2,500. It was originally erected in 1870. There are now six departments in the school — academic, grammar, intermediate, and three primary departments — conducted by a corps of seven teachers. The first principal was C. M. Bean, of Cortland county, who remained until the close of 1883. The present principal is S. McKay Smith, of Herkimer county. There are three buildings now in use, of which the main one is on the Essex side.

*Churches.* — The first prayer-meeting held in Ausable Forks under the

auspices of the Presbyterian denomination was started by Joseph Horr, who moved here from Keeseville in 1836. It was held in the old school-house. In 1837 the church edifice was erected. The present organization of the church was not completed until May 2d, 1839. Among the first members were Joseph Horr, Esther Horr, John T. Duncan, Fanny Duncan, Warren Bigelow, Sarah Hawckett, Mariah Burt, Minerva Whitley and Parthena White. The first elders were Joseph Horr and John T. Duncan. Joseph Horr was the first deacon.

Rev. E. B. Baxter, from Jericho, Vt., filled the pulpit for a short time. In September, 1839, Rev. Calvin B. Cady accepted a call from the church. In the summer of 1843 Rev. Thorm supplied the pulpit. From 1848 to 1851 the pastor was Rev. James Miller; in 1851, Rev. P. Q. H. Myers; 1853-54, Rev. John Scott. During the pastorate of Rev. John Scott the church building was destroyed by fire, and the present structure immediately erected, at a cost of about \$3,000. In 1856-57 Rev. Amos W. Seeley was the settled pastor, and was succeeded in the latter year by Rev. John S. Stone. Although Mr. Stone labored here for several years he was not called until 1860. In 1862 he went to the war as chaplain, and was killed. From 1864 to 1867 Rev. G. T. Everest served.

The first Sunday-school in the village was organized in the spring of 1837 by Joseph Horr. James W. Flack and Charles Brewster were the first superintendents. From 1856 to 1873 the duties of that position were performed by R. C. R. Chase, since which time the pastor has been continuously elected superintendent. The present assistant is G. M. Beckwith.

The Methodist Episcopal Church of Ausable Forks was organized about the year 1840. Among the first members were the Vanderwarkers, John Gibson and wife, Benjamin Kent and family, Mrs. Farrington, Joel Bull, Zimri Carpenter, George Griswold. The name of the first pastor does not appear in the records. In 1848 Revs. Charles L. Hagar and Andrew McGilton were sent to the Wilmington circuit, which included Ausable Forks. During that and the following year the church edifice was completed, at a cost of about \$3,000. In 1874 and '75, under the influence of Rev. G. H. Robbins, the church was enlarged and thoroughly repaired, and a new bell swung, at a total cost of about eighteen hundred and fifty dollars.

The Sunday-school was organized in 1857, under the superintendence of L. D. Gray. The second superintendent was C. D. Meigs. In 1860 E. A. Richardson followed him and held the position until May, 1884, when the present incumbent, Nathan Jones, was elected.

In 1854 North Jay, and in 1876 Palmer Hill, were attached to the Ausable Forks charge, and are now considered a part of the church. The total membership of the church is one hundred and twenty-four, and of the Sunday-school one hundred and twenty-five. The present pastor is Rev. E. C. Farwell. The trustees are E. A. Richardson, William Weston, G. L. Gray. 30



## CHAPTER XXXI.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF ELIZABETHTOWN.

THIS town was formed from Crown Point on the 12th day of February, 1798, and received its name from William Gilliland, the pioneer of the county, in honor of his daughter, whose name was Elizabeth.<sup>1</sup> Parts of the towns of Moriah and Keene were taken off in 1808, and of Westport in 1815; a part of Jay and Lewis was annexed in 1844, and a part of Lewis in 1854. Since this date the boundaries have remained unchanged. It lies a little north-east of the center of the county and is bounded on the north by the towns of Jay and Lewis; on the east by Westport; on the south by Moriah and North Hudson, and on the west by Keene. Much of the surface is mountainous and rugged, not over one-fourth of it being susceptible of profitable cultivation. The Boquet mountains occupy the north and northwest part and the Schroon range extends into the southeast part. The "Giant of the Valley," the highest peak of the Boquet range, reaches an altitude of about 4,500 feet; a portion of this peak is in the town of Keene; Raven Mountain, an offshoot of the Boquet range, situated in the northeastern part, is 2,100 feet above tide. Other prominent peaks in the town are Cobble Mountain and Bald Peak. The mountain scenery of the northern and western parts of the town and the less elevated uplands of the eastern part give the surface a picturesque variety, while in many portions it becomes grand in the extreme.

The Boquet river flows in a northeasterly direction across near the center of the town, and its branch (known as the Little Boquet) flows eastward near the northern line. The Black river forms the north half of the boundary line between this town and Westport. Numerous other smaller streams drain the town and furnish unlimited water power in various localities. A large part of the arable land of the town lies in the valley of the Boquet. Black and Long ponds are situated in the extreme southeastern part. The soil is a sandy or gravelly loam, generally light except in the valleys, where it is fertile. Extensive deposits of iron ore are found in the town.

Lying back about five miles from the lake this town escaped to a large extent the ravages of the Indians in their wars and the no less destructive campaigns of the French and English contest and the Revolutionary struggle; but it is quite certain that the natural beauty of the Boquet valley and its attrac-

---

<sup>1</sup> Elizabeth Gilliland became the wife of Daniel Ross, first judge, and mother of William D. Ross, merchant, of Essex, who built the first nail works in the county, at "Boquet," in Essex; and of Hon. Henry H. Ross, Member of Congress 1825-7 and a prominent officer in the militia at Plattsburg in 1814; he was afterward major-general of militia. Mr. Gilliland had another daughter named Charlotte, from whom Charlotte in Vermont was named. She became the wife of Stephen Cuyler, the first county clerk, and mother of Colonel Edward S. Cuyler, county clerk 1834 to 1840.

tions as a hunting-ground made it a favorite resort at intervals for the Indians, while it was undoubtedly traveled by them more or less in their journeys from the lake to the northward and northwestward. There is a tradition that the ranger, Rogers, made an incursion against an Indian village at North Elba, but found the inhabitants all absent on a hunt. Returning, he passed through the valley now occupied by Elizabethtown village, where he was overtaken by the pursuing Indians and a battle ensued in which many of the Indians were slain. The chief corroboration of this tradition is that large numbers of Indian arrows and utensils have been found in that vicinity and many trees were found pierced with bullets by those who cleared the locality.

*Early Settlements.* — Elizabethtown was settled to some extent during the last decade of the seventeenth century. Among those who first penetrated its wilderness depths to make permanent homes for themselves and their posterity were William and Elijah Kellogg, two brothers, who located on the river two or three miles southeast of the site of Elizabethtown village. William Kellogg was subsequently thrown out of a wagon and killed. His obituary published at the time of his death stated that he was a participator in the Wyoming massacre and had the credit of killing the noted Indian, Captain Turkey. William Kellogg's son Rowland died about 1845, leaving three sons; one of them was Orlando, father of the present proprietor of the Windsor House in Elizabethtown village. He was a Member of Congress during Lincoln's administration; was a warm friend of the martyred president, and is said to have resembled him in person. Rowland C. Kellogg, the present district attorney of the county, is another son of Rowland, and married the daughter of R. W. Livingston. (See attorneys of the town.)

Many of the first settlements were made in the vicinity of New Russia, but gradually tended more and more towards the site of Elizabethtown village and on Simonds Hill. Sampson Smith located, probably as early as 1792 or 1793, a mile southwest of New Russia's site, and Jonah Hanchett settled on Simonds Hill at a very early day. He had a son who was cut in twain on a buzz-saw about 1860.

Simonds Hill derived its name from Gardner and Erastus Simonds, who located there about 1792. William and Elijah Simonds, now living, are sons of Erastus. Ezra Nichols was a very early settler on this hill. Nathan Lewis located in the northeast part of the town near what has since been known as Brainard's Forge. Dr. Asa Post came in before the beginning of the century and settled; he came from Vergennes and formerly from Saybrook, Conn. He located a little north from the site of New Prussia, and died about 1860, at the age of ninety-three years. His grandson, Almon Post, lives on a farm adjacent to the old homestead. Mr. Rusco (now spelled Roscoe) was one of the first, if not the very first settler, on the northern part of the site of Elizabethtown village, where John Barton now lives. There was then only a very small clearing here, about where the residence of Judge Hand is situated.



Anson Finney came into the town in 1797 with his brother Heman; he located on what is now known as the Sanders farm. There were then no roads nor bridges over which the pioneers could pass with comfort or convenience, and it is related that Heman Finney had to carry his wife across the streams on his back. This region was then almost an unbroken wilderness, without buildings or clearings.

Giles and Ira Phelps settled on a farm adjoining, or near, that of Dr. Post, before mentioned. Samuel Dunning, now living at New Russia, is a grandson of Giles Phelps. David Osgood located on the Westport road about a mile east of Elizabethtown, on a farm of such forbidding character that it seemed beyond human endeavor to secure a living from it. After a few years here he removed to a lot nearer the village. His son's widow now occupies both lots.

Jonathan Steele lived on a farm between the two Osgood lots, which is now owned by Mr. Jordan. He was also owner of the Steele ore bed and at an early day built a forge on the Boquet, in the east part of the town. The site is now overflowed by the stream. Zachariah Straight made an early clearing on the road to Brainard's Forge and built a house there, which is still standing. Jacob Southwell built an early forge on Black river. Ralph Phelps located back of Buck Hill and brought his farm into a good state of cultivation; it is now owned by Mrs. Parker.

Amos Rice built a grist-mill about a mile west of Elizabethtown and passed his life there. Truman Rice (locally known as "Governor" Rice) resided on the hill just west of the village. He removed to Ohio about 1831, and one of his daughters married Governor Reuben Wood. He visited Elizabethtown with his wife and expressed himself so much pleased with the prospect from the eminence north of and overlooking the village, that it has since been universally known as Wood Hill. It is 1,151 feet above tide (Colvin).

John Knox, who settled at an early day at the foot of Hurricane Mountain, left two sons who still reside on the homestead. Sylvanus, John, and Boughton Lobdell located on Black river. John had several sons, one of whom, Erastus, owns the farm called at one time the Newcomb farm, just east of the Raven Pass on the Westport road; Jacob and Jerome, who now own and occupy the old Durand place, and Levi and James, who are now in the Western States.

Phillip Miller located on the Keene road, up the valley of the Little Boquet. He had a large family, and two of his descendants now live in the town, the youngest son, Nathan M., and a grandson. Manoh Miller settled next to Phillip. He became well known as "Judge" Miller.

Joseph Durand was an early settler two miles up the valley. He was of French descent and is said to have been directly connected with the nobility. He is remembered as a man who was much liked and respected by all who knew him. He had three sons, all of whom are dead. One of them, Milo, left a numerous family, of whom two sons, Alonzo M. and Alembert J., and two daughters, are still residents of the town.

Nathan Perry, who was born in what is now the town of Lewis, in 1803, removed into this town in 1814; he lived here until 1833, after which he was West forty-five years. His father was deputy sheriff in 1815 and 1820. He is still living and has been of valuable assistance in furnishing material for this work.

Joseph Blake lived on the Boquet about a mile east of the village of Elizabethtown, where he died about 1860, having been for many years a deacon in and a substantial prop of the Congregational Church of the town.

Ashbel Bronson settled about a quarter of a mile beyond Mr. Blake's farm. John Blake lived next west of his brother Joseph and died before 1830. Elijah Calkin located three miles west of the village site, and was the father of Isaac, Calvin, Colonel John, Benjamin, Elon, Hiram, Elijah, Ransom, and a daughter who became the wife of Pollus A. Newell. Ithia Judd came into the town from Oneida county at an early day and located on Simonds Hill. He had no children of his own, but adopted a son, David, who became a prominent citizen.

Jonas Gibbs was an early settler in the village and built and lived many years in a house which burned some thirty-five years ago, where E. M. Marvin now lives on the "Plain."

Azel Abel came into the town from Shoreham, Vt., and "kept tavern" in a log house on the old site of the Valley House on the bank of the Little Boquet. He afterward moved up the valley about two miles. He was the father of Oliver Abel, who died at the age of ninety-one years, in 1880, and was father of Leander and Oliver Abel, and two daughters, now residents of the town.

Ashbel Bronson, with his sons Selah, Roman, Ashbel, and Samuel, was an old settler on the old "Bronson farm," on the Simonds Hill road.

Theodore Ross was also among the earlier settlers in the village, and was a lawyer and represented the county in the Assembly in the years 1804, 1805 and 1806.

These names comprise a large majority of the prominent settlers in this town, beginning about 1790 and continuing down to 1817, by far the greater portion of them having come into the town before the beginning of the century. They found the region a dense wilderness, and it was their labors, privations, and hardships which laid the foundations of whatever prosperity has since been enjoyed. From the rude, often *very* rude, log dwellings in which they lived while combating in the struggle of life in a territory where only the most persevering and energetic could hope for any satisfactory measure of success, they advanced in course of time to the building and occupation of comfortable frame houses; their lands were cleared of logs and stumps and an air of thrift and comfort settled upon the town. The following list of names constitutes the jury list of 1817, and comprises nearly all of those we have mentioned, and may be presumed to include nearly all of the prominent freeholders



of the town in that year: Stephen Ashley, Azel Abel, Joseph Blake, Chester Bristol, Nathan Betts, David Brainard, Ashbel Bronson, jr, John Blake, Lucius Bishop, Elijah Calkin, Case Cummings, Calvin Calkin, Isaac Calkin, John Calkin, Joseph Durand, John Daniels, Simeon Durand (son of Joseph), Nathan Estabrook, Anson Finney, Frederick Haasz, Eben Hanchett, Ithia Judd, Elijah Kellogg, William Kellogg, 2d, John Knox, Rowland Kellogg, Orson Kellogg, Sylvanus Lobdell, Jacob Lobdell, Phillip Miller, Moses Noble, Ezra Nichols, Pollus A. Newell, David Osgood, Ira Phelps, Ralph Phelps, Aaron B. Palmer, Azor Rusco, Amos Rice, Truman Rice, Jonathan Steele, Zachariah Straight, John Smith, 2d, Jacob Southwell, Gardner Simonds, Erastus Simonds, Alexander Trimble.

In 1817 David Brainard had built a forge on Black creek, on the Elizabethtown side, and a second one had been erected near by by Joshua Daniels; the latter was a cousin of John, whose name appears in the foregoing list.

*The County Seat.* — Elizabethtown has been the county seat since the spring of 1807, when an act was passed appointing Peter Saille, of Plattsburg, David Thomas and John Savage, of Washington county, as commissioners to designate the proper place for the Essex county court-house, "the matter to be attended to before the first day of August, 1807." Those gentlemen were allowed three dollars a day for their not too agreeable duty. It seems that the beautiful valley in the northern part of this town, where an incipient village was already located, and to which nature directly pointed by having formed "passes" through the circumjacent hills, as well as the nearest practicable site to the center of the county, overcame all other arguments (if there were any), and the county seat was removed from the village of Essex, where the courts had been previously held in the block-house built there as a protection against possible Indian incursions. The first court-house was built on a very modest scale, but was burned soon after its erection and at once rebuilt under the superintendence of Manoah Miller, Theodorus Ross and Delevan Delance. These buildings stood on or near the site of the present court-house and clerk's office. In 1823 the court-house was again burned and rebuilt in brick, the first installment being a one-story structure. In 1843 the second story was added, in which the court-room was placed. The last addition, by which the wing was added, was made in 1885. The clerk's office was built in 1833. (See preceding history of county buildings.)

*The State Arsenal.* — The land on which stood the old State arsenal was acquired by the State in 1812. This was one of the latest acts in this county growing out of the war spirit engendered by the last struggle with Great Britain. The land was purchased of Simeon Frisbie and the building, now occupied by Vinal Denton, was erected soon afterward. An armament was kept there for a number of years, and during the agitation of the community over what was called the "patriot war" in Canada a portion of the arms were

carried off by those intending to give aid and comfort to the insurgents. Some of these were found after the collapse of that movement in a school-house in Chesterfield. The arsenal from this time fell into disuse and about the year 1850 was purchased from the State by Ira Marks, and has since been used as a hotel.

*Early Schools.* — The inhabitants of this town were dilatory in making arrangements, crude and imperfect though they were, for the education of their children. The early district schools scattered throughout the States wherever a few families had located were one of the prime causes of the general intelligence that has since pervaded all Northern American communities, and hence of the industry and prosperity of the people. A Dr. Kincade is recorded as the first school-teacher in the town; but where his school was located, or in what year he taught it, we have not learned. We may be sure, however, that it was as early as the beginning of the century. The town records show that in 1813 the town was divided into twelve school districts, which would give the scattered population tolerable educational facilities, even if the little ones did have to tramp sometimes two miles over dreadful roads, only to sit through the day on the soft side of a slab, which gradually seemed to grow harder as night approached. William Simonds relates that about the time of the division alluded to, there was a log school-house on Simonds Hill, in which he learned the rudiments of the common branches. His first teacher there was Huldah Little, and he recollects that she used to punish him by making him climb up the logs outside the building and hold on to the roof by his hands; here his punishment consisted in getting a large share of the smoke from the old Dutch chimney into his eyes and nostrils.

There was then a numerously attended school in the village on the site of the brick school-house. A boarding-school was established here as early as 1823, which was kept by Miss Asenath Hatch, who became the wife of Norman Nicholson.

*Early Roads, Town Records, etc.* — One of the first needs of every pioneer community is roads over which the settlers may communicate with each other and the outside world. Roads to the distant village, whence supplies could be obtained and whither the products of the farm could be carried and sold; roads for social and other visits between neighbors; roads to accommodate the early lumber interest and the pioneer forges — these were what were needed in early days, more, perhaps, than any other improvement. Hence it is that the records of every town for the first quarter of the century, and the State legislation during the same period, were over-run with details and descriptions of new roads and needed improvements on old ones. The office of highway commissioner was no sinecure in those days. The road-making of this town can be authentically traced back to the first year of the century, when a highway was ordered laid out "from the bridge by Azel Abel's on the west side;



thence northerly on the south side of the branch about 20 rods; from thence across the branch in a northerly direction on the north side of the branch threw the land of Eliza Rich, nearly to the line between s'd Rich and Thomas Squires'; from thence to the dugway by Thomas Squires' house; from thence westerly about 100 rods; from thence north through the notch in the hill about 30 rods; from thence westerly till it strikes the road that is now traveled from the north to Stephen Rusco's mill."

In the same year (1800) another highway was laid out, which is thus described: "From the road now traveled to Willsborough to Stephen Rusco's saw-mill, beginning at a corner on the Willsborough road on land of Major Jonathan Breckinridge about 80 rods north of s'd Breckinridge's saw-mill; from thence on a westerly direction as the road is now traveled through Roger H. Woodruff's improvements, and on through s'd Woodruff's land; thence on nearly as the road is now traveled to Henry Knolton's house; thence on in a westerly direction threw s'd Knolton's land as the road is now traveled to Simon Rusco's house; from thence nearly as the road is now traveled to Stephen Rusco's saw-mill." Henry Knolton and Azel Abel were named as the commissioners to lay out this road.

In this year the "lake road," as it was termed, was laid out from the south to the north line of the town. It will be borne in mind that Westport had not then been taken from Elizabethtown.

In 1801 another road was opened from "Thomas Squires' to John Gibbs', threw Ananias Rogers', Henry Knowlton's and Timothy Spaulding's clearing;" and another "from the road south of the branch by Azel Abel's on towards Willsborough, beginning at the road south of the bridge by s'd Abel's; from thence running a northwardly direction threw s'd Abel's land; thence threw Isaac Bristol's land; thence threw Norman Newell's land; thence threw Maj. Jonathan Brakenridge's land to s'd Brakenridge's saw-mill; thence on northwardly on s'd B's land about 80 rods to the corner, the survey being about 2 miles and one forth, as the road is now traveled."

The records of this town, which have been preserved since its organization, are made up during these early years of scores of pages describing the early highways, the rapid opening of which are, perhaps, indicative of both the energy and progressiveness of the inhabitants, and the advancement of settlement in the town. The next highway laid down was "from the bridge west of Northwest Bay (Westport) to Pleasant Valley." Another from Rock Harbor to Willsborough; another from Northwest Bay to Elizabethtown, opposite the mill in Pleasant Valley; and finally, to close the record, another "from Azel Abel's to the northwest inhabitants." The older residents of these sections will be able to locate these highways, and to others we commend the study of the old town records.

The reader has noticed in these brief transcriptions some examples of

quaint language and spelling. Rather than look upon this as an evidence of prevailing willful ignorance, it should be considered as the unavoidable consequence of the limited educational advantages enjoyed by our forefathers; while it lends an amusing character to the records, it also gives them a quaint and peculiar interest, outside of their subject matter. Many a man has found it an impossible task to master the bewildering orthography of our mother tongue, even amid the most favorable circumstances. A peculiar example of quaint recording is the following *verbatim* quotation from the records relative to the building of that very necessary pioneer institution, a pound:—

“Pound—To be bilt at the Dwelling House of Jonas Gibbs thirty feet Square with a good dore Hinges and Lock, to be bilt by the first of June next and if the Person that shall agree to build it Doth Neglect shall forfeit the Sum to the amount he agrees to Build it for.

“Jonas Gibbs to build s'd Pound thirty feet square for ten Dollars and fifty cents. Jonas Gibbs pound keeper.”

“Law of all fences, four feet six inches high.”

In the spring of 1808 the town of Keene was taken from Elizabethtown, as was also a part of Moriah; and in 1815 Westport was formed from Elizabethtown, constituting the last division of this town. Portions of the towns of Jay and Lewis, and ten years later another portion of Lewis, were added to the town, since which the town boundaries have remained unaltered.

In the year 1801 Captain Elijah Bishop, Azel Rusco, John Rusco and Stephen Ashley were appointed commissioners to ascertain the town line between Elizabethtown, Willsborough and Jay, “or as far as they shall thinck proper.” In the same year a special meeting was called at which it was

“*Resolved*, By a majoraty on County Ballots that Ebenezer Newell be app. one of the Justices of the county court in place of Asa Adgate, he decline.”

It was not till 1810 that the community was informed by the town authorities that “hogs sheep and horses shall not be free commoners.” Bounties were paid for the killing of wolves, whose depredations caused the farmers much trouble; and as late as 1834 the boys of the town were placed in the way of adding to their pocket-money through the offer by the town of “six cents apiece to persons who kills a crow or crows.”

*Early Mills, Stores and Taverns, etc.* — Cutting and marketing lumber in this town was the chief industry of the inhabitants, aside from their agricultural labors, and outranked even them, at certain periods, for many years after the first settlements. Most of the town was covered with a heavy growth of valuable soft woods, interspersed to some extent with hard timber. This had to be cleared from the ground before it could be cultivated; sawed into lumber it found a ready market, particularly after the opening of the Champlain canal, and all through the winter months the roads to the lake were thronged with loaded teams. The lumber business reached its height between 1820 and



1830; but is still carried on to some extent. In earlier days the burning of the refuse wood from the forests, and in many instances of valuable timber, to obtain the ashes which were manufactured into potash, was followed by many of the inhabitants; this product found a ready market in Vermont and other localities, and was much easier transported than logs and lumber. These sources of early revenue were of almost incalculable benefit to the pioneers and later settlers; and if few have become permanently wealthy in the pursuit of the lumber trade, it certainly kept the town in a general state of activity for many years and must have added materially to its wealth as a whole.

The lumber business led, of course, to the early building of numerous saw-mills on the streams wherever there was sufficient fall to turn a wheel. Grist-mills also soon followed, as one of the first necessities of every new community. One of the very first saw-mills in the town was built by Amos Rice on the branch of the Boquet, on the site of the present grist-mill. In 1823 or 1824 Reuben Bristol built a grist-mill about a mile above Rice's mill, on the branch. These pioneer mills were numerous multiplied during the first quarter of the century; but a large proportion of the saw-mills of the town have been abandoned and fallen into decay. William D. Ross had a grist-mill and a distillery, which stood near the site of Mr. Thompson's store.

Upon the lands that were cleared of soft-wood trees a species of poplar has sprung up in many sections, as a second growth. Unexpectedly to the inhabitants until recent years, this peculiar soft, white wood has developed into a source of considerable revenue to those who own land covered with it. This has resulted through the establishment of several large pulp-mills and paper manufactories in Ticonderoga, in which immense quantities of the wood are used in the production of excellent printing paper. The trees are cut down and into proper length, stripped of their bark, and drawn to the railroad at Westport, and shipped thence to the mills. It is estimated that 20,000 cords of poplar have been cut and drawn from Elizabethtown in one year.

Country taverns did a more prosperous business in pioneer times than at the present day; and it was not then deemed necessary that they should be located in a village or hamlet, though many of them were. They were scattered through all towns with more or less frequency, on the prominent roads, where the stages and mail carriers traveled, and over which the prospectors and settlers commonly entered. Moreover, in those days the sale of spirituous liquors was unrestricted, and almost everybody drank whiskey or rum habitually. The practice was not tainted with disgrace, nor looked upon as a serious weakness as it is now; all classes indulged, and no public occasion, from a "logging bee" in a settler's clearing to the raising of a church frame or the marriage of a social favorite, was considered *au fait* without the presence of the ubiquitous jug. This fact undoubtedly rendered the keeping of country taverns still more profitable. The early landlords, or many of them, combined other occupa-

tions with that of furnishing "food and lodgings for man and beast." There were many of these hostelries in this town before the end of the first decade of the century; but the traces of most of them have disappeared. The old hotel building nearly opposite the Valley House was built previous to 1810 by Simeon Frisbie, who kept it until 1816, when Asahel Root took it. It was subsequently kept by Horace Hapgood.

A small tavern that stood on the site of the Mansion House in 1811 was owned by Henry H. Ross, and was kept by Miss Lucy Willard; when she subsequently entered the more congenial sphere of married life her sister, Miss Betsey Willard, kept the house.

The first structure going towards making the present American Hotel was built in 1810, and was long occupied by Daniel Ross, who lived in one end and kept store in the other.

The more modern hotels of the town will be described a little further on.

A general store was kept in Elizabethtown as early as 1808, where the American House now stands, by Jonathan Steele; and there were other small business places about that time. Mr. Steele was succeeded by Daniel Ross in 1813, and he by Edmund F. Williams. The building, with its additions, subsequently became a hotel. In 1818 Ira Marks opened a store a little west of the court-house grounds, near the end of the bridge. It was carried away by a flood in 1830. He afterwards kept a store where Mr. Jacobs is now located, and built that building. Charles and Henry Noble kept a general store about 1820, on Water street near the bridge. They also had a shoe manufactory, a harness shop and a tannery, employing at times twenty men. The old tannery is still operated by Charles H. Noble, a son of Henry. Samuel Shepherd was an early merchant and had a store near the site of Charles N. Williams's house. He afterwards kept the American House in Troy.

*Pioneer Religious Work.* — Christian believers have always found it as easy to worship their Creator in the wilderness as in the cathedral, and religious meetings have always followed close upon the advent of settlers in new regions. In Elizabethtown the inhabitants had not only held religious meetings, but organized a Baptist Society as early as 1796. Methodist services were held in the town at an early day, first in dwellings, then in the school-house, and subsequently in the court-house. The society was organized in 1832; and the Congregationalist Society in 1821. Further details of church history will be found in subsequent pages.

*Railroads, Plank Roads, etc.* — In the preceding chapter on the internal improvements of the county we have described the project of a railroad from Glens Falls northward through Essex county. Had this line been constructed it would have passed through Elizabethtown village, and thus given the county seat communication southward and northward with the outside world; but a greater source of anxiety as regards transportation has always been felt rela-



tive to getting to and from the lake. The persistent agitation over the removal of the county seat, chiefly on account of its interior situation, has caused much of this anxiety. Lawyers and clients have united in an oft-renewed struggle for this removal to some point where they could reach the courts by rail, or at least by steamboat. This was one of the influences that led, in 1845 (about the middle of the period when all communities were acutely afflicted with what may be termed the plank-road fever), to the construction of a plank road from Elizabethtown to Westport. For this purpose the town raised \$8,000 and Westport about \$2,000. Judge Hand and David Judd each gave \$1,000, and Whallon & Judd a like sum. A stock company was formed and the road immediately built. The interest on the investment was paid once or twice from the tolls, but no dividend was ever realized. About 1864, under the law giving such privilege, the road was transformed into a turnpike, since which time its prospects have slightly improved in a financial sense, it having recently paid something on the investment.

In the year 1883 the inhabitants of the town, as well as those of Westport, ardently believed the time had arrived when they would secure railroad transportation to the lake to connect with the main line, a consummation which would forever quiet the agitation over the removal of the county seat. Mr. — Macomber, who was largely interested in the iron business, took an active part in forwarding the project and sought the association of gentlemen who had been connected with the building of the West Shore road. F. A. Smith, Byron Pond, Orlando Kellogg, H. A. Putnam, A. K. Dudley, Charles N. Williams, and other leading men of the town extended to the enterprise their countenance and aid. Meetings were held and a sufficient sum of money raised for a survey, which was made. The line contemplated ran from D. L. Allen's dock in Westport to the western terminus of the turnpike in Elizabethtown, following the course of the turnpike. The distance is about nine miles and the survey proved the route a feasible one, with a grade not exceeding sixty feet to the mile. Estimates of the cost were prepared, and a proposition made to raise \$25,000 in this town, turn the present turnpike interest towards the project, making the latter free, and raise an equal amount from other sources. With this it was the purpose to so far advance the work that sufficient funds to complete it could be borrowed. One hundred thousand dollars was the estimated cost of the entire work. But the community was doomed to disappointment; the West Shore troubles came on, preventing aid from that direction, and the project had to be reluctantly abandoned. But it is within the probabilities that this improvement will be effected within a few years.

*The Iron Interest.*—What has been known as the Elizabethtown and Westport district is a continuation of the same range in which has been developed the immense iron interest of the town of Moriah. Its geological for-

mation and general natural characteristics are the same. Several mines have been opened and worked to a greater or less extent within the limits of Elizabethtown, but the industry has never reached that importance which has attached to it in a few other localities, and it is now largely abandoned. We have already briefly mentioned several of the earliest forges in the town.

One of the first beds discovered here was called the Castaline bed, which was opened and worked considerably as early as 1800. The ore was largely transported to Hinesburg, Vt., where it was worked up. The bed is situated on land now owned by Almon Post, and the Ross estate has an interest in the ore.

Ross bed is situated on lot number 72, about a mile northeast of the bed just described, on what is called the Roaring Brook tract. It was also discovered at the beginning of the century and is almost identical in quality with the former mentioned bed. The depth of the vein in its passage under the mountain prevented its extensive working, though the ore that was formerly taken out produced a good quality of iron. The bed is on land now belonging to Dennis Fitzgerald and the ore belongs to the same estate as that of the Castaline bed.

The Nigger Hill, or, as more commonly known, the Haasz bed, was discovered between 1825 and 1830 by Frederick Haasz. It is situated about five miles south of the village of Elizabethtown. The ore which was taken from the bed for a number of years was used in the forge of H. R. Noble, to which we have alluded, which was known as the Kingdom forge. Mixed with the ore from the old Sanford bed it was esteemed a good ore and worked successfully in the forge; portions of it worked admirably alone. The analysis was very similar to that given of the ore from the Castaline bed. The property formed a part of what was sold in 1864 to the "Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company," in which Jay Cook was a prominent member.

The Wakefield bed, discovered about 1845 and opened by Colonel E. F. Williams, is now owned by Stephen Pitkin and the ore belongs to the Ross estate.

Little Pond bed was discovered about 1840; it is situated about two miles from the village of Elizabethtown, on lot number 199, Iron Ore Tract. Colonel Williams also opened this remarkable deposit, which was long looked upon as almost "a mountain of ore." The most brilliant anticipations were entertained of its richness and what would be developed from its extensive workings; but the subsequent developments did not justify such anticipations. The title of the property is now in a gentleman living in Ogdensburg, W. J. Averill.

The Judd bed was discovered in 1845 and during the succeeding ten years was opened and worked to some extent by David Judd. It is now owned by a Boston company.



What is known as the Finney bed was discovered in 1854 on lot 139 of the iron ore tract; it was opened by O. Abel, jr., W. W. Root, J. E. McVine and J. H. Sanders. Large quantities of ore have been taken from the bed, which produces iron of a superior quality. It was sold in 1865 to the Vulcan Furnace Company, who still owns it.

About the same year the Gates bed was discovered on an adjoining lot; it is supposed to be a continuation of the same vein as that just described, and was opened by Willis Gates. It is now the property of H. A. Putnam.

The Burt bed was discovered in 1840; it is in the extreme southeast part of the town near the Fisher Hill mine, the ore from the two being very similar in character. The vein dips at an angle of forty-five degrees and the slope is opened for several hundred feet. The ore is hoisted in boxes which slide on "ways" laid along the slope. The Burt ore has been successfully worked in the Kingdom and the Valley forges. It passed with the other property mentioned to the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company, for which, with the Steel bed and other property, was paid more than \$100,000 in 1864.

The Lake Champlain Ore Company, organized in 1884, bought out the interests of the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company. The capital stock is \$350,000.

The Steele bed is located about half a mile southeast of Elizabethtown village, on lot 189 of the iron ore tract. It was discovered in 1810 and worked soon after that by Jonathan Steele, from whom it took its name. Mr. Steele built his forge in 1817. After the destruction of the local forges in 1830 by a great freshet, the bed was not worked for many years. In 1850 Messrs. Whallon & Judd used the ore to a considerable extent, from quantities of it that had been raised and long exposed to the elements; in its original condition it was considered sulphurous. In 1866 Mr. Remington sank a new shaft from which he raised ore that was nearly free from sulphur. This bed was purchased by the Kingdom Iron Ore Company, of which Erastus Corning, of Albany, was a prominent member.

The Odell bed, a name given to two openings in the eastern part of the town, neither of which has been worked to any considerable extent, on account of the sulphur in the ore, constituted a part of the property which was purchased by the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company, as before stated. The same is true of the Mitchell bed on lot 116, iron ore tract, which was opened by Eliab Mitchell; it was discovered about 1830.

The Buck and Noble beds are situated on lots numbers 109 and 110, iron ore tract, and near the boundary line between Elizabethtown and Moriah. Lot 109 is owned by the heirs of Hiram Buck and the other lot by those of Henry Noble. The deposit was discovered in 1865. The ore is valuable, does not require separating, but is pounded and thus directly prepared for the forge.

The Thompson shaft is also near the line between Elizabethtown and Mo-

riah; it is on lot number 48, iron ore tract, and was opened about 1869. About twenty-five tons of ore were raised daily for some time after the shaft was opened.

In 1854 a vein was discovered and partially opened on lot number 127, North River Head tract. The ore was suitable for furnaces.

The present depression of the iron interest, and similar periods in the recent past, have operated to render unprofitable a vigorous prosecution of the mining and manufacturing business, and most of the beds described have been practically abandoned.

Among the forges that were erected early in the century was one at New Russia, built in 1802, on the Boquet; it was rebuilt a number of times and in 1860 almost entirely reconstructed. In 1869 it passed to the possession of E. H. and H. A. Putnam, who operated it with both steam and water power; it had three fires and a hammer of 1,800 pounds. The firm owned the new Russia mine, a short distance from the works; they also used ore from the Fisher Hill bed, six miles distant. The forge property is now owned by Herbert A. Putnam; it has not been operated for a few years past. Ore is now brought here to some extent from the Cheever bed in Moriah.

In 1817 Jonathan Steele built his forge on the Little Boquet. Brainard's forge was erected about the same year, 1817, on Black river. Daniel's forge, a little below, was built about 1820. They have been long abandoned and a saw-mill stands between the sites.

"Deacon" Southwell built a forge on the river in 1825; this was also abandoned years ago.

The Kingdom forge was erected on Black Creek in 1825 by Frederick Haasz, who operated it till his death, after which it was owned by Henry R. Noble, and later by R. Remington & Co. It was enlarged after 1864, by the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company, who acquired the property with their large purchase already described; about 11,000 acres of woodland were also included in their purchase, from which the supply of wood and charcoal was obtained for their operations.

Valley forge was erected in 1846, and was operated for several years by Messrs. Whallon & Judd. It was situated on the Boquet about a quarter of a mile from Elizabethtown village. The property passed through several hands and finally to the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company in 1864. In 1866 the works yielded 1,050 tons of iron, and consumed 120,000 bushels of coal. These last two named forges have fallen into ruins.

A forge was erected about 1825 at Split Rock nine miles south of Elizabethtown village, by Basil Bishop. He was a son of Elijah Bishop, who was one of the early settlers before mentioned. Bainbridge Bishop, a grandson of Elijah, now lives on the homestead. Basil Bishop was a somewhat eccentric character; was possessed of native artistic genius of no mean order. The forge



has been long abandoned. Indeed, none of those described are being operated, and none is capable of being repaired except Mr. Putnam's. It is entirely uncertain what will be the future of the iron interest in the town.

*The Town in the Rebellion.* — This town was one of the foremost in the county in the prompt contribution of men and means to aid in putting down the Southern Rebellion. Its various quotas under the calls of the president for volunteers were filled with patriotic zeal; liberal bounties were paid and the money furnished in accordance with the recommendations of the county supervisors; the families of disabled soldiers were kindly cared for, while the long death-roll shows that those who volunteered did not flinch from their duty on the battle-field.

Company K, of the Thirty-eighth Regiment, was raised in this immediate vicinity, under the first call for troops. Samuel C. Dwyer, a lawyer of Elizabethtown, was made captain and was fatally wounded before Fort Magruder, battle of Williamsburg. A. C. H. Livingston was second lieutenant of the company, which served two years. The first lieutenant was W. H. Smith; both of these officers resigned in August, 1861. Many volunteers went from the town in the Ninety-third, Ninety-sixth, Seventy-seventh and other regiments; and in July and August, 1862, Company F, of the One Hundred and Eighteenth Regiment, was raised in this town, Lewis, Willsborough, Essex, Westport and Moriah; three companies being raised in the county for that organization. Mr. Livingston, still living in the village, received a frightful wound at Drury's Bluff and lay for thirteen months lacking one day, in Hampton Hospital, before he was able to come home. His left arm is powerless. (See military chapter).

On the 12th of December, 1863, at a special town meeting it was voted to pay a bounty to volunteers to fill the quota of the town under the last call of the president for troops. On motion of Oliver Abel it was resolved to raise \$350 for each volunteer credited to the town on its quota. A committee of three, consisting of R. L. Hand, Oliver Abel, jr., and Levi D. Brown, was appointed to raise the sum required for the purpose. The necessary amount was raised and the quota filled.

On March 1st, 1864, at the annual town meeting, a resolution was adopted (offered by Byron Pond) that the credit of the town be pledged to pay \$300 to volunteers and drafted men "who have been or may be credited on the president's last call for 500,000 men, and who shall not have received a town bounty."

It was also resolved to allow \$6 per month until further notice to the widow and child of Cornelius Brillett, of the 93d Volunteers, and the soldiers' relief board, from whom the above appropriation emanated, also voted to pay \$5 a month toward the proper maintenance of the three children of Martin Kelly.

On the 27th of July, 1864, another special town meeting was held, at which it was resolved that \$300 be raised by tax to pay a town bounty to all credits on the call for 500,000 men made July 18th, 1864. Only one person voted against this resolution. The following named five gentlemen were appointed recruiting officers: L. D. Brown, Oliver Abel, jr., H. A. Putnam, John H. Glidden and H. B. Lincoln.

On the 30th of August, of the same year, another special town meeting was called to consider the advisability of raising \$350 additional bounty for each volunteer, in addition to that offered to town credits previous to any draft. It was also voted that for \$500 of this bounty (\$650 in gross to each volunteer) bonds should be issued in accordance with the resolution of the board of supervisors of August 5th, 1864. For the remaining \$150 of said bounty, the town auditors were authorized to issue bonds payable March 1st, 1865. Charles H. Noble, Byron Pond and Matthew Hale were designated to sell the bonds and pay the bounties.

A special town meeting was held on the 6th of February, 1865, for further consideration of the bounty question. It was there resolved to raise a bounty fund of \$10,000, or so much thereof as should be necessary, by tax, with which to pay bounties to all credits on the then last call of the president. It was also voted that the auditors call on the supervisors for county bonds of not less than \$100 each, payable one quarter on the first day of March of each year until paid; the bonds to be converted into cash and applied to the purpose specified.

On the 7th of March, 1865, the supervisor of the town reported to the auditors that he had received as bounty-money the sum of \$140,065.88; that he had paid out the sum of \$137,045.00. All of this prompt and efficient action shows the spirit that animated the community. The general history of the part taken by volunteers from the county in the Rebellion has already been given in the chapter devoted to that subject.

*The Legal Profession.*—This town has attained a reputation of having contributed more eminent and worthy men to the legal profession than almost any other in the State of similar population, and the reputation of the town in all respects relative to the profession is eminently creditable. Many prominent attorneys, now located in various parts of the country, obtained their first knowledge of law in the offices of A. C. Hand, Robert S. Hale or Orlando Kellogg, each of whom attained to eminence; indeed, it may be truthfully said that the high character of the profession throughout the county, and even beyond its limits, was acquired largely through the influence of those three men. Being the county seat, Elizabethtown village naturally attracted the majority of the attorneys of the county, and among them were fortunately men destined to the highest walks of the legal profession.

Among the early lawyers of the town was Ezra C. Gross, who subse-



quently became a Member of Congress. Gardner Stowe, Norman Nicholson and John S. Chipman practiced here years ago, the latter being here between 1830 and 1838. Ashley Pond, father of Judge Byron Pond, was an early attorney here. Theodore Ross from about 1800 to 1830; he owned a large farm on the "Plains," and built and lived in the Carver House, now forming a part of the Windsor Hotel.

Judge Augustus C. Hand was born in Shoreham, Vt., September 4th, 1803, and died at his home in Elizabethtown, August 8th, 1878. He was for many years the leading lawyer of the county. The following sketch appeared in the *Albany Argus* at the time of his death:—

"Judge Hand studied his profession at the famous law-school of Judge Gould, in Litchfield, Conn., and subsequently in the office of Hon. Cornelius L. Allen, at Salem, in this State. Soon after he commenced practice he was appointed by the governor to the office of surrogate of the county of Essex, and then took up his residence at Elizabethtown, where he has ever since resided. He soon acquired a large practice in Northern New York, and was for many years the leading lawyer of that section. In 1838 he was elected representative to Congress in a district which was ordinarily adverse to him in politics. He served with ability in the Congress of 1839 and 1840, but was defeated in 1840, when a candidate for re-election, sharing in the overwhelming reverses of the Democratic party in the year of the Harrison campaign. In 1844 he was elected to the State Senate from the old Fourth senatorial district. His extended reputation as a lawyer gave him at once a prominent place in that body, and he was chairman of the judiciary committee during the whole of his term.

"At the first election of justices of the Supreme Court, under the Constitution of 1846, he was elected to that office in the Fourth judicial district. He served as judge in the Supreme Court and Court of Appeals from 1847 to 1855. In the latter year, although he received almost the unanimous vote of the counties near his residence, he was defeated for re-election by the 'Know Nothing' uprising, which carried the State that year against both of the old parties."

In later years Judge Hand devoted his attention to his large legal practice. More complete details of his life and character will be found in the chapter devoted to the Bench and Bar of the county.

Matthew Hale was born in Chelsea, Vt., and studied his profession with Kellogg & Hale, of Elizabethtown. His first practice was in Poughkeepsie, whence he went to New York city. Returning to Elizabethtown, in 1863, he formed a partnership with R. L. Hand, which continued until 1868, when he removed to Albany. Here he formed a partnership with Samuel Hand, son of Judge A. C. Hand, the firm being Hand, Hale & Swartz. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1867, and afterwards sent to the State Senate in 1868-69. He married a daughter of Judge Hand.

Richard L. Hand, son of Judge Augustus C. Hand, was born in Elizabethtown in 1839, graduated from Union College, and read law in his father's office. He was admitted at Plattsburg, and was taken immediately into business association with his father in 1861. In 1863 Matthew Hale entered the firm, as stated, making the firm name Hand & Hale. After his retirement, and in 1873, Milo C. Perry became a member of the firm under the style of Hand & Perry. The old law-office, which stood a little southeast of the present one and was occupied by Judge Hand in 1831, was subsequently replaced by the present in about the year 1865.

R. W. Livingston, the venerable journalist of Elizabethtown, studied law in Judge Hand's office and was admitted to the bar in 1837. He subsequently entered into partnership with the judge and continued from 1837 until January, 1842, when he permanently retired from it. (See history of the press.)

About this period Jesse Gay, who was a noted abolitionist, practiced law in the town for a time with R. W. Livingston, as Livingston & Gay. William Higby was here in the profession until about 1850. He subsequently was in the United States Congress, and is said to be still living.

Orlando Kellogg, of Elizabethtown, was admitted to the bar in 1839. During the ten years succeeding 1846 he was a partner with Robert S. Hale. Mr. Kellogg was sent to Congress for one term and again elected in 1862 and 1864, but died before the meeting of that Congress. He was very influential in the raising and organization of the 118th Regiment, mustered in August, 1862, in which his son, R. C. Kellogg, was successively second and first lieutenant, and was looked upon by officers and men as "the father of the regiment," making its interests the object of his special care.

Judge Francis A. Smith was born in Salisbury, Mass., in 1837. He studied law at Carmel, Putnam county, N. Y., and was admitted to the bar in 1860, in Poughkeepsie. He began practice in Johnstown, and in the fall of 1861 entered the army, serving until the fall of 1863. The following spring he opened a law-office in Fonda, but remained there only until February, 1865, when he came to Elizabethtown. He was elected county judge and surrogate in 1878, and was re-elected in 1884, without opposition.

Judge Byron Pond was born in Elizabethtown in 1823, and studied his profession with Judge Hand (1838). He was admitted to the bar in January, 1845, at Albany, and formed a partnership with A. C. Hand in February of the same year. He remained there until 1847, when he was made county judge and surrogate. He afterwards practiced with A. C. and Samuel Hand. In May, 1856, Judge Pond, Judge Hand and Samuel Hand were in partnership, continuing until 1859, when Samuel Hand retired, the other partners remaining together until May, 1861. Judge Pond was district-attorney four years, and in 1868 was elected county judge and surrogate. In May, 1882,



W. S. Brown became his partner. The office now occupied by Judge Pond was built by him in the fall of 1876.

Alembert Pond, brother of Judge Pond, who had practiced law in Vermont, was admitted to practice in this State in 1849. He was with his brother several years and removed to Saratoga in 1853, where he is now a member of the law firm of Pond, French & Bracket. The father of these two brothers was also an attorney, and had been surrogate (1819-20) and county clerk (1821-27).

Oliver Abel was born in Elizabethtown, November 11th, 1830. His legal studies were prosecuted with John E. McVine, formerly of Port Henry, then county judge, and a resident of Elizabethtown, where he died about 1856. Mr. Abel was admitted to the bar in 1853. In 1872 he was elected county treasurer, in which capacity he served three terms.

Arod K. Dudley was born in Keene in 1839. He studied law with the late Orlando Kellogg and was his partner from 1863, when he began practice, having been admitted in April of that year. He was district-attorney for nine years from 1867. In 1864 he was admitted to practice in the United States District Courts and in 1874 in the United States Circuit Court. He built his present office on Water street late in 1873.

Rowland C. Kellogg is a native of Elizabethtown and studied law with Judge Hand. He was graduated from the Albany Law School and was admitted in 1867. He immediately began practice, at first associating himself with D. W. Stafford, now of Troy. In 1870 the law firm of Hale, Smith & Kellogg, already mentioned, was formed and in the same year Mr. Kellogg was elected district-attorney, which office he still holds. The office occupied by him on Court street he has used since 1876.

Milo C. Perry read law with Arod K. Dudley and Hand & Hale. He was admitted to the bar in 1871 and began his practice as a partner of Mr. Dudley. In 1874 these relations were severed and he associated himself with A. C. and R. L. Hand, the firm becoming Hand & Perry. This arrangement continued until the death of Judge Hand (1878). Mr. Perry, however, continued his business in the same office until the spring of 1884, when he removed into his present office on Water street. Between 1868 and 1871 he acted as under-sheriff and jailor under his father, Abijah Perry.

Robert S. Hale was admitted to the bar in about the year 1846 and practiced as a partner of Orlando Kellogg from that time to about the year 1856. He was the father of Harry Hale, at present practicing in Elizabethtown, and brother of Hon. Matthew Hale, of Albany. He was made county judge; was elected to Congress, and in 1867 was a member of the commission to settle disputed claims for cotton seized during the Rebellion.

Walter S. Brown studied law in the office of Mr. Dudley from October, 1874, and was admitted to the bar in November, 1877, at Albany, and as at-

torney and counselor at Saratoga, September 5th, 1879. He remained with Mr. Dudley until about 1881, when he joined in a partnership with his father-in-law, Judge Pond, where he still remains.

Harry Hale, son of Robert S. Hale studied preparatory to entering college, and was admitted to Yale, but owing to failing health was forced to relinquish his purpose and read law in the office of Hale, Smith & Kellogg. He was admitted to the bar at the Albany General Term in 1875, and began practice in the following year. He has since practiced continually and occupied his office near the Valley House.

William R. Kellogg studied law in the office of Hale, Smith & Kellogg, and was admitted to the bar in 1877. He began practice at once and from 1879 to 1881 he was in the office of Judge Smith. He is a brother of Rowland C. Kellogg and since 1882 has been associated with him.

These brief notes of the legal profession of Elizabethtown are not intended to be in any sense biographical, but enough is said in them, probably, to show the high character of the bench and bar in this vicinity. The reader will find more ample details of the profession of the county in Mr. Boynton's chapter in preceding pages.

*Physicians.* — The medical profession is not represented in Elizabethtown to anything like the numbers of the legal array just described. It is a subject of general remark that the locality is too healthful to properly support many doctors; but every community needs an example of that most estimable class, a good, kind, patient and unselfish physician. There may have been a physician in this town earlier than 1808, but if so there is no record of the fact that has reached us. In that year Dr. Alexander Morse came here. He seems to have been satisfied with his success, as he remained many years, during which period he was the sole doctor in the town, with the exception of Dr. Asa Post, mentioned as a pioneer, who soon turned his attention largely to farming. In pioneer times this was a profession that involved the most herculean tasks, the most heroic exposure in all seasons in all kinds of weather, and a wonderful amount of unselfish labor which was often but poorly paid. Indeed, physicians have not entirely escaped the last unpleasant feature of their work to this day. Dr. Morse was a delegate to the State Medical Society in 1809, and held several local offices. He spent his life here and is remembered by the older inhabitants with much esteem. A daughter still resides in the village.

Dr. Safford E. Hale began practice in the town in 1842, and has remained here ever since. He is a native of Chelsea, Vt., and was graduated from the medical department of Dartmouth College in 1841. Though far advanced in years he is still hale and hearty and takes his long rides with all the energy of former days. He is a brother of the late Robert S. Hale.

Dr. Edward T. Strong became a resident of this town in December, 1882, removing hither from Crown Point. He was born in Addison, Vt., in 1838, and is a graduate of the University of Vermont, 1869.



Dr. George E. Whipple was born in Crown Point in 1857 and graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1883. He began practice in Elizabethtown in 1884.

*Civil List.* — The first town meeting for this town was held on the 3d day of April, 1798, at the dwelling house of David Callender, "at which was proceeded and made choice of Town officers," as follows: —

Supervisor, Ebenezer Arnold; clerk, Sylvanus Lobdell; assessors, Jacob Southwell, David Callender, Norman Newell; overseers of the poor, Jonathan Breckinridge, Hezekiah Barber; constable and collector, Nathan Lewis; constable, Thomas Hinckley; school commissioners, E. Newell, William Kellogg, Hezekiah Barber; overseers of highways, first district, John Santy; second district, N. Hinkley; third district, John Potter; fourth district, S. Lobdell; fifth district, Joseph Durand; sixth district, Simeon Durand; seventh district, Jacob Seture; eighth district, Joseph Pangburn; ninth district, E. Newell; tenth district, Stephen Eldridge; fence viewers, Hezekiah Barber, Elijah Bishop, and Elijah Rich.

The present officers of the town are as follows: —

Supervisor, Arod K. Dudley; clerk, Fred E. Durand; justices of the peace, George S. Nicholson, Stephen B. Pitkins, William R. Kellogg and Walter S. Brown; commissioner of highways, George W. Rice; assessors, Leander Abel, John K. Miller and Almon Post; overseer of the poor, George H. Glidden; collector, Robert H. Wood; auditors, A. J. Durand, L. Fred Person, A. C. H. Livingston; inspectors of election, H. E. Pitkin, John Liberty and William R. Kellogg; constables, David Seckington, Joseph Dukett, John Barton, jr., Erwin L. Barker; game constable, Abraham Mason.

Following are the supervisors from the formation of the town to the present time, with the years of their service: — 1799 and 1800, E. Newell; 1801, Elijah Bishop; 1802, Charles Goodrich; 1803 to 1805 inclusive, Hezekiah Barber; 1806 to 1808 inclusive, Alexander Morse; 1809 to 1811 inclusive, Enos Loveland; 1812-13, Azel Abel; 1814, Enos Loveland; 1815 to 1817 inclusive, Asa Post; 1818, Ezra C. Gross; 1819 to 23 inclusive, Alexander Morse; 1823-24, Ezra C. Gross; 1825-26, Alanson Mitchell; 1827-28, Leander J. Lockwood; 1829-30-31, Alanson Mitchell; 1832 to 1834 inclusive, Charles Noble; 1835 to 1838 inclusive, David Judd; 1839, John Lobdell; 1840-41, Henry R. Noble; 1842 to 1845 inclusive, Orlando Kellogg; 1846-47, Myron Durand; 1848, David Judd; 1849, Levi D. Brown; 1850-51, Jonathan Post; 1852, O. Kellogg; 1853, Byron Pond; 1854, A. M. Finney; 1855, William Simonds; 1856 to 1860 inclusive, Oliver Abel, jr.; 1861-62, William W. Root; 1863-64, Levi D. Brown; 1865-66, Matthew Hale; 1867-68, Arod K. Dudley; 1869 to 1873 inclusive, Rowland C. Kellogg; 1874 to 1876 inclusive, Francis A. Smith; 1877 to 1882 inclusive, Milo C. Perry; 1883, Walter S. Brown; 1884-85, Arod K. Dudley.

## MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Elizabethtown Village.*—This village is beautifully situated in the northern part of the town on the Boquet river at the confluence of the Little Boquet, or "Branch," as it has been termed. There are few spots to be found anywhere more pleasantly adapted by nature for the site of a rural village. The road by which the lovely valley is reached from Westport winds between lofty rugged peaks, which increase in natural wildness and grandeur as one travels westward, until on surmounting an eminence the valley lies spread before us in all its romantic beauty. It is almost surrounded by some of the grandest peaks of the Adirondacks, which, in a clear air seem but a stone's throw distant. Among the prominent peaks that surround the valley and lend grandeur to the scene, are Hurricane Mountain, Cobble Mountain, the "Giant of the Valley," Saddleback Mountain, Buck Mountain, and others. No wonder the pioneers who first looked down on this beautiful spot named it "Pleasant Valley," an appropriate title that still clings to it among the inhabitants. The village is visited every summer by hundreds of pleasure and health seekers, who find here ample and excellent accommodations, and all of the re-invigorating influences for which the entire region is famous. It lies on the direct road from Westport to the noted Keene valley (see history of Keene), and hence in summer takes on an aspect of life and activity far different from that which pervades it when the region is locked in the grasp of winter.

This valley received about the first settlers who located in the town, to whom allusion has already been made; and from the date of its selection as the county seat, it has been the most important and thriving settlement.

The first house built on the site of the village is said to have been erected by Azel Abel on the site of what was known as the Sherburne House; but the date of its erection is not definitely known. It was, doubtless, previous to the beginning of the century. Early stores, etc., have been sufficiently described. A post-office was established here in the early years of the century. We have been unable to trace the postmasters back farther than to Norman Nicholson, who was succeeded by A. C. Hand, R. W. Livingston, and Orlando Kellogg. Judge Hand took the office in 1831 and was postmaster a number of years; and during Polk's administration Judge Byron Pond was appointed. After him came W. W. Root until 1853, when Levi D. Brown served until the appointment of Captain Samuel C. Dwyer. In 1861 Oliver Abel was appointed; he was succeeded by T. C. Lamson, who was the incumbent four years. The present postmaster, C. N. Williams, was appointed in 1871.

There is considerable mercantile business done here. C. N. Williams opened a general store in 1851 in a building in which he lived, near Mr. Noble's present store. He removed to the store formerly occupied by Ira Marks, above the Valley House, where he remained until 1861, when he established himself in what was called the "Root store," where Mr. Thompson is now



located. In the spring of 1869 he removed to his own building, where he is still located, carrying a stock of drugs, liquors, etc.

A general store was kept by John C. Parish before 1869; he was succeeded by James C. Thompson in 1881.

T. C. Lamson opened a store in 1856, in the building formerly occupied by Ira Marks, where he continued until 1877 when he was succeeded by Henry Jacobs, who now carries on general trade there.

B. A. Perry carries on mercantile business on "the Plains," where he has been located since about 1873. Irish & Son recently opened a store for the sale of boots and shoes, provisions, etc. Edward Trudeau sells stoves and hardware, and also carries on a shoe shop. Charles A. Noble has carried on his store since the death of his father.

William H. Palmer, John Barton, Thomas Kirby, and Allen Fuller do the blacksmithing for the town.

We have mentioned the fact of the erection of the grist-mill on the site of the old saw-mill of Amos Rice, on the Little Boquet. Loren Rice, son of Amos, came into possession of this mill and sold it to the present owner, John S. Walker, in 1882. The milling interest has never been large. C. N. Williams has a steam, saw, and planing-mill on the Boquet, and manufactures chairs, broom handles, etc.

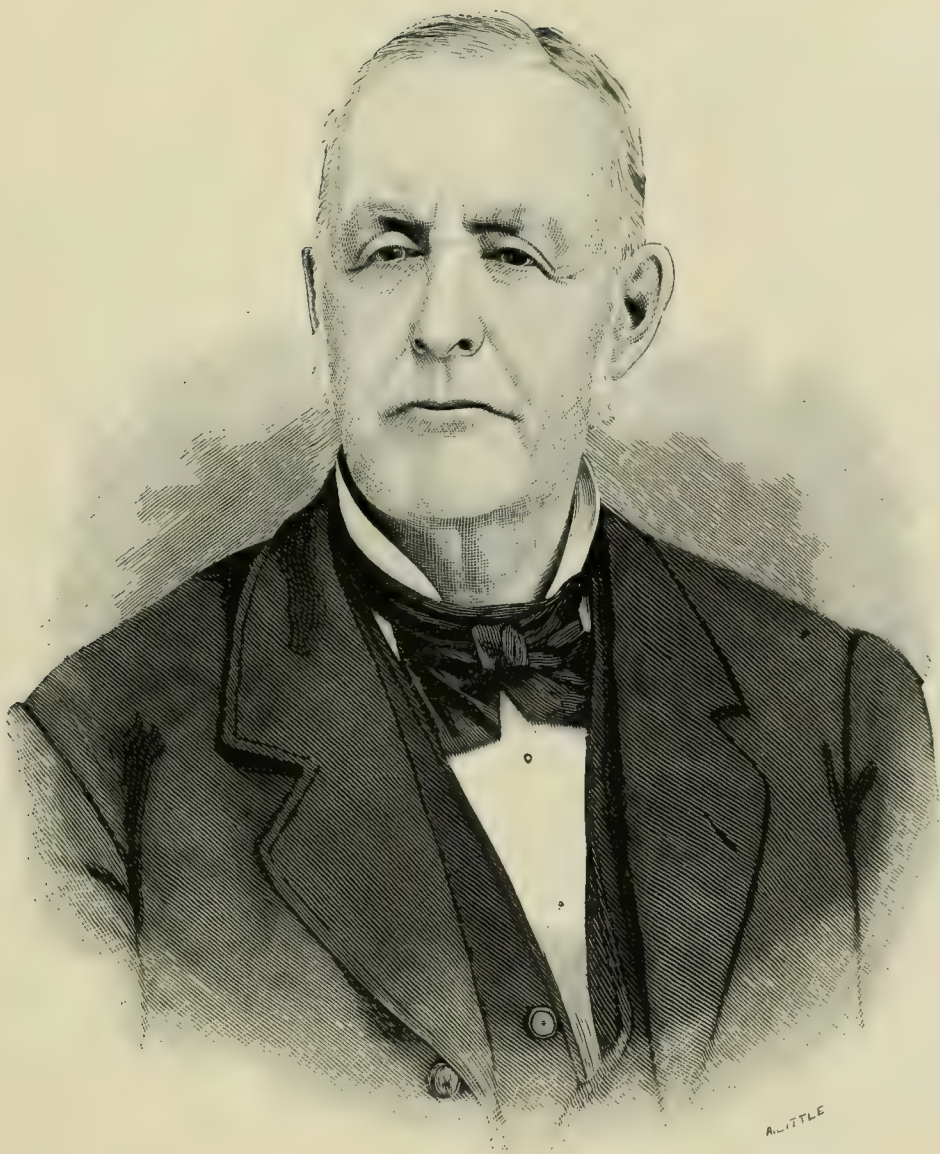
The hotels now kept in the village are known to many grateful guests within a circle of hundreds of miles, who have here found homes and rest from the labor and friction of the outside world. The old house that stood on the site of the Mansion House has been mentioned. The first structure that was incorporated into the present Mansion House was built in 1810; it now forms the summer house near the main building. The present hotel was built in 1873 by William Simonds, who is the present owner and said to be the oldest landlord in Essex county. He was formerly for fifteen years in the Valley House. The Mansion House accommodates from 150 to 175 guests and covers a space of 100 by 310 feet. It is pleasantly located on "the Plains," and is well kept. The old Mansion House was kept at different periods by Fred. King, Charles H. Brainard, and E. A. Adams, before Mr. Simonds took the property.

One of the very first taverns in the town was near the site of the Valley House. It was built of logs and was owned by Azel Abel, grandfather of Oliver Abel. It stood with the end toward the river, about thirty-five feet from it, and sixty feet below the bridge. Norman Newell kept it soon after 1817; he was the father of Apollus A. Newell, who was associated with him for a time and succeeded him. Ira Marks also kept the house which was burned in 1835. Eliona Marks rebuilt it, and it passed to David Judd and was again burned in 1858-59. Then a part of the present Valley House was erected by Mr. Judd. He sold it to Judge Hale, and he to the present owner, H. H. Sherburne, with









WILLIAM SIMONDS.





the provision that it should be removed to its present site for the improvement of Mr. Hale's premises. In 1825 Asahel Root kept a house which is still standing opposite the late site of the Valley House. This was originally built by Simeon Frisbie.

The Windsor Hotel was begun in 1876 and two years later the cottage west of the original part, which had been raised a story, was added. In 1883 the large wing on the northwest side was built. This house will accommodate from 175 to 200 guests. It is owned by Orlando Kellogg, who has conducted it for a number of years.

The original part of the American House is said to have been built by Nahum Mitchell; but we cannot trace it very definitely. A part was soon added to it and Daniel Ross lived in one end and kept store in the other for many years. In 1825 Alanson Mitchell occupied it as a dwelling and store; he was succeeded by E. F. Williams, the property remaining in the Ross estate; it was sold to L. M. Smith, and finally transferred to R. L. Hand, who bid it in on a mortgage sale. He sold it to the present proprietor, Levi Bullard, in 1867. Additions have been made at various times.

*Masonic.* — There is a Masonic lodge here, the name of which is Adirondack Lodge Number 602. It was chartered July 6th, 1866, with a membership of fifteen. The first W. M. was De Witt Stafford. The present W. M. is Arod K. Dudley; S. W., John Liberty; J. W., William H. Palmer. The present membership is seventy-seven, and the lodge is in a flourishing condition. For further details of this lodge, and the old Valley Lodge No. 314, see chapter twenty-six.

*Water Company.* — The Water Company was organized in 1883, with Richard L. Hand, Orlando Kellogg, J. S. Roberts, R. C. Kellogg, and A. C. H. Livingston as commissioners. The works were built at a cost of \$16,000. The water is brought from springs two miles up the Little Boquet, where it enters a four inch pipe and flows to a reservoir located about midway between the springs and the village. There are sixteen hydrants distributed through the village, which are a safeguard against fire. Since the works were finished a hose company has been organized and equipped.

*Incorporation.* — In the fall of 1876, when there was a renewal of the oft-repeated agitation over the removal of the county seat, a bill was passed in the Legislature, one section of which provided that it should require a two-thirds vote of the board of supervisors to remove a county seat from any incorporated village. The general law provides that a village containing a specified number of inhabitants may be incorporated. These facts led the people of Elizabethtown to take steps towards incorporating their village, believing that the two-thirds vote of the supervisors could not be secured to remove the county seat. The boundaries of the village were accordingly so laid out as to include the requisite population, and the incorporation was effected.



This accounts for the somewhat peculiar shape of the village tract. Judge Hale was made the first president of the village. He was succeeded by R. L. Hand, and he by R. W. Livingston, the present official. George S. Nicholson is clerk.

*The Press.* — The first newspaper published here, and the first one in the county, was issued in 1810 by Luther Marsh. There is no means of learning how long this paper was published. It was succeeded by the *Essex Patriot* in 1817, which was continued to 1820, or later, by Oliver and Lewis Person. It was then removed to Essex and called the *Essex Republican*; after about five years under the management of Lewis Person, it was taken by W. N. Mitchell, in whose hands it suspended.

The *Essex County Times* was started in Elizabethtown by R. W. Livingston, who came here from Lewis in 1832; three months later he sold out to Cyrenus S. Newcomb, who continued the publication about fifteen months and failed. This paper was printed on a machine that will be recognized by all journalists as an old Ramage press. In 1851 Mr. Livingston bought the press and material of a paper that had been issued in Westport and started the *Elizabethtown Post*. The Westport paper was the outgrowth of an establishment started at Elizabethtown in 1849 by D. Turner, who soon removed to Keeseville, thence to Champlain and then to Westport. (See history of that village.) Mr. Livingston continued the *Post* until February, 1858. Two years later Mr. Turner came here and revived the *Post*, which he sold to A. C. H. Livingston in 1860. He continued its publication until 1871, when he sold out to John Liberty. He sold to A. M. Lewis, and in January, 1879, A. C. H. Livingston bought it back and has continued the paper since, adding to its name *Gazette*, as Lewis had purchased the Port Henry paper of that name and incorporated it in his establishment. The *Post and Gazette* is a bright country paper of Democratic proclivities and is well patronized and respected by the community.

*Schools.* — The schools of Elizabethtown are in a most prosperous condition. The district school of the village was taught in the winters of 1832, '33 and '34 by Orlando Kellogg. R. W. Livingston taught in the winter of 1834-35: The regular attendance at that time was about fifty pupils. Judge Pond, Oliver Abel, C. N. Williams and other now prominent citizens were among Mr. Livingston's pupils. We need not attempt to trace the growth and changes in the schools to their present condition. The Union school in this district (which has always been District No. 1) was established in 1865, when, on the 8th of September, a meeting was held to consider the erection of a new school structure and changing of the site. The former school-house was the old brick building just back of Mr. Williams's store. At this meeting it was resolved to change the site to its present location on the hill. On the 2d of October, 1865, an election was held in the district upon the question of establishing a Union

Free School. Of the fifty-six voters, forty-two were present; thirty-eight of these voted in favor of the change. The lot upon which it was resolved to erect the new building belonged to Judge A. C. Hand; this was purchased and the commodious two-story building put up; its entire cost in the present form was \$4,500.

The principal projectors of the change and the establishment of the Union Free School were N. Morse, George S. Nicholson, Matthew and R. S. Hale, Byron Pond, A. C. Hand, C. N. Williams, F. A. Smith, Levi D. Brown, A. K. Dudley, H. A. Putnam, Abijah Perry, David Judd, and others.

The first board of education comprised Byron Pond, who was its president; George S. Nicholson, clerk; Safford E. Hale, David Judd, H. A. Putnam, Richard Hand. The first principal was Professor Harry Scott, Professor William C. Murphy the second (1868), and James H. Robinson third. The present principal is Professor W. C. Coats. The present board of education is constituted of R. L. Hand, president; George S. Nicholson, clerk; R. C. Kellogg, F. A. Brown, Edgar M. Marvin, H. A. Putnam. Three teachers are employed. The average expenditures (raised by tax) are about \$1,600 annually. Average attendance, residents, about eighty-eight; foreign students, eight to ten.

*Churches.* — The first church organized in this town was the Baptist, which dates back to 1797; and it is said that the first clerk of the society either could not or would not sign his name to the records. The first pastor was Elder Reynolds. The records mention Elders Brown, Babcock, and Chamberlain, whose name precedes that of Elder Hascall, who was here in 1809; Churchill, 1818; John Stearns, 1824. In 1828 the Free Mason agitation arose, and the old church was broken up in 1830. The new one was formed in 1834. In the next year Rev. Mr. Brant was the pastor. The church edifice was built in 1838. In 1839 sixty-eight baptisms were recorded, with nineteen other additions, and the number of members was two hundred and six. The church was subsequently served by Elders Gale, Garfield, Seaver, Dickens, McCollum, Daniel Hascall, Samuel Churchill, J. H. Walden, Calvin Fisher, S. Ewer, Elias Hurlbut, Lorenzo Kellogg, M. N. Stearns, G. B. Bills, R. A. Hodge, S. Jones, L. S. Smith, E. Jewett, H. Steelman, George S. Pratt, S. W. Nichols, Wayne Brewster, George F. Nichols, J. F. Genung. The last pastor of the church was P. S. McKillup, who left in the fall of 1884. The present church officers are Norman Person, clerk; Herry Glidden, Wallace W. Pierce, deacons. The membership is about fifty-five. Elfred Person is superintendent of the Sabbath-school, which has thirty-five members. The church cost about \$2,500.

*Congregational Church.* — This church was organized in 1821, by Rev. Cyrus Comstock, with thirty-two members, most of whom came from the church in Lewis. Norman Nicholson was the first clerk of this church. The first deacons were Timothy Brainard, who died in 1824, and Joseph Blake, who



died in 1860. The first regular pastor was Rev. V. D. Taylor, who was here from 1826 to 1829; he was succeeded as follows: 1830-31, Rev. Moses Ingalls; 1833-34, Rev. O. Miner; 1841-45, Rev. C. C. Stevens; 1845-46, Rev. Mr. Parker; 1846-47, Rev. J. Headley; in March of this year the society was re-organized as the "First Congregational Church of Elizabethtown," which has since been ministered to as follows: 1847-48, Rev. S. Hine; 1850-52, Rev. J. Bradshaw; 1855-56, Rev. Cyrus Hudson; 1858-60, Rev. Charles Redfield; January, 1861, to November, 1861, Rev. S. S. Howe; 1864 to 1881, Rev. G. W. Barrows; 1883-84, Rev. Q. J. Collin.

There is no pastor over the church at the present time, but steps are in progress to secure one. The present church officers are: —

Helpers — A. F. Woodruff, Walter S. Brown, Julia Smith and Elizabeth Judd; clerk, George S. Nicholson; treasurer, A. McD. Finney; Sunday-school superintendent, Richard L. Hand. The attendance at Sunday-school averages about thirty, and the church membership is forty-six.

*Methodist Church.* — The Methodist Episcopal Church of Elizabethtown was organized in 1832, with a small membership, among whom were S. W. Osgood, Alva Allen, John Lewis, Ann Osgood, Henry Lewis and Edward Marvin. The first pastor was Rev. Peter H. Smith. Since then there have been stationed over the church Revs. Sayers, Mills, Pomeroy, Seymour, Coleman, Lyon, Cope, Patison, Liscomb, Hale, Garvin, Atwell, Fenton, Kerr, and the present pastor, Rev. Charles L. Hagar. Previous to the erection of the church edifice, meetings were held several years in the village school-house and later in the court-house. The church was erected in 1853, at a cost of \$4,000, and improvements have since been added at a cost of \$500. A Sunday-school was organized in 1840, over which have presided as superintendents, Messrs. Ames, Calkin, Rowe, Calkin, Lewis, Robertson, Parish and George Irish.

The first church trustees were Messrs. S. W. Osgood, Adams, Blood, Clark and Ames. The present trustees are E. M. Marvin, Mrs. Ann Osgood, George Irish, John Lewis and A. Keith.

A great revival followed the dedication of the church under the labors of Rev. G. W. Wells, when about seventy were received into membership. Other important revivals occurred under labors of Rev. David Ayers and Rev. George Kerr. The present membership is one hundred.

*Episcopal Church.* — This society has been organized only two years, and services are maintained in the summer season only; the attendance is largely from the summer visitors in the place. A neat chapel stands on the corner of Hand avenue and High street.

*Catholic Church.* — This church was organized in 1882 and the church was erected in the same year. The first pastor was Rev. Father Reddington. The church stands near the village limits on Court street. Rev. Father Hallahan is at present serving the church.

*New Russia.*—This is a small settlement—much smaller than it was twenty-five years ago—situated about four miles south of Elizabethtown, on the Boquet. Many of the very early settlements of the town were made in this vicinity, and the iron interest in later years contributed to build up a hamlet that had about a hundred inhabitants. The post-office here was established about the close of the last war; Stephen B. Pitkin has been postmaster for many years. There is very little mercantile business transacted here. H. A. Putnam has conducted a store for a number of years. A forge, a saw-mill and a pyroligneous acid works are located here, but are operated only a part of the year, when there is sufficient water power. Six miles farther up the stream, at what is known as Euba Mills, Mr. Putnam has a saw-mill, planing-mill and wood-working factory. There was a post-office here for a few years, about 1870, and a settlement of perhaps a dozen families in the immediate neighborhood.

---

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF CHESTERFIELD.

CHESTERFIELD was formed from Willsborough on the 20th of February, 1802, and occupies the extreme northeastern part of the county, Lake Champlain forming its entire eastern boundary. The surface is mountainous in character, what are known as the Jay mountains, a continuation of the Adirondacks, extending in a northerly direction through the western portion. This range forms an almost impassable barrier between Chesterfield and Jay—a lofty, rocky range, with scarcely a pass to break its continuity. The main range of the Adirondacks extends through the center of the town from the southwest to the northeast corner, where it terminates in a high, rocky bluff called Trembleau Point, which lifts its brown head to a height of nearly 1,500 feet above the surface of the lake. Two principal peaks of the range are Poke-o-Moonshine, and what has been called Bosworth's Mountain, each of which towers about 3,000 feet above tide. Poke-o-Moonshine, notwithstanding its trivial name,<sup>1</sup> is one of the most majestic of the mountain peaks; from its base, surrounded with huge boulders, up its rugged sides, which present the appearance of rocks hurled together at random and clinging to the acclivities with an uncertain tenure, clad in spots with trees and slight verdure to its very top, it presents an aspect of impressive grandeur. Tradition is silent concerning the

---

<sup>1</sup> Artemas White, Keeseville, says the correct name of the peak is "Rangham mountain," from an Englishman who was once "snowed in" there for about two weeks.



origin of its quaint name; even the oldest inhabitants give no reason why the stately eminence should be afflicted with a title which might well find a place in a nursery primer.

The southwestern part of the town is hilly, and the northeastern a rolling table land with soil not especially productive. Excepting Moriah, the town has less alluvial surface than any other in the county, less than one-half of it being susceptible of cultivation.

In water surface and power it is richly endowed, several small but beautiful lakes dotting its surface, among which the two Auger ponds and Butternut pond are most prominent, and afford scenery of rare loveliness. Trout brook is in the southern part, flowing southward across the boundary line into the town of Lewis, to eventually find its way to the Boquet in the town of Willsborough. The Auger pond outlet flows northward and empties into the Ausable at the chasm. The northern boundary is formed by the Ausable river, a remarkable stream as regards its fall and the scenery along its course. Its numerous small affluents flow from mountain sources and afford extensive water power, and nature has seldom exhibited a more wonderful channel than the one through which pours the waters of this river. In the vicinity of Keeseville it flows between rocky walls about fifty feet in height, their faces bearing almost the appearance of masonry; it then rushes over its stony bed to Birmingham, making one beautiful fall on its way, and here abruptly plunges into a gloomy chasm of sixty feet in depth, sending up clouds of spray that are spanned by rainbows in the summer sunlight, or deck the surrounding foliage with the most elaborate frost-work in winter. For nearly a mile beyond this point the stream is engulfed in one of the most remarkable chasms in the country. Its current here flows smoothly and swiftly along its natural canal and there plunges madly over precipitous rocks, at the foot of a channel that is rarely over thirty feet in width and ranging from seventy-five to 150 feet in depth. Lateral fissures, deep and narrow, extend from the main ravine at nearly right angles; through one of these natural passages the chasm is reached by stairs, the steps of which every season echo the tread of hundreds of visitors.

In minerals the town is rich; iron, graphite, and a peculiar marble of a pale brown hue are among its productions. Its iron deposits have been worked to some extent; but the ore is not found in such quantity and quality as warrant its extensive mining. Of the quarries in this town located near Keeseville, Mr. Watson speaks as follows: "The Potsdam sandstone is largely quarried in the vicinity of Keeseville, and is exported to a considerable amount. Lying in a perfect lamination, it may be excavated in large slabs or blocks, those sixty feet square are easily obtained. The strata are so clearly defined and separated, that the only power requisite in raising the stone, is the wedge and lever. S. E. Keeler, the occupant of one of the most extensive deposits, informs me that in the experience of many years, he has never had occasion

to use a blast in excavations on his quarry. The stone presents on the horizontal side a smooth and plane surface. It has usually a yellow-gray coloring, and is found admirably adapted to flagging and building purposes. . . . When first raised it is slightly soft, not friable, but after exposure to the atmosphere becomes exceedingly hard. Edifices are now standing which furnish proof of the firmness and durability of this stone, after an exposure of more than half a century, to storms and the action of the elements. The material which forms these buildings does not exhibit the most remote appearance of decay or disintegration."

Several veins of kaolin have been found on the lake shore beneath the hypersthene, and there is also a large deposit near Auger pond.

Schuyler Island in Lake Champlain, is a part of this town; it is near the lake shore opposite Douglass Bay. It received its name, according to tradition, from the fact that General John Schuyler made it the camping ground of his force in 1690, while on his expedition against Canada. The island was known to the French as Isle Chapon.

*Early Settlements.* — Alvin Colvin is one of the oldest inhabitants of the town and now lives at Port Kent. He has furnished much information and reminiscences of the early settlements; and the same may be said of Artemas White, of Keeseville. Mr. Colvin gives Mathew Adgate as the first settler; he came from near Albany in 1792. He had six children, Asher, Asa, Martin, Luther, Eunice and Hannah. He secured a large patent for lands in the vicinity of Birmingham falls, which were formerly called Adgate's falls. His house stood on the west side of the Ausable and was the only one in that section in 1805; it was about two miles from the falls. A saw-mill, grist-mill, and later a rolling-mill were built by him. This property passed into possession of his son Asa. Theodore, son of the latter, subsequently (1823) placed two forge fires in the rolling-mill, but after a trial of about a year the project was abandoned as unprofitable and the works were rented to John Johnson, who operated them for about two years. Asa Adgate erected the frame of a dwelling on the Keeseville road, but did not complete it; it stood near "Adgate's Corners" and is now known as the Widow Ball's place. Martin Adgate settled on the road from Port Kent to Keeseville, where he now lives.

The early history of most localities is interwoven with a network of romance, and Chesterfield is no exception to this rule. The history of Aaron Ward, true though it is, partakes of this character. He was a native of Schuylerville, Saratoga county. In 1796 he, with his young wife, traveled towards the Adirondacks with the laudable purpose of making a home in the wilderness. He launched his canoe on the waters of Champlain at the site of Whitehall and paddled along the western shore of the lake until he reached the locality now called Brown's bay, a little south of Port Douglass, where he left their stores in a secluded place and started on a prospecting tour. In their



wanderings they reached Prospect hill (formerly called "Tory" hill), from which they discovered Auger pond. This was to the young couple the ideal place for a home, and after careful surveying in that region, they decided to lay their hearthstone near a little inlet at the head of the pond where a pure spring of water and a gentle rise of ground afforded abundant promise of a pleasant location. After much labor a rude shanty was erected, and by toilsome journeys they brought their scanty stores from the lake shore and began their rude "housekeeping." In 1798 a son was born them, who was undoubtedly one of the first white children born in the town, if not the very first.<sup>1</sup> Straggling Indians from the St. Francis and St. Regis tribes were located on the outlet of the pond about two miles south of the site of Keeseville. These Indians annoyed Ward by stealing the game from his traps, and he had carefully refrained from any action which would be apt to arouse a more active hostility on their part; but one morning as he went out to visit his traps, he discovered an Indian robbing it of the game. Forbearance had ceased to be a virtue with Ward, and, in the heat of his anger, he shot the Indian. Knowing the characteristics of the savages, he was aware that as soon as this fact was discovered, his family and home would be wrecked. He, therefore, gathered his few household idols together and abandoned his home, the result of his five years' life in the wilderness. From there the exiles proceeded to Schuylersville, where there was a small settlement, and afterward removed to New Bedford, Mass. For many years the spot where the Indian was killed was known as Ward's rock.

In 1882 Archibald Ward, son of Adam, was living in New Bedford with his son David, who is a dentist there.

In 1802 Robert Hoyle, an Englishman, settled at what is now Keeseville. He built the first bridge at that point, and opened the first store. Before the name of Keeseville it was known as "Long Chute." Associated with J. W. Anderson, Hoyle bought up the possessions of Captain Jonathan Bigelow, who lived on the State road south of the present village. Hoyle afterward sold out his interest to Richard and Oliver Keese in 1812, and the next year Keese and Anderson erected iron works and a woolen factory on the site of the village. From the Messrs. Keese the village took its present name, though it was previously called Anderson's Falls.

What was known as the "dry mill" was a grist-mill located in Clinton county on a brook which found its source on "Hallock Hill." The State road came out near this mill. The mill was built about the time Adgate's mill was erected, in the last years of the preceding century. This mill seems to have quite a prominent place in the early history of the town, and a description of its wheel, furnished by Mr. Colvin, will be interesting: "It had a large over-

---

<sup>1</sup> *French's Gazetteer* says Thomas Rangham was the first white child born in the town. The first death was that of Abel Handy. Mr. White states that Thos. Rangham was born in England and came with his father while an infant.

shot wheel which was placed outside the mill on the end of the main shaft, and the water was carried across the road about ten or twelve rods in a flume, and so down to the mill. It ceased running about 1839 or 1840."<sup>1</sup> Above the mill were two saw-mills on the same stream; one built by Mr. Keese, at the head of the brook; the other by James Ricketson, which was managed by Mr. Cole in 1803.

George Schaffer, a German, moved into the town about 1794, when the road from his home to Peru was only marked by "blazed" trees. He lived near Auger pond in 1836, and died in Ausable at the age of ninety-five years, about the year 1859. He was said to have been the originator of the idea of a saw-mill just above the lower bridge, which was built about 1806. He was employed by Captain Jonathan Bigelow.

Joseph Coville was also one of the first settlers and built one of the very early log cabins near the site of the present foundry in Keeseville. He was a dissipated man. During the latter days of his life he lived near Auger Pond.

Jonathan Colvin moved from Clarendon, Vt., in 1802, with his family, consisting of his wife and three children; Alvin, the eldest being the only one now living. Mrs. Jonathan Colvin's maiden name was Freelove Bailey. They moved into the town with an ox team and settled near Adgate's Falls (Birmingham). In 1844 Alvin Colvin moved to Port Kent. He was married in April, 1821, to Jeannette Higgins, of Essex, and both now live at Port Kent, after sixty-four years of married life.

Alonzo Wright was one of the pioneers and came into the town about 1800. He located a mile and a half east of the present Keeseville. Of his large family none now remain in the town.

Jeremiah Hayes settled about the same time near the "Fordway." He lived a short time at Port Kent, and after the War of 1812 he built a distillery in Clinton county and manufactured whisky.

The second house built in the vicinity of the Adgates was, according to Mr. Colvin, occupied by a man named Edmunds, who worked in a building which then stood on the site now occupied by Appleyard's mill. This man "dressed cloth after shearing it, by hand." A fulling-mill and press were put up subsequently in this building.

Horace Beach built a house and blacksmith shop on the west side of the river about 1806, and James Lamson put up a log house near the present Appleyard store, Birmingham Falls.

About the year 1807 three brothers, Josiah, William, and Lynde Willard, settled on the upper side of the road running up the hill north of Appleyard's store, and kept a store there for three years. They also rented the saw-mill and marketed their lumber in Quebec. The lumber was drawn to the "Basin" below the chasm whence it was rafted down the lake. When the Willards gave

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. White thinks the mill was not operated more than a few years.



up this mill it was rented by John Purmort, of Jay, who moved into the log house there and followed the lumber business a few years.

At this time James Pilling set up two carding-machines in the attic of the grist-mill here, and operated them three years. Then he bought a lot near where Appleyard's mill now stands and after erecting suitable buildings, he manufactured all kinds of woolen cloths.

Asahel Rowe, a wheelwright, also began his business here at an early day. His two brothers, James and Ralph, joined him, but after two years James and Asahel left the town and Ralph continued the business. Their shop was on the site occupied by Mr. Carter in 1878.

A saw-mill was about this time built on Howard brook, by Erastus Strong, who did not make a success of the business and soon left the vicinity. It stood near the Higby place.

James Southard settled near the site of Appleyard's mill and, Mr. Colvin says, put up a dwelling and shop, a saw-mill and rolling-mill, and drew the first water from the west end of the dam. The saw-mill he subsequently removed to Essex and set it up on the Boquet, after which it passed to the possession of W. D. Ross. James Pilling (before mentioned) and Benjamin Ketchum located near Mr. Southard early in the century. Mr. Ketchum opened a store here in 1810 and several years later removed to Peru.

Near the year 1825 Pilling & Moore purchased the water privilege at the west end of the dam and rebuilt the saw-mill and forge. They continued the business of manufacturing iron for several years. About this time Beach & Taylor purchased the east side water-power and cut lumber for the southern market, the canal having then been opened. They also built a wooden house and one of stone near the mill. In 1830 a freshet, for which disasters this river is famous, damaged the mills, except the one belonging to Mr. Pilling, by carrying away much of their internal works.

Captain Isaac Wright, who succeeded Captain Jackson in command of the local militia of early days, built a saw-mill on Auger pond brook in 1806, where he sawed lumber for the Quebec market. He married Sarah Douglass. George Fowler was another pioneer who settled at Auger pond, buying the mill there of Judge Blanchard, of Salem, Washington county.

John and Benjamin Macomber came to the town before 1810 and located on the road that crossed the river a little southeast of Keeseville. John Macomber, now living at the village, is a descendant. Joshua Manchester was, according to Artemas White, a neighbor of the Macomers. Samuel Pine, a bound apprentice who accompanied Mr. Manchester hither, became a captain of the militia in 1812. He died a few years ago, leaving two sons, one of whom lives in Keeseville and the other is proprietor of the Auger Lake House.

Robert Elliott (a colored man) settled in the town at an early day, locating about two miles south of the falls before the site of Keeseville was occupied to

much extent. He was accompanied by a boy who served as a drummer at Plattsburg and previously in the Revolution.

About the same time Stephen Powers settled at Butternut pond. His son Alanson lives in Burlington and Stephen died in Keeseville. The elder Powers was about the first constable in the town.

In the vicinity of Port Douglass Simeon Norton and "Esquire" Barker, the latter one of the first justices of the peace, settled about the beginning of the present century.

John Page located a little south of Port Douglass. He has a grandson living near there now.

Samuel Whitney, who came into the town early in the century, settled on the road from Port Douglass to Keeseville, about a mile from the former place. He had two sons, Luther and Norman, who now live in Keeseville; there were other sons of Mr. Whitney. Marcus Barnes also located in the vicinity of Port Douglass, a little to the south. Next to him was Warren Strong; Oliver Baker also located in that neighborhood, all coming in by about the year 1810.

Among other pioneers who came in before the end of the first decade of the century were Thomas Worden, who built a house and a store on the farm afterward owned by Jehial Fletcher the latter ran a potash manufactory. Elihu Briggs, who probably came in before the beginning of the century and located about two and a half miles south of Keeseville. Benjamin Beach, who was one of the very early justices, and Richard Buckmeister, who settled in 1813, near Griswold Mountain.

By the year 1810 there were some sixty families in the town. Wild game was plenty; bears were frequent visitors to the corn fields and often ruined a crop in a single night. Wolves were seen and occasionally a moose, while deer were exceedingly numerous. Mr. Colvin states that he can recall but one moose being killed; the animal was shot near Peru landing in a field belonging to John Elmore. These pioneers passed through the same experience that came to those of other towns; excessive toil in the clearing of lands; hard work in winter in the lumber business; primitive farming operations among the stumps; lack of all luxuries and many of the mere comforts of life, and general lack of social enjoyments. But their lives were lightened by many pleasures that the modern citizen can scarcely appreciate. Every public occurrence — town meetings, auctions, neighborhood raisings, logging bees, and the like became scenes of hearty enjoyment. The log-houses continued to multiply, and also the families within their walls; the clearings increased in size and the town progressed with encouraging success. Saw-mills multiplied on the excellent water power and as the lumber market was extended by the opening of the Champlain canal, the business was vigorously engaged in by a large majority of the inhabitants. Streams that are now but mere rivulets would then turn a wheel — a change that is much to be deplored, but is still



going on in all parts of the country. Mr. Colvin states that there is far less volume of water flowing through the Ausable channel than in his boyhood. Then "the high waters did not come till June; now it comes down with a rush and is all in the lake in a few hours."

The early methods of getting logs into the river at one point is thus described by Mr. Colvin; "The log slide near the lower end of the chasm was built by Martin Adgate, father of Deacon Daniel Adgate. This slide was about thirty rods above the 'Basin' and was on the northwest side of the river. It was about twenty rods long and was a kind of trough made of logs chained to the trees. It stood at a very steep angle and one end of the timbers to be slid down was hauled to the upper end of the slide and then the chain was hitched to the rear and the oxen pulling alongside the timber and nearly parallel to it, would throw the stick over and pitch it down the slide. These timbers were most of them for ship building and frequently seventy or eighty feet long. They were hauled near the brink in the winter and slid down in the spring during high water, and floated to the lake, then rafted to Quebec. The lower end of this slide was about twenty feet from the water, which was so deep that these long timbers would plunge nearly or quite out of sight. This work was discontinued about 1825-30." Mr. Colvin continues as follows of a thrilling incident that once occurred in the chasm: "Right where the wheel-house of the Ausable Horse Nail Company now stands there was once a projecting rock, and about seventy years ago several boys were carrying stones out upon a large, loose piece of rock lying near the edge, in order to make the piece over-balance and fall down the cliff. One of the boys named Hall was a little too venturesome and as he carried out a load of stones, toppled it over and went down with the rock to the bottom of the chasm, a distance of about one hundred and ten feet. But somehow he miraculously escaped almost unhurt and soon came climbing up the rocks again."

The first bridge across the chasm is a subject around which centers a good deal of historic interest and several legends. The question of the date of its construction is in dispute and has called out much discussion. In a series of historical sketches published in the *Plattsburg Republican* in 1878-79, appeared a letter over the signature of Nathaniel Platt, and dated "Plattsburg, 29th October, 1793," in which was the following statement: "This day we compleat the Bridg here ready to Raise, to-morrow we proceed to Great Sable on where we expect to compleat a brid in a few days."

The bridge was built by the State, as a part of the old State road which crossed the Ausable, coming by way of Schroon, Elizabethtown, Poke-o-Moonshine and on to Plattsburg. The preliminary operation in building the bridge, according to Mr. Colvin and other authorities, was to fall a tree so its trunk would cross the chasm; but the builders found themselves in something of a dilemma. On the Chesterfield side was a yoke of oxen, needed to get

the timbers to the site of the bridge; but the yoke itself was on the other side. The problem was how to get the two together so as to make them useful. At this critical juncture Captain Samuel Jackson, one of the first militia captains, shouldered the yoke and safely carried it across, walking on the fallen tree. This feat may not seem a trifling one; but if the reader could stand on an ordinary-sized tree-trunk, at that dizzy distance above a rushing flood, and imagine himself walking across it with an ox-yoke on his shoulder, its importance would be magnified in his mind.

As to who it was that carried the ox-yoke over the chasm there is some difference in statement. A writer over the signature "Three-Score," in the *Plattsburg Republican*, claimed that John Keese, jr., performed the feat, while Alvin Colvin and Mr. Adgate attest the correctness of the first statement.

There were six stringers of Norway pine placed under the bridge, each about twenty inches in diameter. Upon them was laid a roadway twelve feet wide, of plank brought from Jay and Keene. Heavy timber at the sides sufficed for protection against running off the planks.

This bridge was used until about 1812, when the course of the State road was changed to about two miles above the site of Keeseville. As late as in 1824 one of the stringers of the old bridge remained in its place.

Another remarkable incident in connection with the bridge may be worth preservation: One night in later years, after the bridge had fallen into disuse and nothing was left of it but one stringer, a traveler came that way. It was very dark and he was entirely unaware of the removal of the bridge platform. As his horse neared the chasm the animal instinctively halted and would proceed only after persistent urging. The horse and rider finally passed the chasm and reached their destination. On the following morning the man learned that the bridge was gone and could not make the by-standers believe that he had crossed at that point. To satisfy them that he did so, they repaired to the locality, where the prints of the horse-shoes were plainly visible on the stringer. While this legend may be true, it is extremely improbable and is not very well sustained. Since that period a substantial frame bridge has been built across the chasm, with a double roadway and side railings. A still earlier bridge than this one was built at the fordway about two miles above the site of Keeseville.

Roads were laid out and opened through the town early in the century; but they were anything but comfortable highways to travel for many years. At the time of the formation of the county (1799) there was no road extending north above Willsborough; but a line of blazed trees extended over the mountain to the Ausable at the high bridge, which was the incipient "State road" mentioned. This roadway, if it may be called such, extended on to Plattsburg.



In 1812 a turnpike road was built by John Lynde and Thomas Emmons over the Willsborough mountains, beginning at the south side near Willsborough Falls; thence to Bosworth's tavern, the early business center of Chesterfield; from there to the river about three miles above the site of Keeseville; thence it ran to Peru and on to Plattsburg.

About three miles above the site of Keeseville a road began and branched off to the Quaker Settlement, as it was called; continuing westward it crossed the Ausable at the fordway, beyond which point it was known as the fordway road.

The highway from Port Kent westward was constructed in 1813.

From Mr. White's recollections of 1824 there were then roads extending from Keeseville to Port Kent, as above noted, another to Elizabethtown and to Willsborough; another was laid out to the interior of the town now known as Chesterfield street; there was a cross-road from the Port Kent and Keeseville highway to Port Douglass. Between 1840 and 1850 this town had the regular plankroad fever, resulting in the organization of companies and the building of roads from Port Kent to Keeseville, on the line of the original highway, and another to Port Douglass. These have all been abandoned as plankroads.

Salmon fishing in this town was followed with great success previous to the year 1826. The fish were very numerous and the sport of taking them was greatly enjoyed. They often reached a weight of sixteen pounds, and began running up the lake in May; in June they would appear in the Saranac and the next month in the Ausable. The gamy fish ascended this stream to Birmingham falls, which cascade they would make persistent efforts to jump; but they could not rise more than about six feet and, of course, never went above the falls.

Mr. Colvin says: "I generally went fishing twice a week, and many is the time that I have climbed up the precipice, where the stairs now are, with fifty or sixty pounds of salmon on my back."

*The Legendary Lead Mine*—The history of this town would be scarcely complete without some reference to the subject of the discovery of lead ore within its limits; a subject that has been the source of almost endless conjecture, discussion and much research from almost the first settlement of the town down to recent years. The subject was quite fully treated in a series of articles published in the *Essex County Republican* in 1883, to which we owe a large share of our information. In order to begin at the date when this supposed valuable deposit was first mentioned, it will be necessary to recall the time when, according to the writer mentioned, "the site of the beautiful village of Keeseville was crowned by a forest that shut out the sunlight, and the walled banks of the Ausable were visited by no tourist unless in the form of the dusky warrior from his Indian village near Auger Lake."

Near the date of the close of the Revolution, William Shaplay, one of the survivors of the Schuyler expedition, who had become familiar with the environs of Lake Champlain, left his home on the Hudson and with his mother settled at the place once known as the "abandoned Burton agency at Flat Rock bay." (See William Gilliland's journal in a preceding chapter.) This location was owned in 1882-83 by Edward Smith and David Jones, of Willsborough, and called "Landon Farm." Shaplay put his canoe on Corlear's (Perue) bay and made frequent excursions along the coast and thence into the forests for game. Deer were abundant and gathered numerously at the little sand beach at the south end of what is now the end of the tunnel at the railroad cut. The main path of the deer extended from this beach to Howard's brook, near the present (1883) home of A. D. Forbes at the highlands, from which point the paths led in all directions into the wilderness. Shaplay, not wishing to ruin future sport by killing deer at that spot, went farther to where a brook flowing from Rattlesnake Hollow emptied into the lake, at the south end of the Red Rocks, some fifty rods from the sand beach. From there he would enter some one of the ravines in pursuit of his game.

During one of these excursions he noticed that the flint he carried was becoming coated with metal from contact with his rifle, and picked up a light-colored stone lying near with which to abrade the edge of the flint. In this attempt the outer coating of the stone was chipped off, revealing a bright surface. This excited his curiosity and he picked up a number of the pieces of stone, put them in his knapsack and pursued his sport. Returning in the evening, he melted the pieces and found them almost pure lead, from which he cast a number of bullets. In reference to the matter he said: "After melting the ore I remelted it, ran it into musket balls and used them to shoot deer."

The next day he returned, as he supposed, to the same spot, but found no indications of similar "stones." He was much disappointed and continued his search at intervals for several years, but without success. During this period he opened a correspondence with his half-brother, Joseph Moore, then living in Grandville, Mass. The latter moved to Chesterfield and purchased nine hundred acres of land north and west of Shaplay's possessions. This property, like many of the early estates, had not a clear title for Moore, and was taken from him by Messrs. Coats and Edison, under an English patent. Shaplay had imparted his secret to Moore, and they, with Moore's two sons, Joseph, jr., and Norman, continued the search, but without avail. Shaplay subsequently removed west, but imparted what knowledge he possessed of the lead deposit to residents of the vicinity.

Some years later Caleb Smith, an old settler on Willsborough Point, was deer hunting in this locality and descended into a hollow to find water. As he brushed away leaves in his search he found some stones that awakened his curiosity by their extraordinary weight. He struck them together and was



convinced from the sound that they were largely composed of lead. Fearful that some one might discover him and thus interfere with the right to his discovery (providing it might prove valuable), he hastily covered the place with leaves and left the spot, intending to return in a short time. Reaching a rise of ground near at hand he made a mental chart of the locality and then departed. Later on he returned with his son-in-law, Dr. Asa Fisher, formerly in the United States service under Decatur, and made a diligent but unsuccessful search for many days. Then they took some friends into their confidence (Jacob and Samuel Adsit it was supposed), and the unavailing search was continued. Finally the information became spread among other settlers and the search was prosecuted by numerous different persons and parties. But failure was inscribed on all their banners. Many years later the sons of Mr. Smith, James, William and Roback, made persistent search for the lost lead deposit, but found nothing to indicate that such ever existed. The strong argument that prevailed to locate the scene of the alleged discoveries at a point up from the sand beach near the Red Rock was that both Shaplay and Smith had described the same locality, apparently.

At that time the inhabitants were unaware of the existence of an old French map made by their engineers about 1731, when they came up the lake to build the fort at Crown Point, on which map was delineated the shores of the lake, with "lead ore bed" laid down on the shore of Peru or Willsborough bay. If this endorsement was made when the map was executed, it would be strong proof that the French either knew of such a deposit of lead, or had heard current rumors of its existence. Among the Hurons and Algonquin Indians there was a tradition that lead had been found on the shore of this bay. Descendants of the whites who were taken prisoners during the war with the French remember that their ancestors related that, as the Indians were on their way to Canada down the lake, they landed on a sandy beach where there were many steep rocks, and the Indians, leaving their prisoners, went into the forest and returned with a supply of lead. Leander Dunham, of Ellenburgh Depot, Clinton county, wrote in 1883 as follows:—

"I see that the Trembleau Mountain lead mine has come to life again. I was a sailor on Lake Champlain in 1826. We were returning from Whitehall and got becalmed near the mountain. Three of us went ashore and rambled around for an hour or more. Two years after I heard the story of an old man that was taken prisoner by the Indians. They left him in the canoe while they went ashore, and on their return brought a lot of lead with them. They did not go more than thirty or forty rods from the shore, and when they got through digging they carefully covered the place up so that it could not be found. From the way he described the place I knew it was the very spot which we had tramped over two years before. I think a man by the name of Watson owned the land at that time. He would let no one dig, nor would he

sell the land. It has been over fifty years, but I can go to the very spot which the old man described. There may be no truth in it, but I have faith that there is lead there."

More evidence is furnished in a letter from John Mattocks, of Chicago, under date of April, 1883, in which he wrote:—

"Prior to 1870, perhaps as early as 1867, among a consignment of books bearing the mark of 'Trinity College, Dublin,' for sale in Chicago, I purchased a large atlas. Among its maps was one of Lake Champlain, three or four feet in length, and between two and three feet in width, published before the Revolutionary War. At or near the present location of Willsborough was marked 'lead mine.' Writing to Judge Hale, of Elizabethtown, upon the subject, he informed me of his suspicions that the map had been stolen from the State Historical Society,<sup>1</sup> and desired it for examination, and my impression is that he returned it after having a copy made by the State. The atlas and correspondence were destroyed by the Chicago fire in 1871. In this connection I will mention that, in 1858, Jackson Bishop, of Keeseville, or his brother John, showed me a cube-shaped piece of lead ore, which he found while hunting on Trembleau Mountain. Rob. Fuller was let into the secret, and we were to make a search in the locality where the lead was found; ending finally, in our visiting, instead, the site where a vessel was sunk off Port Jackson, and where we saw the imaginary howitzers and cannon balls strewn on the lake bottom, the waves preventing accurate observation. I mention this to refresh the recollection of the parties. Bishop claimed to have visited the lead mine locality, but has been unable to locate the spot. The piece of lead ore shown me was similar to those found at Galena, and Bishop could have no motive in misrepresenting the matter at that time." This statement is not generally credited by inhabitants of the town.

In 1875 a gentleman from Avon Lake, Ohio, visited this locality and found many points of resemblance between it and the region of the western lead mines. Mr. Martin, of Essex (now deceased), father-in-law of A. B. Morhous, had an experience in which he secured a specimen of lead, which he related as follows: "I know nothing about any lead mine there. But I was once on a sloop with my father becalmed on the bay near what they call the Red Rocks. I took the shotgun and went on shore to get some partridges. When I returned I climbed down a number of ledges covered with small bushes. One ledge six or seven feet high had a small bulge or lump partway down the side, from which I had scraped the moss and been slightly hurt in passing it. I

---

<sup>1</sup> Concerning this map, Mr. Watson wrote in a foot-note (1869) as follows: "This map was brought from England by Elkanah Watson, and was loaned by him to the State Department at Albany. All trace has since been lost of it. It was a most important and interesting document, and believed to contain the only minute chart of Lake Champlain extant. The steamer *Saltus* was wrecked in 1852 upon a slight needle rock laid down on this chart, but unknown to many of the navigators on the lake." The explanation given in our text undoubtedly clears up the mystery alluded to by Mr. Watson.



looked to see what it was, supposing it to be a root which had grown over the edge of the cliff under the moss, and formed into a bulb at the end. I pulled it away from the rock, and a ropy connection extended along under the moss, which broke off near the edge of the rock above me. It was a dirty and curious-looking thing. I took it with my partridges and gun and hurried along toward the water. We afterwards examined it, and it was lead. I know it was lead, for I ran it into balls for the rifle. I have since looked a great many times, but there are so many ledges, and they look so much alike, I never could find what I was sure was the one where I had been."

Captain Edwards also made several searches with Mr. Martin, but without success. Messrs. Cameron & McDonald, contractors on the railroad, while cutting through the Red Rock, found one small pocket of lead, but no more. Early in the century Mr. Higby was building a saw-mill at Port Kendall, in the gorge where the iron railway bridge now stands. While the workmen were clearing the grounds in that vicinity, a crucible was found near the roots of a tree, covered with moss and earth. Whether it was left there by the French, or how its appearance there may be reasonably accounted for, are questions for the curious to answer.

Upon this interesting topic Mr. Watson wrote in his *Essex County History*, after referring to the "lead mine" endorsement on the old French map: "A tradition of this ore bed is known to exist among the savage tribes north of the great lakes. A little flotilla of canoes, bearing Indians from that region, as they represent, appears yearly<sup>1</sup> about the middle of autumn, lying on the beach in the vicinity of those mountains (the range between Chesterfield and Willsborough). Linger here for several days, with no ostensible pursuit, they as suddenly disappear. I cannot resist the popular opinion that these periodical visits have some connection with the legend and the existence of this ore bed. Other circumstances tend to fortify this impression. Accounts which have been retained in several families, descended from the early settlers of the county, ancestors of which were carried to Canada as prisoners during the Revolution, combine to corroborate these facts."

Such are the main details of what is known, related, and has been done in connection with this subject; and yet the public are as much in the dark to-day as to the probability of there being lead in any profitable quantity in this town, as they were seventy-five years ago. Scientists from near and far have explored the locality in the endeavor to wrest the secret from nature, but they have succeeded no better than did the unlettered pioneer. To sum the matter up it may not be presuming too much for us to say that while without doubt lead has been found here, at least in small quantities, it is on the other hand quite unlikely in the light of all the research that has been made that it exists in any extensive deposit.

---

<sup>1</sup> According to Mr. Branch, of Port Kent, these trips of the Indians continued down to about ten years ago.

Remains of tar works were found by the early settlers in the opening on the pine bluffs on the eastern part of the boundary line between Essex and Clinton counties, where Amherst's army is supposed to have encamped. Tar was made here, undoubtedly, for use in ship-building; and it is a somewhat singular coincidence that tar and pitch were made at the same locality and by a similar process, for the equipment of McDonough's fleet more than fifty years later.

Among the reminiscences of Mr. White is the statement that in about 1820 Earl Pierce, Thomas McLean, of Washington county, and Isaac Huestis, of Chesterfield, purchased three hundred acres of land nine miles above Keeseville on the river; it was then a wilderness. Huestis had already settled in the Auger pond vicinity. Pierce occupied the new purchase, built dams and mills and founded what was locally known as "Finchville," and afterward as New Sweden. The wagon road along the river then extended only a mile above Clintonville. At this locality quite a hamlet sprang up, comprising a store and several dwellings. Mr. Pierce died in 1836 from the effects of a fall.

With the general growth of the town and the increase in the lumber trade and manufacturing, and clearing up of the land, schools multiplied and churches accompanied them, as they always do, and the general intelligence and morality of the various communities was much advanced. The history of these institutions and the later business of the town appear a little further on.

*Physicians of Chesterfield.* — The town has been numerously and creditably represented by followers of the healing art. Among those who practiced here in early days were Drs. Clark, Fox, Forsyth, Jones, Allen and others. Dr. Clark was one of the first physicians here and located near Keeseville. He removed to Clintonville and later went to Ohio. Dr. Reuben Jones and Dr. Ralph P. Allen were across the line between the counties, but practiced on this side. Dr. James Forsyth remained in practice here for quite a period and went South. Dr. Fox practiced at Keeseville for a time and died while visiting at Champlain. Dr. Jacob Blaisdell was here soon after 1825, and Drs. Pollard and Asa Lawyer soon after. Dr. Adin Weston, son of Elijah Weston, preceded Dr. H. O. Tallmadge and practiced until recently. In 1859 Dr. William V. K. McLean came; he died in 1875. Dr. H. A. Houghton was homeopathic physician here for many years; and Drs. C. J. Farley and A. P. Hammond more recently. Drs. Haywood, Buller, Chase, and Samuel Fitzgerald, Bassett, D'Avignon and Mosier practiced in the Clintonville vicinity. Dr. F. M. Hopkins graduated from the medical college at Woodstock, Vt., in 1849, and began practice in Clintonville in the same year. In 1853 he removed to Keeseville, and practiced until his failing health made it necessary to take up other pursuits. In 1876 he began the drug business in Keeseville, to which his son has succeeded. He died in November, 1879.

Dr. H. O. Tallmadge graduated from the Castleton College of Medicine and



was a physician in Bellevue hospital two years, ending in 1845. He came to Keeseville in 1846 and has remained in practice to the present time, though in late years relinquishing much of his active work. Previous to entering the college at Castleton he attended lectures in Albany and New York, and later in the University of New York and the College of Physicians and Surgeons. His son, Dr. A. T. Tallmadge, is now associated with him.

Dr. W. M. Nead is a graduate of the Cleveland Homeopathic Hospital College, 1884, and is now associated with Dr. W. G. Pope, of Keeseville.

Dr. W. G. Pope graduated from the New York Homeopathic Medical College in March, 1870. He came directly to Keeseville and has practiced here since.

Dr. C. B. Barber is a graduate of the Albany Medical College. He practiced first in Canton, St. Lawrence county, and then in Bloomingdale, next at Black Brook and came to Keeseville in 1876.

Dr. M. B. Holcomb studied in St. Albans, Vt., and graduated from the Bellevue Hospital College in 1879. Came to Keeseville in 1880.

The dental profession is ably represented by G. C. Wilkinson who came here in 1860.

*Attorneys of Chesterfield.* — Among the early attorneys of the town may be mentioned Ezra C. Gross; he was a Member of Congress in 1819-21. David McNeil was his partner for a long time and went to Plattsburg. Thomas Tomlinson, practiced here and was in the Legislature in 1835-36 and Congress in 1841-43. George A. Simmons was a leading lawyer; was in the Legislature in 1840-42 and Member of Congress in 1852-57. Many able attorneys studied in his office, among whom was Thomas G. Alvord, of Onondaga county, who has spent much of his life in the councils of the State. Gardner Stow was a Keeseville attorney and went to Troy; he was attorney-general in 1853. Lemuel Stetson was another and was district-attorney of Clinton county in 1838, judge in 1847, in the Legislature in 1835, 1842 and 1862, and Member of Congress in 1843.

Martin Finch has lived in Keeseville forty-five years; was born in the town of Jay. He was educated at the academy in Bennington, Vt., and graduated from Williams College in 1837. He studied law in Keeseville in the office of Thomas A. Tomlinson and was admitted to the bar in 1842. He was a Member of the Legislature in 1860-62. His office is now on Front street.

F. A. Rowe studied law with A. K. Dudley, in Elizabethtown, and was admitted to the bar in May, 1876. He came to Keeseville in April of the next year. His office is in the Kingsland building, Front street.

Charles F. Tabor is a native of Shelburne, Chittenden county, Vt., and studied law with George A. Simmons, in Keeseville. He was admitted to the bar in 1838 at Albany. He removed to Troy and was in practice there over twenty years, when he returned to Keeseville in 1876 and has since continued in his profession here.

A. W. Boynton studied law with Robert S. Hale, in Elizabethtown, and was admitted to the bar in 1881. He came to Keeseville the next year and is now in practice.

Thomas F. Conway is a native of the county and was educated in the Keeseville Academy and at Columbia Law School. He was admitted in 1882 and has practiced in Keeseville since. He is now partner of A. W. Boynton. (See chapter on the bar of the county.)

It will not be out of place here to mention some of the prominent men of the town, whose abilities were recognized by their fellow-citizens by placing them in positions of trust and responsibility. Asa Adgate, the pioneer, was in the Legislature in 1798-99, and in 1815-17 was sent to Congress. He was an able representative.

Josiah Fisk was sent to the Legislature in 1825-26 and to the State Senate in 1832-35.

Richard Keese was a Member of Congress in 1827-29 and Elisha Winter in 1813-15.

Samuel Ames was elected to the Senate in 1872-73 and Ed. Kingsland, 2d., was in the State Legislature of 1872. Gordon Thomas was a Member of the Legislature in 1850; N. C. Boynton in 1855. Ezra C. Gross was a Member of Congress from here in 1819-21, and Thomas Tomlinson represented his town in the Legislature 1835-36 and in Congress in 1841. Numerous others doubtless deserve mention but these must suffice.

*Town Civil List.* — Owing to the destruction of the town records we are unable to give the early action of the authorities and the first town officers; but we have been fortunate in securing a list of the supervisors from the year 1818; they are as follows, with their years of service: 1818 to 1822 inclusive, Asa Adgate; 1823 to 1825, Philo Strong; 1826 to 1829 inclusive, Oliver Keese; 1830, Benjamin L. Beach; 1831-32, Robert Forsyth; 1833, John Macomber; 1834, Thomas A. Tomlinson; 1835, Charles M. Watson; 1836, Alvin Colvin; 1837-38, Levi Higby; 1839, William I. Whaling; 1840, Richard Peabody; 1841, Milote Baker; 1842, William I. Whaling; 1843-44, George Adgate; 1845, Thomas A. Tomlinson; 1846, George Adgate; 1847 to 1852 inclusive, Martin Finch; 1853, Grove M. Harwood; 1854, Norman Page; 1855, Charles M. Watson; 1856 to 1859 inclusive, Martin Finch; 1860-61, Ira S. Smith; 1862 to 1866 inclusive, Rufus Prescott; 1867-68, Nathaniel C. Boynton; 1869-70, Luther Whitney; 1871, Heman O. Matthews; 1872, ———; 1873-74, Benjamin D. Clapp; 1875 to 1881 inclusive, Nathaniel C. Boynton; 1882 to 1884 inclusive, Frank A. Rowe; 1885, Matthew A. Thomas.

Following are the present officers of the town: Supervisor, Matthew A. Thomas; clerk, Enos C. Bull; justice, Liberty B. Branch; assessor, Joseph Tierney; commissioner of highways, J. F. Caswell; overseers of the poor, O.



H. Kendrick, David Lawson; collector, B. J. McGuire; constables, E. M. Monroe, F. C. Stevens, Ransom Bowen, Edward Palmer, Daniel Peaseley; game constable, A. P. Boardman; excise commissioner, Martin Finch.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Keeseville Village.* — This thriving village is situated on the Ausable river about five miles from its mouth and lies partly in Essex and partly in Clinton county. The first settler in the immediate vicinity was Robert Hoyle, who moved here in about the year 1806. Robert W. Anderson and John Keese came in about the same time, the latter being the ancestor of the numerous Keese families who have been identified with most of the prominent interests of the town from that time to the present. Mr. Keese settled "about ten rods from the road directly east of the Lapham homestead." His wife was Elizabeth Titus and among his children were John, jr., Richard, and Oliver. They and their descendants have been foremost in all public enterprises and official stations in this town and county; from this family the village took its name.

The elder Keese was the original proprietor of most of the land on which the village of Keeseville is built. It is stated in the obituary published upon the death of his son Richard, who died at the age of eighty-nine years in Keeseville, that he and his son embarked extensively in the lumber business in 1815, when the place was known as "Anderson's Falls." Richard Keese was subsequently identified with various branches of business in Keeseville and was one of the officers of the Essex County Bank. He married Lydia Hurlbut, of Ferrisburgh, Vt., in 1817; she died in 1864. He was an ardent Democrat and served one term in Congress and was judge of the Common Pleas.

At the time under consideration, what was known as Bosworth's Tavern, or simply Bosworth's, was the center of what business was carried on in the town. This tavern was south of Keeseville in the Auger pond vicinity. Joseph Campbell built a small house there opposite the tavern, and sold goods there, and Thomas Worden also had a store.

Mr. Colvin's recollections of Keeseville in the early years of the century are quite vivid and interesting. He says: "A bridge was built across the river soon after the locality was settled, a dam and saw-mill erected and a house eighty or ninety feet long and about thirty wide put up and finished on the south side, which was used for a store; here the first goods were sold in Keeseville. The north part of the building was used for a tavern and a boarding-house. The building stood on the site of the present Mould brick block.

"Hoyle & Anderson engaged in the lumber business for the Quebec market. Benjamin P. Beach was an early settler here and the first blacksmith in the place. He built a dwelling on the west side of the street about opposite the site of Dr. Tallmadge's house, and a blacksmith and trip-hammer shop on the site of the Water Works engine house."

Judge Josiah Fisk was one of the early leading citizens of the place and,

according to Mr. Colvin, in company with Robert Forsyth in 1816 moved upon what was known as the Elisha Winter farm and lately as the Hatch farm. Mr. Fisk soon engaged in the lumber business, with almost everybody else, and shipped enormous rafts to Quebec. He followed the business for several years and in 1819 collected a raft which covered over two acres of water, which was successfully taken to Canada. He soon afterward purchased property in Keeseville and organized the firm of Fisk, Keese, & Co. with Oliver Keese, 2d, as his partner; they built the grist-mill and a woolen factory. The other members of this firm were William Peters and Richard Peabody.

Alfred Hartwell came here early and engaged in the manufacture of cloths, carding wool and dressing cloth, in a wooden building which was removed in about the year 1824 by Sylvanus Wells, and the stone structure erected in its place.

Colonel Thomas A. Tomlinson came here in 1824 and was the first lawyer to settle here.

About 1820 Rodman Brown came into the place and built a tavern, which he kept for a number of years.

Robert Hoyle was interested with the Keese family in extensive lumbering operations previous to 1810. They also built the first bridge over the river where the stone arch bridge now stands, and started various business enterprises.

Edmund and Nelson Kingsland came here a few years before 1830 and became leading men in all enterprises looking to the general advancement of the village. Nelson was a wagon-maker by trade; the brother started a wagon factory about 1831 in the old "Beach" building.

Artemas White, who is now one of the venerable residents of the village, was born in Burlington in 1808 and came to Keeseville in 1824, though his recollections of the place extend farther back. He was one of a family of seven children, but one of whom beside himself (a sister) now lives in the county. Mr. White has resided in the house he now occupies for fifty-five years. He recalls but two buildings now standing in the village that were there in 1824; these are the harness shop of Mr. Wolcott, in which Seth Pope, one of the early merchants, sold goods, and the house now occupied by C. F. Tabor. Mr. White and Norman Whitney are the only men now living in the village who were here in 1824. Lumber and nail making were then the principal occupations. Benjamin P. Beach was, according to Mr. White, a prominent lumber dealer; he also had a wagon shop and a trip hammer where the Water Works now stand. He was killed about 1830 by a log rolling over him. Fisk, Keese & Co., Martin Pope and M. I. Vandewarker also kept a great many teams busy in the lumber traffic, and seventy-five loads might be seen at one time moving along the lake road. M. I. Vandewarker had a saw-mill at the upper dam; Martin Pope two at the same place; Fisk, Keese & Co. where the



lower grist-mill stands, and Granger & Co. at the same locality; George Fowler had one on the Auger pond outlet and Isaac Heustis one on the Butternut pond outlet. Fisk, Keese & Co. also had a gang-mill at the upper dam, on the Clinton side — the first mill of the kind on the river.

In 1824 there was a grist-mill located where the Prescott furniture manufactory now is, which was then operated by Amzi Hicks; another was built just south of this one by Fisk, Keese & Co. who were succeeded by Fisk & Tomlinson, they by Wm. Tabor and he by Richard Hoag, who had it to 1883, when it was leased by N. C. Boynton. The members of the firm of Fisk, Keese & Co. who are so prominently connected with the early business interests of the place, were Josiah Fisk, Oliver Keese, Richard Peabody and William Peters; they kept a store among other enterprises. Alfred Hartwell, already spoken of by Mr. Colvin, was interested with the firm at one period, and had the woolen-mill in the building now occupied by Mr. Prescott's factory. That was followed by a wire manufactory, which was operated a few years by Edmund Baber. The Kingslands then manufactured tools, bolts, etc., there a few years. It was next changed to a twine factory. The building then stood unoccupied until Mr. Prescott took it.

There was a tannery here in 1824 where the Baptist Church now stands, which was operated by Alexander Tremble, and another one on the other side of the stream.

The first rolling-mill here was built in 1815, and in the next year was put in operation. It was run by a company called the Keeseville Rolling and Slitting Mill Company. The two principal members of the firm were Richard Keese and Oliver Keese, the other members being John W. Anderson, Rodman and Caleb Brown, and Joseph Call. Richard Keese remained in the firm but a short time, and was followed by his son, Richard, jr. The company manufactured nail-plate chiefly, which was "slit" into horse-nail rods. In 1816 a machine for cutting straight nails without heads was introduced. The machine that headed the nails was run by hand. About 1825 Joshua Aiken and Paschal P. Spear introduced nail machines that cut the nails complete. The nail manufacture was afterward carried on by the Kingsland Brothers. In 1820 Richard Keese built the upper dam and put in operation the two-fire forge on the Clinton county side; his ore came from the Arnold bed in that county, and the product was worked up by the rolling-mill described. Elias A. Hurlburt became a partner about this time. In 1826 Richard Keese was sent to Congress, and sold out his business interest to Hurlburt, Aiken & Prindle, who conducted a heavy manufacturing interest for a number of years. About 1840 the old forge at the upper dam was abandoned, and a new one with four fires erected at the lower works.

The first foundry in the place was built by Joseph Goulding in 1829. In 1832 the firm of Goulding & Peabody was formed, new buildings erected, and

a large business carried on for several years. After some changes in proprietorship the property was bought in 1865 by Nelson Kingsland. In 1870 Hon. E. Kingsland, son of Nelson, took a half interest in the works and remained till 1878; the establishment is now in charge of George and Henry Kingsland, sons of Nelson. Some twenty-five years ago the firm of E. & J. D. Kingsland leased the old woolen factory, a fine stone structure on the bank of the stream; there they manufactured tools a few years. About 1860 Levi Scribner began the manufacture of axletrees in the building, which he continued about two years. In June, 1870, the manufacture of wire was begun there and continued about three years. W. H. Prescott & Son now own the building, having secured it at a great sacrifice, and carry on an extensive furniture manufacturing business, shipping large quantities, and stocking their own store in the village.

On the 8th of May, 1834, the Manchester Cotton Manufacturing Company was incorporated with a capital of \$50,000. It was under the management of the following named gentlemen as directors: Elkanah Watson, Richard Keese, Joseph Goulding, Charles M. Watson and Daniel Woodman.

In May, 1836, the Keeseville Woolen and Cotton Manufacturing Company was incorporated, with Josiah Fisk, Richard Keese, Alfred Hartwell, Oliver Keese 2d, and Andrew Thompson as directors. It was through these companies that the large stone factory above spoken of was erected. Their operations were not successful.

In the language of an old resident, "after 1830 there were so many new enterprises started that it would be hard to keep track of them." The place depended for its growth largely upon its own local resources and advantages as a manufacturing center; even the railroad agitation, and construction in the vicinity in later years, produced but little effect upon the place. An old settler says: "The village has never been much affected by the railroads; the people have lived and thriven within themselves."

The Ausable Horse-Nail Company was organized in 1863 with a capital of \$40,000, which subsequently, in 1865, was increased to \$80,000. Its charter was renewed in 1883 and its capital stock raised to \$160,000 at that time. Its works are located upon three dams, furnishing its water-power, which is exclusively used, two being in the village of Keeseville and one about a mile below. It has three nail factories, containing fifty-five "Dodge" horse-nail machines; a nail-finishing factory, rolling-mill, machine-shop, saw-mill, box-shop, storage and various other buildings which, with the land owned by the company, cover upwards of two acres in area. The metal used for its nails is imported in bars and rolled in its mills into nail-rods, the yearly production of rods being about 1,200 tons. Boxes for packing nails are made from lumber cut from logs in its saw-mill, and the nails made and shipped in these packages, of twenty-five pounds to each box, are of the first quality, and find



ready sale in all parts of the United States. The company furnishes employment to about two hundred hands, and the average yearly product is about one thousand tons of finished horse-shoe nails.

The present extensive business of the company has grown since 1863 (when it commenced with ten nail-machines and with sales of about one hundred tons of nails for the first year), under the supervision of Mr. Edmund Kingsland, who inaugurated the enterprise, and until his death, in April, 1884, was its president and head. Its officers now are Abraham Bussing, president; Daniel Dodge, vice-president; James R. Romeyn, secretary, and Edmund K. Baber, treasurer and manager.

Keeseville has suffered in common with all other settlements on the Ausable and its branches from destructive floods. When there has been a large fall of snow followed by copious spring rains, that stream is wont to attract the anxious and almost undivided attention of the majority of people who inhabit its locality, until the down-rushing waters in some measure subside; it becomes a roaring, rushing, boiling flood carrying destruction in its track. One of the most destructive freshets, as far as Keeseville is concerned, was that of 1856. The saw-mill, grist-mill, the nail factory, two gas furnaces and the forge pipes and building, the bellows-house connected therewith, blacksmith shop and rolling-mill, were either wholly or partly destroyed. The large stone machine shop at the upper dam was swept away, and bridges and other valuable property were engulfed in the mad torrent.

Neither has the village escaped destructive fires. In 1867 a heavy fire occurred which destroyed many buildings and unfortunately consumed the town records, necessitating re-districting the town for school and road purposes. Another fire less destructive occurred in 1878, and a third one in 1882, which caused a loss of more than \$60,000 and swept away a large part of the business houses of the place. These repeated losses finally awakened the inhabitants to the necessity of better facilities for the extinguishment of fires. The water works were accordingly established in 1883. Water is pumped from the river direct to the mains on the Holly system. There are two pumps, one for fire purposes and the other for domestic uses. Their capacity is 450,000 gallons for the domestic pump and 1,450,000 for the fire pump. Two wheels are in use, one of eighty and the other of thirty horse-power. The works cost \$35,000, for which bonds were issued. About five miles of pipe are laid and forty-eight hydrants placed. The first and present fire commissioners are William Harper, president; E. K. Baber, Rufus Prescott, and H. M. Mould, secretary and treasurer.

The village was incorporated in 1878. Following were the first board of officers: Daniel Dodge, president; Willis Mould, Heman O. Matthews, and Rufus Prescott. The presidents since the incorporation have been as follows: Charles F. Tabor, 1879; B. D. Clapp, 1880; Edmund K. Baber, 1881, 1882, and 1883; H. M. Mould, 1884; N. C. Boynton, 1885.

Early in the century Joseph Coville, the pioneer, and Richard Buckmeister carried the mail from the south through to Plattsburg. The first post-office in this town was established at "Bosworth's," and Mr. Bosworth was undoubtedly the first postmaster. John Macomber was also one of the early officials in that capacity. He was followed in 1816, by Oliver Keese, who kept the office in the store of Fisk, Keese & Co. Mr. Keese was succeeded by Oliver Peabody, after whom came in succession Gordon T. Thomas, Arthur C. Nelson, Carlisle D. Beaumont, M. S. Hoffnagle, and George Adgate. Joseph Reynolds was next appointed, but soon afterward died; Willis Mould then performed the duties of the office, Mrs. Reynolds receiving the income. Ira Smith succeeded and turned the office over to Henry Stevens the present incumbent (1885).

*Present Mercantile Interests.* — The first store in Keeseville was kept by John W. Anderson in one end of the long building already mentioned in the language of Mr. Colvin. Keese, Fisk & Keese opened a general store about 1826 on the Essex county side of the river, and the same year Keese, Hurlburt & Keese established a store on the opposite side. Taylor & Co. began trade in 1868 (W. C. Taylor, R. B. Marsh, and C. S. Taylor), Marsh & Taylor succeeded, and in 1878 Mr. Taylor bought his partner's interest and has since conducted the business alone. He occupied his present location in 1883. H. S. Fletcher opened a general store in the winter of 1877; he is one of the old business men of the place. In 1882 his son joined him.

N. C. Boynton kept a stock of groceries in the store which has been occupied since the spring of 1883 by Thomas & Romeyn.

C. R. Sherman began general trade in 1884 at his present location. George H. Prescott kept groceries there previously. J. Farrell & Co. carry a stock of groceries and crockery, F. H. Adgate being the partner; they began in their present location in 1883. B. J. McGuire is in the grocery trade, corner of Main and Front streets, where he opened in December, 1884. Previous to that time and since 1882 he was in the Commercial Hotel building.

B. D. Clapp & Co. do a large hardware trade, the firm being composed of B. D. Clapp, M. Sowles and C. E. M. Edwards. Business was begun in 1871 opposite their present location, where the harness shop is located. Mr. Clapp is a prominent business man in the community.

A. W. Kincaid began the sale of boots and shoes in 1875 opposite his present location, to which he removed in 1882. The building was previously occupied by Mr. Prescott with furniture.

J. M. Atwood is engaged in the clothing trade, having come here from Boston in 1876. M. Baum is also engaged in clothing and furnishing goods trade. He was preceded by his brother Charles, who was here during the last war.

Willis Mould bought out the drug store of Hasbrouck & Sanborn in 1857; he was associated with Dr. H. O. Tallmadge for a few years and continued



alone to 1869, when his son formed a partnership with him, the firm being W. Mould & Son. It continued thus until the death of Willis Mould in February, 1883, since which time H. M. Mould has continued the business. The elder Mould came to this place in 1845, and in 1868 built the Mould Block, on the site which was burned over in the preceding year. F. H. Hopkins's sons succeeded their father in the drug trade; the latter began business in April, 1876, and the present location was occupied in 1877. Upon the retirement of Dr. Hopkins the sons took the store (1879).

Charles Sterns began trade at his present location about seventeen years ago; the firm at first being Sterns & Rogers. Mr. Sterns bought his partner's interest and has since added millinery to his dry goods business. Mrs. F. A. Robarge also carries on the millinery trade.

W. F. Cottrill opened a jewelry and fancy goods trade in the fall of 1874. He was burned out on Main street in the last fire and removed to his present location on Front street. W. H. Prescott began a jewelry trade in December, 1884, corner of Main and Front streets. R. C. Landon opened his fancy goods business on Front street in May, 1881.

*Hotels.* — One of the first, if not the very first tavern in the town, was Bosworth's, three miles south of Keeseville on the road to Elizabethtown. This house was the general meeting place on all public occasions and was known over a wide extent of territory. About the year 1812 John W. Anderson opened a public house in one end of the long building in which he had a store. He was an energetic business man, as we have noted, and is also remembered by old inhabitants as an excellent singer. Mr. Brown kept an early tavern on the site of the former Ausable House. Following him, in about 1824, Robert Forsyth kept the old Adirondack House, which stood on the site of the brick building in which is the present post-office. The Ausable House was erected by a company a little later than 1840. The present Delmont House was built after the last fire by Louis Nollette, and has been conducted since 1884 by H. H. Vanaranum. The Commercial Hotel was also erected since the fire by Michael McGuire, who now keeps it. The Keeseville House is kept by James Rafter. The splendid Lake View House is located near Birmingham Falls, and will accommodate two hundred guests. The main portion was built in 1874 and several additions have since been put on. It is closed during winter.

*Banking.* — In April, 1832, the Essex County Bank, village of Keeseville, was incorporated by the Legislature, with a capital stock of \$100,000, divided into four thousand shares. Oliver Keese, 2d, Martin Pope, and Elias Hurlburt, of Keeseville; Reuben Whallon, William D. Ross, of Essex; William Burt, of Clintonville, and James Duane, of Duane, Franklin county, were its commissioners under the act. Judge Fisk was the first president of this bank; its affairs were wound up in 1862.

The Keeseville National Bank was organized in December, 1870, with a

\$100,000 capital. The first president was Nelson Kingsland and the first cashier, Samuel Ames. Edmund K. Baber is now president of the bank, and C. M. Hopkins cashier.

*The Press.*—With the growth of the town the need of a newspaper was felt here as it is in all Yankee communities ; and there is always somebody with the strongest confidence that he was born a journalist. The Keeseville *Herald* was started in 1825 by F. P. Allen, who was soon succeeded by A. H. Allen ; he continued the paper with some interruptions until 1841.

The Keeseville *Argus* was established by Adonijah Emmons about 1831 and continued five or six years.

In September, 1839, the *Essex County Republican* was established by Wendell Lansing. In 1843 he sold out to John C. Osburn. He was succeeded in the publication by Milliken & Morgan and then by Mr. Morgan alone ; Glen Tarbell then took the paper, and in 1854 James Dickinson succeeded, but turned it over to Joseph W. Reynolds, who conducted the office to about the breaking out of the war, when he died, and N. C. Boynton took the establishment and continued the business until 1867, when it was burned.

In the mean time Mr. Lansing returned to Keeseville in 1854 and started the *Northern Standard*, which he successfully conducted until 1860 ; at this time he went South, selling his establishment to Joseph W. Reynolds, before mentioned. Returning from the south, Mr. Lansing went to Plattsburg and conducted a paper there four years, returning to Keeseville in 1868. He then re-established the *Essex County Republican*, which has been one of the leading country journals of Northern New York. Mr. Lansing's son (A. W. Lansing) is now associated with him in the publication.

Among the various newspaper enterprises that have failed here was the Ausable River *Gazette*, begun about 1847 by D. Turner and continued five or six years. The *Old Settler*, by A. H. Allen, removed to Saratoga Springs. The *Northern Gazette*, about 1851, continued several years. The *Keeseville News*, published by the Keeseville Publishing Company from August, 1879, and soon discontinued.

The senior Mr. Lansing is one of the veteran journalists of the State and is now seventy-eight years of age. He is a native of Madison county, and obtained his education in the schools of his native place and the Cazenovia Academy. At twenty-one he entered a printing office in Greenwich, Washington county, and eight months later was running a paper. In 1839 he established the *Essex County Republican*, as stated. He was prominent in the anti-slavery movement, and has always been a pronounced Radical. He raised a company in the 77th Regiment and remained in the service until forced to abandon it by failing health. He is a vigorous writer, a sagacious politician, and wears his venerable years amid the respect of the community and his extensive acquaintance elsewhere.



*Schools.* — The first school of much importance in Keeseville stood on the hill, on the site of the present building. Ira D. Knowles taught there in early days. The schools of the place are now organized under the union free school system, which went into operation in 1873.

The Keeseville Academy was incorporated in May, 1835, as a stock organization. Joseph Fisk and Martin Pope were the incorporators. The first trustees were John Whitcomb, Richard Keese, Richard H. Peabody, George A. Simmons, Andrew Thompson, Reuben Jones, Ralph P. Allen, Joseph Lapham and Henry F. Granger. There were fifty-nine stockholders in the company. The first principal of the institution was Jonathan Lamb. He was followed by Messrs. Smith, Gregory, Gilbert Thayer, W. F. Bascom, Charles H. Seaton, William C. Aumock, Lewis, William H. Landon, E. F. Bullard. In 1880 W. M. Phelps was principal, and was succeeded by W. R. Newton in 1882 to 1884, and A. C. Ferrin to the present time. The present building, forty by sixty feet in dimensions, was erected in 1845. The number of students at that time was one hundred and five, and an average of nine teachers have been employed. The value of the property was then about \$4,600. On the 13th of June, 1870, the trustees of the Union Free School secured a lease of the property and still occupy it under the same lease.

*Masonic.* — The following account of the Masonic Order in this town was furnished by George C. Wilkinson, esq., of Keeseville:—

The present Masonic lodge in Keeseville, Ausable River Lodge No. 149, was chartered in 1849, on the 20th day of June. Worshipful Brother Ira Haywood was the first master, Brother Winslow C. Watson, senior warden, and Brother William H. Brockway, junior warden. The charter is signed by John D. Willard, grand master; William H. Melnor, deputy grand master; G. S. Barnum, senior grand warden; Nelson Randall, junior grand warden. R. W. Frank M. Hopkins, who was for many years master of this lodge, was assistant grand lecturer under R. W. William H. Drew, and aided very materially in perfecting our present system of work and lectures. R. W. Brother Hopkins was made grand sword bearer in 1860 and was elected by the Grand Lodge as grand lecturer in 1861. The lodge has now a membership of about one hundred, and has about \$1,500 in its treasury. George C. Wilkinson is the present master, W. G. Pope, senior warden, and W. A. Thomas, junior warden.

There was a lodge here called Peru Lodge No. 319 that surrendered its charter during the Morgan trouble. We have been unable to find its records. There was also a chapter here called "McDonough Chapter," of which we find the records from March 31st, 1825, to January 26th, 1831, but nothing to show how or why it ceased to act. In 1825 James Pilling was high priest, Sidney Ketchum was king, and Ralph P. Allen was scribe. There is not a man alive to-day whose name appears in its records.

## CHURCHES.

*Baptist.* — The Keeseville Baptist Church owes its origin to the efforts of Isaac Finch, who located about a mile above Peru Landing in 1787; in the following year he organized the church movement. The society was constituted in 1791 in a log-house at Peru occupied by Uriah Palmer. The first members were Edward Everett and his wife, Kinne Newcomb, Robert Cochran, Stephen Reynolds, Lucretia Reynolds, Sarah Palmer, Noble Averill, Polly Averill, John Cochran, Isaac Finch, Abigail Finch, John Finch, Sarah Finch, Simeon Barber, Catherine Barber and Uriah Palmer. Noble Averill was the first clerk, and Solomon Brown the first pastor; he was from Granville, Washington county. This was then the only church in this region. After about two years Mr. Brown left and was succeeded by Rev. Parker Reynolds. Two years later he removed to Jonesborough, but returned in 1818 and resumed the pastorage of this church, continuing three years. Meetings were held in several of the towns hereabouts until July, 1823, when they began to hold meetings in the school-house at Keeseville. In 1824 Ebenezer Mott (who was subsequently ordained (1826) in the yellow school-house) came from Crown Point and assumed pastoral duties. He left in 1827 and was succeeded in October, 1828, by Conant Sawyer. He was afterward ordained (1829) as an evangelist. He left the church in October, 1830, and in the next year Robert Bryant took his place; succeeding him came Robert C. Brisbane, of Fabius, N. Y., in 1833; Rev. Henry Green, of Cornwall, Vt., in 1835, who was only temporarily engaged; in the same year, Rev. Hiram Safford; in 1840, Rev. Conant Sawyer; in 1845, Rev. Charles Nichols; 1847, Rev. L. Fletcher; 1849, Rev. Washington Kingsley; 1851, Rev. J. W. Eaton; in this year the new church was built on Front street; Alfred Baber, Edmund and Jacob Kingsland and others were liberal contributors, and Joseph Pilling presented the society with a fine organ; the old building was sold to the Catholics. Rev. Mr. Eaton resigned in 1855, and was followed by Rev. John E. Cheshire; 1859, Rev. J. F. Bigelow, D. D.; three years followed without a pastor; 1868, Rev. S. D. Moxley to 1876; Rev. John Matthews till 1883, and Rev. Evan Davis, the present pastor. The parsonage was erected in 1874 by Deacon Daniel Dodge and Edmund Kingsland. The following have served the church as deacons: Uriah Palmer, Mr. Taylor, Milo Fuller, Luther Rowe, Pascal P. Spear, James Hinds, Humphrey Taylor, John Tennant, Levi S. Scribner, Daniel Dodge.

*Presbyterian Church.* — In 1806 this incipient organization met at the dwelling of Samuel Whitney in Chesterfield; there were present thirteen persons who desired to form a church society. The church was formed in a log house which was occupied up to a few years ago by Mrs. Conger. Rev. Cyrus Comstock, Chester Armstrong and James Gilbert, among others, preached here in early days. The earliest records of the church date back to 1809.



The early deacons were Samuel Whitney, Matthew Adgate and Marcus Barnes. In 1828 stated meetings of the Congregational Church were held in the old yellow school-house at Keeseville. The first pastor (1829) was Rev. Solomon Lyman to 1834; the corner-stone of the church edifice was laid in 1830, under direction of Martin Pope, John Brigham, Henry H. Mather, Joshua Aiken, Joseph P. Reynolds. The structure was completed in 1831. The first trustees were Joshua Aiken, Joseph P. Reynolds and William R. Peters. The first meeting of the society was held at Keeseville on the 12th of October, 1829. Percival Morse was the first clerk. From 1834 to 1838, Rev. A. D. Brinkerhoff was pastor. He was succeeded by Rev. H. D. Kitchell; 1836 and 1856 Rev. John Mattocks; the present church building was dedicated in 1852; 1857 to 1858, Rev. John R. Young served the church; Rev. Selden Haynes to 1860; Rev. A. Hemenway to 1864; Rev. Henry E. Butler to 1881; L. H. Elliott to 1884; Rev. C. S. Newhall is the present pastor. In 1871 the vestry was remodeled at a cost of \$700. In 1874 the audience-room was repaired at a cost of \$3,500. In 1866-67 the parsonage was purchased, refitted and occupied. This society was organized as a Congregational society, but in 1845 it united with the Presbytery of Champlain. The following have served the church as deacons: 1806, Judge Matthew Adgate and Samuel Whitney; 1814, Marcus Barnes; 1830 and 1858, Joseph P. Reynolds; 1834 and 1840, Curtiss Woodruff; 1840 and 1854, Myron Ticknor; 1842, Daniel Adgate; 1853, Jonathan Davis; 1855, Charles Morris; 1854, Jonas Olmstead; 1864, Cyrus Andrews; 1875, James H. Deeming. A Sabbath-school was organized early in the history of the church but there are no records of its progress. Its present superintendent is A. C. Andrews.

*Keeseville Methodist Church.* — Rev. Samuel Draper was the first Methodist minister who preached about here. He is remembered as a quaint man with a decidedly humorous turn. In 1823 the Methodists held a meeting in the yellow school-house (which seems to have so well served all public purposes), and about 1825 decided to build an edifice on the summit of Port Douglass hill. In 1827 they had their first regular pastor, whose name is not recorded. The first records (1828), show the names of David S. Eggleston, Chauncey G. Moon, Samuel Southard and Reuben Westcott as stewards. Among the first members were Heman Sprague, Rufus Harwell, Jeremiah Hayes, Abel Chamberlain, James Garrett, John Whitcomb, Elihu Hayes, Wesson Macomber, Josiah Fisk and E. F. Barber. In 1830 the stone church was begun on Front street, Keeseville, and dedicated by Rev. Truman Seymour. Rev. Merritt Bates was then the regular pastor. Following is the list of successive pastors: 1827-28, Rev. Elijah Crane; 1829-30, Rev. Parmalee Chamberlain; 1831, Merritt Bates; 1832, Truman Seymour; 1834-35, John Pegg; 1836-37, Charles P. Clark; 1838-39, Friend W. Smith; 1840, Merritt Bates; 1841-43, W. Chipp; 1843-44, H. Meeken; 1845-46, Z. Phillips; 1847-48,

James Rawson; 1849-50, W. P. Gray; 1851-52, W. Griffin; 1853-54, G. C. Wells; 1855-56, C. F. Burdick; 1857-58, Samuel Meredith; 1859, H. T. Johns; 1860-61, A. Canoll; 1862-63, T. A. Griffin; 1864-65, S. McChesney; 1866-67, James M. Edgerton; 1868-69, B. B. Loomis; 1870-71, Robert Fox; 1872, M. A. Wicker; 1873, W. P. Rulison; 1874, M. A. Wicker; 1875, W. H. Rawson; 1877, J. J. Noe.

The most extensive revival was under the ministration of Rev. Merritt Bates in 1840. A large Sabbath-school has been continued from the first. The following have been superintendents: Elijah F. Barber, Gilbert Hayes, Amasa Macomber, C. D. Beaumont, Samuel E. Keeler, Joseph Beach, Charles Cheeney, Rufus Prescott, Henry S. Fletcher, Hurlburt Keese, Wendell Lansing. The church property was valued in 1880 at \$9,000 and was out of debt.

*Roman Catholic Church.* — Michael Keenan was about the first Roman Catholic who located near Keeseville. In 1822 Rev. Father Barber held services here for two weeks and was succeeded by Father McGilligan. The first priest stationed here was Rev. Father Rodgers; next came Father Rooney and Father McDonald. In 1851 Father McLaughlin succeeded Father McDonald; 1852-61, Rev. James Keveny; 1861-63, Rev. Philip Keveny; 1863-66, Rev. William Carroll, and in 1864, Rev. Father Driscoll, as associates; 1866-1870, Rev. John McDonald; 1870 until after 1880, Rev. Tobias Glenn; the present pastor is Rev. Father Devlin. The church is in a prosperous condition.

*St. Paul's Episcopal Church.* — This society was organized January 31st, 1853. The first members were Andrew Thompson, Lucretia Thompson, Catharine Tallmadge, Cornelia Hasbrouck, Oliver Keese, sr., Josiah Keese, L. Keese, Caleb B. Barton, Francis Barton, Elizabeth Q. Ames, Jane Granger, Mary Ellen Ames, William Twilger, Caroline Twilger, Robert Shelden, Sophia Shelden, John G. S. Moore, Ellen Moore, Harry Granger, Kate Rogers, Mary Rogers, Francis Wiles, Charles M. Watson, Elizabeth Watson, Caroline Forsyth, Mary Tabor, Julia O. Putnam and Susan Rogers. Following were the first church officers: Wardens — Oliver Keese, sr., Andrew Thompson. Vestrymen — Caleb D. Barton, James Rogers, Charles M. Watson, Joseph Parks, I. O. Hasbrouck, Samuel Ames, Shakespeare Allen, Charles Allen. The first minister was F. C. Putnam. The church edifice was consecrated by William Crosswell Doane, S. T. D., Bishop of Albany, July 28th, 1874. The land was donated by Oliver Keese, sr., and A. Thompson. The rectors have been F. C. Putnam, R. C. Trivette, W. H. Cook, Charles A. Bragdon, William L. Bull. G. D. Adams is the present rector.

*Port Kent.* — The vicinity of what was afterward named Port Kent was settled early in the century, as already recorded. It is a hamlet situated in the northeast part of the town on Lake Champlain and at one period was the center of



prominent industries and a great shipping point of lumber and other products for a large extent of territory lying to the westward. Among those who have been most prominent in the building up and business prosperity of Port Kent, the Watson family are conspicuous. Elkanah Watson was born in Plymouth, Mass. His wife, Rachel Smith, was a native of Norton, in the same State; they were married in 1784. In the year 1820 Mr. Watson, his wife and one child removed to Chesterfield and settled on the site of Port Kent, where he subsequently erected the large stone mansion, which has ever since been a sightly and well known landmark on the high shore of the lake. Mr. Watson was a man of broad views, enlightened intelligence and with a large knowledge of public affairs. He was intimately associated with many of the prominent men of Revolutionary times, traveled extensively in Europe and stood with his foot on the step of George the Third's throne when that monarch declared the United Colonies to be free and independent. He was for some time an *attache* of the diplomatic mission of John Adams. Returning to this country he first settled in Pittsfield, Mass., and then came to Port Kent, as stated. He is said to have been the first to suggest the feasibility of constructing a water-way to unite the lakes in the eastern part of the State with the Atlantic. One of the acts of his life of which he was proud to speak, was the founding of several agricultural societies in various localities, one of them being in Berkshire, Mass.; and he was a man who was in advance of his time in most matters of general importance. He became an extensive land owner, and died in Port Kent on the 5th of December, 1842. He had seven children, prominent among whom were Charles M. and Winslow C. The former was born October 8th, 1799, and was married to Elizabeth B. Shankland, at Port Kent, in December, 1850; he died at the age of sixty-six in January, 1865; his widow now resides on the old homestead at Port Kent.

Winslow C. Watson was born December 22d, 1803, and died at the residence of his son, W. C. Watson, on September 21st, 1884, at the age of eighty years. The following sketch of his life is condensed from a published obituary:—

A portion of his boyhood was spent at his father's noble old residence in Pittsfield, Mass. He read law with Chief Justice Ambrose Spencer and was admitted to the bar in 1824 and practiced law in Plattsburg till 1833, when he was obliged to withdraw from his profession on account of ill health. Mr. Watson's mind was essentially a legal one and he was considered by his contemporaries, such as A. C. Hand, John C. Spencer, George A. Simmons, Wm. Kent, Judge Beckwith, Judge Ross and Judge Stetson, as the peer of any of them, particularly as an equity lawyer. Mr. Watson removed from Plattsburg to Manchester, Vt., where he was engaged in settling the affairs of his father-in-law, Governor Richard Skinner, and in recovering his health, till the fall of 1840 when he removed to Port Kent and built his house on the bluff north of that picturesque village, where he resided till he removed to the house of his son in Plattsburg, ten weeks before his death.

Mr. Watson was an earnest politician, and though a Democrat, sustained Mr. Lincoln and the policy of a vigorous prosecution of the war.

Mr. Watson held many offices of trust. He was a Master in Chancery and State Senator in Vermont, and a delegate from that State to the National Democratic Convention of 1839, and from New York in 1848 and 1856, in all of which he took a very prominent part. He was often a delegate to ecclesiastical meetings of the Presbyterian Church, of which church he was a member and office-bearer for more than fifty years.

Mr. Watson was a member of the political party usually in the minority in his district, and it was often said of him that had this fact been otherwise and had ill health not driven him so early from the practice of the law, he would have attained the highest positions officially and at the bar. But as these and other circumstances turned him into the path of literature, it cannot be said that they were for him unfortunate, as they furnished him with leisure to accomplish more for the literary world, we think it would be safe to say, than has been achieved by any resident of Essex county or of the northern portion of the State.

His contributions to the general history of the country have been great and valuable. *The Men and Times of the Revolution*, *The Pioneer History of the Champlain Valley*, *The Survey of Essex County, N. Y.*, *The History of Essex County, N. Y.*, and *Military Annals of Crown Point and Ticonderoga* were the most conspicuous of his contributions to historical literature.

But his agricultural and miscellaneous essays, his addresses before Free Masons, which society he ranked before all other organizations except the Christian religion, his addresses before agricultural societies, particularly before the Essex County, N. Y., Agricultural Society, of which he was for many years the president, and reports to the New York State Agricultural Society, of which he was for a time a vice-president, his addresses before literary and scientific societies, and on funeral occasions, and before missionary and Bible societies, and his contributions to the *New York Observer*, the *New York World*, this paper for many years, all the county papers of both Clinton and Essex counties, and numerous magazine articles on all sorts of topics, form a great mass of literary matter, which would fill several large volumes, and most of which have been preserved and may, in connection with the historical works first mentioned, be some day republished.

Mr. Watson was thrice married and leaves no widow and but two sons, Richard S. Watson, of Port Kent, Winslow C. Watson, of Plattsburg, and two daughters, Mrs. Henry N. Hewitt and Mrs. Luther Whitney, of Keeseville.

In 1822 Elkanah Watson, John Cramer, Jonathan H. Douglas, Amos W. Barnum, J. Sherman, Robert Hoyle and James Pilling, all early residents of the town, formed a company to build a wharf at Port Kent, which was accomplished, and the road to Keeseville was much improved about that time. The



place was named by Mr. Watson soon after his location there, in honor of Chancellor Kent. (See later pages.) When the Champlain canal was opened the lumber traffic received a wonderful impetus, and the shipping from this port was enormous; a period of great business activity succeeded, and it seemed that the place might attain a good deal of importance. The steamers of the lake touched here and a ferry boat, the "Gen. Green," ran across the lake. Colonel Charles Watson built a brick store, and a mercantile business was established by Gilson & Grant.

Liberty B. Branch, who has lived here since 1842, gives the following reminiscences of the port: The brick store built by Mr. Watson was occupied for a time by B. H. Estes. He carried on several occupations, rectified cider, made matches, and worked up quite a trade in the "black sand" as it was called (a mixture of fine iron ore and sand found on the lake beach) which he sold for blotting purposes before blotting paper came into use. In the winter of 1840-41 he built a canal boat on which he transported his goods to New York. He was succeeded in the store by Mr. Watson and later by Smith & Walker. Albert Rice traded there for about ten years and was the last merchant in that store.

Mr. Estes opened a store in the building beside the brick structure still standing, at the time Rice was in the brick store, where he sold groceries and medicines, the latter to some extent of his own manufacture. He died in Port Kent about 1865; his widow now lives in Brooklyn. This store was subsequently occupied by Moses L. Gale and later by B. B. Farnham and C. D. Sawyer. The latter remained there till 1879, when he built the new store on the hill.

Peter Comstock kept a store on Bolivar street for nearly five years, after whom George Wells kept it; the building was removed to make way for the lecture room.

In 1842 Oswald Brewster kept a hotel on the corner now occupied by Benjamin Burland; the old house is the one now occupied by Mr. Burland as a dwelling. Another tavern was kept by Lyman Colvin near the wharf; he was followed by Benjamin Miner and he by Wells & Hayes; it then passed into the hands of Melchor Hoffnagle; it is now unused. In 1844 or 1845 the hotel now kept by Horatio Burroughs was built for a grocery by David Everett, who occupied it for a short time. Horace Burroughs first opened the tavern and was succeeded by his son. The Branch House was built by L. B. Branch in 1875 and has since been enlarged. It was leased to E. B. Sprague in the beginning of 1885, has been refitted and is a pleasant and well kept house. Mr. Eggleston kept a tavern in what is now one of the oldest buildings in the place, on the corner of Sable and Lake streets.

In 1842 John Tenant did the blacksmithing for the place; he has been succeeded by L. B. Branch and B. B. Farnham, the present one. Ebenezer Hub-

bard, Mr. Sibley, and Joseph Baker have done the shoemaking for Port Kent since that date. Mr. Branch, who is now justice of the peace, has held that office to the eminent satisfaction of the community for thirty-two consecutive years.

A district school flourished here when Mr. Branch came, and about 1845 the old building was burned and the present structure erected on its foundations.

The church here was erected in 1840 or 1841, and services have been held with tolerable regularity since, generally once in two weeks. Rev. Mr. Robbins served the people last and since 1884 there have been no services.

The following proceedings and correspondence will be of interest in connection with the erection of this church:—

“At a meeting of the trustees on the 17th of December, 1840, it was unanimously resolved, that whereas, the village of Port Kent was named in honor of Chancellor Kent, of New York, and

“*Whereas*, The inhabitants thereof are about erecting an edifice for public worship, therefore

“*Resolved*, That Chancellor Kent be respectfully requested to contribute toward the erection of the said edifice.

“*Resolved*, That the chairman and secretary of the board of trustees be directed to transmit to the honorable chancellor a copy of the above resolutions.

“Signed,                      HORACE SAXTON, Chairman.”

The above resolutions were enclosed in a letter from C. M. Watson, addressed to Chancellor Kent as follows:—

“PORT KENT, December 17th, 1840.

“*Dear Sir*:—

“Enclosed I have the honor of transmitting to you the resolutions adopted by the board of trustees appointed by the inhabitants of this village for building a house of worship. Our place being yet small and not very wealthy, we are compelled to seek assistance abroad to enable us to erect a church worthy of the beautiful and commanding site on which it will be placed. We feel persuaded that as this village will hereafter be associated with a name distinguished in the annals of our State and country, that you will be gratified to render us your aid.

“Permit me to tender you my sentiments of respect and personal consideration.

“Signed                      CHARLES M. WATSON.

“To the Hon. JAMES KENT.”

To which the following reply was received from Chancellor Kent, enclosing a check for fifty dollars:—

“*Dear Sir*:—

“I received your favor of the 17th inst. yesterday on my return from Boston, and I annex the above check, which I presume can be cashed at any of



the northern banks, and I intend it for the trustees for erecting an edifice for religious worship in the village of Port Kent. If I was to consider myself under any pecuniary obligations for the name given to the village, it would rather be to Elkanah Watson, esq., the early founder and patron of the place, for I presume the inhabitants now living there, and the religious congregation know nothing or care nothing about the origin of the name of the village. As you are a son, and a very respectable son, of the worthy and distinguished Mr. Watson, I give this small token of my regard for his wishes for the prosperity of the place.

Yours respectfully,

“JAMES KENT.

“NEW YORK, December 26th, 1840.”

The post-office has been in existence here since the place assumed any importance. In 1842 James Dickinson was postmaster, and was followed by L. B. Branch in 1848. He was succeeded by C. P. Allen about 1880. The office is now managed by Mrs. Sawyer.

The hamlet of Port Kent was nearly as large and much more active in 1842 than at the present time. The decline in the lumber business, the shipment from the interior by rail from Ausable Forks and other points, and other natural causes, have tended to stop the growth of the place. Hundreds of tourists, however, find it the gateway to what is one of the most interesting parts of the great wilderness—the Ausable chasm—giving the port considerable life in the summer months. Wallace's excellent *Guide to the Adirondacks* gives the following table of distances from Keeseville to various well-known wilderness resorts:—

From Keeseville to	Martin's	via Keene Valley,	50 miles.
“	“	“ Wilmington Pass,	45 “
“	“	“ Franklin Falls,	46 “
“	“	to Van Arnam's	“ 51 “
“	“	to Paul Smith's	“ 48 “

There is a daily line of easy-riding four-horse coaches, during the summer travel, from Port Kent to all these points.

*Birmingham Falls (post-office Ausable Chasm).* — This settlement is located on the Ausable river at the entrance to the chasm and about two miles from Port Kent. The post-office was established here in 1876 under the name of “Ausable Chasm,” and Joshua Appleyard is postmaster. He also keeps a store. This has always been a point of considerable manufacturing importance, and the early settlements and milling industries here have been partially described. In 1842 Goulding & Park built a paper-mill; but the firm became embarrassed and suspended operations in 1863, and the property passed into the hands of Adgate & Spencer; George Adgate carried on the business until his death in 1879, when the administrator carried it on. It was afterward burned. The present mill was first operated by the company now in charge

of it—C. W. Rich & Co. It was built by H. H. Vanaranum and C. W. Rich at a cost of \$18,000. Its capacity is four tons of straw wrapping-paper each twenty-four hours, and employs fourteen hands night and day. The present value of the property is \$25,000.

A pulp-mill is located here, of which Frederick Parks is proprietor. It is owned in Troy.

In 1840 Edmund and Jacob Kingsland, who had carried on a foundry business at the falls on the Boquet, built a forge of six fires at Birmingham, where the rolling-mill now stands. In 1847 the firm of E. & J. D. Kingsland & Company was formed and bought the Keeseville Manufacturing Company, consolidating the two. A very heavy business was then done. The rolling-mill was rebuilt, fifty horse-nail machines were put in operation, and sixty tons of nails made per week. In 1852 they built the rolling-mill at Birmingham. Depression in the iron interest caused a temporary suspension of the works in 1862. The entire machinery of the works and the nail factory were sold to the Burlington Manufacturing Company, who dismantled the establishment.

The Ausable Chasm Horse-Nail Works were erected in 1876-77 and owned by W. M. Mooney & Co. This establishment is closed to visitors and the workmen pledged to secrecy regarding its affairs. H. Estes is superintendent. The capacity of the works is about two tons per day. Eighty hands are employed.

We have already alluded to the Lake View House at this point, which will be found a pleasant place for tourists to stop when visiting the chasm and other points.

*Port Douglass.* — This was formerly an important shipping point for lumber, situated six miles south of Port Kent. It is also said to be the first point from which a ferry-boat ran across the lake. The boat was the "Lady Washington," and ran to Burlington, Vt. One of the first stores in the town was opened here. Norman Winter, who located here in about the year 1816, found a few families settled in the vicinity. Curtis Holgate and Asaph Leavitt were here about the same time. Mr. Colvin says: "Curtis Holgate moved to Port Douglass in 1817, and built a wharf and a stone house about twenty feet wide and thirty feet long. He got a road laid out from there to Keeseville and did considerable towards making the road. He built a saw-mill about a quarter of a mile from the wharf, and a tavern." The place has now no commercial importance.

Port Kendall is another former shipping point of some importance, ten miles south of Port Kent. The only interest of any account there now is the shipment of pulp-wood to Ticonderoga or Glens Falls. Early in the century the father of Levi Higby built a saw-mill in the gorge where the iron railway bridge stands. These ports, like many others on the lake, were created by the immense lumber traffic of years ago, and with the decline of that business they necessarily fell into stagnation.



In about the year 1825 a furnace was started in the northern part of the town near Port Kendall, by Levi Higby, Joseph Goldwin and a Mr. Drury. They operated it a short time when Drury went out, Higby sold his interest to a Mr. Smith, and the works were soon closed. The property passed into the possession of W. D. Ross soon after the business was begun. The furnace was subsequently operated under the superintendence of Mr. Drury. Levi Higby, who owned large interests in the vicinity, afterward leased the furnace property and operated it till about 1830, when it was again closed. It was subsequently changed to a forge, and was owned and operated by Jacob L. Bean and Albert G. Forbes till about 1865. It was then abandoned and soon went into decay.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF SCHROON.<sup>1</sup>

THE town of Schroon was formed from Crown Point on March 20th, 1804. The town of Minerva was taken off on the 7th of March, 1817, and a part re-annexed to Crown Point February 26th, 1840. It lies near the center of the south border of the county and is bounded north by the town of North Hudson; east by Crown Point and Ticonderoga; south by Warren county and the town of Minerva, and west by Minerva. The surface of the town is exceedingly diversified and picturesque. In the southeast part it is mountainous, portions of the Kayaderosseras range extending into that section, and the west and northwest portions are occupied by the Schroon range. Between these elevated regions and extending across the town nearly in its center is a beautiful and fertile valley, through which flows the waters of the Schroon river, which, near the center of the town, broadens out into the lovely Schroon lake, which reaches across the southern line of the town. Of the mountain peaks in the town Mount Pharaoh is the highest; it is located in the southeast part and is about 3,000 feet above tide. There are many other lesser peaks which have only local names or none at all. The principal stream is the Schroon

---

<sup>1</sup> This town derives its name from the lovely lake which it embraces. The legend is that the lake was visited by the French in their military expeditions and in fishing and hunting excursions from Crown Point and Ticonderoga, and was named by them Scarron, in honor of the widow Scarron, the celebrated Madame Maintenon, of the reign of Louis XIV. Rogers mentions Schoon creek which was crossed in marching between Fort Edward and Lake George. The islands of this lake afford sites for elegant and retired villas and country seats, unsurpassed by the waters of Cumberland and Westmoreland, in picturesque beauty and romantic seclusion. It has also been claimed, but without very good authority, that the name has an Indian origin, signifying a child or daughter of the mountain.

river, which forms a portion of the upper waters of the noble Hudson. There are numerous creeks of clear water that rise in the elevated part of the town and flow into the many picturesque lakes and ponds which are scattered throughout the town. The largest of these are Paradox lake,<sup>1</sup> in the north-eastern part, the waters of which empty into the Schroon; Pharaoh lake in the southeast part at the foot of Mount Pharaoh, the waters flowing by way of a small brook into Schroon lake; Crane pond, Crab pond, Goose pond, Whortleberry pond, Spectacle pond, Pyramid lake, Thurman pond, Rogers pond, and others of minor importance. These natural features render the locality a favorite resort of sportsmen, and within a few years past the beauties of Schroon lake and vicinity have led to the erection of many first-class hotels, where pleasure-seekers and others in quest of recuperation of health, find summer homes offering unsurpassed attractions.

The soil of the town is in the valleys of a rich alluvial character, and in the elevated parts a thin sandy loam. Nearly one-half of the town is capable of cultivation, though perhaps not more than one-third can be successfully and profitably worked. Iron ore is found in various parts but not in sufficient purity and abundance to make its working profitable; black lead or graphite is also found. This town was settled about the year 1797, at which period Samuel Scribner, Moses Pettee, Thomas Leland, Simeon Rawson, Benjamin Bowker and other pioneers came in and began the work of making for themselves and posterity homes in the wilderness.

Simeon Rawson located previous to the year 1800 about a mile above Schroon Lake village, on the place now occupied by Seneca Rawson. He came from Shrewsbury, Vt. He established soon after his arrival a small tannery, the first, and, for many years, the only one in the town. This he carried on in connection with his other labor until about 1818, when he removed to the site of the village at the lake and located his tannery there. His sons were Clark, Simeon, Safford and Josiah. Ashley P. Rawson, of Schroon Lake, is a grandson.

The valley lands in this town were opened to settlement at an early day, one of the incentives to which was the construction of what has become known as the old State road, to which we have often alluded, and which ran from Sandy Hill northward to the Canada line, passing along the Schroon valley. Another early highway that benefited the town was that constructed between 1840 and 1845, running from Lake Champlain to Carthage in Jefferson county, and passing through Schroon.

Other settlers came in almost simultaneously with Mr. Rawson. Samuel Scribner located about two miles north of the site of Schroon Lake village, and

---

<sup>1</sup> The surface of this lake is so near the level of the Schroon river, which forms its outlet, that in seasons of high water, the flow is into the lake, instead of out of it; hence its appropriate name.



Moses Pettee in the same vicinity, on the State road, on the farm now occupied by Edward Lockwood.

Joseph Wyman settled near the falls of the Schroon early in the century; his brother John also located here and they had a distillery there in early days. A son of Joseph Wyman now lives in Crown Point.

Benjamin Bowker, one of the earliest settlers, located on the State road, first on the site of the present Pickhardt place and then removed to about three miles north of the site of Schroon Lake village. He had one son who lived and died near the old Baptist church; his name was also Benjamin. Two other sons, Charles and John, came into the town, but subsequently removed to Shoreham. There were three or four daughters in the family.

Elijah Garfield settled on the east side of the river, about two miles from the lake; he was one of the first settlers and had two sons, Selucius and Lemman, who lived and died in the town. The former has two sons living in the town. Jackson Garfield, who lives on or near the old homestead, is a grandson.

George Moor was among the earliest settlers and located on the Schroon flats, near the river. Elijah M. Rounds now occupies that farm.

George Whitney settled early about five miles south of the site of Schroon Lake village, on the lake shore. Two of his sons, George and Ira, now live in the village.

Cornelius Travers settled on the site of South Schroon. He came from Dutchess county and died on his homestead, leaving descendants in the town.

Jeremiah Lockwood, who was born March 21st, 1764, settled on the site of the old Lockwood tavern about 1810, coming from Lanesboro, Mass. He built his first house in 1811, and the next one in 1827, where he opened a tavern which was for many years and down to about the breaking out of the late war, a popular house. The place is now occupied by William Fullen. His sons were Leander J. Clark, Abel D. and Jeremiah, jr. Linus C. Lockwood, now living north of Schroon Lake village is a son of Clark.

Elihu Griswold, familiarly known to old residents as "Deacon" Griswold, settled early in the century at what has been called Alder Meadow. He was a man of intelligence and married the widow of Mr. Grosvenor who was drowned in Paradox lake in a bay which has since borne his name. One of his daughters married Hiram H. Smith, a prominent man in the community, who lives on the homestead. John Wiswell was also an early settler in this neighborhood.

Thomas Leland was one of the prominent early settlers and located where George Whitney now lives; he engaged in farming and lumbering. He had two sons, one of whom died young; the other is J. M. Leland, now keeping a drug store in Schroon Lake village.

Wolcott Tyrrell came into the town soon after the beginning of the century

with his father, Benajah Tyrrell, and located about two miles south of the site of Schroon Lake village, where Charles Bowker now lives. He had three sons, who reside in the town, was a prominent citizen and held the office of first judge for a number of years.

Among other very early settlers were: Benjamin Barnes, who located near South Schroon, where his grandson, Benjamin O., now lives. James Tubbs settled on Paradox lake and his brother Enoch near by. Jabez Smith located in the southwest part, and Ebenezer Bailey, a Revolutionary soldier and pensioner, at South Schroon. William Armistead settled at the foot of the lake and raised a large family; they all removed to Ohio. Starr Platt came into the town in 1814, and located where Mrs. Erastus Root now lives, north of Schroon Lake village. He had four children, a daughter becoming the wife of Erastus Root and now occupying the homestead. His father was Jabez Platt who came in from Lanesboro, Mass. Adjoining the farm of Starr Platt lived Daniel Platt.

We cannot trace the record of early settlers farther, except as they may appear in describing the industries of the town. Those already named comprised most of the prominent pioneers who came here when the country was an unbroken wilderness and amid untold hardships and arduous toils, laid the foundations of their future prosperous homes and an intelligent community. As the settlements increased additional roads were laid out, mills were built on the numerous streams wherever there was water power, schools were established and religious meetings and societies organized. The first school was taught soon after settlement began by Clark Rawson, son of Simeon Rawson, about one and a half miles north of the present Schroon Lake village. This was a primitive educational institution, but it paved the way for the numerous neat school-houses that now give excellent privileges to the young of the town.

A saw-mill was built at an early day at the foot of Paradox lake by Joseph Richards, and a grist-mill not long afterward by David Stowell. The saw-mill subsequently passed into the hands of Charles Harris and Joseph Weed, the latter of Ticonderoga, and one of the heaviest lumbermen in the county. Both of these mills are long since gone down. Most of the town was originally covered with a heavy forest growth, and in common with the early settlers of all this region, the inhabitants turned their attention largely to lumbering as the readiest means of both clearing up their lands and securing a prompt return for their labor before agriculture could be extensively followed. The lumber interest in this town began to be considerably developed as early as 1820 and soon assumed paramount importance. Logs were cut in great numbers and driven down the river through the lake and thus to Glens Falls and Sandy Hill, for manufacture into lumber. Many mills, as we have said, were also built on the various streams of the town and large quantities of lumber were sawed and transported to market; but these mills soon declined in im-



portance through the wholesale driving of logs, which robbed them of business, and nearly all of them have been long abandoned. There were mills at Alder Meadow, Crane pond, Paradox lake, Long pond. A steam mill is now running at South Schroon and at Schroon Lake. The lumber interest reached its height from about 1830 to 1845. At the present time by far the larger share of the valuable timber of the town is cut off, although many logs have been run down the river in recent years, from the forests farther to the north and west.

Attempts have been made to work the iron ores that are found to some extent in the town and more abundantly in the adjoining town of Crown Point. A forge was built before 1830 at the Schroon falls, by Horace Hall. This was worked on ore brought from the Paradox district and the product transported to market *via* Crown Point. Of the Schofield ore bed, which was opened by Mr. Hall in 1828, we find the following description in Watson's *History of Essex County*: "Bar iron was at that time made in the Schroon forge from the ore of this mine, which was worked by various proprietors until 1845, when operations were suspended. An average of two hundred tons of iron was made during the above period, which established and maintained the highest character in the market. . . . The ore yields fifty per cent. of iron of the first class. The vein is only from three to four feet in thickness and has been worked about two hundred and fifty feet in length and from twenty to sixty feet in depth." This bed was worked as late as 1870 by John Roth and the ore used in his forges in Schroon with success.

The Skiff bed lies about two miles from Paradox lake and was opened by A. P. Skiff in the year 1857. It subsequently passed to the possession of Mr. Roth. The general character of the ore is similar to that of the Schofield bed, but the vein is small and was never worked with very much profit, although many thousand dollars were expended in developing it in the belief that the vein would widen out.

What was known as the "head of Paradox forge" was built in 1864 and owned by John Roth. It first contained two fires but a third was introduced. The charcoal for its operation was burned in pits at the forge and the ore was taken from the vein last above described, producing an excellent quality of iron, but at such cost including transportation, that it soon became unprofitable as prices declined.

The manufacture of leather in large tanneries has received considerable attention in the town and for several years was a predominant industry in Schroon, Minerva, and North Hudson. The vast hemlock forests furnished unlimited quantities of bark and compensated thus for the transportation of hides and leather to and from the tanneries. Schroon Lake tannery was erected in 1852 by Lorenzo Hall and subsequently became the property of Milton Sawyer, of Glens Falls. It was situated on a small brook about a mile west of

Schroon lake. Its capacity was sixteen thousand sides a year. It is not now in operation. The Schroon tannery was erected in 1861 at the mouth of the brook just mentioned, by William C. Potter and Daniel Wyman. It passed through various hands before it was closed. Wickham tannery was built at the mouth of the same stream and was operated by Benjamin Wickham chiefly for the manufacture of upper leather. Hoffman tannery, six miles west of Mr. Sawyer's Schroon Lake tannery, was built in 1856 by Bracket & Boyle and passed into possession of Mr. Sawyer. There have been other tanning operations in the town and vicinity, which, perhaps, need not be detailed; the industry is declining, with the others that have depended upon the forests for their prosperity, while the inhabitants are turning more of their attention and energy from year to year to agriculture.

No event of great importance has disturbed the peace and general prosperity of the town, other than the great civil strife of 1860, the deplorable consequences of which reached every hamlet in the country. This town was called upon to contribute her men and means to the support of the government in the day of strife and nobly responded, as the reader has already learned from the chapter devoted to the military record of the county.

The population of the town is now slowly increasing and with the near approach of railroads, the large annual influx of summer tourists and the sure beneficence of extended and more successful farming, its future growth is assured.

The "warning" for the first town meeting for the division of the town, *i. e.*, setting it off from Crown Point, designated the house of Israel Johnson as the place for the gathering to be held and the first Tuesday in April, 1804, as the date. The object of the meeting as expressed in the records was "to see if the inhabitants wishes to be divided into two towns, and do any other business thought necessary." The call was signed by Benjamin Pond, justice, Elijah Garfield, Daniel Cushman, Augustus Cleaveland, Samuel Scribner, and Simeon Rawson. Among the names which appear prominent in the public records of those days (some of them, doubtless, belonging in what is now Minerva as that was then a part of Schroon) are Israel Johnson, Wolcott Tyrrell, Mijah Smith, Joseph Dunn, Benjamin Pond, William Hill, Deodorus Holcomb, and others. Elijah Garfield was the first town clerk and the neatness and precision of the town record testifies to his intelligence and expertness.

At the first town meeting it was voted, among other matters, that "any sheep ram found on the commons from the tenth of November to the first of December, shall be forfeit to the taker up of s'd ram."

At the meeting in 1809 it was voted "that the poor money be hired out for the benefit of purchasing a Merino ram." This indicates an early interest in blooded stock.

It was also voted early in the history of the town "that it shall be counted



an honorable act for any Man to complain of any Man that makes havoc of the Deer contrary to law in this town." Eight dollars were voted as a bounty for killing wolves. The first two town meetings were held at the house of Israel Johnson and the next one at Thomas Leland's. In the old records the town is set down as "Scaroon." Among other names that seem to bear some prominence in the early records are those of Edmund Jincks, James Swinnerton, Nathan West, Samuel Norton, Jed. Halliday, Abial and Albro Tripp, John Baker, and others. In 1813 the town comprised seven school districts. By the year 1820, after the separation of Minerva from it, we find the following names among those holding office and otherwise appearing prominent in the records: Elisha Baker, David Stowell, Wolcott Tyrrell, Benjamin Barnes, James Tubbs, Jabez Smith, Wm. B. Everest, Ebenezer Bailey, Samuel Whittemore, Wm. Armistead, etc. (We have followed the spelling of these names as it appears in the records.)

The first officers elected in the town were as follows:—

Supervisor, Benjamin Pond; town clerk, Elijah Garfield; assessors, Albro Tripp, John Toms and Nathan B. Johnson; collectors, Diadorus Holcomb and George Moore; commissioners of highways, Elijah Barnes, Thomas Leland and Joseph Dunn; overseer of the poor, George Moore and James Houghton; constables, Diadorus Holcomb, John Potter, Augustus Cleveland and Elisha Baker; fence viewers, Randall Farr, Israel Johnson, James Swinnerton and Cornelius Traver.

Following is a list of the supervisors of the town from the date of its formation to the present time, with their terms of service: 1804, Benjamin Pond; 1805 to 1808 inclusive, Joseph Dunn; 1809, Salmasius Bordwell; 1810, Mijah Smith; 1811, Israel Johnson; 1812 to 1818 inclusive, Wolcott Tyrrell; 1819, John Baker, jr.; 1820, Wolcott Tyrrell; 1821 and 1822, Elihu Phelps; 1823 to 1825 inclusive, John Baker, jr.; 1826, Clark Rawson; 1827 to 1832 inclusive, Wolcott Tyrrell; 1833 to 1836 inclusive, Hiram Wilson; 1837, Clark Rawson; 1838 to 1840 inclusive, Abijah Smith, jr.; 1841, Clark Rawson; 1842, Abijah Smith, jr.; 1843 to 1845 inclusive, Clark Rawson; 1846 and 1847, Daniel Pratt; 1848 and 1849, Erastus B. Potter; 1850, Andrew L. Ireland; 1851 and 1852, William J. Hayward; 1853, Barton Baker; 1854 and 1855, Daniel Pratt; 1856 and 1857, Ryla Tyrrell; 1858 to 1860 inclusive, Joel F. Potter; 1861, William J. Hayward; 1862, Cyrus L. Blanchard; 1863, J. M. Leland; 1864, Joel F. Potter; 1865 and 1866, James M. Leland; 1867 to 1869 inclusive, Benjamin F. Wickham; 1870 and 1871, Benijah Tyrrell; 1872 to 1874 inclusive, Freeman N. Tyrrell; 1875, Paris S. Russell; 1876 and 1877, William J. Leland; 1878, W. G. Leland; 1879, Myron C. Pitkins; 1880, William G. Leland; 1881 and 1882, Benjamin F. Wickham; 1883 and 1884, Darwin L. Weeks; 1885, Myron C. Pitkins.

Following are the present officers of the town: Supervisor, M. C. Pitkins;

town clerk, William H. Barnett; assessor, John F. Young; overseer of the poor, Benjamin O. Barnes; commissioner of highways, C. M. Warren; collector, J. D. Burwell; justices, W. E. Rooney, A. S. Nichols, James O. Whitney, S. Reynolds; constables, Darius C. Burzee, Elijah Smith, Darius Hill, L. J. Garfield, C. C. Swain; inspectors of election, Charles H. Knox, L. D. Young; commissioner of excise, H. H. Smith; game constable, Alexander Bostwick; auditor, Orrin Harris.

*Churches.* — It is quite common to find that the Methodist Episcopal Society secures organization and a religious foothold in new communities in advance of other sects. Such was the case in this town. The Cambridge Circuit, as it is called, was formed early in the century and included parts of the present town of Schroon. Daniel Bromley was the first preacher. He was succeeded by a Mr. Bull, Lewis Pease and George W. Densmore. Meetings were then held either in private houses or the little school-houses. In 1809 the circuit was divided, and Schroon included in the Warren Circuit. Revs. Lansford Whiting, Mr. Pierce, Tobias Spicer, Elijah Hibbard, Daniel J. Wright and Sherman Miner were the preachers here until 1818. Daniel Brayton then came and with others filled the time to 1825. Then followed Joseph Eames and Jacob Beeman, 1826-27; Nathan Rice, 1827-28; Merritt Bates, 1828-29; Seymour Colman, 1829-30, and re-appointed; Joseph McCreery, 1831-32, and re-appointed; Reuben Wescott, 1833-34; William Richards, 1835-36, and re-appointed; in 1837 the circuit was permanently divided and the Schroon Circuit formed. From 1837 to 1841 Benjamin Pomeroy was the pastor; Ezra Sayre, 1841-42; Jedediah Burnham, 1843-44, and re-appointed; Joseph Conor, 1845-46; Chester Lyon, 1847-48; Samuel Hughes, 1849-50; Gideon Townsend, 1851-52; D. E. Noble, 1853; Daniel Rose, 1854-55; Caleb Stevens, 1856-57; in the last mentioned year Schroon was made to constitute the circuit, and J. B. Searle was the pastor for 1858-59; J. F. Cowl, 1860-61; D. W. Gould, 1861-62; A. Robbins, 1863-64; W. W. Foster, 1865-66; G. S. Gold, 1867-68; Alfred Eaton, 1869-70.

The first class was formed at South Schroon in 1811, and others soon followed at Paradox and "Charley Hill." In December, 1834, the society at Schroon Lake was incorporated as "The First M. E. Church of Schroon," at the Baker street school-house. The first trustees were B. S. Warren, Thomas Leland and B. R. Seaman. The first church was at once erected near the present burying-ground and occupied until 1853, when it was taken down and removed to the village at a cost of \$1,435. In 1867 it was refitted and furnished at a cost of \$550. In 1841 an acre of land adjoining the church was purchased at a cost of \$60 for a parsonage, which was built during the same year. From the year 1870 to the present time the pastors have been as follows: 1871, J. S. Mott, to 1873; 1874, E. Potter; 1875-76, R. Patterson; 1877, William H. Groat; 1878, Mr. Spencer; 1879, M. Adsit; 1880-81, C. J.



Mott; 1882-83, A. V. Marshall; 1884, G. H. Van Dusen; 1885, H. M. Munsee. The present church officers are — Trustees, J. M. Leland, H. J. Culver, D. Hill, H. H. Smith. Stewards — James M. Leland, recording steward; Hoel Richards. Class leaders — J. M. Leland, Elijah Rounds, E. Warren. The church includes classes at Paradox, South Schroon, Charley Hill and Hoffmann's. At these places services are held in school-houses.

*Episcopal Church.* — The Episcopal Church of Schroon Lake was organized November 12th, 1878, the first members being Bayard Clarke, Jacob Bohrmann, Freeman Tyrrell, John Taylor, Joseph Bogle, Joel F. Potter, Benjamin Tripp, Jarvis Abey, Mr. Benjamin, John Lapierre, Nathaniel Jenks, Bayard Clarke, jr. The first pastor was Aubrey F. Todrig. He was succeeded by Dr. Williams, W. A. H. Maybin, and the present pastor, Rev. Henry A. Freeman. The church edifice was erected in 1878 at a cost of \$600. It was afterwards enlarged, a tower, chancel and vestry added and a bell put in; also refurnished. The present value of the church property is about \$1,500. A Sunday-school was organized in 1878, of which B. Squires and John Taylor have been superintendents. The first wardens were Bayard Clarke and Effingham H. Nichols. The latter holds the office at the present time. The vestrymen are John Taylor, Benjamin Tripp, Jacob Bohrmann, Bayard Clarke, jr., Augustus Bogle and Orren Taylor.

*Congregational Church.* — The first Congregational Church of Schroon Lake, was organized in 1829, with the following persons as members: Abijah Smith, Jedediah Rice, Solomon Stebbins, Caroline Rawson, Lois Dresser, Lois Rice, — Stebbins, Margaret Crocker, Mary Boyd, Abigail Wyman, Minerva Smith, Alvira Stebbins, Lavina Glynn. The first pastor was Rev. Reuben Willoughby. The church edifice was erected about the year 1846, at a cost with land of about \$3,000. A Sunday-school was organized, of which Marcus Knapp is the present superintendent. The first deacon was J. Rice, and he has been succeeded by the following: Charles Churchill, 1830; Abijah Smith, 1833; Asa Foster, 1833; Marcus Knapp, 1871; Joseph E. Sawyer, 1876; George M. Sawyer, 1877. The following have served the church as pastors: Rev. Reuben Willoughby, one-third of the time in 1830; Rev. Thomas Haswell, ten months in 1840; Rev. Frederic Graves, one-half the time for one year, 1841; Rev. Sorel Wood, in 1845; Rev. — Taylor, two-thirds of the time for a few months in 1849; Rev. David Connell, 1857-1862; Rev. M. Davis, a few months about 1865; Rev. D. H. Gould, 1871-1873; Rev. D. M. Seward, D.D., summers of 1873 and 1874; Rev. D. T. Williams, a short time in 1876; Rev. N. H. Bell, six months, 1877; Rev. George L. Dickinson, commenced labor with the church, March, 1878; 1878-1885, supplied only in summer by various ministers. The church is supplied during the summer of 1885 by the Rev. J. E. McConnell. The present trustees are Dwight C. Pasco and Lansford Whitney. Deacons, Marcus Knapp, George W. Sawyer and John H. Pitkin.

*Catholic.* — The Catholic Church of this place was built in 1883, and a society of considerable strength is maintained. Father Blanchard was the first pastor in charge, and the church is now served by Father Le Grand, of Minerva.

*Baptist.* — The old Baptist Church, about two miles north of the village, was built in the year 1836 by the then existing society; this was the first church society organized in the town, its date being 1830. Charles Harris, one of the prominent lumbermen of that period, was largely instrumental in the erection of this church. The society was dissolved many years ago, and the church is only used for occasional funerals.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

We have already alluded to the settlement of Simeon Rawson about a mile north of the site of Schroon Lake village, where he established a tannery, kept a tavern, etc., in early days. Here also was established the first post-office early in the century, and Mr. Rawson was the first postmaster. When he removed to the lake in 1818, the office went with him and he was succeeded by Safford Rawson in the position of postmaster; the latter was in the office in 1830 and it continued in the family until 1840. The next official was Gay W. Lee, who kept it in part of his store. Craig Beebe succeeded him and he was followed for a short period by Abram Van Benthuyzen. In the spring of 1853 Ashley P. Rawson took the office for eight years (1861), when he was succeeded by Carlos Bailey, and he by William C. Potter. Since then Theodore Kinyon, John Taylor, Joel F. Potter and the present incumbent, John D. Burwell, have conducted the office.

Abijah Smith, who has been mentioned as an early settler a little north of the present village, sold goods in a part of his house and also kept an inn. This was about the first mercantile business in the town. Horace Hall, who has been spoken of as the builder of a forge, also kept a store there while he continued to operate the forge; this property was afterwards transferred to Charles Harris. These stores were the principal ones in town for a number of years. Later Ansel Chipman established a little trade at the foot of Paradox lake and kept it a number of years. He sold to William Stowell and the business was abandoned by him. The building was transformed into Potter's Hotel now kept at that place.

The first store established at Schroon Lake village was run by Gay Washington Lee, who came here from Bridport, Vt. His place of business was in the old Wickham House, which was originally built by a man named Crocker, whose daughter was Lee's wife. Lee sold out his goods to Charles Harris who removed the stock to Schroon Falls. The next merchant was James Fowler, who traded in what is now Taylor's shoe shop. J. M. Leland kept a general store in the Wickham House more than forty years ago and after one year removed into the building where Taylor's shoe shop is. He then built



on the lot adjoining Mr. Barnett's present store and remained there many years. Josiah Rawson kept an early store on the site of the Ondawa House. A store was established on the union plan where J. H. Pitkin & Brother are now located many years ago, in which enterprise Hannibal Holden was conspicuous. William C. Potter was secured to conduct the store. After this enterprise had its day, the store was occupied in turn by Whitney & Bogle, Whitney & Mead, Philo Pitkin, Pitkin & Clute (M. C. Pitkin and W. Clute), M. C. Pitkin & Co., and the present enterprising and successful firm, J. H. Pitkin & Brother. Pitkin & Taylor began business in a general store in March, 1864 (Lewis Pitkin and Robert Taylor). They succeeded Philo Pitkin and he Clute & Smith, who built the store. William H. Barnett keeps a hardware store, the only one in the place. He erected his own building and began trade in 1881. In the jeweler's trade D. C. Bailey began in 1855 on the site of the burned store. He occupied his present location in 1883. G. W. Taylor carries on harness-making, having begun in 1883. The grist-mill here is operated by H. B. Drake and the steam saw-mill by W. S. Fowler. A furniture store is kept by Myron C. Pitkin, and James M. Leland dispenses the drugs that are needed by the inhabitants. J. Bohrmann has a furniture manufactory and store a little out of the village.

Schroon Lake boasts several first-class hotels, the many guests of which make the summer season one of activity and profit. Josiah Rawson built the old Schroon Lake House many years ago on the site of the Ondawa House; it was the first tavern of any consequence in the place. Hiram Blanchard afterwards bought the property and he sold to Paris Russell, a man who did much during his comparatively short life, to advance the interests of the town. Mr. Russell had a partner in John Conley, the latter conducting the house a short time, when they erected the present commodious house. It was sold to John D. Burwell, who has now kept it about fifteen years. The Leland House, one of the largest and most attractive houses in this section, was built in 1872 by William G. Leland, son of James M. Leland. It accommodates about two hundred and twenty-five guests and was successfully conducted by the builder until 1884. It is now kept by Lorenzo Locke to the satisfaction of its large patronage. The Lake House was built in 1874 by Elisha Wickham, and was first called the Wickham House. Harry T. Abey bought the property in 1876 and has kept it since, making it a popular resort. It accommodates about one hundred guests and is pleasantly situated. The Windsor House is the outgrowth of a building that was formerly kept for the accommodation of guests by C. F. Taylor. He enlarged the house and kept it for a number of years. William McKenzie and L. Y. Jenness kept it for about two years each and the present proprietor, E. E. Hunter, took charge of it in 1884. Guests for these houses are brought up the lake, if coming from the south, in the steamer *Effingham*, which was built for Mr. Russell about six years ago.

Other business interests in this vicinity are the blacksmith and carriage-shop of L. C. Lockwood & Son, situated at the old Lockwood place before described, where the pioneer, Jeremiah Lockwood, also had one of the first wagon-shops in the town, L. C. Lockwood made the first steel spring wagon in the town, which was considered quite a curiosity. He also ran a clothing-mill at the site of the Platt homestead many years ago. H. C. Holden, son of Hannibal Holden, has a feed store north of the village, where he had a wagon-shop for a number of years. Elijah Holden does blacksmithing.

*Physicians.* — In early years people were sick and needed the beneficent care of the physician the same as in modern days; and the country doctor of pioneer times found a different task before him from that which employs his more fortunate successors. His ride was often over two or three large towns where roads were bad, even if there were any at all; his patients were many of them poor and his arduous labor often unrewarded. Dr. Hale practiced in this town when the country was new and lived near the old Baptist Church. He was drowned in Paradox lake. Dr. Harvey Page came here next and practiced for many years. Dr. Tubbs practiced here for a time and went to Chestertown. Dr. Pritchard settled below the village, and Dr. Hiram Potter, who came from Clarendon, Vt., as a school teacher, though an educated physician, practiced for many years and is remembered as one of nature's noblemen. The present physicians of the place are Dr. E. S. Bullis, who studied in the University of Vermont and graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, Iowa. He came to Schroon in 1885. Dr. D. Palmer studied at Dartmouth and graduated from the university at Burlington, Vt. He came to Schroon in 1869, but was away from 1874 to 1881.

The present school building of this village was erected in 1866. It consists of three apartments, two school-rooms and a large hall above for school uses. There are two departments in the school.

*Masonic.* — The Schroon Lake Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons was instituted September 6th, 1815. A brief sketch of the lodge will be found in chapter twenty-sixth.

*South Schroon.* — This is a post-office and hamlet on the shore of the lake about four miles south of Schroon Lake village. James L. Huntley is postmaster and keeps a store in connection. He succeeded Jackson Taylor. There is no other business here.

There are two other post-offices in the town. Paradox, situated at the head of Paradox lake, was established about five years ago; Orrin Harris is postmaster. Loch Muller is in the west part of the town, and was established but a few years ago. Laben Burbank is postmaster.



## CHAPTER XXXIV.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF ESSEX.

ESSEX was formed from Willsborough on the 4th of April, 1805. It lies on the shore of the lake, north of the center of the county. It is bounded on the north by the town of Willsborough, east by the lake, south by Westport, and west by Lewis. The southeastern coast is marked by the projection into the lake of Split Rock. On the south side of Split Rock is an oval bay called Grog Harbor, from the seizure and destruction at that place of a bateau-load of rum, captured from the British during the War of the Revolution. The rum was spilled into the harbor to save it from recapture. It is nearly opposite the mouth of Otter Creek and Fort Cassin on the Vermont side. In 1814 the British, designing to seize the stores and ammunitions at Vergennes, attacked the fort. The onslaught was made on a Sunday afternoon and was witnessed by large numbers of people who stood on the mountain side south of Split Rock. After the firing of two hundred cannon shots and the dismantling of five of the seven guns of the fort, the discomfited fleet withdrew. This defeat of the British was the precursor of their subsequent overthrow at Plattsburg. On the north side of Split Rock sparkle the waters of Whallon's bay, a place of surpassing natural beauty.

In 1786 Judge R. A. Heirn settled on a tract of a thousand acres of land west of this bay, erecting large dwellings, barns and tenement houses in the English style, and assuming manorial dignities. His wife was a dusky daughter of the West Indies. The manor is now owned and occupied by Wesley G. Lyon. (See chart made by Judge Heirn and inserted in subsequent page.) Judge Heirn engaged largely in the lumber business, and, through some mismanagement, lost heavily and was forced to dispose of his estates and leave for other parts. The old buildings are still standing and have been put in repair by the present owner. "The broad piazzas, the lawn of many acres sloping down to the shore, the splendid elms and fruit trees, remain as they were planned and set by the original proprietor."

In the northwestern part of the town is the Boquet mountain, as it is locally termed, with an elevation of about fifteen hundred feet above tide. It is one of the most symmetrical and impressive mountains in the county. The Boquet river flows northerly through nearly the center of the town. It has been described in the preceding history of Willsborough. The formation known by geologists as the Terraces of Lake Champlain are very marked in Essex. They run nearly parallel with the line of the shore, and can be traced for some miles into the interior. The surface of Lake Champlain is only about ninety feet above tide-water, and in the process of excavating in the

town, large quantities of marine shells are discovered every year. These shells are also found on the summit of Poke-o'-Moonshine mountain in Chesterfield, a mass of solid azoic rock over two thousand feet above tide. The soil of Essex is clay, loam and gravel, and is well adapted for farming and grazing purposes. The township contains some of the finest farms on Lake Champlain. Large quantities of hay, beans, wool and butter are annually exported. The mineral composition of the soil is a hypersthene rock overlaid with Chazy and Trenton limestone and Hudson river slate. Potsdam sandstone crops out in places along the line of the Boquet river. The limestone is of a superior quality for building purposes and the manufacture of lime. Large quarries have been opened in the town for public works, for building the canals, and for the masonry of the Vermont Central Railroad. It is so stratified that blocks of nearly every thickness can be easily quarried. It takes a high black polish, and has been much used in ornamental work. Great quantities have been burned into lime in the village of Essex and shipped to various markets. A fine cement rock is also found in this town. The formations of rock are highly interesting on account of the varied and numerous fossils contained in them. In the south part of the town, on the lake shore at Cannon Point, is a remarkable natural curiosity, giving certain evidence of a prehistoric eruption. From a point near the shore, bearing unmistakable signs of having at one time formed the crater of a volcano, is a center from which radiate three veins, or rather streams of igneous rock, one extending towards the lake and constituting the point, one running to the northwest, which has been traced nearly two miles, and the third running to the southwest, which has been traced more than three miles. This melted rock has also filled in many of the horizontal spaces between the strata of lime rock in the vicinity, as may be readily seen along the bluffs of the lake shore. The rock of this overflow is a handsome porphyry filled with rectangular crystals of compact feldspar, which is very hard, susceptible of the highest polish, and has been much used for ornamental purposes.

In the south part of the town, on the lot owned by William R. Derby, is found a very valuable deposit of rose quartz of a superior quality and adapted to the manufacture and finishing of china and stoneware. Many porphyry dykes are also found in this town.

The territory embraced in the boundaries of the town of Essex, in common with the other lake towns of the county, was first taken from the hands of the aborigines by the French. On the 13th of June, 1737, King Louis XV. of France gave a large tract of land to Sieur Louis Joseph Robart, his storekeeper at Montreal. Nathaniel B. Sylvester, in his valuable work, *Northern New York and the Adirondack Wilderness*, quotes the description of this *seigneurie* as follows: "Three leagues front by two leagues in depth on the west side of Lake Champlain, taking, in going down, one league below [north



of] the River Boquet, and in going up, two and one-half above said river." The French, who never effected a settlement, were forced to recede before the power of British aggressions on the conquest of 1760. Their possessions were practically confiscated by the British government and disregarded in the location of its subsequent grants. The French claimants for a long time appealed to both the courts and crown of England to obtain the restitution of their possessions, but without success. In many cases they were conciliated by equivalent grants of land in Canada. Even since the Revolution they have a number of times asserted their claims in the courts of this country. In 1809 the Supreme court of New York rendered a decision adverse to the validity of the French concessions. (See Johnson's rep. 18, 163.)

There was no settlement in the town which tended to the permanent colonization of the country until the arrival of William Gilliland in the spring of 1765. This eminent pioneer first purchased parts of the *seigneurie* of Sieur Robart, king's storekeeper at Montreal, and attempted to found a baronial manor, in imitation of those situated on the Hudson river. His first tract was six miles front on the lake and from three to four deep. He afterwards purchased other extensive tracts, a full account of which and his later persecutions is given in earlier chapters of this work.

He was born near the city of Armagh, Ireland, about 1734, and received his education there. His cultured manners, general intelligence, and fine person, made him a favorite wherever he was known. He became attached to a young lady of fortune and noble parentage named Lady Betsey Eckles. The disparity in their birth and fortune reared a barrier, and her family secluded her and used their influence to secure his banishment. He then enlisted in the 35th Regiment of the line, and after four years' service was discharged, alone and friendless, in Philadelphia. He went to New York, entered a prominent mercantile house, and within a year became a partner. He married Elizabeth Phagan (February 8th, 1759), the beautiful and accomplished daughter of his partner, receiving with her a dowry of £1,500. His later operations in Essex county are, as we have said, detailed in preceding chapter.

He has numerous descendants still living, in this town and in Willsborough, which it will be interesting to name.<sup>1</sup>

William Gilliland's daughter Elizabeth married Daniel Ross about 1785, and settled at what was then called Elizabeth, now the village of Essex. His daughter, Eliza Ross, was the first white child born in the town (1786). Daniel Ross was the first settler in what is now the town of Essex. He built the first iron works in Willsborough in 1800, and was always a most liberal patron of the iron trade in all its branches. He was sheriff of Clinton county before

---

<sup>1</sup> For the information concerning these descendants, as well as for a good share of the knowledge we have gained concerning the general resources of the town and the condition of the vicinity in early times, we cheerfully give credit to the courteous, intelligent and industrious assistance of the Hon. Anthony J. B. Ross, himself a descendant of Gilliland.









*Henry H. Ross*





its division, and represented that county in the State Legislature. He was appointed the first judge of Essex county, when it was formed, and held the office nearly thirty years. One of his sons, General Henry H. Ross, afterwards a prominent man in Essex county, was one of the first white children born in the town (1790). General Ross lived in Essex all his life and died in September, 1862. He was unanimously elected the first judge of the county under the new constitution of 1846, and several times represented his district in Congress. As adjutant of the Thirty-seventh Regiment of Militia he served on General McComb's staff at the battle of Plattsburg, and was afterwards and for some time a major-general in the militia. Of his descendants, his youngest son, Anthony J. B. Ross, two daughters, Mrs. Ellen B. Fairbanks (widow of Rev. J. N. Fairbanks, an Episcopal clergyman), and Frances J. Ross, now live together in the old homestead called "Hickory Hill" in the village of Essex. This homestead was built by Henry H. Ross in 1820. In 1822 Henry H. Ross married Susannah Blanchard, daughter of Judge Anthony J. Blanchard, of Salem, N. Y. She died February 26th, 1877.

James B. Ross, another son of Henry H. Ross, is now practicing law in Denver, Col. His son, Henry H. Ross, 2d, in July, 1881, married Anna Noble, and in December, 1882, died at Denver, leaving one child, a son, James H. H. Ross, who was born the day before his father died. He now lives with his mother in the village of Essex, at her place called "Rosslyn," and represents the fifth generation in the direct line of the descendants of William Gilliland. The other descendants of Daniel Ross and Elizabeth Gilliland were William D. Ross, who passed all his life in the village of Essex, and died in 1844. He was extensively engaged in lumbering and mercantile business, and the manufacture of iron. His descendants are now living in Chicago, Plattsburg, and in Washington county, N. Y. Edward Ross, another son, who died unmarried in 1825, aged thirty-three years. The two daughters of Daniel Ross were Eliza, wife of Charles Platt and afterwards of Ransom Noble, late of Essex, and Sarah, wife of Charles Noble, late of Elizabethtown.

The children of Henry H. Ross, now living in Essex county, are James B. Ross, lawyer, of Denver, Col.; Frederick H. Ross, merchant, of Dowagiac, Mich.; and John Ross, for many years engaged in building steam and sail vessels, and in general wood manufacturing at Essex, and now of the Plattsburg Dock Company. His adopted daughter, Susannah Ross, is the wife of Rev. E. D. Cooper, D.D., rector of the Church of the Redeemer at Astoria, Long Island, N. Y. Sarah Shumway, granddaughter of Charles H. Platt and Eliza Ross (above named daughter of Daniel Ross and Elizabeth Gilliland) is also a resident of Essex.

Charlotte Gilliland, another daughter of William Gilliland, was married about 1786 to Stephen Cuyler. Their son, John Cuyler, married Phœbe Hoffnagle. Of their children now living in the town of Willsborough are John



B. Cuyler and Susannah Cuyler, who reside together about two miles south of the village of Willsborough. Other descendants of Stephen Cuyler are living in New York, Philadelphia and Chicago.

Another daughter of William Gilliland, Jane Gilliland, was married to John Bleecker, of Albany, where many of his descendants now reside.

His other child, William Gilliland, settled near Plattsburg, the present residence of his descendants.

The sketch or chart on the next page is a fac-simile of an original map found among the papers of the late General Ross, and forms a comparison of the handwriting and statements, with other early records, deeds and surveys showing the ownership and description of lands in the vicinity at the date of its making; it is identified as the work of Robert A. Heirn, whose history has been elsewhere given in this chapter. It includes a large tract then owned by him, and was made in the year 1786. It is without doubt the oldest sketch in existence showing the location of farming lands and highways in Essex county, just after the Revolution.

The following is a statement showing the present owners of the tracts named in the map, or of tracts included in or including said tracts, furnished by Mr. Anthony J. B. Ross, of Essex:—

OLD MAP.	PRESENT OWNERS.
Gilliland.....	Block-house farm..... James B. Ross.
Higgins.....	David S. Hayward.
Ross.....	Northerly part, including the house, designated on map..... William R. Derby.
	Southerly part..... Belden Noble.
	Easterly part..... Essex Village.
Gilliland.....	Easterly part..... Essex Village.
	Central part..... Farm of A. J. B. Ross & Sisters.
	Westerly part..... Adam K. Stafford & M. McFar- land.
Heath.....	Easterly part..... Village of Essex.
	Westerly part..... Adam K. Stafford.
	Northerly part..... Ezra K. Parkhill.
	Southerly part..... Henry H. Noble.
Hoffnagle, 100 acres, (No. 4).....	Henry H. Noble.
Heath lot, 100 acres.....	Henry H. Noble.
200 acres, (next south) Northerly part.....	Roswell C. Waite.
200 acres.....	Southerly part..... Samuel D. Tuttle.
Botts.....	Samuel D. Tuttle.
Hoffnagle, 100 acres, (No. 3).....	Stephen D. Derby.
Jewett, 100 acres.....	Stephen D. Derby.
W: Low lot, 50 acres.....	Stephen D. Derby.
Hally's lot, 50 acres.....	Stephen D. Derby.
Hoffnagle lot, 160 acres, (No. 1).....	John Burt.
Havens lot.....	Wesley G. Lyon.
The lot obtained of Botts, 125 acres, Westerly part.....	Joseph W. Cross.
The lot I live on, 110 acres.....	Easterly part..... Wesley G. Lyon.
My 600 acres.....	Easterly part..... Wesley G. Lyon.
	Westerly part..... Jos. W. Cross & G. J. Walker.
C. Havens, 100 acres.....	Gardner J. Walker.











---

I. Daniels.....	Michael Hyland.
Amos Stafford.....	Ira A. Stafford.
Benjamin Stafford.....	Ira A. Stafford.
Hoffnagle, 110 acres, (No. 2).....	Horace E. Sheldon.
Daniels & Stillwell, 200 acres.....	Sorrell Jordo & Hazelton.
E. Eggleston.....	Titus H. Bigelow.

---

Anthony J. B. Ross has in his custody a paper in the handwriting of General Henry H. Ross, containing valuable historical memoranda relating to the town of Essex. It was written about 1840. It states that the first settlers were from Duchess county, and numbered Daniel Ross, Isaac Sheldon, Thomas Pray, and Abram Reynolds. Shortly afterward Amos and Benjamin Stafford came from Scituate, Rhode Island. The first school in the town was kept by Mrs. Erasmus Towner. The first male teacher was Enoch F. Henry, who taught in 1789. The first tavern was built by William Ring in 1786. The first grist-mill was erected in 1810, at Boquet, by William D. Ross. About the same time and at the same place he built a rolling and slitting-mill and nail factory. The first store was built and conducted in the village of Essex in 1784 by Daniel Ross, who about the same year built a saw-mill at Boquet and a grist-mill at Willsborough. The first regular religious service was initiated by Henry Boynham, an English Episcopalian, in 1800. Delevan De-lance, a resident of Essex, was one of the earliest sheriffs of the county. Reuben Whallon, of Whallonsburgh, held the office of first judge of the old Court of Common Pleas. The first law office in the towns of Essex and Willsborough was built of stone about midway between the two villages about 1800 by Judge Martin Aiken. It is now a tenement house on the farm of Benjamin Fairchild.

Other pioneers of Essex were Daniel Murray, Henry Van Ormand, Dr. Colborn Clemens (the first physician), David and Abner Reynolds, Nehemiah Payn, James Eldrich, Thomas Stafford, E. Eggleston, and Richard Eggleston.

Soon after the close of the Revolution, and before the inhabitants of the town had settled into the habitual repose of continued peace, a block-house was constructed about three-fourths of a mile north of the village of Essex on the farm now owned by James B. Ross (now called Faulderwood). It was an unpretentious structure built of logs, and evidently intended rather as a protection against the unbridled ferocity of Indian hatred, than against the assaults of civilized enemies. In 1799 upon the formation of the county it was converted into a court-house, and used as such until, under the act of 1807, the county buildings were erected at Elizabethtown. There is considerable uncertainty about the date of the construction of this building. Mr. Watson in his valuable history has united with French's *Gazetteer* in placing the date as late as 1797. But, as will be seen by reference, it is indicated in the Heirn chart made in 1786 and printed in these pages. Captain Martin Eggleston thinks it was erected in 1775, but this seems improbable from the slight possibility that it could survive the devastations of the war, and the fact that there was probably no need of a block-house here at so early a date. The most probable

theory, therefore, seems to be that it was built soon after the War of the Revolution.<sup>1</sup>

Resuming the narrative of early settlement it may be stated that General Ransom Noble came to Essex in about 1800, and engaged successfully in the tannery, lumber, and iron business. His sons, H. and B. Noble, succeeded him in business. Henry Noble, another son, now deceased, settled at Elizabethtown where his family now reside. Charles Noble, also a son, formerly resided in New York city. The family of Harmon Noble, deceased, now live in Essex, and the family of Belden Noble, are at Washington, D. C. Henry Harmon Noble, son of Harmon Noble, and the only male representative of the family at Essex, resides in the house formerly occupied by his father, and in earlier days by General Noble himself. The place is appropriately called "Sunnyside." (See biographic sketches in later pages.)

Amos and David Stafford occupied two lots on Whallon's bay immediately after the close of the Revolution. In 1792 Judge Charles Hatch moved into that part of Essex known as Brookfield, where he remained until 1804. He then went to Westport. Mr. Watson states that the removal of his family from Brookfield to Westport (on North West bay), a distance of eight miles, occupied two days, and required the labor of four men to open a roadway for the wagon.

Such was the general condition of the neighborhood previous to the beginning of the present century. The villages and settlements increased gradually in population and business activity. Lumbering was carried on extensively, the iron industry was a bud of great promise; taverns owned by men who were endowed with generous licenses to engage in the traffic of liquors grew abundant, and potash factories flourished with an ease that made them seem indigenous. Commerce on Lake Champlain did not reach its greatest activity for a number of years, but something of its future began to be manifest, and the village of Essex, the most thriving of the three which exchanged courtesies in the town of Essex, sprang into considerable prominence as a commercial and ship-building center.

Before the War of 1812 the craft that sailed the lake were very small, there being none, according to the statement of Captain Martin Eggleston, that would carry more than forty or fifty tons. Several large sloops were built in Essex in 1811 and 1812, and, indeed, the principal boat-building on this side of the lake was done here. Richard Eggleston built in 1810 the first sloop that ever sailed the waters of these northern lakes. She was built for William D. Ross, who named her the *Euretta*. Soon after, when the clouds of ap-

---

<sup>1</sup>The timbers of the old block-house were used in the construction of barns erected by General H. H. Ross on his farms in Essex, and can still be seen in the barns on the farms of Anthony J. B. Ross and J. B. Ross. They are large timbers about twenty inches square, of clear pine, and show the long notches cut in them at the time the block-house was built. The old court-house building formerly erected on the same site is now a barn on the farm of J. B. Ross.



proaching war hung threateningly over the whole country, larger craft were required, and Richard Eggleston built eight or ten vessels of more than one hundred and fifty tons burden. He undoubtedly constructed more than a hundred freight vessels in all. In 1811 and 1812 he commenced building two sloops, *The President* and *The Richard*, the former for John Boynton, of Plattsburg, and the latter for Gideon King, of Burlington, who, among others, had obtained letters of *marque* and *reprisal*, and designed using the sloops for privateering purposes. Before the craft were finished news arrived that the British fleet was coming to bombard Fort Cassin on Otter creek, across the lake. The sloops were hastily caulked, launched, taken to Barn Rock on the south side of Split Rock Point, put in the bay and completely concealed beneath huge masses of brush. In about two weeks the British bombarded Fort Cassin in order to weaken the strength of the navy yard at Vergennes, but without success. After the bombardment the British anchored in a line in front of Essex, furled their top-sails, threw out their guns towards the village and made every preparation to fire. The British commander came in towards shore and wanted to know if the citizens desired a truce. In response to a signal from General Henry H. Ross they came ashore, and a parley was held. The Englishmen spied upon the shore the spars which had been prepared for the sloops, and demanded information concerning the whereabouts of the vessels. He was told they were at Whitehall, whereupon he ordered his men to cut the spars to pieces. He immediately retracted his order, however, with the observation that the Revolutionists "could easily get more." The sloops were afterwards finished and passed through exciting vicissitudes, under the names of the *Growler* and the *Eagle*. They were taken by the British and recaptured at Plattsburg.

This was not the only visit paid to the site of Essex village by British enemies. In the War of the Revolution the fleeing British, retreating from Ticonderoga after the defeat of Burgoyne, were intercepted here by a party of "Green Mountain Boys" under Ebenezer Allen, who captured fifty prisoners and all their military stores.

The lumber markets in those days, it will be remembered, were Montreal and Quebec. Enormous quantities of square timber and sawed lumber were shipped there from all points along Lake Champlain. A number of sloops were manufactured to carry lumber south after the completion of the canal to Troy. Between 1825 and 1836 there were probably one hundred and twenty-five sloops sailing the lake. Richard Eggleston also built two hundred and fifty row galleys or bateaux for the American fleet on the lake. His son, Captain Martin Eggleston, who was born at Essex in 1806, sailed on the lake from 1821 to 1863.

As early as 1810 there were three asheries in the territory now composing the town of Essex. One near Whallon's bay, owned by Judge Heirn, one

about six miles west of the village of Essex, owned by Daniel Ross, and one in the village of Essex, owned by William D. Ross. It is estimated that these three asheries manufactured from two hundred to three hundred tons of potash annually. General Ransom Noble owned and conducted a tannery in Essex as early as 1800, and was extensively engaged in the lumber and iron business. About 1810 there were three taverns in the village of Essex, kept by Amos Anson, Nathan Nichols and Isaac Drew. There were seven outside the village, as follows: one at Whallon's bay, kept by a Mr. Miller; one at Whallonsburgh, kept by Sawyer Carter; one kept by Benjamin Stafford in the west part of the town; one on the same road toward Westport from Stafford, kept by John Burt; one six miles west of the village of Essex kept by Jesse Reynolds, near the potash factory of Daniel Ross; one kept by N. Wallace, about a mile west of the village, and one at Boquet. Shortly after 1810 General Wright kept the hotel now run by J. C. Baldwin.

William D. Ross had a distillery just north of Essex before 1820, which was probably the only one in the town.

Farming remained at a low ebb until as late as 1830, when the lumber trade began to decline. The western parts of the town were cultivated first, although the most fruitful soil lies along the shore of the lake.

*Town Officers, etc.* — The records of this town are not in existence until after the year 1820, as far as we have been able to ascertain, which prevents the publication of the names of the first officers. We have, however, obtained the names of the successive supervisors after and including the year 1818. They are as follows: 1818-19, Reuben Whallon; 1820-21, Ralph Hascall; 1822 to 1824 inclusive, William Smith; 1825-26, Ransom Noble; 1827 to 1829 inclusive, Reuben Whallon; 1830-31, John Gould; 1832, Richard Eggleston; 1833 to 1835 inclusive, Henry H. Ross; 1836-37, William D. Ross; 1838-39, Abel Baldwin; 1840, Henry H. Ross; 1841-42, Samuel Shumway; 1843-44, Belden Noble; 1845-46, Daniel North; 1847-48, Michael H. Stower; 1849-50, Edward S. Shumway; 1851-52, Palmer E. Havens; 1853-54, William D. Ross, 2d; 1855-56, Eli W. Rogers; 1857-58, James Stafford; 1859-60, Phillip S. Baldwin; 1861-62, Belden Noble; 1863 to 1865 inclusive, John Hoskins; 1866 to 1868 inclusive, John Ross; 1869-70, George W. Palmer; 1871, Jonathan Mather; 1872, Buel D. Bacon; 1873-74, Jonathan Mather; 1875, Andrew J. Tucker; 1876 to 1878 inclusive, Walter D. Palmer; 1879, W. H. Stower; 1880 to 1883 inclusive, Charles W. Tucker; 1884 to present time, Anthony J. B. Ross.

*Population of Town.* — 1850, 2,351; 1855, 2,115; 1860, 1,633; 1865, 1,501; 1870, 1,600; 1875, 1,867; 1880, 1,462.

The first muster roll from the county at the outbreak of the Rebellion was taken in the town of Essex. Captain William D. Ross, eldest son of General Henry H. Ross, took about forty men from the town early in May, 1861, and



had them incorporated with the Anderson Zouaves, under Colonel Riker at New York city. The following is a list of the volunteers as named in said roll, most of whom he commanded as lieutenant and captain. The roll is dated May 2d, 1861: William D. Ross, Belden R. Parkill, James Phillips, Charles Hoffnagle, Edmund Atherton, Albert Green, John Maloy, Joseph Hall, William E. Pratt, Horace A. Pratt, John Gordon, Franklin J. West, Samuel F. West, Henry H. Tucker, Andrew Todd, Napoleon Durant, Joseph Martin, Friend A. Smith, Charles P. Saywood, Henry W. Baldwin, George Tucker, James Stone, John Reed, Peter Lowe, Ira P. Knapp, Nathan W. Lincoln, E. Story, John Damady, Horace Smith, Franklin Flurry, Edwin Clemmons, F. A. Brown, George Chase, Artemas Woodruff, Daniel Cross. With a few exceptions the above names represent the men who left the town in May, 1861, to take an active part in the great struggle. The brave and gallant captain of this company, William D. Ross, did not live to see the cause, for which he was willing to sacrifice his life, victorious. On the 25th day of October, 1861, while in the line of his duty, the railroad track near Washington, he was struck and killed by a passing train. He was buried with military honors at Washington, where his remains rested until his death was made known to his friends in Essex, when he was brought home and buried in the family vault. At the time of his death he was thirty-one years of age, and had been in the practice of law in Essex for about eight years. For further military details see the chapter devoted to that subject.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

The town of Essex contains three villages, Essex, Whallonsburgh, and Boquet. The village of Essex, the largest and oldest of the three, is situated on the shore of the lake in the northeastern corner of the town. As stated in the earlier part of this chapter, it was at one time one of the chief ports on the lake, and until after 1840 was an important ship-building center. Iron was manufactured here extensively at one time, but these industries have died and have been replaced by others.

*Mercantile.* — As early as 1815 William D. Ross, Ransom Noble, and John Gould were store-keepers here. How long they continued is not known, but they had been succeeded by others years before the oldest merchant now in the village began business here.

The merchant of longest standing in the village is William R. Derby, who has traded here since September, 1854. At that time he bought out the general store of Wesley G. Lyon, who had been a general merchant in the place about eight years preceding. Mr. Derby has occupied his present building about eight years. Andrew J. Tucker has sold general merchandise in this village since 1861. He was in partnership with Welsey G. Lyon until 1864, when that relation was dissolved and a new partnership established between Mr. Tucker and D. E. Field. This firm was not separated until 1880.

Mr. Tucker has been in the building he now uses from the start, with the exception of the six years between 1863 and 1870. He carries a stock estimated at \$8,000. Buel D. Bacon opened a hardware store in Essex in the fall of 1868. He then purchased the stock and good will of Theodore Calkins, who had conducted the business for several years previous. Mr. Bacon has been in his present building since 1881. In 1873 S. D. Derby started a general store in company with his brother, W. R. Derby, and remained with him four years. Since 1877 he has been alone. He carries a stock of about \$15,000.

W. J. Hoskins commenced dealing in furniture about 1875. In July, 1884, his brother, E. W. Hoskins, entered into partnership with him. W. J. Hoskins died in January, 1885, since which time his brother has conducted the business alone. E. H. & C. H. Stafford (brothers) began to keep a general store here in 1882, being successors to W. G. Lyon, who had conducted a like business in the same building since 1868.

George D. Anson established a store in the building now occupied by him in 1880. It is the same building which H. D. Edwards had used as a store years ago, but it had been vacant for some time when Mr. Anson came into it. Ira C. Stafford, a jeweler, also has a jewelry and music store in the village. W. W. Wilson has had a feed store here since November, 1884. Mosier Ferguson has had a shoe-shop in this village since 1875, and Charles Michon since 1878. R. Fortune, tailor, has been engaged in his present occupation here since 1842. For the first twenty years he occupied the house now used as the Congregational parsonage. He came into the building he now occupies in 1867.

*Manufactures.* — The Essex Horse Nail Company (Limited) was incorporated in June, 1879. There were originally, and are now, about fifty shareholders in the company. The first officers were: President, Palmer E. Havens; vice president, Alpheus A. Morse; secretary, Walter D. Palmer; treasurer, William R. Derby; superintendent, James Mills. Directors besides the officers above named: Stephen D. Derby, Wesley G. Lyon, Anthony J. B. Ross, Seth Crosman, Charles A. Martin, Lyman Barton, John N. Oliver, James H. Howe.

The company purchased the ground and buildings of Lyon & Palmer, who had up to that time, 1879, used them for the manufacture of sashes and blinds. One of the buildings was remodeled into the present machine-shop, and another converted into the store-house. The office and other buildings were erected anew. The total cost of the building and remodeling was about \$20,000, and of machinery and fixtures about \$25,000. The works and office are situated on the shore of the lake, where the company own a wharf for their own convenience. It affords those interested in lake traffic the benefits of competition between this wharf and three others in the same village. The company employ, when running in full force, sixty or seventy hands.











*D. E. Hume*





The president of the company now is Hon. Palmer E. Havens; the vice president is D. F. Payne; secretary and treasurer, W. D. Palmer; superintendent, C. W. Woodford. Mr. Woodford has been superintendent since May, 1880. The capital stock of the company is \$80,000, paid up. (See biography of C. W. Woodford herein.)

The old sash factory of Lyon & Palmer, mentioned above, stood on ground which formed originally the ship-yard of Hoskins, Ross & Co., the firm being composed of John Hoskins, John Ross and Wesley J. Hoskins. Subsequently James B. Ross became interested in the concern, the firm title was changed to The Essex Manufacturing Company, and the business to the manufacture of sashes and blinds. Lyon & Palmer bought them out in 1877. The old ship-building business was killed by the construction and opening of railroads on both sides of the lake.

*Hotels.* — Essex village has two hotels. The oldest one, that now kept by J. C. Baldwin, was erected and kept by General Wright before the beginning of the present century. Some parts of it are supposed to be a hundred years old. It is a fairly well-preserved centenarian. General Wright conducted the hotel business therein until about 1810. The present proprietor has been here since May 1st, 1874. He was preceded by Eli Farnsworth. Some years before the beginning of the Civil War, Charles G. Fancher came into possession, and was followed successively by William Brainard, who left in 1861, Martin Eggleston, Edward Burt, Webster W. Royce, Parker Torrance, Sidney Carr, Eli Farnsworth and J. C. Baldwin.

North's Hotel was built by Delavan Delance about the year 1830 for a private dwelling house. Afterwards Noble Clemmons remodeled it into a hotel and kept it until about 1850. The present proprietor, De Lloyd W. North, took possession in 1882. Before that it was vacant for a time, the last proprietor before the vacancy being Harry Palmer. William Brandeau preceded him, his term beginning May, 1874. Before Brandeau was Eli Farnsworth; prior to Farnsworth's occupancy the house lay idle for years, probably since 1864 or '65. In 1861 William Brainard came in and remained three or four years.

*The Professions.* — Hon. Palmer E. Havens began the practice of law in the village of Essex in 1841. He was admitted at Plattsburg after passing a period of study in the office of General Henry H. Ross. He has ably represented his county and district in the Legislature as Assemblyman and Senator. (See biography.)

James B. Ross, now of Denver, Col., was admitted in 1854, and practiced in Detroit until 1859. From there he removed to Houghton, Mich., where he stayed nine years as the attorney for the copper mining companies of Michigan. He came to Essex in 1868. In 1874 his brother, Anthony J. B. Ross, who practices here now, went in with him. They practiced together under the

firm style of Ross & Ross until 1882, when James B. Ross moved to Denver. During his residence in Essex, James B. Ross was one of the wardens of St. John's Church. He was also largely interested in the business pursuits of the town. Anthony J. B. Ross graduated at Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y., in 1866, and was admitted to practice at Albany in 1874 after studying the requisite period with the firm of Hand, Hale, Swartz & Fairchild, of Albany. He is the present supervisor of the town. The law-office now occupied by Mr. Ross was built (of stone) by General Henry H. Ross in 1812.

Edwin R. Chase, M.D., aged fifty-seven years, came to Essex in 1858. He received his professional education in the Albany Medical College.

Dr. Edward B. Atkins, aged thirty-six years, was graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1874, and came to Essex in May, 1880. In 1877 he received the Adeundem Degree from the University of New York city.

*Union School.* — The Essex Union School was formed April 12th, 1866. The first trustees were Wesley G. Lyon, E. R. Eaton, and Robert Fortune, one year; Ezra Parkhill, E. R. Chase, M.D., and R. Morse, two years; Palmer E. Havens, John Hoskins, and John Ross, three years. The office of first clerk and librarian devolved upon Wesley G. Lyon. E. R. Brougham was the first principal.

Under the new régime the school remained for a short time in the old brick house which now stands about ten rods south of the one at present occupied. The trustees very soon secured an old dwelling house, formerly owned and occupied by General Ransom Noble, and moved it on to the school lot. It was denominated the Academy building. Finding it unfit for the purposes to which it had been converted, the board in 1867 erected the present structure at a cost not exceeding \$5,000. The primary department has been since added. The present trustees of the school are as follows: —

Committee on teachers: Wesley G. Lyon, W. J. Hoskins (since election deceased), William H. Stower. Committee on finance: Walter D. Palmer, Dwight E. Field, Henry H. Noble; committee on buildings, etc., H. W. Parkhill, Myron Eggleston, and George Anson. The present clerk of the board, H. W. Parkhill, has officiated continuously since 1875. There are three teachers in constant employment, F. M. Hickok being at present the principal. The average attendance of the school is about one hundred and thirty-eight.

*Churches.* — The most ancient church organization now existing in the village of Essex is undoubtedly the Congregational Church, though it cannot date its origin back of the period of religious services held by the Episcopalian, Henry Boynham, mentioned in the memoranda of Henry H. Ross.

*Presbyterian Church.* — This church was organized on the 3d day of December, 1815, by the Rev. Cyrus Comstock, of the Berkshire and Columbia Missionary Society. The records show the first members to have been Ira



Manley, Reuben Whallon, Ralph Hascall, Mary Hascall, Theodosia Gould, Annis Wallis, Asa Frisbie, Mrs. Fairchild, Mrs. Higby, Mrs. Throop, Chloe Higby. Among the members who were soon after added to the society were Fanny Little, Julia Lynde, Betsey Earle, Ellen Gilbert, Mrs. Boynton, Dr. Abel P. Mead, Dr. Samuel Shumway, Hannah Shumway, Phoebe Eggleston, Eliza Whallon, Daniel Lynde.

The first preaching, in addition to that of the Rev. Mr. Comstock, was by Rev. Asa Messer. About the year 1823 Ira Manley preached occasionally. At this time meetings were held in the brick school-house in Essex and in the school-house near Willsborough Falls. It was a Congregational Church until December, 1830, when the members from Essex adopted the ecclesiastical government of the Presbyterian Church. Previous to this time the society embraced the towns of Essex and Willsborough; but when the Essex congregation changed to the Presbyterian government, the two towns separated their church interests and the Willsborough congregation continued under the original form of worship. Following are the names of the elders after the change: James S. Whallon, Abiel P. Mead, Asa Frisbie, Colonel William Smith. The first church building was erected in the year 1818. The movement which resulted in the building of the church was preceded by the circulation of the following subscription paper:—

“We, the subscribers, do hereby associate ourselves into a society for building a meeting house, or a place of public worship, in the town of Essex, on or near the site of the old school-house which was burned, on the hill in the rear of the dwelling house of Ezra Parkhill. And we do severally agree to pay to a committee of three persons the several sums respectively annexed to our names for the purpose aforesaid, which said sums shall be paid in four equal quarterly installments, in cattle, grain or iron, to wit: The one-fourth part of which sums to be paid by the first day of May next; the remaining three installments by the first days of August, November and February next thereafter, in cattle, grain or iron, or in material acceptable to said committee, who are to be chosen and elected by the said subscribers at a meeting to be held at the house of Delevan Delance in Essex, on the first Monday in December next. And the pews or other property of the said meeting house and the ground appropriated for the same shall be disposed of according to the resolutions of the said subscribers at a subsequent meeting; shall be at such time and place as shall be appropriated by the first meeting aforesaid. Dated Essex, November 10th, 1817.

“Henry H. Ross, \$400 including an acre of land at \$125; W. D. Ross, \$300; Ransom G. Hatch, \$250; Ralph Hascall, \$150; John Gould, \$100; (name illegible) \$100; D. Delance, \$50; D. B. McNeil, \$75; Charles McNeil, \$5 (cash); Luther Adgate, \$50; Ezra Parkhill, \$50; Charles B. Prindle, \$50; Luther Prose, \$40; John Earl, \$25; Jonathan Little, \$75; James M.

Hayes, \$20; Sawyer Carter, \$25; Simeon Pangburn, \$5; H. A. Hawley, \$25; Ezra Coats, jr., \$5 (a gratuity); David Delance, \$4; Willard Church, \$5; Asahel Row, \$4; J. G. Cornell, \$5; D. W. Sturtevant, \$5; David Jacobs, \$5; Joshua Martin, \$50; Russell Vaughn, \$5; Dean Delance, \$6; Samuel C. Taylor, \$25; Elijah Carter, \$15; John Hoffnagle, \$50 (but if preparations are making for building a meeting-house in Willsborough, before the frame of Essex meeting-house is raised, then \$25 to be deducted;) Hine Clemons, \$50; Solomon Cook, \$25; William Braman, \$10; Thomas Edwards \$10; Phineas Haskins, \$5; Silas C. Perry, \$5." These names were all signed with a wafer and seal numbered consecutively.

The church erected in 1818 was used until 1821, when a supplemental subscription paper was issued to raise funds to complete the building. In this subscription paper appears the name of H. A. Hawley for "\$2 towards painting, and \$3 towards interior finishing, when the same shall be half done." The present church was erected in 1853 at a cost of about \$10,000. The corner stone was laid December 13th, 1853, the services being conducted by Rev. J. T. Willet. The value of the church property, including the parsonage, is about \$10,000.

Following are the names of the successive pastors who have served the church since 1827: 1827-30, Rev. Vernon D. Taylor; 1831-32, Rev. J. B. Baldwin; 1832 to 1844, Rev. Joel Fisk; 1844 to 1847, Rev. A. Bronson; for a short time after 1847, Rev. Moses Chase officiated; 1850-51, Rev. J. G. Randall; 1852 to 1865, Rev. J. T. Willet; 1865 to 1882, Rev. C. N. Wilder; 1882-83, Rev. Thornton Mills; present pastor, Augustus Frederick. The present church officers are as follows: Trustees, Henry H. Noble, C. W. Tucker, Thomas Maguire, William H. Stower, E. R. Chase, M.D., C. H. Stafford, William R. Derby, D. E. Field, A. A. Morse. Elders, A. A. Morse, B. F. Lee, Edwin R. Chase, M.D., O. C. Morse, E. P. Morse, C. H. Stafford, W. E. Atherton. Deacon, Asa Hale. The membership is one hundred and thirty-one.

There has been a Sunday-school connected with the church from about the beginning of the organization. A. A. Morse has held the office of superintendent for more than twenty years. Membership is ninety.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.* — This church was organized January 12th, 1835, the original trustees being as follows: First class, William D. Ross, John Gould, Hine Clemons; second class, Noble Clemons, Lewis Ladd; third class, Charles C. Cheney, Asa Derby. The present church edifice was begun soon after the organization, but it was several years before it was finished. In 1852 the Willsborough people, who had been associated with the church during the first seventeen years of its life, effected a separation. The ministerial succession in the church has been as follows: Lewis Potter and John Graves and John Haslan; Arunah Lyon and Benjamin Cox; Aaron Hall and O. J. Squires; J. D. White and Benjamin Pomeroy; J. D. Burnham and A. Garvin;



S. Coleman and Henry Taylor; J. D. White and ———; J. D. Burnham and M. B. Wood; William Arner and ———; David Osgood and O. J. Squires; John Graves and J. D. Wescott; Josiah Chamberlain and D. H. Loveland; William Arner and ———; in 1852 W. H. Meeker; followed by Andrew McGilton, Matthias Ludham, Joel Eaton, Joseph Cope, J. M. Puffer, George W. Brown, D. N. Lewis, John Vrooman, J. D. White, M. N. Curry, J. W. Thompson, C. H. Richmond, W. P. Rulison, George H. Robbins, 1876-79; E. J. Guernsey, 1879-82; J. M. Edgerton, 1882-85; and the present pastor, Elam Marsh, who came in the spring of 1885.

The church building was extensively improved in 1876 and again in 1884, the last time at a cost of about \$1,000.

The present officers of the church are as follows: Stewards, W. H. Adsit, (district steward); O. Parker, B. D. Bacon, M. Sibly, Z. Clark, G. D. Anson, C. E. Hoskins, E. W. Hoskins, L. L. Calkins, recording steward. Leaders, A. E. Winslow, W. D. Palmer, D. S. Whallon. Trustees, John Hoskins, chairman, W. G. Lyon, B. D. Bacon, W. H. Adsit, M. E. Eggleston, clerk. Sunday-school superintendents B. D. Bacon and Mrs. F. J. Avery.

The Baptist Church of Essex village was an offshoot of the Essex church at Brookfield, and was organized in 1838, with a membership of eighteen. Elders Hodges and Walden of Elizabethtown supplied the pulpit the first three years and increased the membership to one hundred and five. The church was begun in 1840 and completed in 1842. Fifteen ministers have officiated, *viz.*: Revs. C. W. Hodges, J. H. Walden, Lyman Smith, Isaac Waldron, Elias Hurlburt, C. H. Pierson, K. Smith, C. W. Walker, E. A. Wyman, George E. Henderson, Calvin Fisher, Luman Kinney, Stephen Wright, I. E. Howd, S. W. Nichols, J. R. Taylor, A. H. Stock. Rev. A. H. Stock left in April, 1884, since which time the church has been without a pastor. The present deacons are Philip S. Baldwin and Aiken E. Sheldon, who also perform the duties of church trustees. Albert Baldwin is the present church clerk.

*St. John's Church, Essex, (Episcopal).* — The church was organized March 21st, 1853, the missionary in charge being Rev. F. C. Putnam. The persons present at the first meeting were, Rev. F. C. Putnam, Henry H. Ross, William H. Low, Henry N. Gould, Ezra Parkhill, H. A. Palmer, Elihu Gilbert, Seth Crossman, Peter Chamberlain, William Buch, Henry D. Edwards, Henry Barker, Charles A. Martin, William E. Sayward, Asa P. Hammond, and George E. Atwater.

The organization of this church was mainly due to the efforts and influence of Mrs. Henry H. Ross, and her daughter, Susannah M. Ross, now Mrs. Cooper. The first officers were as follows: Henry H. Ross, senior warden; Asa P. Hammond, junior warden. Vestrymen, Henry N. Gould, William H. Low, Henry W. Putnam, Ezra Parkhill, Seth Crossman, Elihu Gilbert, George E. Atwater, Charles A. Martin.

From 1853 to 1877 services were held in a building erected by Henry H. Ross about 1835 for a school-house on the lot where the present church edifice stands, and by him devoted to the uses of the church during those years. In 1877 the church purchased the building and lot, removed the old building to its present site and rebuilt it in its present form, from designs by the Rev. John Henry Hopkins, D.D. In the same year the rectory was built on the same lot. The church is a frame building supported by buttresses on the east side, with a wing for the organ chamber and vestry-room, and a bell cot at the north end. It contains a marble altar constructed from stone found in the town. The base is of blue limestone, sanded, the sides and top of dolomite cut from a boulder found in the vicinity, which presents a variegated surface resembling mosaic work. It is supported at the sides by pillars of black marble (blue limestone polished), and surmounted by a super-altar of the same marble and a cross of dolomite which, as well as the front of the altar, is inlaid with porphyry and marbles of different colors. It was made from designs by Dr. Hopkins and was his gift to the church. The church also contains a tablet to the memory of Henry H. Ross, the founder of the parish, and another to the memory of the Rev. J. N. Fairbanks, the third rector of the parish, both being erected by the vestry.

The following have officiated as rectors of this church: 1853-54, Rev. Fernando C. Putnam; 1855-56, Rev. Edmund D. Cooper; 1857-60, Rev. J. N. Fairbanks; 1862-65, Rev. Edmund D. Cooper; 1865-66, Rev. Charles Husband; 1867-68, Charles C. Fiske; 1868-69, Elias Weil; 1869-70, Rev. John Henry Hopkins, jr., D.D.; 1871-72, Rev. James E. Hall; 1873-76, Rev. J. W. McIlwaine; 1878-83, Rev. E. L. Toy; 1884, Rev. Norman Irish, D.D., who is the present pastor.

The present number of communicants is ninety. The officers are: Stephen D. Derby, senior warden; Andrew J. Tucker, junior warden; A. J. B. Ross, Robert Fortune, Moses Knowlton, H. E. Woodford, Edward W. Richardson, Charles W. Woodford, Edward B. Atkins, M. D., vestrymen.

A Sunday-school was organized at the same time with the church; the rectors have been superintendents.

*St. Joseph's Church (Roman Catholic.)*—This church was organized in 1872. The first trustees were Michael McFarland and Terence McFarland. First priest, Rev. James Shields. The church building was begun in 1872 and finished in the next year, at a cost of about \$9,000. Following are the names of the successive priests who have served the church: Rev. John Redington, Rev. John H. Sullivan, Rev. Mr. Devlin, M. A. Holihan, the present priest. The present membership comprises about one hundred families. The trustees are Terence McFarland and Victor Fuller. A Sunday-school has been conducted since the organization of the church, with the priest as superintendent.

*Freemasonry.*—Essex lodge No. 152 (the first in the county), was char-



tered February 14th, 1807. Its records are lost but it seems to have been in existence as late as 1822. The present Masonic lodge of Essex (Iroquois lodge, No. 715), was chartered June 7th, 1862. Its original membership numbered about fifty. The first officers were: James B. Ross, W. M.; Andrew J. Tucker, sen. warden; George Alexander, junior warden. The present officers are as follows: Charles J. Merriam, W. M.; W. M. French, senior warden; O. E. Hayes, junior warden; John B. Cuyler, senior deacon; G. F. Eggleston, junior deacon; Dwight E. Field, secretary; A. J. Tucker, treasurer; G. A. Calkins, senior master of ceremonies; David S. Hayward, junior master of ceremonies; H. J. Hinkley, tiler. Lodge meetings are held in the store building in which Stafford Brothers keep store.

In August, 1869, a chapter (Split Rock chapter, Number 243), containing a membership of twenty-five, was organized. The first high priest was John Ross. William Hoskins held the office of king; Franklin D. Bennett, of scribe; Ambrose Brunell, of captain of the host; and Joshua Bennett, of principal sojourner. The present officers are: D. E. Field, H. P.; D. S. Hayward K.; H. S. Stower, S.; A. J. Tucker, C. of H.; Anthony J. B. Ross, P. S.; John B. Cuyler, R. A. C. (royal arch captain); J. W. Chamberlain, M. 3d V. (master of the third veil); George Alexander, M. 2d V.; Asa Frisbie, M. 1st V.; H. J. Hinkley, tiler.

*Postmasters.* — The first postmaster of which any record can be found is Judge John Gould, who officiated from a date antecedent to 1818 until about 1838. He was succeeded by Dr. E. P. Mead, who served his country in the capacity of mail distributor four or five years, and was in turn superseded by Charles J. Fancher. He gave place to Robert Fortune about six years after he had taken the oath of office. By another presidential transformation Charles G. Fancher became successor to Mr. Fortune. The latter was re-instated after a short period, and in a few years again gave place to Mr. Fancher. In about 1875 Walter D. Palmer was appointed and retained the office until the spring of 1885, when E. W. Hoskins, the present incumbent assumed the duties of the office.

*Boquet.* — This is a small hamlet situated about three miles to the southwest of the village of Essex, on the Boquet river. It was formerly a flourishing manufacturing community. The first manufacturing efforts of civilized man in this village were put forth in 1810, when William D. Ross erected a grist-mill on the bank of the river, and about the same time built quite an extensive rolling and slitting-mill and nail factory. As early as 1784, however, Daniel Ross conducted a general store here for the accommodation of the early settlers who had established themselves in scattered families along the river side. There must have been, too, at that early date, some lumbering done about the site of Boquet, for Daniel Ross also ran a saw-mill here in 1785. It was probably engaged entirely in supplying the home demand. After 1810

the place began to assume considerable local importance. Business did not die out there for many years. Henry H. Ross, in his memoranda before mentioned, written about 1840, states that in Boquet there was then "a large mill for the manufacture of rolled iron and nails, a grist-mill, etc." There has never been and is not now a post-office here. In 1828 a district school-house was built of stone and in octagonal shape. It still serves the original purpose of its erection. In 1855 an Episcopal chapel was built on the hill in the south part of the village, but was purchased by the Baptist and Presbyterian element of the community in 1880, and is now used as a union church. Brookfield and Essex clergymen supply the pulpit. Little remains of the business activities of ancient days. The old dam has been worn away rather than washed away, and the mills are the more silent in that they arouse an idea of former thrift and industry. The only business now conducted in the old village is that of C. W. & W. A. Tucker, dealers in produce and general merchandise. They started a hay barn about eight years ago, and soon after built the store near the railroad. They still press hay and dispense merchandise to the inhabitants of Boquet and vicinity.

*Brookfield* is a farming settlement in the west part of the town, which has one store, that kept by James Reynolds for the past three years. There is also at Brookfield one of the oldest Baptist Churches in the county. About the beginning of the present century they held services in an old log building, and afterwards in a barn, until their church edifice was completed (before 1809). In 1809 Rev. Solomon Brown, who founded the churches of Keeseville, Elizabethtown, Jay and Westport, is named as a delegate from the Essex Church (at Brookfield) to the association held at Elizabethtown. The church then had eleven members. Sixteen pastors have presided over her ecclesiastical councils: Solomon Brown, Jeremiah H. Dwyer, J. B. Wilkins, E. Goodspeed, E. P. Adams, J. S. McColum, Charles Berry, Elias Hurlburt, C. Fisher, E. W. Allen, W. Gussman, W. S. Bush, S. W. Nichols, J. R. Taylor, E. M. Lynch, W. H. Stock. Her largest membership was attained in 1837, when it numbered one hundred and forty-three. Her present membership is about forty-eight. Judge Charles Hatch's residence here from 1792 to 1804 has been mentioned in a previous page.

*Whallonsburgh.* — Next in size to Essex, though last in the date of its existence as a village, is Whallonsburgh. R. A. Ferguson, who came to the place in 1870 with his father, John Ferguson, describes it as being then an unbroken forest. His father, a carpenter, struck the first blow to clear the land and build the first dwellings and factories of the new settlement. He came from Washington county, N. Y., in the service of Reuben Whallon, who had come from the same vicinity about two years before. Mr. Ferguson built a saw-mill, just in the rear of the present site of William F. Blinn's store, and a clothing factory near where the sash factory now is. The place grew



very gradually; lumbering constituted the principal business of the inhabitants. A. Hale soon built a grist-mill on the hill in the western part of the village, and was soon followed by William Smith and James S. Whallon, who erected a grist-mill which now forms the west end of the sash factory. Smith & Whallon, not being contented with their milling profits, built a plaster factory adjoining the grist-mill. This business thrived mightily, teams frequently coming from Vermont for loads of plaster. In 1840 a fine forge existed here, built by the proprietor, James S. Whallon. The clothing works and one grist-mill were still running. William Smith, probably the first postmaster, had received his appointment prior to 1825. James S. Whallon followed Smith, Lewis Cady followed Whallon, and in about 1860 Eli W. Rogers followed Cady. Mr. Rogers has officiated uninterruptedly from that time to the present. The industries now active in the village may be briefly noticed as follows: In 1881 Edgar Chamberlain and Eugene, his brother, succeeded William H. Richardson in the manufacture of blinds and sashes. The business originated in 1869, Samuel Root, William H. Richardson and V. C. Spencer being the first proprietors. In 1872 Messrs. Root and Spencer withdrew. James S. Whallon built the mill which was formerly used as a carding-mill. The Chamberlain Brothers lease the premises of Samuel Root. They keep about fifteen hands busy and can turn out about seventy doors in a day, and have made as many as 1,500 pairs of blinds in a month.

The grist-mill now running in Whallonsburgh was built about 1830 by James S. Whallon, soon after the former mill of Smith & Whallon had been damaged beyond repair by a freshet. Jonathan Mather, the present owner, has held the title for a great many years. John R. Mather superintends the running of the mill.

F. J. Avery has been a general merchant here since 1870. He established the business himself. William F. Blinn started a store here in April, 1885. John R. Mather is proprietor of a cabinet shop, and G. J. & J. G. Walker run an extensive hay barn.

The village boasts a Union Church, which was organized not far from 1830. The present edifice was erected before 1840, James S. Whallon contributing most generously towards its construction. The Presbyterian and Methodist clergymen at Essex preached here. Rev. Joel Fisk first officiated, and Rev. Joseph T. Willet preached here for about thirteen years. They organized a Sabbath-school almost at the beginning.

The present school-house was built in 1851. Miss Mattie Stafford is the present teacher. The district is extensive, and consequently the school always has a large attendance.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF LEWIS.

THIS town was set off from Willsborough, April 4th, 1805, and derived its name from Morgan Lewis, then governor of the State. In 1844 and 1854 its territory was diminished to increase the size of Elizabethtown. It lies south of Jay and Chesterfield, west of Willsborough and Essex, north of Elizabethtown, and east of Elizabethtown and Jay. Its surface is rough and broken by precipitous hills and narrow valleys and less than one-half of the territory embraced within the limits of the town is susceptible of cultivation. The soil is composed largely of a sandy and gravelly loam. The northwestern part is distinguished by containing a portion of the Adirondack range of mountains, prominent among its peaks being the McDonough mountain, and the southeastern is distinguished in like manner by possessing several isolated peaks of the Boquet mountains. Mount Discovery in these mountains rises to an elevation of about two thousand feet. The Boquet river flows into the southern part of the town from Elizabethtown and after draining the southeastern portion of Lewis, leaves it in a southeasterly direction, runs through the southwestern corner of Essex into Westport, where it shortly turns northerly, flows again into Essex, and courses its way northerly and northeasterly into the lake in Willsborough. (See description in Willsborough chapter.) The town has not much of a history. Its most important industries, lumbering and iron manufacturing, have either died out or are waning and there is not much of incident in the career of its early settlers to interest the people of the present day. The only village in the town, Lewis, contains fewer than two hundred inhabitants. As before stated, the farming interest is not large, although small tracts of its territory are extremely fertile, and to-day the town has little to boast of except the genial disposition of its population, and the rugged beauty of its hills and naked ravines.

In common with other towns in the northern and eastern parts of the county it was settled before 1798. It is recorded that Thomas Hinckley, the earliest settler, came to Lewis and made the first purchase in 1796. He located north of the village and built a forge on the site of Stower's saw-mill. His sons are Squire, Horatio, Rodolphus and Alexis.

Ishmael H. Holcomb located early about a mile west of the village. He became quite noted as a political speaker, being endowed with rare native eloquence. He was a Federalist, held several offices and was a local political leader. He was also prominent in the Presbyterian Church.

The first child born in the town was Oliver Holcomb. He lived his life and died there.



Deacon Asa Putnam was one of the early settlers, and afterward removed to Essex. His two sons were Harrison and Hiram Putnam. He has a grandson now living in Elizabethtown.

Charles, Samuel and Noah Lee came very early into the central part of the town, on what was known as "Lee Hill." Three others of the same family also settled in the town; their names are Seth, George and Timothy.

Appleton, Timothy and Hooker Woodruff, settled early about two miles south of Lewis village on the Elizabethtown road. Appleton held the office of deputy sheriff. One of Hooker's daughters married Orlando Kellogg, of Elizabethtown, and another became the wife of James Livingston. Julius Woodruff, son of Hooker, married Wealthy Livingston, sister of R. W. Livingston, now of Elizabethtown.

Ziba Westcott and Ziba Flagg were early settlers and raised families in the town.

William Livingston came from Hebron, Washington county, in the fall of 1817 and located about one and a half mile southeast of the village. His wife was a daughter of Theophilus Tracy, of Granville, Washington county. In the fall of 1828 he removed to Chautauqua county and remained fourteen years, when he returned to Lewis and died there. His son John J. Livingston, lives near Philadelphia; James still lives in Lewis, and Robert W., for many years editor of the Elizabethtown paper, is still living in that village.

A family by the name of Abell came into the town early, settling in the north part. The sons were named Julius and Roswell.

Stephen Burpee was an early settler and left several sons who lived and died in the town. They lived on "Lee" or, as it was sometimes called, "Burpee" hill.

Samuel Bishop settled early half a mile southeast of the village and built a mill there. He had a large family and died there.

"Deacon" Brown was an early settler and commanded a Lewis company at the battle of Plattsburg. He located east of the village on the Boquet. Near him was Asa Farnsworth who had a forge and a saw-mill.

Joel French came into the east part of the town as early as about 1820. He was a respected farmer and left sons.

Levi Parsons taught the first school and subsequently went as a missionary to Palestine; this was before 1820. He was much respected and died in the East.

These constituted the majority of the early settlers in the town; many of whom migrated from Connecticut.

The first marriage in the town was that of Timothy Woodruff and Eunice Newell, and the first death of an adult that of Mrs. John Smith.

In 1804 a rudimentary nucleus of a Congregational Church was organized, and for a time the services of Rev. Mr. Burbank were secured. A Methodist

society had been formed in 1808. No permanent organization of any kind, however, no business enterprise or financial investment which has been passed down to the present day was established earlier than the second decade in this century.

James G. Livingston, before mentioned and more familiarly known throughout Lewis as "Deacon" Livingston, came here in the fall of 1817 with his father, William Livingston, who erected a small house on the same tract of land that the "Deacon" now occupies, a little to the southwest of his present dwelling. In 1822 they built the house now inhabited by the Livingston family. Deacon Livingston has a distinct recollection of the state of business and society when he first made his bow here. The land was covered with a dense primeval forest, which had only begun to show signs of giving way before the sturdy blows of the woodman's axe. Here and there a small clearing let the sunlight through to the earth, and a log hut silently proclaimed the approach of civilization and the concomitant dissolution of the wild and sterile government of nature which had subsisted from the dim Laurentian period of the world's growth. The first industries, of course, were those first demanded by the necessities of the pioneers, and were gradually superseded by the more extensive establishments which everywhere testify to the indomitable discontent and sagacity of the human mind. In 1818 George Steele kept a store just across the street in an easterly direction from Mr. Wilson's tavern in the village of Lewis. David Sykes was inn-keeper in the same building now used as a hotel in Lewis. Those two buildings and a dwelling house occupied by Reuben Armstrong, a clergyman, were the only buildings in what is now properly the village of Lewis. A school-house stood near the site of the cemetery, in which the Rev. Reuben Armstrong, though not a settled pastor, occasionally exhorted the impenitent to turn back from their unrighteousness. The Congregational Church was still existing. The school was then in a flourishing condition (like the pedagogue's sceptre) and pupils were in daily attendance from a distance of three miles. John J. Livingston, brother of James G. Livingston, taught there in the winter of 1818-19. David Sykes was postmaster and had been for a number of years, and continued in office for some time after that. Lumbering had begun to be quite a prominent business, the most extensive lumber merchant, probably, being Judge Charles Hatch, of Westport, who made large purchases of land in and about Lewis. The store and tavern mentioned above were not the only signs of life in the community in that early day. Samuel Bishop owned a saw-mill and a grist-mill just east of the village, which did an active business until they were swept off in a freshet in 1830. There were two distilleries running in Lewis, one owned by Noah Lee near the present residence of Chauncey Lee, and the other owned by Noah Lee's brother, Timothy, on what was afterwards known as the "Gibbs place." There was no potash made here. The roads were in good condition and had been constructed nearly as they are



to-day. By 1827 there had been something of a change here. John Du Chenais came here in that year, and he relates that there had then been erected a number of saw-mills, of which Squire Hinckley owned three. The mills of Samuel Bishop were still running, the store and tavern still held out their seductive allurements, the distillers still distilled; one Williams had begun the manufacture of potash west of the village. The Congregational Church now standing was just in process of construction but was not fully completed before 1830. Rev. Cyrus Comstock, who had been a frequent and welcome visitor to the church ten years before, still made the sacred auditorium resound with his monitory and persuasive utterances. Much of the face of the country was still covered with magnificent pines, which were cut and taken to the mills operated east of the village by John Gould, there sawed into lumber and shipped to Troy and Albany. Squire Hinckley kept the post-office in 1827, at his house in the north part of the village. He kept a store in the same building. He was also, in company with his brother Ashael, proprietor of a hotel in the village, and ran a two-fired forge where W. H. Stower's saw-mill now stands. Squire Hinckley, it should be stated, was the owner and manager of this forge also in 1818. In 1830 he kept a store in the building now occupied by Albert A. Boynton, and his faded sign is still faintly visible after weathering the sun and rain of more than fifty years.

James L. Burpee was born in the town of Lewis in 1833. At the time of his earliest recollection (1837-40) lumbering was still the chief of the industries. Elijah Sherman was postmaster in the village of Lewis; the school was much larger than it is now, numbering more than one hundred pupils. The first teacher Mr. Burpee remembers was a Mr. Morehouse. Rev. Orson P. Clinton had become the settled pastor of the Congregational Church, and remained here eight or ten years. Potash making and the necessity for distilleries were then things of the past. There were three or four saw-mills in operation. Elijah Sherman owned a large tannery and boot and shoe factory east of the village.

It was in these early years, from about 1820 to 1830, that Joseph Call, the Lewis giant, was in the zenith of his physical power. He was a mill-wright by trade, and did a good deal of lumbering here. It is related that he was double-jointed and had a double set of teeth. He was not more than six feet in height, but was thick-set. He was particularly noted as a wrestler, and was at different times engaged in matches in many parts of the world. The writer has seen a watch formerly worn by Judge Henry H. Ross, of Essex, which Call won in a wrestling match in Scotland nearly fifty years ago. The writer has also seen a stick of timber fifty feet long and ten inches square, now forming the plate of one of the stone stores in Essex, which it is said Call had dragged with one end on his shoulder a distance of twenty rods, then up an inclined staging to the top of the wall and laid thereon in its present position.

He was once matched against a British grenadier in Plattsburg. The grenadier, finding himself unequally matched with so powerful a wrestler, endeavored to take Call's life, whereupon the giant actually crushed the Briton between his hands. Another anecdote related about Call is that a famous wrestler from England had crossed the sea to challenge him, and being directed to his farm found him at work plowing. He did not recognize his opponent in his home-spun garments and inquired of him the way to Call's house. The plowman, divining the mission of his visitor, raised his plow in one hand and pointed with it to the house, a short distance away.<sup>1</sup> Call never received his challenge.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

Lewis, the only village in the town of that name, has been historically set forth in the early part of this chapter. It is situated about four miles and a half north of the village of Elizabethtown, a little southwest of the center of the town of Lewis. Its most important industry, and indeed the most important in the town, is the forge owned and operated by William H. Stower. The forge is really about three miles northeast of the village on a branch of the Boquet river. It is a four-fired, hot-blast forge, and uses ore chiefly from Moriah. It was erected not far from 1837 by Samuel Bishop, was owned and worked a number of years by General William E. Merriam, subsequently by his son, John L. Merriam, and still later by W. H. Roberts. Mr. Stower bought the property in 1864. Quite thorough explorations have been made at different periods and several veins of ore discovered, which have been opened to some extent, but there is little prospect of profitable mining within the town. Mr. Stower is also the proprietor of an extensive saw-mill and butter tub factory, which are operated together. The saw-mill was set in operation about eight years ago, and the butter tub factory started in the spring of 1884. Richard T. Esmond owns a grist-mill which he has just completed.

*Mercantile.*—M. N. Norton opened a store for the sale of general merchandise, in November, 1881. He carries a stock of about \$4,500 value. Albert A. Boynton started a general store here in September, 1884. He estimates the value of his stock on hand at about \$2,500. W. Woodruff, dealer in wet groceries, began business in January, 1885.

*Hotel.*—The hotel now occupied by Joseph Wilson was one of the first buildings erected in the village of Lewis. It stood here some years before 1820. The earliest proprietor of whom we have any record is David Sykes, who kept the house in 1818. After numerous changes in proprietorship, and various vicissitudes incident to houses of this character, the business fell into the hands of the present proprietor, Joseph Wilson, in the fall of 1884.

One of the first postmasters, if not the very first of the guild, was David Sykes, who officiated for years before and years after 1818. Squire Hinckley

---

<sup>1</sup> R. W. Livingston, of Elizabethtown, is authority for the statement that many of the stories of Call and his feats are mythical, although he was unquestionably a giant in strength.



followed him, and remained in office a long time. Arthur Derby, the present postmaster, received his appointment in 1882.

*Town Records.* — The records of this town previous to about the year 1821 have been lost or destroyed, preventing our giving the first town officers and other matters of early history. We have, however, obtained a list of the supervisors from the year 1818 to the present time; they are as follows: 1818, Ishmael H. Holcomb; 1819-20, William Livingston; 1821, John Gibbs; 1822 to 1828 inclusive, Ishmael H. Holcomb; 1829-30, Selah Westcott; 1831 to 1833 inclusive, Ishmael H. Holcomb; 1834 to 1836 inclusive, Selah Westcott; 1837-38, Russell Gibbs; 1839, Selah Westcott; 1840-41, Russell Bailey; 1842 to 1844 inclusive, William S. Merriam; 1845-46, Alanson Wilder; 1847, Lewis Sherman; 1848 to 1850 inclusive, William S. Merriam; 1851, George Baker; 1852, William S. Merriam; 1853, Alanson Wilder; 1854-55, George W. Phelps; 1856, Cleander Marshall; 1857, John L. Merriam; 1858 to 1860 inclusive, Cleander Marshall; 1861, William E. Roberts; 1862, Cleander Marshall; 1863, W. H. Roberts; 1864, A. E. Kendall; 1865-66, William H. Stower; 1867 to 1870 inclusive, James L. Burpee; 1871 to 1875 inclusive, James W. Steele; 1876, James L. Burpee; 1877 to 1884 inclusive, James W. Steele; 1885, Albert A. Boynton.

*Population.* — 1810, 537; 1825, 1,101; 1830, 1,305; 1840, 1,500; 1845, 1,681; 1850, 2,058; 1855, 1,803; 1860, 1,807; 1865, 1,774; 1870, 1,724; 1875, 1,740; 1880, 1,774.

Following is a list of the present officers of the town of Lewis, Essex county: —

Supervisor — Albert A. Boynton.

Town clerk — Arthur F. Derby.

Justices of the peace — Arthur F. Derby, John McGuire, Levi G. Jenkins, Aaron Gardner.

Assessors — Zachariah C. Beardsley, John F. Nichols, Orrin A. Smith.

Commissioner of highways — Richard Cross.

Collector — William H. Smith.

Overseer of the poor — Cyrus Severance.

Auditors — Lorenzo Burpee, George D. Cutting, William H. Marshall.

Inspectors of election — Alfred Keith, William Whipple, Alfred J. Sargent.

Constables — Edwin D. Denton, John W. Cutting, Morris E. Reynolds, Louis Ladue, John J. Cross.

Excise commissioners — James McCalvin, Wellington Hynes, Friend A. Cross.

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF MORIAH.<sup>1</sup>

THE town of Moriah lies upon the shore of Lake Champlain, south of the center of the shore line of the county, and is bounded on the north by Westport and Elizabethtown; on the east by Lake Champlain; south by Crown Point, and on the west by North Hudson. Along the shore of the lake is a strip of level land, which gradually rises to a height of about five hundred feet as it recedes from the lake, forming a hilly feature of country, which in the western portion rises into mountains.

In the vicinity of the lake the soil is a clayey loam, but in the hilly region it becomes light and sandy in character, and still more sterile in the western part. Not more than one-half of the surface is susceptible of profitable cultivation. In mineral deposits the town is very rich, and particularly in iron ore of superior quality, which is mined and worked in many localities. Black lead is also found, and a fine quality of serpentine.

Hammond and Pine ponds are situated in the southwest part and a portion of Bull Pout pond in the northwest, with numerous other small ponds without distinctive names, in other localities. The outlets of those in the western part flow west into the Schroon river, while a number of small streams flow eastward from the central portions and empty into Lake Champlain. The large estuary called Bulwagga bay extends southward out of the lake, forming the historic Crown Point, which comprises a part of the town of that name.

The town was formed from Crown Point and Elizabethtown on the 12th of February, 1808. In 1828 a part was taken off and annexed to Newcomb, and in 1848 another portion was annexed to North Hudson; on April 9th, 1849, a part of Westport was added to the town, since which date its boundaries have remained unchanged.

*Early Settlements.*—The first permanent settlements in this town were made immediately following the close of the Revolutionary War; a fact which applies to nearly all of the towns in the county bordering the lake. Going back beyond that struggle, however, it is known that Benjamin Porter was granted the water power and site of what is now Port Henry village as early as 1766. It is believed that he erected a mill on the North brook soon after his settlement, which was destroyed during the Revolution. After the war he returned to his possession and in connection with Robert Lewis, of Albany, rebuilt his mill. There were, either then or not long afterwards, a grist-mill and a saw-mill

---

<sup>1</sup> The reminiscences in the history of this town from Alexander McKenzie and David Sanford are condensed from newspaper sketches written some years since by Rev. M. A. Munson, now of New Haven, Conn.



at this point. It is not now known whether Robert Lewis became a permanent resident of the town; but it is probable that he lived here for quite a period, as he was granted a privilege to operate the first authorized ferry in the town on the 3d, of April, 1811, for a period of ten years. Of this old mill Alexander McKenzie said, in 1873: "There was nothing at all at Port Henry in 1805 except a small house and a grist-mill. This mill stood above the bridge and was owned by Robert Lewis, an Englishman. It was not worth much; it ground very slow. I guess I have been there on horseback four or five times for one grist."

As to what became of Robert Lewis or his subsequent career there is no existing record of which we have learned.

William McKenzie came into the town in 1785 and located in the southern part of what is now the village of Port Henry. Upon his arrival he found no white inhabitants, other than Mr. Lewis, but plenty of Indians of the St. Regis and "Swagotchie" (Oswegatchie) tribes. Of the McKenzie family ample materials exist for extended mention, including much important early history, in statements made by the late Alexander McKenzie, son of William, and published in the *Port Henry Journal* in 1873, from which we shall make liberal extracts. Speaking of the Indians above alluded to, Mr. McKenzie said: "Once a canoe load of them came and hung their canoe over our garden fence. They went off back into the woods; then another load came and hung their canoe on the fence and also went away into the woods. At length the last party came back and were going to take the canoe belonging to the first party. My mother forbade their doing so; they swung their tomahawks, but she was fearless and kept the canoe, driving them away with the cards with which she was carding wool." Mr. McKenzie's father expressed the opinion that they had killed the first party. The Indians who came there to hunt remained all winter and sometimes through the spring; they were very friendly. Bears, deer, wolves and rattlesnakes were then very numerous in this region.

William McKenzie was in the service of his country and stationed at Crown Point, where he was taken prisoner and carried to Ticonderoga during the Revolution. He had a sister who was one of the many victims of the small-pox epidemic which raged in the army at Crown Point and was buried near the old fort. Mr. McKenzie had seven sons and two daughters. Mr. McKenzie kept a tavern, probably the first in town, which was the only public house between there and Westport on the north and Addison on the south; he also carried on a farm and was the first justice of the peace, which gave him the popular title of "'Squire." He lived on the place where he settled until his death at the age of fifty-six.

Alexander McKenzie was the first white child born in the town, his birth occurring on the 22d of November, 1785. Lyman McKenzie, now living in the town about a mile east of Moriah Corners, is his son. He took part in

both the Plattsburg battles; was a captain in 1812 and promoted to major, which military title he bore to his grave. He commanded three companies, one of which, or the greater portion of it, was from Crown Point, one from Moriah and one from Ticonderoga. It is said that there was but one man left in Moriah after the orders came to march to Plattsburg. Said Major McKenzie, "I think I had the nicest woman in the world for my first wife. Lydia Edgerton was her name. Her father was a Congregational deacon. He owned this farm [the one occupied by Major McKenzie in 1873] and set out the apple trees. I bought the first little wagon (buggy) there was in town, to carry my wife to meeting. My second wife was a Congregationalist, but Elder More led her and her twin sister away into Baptist notions."

Major McKenzie formerly sailed a little "perryauger" on the lake between St. Johns and Ticonderoga. In early days, as he stated, five dollars an acre would buy land anywhere in the town, while he could have bought the site of the new ore bed for a shilling an acre; and the ore lay in plain sight, too. People were then permitted to draw ore from the Cheever on sleds, as it was deemed almost valueless.

Among the other settlers who came into the town soon after the Revolution were Abel Butler, who was a farmer, James McClane, Jabez Carpenter, G. H. and John Havens, and Joseph Curtis. At a very early day, also, families by the names of Hull, Keeler and Winslow settled southwest of the site of Mineville.

William Sherman came to Moriah in 1803 and has now living three daughters settled in the town, on the present Davis farm. George and Caleb came about the same time and settled on the road south of the Corners on the respective farms now in possession of Mrs. Hamden and Orin Stimpson.

Ambrose Mason at about the same time settled on the present James Lewis farm. He was a man desiring notoriety and prominence in local affairs.

Thomas Winslow came in 1805 and settled on a farm nearly west of Mineville, and in 1807 Simeon Sanford settled on the next farm.

Calvin F. Trask was the first village blacksmith and had a shop just north of the present residence of A. W. Smith.

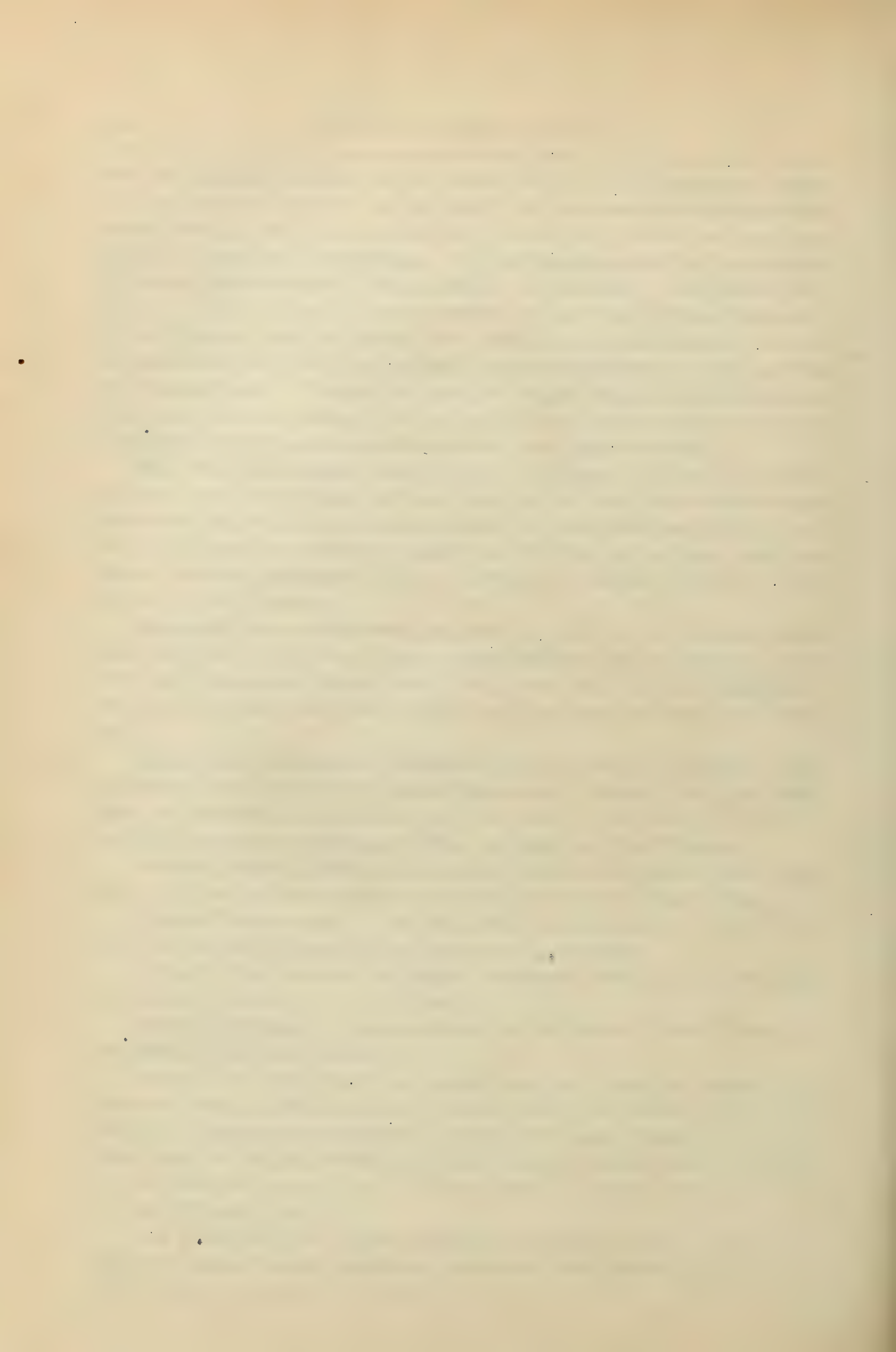
Joseph Curtis came in 1804 and settled on the present Hartwell farm about two miles south of the Corners.

Amasa Cook came in 1807 and settled on a farm where the present residence of George G. Roe is located. David Lowell came about the same time and located near the present residence of Henry O. Lewis. Enoch and Eliakim Reed came in 1804 and settled west of the Corners, near the present residence of Coleman Reed, who is a son of Eliakim Reed. Cyrenius Reed, now living, is a son of Enoch Reed.

John Richmond, Levi Northrup and Hezekiah Mason came together about 1808 and, being related, settled near each other on the present farms of Hardy Curtis, John Harper and A. J. Stiles.











ALEXANDER M'KENZIE.





Alexander Spencer came to Port Henry about 1804, and about six years afterwards settled and built a saw-mill at Moriah Centre, just east of the main road to Mineville. This was the second saw-mill in town. Subsequently, between Ensign pond and the lake, some twenty were built on the same stream and were running at once.

John Lyon came from Vermont at an early date (not later than 1804) and settled on the present Lyman McKenzie farm. He built the house in which Geary Childs now lives. He was the first village doctor. There were no roads at this time, being mostly foot-paths, with marked trees.

William Joiner (who has a son, William Joiner, now living in Westport) came to town about 1803 and lived on the present Theodore Joiner place, on the south road. Jedediah Edgerton came from Powlet, Vt., about 1803 or 1804 and settled on the old Tarbell farm, now owned by Lyman McKenzie. He planted the first orchard west of the lake shore and some of the trees are now standing. He was the father and the first and leading deacon of the Congregational Church. Services were then held in the old school-house standing on or near the present academy lot. He owned the first house to be found west of the lake shore. He was a man of great benevolence, kind-hearted, and beloved by every one. He died in Fair Haven, Vt. He built the present house owned by William Bigelow and set out the poplar trees now standing. The first Mrs. Edgerton died in this house, April 21st, 1819.

George H. and John Havens came in 1806 and settled near the farm of Samuel B. Sprague. Maynard Kidder came from Vermont about 1808 or 1809 and built the first tannery south of the village, on the place where the present cider-mill of N. Spaulding now stands. The leather was used in home consumption. Shoemakers went around from house to house; also tailors. Two sons of Maynard Kidder (Edwin and Albert) are now residents of the town.

James McLain came in 1808 and started a tavern and sold liquors. It was located in front of the site of the present Sherman House. He afterwards removed to Vermont and was struck by lightning and killed.

The present roads were not laid out until after the battle of Plattsburg. The State road through North Hudson, Schroon, etc., was laid out before the war.

The foregoing notes of early settlements are given by Lyman McKenzie, and embrace many of the prominent pioneers of the town. He further says that the early settlers buried their dead on the plains on the plank road leading to Port Henry, east of the present burying-ground. Subsequently they used the plat of ground on which the brick school-house of Moriah now stands. It was not until about 1818 or 1819 that the present cemetery south of the Corners was used.

The late David Sanford came to the town with his father, arriving on the

6th of March, 1805. They located a little southwest of Mineville, on the farm occupied until recently by Hardy Curtis. From his reminiscences, which were printed in the *Port Henry Journal*, it is learned that this region was then covered with forest, with the exception of two or three acres, on which the timber had been cut and the land burned over. The "west road" was not laid out until some years later. A swampy road led from the west side to the east road, entering it a little south of where Levi Reed lived. There was a family living near the site of the Barton ore bed and another where Deacon Sanford afterwards lived at Mineville, and another where Deacon Reed lived. There was not a house between the Reed place and the lake. At the Corners there was nothing but woods. About a mile west of the Corners one family had settled, and some two miles farther west three or four families had located. A few families were living on "Coot Hill," but none between that neighborhood and the Corners. Indians still lingered in the region or came here annually to hunt. In 1804 there were three or four families of them living in a wigwam nearly west of Deacon Reed's, across the swamp, at the edge of the dry lands. No religious meetings had yet been held in the town; but very soon after his arrival Deacon Sanford agreed with Jonas Reed and Captain Edgerton to hold what they called "deacons' meetings," alternately in two unoccupied houses in the vicinity. These meetings were maintained for ten years or more and were the forerunner of later religious work and church building. The three men mentioned were Congregationalists, but the meetings were attended by Methodists and others without distinction of sect.

Maynard Kidder was one of the early settlers at the site of Moriah Corners. He built the first tannery in the town, about half a mile south of the Corners; he operated it until about 1852. He was one of the men who took part in the War of 1812. His son, Albert Kidder, now keeps a store at Moriah Corners, and is a prominent man in the community.

Jonas Reed, already mentioned, was the first permanent resident of the vicinity of Mineville. His brother Levi came in about 1820, at which time there were not over half a dozen families on the site of the village. Milton and Levi Reed, twin brothers, are sons of Jonas and still live at Mineville. At this time (1820) the post-office for the entire town was at Moriah Corners, where it continued several years later.

It appears that a considerable number of the families who located in this town previous to 1810, and their descendants in instances where they had any, have disappeared, either by death or removal to distant points, and there is little now that it is possible to learn regarding them. The growth of the town in population down to about the end of the first quarter of the present century was not very rapid, and will be further traced in our details of the villages, hamlets and industries of the town.



The pioneers hereabouts shared with their brethren in other localities in the hardships of early life in the wilderness, and experienced all of the difficulties in obtaining a living under discouraging circumstances of various kinds. Money was almost beyond reach of the most ambitious, and the settlers were forced to turn their energies to the production of whatever would be accepted by the early merchants in exchange for household necessities. The manufacture of potash supplied one of the important early substitutes for money and was carried on in this town to a considerable extent in the early years of the century. Solomon Everest manufactured it at Moriah Corners; it was also manufactured at Cedar Point; the remains of the leaches being just south of William Flinn's house in 1838. Nathaniel S. Storrs also dealt in the article, and there was a ready market for ashes in their crude state, and for their products which was of great benefit to the inhabitants. The manufacture of maple sugar was also followed by a good many, both to obtain sweets for their own households and for market in exchange for other groceries.

But for all these discouragements, the town grew and the inhabitants prospered each after his deserts; and no untoward event occurred until the cold season of 1816-17. This famous and disastrous year seems to have come upon the people hereabouts with especial severity, and many families found it extremely difficult to obtain sustenance. It is related that, after the farmers had planted their potatoes in the spring of 1817, the suffering was so great in some instances that they dug up the seed potatoes and ate them. Mr. McKenzie related an incident of a carpenter — one of the best workmen in the town — who was so pressed by his circumstances that he was willing to work for him a week for his board and a bushel of wheat. These are only indications of the prevailing destitution and suffering for the commonest necessities — a destitution that would be impossible in these days of rapid transportation, when a scarcity in one section of the country can be immediately supplied from another which has been more fortunate.

When the country was plunged into civil war and called upon her sons to come forward and offer their lives and their wealth for the preservation of the Republic, this town was one of the first and most liberal to respond. Early in the Rebellion a subscription was started for the care and support of families of soldiers, and some \$20,000 were pledged; the subscribers to this fund bore heavy assessments which were paid to A. B. Waldo as treasurer. For details of the part the town took in the war the reader is referred to the chapter devoted to the military history of the county.

*Town Records.* — The first town meeting was held on the first Tuesday in April, 1808, and the following officers elected: Supervisor, William McKenzie; town clerk, Nathan Sherman; assessors, George Sherman, Robert Lewis, Jedediah Edgerton; collector, Theron Smith; poor masters, Jedediah Edgerton, Captain Martin Joiner; commissioners of highways, Caleb Sherman, Jedediah

Edgerton, Ambrose Mason; constables, Theron Smith, James McLean; fence viewers, Thomas Winslow, William Sherman, Jedediah Edgerton, George H. Hawkins; pound master, Calvin F. Trask; pathmasters (ten districts), Joseph Curtis, Peter Lewis, William Sherman, Theron Smith, Amasa Cook, Simeon Sanford, David Lowell, Enoch Reed.

These officers were sworn in by William McKenzie as justice of the peace.

At this first meeting it was voted that "four and one-half feet in height shall be a lawful fence. Horn cattle only shall be free commoners; horses, hogs and sheep shall not be free commoners." Five dollars were voted to buy a town book, and the next meeting was ordered held at the house of James McLain.

The commissioners of excise for the town of Moriah, "on the forth day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and twelve, Licensed William McKenzie, Ambrose Mason, Edmun Farnsworth, Alexander Spencer to keep inns or Taverns in the Houses in which they Severly Reside, also Reed Edgerton to Retail Spirits under five gallons all of whom for five dollars each and Paid the lycence money over to the overseers of the Poor on the above date and commissioners for said town.

"Records kept by William Joiner.

"JOHN RICHMOND,

"JOHN LYON,

"WILLIAM JOINER."

Following is a list of the supervisors of the town from its formation to the present time with the respective years of service: 1809-10, George Sherman; 1811, (records gone); 1812-13, John Richmond; 1814-15, John Lyon; 1816 to 1818 inclusive, Nathan Sherman; 1819, Gardner I. Barker; 1820-21, Nathan Sherman; 1822, Gardner I. Barker; 1823, Nathan Sherman; 1824-25, Gardner I. Barker; 1826 to 1828 inclusive, Nathaniel S. Storrs; 1829, Alexander McKenzie; 1830 to 1832 inclusive, Nathan Sherman; 1833-34, Solomon Everest; 1835, James Greene; 1836-37, George Sherman; 1838, James Greene; 1839, Hiram McKenzie; 1840, George Sherman; 1841, Jeremiah Cook; 1842, Lucius Olcott; 1843, George W. Goff; 1844, John E. McVine; 1845, George W. Goff; 1846, Hiram McKenzie; 1847, B. W. Dewey; 1848, J. Tarbell; 1849-50, Timothy Olcott; 1851-52, James P. Butler; 1853, Kingsley Sherman; 1854-55, Jacob Tappan; 1856 to 1858 inclusive, Artemas B. Waldo; 1859 to 1861 inclusive, William H. Stone; 1862, Leander Lee; 1863, Clark Butterfield; 1864, Walter Merrill; 1865-66, A. B. Waldo; 1867, George T. McKenzie; 1868, William Edgerley; 1869-70, Franklin W. Tobey; 1871 to 1875 inclusive, Edward F. Edgerley; 1876-77, George Murdock; 1878, S. S. Olcott; 1879, Wallace T. Foote; 1880-1881, Rollin L. Jenkins; 1882 and to the present time, John W. Whitehead.

The present officers of the town are as follows: Supervisor, John W. White-



head ; town clerk, Kingsley C. Morhous ; collector, George B. Stimpson ; justices, Chauncey D. Bullis, James Saville, Benjamin F. Beers, Lemuel B. Treadway ; assessors, Seward A. Foot, Marcellus W. Dean, Andrew J. Stiles ; commissioner of highways, William Hulburd ; overseers of the poor, George E. Lamb, John Tart ; inspectors of election, L. Warren Pratt, Edward J. Owen, Thomas McCabe, Francis A. Price, William C. Turnbull, B. Warren Severance, Willard E. Colvin, John Kelley, John Burke ; auditors, Oscar H. Wheelock, Duchesne O. C. Edson, John Moon ; constables, Edwin A. Bolles, John Hill, Charles Sanders, Samuel H. Donnell, William F. Reed.

The population of the town in 1850 was 3,065 ; in 1855, 3,120 ; in 1860, 3,466 ; in 1865, 4,640 ; in 1870, 4,683 ; in 1875, 7,881 ; in 1880, 7,379.

*Physicians.* — Dr. Cheney practiced the medical profession in Port Henry before 1850, and in 1851 Dr. R. E. Warner came here and bought the practice of Dr. Cheney, opening his office in his dwelling. This is now one of the oldest houses in the place and was formerly the residence of Judge McVine, one of the early judges of the county. Dr. Warner died in 1883 and at the time of his death was one of the oldest practitioners in the county.

Dr. C. A. Hopper was graduated from the medical department of the University of New York in 1868 and moved to Port Henry in 1872, from Alleghany county, N. Y. ; he has continued practice here since.

Dr. C. B. Warner, son of Dr. R. E. Warner, studied his profession in Bellevue Hospital, New York city, and began practice in company with his father in 1880 ; they remained associated until the elder physician's death in 1883, since which date he has continued alone.

Dr. A. C. Grover was graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1866. He was for some years engaged in practice in Wells, Vt. In 1884 he came to Port Henry and associated himself with Dr. Hopper in practice and in the drug business.

The dental profession is represented in the town by Dr. G. E. Lamb, who came from Burlington, Vt., to Port Henry in 1871 and has continued here since.

Dr. E. F. Edgerly came to the town immediately after the close of the late war and located at Mineville where he has since been in successful practice. He is a graduate of the Albany Medical College.

Dr. Robert Saville is a graduate of Bellevue Hospital Medical College and has been in practice at Mineville several years.

Dr. B. W. Burland received his medical education at McGill College in Montreal and began practice at Mineville in July, 1882.

Dr. George W. Powel began practice at Moriah Corners in 1876. He received his medical education at the Detroit Homeopathic College in 1874.

*Attorneys.* — In 1847 A. B. Waldo began the practice of law in Port Henry, and about 1862 formed a partnership with F. W. Tobey. From 1872

to 1874 B. M. Beckwith was a member of the firm, and at the last named date M. D. Grover was admitted, the firm continuing as Waldo, Tobey & Grover until 1879, when Mr. Tobey died. Since then the firm has remained as at present, Waldo & Grover. Mr. Waldo was district-attorney from 1862 to 1865; he studied his profession in Granville, Washington county; Mr. Grover in Vermont.

W. H. Carr read law with Waldo & Tobey for three years and was admitted to the bar at Schenectady in November, 1873; he began practice in Port Henry in the same year.

P. C. McRory studied in the office of Waldo & Tobey and was admitted to the bar of Saratoga county in September, 1876; he began practice in Port Henry in the following year.

Chester B. McLaughlin studied law with B. B. Bishop and was admitted to the bar September, 1881. He was first associated in business with the late James W. Sheehy in Port Henry. After the death of Mr. Sheehy he became and is now a partner in the firm of Waldo & Grover. Mr. McLaughlin is a graduate of the University of Vermont and is now school commissioner for the second district, Essex county, filling his second term.

B. F. Beers studied his profession in the office of Waldo, Tobey & Grover, and was admitted to the bar at Albany in January, 1880. In 1881 he began practice in Port Henry.

K. C. Morhous studied with B. B. Bishop, of Moriah Corners, and entered the Albany Law School, from which he was admitted to the bar in that city in January, 1883. In the following year he began practice in Port Henry in the office of B. F. Beers.

B. B. Bishop began the practice of law at Moriah Corners in 1883, having been admitted to the bar at Plattsburg in 1861; previous to that date he had studied in the office of A. B. Waldo at Port Henry and with Kellogg & Abel at Elizabethtown.

George W. Watkins has practiced in Moriah Corners since 1876. He studied with Waldo & Tobey, of Port Henry.

*The Lumber Interest.* — We have mentioned the early mills on the North brook built by Robert Lewis early in the settlement of the town. They have long ago passed into oblivion. Mills were built at a later date about on the same site by Jacob Miller; this was about the year 1817. These were operated until about 1830, or a little later and then fell into decay and were not rebuilt. The territory in this town was originally covered with a heavy growth of forest composed principally of pine, hemlock, spruce, maple and beech. To cut this timber was necessarily the first work of the pioneers; a necessity before the land could be used for tillage and because it gave to the settlers a source of income at a time when money was scarce and the means of obtaining it scarcer. Lumbering became for a long period the chief industry, as it has been in most



of the towns of the county, and saw-mills sprang up like magic. In early days large quantities of timber were cut and rafted down the lake to Quebec and in later years, after the opening of the Champlain canal, the saw-mills of the town were kept busy and their heavy products taken in boats through the canal to southern markets. John and Bryant Bartlett had an early saw-mill near Mineville, and another was operated on Mill brook, at Moriah Centre, by Hezekiah Mason.

In 1833 it is said that there were thirty-six saw-mills running in the town; of course it is impracticable to locate them all. The docks were built at Port Henry after 1820, and greatly facilitated the shipment of lumber at that point. Heman F. Barton operated a saw-mill at Moriah Center as early as 1860, and at the present time has two mills at the same place. L. L. Reed now runs a steam saw-mill, started in the fall of 1884, at Moriah Center. Moriah Corners was formerly the lumber center of the town; but as the timber became reduced in quantity, and the iron industry assumed considerable importance, the lumber traffic gradually declined, and at the present time there are but few mills in the town.

*The Iron Interest.* — The mining and working of iron is and long has been by far the most important branch of industry in this town. The Moriah iron district is the most extensive in the county, while its proximity to the lake and the comparative accessibility of the mines, and ease of transportation of ores from the mines, rendered its successful and profitable development a question only of energy and capital; both of these have been forthcoming and the result has been a series of mining operations and attendant enterprises connected with the working of the ore, the magnitude of which is little known and appreciated out of the immediate vicinity. Numerous mines and shafts have been opened and worked to an enormous extent, and while in some localities the veins are partially or entirely exhausted, in others new developments have been made, indicating that the supply is practically unlimited. The iron industry of the country at large is, just at the present time, in a depressed condition, in which the interests of Moriah sympathize; but this is only temporary, and the ore and the furnaces await the revival of demand which will renew the customary activity in the town. We shall briefly describe the different branches of the iron industry in this district.

*The Cheever Ore Bed.* — This bed, the oldest in the town, is situated about one and a half miles north of the village of Port Henry. A knowledge of the existence of ore at this point has existed since the first settlement of the region. The late Alexander McKenzie, who was born in the town in 1785, remembered the existence of ore here in his early childhood; it cropped out on the surface of the ground to such an extent as to attract the attention of a casual observer. Ore is known to have been taken from the bed in 1804, but in small quantities, and the matter then attracted but little attention. In about the year







JONATHAN G. WITHERBEE.





The territory embraced in what was appropriately designated the Iron Ore Tract, surveyed in 1810, was laid out in lots with consecutive numbers. The presence of the iron ore disturbed the needle during the survey, and particularly along the common lines of lots 21, 23, 24, and 25. Openings were not made on these lots until about 1824, although ore had been found ten years earlier on lot Number 25. It is on this lot that is situated the

*Old Sanford Bed*—It is located at what is now Mineville, and is also known as bed Number 25. Concerning this bed it will not be out of place to quote from the statements of the late Alexander McKenzie, as follows: "A good many chunks of ore were found on the top of the ground about 1823-24 and 1825. Didn't know that there was any ore beneath the surface. It was thought strange that there should be ore in chunks along on the ridge, but none below on the hillside. A man named Bishop, of Elizabethtown, came to Deacon Sanford and bought at a venture a quarter interest in a lot of one hundred and ninety acres, and a brother of Mr. Sherman bought another quarter. This lot embraced the Old Bed (twenty-five). They dug a hole down eight or nine feet deep; full of fine ore. They tried in another place. There was a chunk of ore which was a foot or eighteen inches in diameter; they dug around it; the weight of it might be two or three hundred pounds. They dug down half a foot and came to ore again. They kept digging and enlarging till a surface was exposed of three or four yards in diameter. While they were about it men said, 'You needn't dig any more there; it is contrary to philosophy; this ore that is found must have come from above; it wouldn't work up hill.' But they kept on till they had got a rod or two uncovered, and then began to blast. Deacon Sanford was occupied with mining for twenty years; owned half of the property for that period."

The gentlemen referred to by Mr. McKenzie as associated with Deacon Sanford were Harry Sherman and Elijah Bishop, and their operations were begun on the northeast corner of the lot and resulted in the opening of the old Sanford bed, a source of vast quantities of valuable ore. The ore was first tried in a blast furnace at Port Henry in 1834, but this experiment, owing to injudicious management, was unsuccessful. Two years later G. W. Goff mixed some of the lean ore, which had been thrown out and sold to him at fifty cents a ton, with the Cheever ore and it produced good iron. In the spring of 1846 the property came into the possession of John A. Lee, George Sherman and Eliphalet Hall. The latter sold his interest in the same year to A. J. Rosseau, of Troy, who transferred it in 1849 to S. H. and J. G. Witherbee. From this has developed the powerful firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Company, with its vast interests, which will be further detailed as we proceed. In the early working of this bed, teams were driven into it and wagons loaded beside the breast; the breast worked was then about eighty feet in extent, and a single blast frequently threw out thirty tons of pure ore. Another breast of ninety-

nine feet was worked. Various shafts were opened in the bed from time to time, until now eight separate openings are worked according with the demand. The ore is hoisted in cars, two tons to each load, by steam power, through the agency of drums and wire cables. Walter Tefft was superintendent of these works from about 1858, and was succeeded by his son, William H. Tefft, in January, 1885; from one hundred and forty to one hundred and fifty men are employed here. The analysis of the ore is as follows:—

Metallic iron.....	72.09
Insoluble silicious matter.....	.34
Phosphorus.....	.01
Oxygen and moisture.....	27.56
	<hr/>
	100.00

This company (Witherbees, Sherman & Co.) also work what is known as the New Bed, which is situated about half a mile west of the Old Bed on lot No. 24. Bessemer ore of excellent quality is taken out of six or seven separate openings. About forty men are now employed at this bed. This bed was first practically worked in 1845 and it came into possession of S. H. & J. G. Witherbee in 1849. The analysis of the ore is as follows:—

Pure metallic iron.....	71.19
Insoluble silicious matter.....	1.12
Phosphorus.....	a trace
Oxygen and moisture.....	27.69
	<hr/>

Writing of the ore of this bed and its product in 1868–69 Mr. Watson said: “About one-third of this ore requires separating. It is inclined to be red short and when mixed with the ore of the Old Bed produces a neutral<sup>1</sup> iron of exceeding tenacity. The pure ore from this bed is pronounced by those interested to be the richest ore known to exist in this country. The bed is worked by methods similar to those adopted at the Old Bed.

In about 1880–81 Lewis H. Roe, of Port Henry, and James Hull, of Albany, sank a shaft upon the adjoining lot west of the New Bed and struck one of the New Bed veins. They sold this property to the Lake Champlain Ore Company. The majority of the stock was afterwards purchased by Witherbees, Sherman & Company, who now operate the mine through the openings upon the New Bed lot. The ore upon the New Bed is about exhausted.

The O’Neil shaft, so called, is also worked by Witherbees, Sherman & Company; it is situated on the west part of lot 47, just west of the Cooke shaft, of which it is really a continuation. This property was formerly owned by James O’Neil, now deceased. Previous to his death he leased the lot to J.

<sup>1</sup> Red or hot short iron is ductile when cold, but extremely brittle when heated, a defect caused by the presence of a small quantity of sulphur. Cold short iron is ductile when hot, but brittle when cold; caused by a small quantity of phosphorus. Neutral iron is exempt from both of these defects.



B. Foltz & Company, who, provided they sank a shaft and discovered ore within a given time, were to have a deed of a one-half interest in the ore. In December, 1880, Witherbees, Sherman & Company bought the Foltz interest, and continued work upon the shaft. It was not completed within the time stipulated in the contract between O'Neil and Foltz, and the time was verbally extended. The work then went on to completion (1884) and the ore was developed. The shaft is 670 feet deep, vertically, with a slope of 300 feet farther; it is the deepest in this part of the country. The shaft is now being worked by the firm, who employ there about twenty men. The ore is similar in character to that taken from the Cook, or Smith, shaft, elsewhere described.

The firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Company have iron interests in other organizations, to which we shall allude, and carry on altogether a vast business, employing at times from seven to eight hundred men. Their magnificent office in Port Henry was erected in 1874 and first occupied on the 1st of June, 1875. It is thirty-five feet in front and sixty feet deep, and cost, including its furniture, \$20,000.

*The Cook, or M. P. Smith Shaft.*—The bed connected with this shaft is situated on lot No. 47, Iron Ore Tract, and adjoining the O'Neil property above described. Several early attempts were made to develop this shaft, continuing over a period of some fifteen years previous to that made by Mr. Smith. The lot was then owned by Patrick Cook, and Mr. Smith with an associate made arrangements with the owner to open the mine; for their services and disbursements they were to receive a conveyance of two-thirds of the property. The following description of their persevering labors is given by Mr. Watson: "They commenced their labor, and following the indications of the magnet excavated a shaft ten feet square through a hundred feet of earth without finding any additional indications of ore. Here they struck hard pan, but undeterred by these adverse results, they persisted with unabated zeal. At length they reached and passed through a very thin vein of ore, and this the croakers pronounced the cause of the attraction. But Mr. Smith, wisely judging the deposit too small to have produced effects so powerful, and with unyielding confidence in the assurances of the needle continued the excavation, and after penetrating through rock and hard pan eighty feet farther he revealed a fourteen-feet vein of ore of the first quality." The mine was opened in June, 1866, and produced the first year eight thousand tons of ore. The property finally passed into possession of H. G. Burleigh, who was largely instrumental in organizing in 1884 the Champlain Ore Company. This company bought out the Lake Champlain Ore and Iron Company (see history of Elizabethtown), and now operate the Smith mine. The present officers of the company are H. G. Burleigh, president; B. W. Burleigh, James Morrison, Thomas Caldwell and A. B. Waldo, trustees. The capital stock is \$350,000. The Messrs. Burleigh have set up a claim to the O'Neil shaft, before described, based upon rights secured from the

O'Neil heirs and the invalidity of the verbal permit of extended time given to Witherbees, Sherman & Company, in which to complete the shaft, as before noticed. This has led to litigation, and the matter is now in the courts.

*The Port Henry Iron Ore Company.* — This is a powerful organization whose interests are largely in the vicinity of Mineville. One of its beds is located on lot No. 21 and was formerly (1829) owned by Jonas Reed and Elias Smith, of Moriah, and Allen Smith, of Addison, Vt.; they had purchased it of the original proprietors for a merely nominal sum. The latter soon sold his interest for \$125 and Sanford, Bishop & Sherman, with a view of avoiding competition, secured title to a majority of the different interests in the property, paying therefore "five hundred tons of old bed ore in the ground." The bed was then idle until 1846 when it came into possession of Storrs & Rosseau; the actual opening and working of the mine dates from this event. Operations in the shaft were renewed and after sinking it about thirty feet the ore was struck. Considerable ore was raised and in 1853 Storrs & Rosseau conveyed their interest to the American Mineral Company, who erected extensive separating works for the purpose of extracting the phosphates from the ore, for the separation of the latter for market. They did not succeed in obtaining phosphates of sufficient purity for agricultural purposes and the scheme was relinquished. The mine passed to the Port Henry Iron Ore Company in 1864.

In the year 1824 Jeremiah Cook, then owner of lot No. 23, began an exploration on the line between that lot and No. 25, the mine on the latter then being in process of development. He associated with himself Solomon and Hiram Everest, to whom he sold one-half of his interest for two hundred dollars. An opening was made and interests in the mine as small as one-sixteenth were disposed of on a basis of a four thousand dollar valuation for the whole mine. A majority of these shares were secured by A. J. Rosseau, the partner of Mr. Storrs. The old pit was opened, as stated, and the Brinsmade shaft on the same lot in 1865. A shaft was opened on lot No. 24 in 1845, but not extensively worked until 1864. The ores from these shafts were used in forges, furnaces and rolling-mills and was similar in character to that taken out on lot No. 25. These shafts and mines are now a part of the large interests of the Port Henry Iron Ore Company.

Another mining property which now forms a part of the Port Henry Iron Company's interest is the Fisher Hill bed. This mine was opened very early in the history of iron production in the town by Mr. Fisher and sold by him to Eliphalet Hall. A long period of sharply contested litigation followed, which was ultimately settled by compromise, and the mine was sold in 1863 for \$75,000 to a company of eastern capitalists, from whom it was acquired by the present company. The mine is situated about a mile north of Mineville, and now comprises six shafts of 600 to 800 feet, and the vein is from eight to fourteen feet.



This company control in all eight different slopes and four mines, No. 21 being "the mother of them all." This one is developed for a thousand feet and the end is not yet.

The Welch shaft, about forty-four feet in width and connecting with the Brinsmade shaft, opens into this vein; the same may be said of the Nolan shaft. The company has at some periods of its history employed nearly eight hundred men and with the firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Company, controls the larger part of the iron interest of the town. As much as 192,000 tons of ore have been got out by the company in one year, and about the same quantity by the other firm. Machinery was put in in 1878, using compressed air for drilling and hoisting, two engines of one hundred and fifty horse-power being employed. The works are lighted by electricity, from their own dynamos, producing twelve lights. W. Boardman Reed is the mining engineer and George G. Roe superintendent at the mine works. He has occupied this position since 1860. Of course the interests of the company are suffering with the depression of the iron trade at large existing at the present time; but this condition of its business is, doubtless, but temporary.

The Cedar Point Iron Company was organized in 1872 and erected its furnace No. 1 in 1872-3, at a cost of about \$600,000; it was first put in blast on the 12th of August, 1875. It is 71 by 15 feet, has four 22-feet Whitwell stoves, bell and hopper top; the fuel used is anthracite and coke, and the ores Old Bed, Lake Champlain, New Bed, Bessemer, Kearney from St. Lawrence county and Manhattan hematite. The product is foundry, mill and Bessemer pig iron. The annual capacity is 26,000 net tons. The capital stock of the company was placed at \$500,000. In the spring of 1885 this corporation passed into possession of Witherbees, Sherman & Company, but the company still retains its distinct charter, the firm merely owning a majority of the stock. The present officers of the company are, Silas H. Witherbee, president; George R. Sherman, vice-president; H. B. Willard, secretary and treasurer; T. F. Witherbee, superintendent. The furnace is located on the shore of the lake.

*The Bay State Iron Company.*—This is another of the representative iron companies of this town which has done its share in developing the industry to its present magnitude. One part of the property is the

*Barton Bed.*—It is located on lot No. 34, of the iron ore tract, a little north of the "New Bed" which we have described. It was opened before 1840 and was formerly owned by Caleb D. Barton. In 1863 the mine was purchased by the Port Henry Furnace Company (whose other interests have also been acquired by the present Bay State Company). The ore from this bed has been largely used in the production of pig iron. The following is its analysis:—

---

Magnetic oxide of iron.....	51.418
Oxide magnesia,.....	trace
Titanic acid,.....	0.110
Aluminum,.....	0.329
Magnesia,.....	0.159
Lime,.....	0.498
Silicic acid (quartz with a very little hornblende,).....	47.483
Phosphoric acid,.....	0.050
Sulphur,.....	0.003
	<hr/>
	10.000

The principal business of the Bay State Iron Company has been the operation of furnaces. Major James Dalliba, who was formerly in the regular army, in connection with Hon. John D. Dickinson, of Troy, erected the first furnace in the town of Moriah about the year 1822, and continued in the business until his death in 1833. His furnace was a small affair in comparison with those of the present day, and yielded a product of only fifteen to eighteen tons of iron a week. The ore used by him was obtained from a vein near his furnace, from another about three-fourths of a mile distant and some from Vermont. His furnace was located on the site of the present foundry of the company. His iron was sold in Troy until about 1827, when he abandoned the manufacture of pig iron and began making stoves and hollow ware. When Major Dalliba died the works passed into possession of Stephen S. Keyes, who retained the property but a short time and sold to Lansing, Powell & Tarbell (Jacob D. Lansing, Henry M. T. Powell, David Tarbell). On the 21st of February, 1836, Tarbell sold to his partners and the firm became Lansing & Powell. They were succeeded on the first of January, 1838, by George W. Goff, who sold on the 31st of the same month to Horace Gray. The Port Henry Iron Company (now obsolete) was organized in 1840 and in November of that year Gray sold his property to that company. It was next transferred in 1852 to Benjamin T. Reed, of Boston, including the Cheever ore bed, which the company had acquired. In June, 1853, the furnaces were transferred to the Port Henry Furnaces, and the ore bed to the Cheever Ore Bed Company, two distinct organizations. In July, 1867, the Port Henry Furnaces Company transferred its property to the Bay State Iron Company, a corporation formed under the laws of the State of Massachusetts, its business being located at South Boston. In 1853 the old charcoal furnaces were removed and an anthracite coal furnace substituted, with water as the motive power. In the next year a new furnace was erected on the margin of the lake near the former structure of Powell & Lansing. In 1854 the first iron stack of this particular kind in this country, if not in the world, was erected under the direction of W. T. Foote, the present agent of the company. This iron furnace idea as here carried out was conceived by Ralph Crooker and Abial Elliot,



of Boston. The furnace has an outer casing or shell of boiler iron riveted together and standing upon plates supported by cast iron columns. It is forty-six feet high, sixteen feet in diameter at the top of the boshes, eight feet at the top of the furnace, and is blown through five tuyeres, by steam power. Another furnace was completed in 1862 on a similar plan and same size. Both furnaces were rebuilt in 1866 and '67 and each made 56 feet high by 16 feet diameter. The tops were closed with bell and hopper and the gas conveyed to the ovens and boilers in closed iron tubes, instead of the brick flues formerly used. The furnace built by Powell & Lansing was demolished in 1855 and that built by Gray in 1865. A foundry was erected in 1866, the building being sixty by one hundred feet, and has been successfully operated in connection with the furnaces. The ore used comes chiefly from the Cheever and the Barton beds. From causes which need not be detailed here, these works ceased operations in July, 1883, and the property passed into the hands of J. A. Richards, of Boston, G. R. Sherman and W. T. Foote, of Port Henry, as assignees, in February of that year, by whom it is to be sold.

*Lake Champlain and Moriah Railroad Company.* Although this company is entirely distinct from any of the iron companies described, still it is so closely identified with them and so directly an outgrowth of the iron industry, that its history will not be out of place here.

This company was organized in 1868, the charter being first granted to the Port Henry Iron Ore Company to which the deeds were given. Shortly after the organization of the company, Witherbees, Sherman & Company purchased a half interest in the road, which is still held by them. The road was constructed during the year 1868 at a cost of \$200,000, which was the amount of the capital stock. The first superintendent was R. L. Cook, who was succeeded by S. L. Morrison, and he by E. Hedding, the present superintendent, in 1877. An engine house was built at Mineville in 1874, at a cost of \$1,620, for the accommodation of a switching engine; previous to that time the switching was accomplished by horses. The shops at Port Henry were built in 1873, and the round house in 1872, the whole costing \$19,340. The line of the road extends from the lake at Port Henry to Mineville and is about seven miles long. The steepest grade is 222 feet to the mile and the grade from the lake to Mineville is more than 1300 feet. There are eight engines and an adequate equipment of other rolling stock. Previous to the construction of this railroad all the ore, as well as other products, had to be hauled with teams to the lake, and the coal hauled the other way. This was one of the chief obstacles to the successful development of the business. During much of the time in the early years of the industry the roads were bad, until the building of the plank road. While this was a great help, it did not serve the purpose, and the cost of hauling ore and coal was still heavy. Ore is now drawn over the road for thirty-two cents per ton. Some pulp wood

and hemlock bark is also freighted, but the iron business supplies the bulk of the traffic. The road is practically in the possession of the firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Company and the Port Henry Iron Ore Company. The present officers are: G. R. Sherman, president; A. Tower, of Poughkeepsie, treasurer and manager; F. S. Witherbee, secretary; W. M. J. Botham, cashier.

For some years after the discovery of the ores in the town of Moriah a feeling of distrust of their character and value existed, which did not disappear until after the first specific trial of some of the ore, which was made at Ticonderoga, whither a load was sent for that purpose. The issue of the trial was favorable and about three hundred tons were raised from the mines that year. A portion of this was unsold; but the next year the demand for it increased and has grown steadily, with but brief interruptions, since. The first sale of ore to be used in furnaces was made in 1847 by Lee & Sherman, of fifty thousand tons, to F. H. Jackson, of the Sisco furnace at Westport. About the same time their ores were introduced into the furnaces of Troy and along the Hudson river. According to Mr. Watson, "a competent authority, estimates the aggregate of ore raised from the mines of Moriah from their development up to January 1st, 1869, at one million and one hundred thousand tons, of which one-third was raised during the six years next preceding that date." In the transactions of the State Agricultural Society for 1852, in a report prepared by Mr. Watson, it is stated that in 1852 26,800 tons of ore were exported from the town to Pennsylvania, Vermont, Virginia, Maine and Maryland; and the quantity contracted for 1853 for shipment was 107,500 tons, of which 16,000 tons were for Pennsylvania; 10,000 for Massachusetts; 3,500 for Virginia; 1,500 for Ohio; 1,500 for New Jersey and 1,000 for Maine. The production of the various beds of the town in 1868 was as follows: the Cheever bed, 68,000 tons; mines of the Port Henry Iron Company, 59,000 tons; of Witherbees, Sherman & Co., 59,500 tons; of the Lake Champlain Mining Company, 2,500 tons; M. P. Smith mine, 14,500 tons; of the Fisher bed, 6,500 tons; an aggregate of 230,000 tons. In the year 1872, according to information furnished by W. F. Gookin, the quantity produced was 365,000 tons, divided as follows: Witherbees, Sherman & Company and the Port Henry Iron Ore Company, 280,000 tons; Cheever Ore Bed Company, 60,000 tons; Smith & Company, 12,000 tons; Cleveland Company, 8,000 tons; Bay State Iron Company, 5,000 tons.

It is not safe to attempt to predict the future of the iron industry in this town; but it probably can be stated with confidence, that as long as coal can be transported here, and the ore transported from the mines to the lake with such economy the companies can compete successfully with the prices placed upon the product of other sections, so long will the industry thrive.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

*Port Henry Village.*—The village of Port Henry is picturesquely located



on the shore of Lake Champlain, about midway between the northern and southern boundaries of the town. The greater portion of it is built upon a high table land overlooking the lake, and it is a thriving business center.

The history of this village may appropriately be introduced with an anecdote related by the late Alexander McKenzie. He came along the street not long previous to his death and found some men building a sidewalk in front of J. C. Witherbee's house. Accosting them he said: "Boys, I can tell you something rather curious. When I was seventeen years old (1802) I was path-master of this district. Fadicks cleared off a piece of land at the right of Mr. Witherbee's house and fenced close up to the road. I told him I thought he had rather encroached upon the highway — that two teams couldn't pass very well. With a great oath he stuttered, 'When you see two teams that want to pass here, you will see two moons in the sky!'" While he was relating this anecdote to the workmen there were four loads of hay and a great number of iron teams standing on the hill waiting to pass.

But the pioneer who built his fence too close to the highway had some justification for his prediction. Iron ore was not known here then; or, at least, it had not become a marketable commodity; what little settlement to indicate a possible village was at Moriah Corners; there the first post-office was established, and it was after the end of the century's first quarter before it could be confidently predicted that a thriving village would grow upon the site of Port Henry.

Mrs. George W. Wheelock is now the oldest inhabitant of the village who has resided here continuously; she was born in Canada in 1806 and came to Port Henry in 1829. There was very little of a hamlet here then. Let us see what she says of it: "There were but two shops here, one of which was kept by Henry Miller, a wheelwright. A school was kept in a little building that stood about on the site of the present Lee House. There William Gifford taught during the winter of 1828-9, and in the following winter Mr. Wheelock took the school; there were from ten to fifteen pupils. About four years later the school-house was moved east of where the bank now stands. It was burned after having been used for years as a church and school-house, and a new school-house built on the site of the First National Bank. A district school was also kept at Moriah Center. Mr. Wheelock lived in a house which stood where S. Strauss now has a store, and Henry Miller's house stood where Mr. McRory's store now is. Mr. Wheelock was a blacksmith and had a shop just opposite the site of the present post-office. At that time a few families were living in what is now the northern part of the village; most of the early hamlet lay in that quarter. Where Pease's Hotel now stands Mr. Richmond kept a tavern, and near him Orlando Swain opened a blacksmith shop. A long building which stood just west of the tavern was occupied as a dwelling by two families. Where the Bay State furnace now stands Major Dalliba had built his first furnace. That about comprised the settlement at that time.

"Next, a store was built and a dwelling by Major Dalliba, who occupied them. Several other little homes were erected by families, and a man named Newell opened a boarding-house. The old mill, a house and a little bridge stood where the iron bridge now crosses the North brook; but the mill was not running; this was probably the mill built by Jacob Miller, which succeeded the first one built by Robert Lewis and already described. Miller also had a house which he occupied near the mill. The village of Mineville was not then thought of. There was a little settlement at Moriah Center and at the Corners; at the latter place there were perhaps twenty or thirty buildings. Charles Miller, Galusha Putnam and Hiram Storrs lived at the Center. Everywhere else was forest.

"As no church society had yet been organized all denominations met in the school-house nearly every Sunday to unite in worship. There were two churches, the Presbyterian and Baptist, at Moriah Corners, and about two years later the Methodists erected a church.

"There was no post-office here at Port Henry until about 1833 or 1834, and then the first school building was used for that purpose, and another school building was erected just back of the site of the present First National Bank.

"J. P. Hyde came to the place soon after 1830 and built a cottage in the grove just beyond the present residence of Mrs. Davis. He had a garden, but did little toward cultivating his farm. James Sprague was interested in the manufacture of brick at an early day, and Witherbees, Sherman & Company became interested also. South from the brick-yard was what was called 'McKenzie City,' where the families of that name lived; there were three or four houses here and quite a clearing extending to the lake and including quite a large orchard. The early roads were bad, owing to the loads of charcoal that were drawn over them. At Port Henry, in 1829-30, the lumber business had not received much attention, except as it was drawn here for shipment."

From these interesting reminiscences it will be seen that Port Henry fifty years ago was not much of a village.

Clark Butterfield moved to Port Henry in 1833, and adds from his recollection of early times. He says there was then but one hotel in the village, which was kept by John C. Douglass. The building stood on the site now occupied by what was Pease's Hotel, before mentioned. There were three stores in the village, which were kept by Harvey N. Cole, Stevens & Foote, and Clark & Shepard. The furnace which had formerly been in operation was quiet. Lumbering was the important industry of the town, large quantities being shipped up the lake for Albany and New York markets. The old saw-mill on the brook had fallen into decay and none had taken its place. The population of the village in 1833 was about one hundred and fifty; there was no lawyer among the residents, and no doctor, but Drs. Hatch and Dewey, of Moriah Corners, were called on for aid in sickness. Mr. Butterfield opened his



store in 1836, on about the site of the Bay State furnaces, formerly occupied by Mr. Dalliba, where he remained in general trade for three years. Leaving there, and after several changes of occupation, he opened his present store in 1852 and has carried on business there since.

We have already alluded to the first post-office in the town at Moriah Corners, and the one established in Port Henry, which was first kept in the old school-house, not far from 1830. Mr. Butterfield thinks a man named Gilford was the first postmaster, and was followed by Harvey N. Cole; he was succeeded by H. S. Wheelock. In 1852 Reuben Whallon took the office and in 1854 was succeeded by John C. Douglass. In 1864 Rollin E. Warner received the appointment, remaining in the office until 1870, when Franklin W. Tobey succeeded until 1876. William R. Field then took it, but retired in 1879 and William Gookin assumed the duties of the position. In 1881 Charles L. Palmer was appointed and has filled the office since.

*Hotels.*—The first tavern in the town was that kept by William McKenzie very soon after his arrival in 1785; it stood on the site of the present Groff residence. The early settlers in the different parts of the town applied for licenses to sell liquors at an early day and in that sense kept taverns. Spirits were drank almost universally in those times and no public occasion, be it a raising or a wedding, was considered as properly celebrated without the presence of the jug. A Mr. Richmond opened a hotel in Port Henry in 1829 and was followed in the same business by John C. Douglass. This tavern was for some time the only one in the village, and was on the site of the house kept later by Mr. Pease. Treadway's Hotel, on Broad street, was opened about 1870 and William H. Treadway has conducted it from the outset, to the satisfaction of the traveling public. The Lee House fronts on Main street 120 feet and is ninety-six feet deep; it will accommodate one hundred guests. The house was built in 1874 by Charles Pease and is named in honor of John A. Lee, who furnished the capital. Mr. Pease conducted the hotel until 1877, when he was succeeded by S. H. Jennison, who remained until 1884, when it passed to the present proprietor, John Kelly. In June, 1884, John B. Wright opened the Brunswick House on North Main street. He conducted it to March, 1885; it is now closed. The Cedar Point House is conducted by Leonard Porter.

*Mercantile, etc.*—Following the very early stores of Port Henry, which have been described, we take up the present business interests of the village. C. E. Wolcott began trade in groceries, crockery, etc., in 1869 on the site now occupied by H. S. Wheelock. In 1874 the present "Standard Store" was built which he has occupied since. In April, 1871, John Reilly opened a grocery on Broad street and has continued trade there to the present time. James H. Allen, D. C. Rich and George R. Sherman opened a general store on Cedar Point in 1873, which became well known as the "Cedar Point store." The firm was Allen, Sherman & Rich; their store was in the old building for-

merly occupied for the same purpose by Witherbees, Sherman & Co. In June, 1874, they were burned out and continued trade in the old depot pending the erection of their present store. In January, 1880, Mr. Rich retired from the firm on account of failing health and died in the month of March following. In 1873 the firm purchased the mercantile business of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. In the fall of 1879 the firm opened a store in Mineville, which they still operate. In 1880 Allen & Sherman began the manufacture of wood pulp, in addition to their other interests; their factory was situated about a mile west from Cedar Point, on the railroad. The works were subsequently removed to Plattsburg, where the business is still carried on.

H. H. Lane, dealer in dry goods and groceries, began business here in the spring of 1879, in company with R. F. Livermore. He has been alone since the spring of 1880 and occupied his present store in 1884. N. Berman began the jobbing of tobacco, cigars and groceries in the Stevenson building in September, 1873, and removed to his present store on Main street in August, 1882. He manufactures cigars in New York city. G. W. Weston opened a meat market in the McKenzie Block in 1872, and took a "silent partner" in 1878. In the spring of 1880 they removed to their present location and added groceries to their stock. T. J. Jobin and J. A. Dupry began the grocery and meat business in February, 1882; their location is on Main street opposite the Lee House. Since 1874 Peter Marron has carried on the dry goods trade on Main street. The original business was begun near the site of the Bay State furnace about 1867, by Charles H. Foot and Hosea P. Willard; after the lapse of a year the firm became Foot & Murdock (G. T. Murdock.) In 1878 a change was made by the retirement of Mr. Murdock, whose interest was taken by Mr. Marron, the style being C. H. Foot & Co. In 1882 Mr. Marron bought his partner's interest. Walter C. Hathaway has a custom and ready-made clothing store on Main street. He began business in 1877 where the Weston Block now stands and removed to his present location in 1881. S. Strauss has occupied his present store on Broad street, with a stock of dry goods and clothing, since 1878. Charles E. Cragg, jeweler, began business where N. Berman is now located, in 1876, and in 1879 removed to the store now occupied by H. L. Lane. He remained there until 1882, when he removed to his present store. He also carries on a store in Ticonderoga. The variety store of John Flanagan was opened in 1881, in the store now occupied by E. D. Brooks. In 1882 he removed to the corner of Main and Broad streets. In 1872 A. W. Kincaid began the boot and shoe trade in the Van Ornam Block; after several changes S. F. Murdock purchased the business in 1874 and removed it to his present location. Barnard McRory began the furniture and undertaking business in December, 1871; he was located for three months in a building on the site of Weston's market. He removed thence to the store next west of the opera house, and in 1873 occupied his present store. Soon



after this removal he sold the furniture branch of his business to R. R. Stevenson, now of Ticonderoga, reserving the undertaking to himself. About a year later he repurchased the interest of Mr. Stevenson and has since carried it on alone. Charles Tracy and Carlton J. Harris are engaged in the furniture and undertaking business on Broad street, where they began in 1884. They have the agency of the Bridgeport White Bronze Monumental Company, of Bridgeport, Conn. In 1885 the firm opened a branch in Westport, which is in charge of Mr. Tracy. In 1860 Dr. R. E. Warner built the first drug-store in Port Henry and took as a partner John C. Douglass, under the firm name of Douglass & Warner. Several years later Mr. Douglass retired and after running the business alone for a time, Dr. Warner associated himself with R. R. Stevenson, for a year or two, when Dr. Warner retired. Mr. Stevenson removed the business to another building, when Dr. Warner resumed the business, at the first location. In 1870 H. R. Fields, now of Willsborough, became a partner in the business, but sold to Dr. Warner after a few months. R. J. Wait was then taken into the trade and continued until 1880, when the establishment was sold to W. H. Sweet & Co. who still continue at the west end of Main street. In 1875 Hosea B. Willard, Austin Hickok and Julius F. Hickok began as druggists and continued until June, 1882, when they were succeeded by C. L. Morgan and F. W. Burhans, who conducted the store until February, 1884; they were succeeded by Hopper, Burhans & Co., the firm consisting of Dr. C. A. Hopper, F. W. Burhans and Dr. A. C. Grover. The present firm occupy the building where the business was begun. Charles W. Richards and J. W. Tappen opened a hardware store in 1873; during that year Mr. Tappen sold out his interest to J. W. Whitehead, who came to Port Henry from New York. They carried on the business and removed to their present store next to the Lee House in 1874; about the same time Mr. Whitehead assumed the sole proprietorship. Mr. Richards is the present superintendent of Perry & Company's foundry at Sing Sing Prison. E. Wyman is a dealer in grain, etc., and operates a grist-mill in the west part of the village, with his office on Broad street. The mill was built by Ebenezer Collins and run by him until his death, after which his son, Edward, controlled it until it passed into the hands of Daniel Wyman, of Crown Point, father of the present lessee; the latter took it in 1873 and opened his store in connection with it in 1874. M. Tobin began the business of carriage-making and blacksmithing in 1871, where he is still located. In the same year William Keenan opened a harness shop on North Main street, where he is still engaged. Joseph McRory opened a liquor store on Broad street in 1878. W. H. Bigalow is proprietor of the photograph gallery on Broad street. He first began in the Cook Block in 1873, in partnership with Edward Marvin, the latter retiring after a few months. After the fire of 1874, Mr. Bigalow removed to the Wolcott Block, where he remained until 1884, when he occupied his present quarters.

This description comprises the present business interests of the thriving village, and indicate its prosperous and growing condition.

*First National Bank of Port Henry.* — This bank was organized on the 28th day of April, 1870, under its present name. The capital stock was placed at \$100,000, has remained the same and is paid in. Following are the names of the first shareholders, with the number of shares held respectively by each: George Sherman, 250 shares, Moriah Corners; J. G. Witherbee, Port Henry, 300 shares; S. H. Witherbee, of New York, 150 shares; Thomas Walton, Port Henry, 20 shares; Robert L. Cook, Port Henry, 10 shares; R. L. Hand, Elizabethtown, 20 shares; George R. Sherman, Port Henry, 100 shares; Thomas F. Witherbee, Westport, 50 shares; Hosea B. Willard, Port Henry, 10 shares; William Flinn and Rollin E. Warner, of Port Henry, 10 shares each; A. B. Waldo, Port Henry, 50 shares; J. D. Atwell, Brooklyn, 20 shares.

Mr. Atwell came on from Brooklyn for the purpose of organizing the bank, which was the result of his initial efforts, in which he was afterward greatly aided by J. G. and S. H. Witherbee. The first board of directors were George Sherman, G. R. Sherman, S. H. Witherbee, A. B. Waldo, Richard L. Hand, J. D. Atwell, Thomas Walton, H. B. Willard, Thomas F. Witherbee and Robert L. Cook. Jonathan G. Witherbee was the first president; George R. Sherman, vice-president; J. D. Atwell, cashier.

The bank at once began business in the old office of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. near the railroad. They built the present bank building in 1871, at a cost of about \$19,000. It is of brick, two stories and French roof; fifty by thirty-six feet.

The first president was succeeded by George R. Sherman who now occupies that position; the change occurred in consequence of Mr. Wetherbee's death in 1875. On January 30th, 1877, J. D. Atwell resigned the position of cashier on account of continued ill-health. At the same meeting his son, F. S. Atwell, the present cashier, was elected to the vacancy.

The present shareholders and their respective number of shares is as follows: G. R. Sherman, 340; Mrs. S. G. Witherbee, 100; Miss Florence Witherbee, 79; F. S. Witherbee, 89; Mary S. Witherbee, 69; S. H. Witherbee, 50; W. C. Witherbee, 50; G. D. Sherman, 50; Thomas Walton, 20; R. L. Hand, 20; John Hammond, 20; Marian Flagg, 20; Mrs. C. S. Witherbee, 10; J. D. Atwell, 10; T. F. Witherbee, 10; H. B. Willard, 10; A. B. Waldo, 10; Walter Merrill, 10; L. H. Roe, 10; George T. Treadway, 10; Harriet M. Douglass, 5; Rosamond O. Douglass, 5; D. C. Rich estate, 3.

The present directors, elected January 13th, 1885, are, G. R. Sherman, S. H. Witherbee, T. F. Witherbee, A. B. Waldo, Thomas Walton, H. B. Willard, J. D. Atwell, F. S. Witherbee, Walter Merrill, L. H. Roe, W. C. Witherbee.

*Insurance.* — The insurance business of Port Henry is represented by two



firms. W. H. Carr has his office over Wolcott's store and has been engaged in the business since 1870. He now represents the following companies: Aetna, of Hartford; Home, of New York; Glens Falls; North British and Mercantile, of London; Royal, of Liverpool; Insurance Company of North America, Philadelphia; Commercial Union, of London; Fire Association, of Philadelphia; Niagara, of New York; Hartford, of Hartford; Hanover, of New York; Phoenix, of London; Continental, of New York.

Merrill, Palmer & Co. have an office in the McKenzie building, where they began business in 1882. They represent the Springfield Fire and Marine, of Springfield; The Sun Fire, of London; The Manufacturers', of Boston.

*The Fire Department.* — Previous to the year 1872 the means of extinguishing fires in the village were meagre and inadequate. In that year the water works were built by J. G. Witherbee at a cost of about \$50,000, and hydrants were established at several points, where by the use of hose they would be most serviceable in case of conflagration. Water for the works is taken first from springs situated about a mile southwest of the reservoir on the Sophia Witherbee farm. The reservoir is built on "Sand hill" within the village corporation, about one-fourth of a mile from the engine-house and on an elevation of three hundred feet. From the springs to the reservoir the water is taken by gravity in a six-inch pipe, while the reservoir is connected with the engine-house by two two-inch pipes. The works are now the property of the Witherbee estate, from which privileges are leased to the village fire department for \$100 a year.

The present effective fire department was organized June 25th, 1883. It comprises the following organizations: —

Sherman Engine Company, organized with a membership of twenty-five. It is equipped with a Clapp & Jones steamer. The Foreman is W. J. Botham.

Little Giant, or Chemical Engine Company, equipped, as their name implies, with a chemical engine. The first foreman was Frank Clark, who still holds the position. The company is composed of twenty-five members.

William Flinn Hook and Ladder Company; membership of thirty. Martin Tobin was the first foreman, and was succeeded by the Edward McMahon, the present foreman.

Alert Hose Company No. 1, organized with twenty members; foreman from the organization to the present time, Frank Tromblee.

Witherbee Hose Company No. 2, organized with twenty members. The first foreman was John Crowley; present foreman, George Harris.

The Engine Hose Company was organized at the same time and with the same membership as the Engine Company, but different officers. Peter Jubert has been foreman from the organization.

Edmund Sheehy was the first chief engineer of the department and held

the office two years. Martin Tobin was elected chief February 1st, 1885. Following are the names of the first officers of the department: Edmund Sheehy, chief; Frank Burhans, 1st assistant; James F. Hawley, 2d assistant; Thomas Little, 2d assistant; John W. Whitehead, treasurer. The present officers are the same with the exception of Mr. Tobin as chief and Lewis Alexander as 2d assistant. The brick building of the department was built and first occupied in September, 1883, and cost \$5,500. It is on Broad street.

The village was visited by a destructive fire on the night of March 26th, 1874. The origin was probably incendiary, it having been set in the rear part of Bein's drug store, a wooden building, and the flames spread very rapidly. The sufferers and their respective losses were about as follows, as published in the *Herald* at the time: Henry Mason, \$50; H. M. Bein, \$16,500; New York Clothing Store, \$1,000; T. C. Calkins, \$5,000; Patrick Cook (brick block), \$10,000; James Scally, \$3,000; W. C. Thompson, \$300; E. L. Gaskell, \$1,200; Marvin & Bigalow, \$1,000; R. F. Livermore, \$13,000 to \$16,000; A. Liewald, \$25,000 to \$35,000; William Judge, \$3,500; John Conley, \$600; Stevenson building, \$300; S. Van Ornam, \$1,000; C. D. Webster, \$300; besides these there were some other damages from water and the destruction of Mr. Van Ornam's building to stay the flames. The Catholic Church and the residence of J. Donohue were on fire on several occasions, but by persistent exertions on the part of the inhabitants with pails of water and a stream from the hydrant, the flames were extinguished. The burned district was promptly rebuilt.

*The Press.* — The Port Henry *Herald* was started early in the year 1873, by A. J. Morris. He was succeeded as editor and proprietor by William H. Case, whose name appears at the head of the sheet in 1876. The next and present owner and editor is George W. Guy, who assumed control of the paper May 25th, 1882. The office has always been located in its present quarters in the third story of the Waldo, Tobey & Grover building. The *Herald* is a handsome seven-column paper and has a circulation of about one thousand.

*Opera House* — The opera house was erected in 1874 by Rufus Dorn for A. Liewald. Mr. Liewald is a resident of New York. The building cost about \$30,000. The theatre proper comprises the third and fourth stories of the structure, the second floor being given up to offices and the ground floor to two stores. The opera house is commodious and creditable to the village. It stands on Main street with a front of thirty-eight and depth of seventy-five feet. The managers are Hopper & Burhans, who lease it with their drug store in the same building.

There is one Masonic lodge at Port Henry village (Morning Sun, No. 142), for a history of which and of the Cedar Point Chapter, No. 269, and of the old Mount Moriah lodge of Moriah Corners see chapter twenty-six.

*Schools.* — According to the recollections of the late Alexander McKenzie,



there was no school in Port Henry until about 1832. There had been a school kept in Moriah Corners in 1813 or 1814, where Miss Abi Collins was the first teacher. Many children went to that school from Port Henry in the early days of the settlement. Between 1825 and 1830 there were three school districts in the town with one school in each. The first school-house in Port Henry stood just a little back of the present bank building. The district schools grew more numerous throughout the town as the demand for them increased, until in October, 1866, when the first union school was organized by the consolidation of districts 5 and 13. The first principal of this school was A. J. Kettell, from Hudson. The prime movers in effecting the establishment of the union school were W. T. Foote, Silas H. Witherbee, Lucius A. Foote, J. G. Witherbee, in co-operation with the leading tax-payers of the town, most of whom favored the change. A strong opposition to the measure was made by others. The old lot was sold to Silas Witherbee for about \$500, and Lucius A. Foote contributed a lot opposite from the Episcopal Church for the purpose of selling it and applying the proceeds to the purchase of a new lot. About \$3,000 were raised for the school purposes, aside from the tax.

The school was first established as a union school merely, but when arrangements were completed for opening the first term (October 25th, 1866), it was made a union free school, to which measure there was also considerable opposition. The vote on the question was one hundred and five to nine in its favor. The building was erected and then comprised what is now the main portion only of the structure; the upper story being used for a town hall. Three teachers were at first employed, but in less than ten days the school was so crowded that it became necessary to fit up one of the recitation rooms and hire another teacher. In about two years it became necessary to enlarge the building, and in the third year the addition was erected. In the year following it became necessary to change the hall into a school-room. There are now employed nine teachers. All of the departments except one primary are in the brick building; this primary department is situated in what is called the Furnace district. These particulars are due to the kindness of W. T. Foote.

According to Mr. Doughty, the average attendance of the school at the present time is about four hundred and fifty. The present principal is Clarence J. Doughty. The first teachers of the union school were A. J. Kettell, Maria O. Smith, Mary E. Foote and H. M. Douglass. The first trustees were W. T. Foote, for three years; S. H. Witherbee, two years and William Flinn, one year. William M. Treadway, collector; George W. Spencer, librarian. It was voted that \$4,500 be raised by tax for the erection and furnishing of the new school-house and that there be three grades in the school — primary, intermediate and academic. On December 11th, 1866, the building committee reported that it would require about \$2,000 to finish the house; this sum was voted.

At a meeting held October 26th, 1866, the following board of education was elected: For one year — William Flinn (who was collector for the first year), Abram Liewald, H. C. Foote (treasurer the first year). For two years — G. B. Pease, G. R. Sherman, F. W. Tobey (clerk and librarian for first year). For three years — S. H. Witherbee (president of board for first year), Rev. L. Harvey, W. T. Foote.

The size of the building is for the main part, 40 x 60 feet; wing, 35 x 40 feet. There are eight rooms besides the library. The present value of the building is \$10,000 and of the lot \$1,000.

The present board of education (1885) is as follows: M. D. Grover, president; Clark Butterfield, T. F. Witherbee, Rev. J. H. O'Rourke, Rev. W. R. Woodbridge, C. N. Flint, W. H. Carr, Peter Marron. W. M. J. Botham, clerk. The treasurer outside of the board is Reuben Whallon. The school is in excellent and steadily improving condition under the efficient management of the principal, Mr. Doughty.

*Churches.* — The Presbyterian Church edifice was the first one erected in Port Henry. Previous to that event, meetings were held generally in the school-house and sometimes in private houses. The growth of the Presbyterian Church in the place was fully detailed in a historical sermon preached by the Rev. C. H. A. Bulkley in 1880, from which we make the following digest: —

“It was in the late autumn of 1853 that a few citizens, prominent among whom were Messrs. Clark Butterfield, George W. Goff and Jonathan B. Spencer, incidentally observed it to be a shame, that, in a village like this, then numbering about one thousand inhabitants there should be no place for religious worship. Moved by this thought they proceeded immediately to negotiate with Mr. L. A. Foote for the present site of half an acre, at the price of \$250 — a sum far below that which, it was supposed, would be demanded for it.

“Following is the original agreement under which the society was formed: ‘Whereas, it is proposed to build a church at Port Henry on the lot just south of the store owned by George W. Goff, in Port Henry, for the worship of Almighty God according to the forms of the Presbyterian Church in the State of New York.

““Now, we, the subscribers, for the purpose aforesaid, agree to and with each other to pay the sums set opposite our names respectively; and we agree as follows: We appoint George W. Goff, Silas H. Witherbee, Clark Butterfield and Jonathan B. Spencer, a committee to purchase and hold the real estate in trust for the use and benefit of the subscribers, with power to collect subscriptions, etc., and to call subsequent meetings of the subscribers by giving notice at meeting on Sunday. No assessment to be called for until twenty-five hundred dollars is subscribed hereto, and when said sum is subscribed, we agree to pay our subscription whenever said committee shall demand the same; said



committee not to require the payment of more than twenty-five per cent. at any one time. At any meeting thereafter called, the subscribers may add to said committee, appoint others to act in their stead and also other committees, etc., as the subscribers shall deem advisable, and also to adopt by-laws for the election of committees, etc. If any person makes default in the payment of any assessment, said committee may forfeit whatever he has paid, or collect the same at their election. When the committee deem advisable, the slips may be disposed of as follows: They shall first be appraised (by appraisers appointed) at a sum sufficient to cover the cost of erecting and completing the house and, at a time appointed, sold at auction, no slip to be sold at less than the appraisal, the amount respectively paid by the subscribers to be applied towards the payment of said slips by them severally purchased; no slip to be assessed for the support of preaching, without consent of owner. If the slips sell for more than the cost of house and lot, the overplus to be divided among the subscribers relatively to the amount of their subscriptions. The condition of sale of slips to new subscribers may be hereafter fixed by the subscribers. — Dated at Port Henry, December 31st, 1853.’”

Following is a list of the subscribers to this agreement, with the various sums subscribed: George W. Goff, \$500; B. T. Reed, Port Henry Furnace Company, \$300; S. H. & J. G. Witherbee, \$200; Jonathan B. Spencer, \$200; Clark Butterfield, \$100; Hubbard S. Wheelock, \$100; Ebenezer Collins, \$100; George W. Pease, \$100; George Sherman & Witherbee, \$100; Reuben Whallon, \$100; Rollin E. Warner, \$50; John B. Rogers, \$25; George R. Sherman, \$25; George W. Miller, \$25; A. B. Waldo, \$25; Milton McKenzie, \$50; Hiram Gibbs, \$50; Thomas Walton, \$75; Asael Barnes, jr., \$25; David V. Chambers, \$25; Oscar E. Huntley, \$25; William H. Stone, \$25; Edrick C. Walton, \$40; Otis Sheldon, \$25; Roswell Hubbard, \$10; Wallace T. Foote for L. A. Foote, \$200; James M. Sprague, \$25.

In about a month after this subscription was begun, the first meeting of the subscribers was called on the 24th of January, 1854 “to make such arrangements as were thought most advisable” for the erection of the house of worship. Mr. Clark Butterfield being made chairman and J. C. Douglass secretary, the following named gentlemen were appointed a building committee, to-wit: George W. Goff, C. Butterfield, J. B. Spencer, Reuben Whallon and S. H. Witherbee. It was voted “to build the house with brick” and to appoint one of the committee “with full power to make contracts, purchase materials and hire workmen to erect said house, and to submit all contracts to the rest of the committee for their approval; and for such services he is to receive a suitable compensation.”

Mr. Clark Butterfield was appointed such committee of one with “power to collect ten per cent. on the subscription.”

Thus the work of church erection began, and was speedily carried on

to an early and successful completion in 1855, when the building was duly dedicated December 31st, with appropriate services, in which Rev. Mr. Olmstead, of Bridport, Vt., Rev. Mr. Bradshaw, of Crown Point, N. Y., and Rev. Mr. Mattocks, of Keeseville, N. Y., participated, the latter preaching the dedication sermon.

It has been generally stated and believed that this sanctuary was erected to be used, not in the interest of any one denomination, but for union services alone. Yet the record in the very first movement, according to the original article of agreement shows, as the very language itself declares, that the proposition to build this church was "for the worship of Almighty God according to the forms of the Presbyterian Church, in the State of New York." Hence its possession and use subsequently by a Presbyterian church organization was not a perverted, but a legitimate appropriation of the edifice.

The original board of trustees consisted of Messrs. J. B. Spencer, S. H. Witherbee, E. Collins, W. T. Foote, L. A. Foote and Clark Butterfield. To these were added in the succeeding years, the names of Alexander Stevens, D. E. Sanford, R. E. Warner, R. R. Stevenson, M. P. Smith, George T. McKenzie, J. G. Witherbee and F. S. Witherbee, making in all fourteen, nine of whom are living.

Seven years after this work of church building had been begun and when worship had been held in this edifice for six years, with all business transacted necessary thereto, it was discovered that some of the trustees, elected up to that time, had not been legally in office, because "that the requisitions of the law regulating the formation of religious societies" had never been complied with and that consequently, there not having been a legal organization, all the acts of the trustees had been virtually rendered null and void. This startling fact led to a legitimate meeting, at which the organization was formally made legal and complete, under the title of "The First Presbyterian Society of Port Henry." This was done on October 15th, 1860, about one month before the formal organization of the church itself.

The church edifice was erected in 1855 and dedicated December 31st of that year; its first cost was about \$3,000. The entire cost of the church property down to the present time is about \$14,000. The first members of the society as far as they are now available were as follows: E. Collins, L. A. Foote, D. E. Sanford, Alexander Stevenson, R. R. Stevenson, George G. Roe, Mrs. Emily Foote, Mrs. M. E. Stevenson, Mrs. Margaret Stevenson, Mrs. M. E. Ransom, Mrs. Mary E. Lane, Mrs. W. H. Stone, Mrs. L. A. Warner, Mrs. — Arnold, Mrs. — Hubbard, Mrs. M. E. Rice, Miss M. C. Hubbard, Miss Laura Hubbard, Miss S. H. Stevens, Miss C. E. Douglass, Miss H. M. Douglass.

The following pastors have ministered to the church: Rev. Cyrenius Ransom, acting pastor, 1860-67; Rev. Frederick N. Newman, supply, 1868-69;



Rev. Frederick F. Judd, acting pastor, 1870-72; William B. Stewart, acting pastor, 1873-75; C. H. A. Bulkley installed as pastor by the Presbytery of Champlain, November 14th, 1876, continuing until August, 1882; Rev. C. N. Thomas, present pastor, began as supply November 12th, 1882, and one year later was installed as pastor.

The following have been the officers of the church: Deacons, elected in 1860: D. E. Sanford, R. R. Stevenson; 1866: Dr. R. E. Warner, G. T. McKenzie, S. H. Witherbee, H. S. Brockway. Elders, elected in 1860: D. E. Sanford, R. R. Stevenson, E. Collins, A. Stevenson, L. A. Foote, George G. Roe; 1871: R. Whallon, George T. McKenzie, Milton McKenzie, R. L. Cooke; 1872: J. R. Edwards; 1879: Charles Tracy, Elijah B. Hedding; Charles Judd, 1880; Truman Bigelow, 1882. The present officers are: Trustees, F. S. Witherbee, Isaac T. Harris, John T. Breadner. Elders, Reuben Whallon, J. R. Edwards, E. B. Hedding, Milton McKenzie, C. S. Judd, Truman Bigelow. The present church membership is about ninety. A Sunday-school was organized at the close of the year 1860, the first superintendent being R. R. Stevenson. The present superintendent is C. S. Judd.

*Church of the Covenant.* — This was the name of the first Episcopal Church at Port Henry. Services in this faith were held as long ago as 1840, and a church was formed April 26th, 1841. The first officers were: Wardens, Abraham Stone, Ira Curtis Sprague. Vestrymen, Silas H. Witherbee, Theron S. Goff, Benjamin F. Hyde, Christopher C. Allen, Noel Hopson, William D. Holcomb, Daniel Tarbell, George W. Goff. The first missionary in charge of the church was Rev. Henry M. Davis. He was succeeded in 1843 by Rev. Edgar P. Wadhams, who officiated until 1847, when he went over to the Romish church and is now Bishop of Ogdensburg. The total number of communicants in this church was thirteen. The services were held in the old school-house. The society died out after Mr. Wadhams left.

*Christ Church.* — This Episcopal Church was incorporated at a meeting held on Monday August 19th, 1872. Of those present the Rev. William R. Woodbridge was chosen rector; John H. Reed and A. B. Waldo, wardens; John Gregory, George Hoy, William Jackson, George Ormsby and Edgar B. Sprague, vestrymen; Thomas Morrison and Daniel Harper were also present and voted. The church edifice was erected in 1872 at a cost of \$10,000. The present value of the property is much less, on account of the depreciation in real estate and building materials. A Sunday-school was organized in the beginning of which Rev. Mr. Woodbridge has always been superintendent. The total number of baptized members is one hundred and sixty-nine; number of communicants sixty-nine. The present officers are: Assistant minister, Rev. C. E. Cragg; wardens, Theodore Tromblee, Jr., Daniel Cannon; vestrymen, Rev. C. E. Cragg, F. S. Atwell, W. M. J. Botham, C. E. Wolcott, Harry Brown.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.* — This society was organized in the spring of 1873. The first officers were as follows: A. N. Locke, class leader and steward; William Champion, recording steward and leader; John R. Williams, leader and steward; H. L. Patterson, George M. Weston, J. A. Morris, stewards; T. C. Calkins, Abel Smith, trustees; J. G. Witherbee, A. B. Waldo, W. T. Foote, H. R. Field, L. B. Stimson, trustees (not members). A lecture-room was built which was dedicated January 28th, 1874. The audience-room was dedicated in November, 1874. The cost of the whole was \$18,000. A Sunday-school was established at the same time as the church, the superintendents of which have been H. R. Field and others, with the pastor as the present one. The pastors of the church have been as follows: Rev. J. W. Shank, 1873; Rev. James M. Edgerton, 1874-75; Rev. W. P. Rulison, 1876-77; Rev. George C. Thomas, 1878-79; Rev. D. N. Lewis, 1880-82; Rev. F. R. Sherwood, 1883 to present time. The officers of the church at the present time are as follows: Trustees, G. W. Weston, president of the board, A. N. Locke, M. D. Grover, George E. Lamb, B. J. Burton, W. C. Hathaway, John Roberts, H. Wallace. Stewards, A. H. Weston, W. H. Helms, J. C. Carr, Francis Eastman, H. Wallace; G. E. Lamb, recording steward; R. Lezott, G. W. Weston, district steward; A. N. Locke. Class leaders, A. N. Locke, G. W. Weston, H. Wallace. \*

*St. Patrick's Church of Port Henry.* — This church was organized about the year 1845. Among the first members were Michael Maguire, Frank Carr, Patrick Cook, Owen Myron, John Meagher, John McCabe and others. The first pastor was the Rev. Joseph Olivette, who came in 1849 and remained until 1862; he was found drowned in the lake one morning. The next pastor was Rev. Luke Harney, who was succeeded by Rev. John O'Rourke, in May, 1879; he has remained to the present time. The first church was a temporary building, which was begun about 1844. The stone church was begun in 1854; it soon proved too small and in 1865 was enlarged to its present dimensions and other improvements made in it. The bell and clock were put in about 1875. The entire cost has been between \$15,000 and \$20,000; its present value is between \$30,000 and \$35,000. The Sunday-school was opened when the church was organized and the pastor has been the superintendent in each instance. The first trustees were selected from the names above given of first members. The present membership is two hundred and twelve families. The present trustees are John Meagher and Patrick O'Grady. The churches at Mineville and Ticonderoga were formerly connected with this one; but the former was separated in 1869 and the latter about 1865.

*Young Men's Christian Association.* — This body was organized in 1881. E. B. Hedding was the first president. The present officers are: George Wolcott, president; W. F. Tallman, vice-president; C. S. Judd, treasurer; John Jobert, recording secretary; W. F. Sallmon, secretary. The membership is



now upwards of one hundred. The railroad company furnish the rooms and the association is enabled to accomplish much good. A reading-room is kept open and classes maintained in phonography, telegraphy and vocal music. There is a library of about one hundred and fifteen volumes. A Woman's Auxiliary Society is connected. Lectures and entertainments are frequently given, the proceeds of which aid the association in its mission.

*Incorporation.*—The village of Port Henry was incorporated under an act of the Legislature passed May 1st, 1869. The boundaries were thus described in the act:—

“All that tract of land in the town of Moriah, in the county of Essex, and State of New York, embraced within the following boundaries, that is to say: Beginning at a point in Craig Harbor, . . . and running thence south twenty-two degrees west, nine thousand four hundred feet; thence north sixty-eight degrees west, three thousand nine hundred and sixty feet; thence north twenty-two degrees east, nine thousand four hundred feet; thence south sixty-eight degrees east, three thousand nine hundred and sixty feet to the place of beginning, the whole containing one and three hundred and thirty-five-one thousandths square miles, the courses as the needle points in February, 1869, shall hereafter be known by the name of the village of Port Henry,” etc. John C. Douglass, Lemuel B. Treadway and Abram B. Huntly were named in the charter to perform the duties of trustees until the first election.

The first board of trustees of the village were Wallace T. Foote, president; Artemas B. Waldo, Charles B. Pease, Luke Harney, George R. Sherman; James W. Sheehy, clerk. At the election of 1870 A. B. Waldo was made president, and James W. Sheehy, clerk. In 1871 the following were chosen trustees: Jonathan G. Witherbee, Artemas B. Waldo, Michael Kennedy, Wallace T. Foote, Charles B. Pease and Reuben Whallon. At the same time it was voted to incorporate the village under the general law of the Legislature passed April 20th, 1870; A. B. Waldo was president of the board for the year following June 12th, 1871, and W. H. Carr, clerk. At the election March 19th, 1872, J. G. Witherbee was elected president, and in that year \$500 was voted for sidewalks, \$500 for sewers, and \$500 for a jail. Mr. Witherbee was continued as president in 1873. At a special election held on the 13th of May, 1873, it was resolved that the sum of \$5,000 be raised by tax for the construction of a lock-up and village hall for the uses of the officers of the village and for a court-room. This building was immediately started and completed at a cost of about \$11,000; of this sum about \$7,500 was raised by tax; the remainder by an appropriation of excise moneys from the town, which had gone into possession of the supervisors and was appropriated by them. The lot on which the building stands was donated by Witherbees, Sherman & Company. The building is twenty-eight by thirty-eight feet; contains ten cells, and is of brick. William Hughes superintended the construction of the jail.

Following have been the successive presidents of the village since 1873: Charles B. Pease, 1874; Walter Merrill, 1875; George B. Pease, 1876-77; Clark Butterfield, 1878; Charles L. Palmer, 1879-80; Thomas F. Witherbee, 1881; Hosea B. Willard, 1882; Frank S. Atwell, 1883; William Flinn, 1884; George D. Sherman, 1885. The present trustees are W. C. Hathaway, William Edgerley, Joseph McRory. Treasurer, John W. Whitehead; collector, John Kelly, jr.; road commissioner, Patrick Grady; clerk of the board of trustees, Mark E. Carr.

*Moriah (Corners).*— This is a little village situated about two miles west of Port Henry. It does not possess much mercantile and manufacturing importance, having declined in those respects since the decay of the lumber business, and the development of the iron interests, which has drawn from the vicinity towards Port Henry and Mineville. The Sherman Academy is located here.

Settlement was begun at Moriah Corners before the beginning of the present century; but there was a very slow growth during the first ten or fifteen years. In 1815 there were but three or four dwellings on the site of the village. A few of the old houses built as early as 1820 are still standing and form very interesting landmarks. Among them is the house now occupied by Mrs. Hollis Taylor, which is probably the oldest of them; it was built about as early as 1810 and has been removed from place to place several times. Its original site was where the house of James M. Putnam now stands. The house nearly opposite the Baptist Church, owned by Albert Kidder, is also one of the very old dwellings. Maynard Kidder, father of Albert, had a tannery here as early as 1820.

The first post-office in the town was located here, and Nathaniel Storrs kept a store and officiated as postmaster. It stood on the site of Albert Kidder's present store. Mr. Storrs filled the office from 1815 to 1855, with the exception of two or three years after 1840. In 1855 Mr. Storrs sold out his entire property to Samuel D. and Albert Kidder, and the former was appointed postmaster. In 1865 he resigned in favor of his brother Albert, who held the office until 1873, when B. B. Bishop was appointed. The resignation of the latter in 1874 left a vacancy which was filled by Charles A. Butler; he was succeeded by the present postmaster, C. W. Putnam.

About the year 1815 Daniel Tarbell built the first tavern in the place on the site of the Sherman House. It is not known how long he kept it, but he was succeeded by William Van Schoick, Samuel Shepard, Hiram Heaton and J. B. Martin, the latter keeping it about 1845. In the fall of 1846 Jacob Tappan took the house and was burned out about the year 1853. The 'Sherman House was built on the site in 1855. Hulburd & Ormsbee were the first proprietors and remained about two years. They were followed by A. C. Farr, and Kinsley Sherman bought the house of him about 1865. The first pro-



prietor under his ownership was Monford Weed, now of the Weed House, Westport. In 1866 he was succeeded by James M. Bowman; he by Charles Marsh; he by A. C. Farr (1869); he by Edward L. Gaskell (1870); he by La Fayette Sprague (1872); he by George A. Phinney (1873); he by B. W. Farr, who died the next year and was succeeded by Alexander Trimble; he by Emmett Douglass (1877); he by Oscar Butterfield (1881); and he by the present proprietor, Frederick Hausinger, who assumed charge of the house in May, 1884.

Although Moriah Corners was once the most active and thrifty place in the town there are now but two stores; one of these is kept by Albert Kidder, who has been in business here since 1855. The other is carried on by C. W. Putnam, who started in 1879.

Joseph Wright has a blacksmith shop on the street east of A. Kidder's store. The property was originally owned by Messrs. Samuel and Albert Kidder who sold the same to George Phinney, from whom Wright bought it in the year 1874. A. W. Smith does a large business as manufacturer of carriages and sleighs. James Lewis has an extensive grapery and small fruit garden.

The Powell Medicine Company incorporated in 1882, are extensively engaged in the manufacture of various remedies which they sell under the name, or trade mark, of "Adirondack." Their business is largely carried on in Vermont and New York.

An extensive marble quarry has been opened a short distance west of the village on the Isaac Pratt farm. George W. Watkins, of Moriah, opened the quarry and has since associated with himself D. E. W. Kent, of Ticonderoga, and Isaac Pratt. The marble is dark and mottled in beautiful variety and is capable of receiving a fine polish. It can be cut or carved in any shape. It will undoubtedly prove a large source of revenue to its owners as soon as its merits are more widely known.

We now quote substantially from the reminiscences furnished a few years since by Deacon David Sanford, relative to early religious meetings, etc., in in the vicinity of Moriah Corners.

"The first minister employed in the town was Elder Chamberlain, who came from Panton, Vt. He was hired by the Congregationalists for six months, although he was a Baptist. For another six months a man named Manley was hired; he was from Crown Point and went to Keene. The next minister employed was 'Old Mr. Chapin,' who came from Addison, Vt. He had been here many years before (1808) and organized the Congregational Church. He had been in the Revolutionary army, was quite gifted, though somewhat singular. Many anecdotes are related of his quaintness and wit. He generally came over the lake on Saturday. On one occasion he and three others came to Chimney Point when the wind was blowing freshly and desired Mr. Barnes, the ferryman, to carry them over; this he was unwilling to do, but

offered them his skiff for the passage. They started, but broke the row locks and were forced to give up the attempt. But Mr. Chapin crossed in a sail boat the next morning and soon landed at Port Henry. He preached at the Corners three or four years, and was paid \$100, the missionary society giving him an equal amount. It was during his ministry that the Congregational meeting-house was built, and there was quite a revival. Deacon Jonas Reed was then the leading man in the town and it was he who started the project of building the church. All the people turned out and worked on the timber for the frame. There were some Universalists in the town and they wanted to join in the undertaking. The plan was favored by a good many, but finally Mr. Reed said: 'When you see Bald Peak tip over into the lake, you may think I will join the Universalists in building a meeting-house, and not till then.' That settled the question. The first cost of the church was not far from \$500 and Mr. Chapin put in \$100 of it. He was not treated very generously, for when the church was done another minister was hired in his place. He resented this treatment by coming over and preaching for the Methodists, who were holding meetings in the school-house. Then Major Dalliba came in and built his furnace at the lake and settlers came in more rapidly. The major gave the town quite a start, was a religious man and took quite an interest in religious matters. He gave the church-building enterprise considerable aid and had the pews sold at auction; he united with the church here in March, 1827.

"Rev. Isaac Reed was the successor of Mr. Chapin in the Congregational Church. After serving several months he was compelled to give up the work by weak lungs. Then there were several short terms of service. Mr. Edgerton was a school teacher, and preached sometimes and lectured. Rev. Mr. Wolcott was here about a year, and Rev. Leonard Reed, nephew of Rev. Isaac, was here eight or ten years. Mr. Sanford thought that Rev. Fayette Sheperd followed Leonard Reed for one year. The salary of these men was about \$400 a year. The church was self-supporting after the departure of Mr. Chapin."

#### CHURCHES.

*First Congregational Church of Moriah.*—The First Congregational Church of Moriah was organized on the 6th day of September, 1808, under the supervision of Rev. Sylvester Chapin, a missionary from Vermont. The original membership consisted of William Joiner, Jedediah Edgerton, John Brinknall, Ichabod S. Parker, Eli Abbott, Daniel Averill, Elisha Stockwell, Jonas Reed, and others. Jedediah Edgerton was the first deacon. They adopted articles of faith and a church covenant. Little is known as to where the church met but it is certain that they had no place of worship for a number of years, using for the most of the time a school-house. During this period the pulpit was



supplied by Mr. Chapin and Rev. Cyrus Comstock, a man greatly noted as an able minister.

In 1824 the question of building a church edifice was agitated. Jonas Reed, a prominent member of the church, donated a lot of land on which the building was erected and partially completed in February, 1825. In that month and year a legal society was organized with the following as the first trustees: Henry Wilcox, Solomon Everest, and Elias Smith. At this time Jonas Reed was the only deacon. On the 1st day of January, 1831, the church organized a Sunday-school.

Rev. Isaac Reed was the first installed pastor, serving from 1826 to 1828. The following have been the pastors since that time in the order given: Revs. Henry Boynton, Fayette Sheperd, John L. Edgerton, Leonard Reed, Vernon Wolcott, Cyrenus Ransom, David H. Gould, Myron A. Munson, Daniel W. Cameron, Dwight M. Seward, George Michael, George A. Miller, and John H. Butler (1885), who is the present pastor.

In the year 1883 the old church was torn down and a new one built at a cost of \$3,000. It is a neat and commodious church building. The present membership is sixty-nine. The Sunday-school contains sixty scholars. The present deacons are Levi Reed, Henry O. Lewis, and Edward J. Owen. The present trustees are Henry O. Lewis, E. J. Owen, and Frederick L. Reed.

This is the oldest organized church in the vicinity. Two large colonies of members have gone out; one in 1860 to Port Henry, who, under the ministrations of Rev. C. Ransom, organized the Presbyterian Church of that place, and the other in 1875 to Mineville and organized the Presbyterian Church of that place.

*Methodist Episcopal Church of Moriah Corners.*—It is said that undoubtedly the first Methodist preachers who passed through this region on their way from Albany to Canada, preached in Moriah. Services in this faith were held here early in the century and as early as 1820 a school-house, which stood near what is now Mr. Smith's wagon shop, was used for services. Quarterly meetings in those early days were held in the barn of Thomas Lewis; it was then owned by one of the Joiners. The "brick church" was erected in 1836, Bishop Isbell being the pastor; it was not entirely paid for until 1852. The building is now owned and occupied by Harry Chaffee as a dwelling. The last church building was erected in 1875 under the pastorate of Rev. E. Turner, at a cost of \$18,000, a debt being incurred of nearly \$9,000; this debt was considerably reduced under the labors of succeeding pastors, particularly by Rev. E. E. Taylor. On May 1st, 1882, the debt was \$5,500. The last parsonage used before the fire of 1874 was purchased in April, 1865, and was first occupied by Rev. N. B. Wood. Following is the list of successive pastors, as far as known: 1823, Seymour Landon; 1824, Orrin Pier; next came Rev. Kimpton, Joseph Eames, Hiram Chase; 1833-34, Amos Hazeltine (in charge),

Peter H. Smith; 1835-36, Bishop Isbell; 1837-38, Henry Stewart; 1839-40, B. Pomeroy and A. Garvin; 1841, Samuel Atwell, John Graves in charge; 1842-43, A. Lyon; 1844-45, A. Jones; 1846, John Thomson; 1847, James Parks; 1848-49, W. W. Foster; 1850-51, J. S. Mott; 1852-53, Milton H. Stewart; 1844-45, S. M. Rogers; 1856-57, T. F. Stewart; 1858, the same; 1859-60, D. H. Loveland; 1861-62, J. B. Sylvester; 1863-64, N. B. Wood; 1865, C. C. Gilbert; 1866-68, C. M. Clark; 1869-70, J. S. Mott; 1871-72, J. W. Shank; 1873, E. J. Gurnsey; 1874-75, E. Turner; 1876, S. D. Elkins; 1877-79, E. E. Taylor; 1880-81, A. V. Marshall; 1882, and present pastor, E. A. Blanchard.

The present trustees are James Lewis, president; A. J. Stiles, secretary; J. M. Riford, treasurer; Binona Tillotson and E. A. Bolles. The present superintendent of the Sunday-school is J. M. Riford, with E. A. Bolles as assistant. At the time of the fire the attendance at the school was, officers and teachers, nineteen; total number, two hundred and ten; average attendance of pupils and teachers, one hundred.

On the 21st of December, 1884, the church and parsonage were destroyed by fire. The church was insured for \$6,000. March 24th, 1885, a contract was let to J. W. Busteed, of Whitehall, for rebuilding the church and repairing the parsonage at a cost of \$5,000. The parsonage east of the burned site was purchased in January, 1885, for \$850. The parsonage was arranged for services until the completion of a temporary tabernacle, for use until the church is finished. The present membership of the church is about one hundred and sixty-two.

The history of this church would not be complete without a record of a remarkable jubilee held by it on Monday, October 1st, 1883, for the purpose of raising money to free the society from debt. The jubilee was largely attended, many ministers and others being present from abroad, and was a success in every respect. After appropriate services the following report was made by the financial agent of the church:—

## MILES TRAVELED.

With livery teams.....	448
By steamers.....	340
In stage.....	200
Cars.....	5,875
Horse cars and on foot.....	Unknown
Total miles traveled over.....	7,000

## MONEYS RECEIVED.

From M. E. Churches, except this.....	\$5,279.43
“ other denominations.....	118.75
“ Hon. G. R. Sherman.....	500.00
“ church extension society.....	200.00
Total from outside this congregation.....	\$6,098.18
Expense of raising the above.....	1,070 00
Applied on debt.....	\$5,028.00



The unpaid subscriptions out of town amount to.....	175.00
Moneys raised by the Moriah M. E. Church, between June 13th, 1882, and October 1st, 1883.....	\$1,326.39
On subscription signed and not paid by three men.....	115.00
Not signed but promised by one man.....	100.00
Received from penny collections for wood, etc., furnished by church debt subscriptions.....	61.00
Received from "The Ladies Aid Society".....	596.20
Total from Moriah M. E. Church.....	\$1,983.59
Grand Total on and off the charge.....	8,081.77
Salary received from this charge during the past year and a half.....	600.00
MONEYS PAID OUT.	
Expenses.....	\$1,070.00
Improvements, including bell.....	1,813.64
Floating debt.....	200.05
Interest.....	379.28
Mortgage.....	5,000.00
Total expended.....	\$8,462.97
" received.....	8,081.77
Yet to be raised.....	\$381.20
Subscription on bell.....	300.00
Unprovided for.....	\$81.20

The above small balance was promptly assumed by E. A. Blanchard, the financial agent, who pronounced the church free from debt. The ladies were given credit for raising about \$600 of the above amount. The jubilee continued through two days, which time was filled by an interesting series of proceedings, including addresses by prominent ministers and discussions upon the topics by various persons.

*The Baptist Church, Moriah Corners.*—The Baptist Church here was first organized probably a little before 1814, by ministers from Vermont. A council was called and the church fully organized in 1818, with fourteen members. At the first church meeting Elijah Jordan was licensed to preach. He served the church three years and was followed in their order by Gershom Lane, John Stearns, Artemas Arnold and Jeremiah Dwyer. A church was erected soon after and it is said that three of the building committee were converted and joined the church before the building was finished. Rev. Mr. Cutting and Edward Pierson came next and the following other pastors have served the church: W. Grant, W. W. Moor, J. H. Walden, E. C. Miles, J. S. McCollum, Jonathan Baldwin, A. H. Stock, C. Fisher, I. D. Burwell, E. D. Craft, W. C. McAllester, C. P. Fox, P. C. Dayfoot; the present pastor is Rev. H. C. Robbins. There was a great revival in 1838–39, when eighty-eight were baptized. During the pastorate of Elder Walden the membership was two hundred and eight, and in Mr. Burwell's term over ninety were added to the church. The house of worship was rebuilt in 1874, under the pastorate of Rev. W. C. McAllester, at an expense of \$4,500.

The present church officers are: Deacons, S. B. Sprague and D. O. C. Edson; clerk, J. R. Gilman; trustees, J. M. Putnam, H. W. Walker, Joseph Woodruff. The present membership is fifty-four. J. R. Gilman is superintendent of the Sunday-school, with S. B. Sprague for assistant; the average attendance is about forty-five.

*Sherman Academy.*—The Moriah Academy Association was organized on the 10th of April, 1838, for the purpose of building an academy. The following were some of the subscribers to the fund: Charles Miller, George Sherman, Daniel Tarbell, John A. Lee, B. W. Dewey, Lyman McKenzie, John F. Havens, Hiram Heaton, Timothy Olcott and George W. Goff. The first President of the Board of Trustees was Hiram Everest. The association was a stock company and the sales of shares furnished the funds for the erection of the academy building. A lot was purchased and a brick building was at once erected. By a vote of the trustees, trees were set out in the grounds and a library and apparatus purchased. The original cost of the building was \$2,500. The cost of the library and apparatus was \$514. On the 23d day of June, 1840, an application was made to the Board of Regents to have the academy incorporated under the name of the Moriah Academy, which was granted.

It appears from the records that Mr. James Harran was the first principal. Two departments were formed in which classical and English branches were taught. The succeeding principals were Rev. Vernon Wolcott, Milo D. Cook, Orson Kellogg, Harriet E. Bishop, Orlando Wooster, Putnam P. Bishop. During the same time the following acted as associate teachers: Harriet Burnham, Decia Miner, and L. M. Wells.

From the year 1854 to 1873 the academy ceased to make any report to the Regents and no instruction was given. The building was used by various persons for private schools and for a short period by the district school.

In the year 1873 George Sherman, one of the original incorporators, by a deed of trust granted to the trustees a fund of \$30,000 for the purpose of giving a free academic education to the children of school district No. 2, Moriah. He also at his own expense rebuilt, enlarged and refitted the building with modern conveniences. By a special act of the Board of Regents the name was changed to *Sherman Academy*. The building was re-opened and dedicated to the cause of education with appropriate ceremonies on the first day of September, 1873. Edward J. Owen has continued to be principal from that time to date (1885). The following have been teachers in the other departments: Hattie M. Douglass, Kate E. Newell, Martha A. Youngs, E. Sophia Winter, Nellie D. Sheldon, Frances Burbank, A. Adele Miller, Mrs. L. B. Carlisle, Nellie M. Colton, Thomas A. Wasson, Carrie E. Telford. Teachers' classes have been organized every year since 1876.

The academy provides two departments; preparatory and academic. In the academic there are three courses of study; English, academic, gradua-











E. J. OWEN.





ting and college preparatory. Seven classes have been graduated since the re-organization. The wants of the academy requiring more room, George R. Sherman, of Port Henry, has at his own expense built a large addition to the academy thus adding to the use of his father's benefaction.

The pupils of the academy are found in every town of the county and a large proportion of the teachers of the district schools have been enrolled in its classes.

The present Board of Trustees are: George R. Sherman, president; James M. Putnam, vice-president; Albert Kidder, treasurer; B. B. Bishop, secretary; James Lewis, James B. Greene, William Heaton, Edward J. Owen, Hardy Curtis.

*Mineville.* — This is a mining village situated about seven miles northwest from Port Henry. Its settlement and growth have been largely a consequence of the great development of the iron interest and its current prosperity depends to a considerable extent upon that industry. Among the early settlers and residents in this locality may be mentioned Milton Reed, son of the pioneer, Jonas Reed, who was born here in August, 1814. Jonas Reed was the first permanent settler here, about 1810. Levi Reed, twin brother of Milton, is also a resident of this section. Milton Reed was at one period owner of the land on which is the ore bed No. 21, which he sold about 1839 to Storrs & Rosseau. David Sanford, from whose reminiscences we have quoted, was an early resident here and owned most of the mining lands. As late as 1820 there was not much of a settlement at this point, and much of the region was still forest-covered. John Bartlett had a saw-mill and within the next ten years they sprang up like mushrooms in different parts of the town and the extensive lumber business rapidly developed. There was no mercantile business here until later than 1825. Jonas Reed and others used to do their trading at Whitehall and Albany, commonly going down in the winter on the ice. A school was kept early in a building which stood on the site of McDermott's blacksmith shop; it was removed farther west about 1820. One of the early school teachers was Jonathan Race. There was no church in the place until later than 1870, the people going to Moriah Corners or elsewhere for religious instruction. Meetings were held in the vicinity not long after 1820, at some of which Rev. Cyrenius Chapin, already mentioned, officiated.

The vast mining interests which have caused the growth of this village have already been sufficiently described. The present mercantile interests of the place comprise the general store of G. T. Treadway, who came here in 1866 and began business; he purchased the store of the Port Henry Iron Ore Company; the business was first begun in about 1815. The post-office was established about 1870, and Mr. Treadway has been postmaster since that time. Allen & Sherman, of Port Henry, established a branch store here in 1880. Charles A. Butler is dealing in tinware and house furnishing goods.

About the year 1873 Dennis Hayes came here and built the Empire House, which he has conducted as a hotel since that time. There was then a hotel here called Cusac's House, on Union Square.

*Churches.* — The Presbyterian church at Mineville was erected in 1875 at a cost of about \$15,000; it was built as a Congregational church. The first pastor was Rev. D. W. Cameron. The society was organized in the school-house in October, 1874. The first trustees were Milton Reed, James Beck, Robert Clydesdale, Isaac McLyman, Walter Tefft, George G. Roe, and George T. Treadway. A few years later the Presbytery of Champlain assumed control of the church. The society is served at present, temporarily, by Rev. G. A. Thomas, of Port Henry, who preaches every Sunday afternoon.

*Emanuel Mission, Mineville (Episcopal).* — This society was organized in February, 1876. The first members were T. S. Beach, Walter Tefft, James C. Gregory, W. H. Tefft, G. G. Roe, Charles A. Sweatt, A. J. Arnold, H. B. Lewis, Myron Pulsifer, James Wait, Robert Boyd, Mrs. Mary K. Treadway, Mrs. William H. Thompson, Mrs. Allen S. Stone, Mrs. A. Smith, Mrs. Ellen Gregory, Mrs. Jane A. Riddle, Mrs. Ann Thompson. Rev. William R. Woodbridge has been in charge of the society since its organization. The first warden was James G. Gregory; treasurer, Walter Tefft. Present warden, James Wait. The corner stone of the edifice was laid July 28th, 1879, and the building consecrated November 19th, 1879; it cost \$1,768; present value \$1,500. A Sunday-school was organized with the church, with James Wait as superintendent. The rector is the present superintendent. Membership of the church fifty; communicants, fourteen.

*Roman Catholic Church.* — This society was organized in 1872, the first priest being Father Phillips, who remained one year. Rev. Joseph Taney came in 1873 and remained until 1880, and died here. The present priest is Rev. Florence McCarthy, who came from Watertown. The church building was remodeled in 1882 at a cost of about \$5,000.

Stevenson Post, G. A. R. 102, have their organization here. The present number is fifty-three. The following are the present officers: E. F. Edgerley, commander; R. L. Jenkins, senior vice-commander; A. W. Smith, junior vice-commander; A. H. Woodruff, adjutant; E. A. Bretell, quartermaster; S. Deyo, surgeon; M. W. Dean, officer of the day; C. W. Sumner, officer of the guard.

*Moriah Center.* — This is a hamlet situated about two miles west of Port Henry. The post-office was established here in 1866. In July, 1870, it was removed to Mineville and in the following month a new one was established here. S. B. Sprague is postmaster and has had the office since 1871. A. H. Woodruff was the first incumbent and the only other one. Osborn Parmeter was an early blacksmith at this point and subsequently kept a store. Eliphalet Hall built a store here a number of years ago, which was occupied by him and



later by E. P. Hendee ; it was burned in 1884. S. B. Sprague opened a store in 1871 ; since 1884 it has been kept by Mrs. Sprague. E. P. Woodruff & Brother (C. J. Woodruff) began business in April, 1885. A. H. Woodruff had the store before them since the summer of 1869, the building which then stood there having been carried away by a flood in 1869 and a new one built. The original store was bought by Mr. Woodruff of Thomas Tobin ; it was built about 1840 by E. C. Smith, who sold to George Beers and he to Tobin. It was used as a wheelwright shop previous to Mr. Woodruff's purchase. Albert Baton has a wheelwright shop which he has operated since 1875 ; Elbridge Bretell is also engaged in the same business. Solomon Deyo has had a shoe shop here since 1866, and Michael Hughes is the blacksmith.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF KEENE.

PORTIONS of territory were taken from Elizabethtown and Jay, March 19th, 1808, and united into the original town of Keene. Until 1848 it embraced, in addition to its present dimensions, all the land now lying between the limits of North Elba. Keene is bounded on the north by Jay and Wilmington, on the east by Jay and Elizabethtown, on the south by North Hudson, and on the west by Newcomb and North Elba. The Adirondack mountains extend north-east and southwest through the center of the town and occupy nearly the entire surface, leaving scarcely any arable land. Among the mountains of this range in this township are found the loftiest peaks in the State, and with one or two exceptions, the loftiest east of the Rocky mountains. Of these the highest, Mount Marcy, in the southwestern corner, attains an elevation of 5,470 feet above tide ; Mount Colden, just west of Marcy, 4,753 feet ; Gothic Mountain, several miles to the eastward, 4,745 feet ; Haystack, further south, 4,890 feet ; Skylight, 4,889, and Gray Mountain, 4,900. Sentinel Mountain lies next the northern border of the town, and a few miles south of it are Pitch-Off and Long Pond mountains. The Giant of the Valley in the southwestern part of the town towers at an elevation of 4,530 feet above tide ; Dix's Peak, in the extreme south, is 4,916 feet high. Other peaks of less magnitude but still grand and impressive are Sable Mountain, Nipple Top, Saddle Back and McComb mountains. A number of beautiful lakes, or ponds as they are somewhat prosaically termed, sleep at the feet of some of the mightiest of these mountains. Edmund's Pond, lying between Mount Pitch Off and Long Pond Mountain, is rapidly becoming a famous resort for sportsmen, invalids and summer tourists. It extends northeast and southwest a distance of nearly two

miles. From its shore on the north a beetling cliff of solid rock rises vertically a distance of from three to five hundred feet, and gives to the mountain which slopes immediately above it, its peculiar name. From the southern shore the rocky side of Long Pond Mountain rises with supreme majesty. In the spring, summer and early fall, torrents of water tumble in tumultuous and musical confusion down the sides of this grand old hill for hundreds of feet. In the extreme southern part of the town are the Upper and Lower Ausable ponds, the former, indeed, being divided by the line between Keene and North Hudson. The ponds are the headwaters of the south branch of the Ausable river, which flows northerly through the center of the town and with its numerous small tributaries forms its principal drainage. The magnificent mountains and mighty valleys of Keene, and her picturesque streams and splendid lakes have been the theme of many an enthusiastic writer's eulogy, and have called into activity the eager aspirations of many an ardent landscape painter and poet.

Keene has three post-offices, Keene Center, toward the north, Keene Valley, toward the south, and Cascadeville on Edmond's pond. The last named office is open only during the summer months. The town has never been thickly populated, owing to the sterility of the soil and the difficulty of transportation over the rocky and mountainous surface of the country. Pioneers penetrated its primitive forests and scaled the natural barriers formed by its precipices as early as 1797, and thus early a rude, almost impassable road had been extended to Keene Center through Lewis and Jay. The first child born in town was Betsey Payne. The first school was taught by Dr. Ellis in an old school house near the present site of Phineas Norton's house at Keene Center. The first marriage was that of Thomas Dart and Cynthia Griswold, the first death that of Eli Bostwick. Benjamin Payne was the first man who came into the town to stay. He came by marked trees from Westport, and brought his goods in a "jumper," or rude vehicle constructed of two long poles which served the purpose at once of thills, traces and wheels. He died before 1800. He was Phineas Norton's father-in-law. Timothy and Nathaniel Pangburn, brothers, were the next arrivals. The former died before 1823, and the latter about 1830. Thaddeus Roberts and Robert Otis were other early settlers. Zadock Hurd kept the first inn, near the present residence of W. H. H. Hull, and remained a number of years. He died before 1823. Thomas Taylor and General Reynolds made their appearance in town when it was new. Eli Hull settled about two miles south from Keene Center in 1810, and erected the house now occupied by his son William H. H. Hull. Eli Hull (with his three eldest sons) took part in the battle of Plattsburg, and formerly served seven years under General Washington. Roderick McKenzie lived at the head of the Keene valley on the Ausable and was a neighbor of Phineas Beede and James Holt. William H. H. Hull and Phineas Norton (the former was born here in 1813, and



the latter came in 1823) are the best authorities now living of the condition of the town in early times. According to them the first store was built and furnished by William Wells, and afterwards kept by David Graves. Phineas Norton moved into his present house, about two miles east of Keene Center, which he built himself, in 1832. There was no church organization here until 1833, although numerous preachers, among them the zealous Cyrus Comstock, held services frequently in the house of Eli Hull. The principal business in these times was lumber and iron making. Not much lumber was shipped but considerable was sawn for home use. Sylvanus Wells, brother of William Wells, was the most largely interested in mills. In 1823 there was a saw-mill on John's brook three miles above the Center. Eli Hull & Sons (Joseph and Allen Hull) had a forge on the river south of the Centre, Graves & Chase (David Graves and R. C. R. Chase) had one in the village. Both forges were furnished with ore from the Arnold bed.

In 1823 also the forge built by David Graves was running in full force under the management of Benjamin Baxter and Adolphus Ruggles, who drew ore from the Arnold bed. Not long after this Lewis Merritt, Jacob and Nelson Kingsland, of Keeseville, built another forge between the village and the old saw-mill. It was carried away in the great freshet of 1856. In 1823 also a little grist-mill was run by Israel Kent. It stood about a mile above the village on the Ausable river. A few years later another one was built farther down stream by Nathaniel Sherburne.

About 1800 the valley began to present the appearance of a change from an unbroken wilderness to a land fit for human abode. James and Alva Holt lived there about 1800, and cultivated farms for many years. Some of their descendants are still living in the valley. In 1849-50 Harvey Holt built a forge in the valley. He labored under great disadvantages and suffered the calamity of losing it by a freshet before it was opened. Captain Snow, another old settler, died years ago in Beekmantown. Luke Jones, another, died about two years ago in Keene Center. Phineas Beede came from Vermont and took up a place in early days. His widow survives him and is a resident of the Valley now. Mr. Biddlecomb, an early settler, probably built the old Bruce house, which was torn down in 1882-83. Deacon Bruce, father of Chester Bruce, had this place in very early days.

Following is a list of the supervisors of this town from the year 1818 to the present time, with the years of their service: 1818, Eli Hull; 1819, Iddo Osgood; 1820, Eli Hull; 1821 to 1824 inclusive, Iddo Osgood; 1825 to 1827 inclusive, Alden Hull; 1828, Azael Ward; 1829-30, Joseph Hull; 1831 to 1833 inclusive, Artemas Fay; 1834, Richard R. C. R. Chase; 1835-36, Iddo Osgood; 1837-38, Chester Bruce; 1839, Iddo Osgood; 1840, Gardner Bruce; 1841, Charles Miller; 1842, Phineas Norton; 1843, Charles Miller; 1844, Thomas Brewster; 1845, Phineas Norton; 1846, Thomas Brewster; 1847,

James S. Holt; 1848, Stephen Clifford; 1849, Chester Bruce; 1850-51, Uriah D. Mihills; 1852, Phineas Norton; 1853, Uriah D. Mihills; 1854-55, William H. H. Hull; 1856, James S. Holt; 1857-58, William H. H. Hull; 1859-60, Hills H. Sherburne; 1861 to 1864 inclusive, Willard Bell; 1865, David Hinds; 1866-67, Adam McKane; 1868-69, David Hinds, jr.; 1870, William H. H. Hull; 1871-72, Charles N. Holt; 1873-74, E. M. Crawford; 1875-76, David Hinds, jr.; 1877-78, Norman M. Dibble; 1879-80, Frank H. Hull; 1881, David Hinds; 1882-83, John K. Dudley; 1884-85, Thurlow W. Bell.

The records of this town from its formation in 1808 to 1818 are destroyed or lost; we cannot therefore give the first officers. The present town officers are as follows: Supervisor, T. W. Bell; town clerk, Sanford P. McKenzie; commissioner of highways, R. G. S. Blinn; collector, Heman Nye; overseer of the poor, William Wilkins; justices of the peace, David Hinds, John K. Dudley, William H. H. Hull.

*Population.*—1810, 642; 1825, 707; 1830, 287; 1835, 700; 1840, 730; 1845, 809; 1850, 798; 1860, 734; 1865, 770; 1870, 720; 1875, 757; 1880, 910.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

Keene Center was probably quite a settlement before any other community had come into existence in the town. In this vicinity the pioneers of 1797 erected their log cabins, and felled the first trees. By the year 1823 a hotel had been built on the site of the present village of Keene Center, and was managed by David Graves. The building now stands on its original site across the street from the hotel of Weston & Otis, under the old elm. Before 1840 Ira Marks, of Elizabethtown, had control of the property. In 1844 Charles Miller kept it, the title still remained in Marks. In 1847 Willard Bell, Stephen Patridge and Uriah D. Mihills bought the premises of Marks. Not long after, however, Marks purchased them back from the three and sold them to Arville E. Blood. Meantime, since Bell & Company had purchased the hotel, Sidney Ford had been the manager. When Arville Blood secured it, she leased it to her brother, Royal Blood, a part of the time, and Joseph Downey kept it while Royal Blood was out. Willard Bell bought it of Arville E. Blood in 1866. He at the same time purchased the land now forming the site of the Keene Center House of Weston & Otis, and built a new hotel thereon, the other one being discontinued. He moved into the new house in 1867. Mr. Bell kept this hotel until 1872. Nicanor Miller rented it of him from 1872 to 1877, then Horace Towsler kept it seven months. William Bell returned after Towsler's time expired and managed the business until 1881. W. F. Weston then purchased the property of Bell, and he and his present partner, J. Henry Otis, who acquired an interest in the business in 1883, have been the proprie-



tors down to the present time. The old building was destroyed by fire in 1883, and the present sightly and commodious structure erected in its place.

W. F. & S. H. Weston are proprietors of a forge in the south part of the village. They built it in 1879. Ore is obtained from the Keene ore bed about a mile west of the village. The ore is taken from this bed by means of the Wood Pit and Fifth Shaft. Before they built the forge the Westons ran the mines about five years. They have kept a general store in the village since they started the forge. They also own and run a forge and store and saw-mill at Wilmington. Besides the Keene bed there is in its immediate vicinity the Weston bed, and another bed or vein in front of the Cascade House at Edmond's Pond called the Cascade ore bed. The other business establishments at Keene Center may be briefly summed up as follows: A general store kept by Warren Hale for a number of years; the store of W. F. & S. H. Weston, already mentioned; the store of J. W. Bell, opened in 1882, and the drug and Yankee notions store and jewelry establishment of Sanford P. McKenzie. Mr. McKenzie also keeps transient boarders and is an Adirondack guide of considerable experience. He keeps a large and select assortment of fishing tackle and sportsmen's outfits. W. F. Weston and J. Henry Otis are also proprietors of a handsome summer hotel on the western end of Edmond's pond (about six miles west of the Center), which will accommodate about fifty guests, with a dining-room large enough to accommodate ninety persons. Willard Bell owns a saw-mill about a mile and a half southwest of the Center, and E. M. Crawford owns one about five miles south thereof, in the "Flats."

The district school at the Center is the only one there. It is taught at present (spring, 1885) by Miss Bridget Kelley.

*Churches.* — The Methodist Episcopal Church of Keene Center was incorporated in the fall of 1833. Phineas Norton, Nathaniel Sherburne and James O. Patridge were the first trustees. The first meeting convened pursuant to a notice given by the Rev. James R. Goodrich, who was probably the first pastor. In May, 1836, the church purchased a tract of land of Nathaniel Sherburne and at once erected the edifice which still serves the original purposes of construction. The last few pastors were sent here in the following order: Rev. — Harris (date unknown), John Hall, Fletcher Williams, L. A. Dibble, Horatio Graves, G. H. Van Duzen, C. A. Bradford, E. L. Ferris, and the present pastor, Rev. S. B. Gregg, who came here in the spring of 1884. The present officers of the church are: Stewards, Frederick Nye, E. S. Russell, J. K. Dudley, Franklin Hale; trustees, Frederick Nye, J. K. Dudley, Cyrus Sheldon; class leader, E. S. Russell. The Sunday-school superintendent is Frederick Nye who has held that position during the past nine years, with the exception of several intermissions which aggregate about two years.

A new Catholic Church was erected in 1883, which, by virtue of its handsome design and arrangements does credit to the communicants of that faith

in Keene Center. Bi-monthly services are held by Father Holihan, of Elizabethtown.

The first postmaster at Keene Center was probably William Wells. In 1823 David Graves officiated. This was before the establishment of the stage routes and the mails were carried from Westport to Abraham's Plains (now North Elba) on horseback. The present postmaster, Willard Bell, received his appointment in June, 1861.

*Keene Valley.* — At present no industry can be said to prevail in the beautiful Keene Valley. It is a famous resort for summer visitors and more than thirty summer residences have been erected within a radius of six miles from the Keene Valley post-office. Among them are those of Dr. Norman Smith, of Hartford, Conn.; Dr. Charles Laight, of the New York Board of Health; Drs. Isaac and Felix Adler, and Dr. Sachs, their brother-in-law; Martin Bahler, of New Jersey; Dr. William Pennington, Newark, N. J.; William H. Hodge, D. D., Philadelphia; Frederick H. Comstock, attorney of New York; Mrs. and the Misses Clark of Elizabeth, N. J.; Miss N. D. Ranney, Elizabeth, N. J.; Mrs. Anna Ranney, of the same place; A. H. Wyant, artist, New York; Charles Dudley Warner and R. N. Shurtliff, artist, New York; Mason Young has erected an elegant building at a cost of about \$20,000. Dr. James Putnam and brother have purchased the old premises of Smith Beede and built a number of cottages wherein they receive guests, usually from Boston. On the old Walker lot of Smith Beede also cottages have been recently erected by William G. Neilson, Prof. Felix Adler, Almon Thomas, W. A. White, Kate Hillard and others. There has been a post-office at Keene Valley since 1865 when Orson Phelps carried mail for six months free, then the government took it. James S. Holt was the first postmaster. His successor was Norman Dibble. Byron Estes now officiates.

The "Valley" boasts three hotels, each one accommodating from eighty to one hundred guests. The hotel of S. & O. Beede, which was built about 1875; the Tahawas House, George W. Egglefield, proprietor, who bought out Norman Dibble, and the hotel run by R. G. S. Blin since 1882.

E. M. Crawford owns and runs a steam saw-mill which was built about ten years ago. During the first seven years of its career it was propelled by water power. The lumber is cut mainly for building in the Valley.

At the Cascade House of Weston & Otis, before mentioned, a post-office has been established for the sole accommodation of summer tourists. It was first opened in the summer of 1880 by Nicholas Miller, and receives and distributes mail only between July first and November first of each year. The name of the office is Cascadeville, and it is the office for guests who abide at the Mountain View House in North Elba, kept by Moses Ames, the Adirondack Lodge kept by Henry Van Hoesenbergh, and Torrance's Cottage, kept by Orin Torrance, in addition to those stopping at the Cascade House. The present postmaster, J. Henry Otis, received his appointment in the spring of 1883.



## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

## • HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF WESTPORT.

THIS town was formed from Elizabethtown on the 24th of March, 1815. It lies upon the shore of Lake Champlain south of the towns of Essex and Lewis, north of Moriah and east of Elizabethtown. Viewed from the lake it presents an irregular slope for some distance into the interior, behind which can be seen a shallow valley, and towards the west another gradual elevation. The table land to the northeast along the lake shore, called the Split Rock mountains, is an exception to this general appearance, as it is higher near the shore than at any point in the interior. These mountains are in reality a continuation of the Schroon range, which appear in the southwestern part of the town and are separated from the latter by the wide valley which presents the incline above mentioned. The land is drained in the north by a small part of the Boquet and its branches, and in the south and east by numerous small streams flowing into the lake. It has been stated upon good authority that not more than one-half of the surface of the town is capable of profitable cultivation. The village of Westport has for years been one of the most prominent gateways of the Adirondacks. It is the eastern terminus of a beautiful and popular road through Elizabethtown, Keene Center and North Elba, to the Saranacs, shorter than the route from Port Kent.

This entire region is connected in its earliest history with the efforts of William Gilliland, two of his twelve original grants of 1765 being situated within the present town of Westport. At this time he located four thousand five hundred acres on this site of Westport which he named Bessboro, from his daughter. No record or reminiscence remains to give us the details of these early settlers. It is reported that a mill was built and a small settlement begun in the southern part of the village prior to the Revolution, but all vestiges of them were obliterated during that fierce, internecine struggle. In 1804 Charles Hatch came to the site of Westport village from Brookfield, in Essex, a distance of eight miles through the primeval forest so dense that the labor of four men was required two days to open a passage for the wagon. He found a small settlement there called the North West Bay, and a saw-mill, one frame house, three log houses and a barn had already been erected. No road had been opened south of the limits of the town. A rude imitation of a road had been extended west to "Pleasant Valley" and connected the infant colonies in Lewis, Keene and Jay. Joseph Stacy and Nathan Hammond located at a period nearly contemporary with Hatch's arrival, at North West Bay, while in various parts of the town then and soon after the names of John Halsted, Jesse Braman, John Stringham, John and Bouton Lobdell, Aaron Felt, Joseph Fisher, Abner Slaughter, Joseph Storrs and Jacob Southwell were familiar as

of residents. A Methodist Church was organized in 1800, and the place was the scene of many earnest efforts of primitive missionaries, earliest among whom was Rev. Cyrus Comstock.

The earliest records in the town books contain statements in manner and form about as follows: "The first town meeting in the town of Westport, county of Essex, and State of New York, is opened at the house of Charles Hatch, in said town, on the first Tuesday in April [1815], agreeable to a law of the Legislature, passed 1815." The following officers are voted in: Enos Loveland, supervisor; Bouton Lobdell, town clerk; John Lobdell, Gideon Hammond, Diadorus Holcomb, assessors; Levi Frisby, collector; Joseph Stacy, Charles Hatch, overseers of poor; Jesse Braman, Gideon Hammond, Crosby McKinzey, commissioners of highways; Charles Hatch, Bouton Lobdell, Diadorus Holcomb, commissioners of schools; Uriah Palmer, Samuel Cook, jr., John Lobdell, inspectors of schools; Amos Smith, Indethan Barnes, Levi Alexander, constables; Elijah Anzer, Daniel Wright, Sylvanus Kingsley, William Denton, Charles Hatch, Nathaniel Hinkley, Jarrus Coll, Uriah Palmer, fence viewers; Elijah Anzer, William Storrs, Charles Hatch, Elijah Dunton, pound masters; Ralph Watton, Elijah Dunton, John Ferris, jr., Caleb P. Cole, Thomas Emmons, Jesse Hardey, Samuel Denton, Warren Harper, John Daniels, 3d, William Storrs, William Denton, Elijah Storrs, Joseph Stacy, Harvey Sumner, overseers of highways.

Voted "To raise double the sum allowed by the State for the support of common schools." "To raise twenty dollars for the support of the poor."

The names above given embrace about all of the town inhabitants of any note at that time. There was now a considerable settlement at the village of Westport. On the south side of the brook which divides the village there were about half a dozen buildings besides the old tavern and store kept by Judge Charles Hatch, and on the north side of the same there were four or five houses and another tavern kept by Ebenezer Newell. Hatch's store was the only one in the place. "Barney" Myrick had a tannery, carding machine, cloth factory, and saw-mill situated on the north side of the brook just above the present "pulp-mill." In addition to his other possessions Judge Hatch owned and managed a grist-mill below the bridge on the north side of the brook. There were no forges nor distilleries in the town, nor was the manufacture of potash carried on as a distinct industry. Large quantities of lumber were drawn to the coast from the interior and went the way of all the lumber in Northern New York, to Quebec until the opening of the canal in 1824 supplied a convenient channel for all transportation to and from Lake Champlain, when it was found vastly more profitable to ship it southward. Henry H. Holcomb, son of Diadorus Holcomb, dating his birth back to October 13th, 1816, remembers the old school-house which stood in the south part of the village. About 1823 he attended here and was directed in his studies by a Miss Bates, from Plattsburg. There was no church in town then.











WILLIAM P. MERRIAM.





The present resources of the town, in addition to its agriculture, which cannot be deemed a source of much revenue to the town, because of the limited arable surface thereof, will be learned from the account of the present business establishments in the villages of Westport and Wadham's Mills. The iron industry has been in the past the most prominent business of the town. There are three beds of ore in the town which have been worked with more or less of profit. The Campbell bed, now called the Norway bed, which borders upon the Elizabethtown line about seven miles southwest of Wadham's Mills, lies on lots 166 and 168, Iron Ore Tract. It was opened between 1845 and 1850 and worked until about 1853 by Henry J. Campbell and Whallon & Judd. About 1868 and 1869 a road was started from this bed to Westport, but it was never completed, and the bed has not been worked for years. It is now owned by General Seldon E. Marvin, of Albany, who bid it in, it seems, for a stock company. The Merriam bed, situated on lot No. 165, just south of the Campbell bed, was opened in 1867 by W. P. and P. D. Merriam. Not more than three hundred tons of ore were worked, when it was permitted to become idle and has remained so ever since. The land is now owned by Brackett W. and Henry C. Burleigh. The Merriams also ran for a number of years the old Westport forge, which stood upon the Boquet river about two miles northeast of Wadham's Mills, where the remains now stand. It was built in 1845. The present forge of D. H. Payne stands upon the site of one once owned and operated by Barnabas Myrick. Jackson's bed was opened many years ago about a mile or two east of the above mines, but it never amounted to anything. About 1848 Francis H. Jackson erected what he termed the Sisco furnace on the margin of North West bay, a little more than half a mile north of Westport village. The cost of its original construction exceeded one hundred thousand dollars. He also built a dock and ten dwelling houses besides his own and the book-keeper's residences. After holding title to the property for ten or twelve years Jackson sold it to G. W. Goff. It was then owned by the Champlain Ore and Furnace Company who ran it a short time and shut down. The furnace has not been running since. The former residence of Mr. Jackson is now used as a summer dwelling by Mrs. Elizabeth Roe. Barnabas Myrick also owned a forge and store at Wadham's Mills as early as 1825. The Split Rock ore bed was opened years ago on Split Rock Mountain about four miles north of the village of Westport, but has never become a mine of prominence or much promise, and is now idle.

Westport bears the enviable distinction of possessing the most valuable medicinal springs, probably, in the county—the Adirondack springs, being a cluster of four fountains, situated upon a slope of the Adirondacks, half a mile west from the lake and nearly midway between Port Henry and Westport. They have been celebrated during the last fifty years for their remarkable efficacy in relieving various diseases.

When the call for troops rang through the north nearly a quarter of a century ago every town and hamlet responded with numbers of tens and hundreds to the demand. This State promptly sent her quotas, and Essex county furnished of them her share. Westport sent generously of her men and money to the war, and to the unnumbered roll of the heroes of the Rebellion, she added names not inconspicuous for their valor and zealous fidelity.

Following is a list of the supervisors of this town from the organization of the town to the present time, with the years of their service: 1815, Enos Loveland; 1816, Charles Hatch; 1817 to 1819 inclusive, John Lobdell; 1820, Charles Hatch; 1821 to 1825 inclusive, Gideon Hammond; 1826, Charles Hatch; 1827 to 1830 inclusive, Gideon Hammond; 1831-32, Barnabas Myrick; 1833, Ashael Lyon; 1834-35, Ebenezer Douglass; 1836, John Chandler; 1837, B. P. Douglass; 1838, John Chandler; 1839, B. P. Douglass; 1840, Barnabas Myrick; 1841, Joseph R. Delano; 1842-43, William G. Hunter; 1844, Franklin H. Cutting; 1845, Asa Aiken; 1846, B. P. Douglass; 1847, J. H. Low; 1848-49, William J. Cutting; 1850, Ralph A. Loveland; 1851, B. O. Warren; 1852, Daniel W. Braman; 1853-54, Ralph A. Loveland; 1855-56, Cephas Bradley; 1857 to 1859 inclusive, David L. Allen; 1860 to 1863, inclusive, Samuel Root; 1864, D. W. Braman; 1865 to 1867 inclusive, Samuel Root; 1868, Barton B. Richards; 1869 to 1871 inclusive, Lewis H. Roe; 1872-73, William P. Merriam; 1874, Samuel Root; 1875, Daniel F. Payne; 1876, Andrew J. Daniels; 1877-78, C. D. Sprague; 1879, Samuel Root; 1880-81, Merrit A. Clark; 1882, C. D. Sprague; 1883-84, M. A. Clark; 1885, Freeborn H. Page.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

From the preceding account of early town matters it can be seen that there are only two villages in the town, Westport and Wadham's Mills. The former is situated on the western margin of North West bay about midway between the northern and southern boundaries of the township, and the latter between three and four miles distant on the Boquet river. Westport is the larger and more important, commercially, of the two places, because of its superior shipping advantages, being on the shore of the lake, and more conveniently situated with reference to the railroad. It began to have distinctive existence as a village at the beginning of the present century. Probably during the war of 1812 the first wharf was extended into the lake by Charles B. Hatch, son of Judge Charles Hatch. It is now the steamboat dock and is managed by S. W. Price. The state of business here at about that time or between then and 1820, has been described in the preceding portion of the chapter. The second wharf was built by E. & W. Douglass in about 1826. D. L. Allen bought it of them in 1845, and in 1850 extended it one hundred feet further into the lake. It is now about five hundred feet long. D. F. Payne, of Wadham's Mills, pur-



chased it of M. Allen in 1880, and now owns it. By 1830 most of the old settlers before mentioned had either died or moved away. John Halsted, John Stringham, John Lobdell, and Abner Slaughter lived here then. Jesse Braman lived in Wadham's Mills, and has a son Jason, living here now. Bouton Lobdell went away a little before 1830 and Aaron Felt moved to Plattsburg at the same time. In that year D. L. Allen and James A. Allen, both still residing here, made their appearance when the village was called North West Bay. According to the former the lumber business was then and for a number of years in its zenith. The village of Westport was the lumber depot for the towns of Westport, Elizabethtown, Keene and Lewis, and a part of North Hudson. In 1836 the cutting and hauling of "dock sticks" or piles began to assume respectable proportions, and did not die out until 1853 or 1854. There were two saw-mills in the village owned by Barnabas Myrick. He also carried on an extensive shoe-making business and a tannery in a building which stood near the site of the present pulp mill. Next to it he conducted a clothing store. The old grist-mill of Charles Hatch, as well as his saw-mill and carding machine, all located just below the cemetery, were carried off in the freshet of 1830. The walls of the old grist-mill are still standing. Potash making was done here quite extensively; one ashery was situated just north of the old "Hatch" dock, owned and conducted by Ebenezer and William Douglass, and one a little south of it under the mercurial management of the versatile Barnabas or "Barney" Myrick. Sugar making was an important business, large quantities being made annually by Caleb and Tillinghast Cole. Amos Culver pounded the anvil in the south part of the village and in about 1830 William Olds started another blacksmith shop in the north of the village. Elijah Newell ran a hotel on the hill and Newton Hayes was proprietor of another (built by Aaron Felt) on the south side of the brook. H. J. Persons followed Hayes and conducted the business for more than forty years. He was proprietor when it burned in 1876. There were four stores here conducted respectively by Mack & Hatch, Charles Hatch, Barnabas Myrick and E. P. Douglass. No iron business was done. Nothing but a common school was taught here, the Essex County Academy being established in 1834 by an act of the Legislature passed May 1st of that year, authorizing Asahel Lyon, Platt R. Halsted and Benjamin P. Douglass to incorporate the same. It started with a capital of \$2,500 in shares of \$25.00 each. The first trustees were Aaron B. Mack, Charles Hatch, Charles B. Hatch, George P. Reynolds, Ira Henderson, Norris McKinney, Barnabas Myrick, Caleb P. Cole and Joseph Cole. This academy flourished until about 1857 or 1858. The first principal, Orson Kellogg, officiated during the greater part of its history.

There has been but one newspaper published in the village, viz. the *Westport Patriot and Essex County Advertiser* which was started about 1838 by Anson H. Allen, or "Old Settler Allen" as he was called, from Keeseville. After

suffering the vicissitudes inevitable to the first four or five years of a newspaper's life, the business was transferred to David Turner, who changed the name to *The Westport Herald*, and continued it six or seven years. At that time one Sawyer, encouraged by a subscription raised by the citizens of Westport, purchased the paper and sold it to Captain Livingston, of Elizabethtown, at a profit. It was transferred to the latter place by the new proprietor.

*Masonic.*—A lodge of the order of Free and Accepted Masons was instituted June 13, 1852, under the name of the Sisco Lodge of Westport, No. 259, a more detailed account of which appears in chapter XXVI.

*Present Business.*—The oldest mercantile business now in the town is conducted by D. L. Allen. In 1845 Mr. Allen opened a store for himself in the old building still standing by the wharf. It was built at the same time with the wharf by E. & W. Douglass. For six years previously he had been in the mercantile business at Wadham's Mills, in company with one Delano. From 1845 to 1878 he remained in the store at Westport, when he built his present store on Main street. In 1849 J. C. Osborne began harness making over the store now occupied by H. H. Richards. He came into the building he now uses in 1873. He has always been alone. Alvin Davis opened a tin shop and hardware store in 1851 in the old post-office building on the south side of the river. In 1875 he moved into the Myrick store and in June, 1882, into his present quarters. The business is now conducted under the style of George A. Davis & Co. P. P. Bacon had a shoe shop and shoe store here as early as 1859 just opposite to where he is now on Main street. He was burned out in the fire of 1878, whereupon he moved into the block opposite the Weed House. He came into his present building in 1881. For some time previous to 1865 J. W. & C. H. Eddy, brothers, conducted a general mercantile business here. In 1865 the firm became Page & Eddy (F. H. Page and C. H. Eddy). About 1870 C. H. Eddy superseded Page & Eddy. Then for a time the business was conducted by C. H. Eddy & Son (F. H. Eddy). About 1876 C. H. Eddy assumed sole control of the business and still remains alone. F. H. Eddy now owns and conducts a drug department in his father's store, which he established in the spring of 1878. R. J. Ingalls, who is now engaged in the sale of general merchandise, came here in 1865 and bought out the business of Hiram Downey, in the brick block which stood on the site of the building Mr. Ingalls now occupies. About three years before that Downey had bought out the tin shop of F. H. Page, and Mr. Ingalls continued the tin shop for some time, but gradually added miscellaneous articles to his stock. He has had no tin shop for several years. The old brick building was destroyed by the fire of 1876 and the present one erected in its place. James Richards began business here as merchant tailor in December, 1866, in the David McLeod store, and after successive removals came into his present place of business in the summer of 1884. H. H. Richards, general merchant, began



business here in 1867, purchasing the building he still uses of his father, William Richards. Until 1872 he and A. E. Williams were together, but since then Mr. Richards has conducted the business alone. In 1875 he sold the goods and leased the store to F. H. Page, and remained out of business that winter. In the spring of 1876 he opened a store on the other side of the brook, was burned out in the fall, removed into the new building in the spring of 1877, and returned to his present quarters in 1879. N. J. Gibbs and Milo Gibbs, his brother, entered into partnership here in 1872, to carry on the hardware business. They were the first year in the store now occupied by A. E. Williams. In 1881 N. J. Gibbs became successor to the firm. He is now in the post-office building. In 1875 A. E. Williams and Dr. Abiather Pollard, under the firm name of Pollard & Williams, established a drug business in the store now occupied by A. E. Williams. In the spring of 1879 Mr. Williams became sole proprietor of the business and remains alone to-day. Charles A. Pattison began the sale of general merchandise in the same building that now holds his wares. He is now and from the beginning has been sole proprietor.

*Manufacturing.* — The Westport Pulp Mill Company, a limited stock company, consisting of Aaron Clark, Amos A. Prescott, A. E. Williams, D. A. Clark and M. A. Clark, was incorporated in 1880, and the mill erected on the north side of the river. The original purpose of the establishment was the manufacture of wood pulp, but since 1883, the building and machinery have been devoted entirely to the operations incident to a saw-mill, lath-mill, spool-factory, shingle and grist-mill.

*Hotels.* — The building now used as a hotel under the title of the Richards House was built in 1834, for a private residence by Captain Ira Henderson, father of Mrs. William Richards. The land on which it stands was purchased in 1810 by Joseph Jenks, Mrs. Richards's grandfather, and the title thereof has remained in the family to the present time. The building erected by Captain Henderson was converted into a hotel in 1848, William Richards proprietor. No change in ownership or management took place until Mr. Richards's death in February, 1881. For a year Mrs. Richards conducted the business. In April, 1882, the present proprietor, M. A. Clark, son-in-law of Mrs. Richards, took the helm. Under the same title and management, the sightly Mansion House on the hill is used for the accommodation of summer boarders. Montville Weed erected in 1876 the hotel which he fitly denominates the Weed House. He has been the sole proprietor of the same since the beginning, with the exception of the six months following April 1st, 1882, during which period he leased it to John Holcomb. The Allen House, near the depot, was opened by James A. Allen, in 1879. The building was originally intended as a hotel, but was never devoted to the accommodation of guests until Mr. Allen bought it. He immediately enlarged and improved it. On account of its convenient location it is becoming a popular stopping place for those who enter the Adi-

rondacks *via* Westport, Mr. Allen having provided himself with all the transportation facilities necessary for carrying passengers to their favorite resorts.

*Physicians.* — Dr. Abiather Pollard was born in Bridgewater, Windsor county, Vt., in 1807, and was graduated from the medical college at Castleton, Vt., in 1831, having previously attended a course of lectures at Burlington. After about four years' practice in Westport he attended further lectures at the University of Pennsylvania, and the Medical College of Philadelphia, both situated in Philadelphia. He returned soon to Westport and remained there until 1837, when he removed to Chazy, Clinton county. After an absence of six years there, eight years in Keeseville, two in New York, and eight in California, he came again to Westport in 1861, and has continued in practice here to the present day. Dr. P. W. Barber, though not now residing in Westport, was here long enough to deserve historical mention. He was graduated from the Hospital College of Medicine in Louisville, Ky., in 1869; practiced in the hospital there six years, and engaged in private practice one year. In 1876 he made his home at Westport, and remained here until April, 1885, when he went to New York city as surgeon for the U. S. Mutual Accident Association. Dr. W. E. Pattison received his diploma from the Burlington Medical College in 1880, and went at once to Elizabethtown. Thence after a practice of two years he removed to Colorado, where he remained one year, and in 1883 came to Westport. He received in 1880 an honor diploma from the University of Vermont. On January 1st, 1885, he was appointed county physician for Essex county. He was born and reared in Westport. Dr. F. T. Delano, after being graduated from the Albany Medical College in 1883, commenced practice at Ticonderoga. From the fall of 1884 to the spring of 1885 he was in Crown Point. He came to Westport in March, 1885.

*Westport Union School.* — The union of districts Nos. 2 and 3 was effected in 1860. At a school meeting held in the basement of the Methodist church in Westport, December 7th, 1860, the following officers were chosen: J. H. Low, moderator, and A. B. Mack, clerk of the meeting; William Frisbie was elected trustee for one year, Lorenzo Gibbs for two years, D. L. Allen three years. Jerry Flinn, clerk. The trustees were instructed to sell "both school-houses" (north and south) for \$500 or more, reserving the benches and stoves and to purchase the Myrick house (or former residence of Barnabas Myrick) and lot at a sum not exceeding \$1,200. The instructions were subsequently carried out. At the same meeting a board of instruction was chosen to inspect the schools. It consisted of H. N. Cole, both clergymen, Drs. Langdon and Richardson, A. B. Mack, J. W. Eddy, and V. C. Spencer. The Myrick house which the trustees purchased was bought of Marks & Hand, who settled the estate of Barnabas Myrick. The building was repaired and remodeled, and is still used for school purposes in Westport. The old north school-house was the building now occupied as a dwelling by Lyman Gregory, and



the south school-house is now used for the same purpose by Daniel Carey. L. B. Newell was the first principal of the Union School. It had originally four departments but has been reduced to three.

*Churches.*—The church history of Westport can be traced back with accuracy about as far as that of any church organization in the county. The oldest church organization here is the Methodist, and the writer takes advantage of the antiquity of this church, and of the most valuable historical memoranda compiled by the Rev. J. E. Bowen, pastor of the Westport Methodist Church in 1881–82, to give an outline of the history of Methodism in this part of the State, prefatory of the sketch of this particular organization. The earliest intimations authentic history furnishes of Methodism in the Champlain valley are found in the conference minutes of 1788, when Francis Asbury, four years previously elected the first bishop of the then just organized Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States of America, projected a plan to reach the magnificent valley stretching from New York city on the south, along the Hudson and down Lake Champlain and the mighty St. Lawrence, to the stormy gulf on the north, and sent a company of nine itinerants, headed by Freeborn Garrettson into this region.

To Samuel Wilson was assigned the beautiful region of Lake Champlain; and the next year the names of David Kendell and Wm. Losee were connected with the same circuit. The story of their toil, their successes, or disappointments, has never been written, or is forever lost. In 1796 Richard Jacobs, a local preacher residing in Clifton Park, was employed by the presiding elder to visit this region in a tour of missionary exploration. Leaving his family, he passed up the Hudson and down through what was then Clinton county, extending from Lake George to Canada. On his return he passed through Pleasant Valley (Elizabethtown) and tarried a few days with Ira Phelps a pioneer Methodist from Harrington, Conn. This was near New Russia, a few miles up the Boquet river and south of the present village of Elizabethtown. Provided by his hostess with food in his saddle-bags and in company with a Mr. Kellogg, he started south through the unbroken and almost impenetrable forests for the first settlement at the head of Lake George. They floundered on seven days when in attempting to cross Schroon river near Schroon lake Jacobs was drowned. There on the banks of that stream he was buried.

In 1799 the region on the west side of Lake Champlain, from Ticonderoga on the south to Montreal on the north, was for the first time organized into a circuit, and named Plattsburg Circuit, with Alexander McLean as the only itinerant. That same territory comprises to-day the Plattsburg district, with 31 appointments and ministers, and 3,830 (Minutes of 1881) members, and 675 probationers, besides its northern portion then lying in Canada. The first numerical entry for this side of the lake made at the close of this first year shows 107 members, but whether any of these were residents of Westport, we have no means of determining.

In 1800 Elijah Hedding, the reader exhorter, associated with Joseph Crawford as assistant preacher, labored for three months on the Plattsburg circuit. In 1801 Hedding was received on trial by the New York conference at its session at New York city, and appointed to Plattsburg circuit as assistant to Elijah Chochester. This same year we first find districts named. The district was Pittsfield with Shadrach Bostwick, presiding elder. Plattsburg circuit then extended from Ticonderoga into Canada. There the youthful Hedding and his colleague forded streams, traversed forests, faced the pelting storms of that severe climate, slept in log cabins, and kindled a flame that after the lapse of half a century is not extinguished.

The whole territory from New York to the St. Lawrence, and from the Green Mountains to the Adirondacks and from into Connecticut and Massachusetts to far beyond the Helderbergs, was but one conference named "New York." The district was named Pittsfield, and the circuit bore the name of Plattsburg till 1810. Till the later date the presiding elders and preachers were as follows: 1802, elder, Shadrach Bostwick; preachers, Daniel Bromley, Laban Clark. 1803, elder, Sylvester Hutchins; preachers, Henry Ryan, Gersham Pierce.

*Ticonderoga Circuit.* — 1810 — Elder, Wm. Anson; preachers, Andrew McKean, Peter Bussing; members, 619. At the conference concluding this year Plattsburg circuit was divided and two new circuits formed called Malone and Ticonderoga, leaving the old name and sufficient territory for a circuit still. The territory of Westport formed a part of Ticonderoga Circuit, which embraced all the country south of the top of the mountains between the Ausable river and Willsborough to Lake George. Ticonderoga Circuit had assigned all the membership within its bounds, which was just 65. The next year a new district was formed called Champlain, embracing Western Vermont, with Plattsburg, Ticonderoga, and Malone in New York. The record for the next five years is as follows:—

*Champlain District.* — 1811, Samuel Draper, elder; John Hiskins, preacher. 1812, Samuel Draper, elder; Timothy Miner, preacher. 1813, Samuel Draper, elder; John B. Stratton preacher. 1814, Samuel Draper, elder; Jacob Beeman, preacher. 1815, Henry Stead, elder; John T. Addoms, preacher. 1816, Henry Stead, elder; Moses Amadon, preacher. This year the Methodist Episcopal Church here was born into existence.

Two years previously Levi Frisbie emigrated from Harrington, Litchfield county, Conn., and found a home a little more than one mile south of the village of Westport. About this time the British General Provost was preparing to make a descent upon the settlements along the west side of the lake, and Frisbie, having been a captain in the militia of his native State, volunteered to aid in repelling the foe. In an encounter between the contending forces, somewhere near Salmon river, at the battle of Plattsburg, Captain Frisbie was badly wounded, and was compelled to have one of his legs amputated.



Frisbie and his intimate friend Ira Phelps, of Pleasant Valley, were both Methodists in Connecticut and may have been the means of the introduction of Methodist preaching and the organization of the first Methodist Episcopal Church in this town.

Moses Amadon, in the summer of the year 1816, began to preach in a school-house south of Frisbie's, then standing between the present residence of Samuel Root, esq., and that of Mrs. Isabella Farnsworth, and then not far from the residences of Simpson, Goodspeed and Elijah Dunton. Here, in the early summer of this year, the first class, forming the original nucleus of the present Methodist Episcopal Church, was organized, with only five members. They were as follows: Leader, Levi Frisbie; members, Sally Frisbie, Amy Hatch, Lydia Dunton, Clara Low. To these were soon after added: John Low, Mrs. Goodspeed, Anna Goodspeed, Mercy Goodspeed, John Ferris, Patience Ferris, Mrs. Widow Martin, Lucy Loveland, Betsey Farnsworth. The place of worship was at the school-house above named, and Fisher's Mills occasionally, and subsequently at the school-house in the south part of the village (now the residence of Dewit Hooper), but this was usually occupied on the Sabbath by the Baptists as their place of worship. The social meetings were held at Frisbie's, Ferris's and Low's, near the present residence of Henry Shelden. The quarterly meetings, which drew the people together from all parts of the circuit, were sometimes held in Captain Frisbie's barn, occasionally in the grove adjoining the late residence of William Frisbie, sometimes in Judge Hatch's hall (1821 N. Allen), and later, in 1830-31, they were held once or twice in the Baptist church, which stood on the hill opposite the residence of A. Carpenter. Later still, the services, both social and public, were held constantly in the school-house in the north part of the village, afterwards changed to a dwelling-house, and now owned by Mrs. Wolcott. This was the regular place of worship for twenty years, until the church was erected in 1836.

The organization of the work, and the appointment of preachers till 1826, were as follows:—

*Champlain District — Ticonderoga Circuit.* — 1817, Henry Stead, presiding elder; Phineus Dowe, preacher; 1818, Henry Stead, presiding elder; Eli Barrett, preacher; 1819, John B. Stratton, presiding elder; Seymour Landon, preacher; 1820, John B. Stratton, presiding elder; James Lovel, preacher; this year large additions were made to the membership, among them were Sally Frisbie, Mrs. James McIntyre, Joshua Smith, Susan Smith and Kate Smith, Nathaniel Allen and wife were received by letter; 1821, John B. Stratton, presiding elder; Seymour Landon, preacher; 1822, John B. Stratton, presiding elder; Ibri Cannon, preacher; 1823, Buel Goodsell, presiding elder; Orin Pier, preacher; 1824, Buel Goodsell, presiding elder; Solomon Stebbins, preacher; 1825, Buel Goodsell, presiding elder; Solomon Stebbins, preacher; 1826, Buel Goodsell, presiding elder; Orris Pier and Asa Bushnell, preachers.

The year 1827 witnessed a change in the arrangements of the general work in Northeastern New York and Northwestern Vermont. A new district was organized called Plattsburg District, with five circuits as its entire area; they were Plattsburg, Ticonderoga, Peru, Chazy and Grand Isle. James Quinlan was presiding elder and stationed preacher at Plattsburg, and Orris Pier and Cyrus Meeker were appointed to Ticonderoga Circuit. In 1828 John Clark was presiding elder, and F. W. Sizer and W. Burt preachers.

At the conference at which the above were appointed the old Ticonderoga Circuit was divided. Ticonderoga and Crown Point constituted one division and retained the name of Ticonderoga, while Moriah, Westport, Elizabethtown, Essex and Willsboro formed the other and new circuit, and took the name of Westport Circuit. The first quarterly meeting was held at Willsboro, September 27th and 28th. Levi Frisbie, E. Bull, F. King and H. Tomlinson were appointed circuit stewards, one for each town, except Essex, which does not appear until 1830, and is then called Essex Bay. In 1829 Westport was connected with the Champlain District, with Tobias Spicer presiding elder, and Orville Kyrepton and Joseph Eames preachers. The year 1830 found O. Kyrepton and G. W. Esty preachers, and at its close three hundred and fifty-one members were reported. The year 1831 presents another change of district, at least in name, Middlebury taking the place of Champlain. Hiram Chase was appointed preacher in charge and P. M. Hitchcock assistant. A class was organized at Wadham's Mills, and preaching first instituted there. The class was composed as follows: Captain Levi Frisbie, leader, with Nathan Jones, Thomas Wessons, Mrs. T. Wessons, Cyrenus Payne and a Lack family, in all ten persons, as members. The Troy Conference was formed by dividing the New York Conference.

In 1832 the circuit was named in the minutes of Conference Westport and Essex, with Hiram Chase, Barney Hitchcock, and one to be supplied. The supply appears to have been Luman Andrews for the first quarter, and I. Whitford the remainder of the year. The records show that there was but one circuit, quarterly meetings being held as one circuit, but in regard to financial matters it appears as two circuits, Hitchcock being reported invariably as receiving salary from Essex and Willsboro, and the other two from the remaining portions of the circuit. The Westport portion embraced Westport, Lewis, Center and North, Wadham's Mills, Brainard's Forge, Fisher Mills, Moriah and Port Henry, or more properly, Cheever Orebed.

At the opening of the conference year, beginning in 1833, Cyrus Prindle became presiding elder, and Amos Hazeltine, Christopher B. Morris and Peter H. Smith, circuit preachers. The conference voted to buy or build a parsonage, and appointed John Gibbs, Joseph Burligame, R. S. Odell, D. Holcomb and William Frisbie a committee for that purpose.

The year 1834 finds Middlebury District, Westport and Moriah Circuit,



with Ezra Sayres and Andrew C. Mills preachers. The parsonage was purchased this year.

A movement was also begun to build a church at Westport village, and a subscription paper dated December 13th, 1834, and a diagram of the proposed edifice were prepared and presented, and subscriptions made as follows: "One-half the amount to be paid on or before the first day of October next ensuing, and the other half on or before the first of October after that; or in 1836." And one-fourth part of each payment was to be cash, and the remaining three-fourths "in good merchantable neat-cattle, grain or iron." The church building was to be commenced in 1835 and completed in 1836. Members of the church still living give the names of the committee as Dr. Holcomb, C. B. Hatch and Levi Frisbie.

This edifice was not completed for dedication until 1837. The house was built of stone, about forty by sixty feet outside measurement. It was dedicated by Rev. Peter C. Oakley, presiding elder of the district, and the dedicatorial prayer was offered by Rev. Gilbert Lyon. The original cost of its construction was \$3,942.61. It remained unchanged until 1866, when, during the pastorate of Rev. David Lytle, it was enlarged by the addition of twenty feet to its length, and entirely remodeling its internal structure, at an expense of \$4,000.

A debt of \$1,000 or \$1,200 was left, which was not fully liquidated until the fall of 1880, when the last dollar of both principal and interest was paid. The trustees and building committee at the enlargement and repairing were as follows: Trustees, D. L. Allen, Samuel Root, P. D. Merriam, William Frisbie, Aaron Clark, C. W. Holcomb. Committee on repairs, Samuel Root, P. D. Merriam, D. L. Allen. Aaron Clarke was appointed as acting committee and builder, and under his supervision the work was completed. The rededication took place March, 1867, Rev. E. Wentworth, D. D., of Troy, and Rev. J. E. Bowen, presiding elder of Plattsburg District, officiating.

In 1835 John M. Weaver was presiding elder, and Josiah H. Brown and Bishop Isbell preachers. The quarterly conference at the beginning of the year ordered Brown to continue his labors at Westport and Isbell at Moriah. At the conference of 1836 Westport and Moriah were separated, and Westport and Essex united. The Revs. J. R. Colman, J. H. Brown and B. Pomeroy were circuit preachers. In 1837 Westport and Essex were separated, and Moriah was again attached to Westport. Peter C. Oakley became presiding elder. Lewis Potter and H. W. Stewart acted as circuit preachers.

The circuit took the name of Westport and Moriah Circuit, which was returned for two years, when Westport became a station and has so remained till now. The labors of Potter, however, were restricted to Westport and of Stewart to Moriah, virtually making two stations. The same preachers were continued during the year 1838. The year 1839 found again John M. Weaver

presiding elder, and John W. Belknap at Westport as stationed preacher. Belknap staid the constitutional time of two years, and was succeeded for one year by Rev. William M. Chipp, in 1841. During the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Chipp, at the last quarterly conference, a committee was appointed, consisting of William McIntyre, Andrew Frisbie, D. Holcomb, John Greely and Aaron Clark, to procure a lot and build a parsonage. This was not consummated, however, until four years subsequently, when, during the pastorate of R. T. Wade, another resolution was passed instructing the committee to proceed with that enterprise, and at the last quarterly conference an apportionment was made to pay for the building. This building stands adjoining and directly north of the church.

The following is a complete list of preachers and presiding elders from 1841 to the present: —

1841, William M. Chipp, preacher; J. M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1842, John Thomson, preacher; J. M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1843, John Thomson, preacher; Charles P. Clark, presiding elder; 1844, Hiram Chase, preacher; T. Seymour, presiding elder; 1845, Richard T. Wade, preacher; D. Starks, presiding elder; 1846, Valentine Brown, preacher; D. Starks, presiding elder; 1847, William W. Pierce, preacher; D. Starks, presiding elder; 1848, D. P. Hulburd, preacher; D. Starks, presiding elder; 1849, Benjamin Pomeroy, preacher; John M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1850, Benjamin Pomeroy, preacher; John M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1851, William H. Tiffany, preacher; John M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1852, Charles L. Hagar, preacher; John M. Weaver, presiding elder; 1853, Charles L. Hagar, preacher; William Griffin, presiding elder; 1854, I. F. Yates, preacher; William Griffin, presiding elder; 1855, I. F. Yates, preacher; William Griffin, presiding elder; 1856, Peter R. Storer, preacher; William Griffin, presiding elder; 1857, William W. Foster, preacher; D. P. Hulburd, presiding elder; 1858, William W. Foster, preacher; D. P. Hulburd, presiding elder; 1859, Isaac C. Fenton, preacher; D. P. Hulburd, presiding elder; 1860, Isaac C. Fenton, preacher; D. P. Hulburd, presiding elder; 1861, T. W. Harwood, preacher; O. Gregg, presiding elder; 1862, T. W. Harwood, preacher; O. Gregg, presiding elder; 1863, George S. Gold, preacher; O. Gregg, presiding elder; 1864, George S. Gold, preacher; O. Gregg, presiding elder; 1865, David Lytle, preacher; J. E. Bowen, presiding elder; 1866, David Lytle, preacher; J. E. Bowen, presiding elder; 1867, J. B. Sylvester, preacher; J. E. Bowen, presiding elder; 1868, J. B. Sylvester, preacher; J. E. Bowen, presiding elder; 1869, A. Campbell, preacher; A. Witherspoon, presiding elder; 1870, A. Campbell, preacher; A. Witherspoon, presiding elder; 1871, E. Morgan, preacher; A. Witherspoon, presiding elder; 1872, E. Morgan, preacher; A. Witherspoon, presiding elder; 1873, J. G. Gooding, preacher; T. A. Griffin, presiding elder; 1874, J. G. Gooding, preacher; T. A. Griffin,



presiding elder; 1875, J. G. Gooding, preacher; T. A. Griffin, presiding elder; 1876, B. S. Sharp, preacher; T. A. Griffin, presiding elder; 1877, B. S. Sharp, preacher; J. M. Webster, presiding elder; 1878, A. J. Ingals, preacher; J. M. Webster, presiding elder; 1879, J. E. Bowen, preacher; J. M. Webster, presiding elder; 1880, J. E. Bowen, preacher; J. M. Webster, presiding elder; 1881, J. E. Bowen, preacher; James H. Bond, presiding elder. The membership was 214. In 1882-83 Rev. H. Robbins officiated as pastor, and was succeeded in 1884 by the Rev. A. D. Heart, the present pastor. The present officers are as follows: Trustees, C. E. Stevens, Israel Pattison, Peter Ferris, William Douglass, Aaron Clark, D. L. Allen, D. A. Clark, John Hoffnagle, Albert Carpenter; stewards, D. L. Allen, G. W. Spencer, H. E. Eastman, William Douglass, A. Clark, C. Bennett, E. J. Sherman, H. R. Betts, Martin Pierce, D. F. Payne, H. H. Shelden; class leaders, H. W. Frisbie, A. A. Allen, Edward Osborne, John Farnsworth, E. J. Floyd, Thomas Dickinson, Frank Sweat.

*Baptist Church.*—This church was started in Elizabethtown in 1807, the first members being Elisha Collins, Keepsy Bachelor, William Denton, Timothy Harrington, Sarah Ellis and Triphena Bachelor. At the second meeting Anna Loveland and Arvis Harrington joined them. Rev. Henry Chamberlain, of Vermont, preached the first sermon, November 12, 1807. Elizabethtown, Jay and Bridport, Vt., met under Solomon Brown, moderator, and completed the organization. Elisha Collins was their first preacher, but they had no settled pastor until 1813, when Solomon Brown preached half the time and Deacon Holcomb the remainder. Then for two years Deacon Holcomb preached the whole time. Up to 1824, Revs. John S. Carter, Seth Ewer, Jeremiah H. Dwyer, and Ebenezer Mott were pastors. Rev. Isaac Sawyer followed Mott five years, then Sidney Estes, A. Woods and D. H. Renney; C. W. Hodges, 1857, Rev. Thomas Brandt, Revs. Reynolds, Thomas Brandt again, S. W. Whiting, Brandt the third time, William Grant, Thomas G. Wright, O. W. Maxley, F. P. Lang, Stephen Wright, Charles H. Nash, I. E. Howd, H. C. Lyon, Wayne Brewster, J. F. Genung, and the last pastor, Rev. P. S. McKillop, who came here in April, 1882, and remained until the fall of 1884. The first edifice was erected in 1828 on the highest hill west of the village, moved down from the height in 1839, repaired in 1868, and burned in 1876. The present house of worship was built in 1876-77. The church has no pastor now. The present officers are as follows: Deacons, James A. Allen, A. P. Cole; Frank E. Smith, Clerk; trustees, C. H. Eddy, R. J. Ingalls, A. P. Cole, James A. Allen, L. B. Newell, A. J. Daniels, Arthur D. Newell, Frank E. Smith.

*Catholic Church.*—The Catholic Church of Westport was organized about 1857, and the first priest was the Rev. Shield from Keeseville. The church edifice was commenced in 1857, but could not be completed before 1880. The

services are at present administered by Father Holihan, of Elizabethtown. The present trustees are the priest, P. P. Bacon and Michael Flinn

*Post-Office.*—The first postmaster at Westport, or North West Bay, was Samuel Cook, the office then being on the south side of the brook. Charles B. Hatch was an early postmaster, and probably succeeded Cook. In about 1840 William Cutting followed Hatch, and in 1852 was himself succeeded by Harvey Pierce. Shortly after this Edmund Pierce, brother to Harvey, received the appointment, but was soon replaced by his predecessor and brother. John H. Low was the next postmaster, and officiated for years, being followed at last by his son Edwin B. Low. The present incumbent, W. Douglass, followed E. B. Low in 1872.

*Wadham's Mills.*—This village derived its name from an early resident and the founder of the present milling industry at the place. The land that the store and grist mill of D. F. Payne now stand on, was purchased by Luman Wadhams of Abijah Cheever, Elizabeth S. Cheever and Charles A. Cheever. Previous to this the Wadhams family lived in what is now known as the Phelps tavern which stands about midway between the villages of Lewis and Elizabethtown. Some time before 1826 General Wadhams came to the site of the village that now bears his name, and began the construction of mills on the splendid water power created by the falls in the Boquet river, at that place. On the third day of May in that year Barnabas Myrick purchased a half interest in the water power for five hundred dollars, and entered into an agreement under seal with General Wadhams, according to the terms of which the parties thereto built a large grist-mill on the lot (since known as the grist-mill lot) which now constitutes the brick part of the present mill of D. F. Payne. After Luman Wadhams's death, in about 1832, the lot became the property of his two sons, William L. and Abraham E. Wadhams, Myrick still retaining his interest in the water power. In 1848, Myrick having died, his widow transferred the interest which had thus devolved upon her, to the Wadhams. The land and milling property passed to William L. Wadhams in 1863, and to D. F. Payne, the present owner, in 1865. In 1868, Mr. Payne enlarged the old mill to its present size. An old grist-mill stood in the early part of the century on the site of the one just sketched, but no traces of it are left. Mr. Payne also built, in 1867, the present saw-mill on the same ground formerly occupied by a structure employed for a like purpose. In 1873 he began the construction of a two-fired forge on the site of the old forge described in the early part of this chapter, run by Barnabas Myrick. He finished it in 1875, added a fire in 1879, and another in 1880, so that he now owns a four-fired forge. Ore is brought from the Moriah, Feronia, and Chateaugay mines. C. R. Payne, father of D. F. Payne, was born in Brookfield, town of Essex, in 1798. He came to Wadham's Mills in 1839. D. F. Payne was born in 1841. In 1868, after becoming possessed of and entitled to the grist-mill and saw-



mill property, as stated, he moved into his present residence, the old homestead of the Wadhams family, which, with all the other land heretofore mentioned, formed a part of lot No. 24. In addition to the milling and iron business, Mr. Payne conducts a general mercantile business in Wadham's Mills, having started a store in 1869 in the same building wherefrom he dispenses his wares. C. D. Sprague, also deals in general merchandise here. He opened his store in May, 1875, removing into his present quarters in 1880. H. C. Avery began a general mercantile business here in 1874 in the same building he now occupies.

In 1872 the Gibbs brothers, of Westport, established a foundry facing the mill here at the end of the bridge on the east bank of the river. In 1881 N. J. Gibbs became sole proprietor as he now remains.

*Hotels.* — The one hotel in this place was built about 1831 by Isaac Alden the first proprietor. Horace Braman kept it as far back as 1843, and built the addition on the corner which has since been variously used as a store and harness shop since then. George Angier followed Braman in about 1846 or 1847. David H. Sayre followed Angier and owned the property a number of years, part of the time leasing it. Joel F. Whitney succeeded Sayre in the ownership and was in turn succeeded, in the fall of 1866, by Eli Farnsworth. In 1871 Almond Chappel bought out Farnsworth and changed the name of the hotel from its old title of Exchange Hotel to the Chappel House. Isaac W. Hatch purchased the property of Chappel in 1881, and remained until April, 1884, when D. F. Payne obtained title and leased the premises to Chappel, who left in the spring of 1885.

*Schools.* — The present district school building was erected in 1846, on the site of the former one which had been destroyed by fire. At the time of the fire this first structure was a very old building.

*Churches.* — There are two churches in this village, Methodist and Congregational. The Congregational Church was formed March 29th, 1827. Among its first members being Luman Wadhams, Calvin Wiley, Jesse Braman, Alexander Whitney and Thomas Hadley. The meeting was held in the old school-house near the residence of Jesse Braman. They erected their edifice in about 1836. The present pastor is Rev. C. Ransom; the present deacons are N. M. Clark and E. O. Hodgkins. It seems that there was a society here of this denomination in 1813, but no records or reminiscences are left to commemorate the efforts of its members.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church* was formed here as early as 1830. Before that it was united with the Westport charge. Services were held in the school-house until 1873 when the present edifice was erected. Services are now held by the Westport pastor three times monthly. The present officers are: Class-leaders, Franklin Sweat, Thomas Dickinson; steward, E. J. Sherman; Sunday-school superintendent, E. J. Sherman.

*Post-office.*—It is thought that William L. Wadhams was the first postmaster here, though the date of his appointment is not known. In 1850 J. R. DeLano took the oath of office. He was followed in 1852 by William L. Wadhams. In 1856 Dr. Asa P. Hammond was appointed, and in 1861 was succeeded by D. W. Braman. A. C. Hall officiated from 1865 to 1870, at which time the present postmaster, D. F. Payne, began the performance of postal duties here.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF MINERVA.

THE town of Minerva was formed from Schroon on the 7th of March, 1817. A part of Newcomb was taken off in 1828, and in November, 1870, a part of Schroon was annexed. The details of these changes of boundary will be found in the session laws of the years named. Minerva is in the extreme southwest corner of the county; it is bounded north by Newcomb and North Hudson; east by North Hudson and Schroon; south by Warren county, and west by Hamilton county. Its physical formation is peculiar and striking, the whole face of its territory being elevated and bordered in the northeast and east by a mountainous region. The general upland is from twelve hundred to fifteen hundred feet above tide, rises in a succession of lofty valleys, formed by deep, broad and sweeping undulations. In describing the natural features of the town, ten years ago, Mr. Watson said: "Minerva is a rugged and mountainous town, containing about one-third mountain, one-third feasible land, and the residue rough and stony." A large portion of the soil is cold and hard and only moderately productive, but there are quite a number of excellent farms and the industry and frugality of the inhabitants have made the town a reputation for thrift that is not enjoyed by many in more favorable localities.

The Hudson river, rising up near the foot of Mount Marcy in the town of Keene, flows southeasterly across the town of Newcomb and enters the town of Minerva near the northeast corner, where it unites with Indian river; the stream then continues in a southeasterly direction to near the center of the town, where its current receives the Boreas river, which flows from the extreme northeast corner of the town to where it unites with the Hudson; the latter stream then turns southward and crosses the town line at about its center. Many small streams, pure and cold, flow into these larger rivers, lending beauty to the landscape and affording excellent drainage. There are, perhaps,



a score of small lakes and ponds in the town, most of them without names, clear and cold and furnishing first-class sporting grounds. Lumbering has for many years been the principal industry of the town and there are still remnants of the original forest standing in some of the back districts. There are two post-offices in the town, Olmsteadville and Minerva. There is no direct railroad connection with other sections of the country; but the construction of the Adirondack railroad to North creek, in the northern part of Warren county, gives the inhabitants good transportation facilities.

Settlement began in this town in 1804 and was confined for many years chiefly to the southeastern part along the line of the old road extending from Chester to St. Lawrence county. Ebenezer West, with his sons, Nathan, Ebenezer and John, came in in 1804; they located near the present Minerva post-office at Morse's Corners. But little further is known of the family. William Hill came in about the same time and located on the site of Olmsteadville; he was offered a bonus of either two or four hundred acres of land if he would build a saw-mill and grist-mill. This arrangement was carried out and the first grist-mill built on the Minerva creek, on the side of the bridge opposite the present mill. Mr. Hill had a son Ira who settled at the same place, and another named William, whose throat was cut by an accident with an axe. Thomas Leonard came in probably soon after those already named and located about half a mile from the site of Olmsteadville on the farm now occupied by Thomas Wilson. His large family of sons, among whom were Jonathan, Isaac, David and Thomas, lived in the town, but are now all deceased. Richard Miller settled about this time near the Morse Corners. He had a son Thomas, who removed to Alleghany county, and a daughter who became the wife of William Evans. Abner Talman located in the town before 1810; he was a carpenter, but removed away before 1830. James Cary settled early on the North river, near the Chester line, whither he removed from near the Morse's, where he lived a short time. Philo Hawley settled on the road leading from Minerva to "Hoffman's," on the place now occupied by John Dougherty. He had several sons who were farmers. Elijah Barnes came to the town of North Hudson (then in Schroon) from New Hampshire in 1802. Six years later he removed to South Schroon. The venerable Thomas S. Barnes now living near Olmsteadville, is a son of Elijah Barnes, and is among the oldest residents of the county. He has had much to do with the growth of Minerva, as will appear. Edward Talbot settled in the town about the year 1811, near the site of Olmsteadville. He was a farmer and, like many other early settlers, kept a tavern in early years. The mills at Olmsteadville, after passing through the hands of Mr. White, were bought by Mr. Talbot. He subsequently sold them to T. S. Barnes who rebuilt them about 1840, in their present form. Charles and Edward Talbot, now living in the town, are sons of Edward, and there are many other descendants living in the vicinity. The latter kept about the first store also

and was a prominent man in the community. Absalom P. and Asa Morse, brothers, settled in the town at what is commonly known as the Morse Corners, about 1812. The former became a very prominent man; was a successful farmer, a surveyor and for many years acted as land agent here. O. P. Morse, now a resident of the town, is a son of A. P. Morse. Among others who came into town at an early day was a family named Jones who located in the west part. The sons were named Charles, Elijah, Levi, Daniel and James, all of whom lived in that section. William Champney located in the southern part and raised a family all of whom are dead. Jonathan Russell settled early on the site of Olmsteadville; he had sons, who are dead.

These pioneers in the town found a rugged wilderness in which to establish their homes; but the work was begun with energy, and the heavy forests soon succumbed to the ringing axes and the soil that in many places failed to respond luxuriantly to the early farmer's labors, was cultivated where possible to raise the necessary grains and vegetables for the current wants of the community. In such districts the lumber business offered almost the only source of immediate income and hence nearly everybody engaged in it to the extent of their circumstances and surroundings. Saw-mills were built wherever water power was found and the roads were soon covered with teams laden with lumber for distant markets. The lumber interest of this town, outside of what was done for home accommodation, did not begin extensively until about 1840-45, when Thomas S. Barnes cut the first lot of logs for running down to the river, for which purpose he built a stone dam on the creek. This lot comprised six hundred logs, and from that time to the present, every season has seen thousands of valuable logs sent down the streams to the great mills below. The forests of this town were not largely composed of pine; but hemlock and spruce predominated. Of course this method of lumbering is not the one most conducive to the wealth of the town or those engaged in it; the tendency being rather to sweep the territory of its timber in the shortest possible time, without receiving the income that would be realized if the logs were manufactured into lumber where they were cut. The consequence has been the decay of mills and so rapid a consumption of timber that the lumber interest in all its branches is fast declining and must soon give way entirely to agriculture and other occupations.

The iron industry has received some attention in this town and a little ore was taken out some years ago and transported to North creek; but the character of the ore, the distance inland, depression in values, etc., have prevented the profitable development of the industry.

The Minerva Iron Company was a powerful organization formed just before 1870, and began operations for the establishment of a first-class forge with eight fires, about two and a half miles from Olmsteadville. Considerable money was expended, but owing to declining prices for iron, and the other obstacles mentioned, the enterprise was abandoned.



The large quantity of hemlock timber growing in the town led to the establishment at Olmsteadville about the year 1840 of a large tannery by Sanford and Levi Olmstead, from whom the hamlet takes its name. The building was about three hundred feet long and for a number of years a very heavy business was done in the manufacture of leather. The tannery was subsequently transferred to the Finn Brothers and by them to Frazier, Major & Co., of New York. It was burned in 1867.

With the clearing up of the lands incident to the extensive cutting of timber for saw logs has greatly extended the possibilities of agriculture in the town; and already farm owners have exhibited a commendable spirit of progress in the improvement of their methods of farming, their farm buildings and increased acreage cultivated. To this avocation the inhabitants must undoubtedly look for a large share of future advancement; while the wealth of the community will be considerably augmented from year to year, by the annual concourse of pleasure-seekers and sportsmen, who either halt within the town or pass through it in quest of recreation and renewed health.

With the outbreak of the civil war this town was prompt in upholding the government, promptly filling its quotas under the various calls of the president for troops, and contributing in every way to the Union cause. Further details on this subject will be found in the chapter devoted to military matters.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

The town of Minerva has little to boast of in respect to municipal history. There is but one business center that can possibly claim the title of village, which is Olmsteadville. The post-office was established here some forty years ago or more. Charlotte A. Dornburgh has been in charge of the office since 1880, succeeding Robert Dornburgh. He was preceded by E. M. Barnes.

The mercantile business of the village embraces the store of W. H. Sullivan. On this site there has been a store kept many years, John Bradley being one of the early merchants here. The store building was rebuilt and greatly enlarged in 1871 by Henry Bradley. He was succeeded after a few years by Andrew Johnston, who was there several years. He sold out to Bradley & Sullivan, and Mr. Sullivan purchased his partner's interest after one year. McGuire & Mulhern were in mercantile trade here many years ago. They were succeeded by John Mulhern alone, and he sold to E. Butler, who continued trade seven years, and was succeeded May 1st, 1885, by Powers & Shaw (Thomas Powers and Anson B. Shaw). Andrew Johnston, before mentioned, keeps a general store where he bought out Thomas McGuire in 1881. He has been in trade in the place since 1876. A hardware store and tin and sheet iron works were opened in October, 1884, by L. D. Pereau; the firm now carrying it on is Pereau & Warren. The blacksmithing of the place is done by M. Talbot, who has followed the trade here for twenty-four years.

Matthew Clifford has been in wagon-making here for twenty years. The Alpine Hotel in Olmsteadville was built about the year 1855, by Henry Bradley, who kept it until 1865, when Patrick Sullivan, the present landlord, took it and has successfully catered to the public since. Dr. Aldrich is the only physician now practicing here; Dr. J. C. Wall died in 1885. The grist-mill and saw-mill here, which have been described, are now owned by Ed. Lavery.

There are two other post-offices in the town. Minerva is located a little more than two miles from Olmsteadville, towards the center of the town. There is no business transacted here except a small store connected with the post-office. David Jones is postmaster. He was preceded by O. P. Morse and his father for about thirty years, the office then being located at the Morse Corners. Considerable trade was formerly carried on at the latter point. William and Richard Evans were early merchants there and were followed by Elmer Dunlap. Wilber Bissell keeps the Dunlap House here. The other post-office is Boreas River, in the northeastern part. Mrs. Nelson Labier is postmistress. There is no settlement of any consequence here.

*Churches.* — Mr. T. S. Barnes built the Methodist Church at Olmsteadville about the year 1848. For many years previous to that date the pioneer Methodist preachers who worked in the cause of religion all through this region, and who have been mentioned in the history of Westport, Schroon and other towns, preached in this town in school-houses and private houses. Services have been held in this church, but not with regularity. Rev. Mr. Jenkins now serves the people in connection with those at Pottersville and North Chester in Warren county. The Baptist Church near the Minerva post-office was erected about the same time that the Methodist was built. Services have been held since, some of the time regularly, but generally once in two weeks. The society is now served by Rev. Mr. Hill, who also preaches in the church at "The Gore." The society is weak in numbers. The old Catholic Church was built about the year 1850, and the present handsome edifice about ten years since. There are about one hundred families in the church, of which Father J. B. Le Grand is in charge. He succeeded Father E. Blanchard and he Father Pellitier.

The first town meeting in this town was held on the first of April, 1817, at which the following officers were elected: Supervisor, Absalom P. Morse; town clerk, John Shaw, jr.; assessors, Nathan West, William Hill and John Shaw; overseer of the poor, Richard Miller and Alfred White; commissioners of highways, James Cary, Alfred White and Samuel Baker; constable and collector, Elijah Jones; commissioners of schools, James Cary, Alfred White and Samuel Bacon; inspectors of schools, Absalom P. Morse, William Hill and Samuel Baker; fence viewers, Richard Miller, William Hill and Samuel Baker; pound keeper, Jonathan Leonard; overseer of highways, "first beat," Nathan West; "second beat," Solomon Williams; "third beat," A. P. Morse.



Reference to the early records informs us that at a special meeting held in 1817, \$8.90 was raised to pay for the care of the poor at the time of the division of the town. Much of the work of the town officers for several years after the town was organized was devoted to laying out and improving roads; this is the case in all new towns. In 1818 the following were elected justices: A. P. Morse, John Shaw and Ithamar West. The first year's town accounts amounted to \$28.27. In 1821 it was voted that \$10 be paid for killing a wolf; \$5 for a bear and \$2 for a fox.

Following is a list of the supervisors of the town from its formation to the present time, with the years of their service: 1818-19, Absalom P. Morse; 1820-21, Ithamar West; 1822-23, A. P. Morse; 1824, Harlow Baker; 1825, A. P. Morse; 1826, Harlow Baker; 1827-28, A. P. Morse; 1829, Elias E. D. Wood; 1830-31, Eleazer E. Palmer; 1832, Edward Talbot; 1833, E. E. Palmer; 1834-35, Edward Talbot; 1836-37, David Gates; 1838-39, Edward Talbot; 1840, Ithamar West; 1841, A. P. Morse; 1842, Wm. Evans; 1843 to 1847 inclusive, Edward Talbot; 1848, James F. Doyne; 1849, Warren Hill; 1850, Anson West; 1851, Edward Talbot; 1852 to 1854 inclusive, J. R. Boughton; 1855, Thomas Miller; 1856, ———; 1857, Homer A. Fenn; 1858, Alanson West; 1859-60, Wm. Long; 1861-62, Charles McIntyre; 1863-64, Thomas McGuire; 1865 to 1872 inclusive, Henry Bradley; 1873-74, Thomas Powers; 1875-76, John Dougherty; 1877-78, Henry Bradley; 1879, Wesley Barnes; 1880, Henry Bradley; 1881-82, Wesley Barnes; 1883-84, Edward Butler, jr.; 1885, Thomas Powers.

The present town officers are: Supervisor, Thomas Powers; town clerk, John Mulhern; collector, Edward M. Talbot; assessor, Wm. Kellogg; commissioner of highways, Robert Gilliland; justice of the peace, David Wilson; overseer of the poor, John Ryan; auditors, Matthew Clifford, Robert Wilson, John Dougherty; inspectors of election, Charles McGinn, James McGowen, John Mea; commissioner of excise, John C. Wall; constables, Edward Ryan, jr., J. H. Mitchell, Peter Lindsay, Ed. M. Talbot; game constables, Frederick Loveland; sealer of weights and measures Peter Lindsay.

## CHAPTER XL.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF WILMINGTON.

THE town of Wilmington was taken off from Jay, March 27th, 1821, and was first named "Dansville." On the 22d of March, 1822, its name was changed to Wilmington. St. Armand was formed from it in 1844. It lies between St. Armand on the west and Jay on the east, on the northern border

of the county. The west branch of the Ausable river, whose head waters are found in the Indian Pass, between Mount Wallface and McIntyre, and a few feet from the source of the Hudson, flows in a northeasterly direction, nearly through the center of this town and forms the drainage of an extensive valley stretching with an irregular surface between two parallel ranges of the Ausable Mountains, which in the south rise to an elevation of 2,500 or 3,000 feet, the western range culminating in the isolated and majestic Mount Whiteface. This peak attains a height of 4,870 feet above tide and derives its name from a landslide which has laid bare the rocks upon its southeastern slope, giving it a whitish gray appearance. From the summit of Whiteface can be had one of the finest views in Northern New York, owing not more to its great height (which is exceeded by several mountains farther south) than to its singular isolation and the beauties of the Ausable valley stretching north from its base. On the eastern side, impending directly over the Ausable, rises a perpendicular cliff of solid rock to an elevation of 2,000 feet and opposite to it another mountain rises with scarcely less terrible grandeur, compressing the river into a narrow pass, but a few feet in width, through which the water tumbles and plunges with a confused and incessant roar, in one place leaping down a perpendicular precipice of one hundred feet. This is Wilmington notch. Another place worthy of note is Copperas pond, so named because its waters are strongly impregnated with sulphate of iron. The decomposition of iron pyrites has left also copious deposits of copperas among the rocks in the vicinity.

Thus the topographical aspect of Wilmington is seen to be rough, elevated, and mountainous, with long slopes descending to the Ausable and its tributaries and presenting a varied and picturesque scenery. The soil is a sandy and gravelly loam, and where it can be cultivated without danger from the frequent floods and overflows, occasioned by the numerous declivities which diversify the face of the town, is very fertile and productive. Beds of iron ore are numerous but are only slightly worked. Some time between 1815 and 1820 the Hon. Reuben Sanford, whose name will appear again, created an extensive iron manufacturing establishment on the site of the village of Wilmington, on the west branch of the Ausable. He suffered great losses through the violence of the elements and the fluctuations of business, and was obliged at last to transfer the property to others. It has since gone through a number of changes. In 1868 the site was occupied by a grist-mill and starch factory, a saw-mill with three gates and forty saws, and a forge owned by Weston & Nye, having two fires, but adapted to four, which in that year made about two hundred tons of iron. The ore was drawn from Palmer Hill. Wilmington and North Elba comprise about the only district of extent or value in the county which is occupied by the primitive forest of hemlock, spruce, and pine. Owing to the almost insurmountable barriers interposed by the mountains which environ this district, it is impracticable to export manufactured lumber



from this region. Fifteen years ago it was estimated that this tract would yield a million of saw logs. In early times the tillage of the town was devoted almost wholly to the production of rye which was used to supply the distilleries. These works were far more numerous in Wilmington than in any other part of the county. During the war of 1812 the manufacture of whisky was a lucrative and therefore extensive occupation, and the revenue of the inhabitants of Wilmington not only, but of all the towns accessible to the genius of commerce, was greatly increased. The most prominent manufacturer of whisky in the county was unquestionably Reuben Sanford, of Wilmington. He was one of the earliest settlers here, having come with his wife not later than 1803. He did not establish a residence on the site of Wilmington village, however, until about 1812. Among the other early settlers were Cyrus Wilson, Isaac Peck, Allen Peck, Reuben and Daniel Hamblin, Daniel Ray, John Blanchard, Z. Gray, and Nathaniel Warner.

Reuben Sanford, in addition to his other projects, was the first innkeeper in the town, Elias Wilson kept the first store, and Leonard Owen built the first mill. Esther Kellogg was the first school teacher. When Amos Avery, now living in the village of Wilmington, came here (1822) the region now embraced within the boundaries of the township was not yet reclaimed from the empire of nature. There was then only one frame house in the village of Wilmington, now the White House, formerly a hotel, where Mr. Weston lives. Reuben Sanford had a forge and saw-mill and potash factory here, all of which he had probably started soon after his arrival in 1812. There was a blacksmith shop here, in which Mr. Avery earned his living. He and a companion used at first to sleep in this old shop, and on winter mornings would frequently find their pillows and bed clothes covered with snow which had sifted through the crevices in the walls. Mr. Avery relates the manner in which he came into the country as being primitive in the extreme. He came from Burlington on horseback, using stirrups made of a rope tied in a circle and thrown over the back of the beast he was riding. About two miles south of the village were a number of Indian wigwams. Reuben Sanford had practically built the whole village since 1812. Besides the enterprises already mentioned which he was engaged in, he had a store and tavern adjoining the White House inhabited by Mr. Weston. He had two distilleries and Richard Owen one. Before 1825 Hiram Angepine started a sort of tavern in the building now occupied by Ira Storrs. He erected a sign (the first in town) in the form of an eagle, which is yet kept in the place as a testimonial of early enterprise. Angepine kept this old inn eight or ten years. In 1822 the school-house stood just below the Angepine Hotel. There was no church here, but religious meetings used to be held in the school-house and were made up of four stated attendants, two men and two women; Reuben Patridge and wife formed usually half the congregation. The first church edifice erected in the town was the Methodist Church

in Wilmington village, which Reuben Sanford built in 1833 at his own expense and largely by his own labor. About the same time he built the store now used by W. F. & S. H. Weston. Sanford was the mightiest pioneer in the town, and one of the most prominent men, indeed, in Northern New York. He represented his district in the Assembly from 1814 to 1817, was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1821, and was a member of the State Senate for the four years following 1827. He died at Wilmington in 1855.

Wilmington and Jay went hand in hand into the war of the Rebellion, furnishing men when men were most needed and contributing money whenever money could be spared. The most thoroughly and permanently patriotic men are those who can feel and meditate upon the blessings of a good government without being aware from personal experience of anything that could be construed or tortured into a semblance of oppression. The rural districts are composed almost wholly of this class. The hot-beds of communism and socialism are in the larger cities; the idle, vagrant, worthless, and therefore discontented, malicious and seditious element of a country amalgamate and organize amidst the hum and bustle which screen them from observation, and permit their machinations to be prosecuted without let or hindrance. Consequently the best soldiers in time of war, as well as the best citizens in time of peace, hail from the more thinly populated districts of the land. This was exemplified by Wilmington and Jay and all the towns of Essex during the last war.

The first postmaster at Wilmington was Reuben Sanford. He officiated in 1822, and had then been in office for years. His successor was Elisha Adams. Walter Childs followed Adams and was himself succeeded by George C. White, who held the appointment until 1865. Then John Forbes, the present postmaster, was placed in charge of the office and has remained in the position down to the present.

When White officiated the post-office was in the same building now occupied by Forbes. Then until 1876 it was in the building now used as a hotel by Ira Storrs. Since 1876 it has been in the present building.

The Methodist Church mentioned above was the only one in the town until 1861, when Nathaniel Wardwell, a Wesleyan clergyman, built the Wesleyan Church.

The present business interests of the town and of the village of Wilmington are, except the agricultural interests, identical. The old forge and mills and stores have been mentioned, and it remains but to notice briefly those which are now running. The old forge of Reuben Sanford is succeeded by the present four-fired forge of W. F. & S. H. Weston, which was built in 1874. They have also a forge in Keene which has been described. They also built a saw-mill in 1872 which is now doing a thriving business. In connection with their iron manufacturing they conduct a general store both in Keene and Wilmington.



Ira Storrs, the proprietor of the only store in Wilmington besides that of the Messrs. Weston, started his mercantile business in 1873. In 1877 he fitted up the same building for a hotel which he still keeps. In 1882 L. M. Bliss enlarged a private house and opened the hotel now called the Bliss House.

Following is a list of the supervisors of the town from its formation to the present time with the years of service of each: -- Thomas McLeod, 1821-22; Jared Pond, 1823 to 1826 inclusive; Charles Melbourne, 1827-28; Andrew Hickock, 1829-30; Jared Pond, 1831; Thomas McLeod, 1832; Andrew Hickock, 1833; Reuben Sanford, 1834; Benjamin H. Jaquis, 1835; Reuben Sanford, 1836; Nathan B. Markham, 1837-38; Andrew Hickock, 1839; Harvey Carter, 1840 to 1843 inclusive; John Melbourne, 1844-45; John Forbes, 1846-47; Elisha A. Adams, 1848 to 1851 inclusive; Horace Beach, 1852; John Forbes, 1853; Willard Bell, 1854; Daniel D. Kilbourn, 1855; Artemas Beach, 1856-57; Amos Hardy, 1858 to 1862 inclusive; A. Hickock, 1863; Henry C. Avery, 1864-65; Amos Hardy, 1866; Sanford Avery, 1867 to 1869 inclusive; Ralza C. Lawrence, 1870 to 1872 inclusive; Charles Thayer, 1873-74; David B. Hayes, 1875-76; Warren Weston, 1877-78; Ralza C. Lawrence, 1879-80; John W. Nye, 1881-82; Elijah Weston, 1882-84; Henry Huntington, 1885.

---

## CHAPTER XLI.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NEWCOMB.

THE town of Newcomb was not formed until March 15th, 1828, at which date it was taken from Minerva and Moriah. It lies near the center of the western border of the county and is bounded north by Franklin county and the town of North Elba; east by Keene and North Hudson; south by Minerva and North Hudson, and west by Hamilton county. The surface of the town is elevated, apart from the great altitude of the mountains, ranging from one thousand five hundred to one thousand eight hundred feet, and presents a broken, rugged and forbidding aspect; but its slopes and elevated valleys comprise small tracts of good soil and capable of very successful cultivation. The Adirondack range of mountains extends through the center of the town and occupies at least one-half of its surface. The principal peaks are Mounts Goodwin, Moore, Santanoni and Henderson; other lesser peaks bearing distinctive names are Mounts Catlin, Moose, Baldwin, Goodenow, Panther and others. Wallface, McIntyre and Marcy, the stateliest peaks in the Adirondacks, are near the northeastern part of the town. Like all this region the town is studded with beautiful lakes and ponds, and many small streams of

clear spring water course among the mountains. Lake Sanford is the largest body of water and lies near the center; it is about four miles long. A little farther north is Lake Henderson, which is somewhat smaller. Through these lakes pass the waters of the upper Hudson. Other bodies of water are the Preston ponds, Newcomb or Delia lake, Rich lake, Perch, Trout, Otter, Latham and other small ponds, Lake Harris, Lake Colden, and Catlin lake and Chain lakes which extend across the west line from Hamilton county. The principal stream is the North or Hudson river, which rises in the town of North Elba, enters this town in the northeast part, flows southward through Lakes Henderson and Sanford, receives the waters of the Opalescent a little south of the last-named lake, and continues in a general southwestern course, leaving the town near the southwest corner.

The surface of this town was originally covered with a heavy forest, some of which still remains, and the principal occupation of the inhabitants for many years has been the cutting of this timber and running the logs down the streams or sawing them into lumber. There are immense deposits of iron ore in the town, of excellent quality, the efforts to work which we shall describe.

The extremely mountainous character of the town and its remoteness from traveled routes operated to delay permanent settlement until a comparatively recent date, though isolated farms were taken up as early as 1816. In that year Joseph Chandler came in and was followed two years later by James Chandler, Collins Hewitt, and William Butler. The first settlements were made on or near the shores of Newcomb lake and Lake Harris, along the old road from Warren county to Long lake. Joseph Chandler had several sons and James was his brother; the sons were named Alonzo, Daniel, John and James. They cleared up a tract and engaged in farming in the locality occupied in recent years by the Chase family. Collins Hewitt acted as land agent for some time and subsequently removed to Olmsteadville. William Butler settled at the foot of the lake. Aunt Polly Bissell, as she is familiarly called, who still resides there, is a daughter of Mr. Butler.

Abner Belden was another early settler in the town and came in not long after those mentioned, locating in the western part of the town. His widow still lives there and they had sons, Abner and Kimball, who now live in town. David Pierce settled in that vicinity, but removed from the town long ago. Elisha Bissell was one of the early settlers on Rich lake and was the husband of Aunt Polly Bissell. He came from Vermont about 1824. Their sons were named Daniel, Warren, Charles and Erastus. The family located near the head of the lake and a number of their descendants are now living in the town and are prominent citizens. Daniel the eldest of the sons, married Polly Butler, who has since become widely known as "Aunt Polly" and for many years successfully kept the hotel known as "Aunt Polly's Inn." The result of their union was three sons and one daughter, all of whom are dead. Daniel Bissell



was the first collector and constable of the town and later held several town offices, among them that of supervisor for many years. His widow still survives. Warren, the second son of Elisha Bissell, was a resident of the town during the larger portion of his life, having formerly come to this place from Vermont. He reared a large family of children and died in the year 1883, when eighty-one years old. He was by profession a shoemaker and in politics was a Republican. Charles, the fourth son, still resides near Lake Harris, on a farm where he has been pleasantly located for many years. Has a family of seven children, five sons and two daughters—all living save one son. Is also a Republican. George M. Bissell, son of Warren Bissell, has been a long resident of the town. Has a family of four sons and three daughters. Is quite extensively known as a lumberman. Is a Republican. Charles A. Bissell, son of Charles Bissell, was also a resident here, and for several years was supervisor of the town.

A prominent resident of the town has kindly supplied us with the following additional details of the settlers and their descendants :

Daniel C. Chase has been a prominent resident of the town for about fifty years. Was born in New Hampshire in 1816. He located on a farm purchased of James Chandler near the head of Rich lake, where he has ever since lived and reared a family of seven sons and one daughter ; only four of the children are now living. He was inspector of common schools in 1839 and 1843, and a justice of the peace nearly all the time since 1843. Was collector and town clerk and also supervisor in the years 1845, 1846, 1847, 1848, 1852, 1856, 1858, 1859, 1860, 1867, 1868 and 1872, and has been a justice of sessions of the county. Was always a Republican and a trusty adviser. Washington Chase, son of Daniel C. Chase, was born in Newcomb in 1845, and has no doubt been one of the most enterprising citizens of the place. He now resides near the central part of the town. Has held office since he was twenty-one years of age—that of supervisor in the years 1869, 1880 and 1881, and is the present incumbent. Has been postmaster for over eight years, and was formerly postmaster at Tahawus, in this town. He has held the office of justice of the peace since 1869, and has been several times elected town clerk, assessor, etc., and also justice of the sessions for four terms, and coroner of the county. During the past nine years has been connected with the mercantile and printing business, and was always a Republican. Jefferson Chase is the fourth son of Daniel C. Chase ; was born in this town ; has been prominently known as civil engineer and surveyor. He has always been a resident of this town. During the year 1882 he erected a circular saw-mill at the outlet of Rich lake ; was formerly a school teacher and is a Republican in politics. Caleb J. Chase, a brother of Daniel C. Chase, resides near the east end of Rich lake, and is widely known as a first-class boat builder. He has lived here about thirty years. His family consists of four sons and three daughters, all

of whom are residents of the town. Samuel T. Catlin has been a resident of the town for about thirty years; was born in this county. He has always been a farmer and resides near the west end of Rich lake. Was supervisor of the town two years. Benjamin Sibley, formerly of Warren county, who has resided here about fifteen years, has had a large family of children. Has been justice of the peace for the past ten years and has also held other town offices. James O. and Daniel H. Braley, old residents of the town, were formerly from Warren county and were both soldiers in the last war; are both farmers and live near the central part of the town. Harrison and Warren Williams are also old residents of the town and both soldiers in the Rebellion; were formerly Vermonters. The former is proprietor of the "Newcomb House." Zenas Parker is an old Vermonter, and is now the oldest man in the town. He has been a resident here about forty years and reared a large family of children who are all residents of the town; is a Democrat in politics and the present town clerk.

So slow was settlement made in Newcomb that as late as the year 1830 there were only eight families permanently located there. John Dornburgh came into the town in 1838 and located at the hamlet of Newcomb; eight years later he moved to Long lake. Henry Dornburgh<sup>1</sup> located here in 1844.

Settlement has since progressed slowly, there being less than three hundred population according to the census of 1880; but in many respects the town has materially advanced in late years. The small farming community is more prosperous; a better class of buildings have been erected, and with the pursuit of the lumber business and the benefits following the advent every summer to the magnificent sporting grounds and the sublime scenery of this region, the inhabitants are enjoying a good degree of prosperity.

The most important feature of the history of this town is that relating to the operations of the Adirondack Iron Company. There are several versions of the incident leading to the organization of this company and some discrepancy in the date. Mr. Dornburgh, who has published the pamphlet alluded to, states that the remarkable deposit of ore was discovered by the Indians in 1822; but it may have been known to them earlier. Intelligence of the existence of the vein was conveyed to Archibald McIntyre, probably in 1825 or 1826; this gentleman was then running a forge in the town of Keene, where the ore was not of the best quality.<sup>2</sup> According to Mr. Dornburgh, Mr. McIntyre

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Dornburgh has recently published a small pamphlet giving an account of the Adirondack Iron Company's operations in Newcomb, and other interesting facts. He is a resident of Olmsteadville.

<sup>2</sup> Following is the version of the incident as given in Mr. Watson's *History of Essex County*: "An Indian approached the late David Henderson, Esq., of Jersey City, in the year 1826, whilst standing near the Elba Iron Works, and taking from beneath his blanket a piece of iron ore, he presented it to Mr. H. with the inquiry expressed in his imperfect English, "You want to see 'um ore, me fine plenty—all same." When asked where it came from, he pointed towards the south-west and explained, "Me hunt beaver all 'lone, and fine 'um, where water run over iron dam." The Indian proved to be a brave of the St. Francis tribe, honest, quiet, and intelligent, who spent the summer in hunting in the wilds



was induced to accompany the Indian discoverer to the site of the ore vein. He found the deposit fully as valuable as it had been represented and steps were taken by him which resulted in the purchase of two townships, 46 and 47, of the Totten and Crossfield purchase. Mr. Watson gives David Henderson and Mr. McMartin the credit of making this purchase. Mr. Dornburgh continues:

“The ore at Keene not being valuable, Mr. McIntyre abandoned that enterprise and associating with him Judge McMartin, of Broadalbin, commenced operations in 1826 at this new field by erecting a forge and building suitable for separating ore, and also erected a log building to accommodate their men. This ore was worked for several years when Judge McMartin died, and after that a new firm was organized, Mr. McIntyre associating with him David Henderson, of Jersey City, and Archibald Robinson, of Philadelphia.<sup>1</sup> The new firm went to work with great zeal, built fires and hammers, and made iron after the primitive method, using a forge and charcoal for smelting the ore. They labored with the forge a few years and finding the ore very good and their forge too slow a process, they concluded to build a furnace. David Henderson being appointed principal manager of the firm in 1838, they built a quarter furnace. In digging for the foundation they came to a rich ore bed and the old ruins are yet standing upon the ore bed. This furnace proved a success. Previous to this, however, in 1837, they built a puddling furnace and did a large amount of labor in all needful branches for making bar iron. At and a little before this time they made roads to Schroon river by way of the branch, their iron being hauled thirty-six to forty miles to Lake Champlain. Mr. Henderson made large experiments with the iron to convert it into steel, his experiments proving so successful that they concluded to make preparations for the manufacture of steel. Mr. Henderson then made a trip to England expressly for the purpose of consulting and making arrangements with some person who understood steel making, and going direct to the great

of the Adirondacks. An exploring party consisting of Mr. Henderson, Messrs. Duncan and Malcolm Martin, John McD. McIntyre, and Dyer Thompson, was promptly arranged, who, submitting themselves to the guidance of the Indian, plunged into the pathless forest. The first night they made their bivouac beneath the giant walls of the Indian pass. The next day they reached the site of the present works, and there they saw the strange spectacle described by the brave; the actual flow of a river over an iron dam, created by a ledge of ore, which formed a barrier across the stream. The reconnaissance revealed to their astonished view various and immense deposits of ore, equal almost to the demand of the world for ages. A glance disclosed the combination in that secluded spot of all the ingredients, and every facility for the most extensive manufacture of iron, in all its departments. In close proximity existed an illimitable supply of ore, boundless forests of hard wood and an abundant water power. The remote position of the locality formed the chief impediment to the scheme, which was adopted at once by the explorers. Having accomplished a hasty but satisfactory examination of the deposit, the party with no delay that might attract attention, the same night and in intense darkness and a driving storm, retraced their path through the forest, after having carefully concealed the evidences of their work.

<sup>1</sup>Mr. Watson associates with these men, Dyer Thompson, which is probably correct, as he had access to Mr. Henderson's diary.

Sheffield Steel and Cutlery works made his wants known to one of the principal foremen of the Sheffield company, named Pixley. Mr. Henderson informed him that he desired to manufacture steel in America, having a good iron for the purpose located in a dense wilderness and surrounded with an abundance of wood, and that his company wanted to establish a steel and cutlery works for the manufacture of large and small articles. He also stated to Mr. Pixley that they wanted to make steel with charcoal, but this being a new theory to Mr. Pixley he replied that it would be new to him, but he would make experiments and report to him. Mr. Henderson left Sheffield, feeling much elated over his success in enlisting Mr. Pixley in the scheme, and immediately returned to America to await the result of Mr. Pixley's experiments. After several months had expired Mr. Pixley wrote to Mr. Henderson that he had made the experiments with charcoal and found them successful. After this favorable report the Adirondack company concluded to make all the needed arrangements for establishing an extensive cutlery works in the Adirondacks. They built a costly dam across the Hudson river, ten miles below their iron works, which they named Tahawus, after one of the great mountains. This was to be called Tahawus Steel and Cutlery works. In the mean time they built a large boarding-house while working upon the dam. They built a saw-mill and dock for landing their iron from the upper works. The dam raised the water in Lake Sandford four feet, covering a level tract of land for a space of five miles before reaching the lake. By this dam the company were enabled to use boats. They built boats, floated iron to their lower dock from the upper dock and wood and coal from the lower dock, to be used in their blast and puddling furnaces. Mr. Pixley came to America, and he and Mr. Henderson made a trip to the Adirondack iron works. Mr. Pixley gave plans for all necessary buildings to carry on the operations successfully, and after the accomplishment of this much of the work returned to England and three or four months later he wrote to Mr. Henderson saying that he had devoted his time to making further experiments with charcoal, and had arrived at the conclusion that he could not make steel with charcoal, and therefore abandoned the project. This caused a stoppage of further operations at Tahawus and notwithstanding a dam, boarding-house, dock and large store house were built or in process of construction, the whole steel project came to a termination. The Adirondack Iron Company, however, still continued building and enlarging their old works and erected various buildings until they had a small village, which is now known as the 'Deserted Village.' In the year 1843 they required more water in dry weather to propel their machinery, and as there were two branches of the Hudson the company determined to build a dam and divert the east branch into the west branch. They continued, however, with a short supply of water until September, 1845, when their engineer, Daniel Taylor, with whom they had discussed the practicability of the idea, advised them to put the scheme



into execution. A party was therefore formed consisting of Messrs. Henderson and Taylor, Anthony Snyder, John Cheney and a ten-year-old son of Mr. Henderson, to search for a course to lead the water to their works, and as they expected to camp out over night they carried knapsacks. The distance between the two streams upon their route was six miles, and about half way of this distance there was a small pond called the duck hole. When the little party came in full view of it they discovered a number of ducks in it, whereupon Mr. Henderson remarked to John Cheney: 'You take my pistol and kill some of those ducks,' and he handed his pistol to Cheney. The balance of the party had gone to the head of the pond to start a fire preparatory for dinner. John Cheney had advanced but a few yards upon the ducks when they discovered his approach and flew out of range, and he then stepped up to Mr. Henderson and returned the pistol which Mr. Henderson replaced in its sheath. Mr. Cheney knowing there was an abundance of trout in the pond, concluded not to follow up the ducks but catch some of the gamey fish. He had just dropped the hook in the water when he heard the report of a pistol, and looking in that direction he saw the party had arrived at the head of the pond and that Mr. Henderson was in a stooping posture and Messrs. Taylor and Snyder, who had been in the vicinity gathering wood for the dinner fire, at his side. He knew Mr. Henderson was shot by the movement he made, and ran to him as fast as possible. Upon arriving at Mr. Henderson's side the fallen man turned his eyes to him and said: 'John, you must have left the pistol cocked.' Mr. Cheney could make no reply, not knowing but that might have been the case. Mr. Henderson looked around and said: 'This is a horrible place for a man to die,' and then calling his son to him he gently said, 'Archie, be a good boy and give my love to your mother.' This was all he said, although his lips kept moving for a few minutes as if in prayer, and at the end of fifteen minutes from the time of being shot he expired. The theory of the cause of the accident is as follows: Mr. Henderson, it is supposed, took off his knapsack and laid it on a rock and then unbuckled his belt at the same time taking hold of the muzzle of the pistol, and in laying it down on the rock he must have struck the rock with the hammer which caused the discharge of the weapon, and as the muzzle was pointing towards him the ball entered his abdomen just below the navel, causing the fatal wound. The party set to work to make a couch for the body, breaking balsam boughs and laying them in a pile, and on this bed the lifeless remains were placed. This done, Mr. Snyder returned to the village for help and lights, knowing by the time he returned it would be dark. Upon his arrival in the village Mr. Snyder was very cautious in stating his errand, and picked his men judiciously, ordering them to prepare themselves with lanterns, axes and tools to construct a bier to carry the remains to the village. He also set men to work cutting out trees and bushes to make a way for the corpse to be conveyed to the village, there being but a narrow trail

then, and the trail made by Mr. Snyder is now used by tourists on their way to Mt. Marcy. The news of the accident soon spread, and it was soon known by the company's principal manager, Mr. Andrew Porteous, now of Luzerne, Warren county, N. Y. Mrs. Henderson, Maggie, little Archie and a nephew named David Henderson, were in the village at the time, and Mrs. Henderson, accompanied by her daughter Maggie and Mrs. Porteous, made her way into the street to ascertain the cause of the commotion. Seeing Michael Laverty, the woman caught hold of him and insisted upon his telling them the cause of the unusual proceeding, but the man evaded a direct answer, whereupon they lay hands upon him and told him they would not let him go until he told them. He then admitted that one of the men was hurt in the woods, at which Maggie burst into tears, and exclaimed, 'Pa is shot, pa is shot.' Early on the following morning the remains arrived at the village and men were detailed to construct a rude coffin; these men were Spencer Edgerton, of Moriah, and the writer, [Mr. Dornburgh]. A dispatch was sent to Russell Root, at Schroon river, requesting him to meet the party with Mr. Henderson's remains at Wise's shanty on the cartage road, which was then in the course of construction. The remains were taken to Tahawus and thence were carried on men's shoulders to the road, occupying the entire day. At the shanty Mr. Root was found awaiting their arrival and conducted the party to Lake Champlain. Mr. Henderson's death occurred on the 3d of September, 1845, and a monument marks the scene of the tragic incident which is inscribed as follows: 'Erected by filial affection to the memory of our dear father, David Henderson, who accidentally lost his life on this spot, by the premature discharge of a pistol, 3d September, 1845.'

Previous to Mr. Henderson's death and after the failure on the part of Mr. Pixley to come back from England, Mr. Henderson, according to the statement of Mr. Dornburgh, met Joseph Dixon, who has become widely known through his extensive operations in working graphite, and informed him of the disappointment arising from Mr. Pixley's failure to return. Mr. Dixon told Mr. Henderson that he could make steel, if he had the means. He was told that he could have all the money, all the men and all necessary materials for the work. "Mr. Dixon resolved to accept the offer. He commenced in the outskirts of Jersey City and built a rude cementing furnace and this, being an experiment, was upon a small scale. He put his iron bars in the furnace leaving a place to extract a bar as the steel process progressed. This was done by building the furnace as high as the length of the bars required and within the furnace was a compartment so constructed as to allow the heat to surround it. This compartment was filled with charcoal and good common-bar iron and below was a fire whose intense heat ignited the charcoal which burned in a perpendicular trunk with ore. This converted the bar into blister steel, the charcoal carbonizing the iron. As this was successful the next step further was to build a melting furnace for the steel, but Mr. Dixon was somewhat puzzled to



devise the correct plan, but finally he arranged it and commenced to build. He built his fire pit, got the blast already, broke up the blister-steel and put it into the crucibles, kindled his fires, melted the steel, made his moulds and poured in the metal, all of which was successful, except pouring the steel in flat moulds, for when he put the iron under the hammer he found flaws and long seams in his cast steel. This he thought he could obviate by pouring the steel in the moulds endwise which would cause the air to ascend in the moulds as fast as they filled. The process was a revelation to the American people. Mr. Dixon having succeeded in casting steel into coarse bars set about erecting suitable hammers for working the steel into small bars. Mr. Henderson about the time went to England and proceeding to Sheffield, he procured a tilter. How he ever induced him to come to America Mr. Henderson never told, but it was probably the large sum of money given the man that had the effect. With this Englishman's advice they were able to build a tilting hammer and other necessary apparatus and the steel manufactured with their improvements was of a good quality. This was the first cast steel plant in America. After the Sheffield man was introduced in America it was an easy matter to get more experienced men and the works were extensively enlarged."

The death of Mr. Henderson began the downfall of the operations of the Adirondack Iron Company. He was a man of much ability and his loss could not well be supplied. After Mr. Porteous ceased as manager, he was succeeded by Alexander Ralph. A few years before the works were abandoned the property of the company was assigned to a new organization; but they failed to meet their obligations and the old company again assumed control, but only to abandon the entire enterprise a few years later. For a score of years the "Deserted Village" as it is termed, has given forth no evidence of traffic or manufacture and scarcely a sign of occupation.<sup>1</sup>

The first post-office established in the town was located near the North river bridge, about the year 1867, and William E. Thayer was appointed postmaster, who held the office up to the time of his death, about one year later.

---

<sup>1</sup> I will speak of the bank located in the heart of the Adirondacks. When in full blast the outlay of the company was so great they concluded to establish a bank, which being done they named it the McIntyre bank, with bills redeemable at Albany. They built a small banking-house and stocked it with the bills. The bank created a large circulation of money, as there were in their employment in those years three or four hundred men. This number of men made a large circulation of the bills in every direction, from Albany to Canada, from the Adirondacks to all the cities. The bank was kept up but a few years and called in all of its bills and redeemed them. The Essex county assessors assessed the bank so high that Mr. McIntyre concluded it was cheaper to do their banking at Albany, and avoid the enormous assessment imposed upon them. — DORNBURGH'S pamphlet.

The "Deserted Village" is now the head center of the Adirondack Sporting Club, a company of wealthy men chiefly from New York city, and during certain portions of the summer season presents a lively appearance; but the greater part of the year its only inhabitants are the family of Mr. Myron Buttles, the agent of the club, who takes care of the company property and propagates fish to stock their lakes and ponds.

The office was subsequently held by Daniel H. Bissell, Rufus Lincoln, James O. Braley, Phebe A. Tannahill, Washington Chase. At the time of the appointment of Rufus Lincoln as postmaster, the office was removed to near its present location, and is now kept in a dry goods and grocery store, owned by Washington Chase, near the center of the town.

There are two post-offices in Newcomb at the present time, the one bearing the name of the town, and just described, and Tahawus, at the site of the "Lower Works." At Tahawus David C. Hunter is postmaster. Four good schools are supported, and there is a Methodist Church organization which was formed in 1843. Meetings were held, generally once in two weeks, in the school-house at Newcomb, until a few years ago, when a neat church was erected near the school-house, at a cost of about \$3,500. This church is the farthest one inland from Lake Champlain, except the one at Long Lake, Hamilton county. The chief business now carried on is lumbering. This has been quite extensive for over twenty-five years. Thousands of logs are cut and run down the Hudson river to market every season. There are at present two circular saw-mills, one church, four schools, two dry goods and grocery stores, two post-offices, one printing office, two hotels and several good boarding houses, with good roads and numerous fine lakes, ponds, and rivers. In all it is now a delightful resort where many people from the cities usually sojourn for a while during the heated season.

Following are the first officers of the town of Newcomb: — Daniel T. Newcomb, supervisor; Joseph Chandler, jr., town clerk; William Butler, Elisha Bissell, Cromwell Catlin, assessors; Daniel Bissell, collector; Elisha Bissell, Cromwell Catlin, overseers of the poor; William Butler, Cromwell Catlin, Abner Beldin, commissioners of highways; James Chandler, Cromwell Catlin, Benjamin Ackerman, commissioners of common schools; William Butler, jr., Abner Beldin, Joseph Chandler, inspectors of common schools; Daniel Bissell, constable; William Butler, pound-keeper; Elisha Bissell, Abner Beldin, Joseph Chandler, fence viewers.

Following is a list of supervisors of Newcomb from its formation to the present time with the years of their service: 1828, Daniel T. Newcomb; 1829–30, Joseph Chandler; 1831, Daniel Bissell; 1832, Joseph Chandler; 1833 to 1844 inclusive, Daniel Bissell; 1845 to 1848 inclusive, Daniel C. Chase; 1849, Daniel Bissell; 1850–51, John Wright; 1852, Daniel C. Chase; 1853, Thomas G. Shaw; 1854, William Helms; 1855, H. N. Haskall; 1856, Daniel C. Chase; 1857, H. N. Haskall; 1858 to 1860 inclusive, Daniel C. Chase; 1861–62, Abel Gates; 1863–64, Charles B. Lincoln; 1865–66, Samuel T. Catlin; 1867–68, Daniel C. Chase; 1869, ———; 1870–71, Daniel H. Bissell; 1872, Daniel C. Chase; 1873 to 1879 inclusive, Charles A. Bissell; 1880 to 1882 inclusive, Washington Chase; 1883–84, William M. Alden; 1885, Washington Chase.



The present town officers are : Washington Chase, supervisor ; Zenas Parker, town clerk ; Kimball Beldin, overseer of the poor ; Edison J. Dimick, collector ; S. T. Catlin, Benjamin Sibley, C. E. Farr, assessors : James A. Hall, commissioner of highways ; Benjamin Sibley, C. A. Bissell, Washington Chase, justices of the peace ; Almond O. Farr, game constable ; Frank W. Pervier, Daniel H. Braley, town auditors ; Franklin Chase, Josiah Houghton, inspectors of election ; Edison J. Dimick, C. E. Farr, F. W. Pervier, constables ; Kimball Beldin, Elbert Parker, S. T. Catlin, commissioners of excise.

---

## CHAPTER XLII.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF ST. ARMAND.

THIS town was set off from Wilmington in the 23d day of April, 1844. It lies in the northwestern corner of the county, and its surface, though broken and mountainous, is not distinguished by such bold and rugged peaks as mark the townships lying south and east of it. The mountainous ridges are parallel with all the others in this part of the State, extending in a northeasterly and southwesterly direction. The principal drainage is formed by the Saranac river which flows in a northeasterly direction through the town. Its chief tributary is Moose creek which flows through Moose pond, a body of water covering an area of about two hundred acres. The soil is composed largely of gravel and sand, but is frequently diversified by alternations of loam. As the mountains are not very high or precipitous, and the valleys neither steep nor narrow, tracts of choice farming land are quite numerous.

Like many other towns in the county, its principal industry at one time was lumbering, but most of the timber having been cut by 1880, the inhabitants have turned their attention to the more stable and enduring business of farming.

French's *Gazetteer* states that the name of this town is derived from the old French name of the Saranac river ; but prominent citizens of Bloomingdale, notably James H. Pierce, dispute this. Mr. Pierce is authority for the statement that the town was named by Charles S. Toof, one of the leading men here at the time of the formation of the town, St. Armand, in Canada, being the place of his former residence. Mr. Toof's widow, who is still living in Bloomingdale, corroborates this statement. Mr. Toof came to the town about the year 1842 and lived here until his death in January, 1874. The lumber business, before mentioned, first attained importance here about 1850, and continued to be the leading industry of the town until as late as 1880. Since

that time, the timber having been largely cut, the inhabitants have turned their energies more to farming as stated. The logs cut were mostly floated down the river to Plattsburg. The prominent lumbermen were almost exclusively residents of that place, among whom C. F. Norton, O. A. Tefft and the Baker Brothers were most conspicuous. This town was not permanently settled until as late as 1829, when Elias and Milton Goodspeed, and Daniel Crouch moved into the eastern part. Other early settlers were Thomas and Antrim Peck, George Lowrie, William Stranahan and Aaron Brimhall. Nathan S. C. Hayes moved to near what is now the village of Bloomingdale in 1837, and still resides in the old homestead, a little north of the village. According to his recollections there were in 1837 only seven or eight families living within a radius of five miles from his home. Daniel Crouch and the Goodspeed's before named, were still living on their original settlement; the others he does not remember. He recalls the additional names of Moses Emmons and Clarke Gilmour. Mr. Hayes states that when he came here the industries of the town were either not begun or existed in a rude and incipient state.

The first school-house was built of logs about 1840, Mr. Hayes aiding in its construction. It stood on the site of the house now occupied by Philemia Flanders. The first teacher was Harriet Hayes. The first religious society was started in the shape of a Methodist Church. Rev. Samuel Smith, a circuit preacher, was the first pastor. In 1837 a forge was running near Bloomingdale where the grist-mill now stands. It was built some years previously by Uriah Sumner and in 1837 was under the management of Jeremiah Hayes, father of Nathan. Clark Gilmour succeeded Hayes in the management of the forge and conducted the business for years. Near the forge in 1837 a saw-mill was run by Nathan Hayes; his father had it before him. Sumner built this mill about the time that he erected the forge. In the eastern part of the present town nothing was done but farming, while in the vicinity of the village of Bloomingdale almost the only farming was done by Nathan Hayes, who raised considerable quantities of oats, wheat, rye and beans. It has been stated that Bloomingdale and its immediate vicinity (which really comprises the town of St. Armand), furnished a greater number of soldiers in the war of the Rebellion than any other locality of the same number of inhabitants in the county. Many volunteers entered the 77th Regiment at its organization. Among these was Martin Lennon, who joined as a private, was promoted to a captaincy and was killed at the battle of Cedar Creek, Va. Others joined the 96th Regiment, among whom was Henry J. Pierce, who entered as a private and was promoted to the majorship. In the re-organization of the 11th Regiment, Company C, commanded by Captain James H. Pierce, an ante-bellum and present resident of Bloomingdale, was mostly recruited from this town, the rest of the company being formed from recruits of Wilmington and Jay. Captain Pierce was taken prisoner at the battle of Drury's Bluff, Va., on the 16th of



May, 1864, was taken first to Libby Prison, thence to Macon, thence to Savannah, thence to Charleston, whence he was paroled for exchange on the 16th day of December, 1864, just seven months from the date of his capture.

The town of St. Armand contains territory which forms the site of an experiment the success of which will be a compliment at once to the philanthropy and business capacity of the projectors. It is in reality a Saranac lake enterprise, and is called the Sanitarium. Its design is to furnish separate resorts for those in moderate circumstances who need careful treatment and the benefit of the incomparably salubrious climate for pulmonary diseases. The hotel with its expenses and vicissitudes and the inconvenient improvised camp, are too often poor places for invalids of this description. From an excellent article in the *New York Tribune* we take the following description of the ground, buildings and design of this enterprise: "The site of the sanitarium is on a fine plateau on the shoulder of a hill which overhangs the valley of the Saranac river a mile and a half below the village; the grounds, comprising eight acres, were purchased at a cost of \$400 and presented by the Saranac guides—an act of liberality on the part of a worthy set of men which has been highly appreciated. The buildings of the sanitarium are worthy of the site. They are marvels of cheapness and simplicity, but they are comfortable, convenient and attractive. The main structure is a quaint, irregular red cottage, with unexpected corners, delightfully original, and ample windows, a deep piazza and a range of offices and store-rooms at the rear. A few rods from the main building are two charming little cottages harmonizing with it in general style, but differing both from it and from each other in architectural details. The main building is planned to accommodate eight patients, and each of the cottages two. All will use the common dining-room and sitting-room. No one will be received except on the recommendation of the consulting physician, Dr. A. L. Loomis, of New York, whose services, as well as those of the attending physician, Dr. Trudeau, are offered gratuitously. The institution starts free of debt, and with a surplus toward the expense of the first year. The funds have been raised principally among the visitors of the Adirondacks; but little or no solicitation has been necessary, and several of the contributions have been very handsome. A fancy fair, given at one of the camps near Paul Smith's last summer, produced for the sanitarium in a single afternoon no less than \$1,000. The total amount subscribed, up to this time, is about \$10,000, and the buildings and outfit have cost about \$7,000. As the money received from the patients is not expected to cover the running expenses, Dr. Trudeau must trust to the charity of the public for the final success of his interesting experiment, as well as for the enlargement of its scope. It is the intention to make the cottages the characteristic feature of the plan, so that the establishment will really consist of a group of pretty little detached houses disposed about the main building."

Following is a list of supervisors of this town from its formation to the present time, with their respective years of service : Elias Goodspeed, 1844-45 ; David Skiff, 1846 to 1849 inclusive ; Milote Baker, 1850 ; Samuel Smith, 1851-52 ; William Galusha, 1853-54 ; James H. Pierce, 1855 to 1861 inclusive ; Ensign Miller, 1862-63 ; J. A. Titus, 1864 to 1872 inclusive ; N. A. Arnold, 1873-74 ; Sewell F. Bunker, 1875-76 ; Eugene R. Woodruff, 1877 ; Robert Smith, 1878-79 ; James H. Pierce, 1880 to 1882 inclusive ; R. S. Smith, 1883 ; James H. Pierce, 1884 ; Charles C. Town, 1885.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

Bloomington was first given its present name in about 1852, when Nathan Hayes, James H. Pierce and Charles S. Toof were appointed a committee to name the village. Mr. Pierce came here in May of that year. He relates that up to the time he came, only one man lived on the site of what is now the village proper, viz., Elbridge Titus, who died here about 1881. Mr. Pierce brought about twenty men with him and deliberately proceeded to the erection of a village. They built the structure now used as the post-office and called the " Titus Store," two dwelling houses, the grist-mill still running, and in the eastern part of the village a blacksmith shop and a " Yankee " gang saw-mill. One of the old dwelling houses was destroyed by fire in 1882, being then occupied by Charles Stickney ; the other one burned in 1876, then occupied by Henry Hall. In 1853 John Campbell built a hotel across from where the St. Armand House now stands, on the site of the residence of Charles D. Hicock. Campbell kept this hotel until 1881, when it was torn down to make room for the dwelling house. The St. Armand House was begun in March, 1872, and completed in 1873, by James Skiff and James H. Pierce. Skiff commenced it and was bought out by Pierce who pushed the building to completion. The first proprietor was Daniel S. Huff, followed by Edwin R. Derby, and he by successive followers until 1877 when Mr. Pierce himself assumed the personal supervision of the hotel and has kept it ever since. C. J. Stickney has kept hotel here since October, 1884. He was preceded by L. J. Dudley, who has been there since 1872. M. L. Baldwin has just opened his new hotel in the eastern part of the village. The building is especially designed to accommodate summer tourists.

The other business of the village consists of the harness shop of C. A. Stickney, who bought out A. R. Lewis in 1883, the hardware store of Richard H. McIntyre, the general stores of James Ling, Isaac Chesley, and James H. Pierce. James A. Skiff years ago kept a general store in the building now occupied by James Ling. The store in the post-office building was kept before the war by James H. Pierce. After Pierce, J. A. Titus was proprietor till about 1881, when J. H. Titus succeeded him and remained until the spring of 1884. N. J. Arnold succeeded Titus but assigned in the fall of 1884 to James



A. Stockwell and the goods were taken to Franklin's Falls in Clinton county to be sold. Since July, 1884, Isaac Chesley has conducted a general store here, he being successor to Chesley & Stickney (C. J.). Mr. Chesley first started alone here in 1877; Chesley & Stickney were burned out in October, 1883, and a new building was at once erected. The Gillespie Brothers keep a drug store here; they also have two stores in Ausable Forks. There are no attorneys in the town, James H. Pierce attending to the legal necessities of the inhabitants to their satisfaction. There are two physicians, Drs. I. Rice and S. S. Wallian, the former of whom has been here since 1872 or 1873, and the latter for two or three years. The present postmaster here is James H. Pierce who was duly qualified for the position in December, 1884. He was preceded for number of years by L. G. Dudley. The post-office was established here about 1852; when the village was named Byron Leavitt was the first postmaster.

The Union school of Bloomingdale was formed in the fall of 1881, and the building at once put up. The first principal was H. L. Buxton. The present board of education consists of Dr. I. Rice, Dr. S. S. Wallian, and Levi Noble. The attendance ever since the establishment of the union system has been about 120. Considerable dissatisfaction with the new system prevails because it seems to be needlessly expensive and not so thorough a system as the old one.

There are three churches in the village, the Methodist, Catholic, and Episcopal. The former has been organized for many years, but held meetings in the old school-house until Christmas, 1874, when the present edifice was completed and first occupied. The present pastor is the Rev. S. N. Cornell. Catholic services were first held here about 1875 when the first building was erected. It was torn down and the present one commenced in 1882, and finished in 1884. The pastor is Rev. Michael Charbonneau, of Black Brook. The Episcopal Church was organized in the year 1882, and the present edifice first occupied in that year. Rev. Daniel M. Bates, of Saranac Lake, is the rector.

*Masonic.* — The Whiteface Mountain Lodge was organized in September, 1884. The first officers were, R. H. McIntyre, W. M.; W. S. Hough, S. W.; C. J. Stickney, J. W.; Dr. S. S. Wallian, secretary; C. H. Stickney, treasurer; Isaac Rice, S. D.; E. L. Patterson, J. D.; the membership is about thirty. The charter of this lodge is dated June 3d, 1885, previous to which date it worked under dispensation. (See chapter XXVI.)

## CHAPTER XLIII.

## HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NORTH HUDSON.

THIS town was formed from Moriah on the 12th of April, 1848. It lies in the interior of the county, a little south of the center and is bounded on the north by Keene and Elizabethtown; on the east by Crown Point and Moriah; on the south by Schroon, and on the west by Newcomb and Minerva. It is extremely mountainous and rugged in its surface, and only about one-eighth is adapted to cultivation; there are, however, a few excellent farms in the town; the soil is a light, sandy loam. The Schroon mountains traverse the east border of the town, and the Boquet mountains occupy the central and western portions. The principal peaks are Dix Peak and Nipple Top in the extreme northern part, two of the more noted mountains of this region and both over 4,000 feet in height. Other peaks are Moose, Camel's Hump, Barr, McComb's and Mount Allen. There are numerous small lakes and ponds in the town, the principal of which are Elk lake (Mud pond), Boreas pond, Clear pond, Deadwater pond, Johnson's pond, and Wolf pond; a small portion of the Upper Ausable pond enters the northern part.

The two branches of the Schroon river find their rise in this town, the west branch flowing south from Elk lake partly across the central portion and then turning eastward joins the east branch in the northeastern part; the east branch rises in the eastern and northeastern parts where it is fed by numberless clear streams and ponds and flows southwesterly until it joins the west branch, which course the river then continues across the town line.

The Moriah iron district extends into the eastern part of the town, and several attempts have been made to successfully develop the industry within the town, but with quite unsatisfactory results.

The town was not settled at so early date as many others of the county owing to its interior position and rugged character. The first settlements of a permanent character were made about 1800, and among the pioneers was Benjamin Pond, the first permanent settler; he was followed within the next few years by Randall Farr, who kept the first tavern, William Pond, Samuel Norton, William Everett, Benjamin Cummings, Russell Walker, William Mallory, Timothy Chellis, Hezekiah Keep, and Titus Walker. The first death was that of a Mrs. Holloway. Janet Post taught the first school.

Most of these settlers located in the eastern and southeastern parts and along the branches of the Schroon river, where they found an unbroken wilderness to welcome them. Benjamin Pond, the first permanent settler in the town, came in about the year 1800 from Poultney, Vt., and his brother William came in not far from the same year. They located a little west of



what is now known as the Deadwater district, on the old State road, where Charles Walker now lives. Benjamin Pond was a man of note in the community; was judge, member of the State Legislature and member of Congress at the time the War of 1812 was declared. He died October 6th, 1814. Samuel Norton came into the town soon after the Ponds and settled near them. William Everest settled on the place now occupied by Dennis Arthur, a little north of the Burhans tannery site, where the road to Moriah begins. Benjamin Cummings located about a mile easterly of the Burhans tannery. Russell Walker came in early, but afterwards went to Bridport, Vt., and died there. William Mallory was one of the early immigrants, but went west. Timothy Chellis settled two miles from the Burhans tannery site, on the road to Moriah Center. His daughter became the wife of Amos Drake, of Schroon Lake. Titus Walker was one of the early pioneers and located north of the tannery site, on the place now owned by Jacob Deyo. He was grandfather of Charles Walker, now living in the town. All of the foregoing came in before 1810. Elihu Phelps came to the town about 1811-12 and settled north of the hamlet of North Hudson, where Charles Wood now lives. He had a large family of children. On his farm was one of the first grist-mills in this vicinity and a saw-mill. Previous to the erection of this mill, the inhabitants hereabouts were compelled to carry their grain to Chestertown, in Warren county. The mills subsequently came into possession of Nelson Little, who rebuilt the saw-mill. Nahum Wyman afterwards owned them, and they were carried away by a flood about twenty-five years ago. Russell Root came into the town with his father, Selah Root, in about 1812, and located on the farm which he in after years made famous as the site of his popular hostelry. This farm and the settlement which has grown up about the hotel is now known as Schroon River. Here is located a post-office, store, shops, etc. Mr. Root built a log-house, which served its time as a resort for the public. Its location on the old State road, over which passed the stages from Albany through to Canada, and in the midst of a region famous for its attractions to sportsmen, gave it a large patronage and wide celebrity. In the year 1858 Mr. Root erected a commodious framed structure, which has since been enlarged and improved to accommodate forty guests. He died in 1873, and the house and property, embracing store, blacksmith-shop, farm-house, etc., was left in possession of his son, A. F. Root, and the estate was purchased by the present proprietor, Lyman Hall, who continues the popularity of the house. John Wyman located about a mile south of Root's, where Dr. Robinson lives, and raised a large family. A mile still farther south a Mr. Johnson located at an early day and kept a tavern. He died there, and Robert D. Lindsay, who married his daughter, put up a new house and kept it successfully for a number of years, until it was burned. A little farther southward, John Potter, son of the first John, who came into the town early and kept a tavern near the

tannery site, also kept a tavern. It finally passed into the possession of his son, E. B. Potter, who put up a good house, kept it for some years, and died there. Next south of the Potter place, Nahum Wyman settled, lived and died. All these early residents lived along the State road. William Miller was an early settler in the town, and Daniel Weatherhead became well known in early years by his popular tavern about three miles above the Burhans tannery site on the State road. This was widely known, and is yet, as the Weatherhead Place. Saw-mills were located there.

The numerous taverns mentioned are accounted for largely by the fact that this was a great stage route, but more especially from the vast amount of travel of one kind and another arising from the lumber business. An old resident says it was not a strange occurrence to see forty teams, with wagons heavily loaded with the finest white pine lumber, stop at Weatherhead's inn to dinner. And there were the numerous men engaged in other branches of the vast business—choppers, river-drivers, sawyers, etc., who looked more or less to the country inns for their accommodation. Whisky was then sold everywhere and almost universally drank, which formed a source of considerable income to the taverns. From about the year 1830 down to comparatively recent times the town has presented a scene of great activity.

The principal industry in the past has been lumbering, while the tanning of leather was at one time a prominent occupation. Most of the acreage of the town was formerly covered by valuable pine and hemlock timber. There was extensive water-power on the many small streams and saw-mills sprang into existence in every direction, while hundreds of thousands of logs were cut and driven down the streams to larger markets. This industry depended, of course, upon the supply of timber, and at this time almost all the pine has disappeared, and the labors of the few lumbermen are devoted to cutting the spruce and hemlock which is still standing in the back districts. The saw-mills have disappeared with the timber, there being now but two or three in the town. The large supply of bark, and the ease with which it could be secured, led to the establishment of tanneries in the town. E. B. Potter established a tannery at the hamlet now known as North Hudson, and in the year 1859 it was purchased by Edgar W. Burhans, who enlarged and successfully conducted it till 1879, when the business was abandoned. Mr. Burhans also kept a store in connection with the tannery. Another tannery was built by Sawyer & Mead about three miles west of the hamlet of North Hudson, on the branch of the Schroon, which was purchased in 1880 and is now operated by Emerson & Mead. But with the rapid diminution of the bark supply, with the advance in cost of transporting hides to the interior and leather to market, this industry is declining. In early days, and particularly during the period when the lumber interest was active and stage travel was much heavier than now, the country taverns, to which we have alluded, were numer-



ous on all public highways and received generous support. The first one of these inns was kept by Randall Farr. It was about four miles north of the site of Root's, on the State road. A tavern was kept near the tannery site. Robert D. Lindsay, already mentioned, kept his tavern two miles below the tannery, and a little farther down was the public house kept by E. B. Potter. Indeed, these country inns were thickly scattered throughout this region in early days. Nearly all of them have disappeared; those that are now remaining, or have been established in recent years, depending largely upon the annual influx of sportsmen for support. There is excellent sporting in and around the town, and thousands pass through it, or halt within its borders, every summer to enjoy the fishing and hunting and recuperate in the bracing atmosphere of the woods. Besides Lyman Hall's house, Henry P. Jones keeps a public house at Elk lake, and Alonzo Palmer has a house on the Branch four miles from Schroon river.

The attempts at working iron in this town comprise the forge built on the Branch about a mile from the hamlet of North Hudson by Jacob Parmerter, and afterwards owned by Phelps, Walker and Parmerter, and it passed into possession of Mr. Parmerter, who operated it four or five years. It was transferred to John Roth in 1861 and later to Powell Smith. He kept it two years and sold out to Clark & True. The forge was burned in 1880. It had three fires and ore was brought from Paradox lake and the Moriah beds. During the late war, while the price of iron was very high, this forge, as well as others in this vicinity, were operated at a profit, but the great decline in prices, combined with the cost of hauling ore seven or eight miles, has made it impossible to manufacture iron in the town with success. There was another forge near the hamlet of North Hudson, and one at Deadwater, built by Tabor C. Imus. Ore for these forges was brought in from the Moriah district. James S. Whallon became the owner of these forges, but all these industries were abandoned many years ago for the reasons above stated.

The church history of North Hudson is very meagre. Meetings have, of course, been held at irregular intervals from an early date, and previous to about 1870 in the school-houses. Finally, with the help of the towns adjoining on the east, a small church was built by the Methodists near the hamlet of North Hudson. A school is kept in a part of the building and services are held, but not with regularity.

#### MUNICIPAL HISTORY.

The town of North Hudson can boast of very little that can properly be classed under the title of municipal history. There is no center of settlement in the town entitled to the name of village, and there are at the present time but two post-offices. One of these is at Lyman Hall's (Root's) place and was established here forty years ago or more. Russell Root was postmaster and

occupied the position until his death. The property here being left in control of his son, A. F. Root, he took the post-office and kept it until the sale of the estate to Mr. Hall. The name of the post-office is Schroon River. The settlement at this point comprises a few houses, blacksmith shop, the hotel, a small grist-mill. All of these buildings have come into the possession of Lyman Hall.

The other post-office of the town is called North Hudson and is situated on the State road about four miles north of Schroon River, at the site of the Burhans tannery. The post-office and tannery were established nearly contemporaneously. Frank Burhans was postmaster here for about twelve years and was succeeded by B. W. Ingalls for four years, when in March, 1883, the present incumbent, William Sturtevant, was given the office. There is no mercantile or other business at this point at the present time.

There was formerly a post-office at the Deadwater locality called "Deadwater Iron Works," but this was abandoned with the decline of the miners' industries at that point.

Following is a list of the supervisors of the town of North Hudson from the date of its formation to the present time: 1848, Harry Farr; 1849, Tabor C. Imus; 1850 to 1852 inclusive, Jacob Parmerter; 1853, Harry Farr; 1854, Cephas Olcott; 1855, Jacob Parmerter; 1856, Benajah Pond; 1857 and 1858, Cephas Olcott; 1859 and 1860, Benajah Pond; 1861, Roswell Fenton; 1862 to 1864 inclusive, Orrin Phelps; 1865, Jacob Parmerter; 1866 to 1874 inclusive, Edgar W. Burhans; 1875 and 1876, Adelbert F. Root; 1877 to 1881 inclusive, Frank W. Burhans; 1882 to 1885 inclusive, Charles Talbot, jr.

---

## CHAPTER XLIV.

### HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NORTH ELBA.

NORTH ELBA was separated from Keene on the 13th of December, 1849. It is situated on the western border of the county, north of the center, and is bounded as follows: on the north by St. Armand and a portion of Wilmington; on the east by Wilmington and Keene; on the south by Keene and Newcomb, and on the west by a small portion of Newcomb and by Franklin county. The altitude of the town is greater than any other cultivated lands in the State. Some of the waters of the Hudson, Raquette and Saranac rivers, and the west branch of the Ausable and Chub rivers have their source in this town. The Ausable and Chub rivers drain the eastern and central parts of the town; the tributaries of the Saranac and Raquette rivers form the drainage of the western part, and the southern part is drained principally by branch-



es of the Hudson. The surface through the interior and west part of the town is moderately rolling, but in the south, east and northeast the country assumes the elevated and broken altitude of mountains. Bordering the rivers in many places may be found an alluvial formation of rich black soil. Receding from the streams, varieties of soil are discernible, in some parts a black loam prevailing for miles in extent, while in other portions of territory (to the northwest) are large tracts of poor sandy soil from which the place derived its euphonious name of the "Plains of Abraham," or "Abraham's Plains." The timber varies with the diversity of the soil. On the plain prevails the tamarac; on the river bottoms, elm, ash, maple, pine, spruce and fir, are most abundant, and on the higher table-land are found the birch, beech, maple, iron wood, spruce and fir. In some localities are considerable tracts of valuable pine, while in others may be found large quantities of a superior quality of spruce. Unlike the other towns of Essex county, North Elba's future promises to be greater than her past, by virtue of her almost inexhaustible resources in lumber.

The southern part of the town is occupied by a portion of the Adirondack range. The noted Adirondack or Indian Pass, situated on the boundary line between this town and Newcomb is a deep gorge between Mts. McIntyre and Wallace; a portion of the latter forming the western border of the pass, is a vertical precipice a mile in length and towering to an altitude of 800 to 1,200 feet from the base. The bottom of the gorge is 2,800 feet above tide, and is strewn with gigantic fragments of rocks probably hurled from the beetling heights above by some mighty convulsion of nature. Watson thus vividly portrays this wonderful scene: "So exact and wonderful is the stupendous masonry of this bulwark that it seems, could human nerve allow the effort, a stone dropped from the summit, might reach the base without striking an impediment. The pencil cannot portray, nor language describe, the full grandeur and sublimity of this spectacle. The deep seclusion, the wild solitude of the place, awe and impress. Many miles from human habitation, nature here reigns in her primitive silence and repose. The eagles form their eyries amid these inaccessible cliffs, and seem like some humble bird as they hover over the deep abyss." Bennet's, Connery and Round ponds are in the immediate vicinity of Lake Placid, in the north. This beautiful sheet of water is one of the most important heads of the Ausable river. It is one of the most beautiful spots in the Adirondacks, and is already a favorite resort. Although distant but a little way from Mirror lake, of almost equal notoriety, it is effectually separated from the latter by a ridge of land passing between the two. Mr. S. R. Stoddard, in his estimable little book entitled *The Adirondacks Illustrated*, gives the following description of this lake: "Its admirers—and it has many—call it the 'gem of the Adirondacks,' and it possesses many features peculiar to itself that may possibly entitle it to that distinction. It is in

shape oblong, something over four miles in length and about two broad, measuring through or between the islands, of which there are three, called respectively Hawk, Moose and Buck. Hawk island is small. Moose and Buck are large, beautiful islands in a line from the first toward the southwest, the three dividing the sheet into what are locally known as the east and west lakes, making it resemble a large river sweeping around them rather than a lake with islands."

The fertile plains of North Elba are thus seen to be rich in the variety and magnificence of their scenery, and in their exhaustless resources. They are encircled by a lofty "amphitheatre of mountains" which are filled with ores and are mantled by woods of the heaviest and choicest timber. Mr. Watson, (page 419, *History of Essex County*) refers to "a singular and apparently well authenticated account of the accidental discovery of a vein of silver ore among the Adirondacks and the loss of its trace," pointed out to him by an intelligent resident of North Elba. It was not worked, and has been lost, but there is promise of great wealth to the man with genius and energy enough to reduce the inaccessibility of the iron veins in the town, and to cleanse the ore from its native impurities. Works were established on Chub river as early as 1809 by Archibald McIntyre and Mr. Hudson, of Albany. They consisted of a forge of four to six fires, designated the Elba Iron Works. At first ores were taken from veins in the immediate vicinity, but afterwards from Arnold bed in Clinton county. Notwithstanding the laborious and expensive methods necessarily employed in running the forge, the business was for a number of years eminently prosperous. But the works lacked the reserve power necessary to the stability of enterprises of this nature, and in 1815 they were abandoned. "A decayed dam and fragments of broken wheels and shafts, and similar vestiges, are the only memorials of their former existence."

The early history of the town has been so well and completely written by Mr. T. S. Nash, a former resident thereof, in an article published in one of the county papers, in August, 1881, that we cannot do better than to take the liberty of transcribing the historical portion of the article herein. Following is the transcript:—

The history of this town commenced in the early part of this century. The town of North Elba embraces the south part of township No. 11, and all of township No. 12 of the old military tract. The town is fourteen miles long north and south, and eleven miles east and west, and contains one hundred and fifty-four square miles, or nine thousand eight hundred and fifty-six acres. Township No. 11, and a strip three and one-half miles wide on the north side of township No. 12, was surveyed by Stephen Thoon in 1806. The balance of township No. 12 was surveyed by John Richards in 1813. The description of the lands in those localities are still designated by the number and the names of the surveyors of the different surveys.



The land was owned by the State of New York. The settlement commenced soon after Thorn's survey by a few pioneer hunters. Soon after the settlement iron ore was discovered, and it was thought of a sufficient quantity to pay for working. Archibald McIntyre, of Albany, investigated the matter, and in company with Mr. Hudson and another partner, bought a water-power on Chub river; and put up a forge which was known as the Elba Iron Works. When they commenced working the ore they found it contained sulphur or carbon in quantities so large as to render it worthless. The forge was run, however, and ore was drawn from other points for a time, but it became a losing business, and the enterprise was abandoned. During the time the forge was in operation considerable of a settlement was made, some settlers buying their land, while many others simply went on the land, intending to buy at their convenience. When the settlement seemed to be in a prosperous condition, Peter Smith (father of the late Gerrit Smith), of Peterboro, N. Y., heard of this tract of land, made an examination of it, and returned to Albany and made a purchase of nearly the entire town not previously sold. The settlers sought to purchase their homes, but Mr. Smith told them the time had not come to sell this land, but he would not drive them from their homes, and when he was ready to sell, would give them the first chance of buying. But the settlers were unwilling to continue to improve their land, which might result in benefiting a stranger. Most of the people, therefore, left, and but few remained there for many years. During the dark days of their history schools were given up, religious meetings abandoned, and some of the few were brought up in ignorance, while others were sent abroad to school. At the death of Peter Smith the land fell into the hands of Gerrit Smith, and in 1840 he offered it for sale.

This year the second epoch of immigration began. At the commencement of the year only six families were in what is now North Elba, east of the settlement on the Saranac river. Those settlers were O. J. Bartlett, Alexas Tender, Iddo Osgood, R. Thompson, S. Avery, and Moses Sampson. In that year Thomas Brewster, R. G. Scott, R. Nash, and Alonzo Washbond, and perhaps some others were added to the sparsely settled territory.

The town continued to be settled as fast as could be expected under all circumstances till 1845, when a new episode occurred in its history. Gerrit Smith, who was the owner of nearly all the vacant land in town (which he inherited from his father, Peter Smith) in one of his acts of benevolence granted it to colored people in different parts of the country, in tracts of forty acres each. This act, although in good faith by Mr. Smith, did not prove to fill his expectations.

In 1849 John Brown (afterwards of the Ossawatamie and Harper Ferry notoriety) came into town for the purpose of assisting the colored immigrants, and forming a colony of that race. Several families moved into town, some of

which were assisted by Mr. Brown, but the climate and occupation of farming were both new to them, and, I believe, only two of the many who received this gratuitous gift made a home on the land thus granted. This town then formed a part of Keene, but in 1849 the citizens petitioned the board of supervisors of Essex county to be set off and have a town organization. The board of supervisors took the necessary steps to accomplish the desired action, and on the first Tuesday in March, 1850, the necessary officers were elected, and North Elba was a legally organized town. John Thompson was the first supervisor.

*Schools and Religious Meetings.* — In 1849 a three months school was taught, and schools were annually kept after this date. During that same year a clergyman by the name of Clinton, and an older clergyman called Father Comstock, from Lewis, went to the new settlement; held a series of meetings and formed a Congregational Church. In 1847 a Methodist clergyman, by the name of Bourbon, came from Keene to look after the lost sheep of his flock, and a Methodist Society was formed. These societies continued to prosper and harmony prevailed among them till 1859 when a new chapter was formed in the religious services of the town. A clergyman by the name of Wardner, from Wilmington, a Wesleyan Methodist and a very zealous worker for the colored man, held a series of meetings, delivered lectures, etc., on the slavery question and organized a church of that denomination taking members from both the other churches which left all three societies weak. But religious meetings of some denomination were always held there after 1840.

A few years ago a new enterprise was commenced in town. The cool bracing air of summer, the lakes and mountains, the beauty of the scenery, the speckled trout, and the nimble deer in this section, attracted the attention of the tourist and sportsman, and several hotels have been built to accommodate that class of customers in summer. These houses are well filled and the business is annually increasing. There is perhaps no place in the whole wilderness region of Northern New York so well adapted to please all classes of customers as this town. The tourist, the sportsmen, the student, the geologist, can all find ample food there for their mental as well as their physical appetite. North Elba has had a checkered history, but what has been dark and gloomy in the past is now growing bright and beautiful.

The purpose of this work requires some enlargement upon some of the hints contained in the foregoing article. John Brown's career is so intimately connected with the town that it requires a brief notice. He was born on the 9th day of May, 1800, at Torrington, Conn., and was a lineal descendant from a pilgrim of the *Mayflower*. In his young manhood he engaged in a number of enterprises without any considerable success, and often with disheartening reverses. In 1848 he prosecuted a wool speculation in Europe, and met with disastrous failure. During his visit to the Old World he indulged his



native liking for fine stock by inspecting the choice breeds of the countries he visited, and gained a knowledge which subsequently rendered him a most intelligent stock-raiser in Essex county. At an early period of his life he became imbued with the most vehement and vigorous anti-slavery sentiments, which increased in intensity as he advanced in years, and resulted finally in the tragedy of Harper's Ferry. In 1849 he called upon Gerrit Smith, and proposed to take up a farm in North Elba, and by affording the negro colonists instruction and employment, aid Smith in his beneficent project. Smith accepted the proposal, and immediately conveyed a lot to Brown, who in the same or the following year removed his family and flocks and other worldly possessions from his former home in Massachusetts to the new home. In 1850 the report of the Essex County Agricultural Society refers to a "number of very choice and beautiful Devons from the herds of Mr. John Brown, residing in one of our most remote and secluded towns."

When the Kansas difficulties arose in 1856 he hastened to join his four sons already there in the participation of those stirring scenes. He soon gained a decided ascendancy in the deliberations and acts of the Free State party, and by his desperate resistance to an attack of the border ruffians at Ossawattamie, during which his son Frederick was killed, he gained the sobriquet of "Ossawattamie Brown." He manifested remarkable skill as an organizer of forces, and conducted the battles of the party with astonishing intrepidity. During a partial subsidence of the agitation in Kansas, he and his sons visited a number of the Northern and Eastern States with the real object of inciting the zeal and co-operation of the inhabitants against the whole slavery system, but with the apparent object of visiting their home in North Elba. In the following year he revisited Kansas and at once began the commission of a series of daring and lawless acts which astonished the whole country. He manumitted, *vi et arma*, twelve Missouri slaves, led them through Kansas, Nebraska, Iowa, Illinois and Michigan to the shores of Canada. The governor of Missouri offered a reward of three thousand dollars for his apprehension, and his proclamation was supplemented by a similar publication by the president of the United States offering a reward of two hundred and fifty dollars. By virtue of the influence of his own name, he convoked an assembly of his sympathizers at Chatham, Canada. Its president was a colored preacher, and the design of the association then organized was the forcible liberation of all the slaves in the country, and the establishment within the United States of a provisional government. In April, 1859, he was engaged in the enlistment of associates in Essex county. Harper's Ferry, being in easy communication with Canada and the entire North, was selected as the starting point in the proposed invasion. Brown, under the assumed name of Smith, hired a large unoccupied farm containing three dwelling-houses, and situated near Harper's Ferry, and used it as a rendez-

vous for the self-constituted emancipators. By the circulation of a report that the visitors were about establishing a large wool-growing business, and the presence among them of several women, they eluded suspicion. The rest of the story, the intended attack of the 24th of October, the singular anticipation of the attack by a week, the indubitable design of Brown and his co-adjusters to seize the arsenal at Harper's Ferry, capture a number of prominent citizens, to be held as hostages and ransomed by a supply of provisions or the emancipation of slaves, and escape to the mountain fastnesses where they could maintain themselves until the arrival of their expected support from the North, and the universal insurrection of the negroes, his overwhelming defeat by the federal marines and the forces of militia of Maryland and Virginia after a most prolonged and determined opposition, Brown's arrest and execution (December 2d, 1859), are all matters of common information now.

Just before his departure for Harper's Ferry, John Brown gave orders for the transportation to Westport from Massachusetts of a stone which had stood, it is said, for more than seventy-five years at the grave of his grandfather; and in the event of his death, directions were left to have it erected at his home in North Elba, with the inscriptions hereinafter set forth. The stone at this time bore this inscription: "In memory of Captain John Brown, who died at New York, Sept. ye 3, 1776, in the 42 year of his age." Brown's request was complied with, and the time-worn, weather-stained stone now stands on the old homestead, in North Elba, under the shadow of a great rock, and bearing beneath the foregoing inscription, the following:—

"John Brown, born May 9th, 1800, was executed at Charleston, Va., December 2d, 1859." "Oliver Brown, born March 9th, 1839, was killed at Harper's Ferry, October 17th, 1859." On the reverse side are the following: "In memory of Frederick Brown, son of John Brown and Dianth Brown, born December 21st, 1830, murdered at Ossawatamie, Kansas, August 30th, 1856, for his adherence to the cause of freedom." "Watson Brown, born October 7th, 1835, was wounded at Harper's Ferry and died October 19th, 1859."

The many visitors at the grave have mutilated the stone by breaking off corners for relics, etc., until a few years ago, when it was locked securely under a wooden case, and exhibited to strangers only on special request. A few years ago the farm was advertised to be sold under a mortgage. Miss Kate Field, so well known as a writer and lectress, learning of the fate which overhung the old homestead, hastened to Boston with her accustomed energy, and began at once the solicitation of subscriptions to save the farm from the oblivion which threatened it. Not meeting with the desired success there, she went to New York, where she succeeded in forming a society, with Sinclair Toucey as secretary and treasurer. The farm was purchased and Mr. Law-



rence, of Jay, engaged to manage it. To-day the place is held sacred and visited annually by hundreds of tourists. Kate Field is a native of St. Louis and was educated in Europe and in the East.

Mrs. John Brown, one of her husband's most faithful and zealous companions in his life work, was born in Whitehall, N. Y., April 15th, 1816. She first met Brown in North Elba, and became his wife in 1832. After various removals following upon his death, she died in 1874, at the age of sixty-eight years.

*Hotels.* — One of the first, if not the first of hotel proprietors in this town, was the late Joseph V. Nash. He was born September 7th, 1825, and in 1837 came to North Elba (then Keene). He worked for his father until he was twenty years of age, purchased of him the remainder of his minority, and worked three years for his brother, Timothy Nash, at eleven dollars a month. In October, 1851, he married Harriet C. Brewster, of North Elba, after having purchased a tract of one hundred and sixty acres of land of Gerrit Smith. This land is beautifully located on the shore of Mirror lake, about eighty rods from Lake Placid. Immediately after his marriage he erected a hotel on this tract, which was familiarly known as "Nash's" as long as its proprietor lived. Mr. Nash died May 20th, 1884, of heart disease, and was buried with Masonic honors.

The houses at present open for guests at and about Lake Placid are the Allen House, Henry Allen, proprietor; Lake Placid House, built by B. T. Brewster, now owned by Martin Brewster; Stevens House, built by Joseph V. Nash in 1877, and afterwards sold to J. A. & G. A. Stevens, the present proprietors; Grand View House, H. C. Lyon, proprietor; Mirror Lake House. A. J. Daniels, proprietor; Castle Rustico, W. F. Leggett; West Side, Oliver Abel; and Adirondack Lodge, Henry Van Hoevenberghs. In other parts of the town are the Mountain View House, M. S. Ames, proprietor, situated about four miles southwest from Edmond's pond; Ray Brook House (on Ray brook), in the western part of the town, Duncan Cameron, proprietor. Frank B. Stickney officiates as postmaster at Lake Placid.

M. C. Lyon has kept a hotel on the stage route from Westport to the Saranacs, about two miles and a half south of Lake Placid, since 1847. He has occupied the present building since 1864, and has been postmaster since 1866. His daughter, Mrs. Mary E. Lusk, conducts a store in the same building.

*Milling, etc.* — There is considerable lumbering done in the town, many logs being shipped down the Saranac river to Plattsburg. Eugene Thew runs a shingle mill on the site of the old Freedmen's Home which Gerrit Smith attempted to found. Charles Taylor runs a saw-mill and grist-mill in the east part of the town on the west branch of the Ausable river. G. T. Challis owns and runs a saw-mill and clapboard and lath factory on Chub river. E. N. Ames runs a saw-mill on Ray Brook in the western part of the town. He is a brother of M. S. Ames before named.

In 1879 the Adirondack or North Elba Baptist Church was organized and aided in the construction of the Union edifice on Abraham's Plain. For fifteen years the Baptists had been the most numerous denomination in the town. Encouraged by Revs. Levi Smith and W. C. McAllester, of West Plattsburg, these early members determined to organize. Their original membership was fourteen. The first deacons were Orrin Torrance and Reuben Lawrence, and the first clerk, Clarence Lawrence. The present pastor is Rev. A. C. Lyon, and his predecessor was Rev. D. B. Pope. Rev. Oscar Boutwell the Methodist pastor of Saranac Lake preaches occasionally in the Union Church. With the aid of summer guests the Baptists have erected a handsome chapel at Lake Placid.

Following is a list of the supervisors of this town from its formation to the present time: John Thompson, 1850; Timothy Nash, 1851-52; Daniel Ames, 1853 to 1855 inclusive; Daniel Osgood, 1856; Milo Merrill, 1857; Daniel Ames, 1858-59; Milote Baker, 1860 to 1862 inclusive; Daniel Ames, 1863; T. S. Nash, 1864-65; Daniel Ames, 1866-67; Alexis Hinckley, 1868; Andrew J. Baker, 1869-70; Joseph V. Nash, 1871-72; Moses S. Ames, 1873-74; Judson C. Ware, 1875-76; Myron T. Brewster, 1877; M. S. Ames, 1878-79; Byron R. Brewster, 1880-81; Benjamin T. Brewster, 1882; Henry Allen, 1883-84; George S. Stevens, 1885.

---

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### GENERAL RANSOM NOBLE.

THE subject of this notice was born in New Milford, Litchfield county, Conn., on the 16th day of August, 1778. The pioneer of this family in America was Thomas Noble, who came from the vicinity of Yorkshire, England. He came to this country probably about the year 1650, as it is recorded that he became a citizen of the city of Boston in 1653. His son, John Noble (great-great-grandfather of Ransom Noble), was the first white settler in New Milford, about 1707, where he became one of the leading men of the community. He had a son, David, also a prominent man of his native place. His son Asel was the father of Elisha Noble, who was the father of the subject of this sketch. Elisha married Sally Crane, daughter of the Hon. Elijah Crane, of Litchfield. The Noble family, down to and embracing Elisha, were men of more than ordinary strength of character, acquired wealth, and were honored by their fellow-citizens with various offices and positions of trust. In this connection it becomes necessary to mention Paul Welch, also one of the original proprietors and early settlers at New Milford, whose descendants became ultimately connected with the Noble family. He had a son bearing the same name, who became the father of Peter Welch. The elder Paul appears to have been a man of means, and prominent in the town. Elisha Noble and Paul Welch, 2d, were contemporary and to a considerable extent companions. In the course of time the fathers of both met with misfortune, by which their possessions were greatly reduced, leaving the young men to depend upon their own exertions to make their way in the world.





*[Faint, illegible handwritten text or signature]*







*Ransom Noble*





It was this misfortune that caused the removal of General Noble to Essex, and of Peter Welch (with his father) to Vergennes, Vt. Previous to this, however, both of the young men learned a trade, Mr. Noble that of shoemaking and Mr. Welch that of a carpenter. The latter took for his wife Abigail Crane, sister of Sally Crane, wife of Mr. Noble, thus connecting the two families. In a Bible, which was one of the personal treasures of General Noble, and now in possession of his grandson, H. H. Noble, we find the following record in his own handwriting: "I came to reside in the town of Essex, county of Essex, State of New York, January 3d, 1800." An addition to this entry, probably made at a later date, intimates that he had made a tour of exploration in the previous year (1799). He located on the same premises, in what has since become Essex Village, where he passed all the remainder of his life. He brought with him his shoemaker's bench and tools, and very little else, and applied himself to whatever offered in that line, at the same time making arrangements to start a tannery. Not long after his arrival, he also opened a small store in connection with his shop, and from that early period to the time of his death the mercantile business always formed one feature of his extended affairs. His first dwelling stood near the site of the stone mansion of Belden Noble; this in course of time gave place to a white frame-house. As General Noble's means and opportunities increased, he developed his broad capacity to grasp and successfully conduct large enterprises by the purchase of an immense tract of the most valuable pine lands in what is now the town of Lewis, a step that laid the foundation of a great fortune. He erected saw-mills on the various streams of that part of the county, until at one time he had half a score or more running. He built a wharf and established vast lumber yards at Essex, to accommodate shipments of both lumber and leather, for his tanning business had been made to flourish in common with his other enterprises and became an extensive industry. He also engaged in the manufacture of charcoal iron at Willsborough Falls, where he operated a forge, bringing ore from Moriah in boats. This brief review gives a glance at the magnitude of the business interests built up and successfully operated by General Noble; and into their conduct two of his sons, Belden and Harmon, were installed as soon as they had acquired a sound and practical business education in the schools of Essex, Lansingburg and Plattsburg. The outside management of the various interests was largely entrusted, as the elder member of the family began to feel the increasing weight of years, to Belden Noble, while Harmon assumed direction in the store and office, managing with consummate skill the inside and financial features of the combined business. All these industries were continued in prosperity down to the death of their founder, which occurred at the house of his son Harmon, in Essex, June 5th, 1863.

It will have been seen that General Noble was not in any sense a public man; he had neither the disposition nor the time to indulge in the worry of political life; he sought no office nor station other than the one to which he was so clearly entitled — that of a leading business man of the community. The military title by which he was commonly known was acquired through his holding the office of brigadier-general of militia. He was major and commanded a battalion at the time of the battle of Plattsburg, and was afterwards promoted. He took conspicuous part in the War of 1812, and was stationed for a period at the Canadian frontier. His grandson is still in possession of letters addressed to subordinates, transmitting orders from the general in command and announcing the cessation of hostilities.

General Noble was married on the 10th of October, 1800, to Anna McNeil, daughter of the Hon. Charles McNeil, of Charlotte, Vt.; he lived across the lake from Essex at what was known as McNeil's Ferry. She was born July 28th, 1780, and died in Essex, March 29th, 1831, leaving four children, as hereafter mentioned.

General Noble's name must ever remain conspicuous in the history of Essex county, and particularly the town of Essex, where his life-work was carried on. Any enterprise, any public project that seemed likely to promote the general welfare, found in him a generous and efficient helper. His name appears for a liberal sum upon the original subscription paper for

building the old Congregational church. He also generously aided in the erection of the present Presbyterian church edifice, with which he afterwards united. In short, he was full of vigorous enterprise, loved his native place and would make unselfish sacrifice for its good; in the same spirit his sons were nurtured. While not a man of finished education or exceptional brilliance, his fund of general knowledge was comprehensive and useful, and was underlaid by the soundest common sense and the most unerring judgment of men and affairs. Behind all this was a character noted wherever his name was known for sterling integrity that causes his memory to be revered and loved.

The children of General Ransom Noble were as follows :—

Charles Noble, the eldest, was born December 25th, 1801; married Sarah Jane Ross, daughter of Daniel and Elizabeth (Gilliland) Ross, on the 15th of October, 1832. He engaged in business with his brother in Elizabethtown, N. Y., where his wife died suddenly, November 18th, 1834, after which event he removed to New York city and became one of the firm of Smith & Noble, in the iron commission business. Later in life he went to New Milford, where he died, October 20th, 1867. He was married the second time to Elizabeth Burritt, of New Haven, Conn., by whom he had four children.

Harmon Noble was the next son, of whom a sketch is given in these pages.

Henry Ransom Noble, born December 17th, 1807; was married February 6th, 1837, to Cornelia Gould, daughter of John Gould. He was in business with his brother Charles at Elizabethtown until 1834, after which year he continued alone in the lumber and iron interest, until his death, September 13th, 1863. His widow still survives him. They have had three children; Charles Henry, the oldest, continues his father's business; Mary Elizabeth married Richard Lockhart Hand, son of Judge A. C. Hand, of Elizabethtown.

John Gould Noble, unmarried, is practicing his profession of medicine in New York city. He is a graduate of Union College, of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York, and studied in the university at Braunschweig, Germany.

Belden Noble, the third son of General Ransom Noble, was born January 1st, 1810; married Adeline Ferriss, daughter of Charles Ferriss, of Peru, Clinton county, N. Y. He was associated in his father's business, in connection with his brother Harmon, until about the year 1870. He now resides in Washington, D. C. He has had five children, but two of whom are now living. His son, William Belden, has recently graduated from Harvard, and his daughter, Mary Maud, lives at home.

---

#### HARMON NOBLE.

AMONG the sons of General Ransom Noble, a sketch of whose life precedes this page, mention has been made of Harmon Noble. He was born in the village of Essex, on the 17th of December, 1807. It was one of the first purposes of his father that his sons should enjoy the advantages of a good thorough English and business education, and Harmon Noble, after attending the common schools of his native place, was sent to the excellent institution at Lansingburg, near Troy, to finish his studies. As soon as his education was completed, he was at once associated with his father in the vast operations in which he was engaged, embracing large lumbering interests, the manufacture of iron, tanning, mercantile business, etc., which we have before described. He was given special charge of the store and office in Essex village and the books of the firm, while to his brother Belden was confided the oversight of the out-door operations. Into no better hands than those of Harmon Noble could this feature of the business have been placed; he was born with a natural aptitude for directing and inaugurating affairs of magnitude, qualities probably inherited to some extent from his father. Under his skillful guidance the interests of the firm prospered beyond, perhaps, the expectations of even the proprietors themselves. Very much of this prosperity was due to Harmon Noble. While the indoor and office work was not the most congenial to his tastes, when he had once taken it in hand, his persistent and untiring energies were devoted to it. If his











HARMON NOBLE.





duties became two confining, as they often did, to suit his love of activity and out-door life it became habitual for him to turn his strong hand to any manual labor that happened to offer, and while thus engaged, the same energy and vigor was given to it that characterized his more regular vocation. In other words, he was what might be designated as a thorough man in whatever he turned his attention to. As to his character and reputation, it can only be said that it was honorable in every way; his integrity was unflinching, and neither would he patiently tolerate the least semblance of dishonesty in others. He exacted his due, but never failed to award the same to all others with whom he came in contact; and while habits of constant industry and general economy marked his early life, no meritorious object needing assistance was turned away without his aid.

Mr. Noble's death was sudden and unexpected. Like many who are blest with frames apparently invulnerable, he was at times negligent of his health. At rest temporarily from any arduous duty, it was his habit to sit on the stone steps of his place of business, where he was a familiar figure to all townsmen of Essex; it is thought that perhaps the origin of the attack that caused his death, was in this habit.

He never sought office of any kind, in that matter following in the footsteps of his father; but like him, he was prominent in the State militia and was commissioned major by Governor De Witt Clinton, in 1824, and given duty on the staff of General H. H. Ross, receiving appointment at different times as the general was promoted.

Mr. Noble was married on the 16th day of October, 1855, to Laura Ann Welch, daughter of Peter Welch and Martha Frazer Welch, to which family connection we have already alluded in the preceding biography of General Ransom Noble. She was born in Vergennes, Vt., where her grandfather, Paul Welch, settled in 1808. They had six children, of whom four are living, as follows:

Sarah Elizabeth, born August 29th, 1856, married Charles Burritt Waite, son of the late Charles C. Waite, of New York, former proprietor of the old Brevoort House. They had one daughter, Julia Noble Waite, born August 14th, 1877.

Anna Laura Noble, born January 26th, 1858, married Henry Howard Ross, of whom a sketch appears in these pages. He died December 14th, 1882, and his widow lives in Essex.

Jeanie Noble, born August 29th, 1859, married Holland Stratford Whiting, June 20th, 1883. He is of the wall paper firm of Whiting & Campbell, of New York. They have one daughter, Jean Noble Whiting, born March 18th, 1884.

Henry Harmon Noble, born May 9th, 1861; unmarried and resides with his mother on the family homstead, in Essex village. He has charge of the extensive "South Farm," which formerly belonged to his father. He has enjoyed the advantages of extensive European travel and is now the only representative of the family name in the town.

Martha Frazer and Mary McNeil Noble (twins), born May 5th, 1863; died August, 1863.

This sketch of Mr. Noble may be appropriately closed with the following, which was written at the time of his death by one who knew him well:

"During his long intercourse with his-fellow citizens as merchant, no man ever had cause to doubt his honor and probity. But his worth did not arise merely from his capacity as a man of business. His kindly disposition, his support of the church, his tenderness and kindness as a son, parent, husband, relative and friend endeared him to all his relatives, and won the esteem of his acquaintance. His loss will be deeply felt in the extensive concerns in which he was engaged and by the community generally, and the bereavement falls heavily upon his relatives and doubly so on the beloved wife and young children."

Mr. Noble came home from his place of business about nine o'clock, on the evening of May 24th, 1864, read his paper and retired about ten o'clock. A little later he spoke to his wife, uttering the last words that passed his lips. His death was caused by the breaking of an abscess in his lungs.

## HON. CLAYTON H. DE LANO.

THE subject of this sketch is a son of Benjamin P. De Lano, and grandson of Nathan, one of the earliest pioneers of the town. His mother was Amanda Harris, daughter of one of the early settlers. Clayton H. De Lano was born at Ticonderoga on the 8th day of February, 1836. His father, still living, venerable in years, is a cousin of the Hon. Columbus De Lano, a name conspicuous in the political history of the country, and his mother a cousin of the Hon. Townsend Harris, formerly United States Minister at Japan. Mr. De Lano was favored with facilities for obtaining a good English education, and later chose the profession of the law, for the study of which he entered the office of the late Judge A. C. Hand, of Elizabethtown. This was followed by a course in the Albany Law School, and his admission to the bar in the year 1860. Severe application to study had now so impaired his health that he was forced to relinquish the practice of his profession and he engaged in farming in his native town.

Mr. De Lano's politics in the earlier portion of his life and previous to the breaking out of the war, was Democratic, in which school he followed in the footsteps of his father. While he entertained this faith he in the years 1860-61 contributed a series of political articles to a leading New York journal which attracted considerable attention and were marked by vigorous thought, clearness of style and dignity of tone.

With the early progress of the war his political sentiments ran counter to the policy of the Democratic organization and he joined the Republican party, entering with zeal into the support of its principles and its measures for the support of the war. He made a tour of Essex county in the memorable campaign of 1864, speaking in nearly every town, which was repeated in 1866 and again in 1868. His political addresses met with warm favor and endorsement; were of important service to the party throughout Northern New York, and gained him the reputation of being the best political speaker in the county. In recognition of his ability and services he was elected to the Assembly of 1869 against a formidable competitor, his majority being unusual, and leading his State ticket by a number of votes. He was re-elected in 1870, during which session he was brought prominently before the public by his success in getting the bill which had been introduced for the repeal of the bridge charter of the old Whitehall and Plattsburg Railroad Company, taken from the hands of the railroad committee and given to the committee on commerce and navigation, where it secured a hearing more favorable to the interests of his constituents. So efficient was his legislative work that he was urged by his friends to enter the field as candidate for the office of State Senator; but the demands of his private business were becoming so urgent that he refused to allow the use of his name, and has since given his time and energies to the large business and manufacturing operations in which he has been engaged.

Mr. De Lano is a forcible, impressive, and eloquent speaker and is the author of a number of addresses on agriculture and temperance which he has delivered at different places in past years; he was also designated as poet upon the occasion of the one hundredth anniversary of the settlement of Ticonderoga in July, 1864, and wrote and read an excellent production. He was prominent in the formation and active in support of the Farmers' and Mechanics' Association of Ticonderoga, of which he was president and secretary for many years. The Ticonderoga Academy, founded in 1858, received his most zealous support during its existence, and he was an efficient trustee for ten years. His labors for the cause of temperance in his native town have also been of the most efficient character.

Mr. De Lano's character and public work has not been unappreciated at home. His townsmen made him their supervisor for eight years and have otherwise expressed their favor towards him.

In the year 1871 Mr. De Lano began the extensive manufacturing operations which have since engaged his attention. He first formed the firm of De Lano & Ives, for the manufacture and sale of lumber, sash, doors, blinds, etc. Five years later, in 1876, this firm was displaced by the Lake Champlain Manufacturing Company, which was organized by him for the same purposes



as the preceding firm. Later he became convinced of the future magnitude of the wood pulp and paper demand, and organized the Ticonderoga Pulp Company, of which he was made treasurer; this company was succeeded by the Ticonderoga Pulp and Paper Company, organized by him in 1882, and now having a capital stock of \$180,000, owning the large mills at Ticonderoga village. Mr. De Lano is president of the company and has placed it on a successful foundation.

Personally Mr. De Lano is an active, nervous man, prompt in speech and movement, persevering with unflagging zeal in whatever he undertakes; staunch and ardent in his friendships and liberal in support of any good work.

He was married in 1867, to Anna M. Thompson, daughter of George Thompson, of Ticonderoga. Her grandfather was a pioneer of the old town of Crown Point, and the first town meetings were held at his house. Mr. and Mrs. De Lano have three children.

---

#### DR. JOHN SMITH.

**A**MONG the pioneers who came into Vermont previous to the date of birth of the subject of this sketch, was John Smith. He was the father of John Smith, a man who was quite intimately associated with the early history of Ticonderoga. He was born in Shoreham, Vt., on the 10th of December, 1794. In addition to his studies in the common schools, he pursued his education in the Newton Academy, at Shoreham. Deciding to devote his life to the practice of medicine, he entered the medical school at Middlebury, Vt., and attended lectures at Castleton, Vt., and when twenty-five years old (1819) was united in marriage (in Shoreham, Vt.) with Hannah Cronin, who was born at Kinderhook, N. Y., on the 20th of January, 1795. Her parents removed to Ticonderoga, N. Y., when she was eight years old. About the year 1822 (possibly a year later) Dr. Smith came across the lake to Ticonderoga and located at what is now known as Street Road. Dr. Levi Wilcox was the pioneer physician of the town and at that time the only one of the profession in this near vicinity. Dr. Smith at once formed a copartnership with him for the practice of medicine, a business connection which continued three years; but one year before it expired Dr. Smith removed to the Upper Falls, then the real business center of the town. Here he entered into successful practice and also established a small drug store, which was a great convenience to the inhabitants.

About the year 1838 Dr. Smith saw, with others, that the business center of the town in future years was to be at the Lower Falls, and he accordingly moved thither, establishing his drug business in a small wooden building which is still standing. Here his practice constantly increased, and his thoroughly excellent qualities as a man and a citizen won for him the almost universal respect and esteem of his townsmen. He was honored by them with election to various offices; he was supervisor in 1837-38, and made county superintendent of the poor, holding the office for three years. In these and other public positions he performed the duties to the eminent satisfaction of his constituents and for the general good of the community.

He was a prominent member of the Old Ti. Lodge, No. 503, F. & A. M., and an efficient actor in that Order. The lodge passed a series of eulogistic resolutions upon the occasion of his death.

Dr. Smith is remembered as in all respects "the good physician." No stress of weather, nor even his own physical unfitness, could deter him from answering the call of any one needing his professional aid. Rich and poor alike had in this respect ample occasion to bless him living, and to regret his death. While careful, prudent and economical, so far as his personal affairs were concerned, it was his constant habit to place upon his books in the neatest, most precise manner, charges for his arduous services which he never expected nor intended to collect. It was said of him that he kept his books handsomely, entering upon them charges of thousands of dollars, "and that was the last of it." But in spite of this fact, so extensive was his business, and so prudent was his life and the life of his estimable wife, who by her industry and good judgment contributed to and took prudent care of their joint earnings, as

the doctor many times cheerfully said, that he amassed a considerable fortune and became quite an extensive owner of real estate in the town.

Personally, Dr. Smith was possessed of thorough common sense, good judgment, fairly broad educational and professional qualifications, all supported by an inborn character of inflexible integrity and intended justice to all of his fellowmen. He died on the 23d day of April, 1869, leaving his widow, who still resides in Ticonderoga at the venerable age of ninety years, and three living children. His son, Charles Darwin Smith, died April 12th, 1869—less than two weeks previous to his father's death. The surviving children of Dr. Smith are Eliza S., now the wife of W. A. G. Arthur, of Ticonderoga; they have four children living. Sarah Jane, wife of George C. Weed, of Ticonderoga; they have four children living. Laura D., wife of Alanson Pond, of Ticonderoga; also have one child living. Charles Darwin Smith married Melissa Clark, sister of George D. Clark, and they have one daughter living at Ticonderoga, N. Y. (Maria Smith); he married a second time, from which union a son was born. In religious belief Doctor Smith lived and died in the Universalist faith.

---

#### THOMAS COWAN.

THE subject of this sketch was born at Broad Island, near Dobbstown, in the County Antrim, Ireland, on the 1st day of June, 1814. His boyhood until he was sixteen years old, was passed in his native country. He then came to America, locating first at Tinmouth, Rutland county, Vt., where he worked at various occupations for three years. At the end of that period he returned to Ireland for a visit of a few weeks, when he again embarked for the United States and located at Ticonderoga. Here he remained one year, at the end of which he went into the employ of Penfield & Taft, in Crown Point. He remained in the employ of this firm until 1843. In that year, July 18th, he was married to Sarah Jane Stone, daughter of Ephraim Stone, who then occupied the farm on which Mr. Cowan settled soon after his marriage. Here he made his home until his death, which occurred on the 20th of February, 1885, a period of more than forty years.

The record of Mr. Cowan's life belongs to that of the quiet, unobtrusive, yet most successful farmer. Prudent and careful, possessing a thorough knowledge of the better methods of agriculture, industrious and persevering, he was, of course, successful and not only made for himself and family a home that any one might envy, but also added largely to his landed possessions by the purchase of two farms adjoining his homestead, with other valuable real estate. His excellent qualities as a citizen won the esteem and confidence of his townsmen; he was elected to and acceptably filled the office of assessor for several years and otherwise received evidence of the approval of his fellow citizens. His widow survives him on the homestead farm. Their children are Ann Jane, who was born January 28th, 1847; Eunice Amelia, born December 12th, 1848; Lucy Caroline, born April 10th, 1851; Henry Thomas, born April 17th, 1858; Willie Andrew, born June 9th, 1860, died August 29th, 1860; Lillie Irene, born August 3d, 1865.

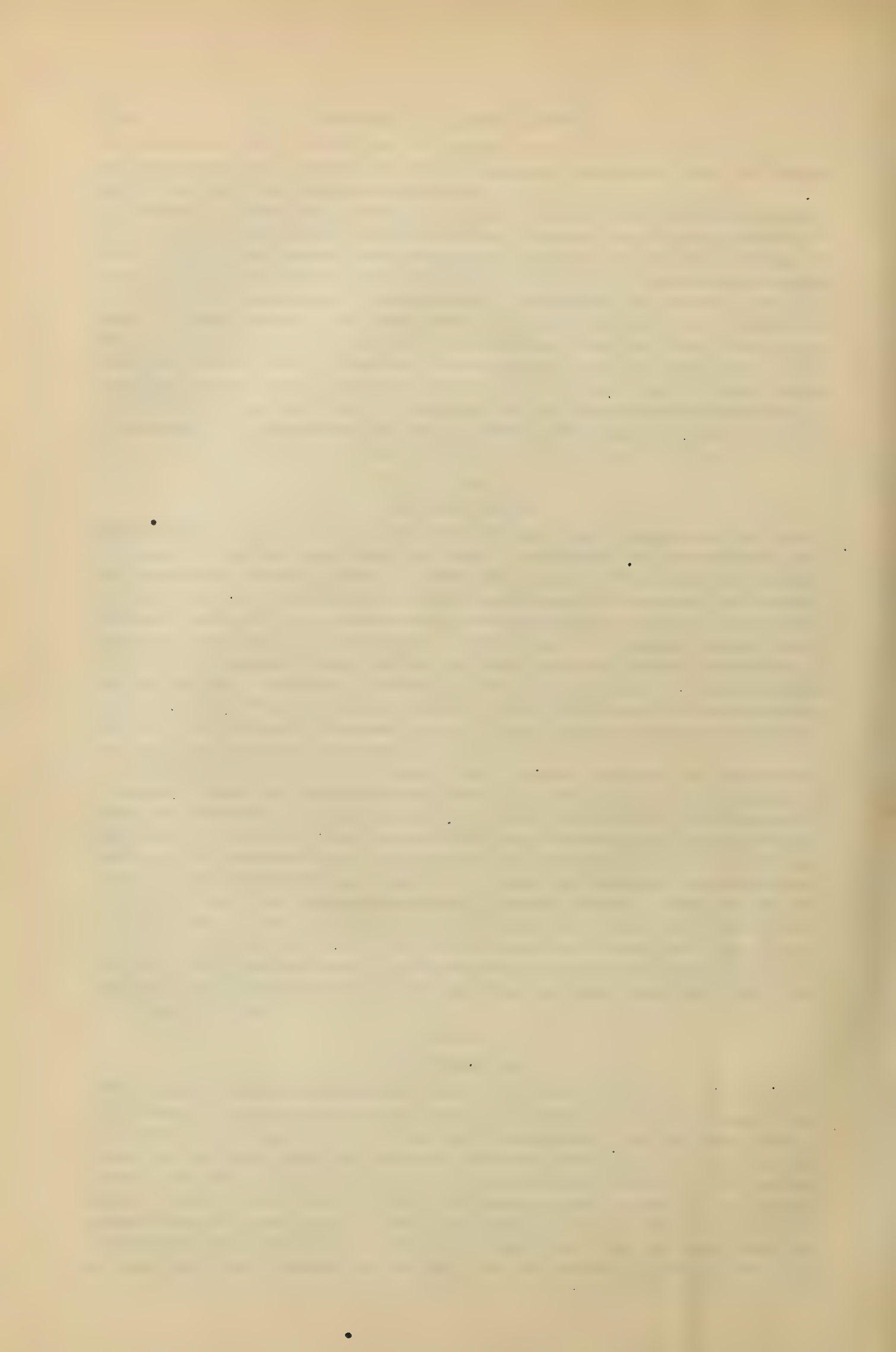
---

#### ENOS BRADFORD.

THE father of Enos Bradford was one of the early settlers in the town of Crown Point, whither he brought his son from the town of Springfield, Vt. Enos was born in that town on the 29th of January, 1807. When he was five years old (1812) his father came to Crown Point and began life in what was then a wilderness, with few settlers yet permanently located. The proverbial log cabin was built, a clearing made and the first steps taken towards making a home. In the midst of the toils and disadvantages of pioneer life, Mr. Bradford grew to manhood, inured to hardship and fully capable of facing the world amid whatever circumstances might surround him. While he was yet a boy, he was sent away from home on some errand which detained him over night. On this occasion he availed himself of the











THOMAS COWAN.





hospitality of one of his townsmen, a prominent farmer. This farm, Mr. Bradford afterwards purchased and there lived for forty-two years.

In early life he was strongly inclined to religious belief and faith and became united with the Methodist Episcopal Church, of Crown Point. In this society he became very prominent and contributed liberally to its support. He held the offices of trustee and steward for many years and gained the high esteem of his brethren in the church.

Although he began life with but small means, his prudent habits, excellent judgment, thorough knowledge of farming and whatever business he undertook, brought him most gratifying success and enabled him to accumulate a fortune of fifty thousand dollars before his death. Of quiet disposition, kind of heart and generous to all good causes, he won the esteem and respect of all who knew him.

Mr. Bradford was twice married; first, on the 31st of December, 1829, to Mary Smith, of Crown Point, and, second, on the 17th of November, 1840, to Hannah Russell, widow of Hollis Russell. By his first wife he had four children, three of whom are deceased; and Mary Jane (Bradford) Wooster, living in Illinois. By his second wife he had two children; of these Trinity Bradford is living on the homestead.

Mr. Bradford died on the 10th day of August, 1883, aged seventy-six years.

---

#### WILLIAM HOOPER.

WILLIAM HOOPER was born in Cornwall county, England, on the 14th day of April, 1832. His father was John Hooper, a mechanic and mining engineer of noted ability, whose life was devoted to the erection and supervision of mine and ore dressing machinery, and ore concentrating processes. Intimately associated with this class of work, William Hooper grew up and inherited much of his father's native talent in this direction. His educational advantages were not extensive, but what he learned in school his active mind retained, while the mental discipline and varied experience gained in his association with his father's mechanical operations were, perhaps, of more value to him in later years than what could have been obtained from books.

Early in the month of April, 1854, he left his home and embarked for America, landing in New York after a tempestuous voyage of almost eight weeks, with less than ten pounds in money in his possession. From New York he went to Middletown, Conn., where he engaged with John Patterson, a contractor of some note, to aid in the erection of the Baldwin plane factory of Middlefield. Completing this work he was next employed by the Chatham Cobalt and Nickel Mining Company to supervise the erection of their mining, pumping and hoisting machinery. This was congenial employment for him and the works were successfully started.

In 1854 he was married to Jane Ann Hoskins, daughter of James Hoskins, and in June, 1856, taking his wife and infant son he returned to England. He remained there less than a year, most of which period his child was ill and occupied much of his attention and care; he was, however, called on to assist in the erection of a large engine at the Wheal-Tonkin tin works in Cornwall county; he also removed to a new locality and put in operation an overshot water-wheel and stamp mill which he had erected when he was not yet eighteen years old.

Returning to New York Mr. Hooper repaired to Hartford, Conn., in 1857 where he was engaged a short time in putting hoisting machinery in a large wholesale store; during this time he was sought by the Chatham company, before mentioned, to return and take his old position with them, which he did, remaining two years in charge of their machinery, when the works were closed owing to a lack of knowledge of the smelting of cobalt in this country. He was next employed for a short time with John Patterson, when he was solicited by a representative of the Passaic Copper Mining Company, near Newark, N. J., to erect their works. This he did, putting the establishment in successful operation. During his work on this enterprise his services were persistently sought for a similar purpose by the Hunterdon Copper Mining Company, located in the same State. Finally an arrangement was made by which his services were

loaned to the latter company while the former still retained chief control of his time. Both of these works were successfully started and ran until the breaking out of the war (1861) which temporarily suspended such operations; but of such value was Mr. Hooper to his employers that they arranged to pay him a liberal salary, although he was unemployed, until the works should again be started. Two months of this remunerated idleness was all he could endure, when he went to Warren, N. H., to aid his brother-in-law in carrying on the works of the silver and lead mine owned by Mr. Baldwin, of Boston, which had already been built from his plans. He was thus engaged two years, when he joined with his brother-in-law in the erection of a concentrating mill for a copper mining company in Bath, N. H. In the mean time he received a call to go and erect and take charge of crushing and concentrating works for the French Creek Copper Mining Company, on the line between Maryland and Pennsylvania. While undecided as to this offer he was called on by Horace Trumbull, of the Passaic Zinc Works, N. J., and asked to come to Ticonderoga in the interest of the American Graphite Company. It was arranged that on the next day he should meet the president (R. H. Manning) and directors of the company, but before the meeting he was solicited to accept charge of the pumps and engines of a prominent Pennsylvania coal mining company. Being assured, however, by Mr. Manning, that in case the Ticonderoga enterprise failed he should still have a satisfactory post with the zinc company, Mr. Hooper came on to Ticonderoga to erect the graphite works. Previous to this time the valuable deposits here had been worked into stove polish and his company had put in small experimental machinery at the Upper Falls for the production of graphite suitable for crucible manufacture. Nothing else of a practicable nature had been accomplished in the United States towards reducing graphite deposits to marketable products of value. But this did not deter Mr. Hooper; he felt that he knew what he could accomplish in handling this ore. The large factory was erected soon after his arrival, which was in May, 1863, and the reduction and separation of the ore begun. Unqualified success followed until now there are turned out the finest grade of graphite for electrotyping; and other grades for lubricating purposes, for hatters' use, for rubber manufacturers, for glazing powder and shot, for paint-stock, besides the original uses for crucibles and stove polish. The factory employs since its erection, in connection with the mines, an average of sixty to seventy men.

If this record proves anything it is that Mr. Hooper is, in his special field of labor, a man of remarkable capacity and possesses all the rare qualifications that enable him to not only understand the character of all the various ores and how to successfully manipulate them so as to produce the best results, but the executive ability to supervise and control large interests. Besides this, and scarcely secondary thereto, he is an inventor in connection with ore dressing and mining operations, whose works are known throughout the world. He is the inventor of the celebrated revolving central discharge jig, for concentrating and dressing ores; the only machine on that principle.

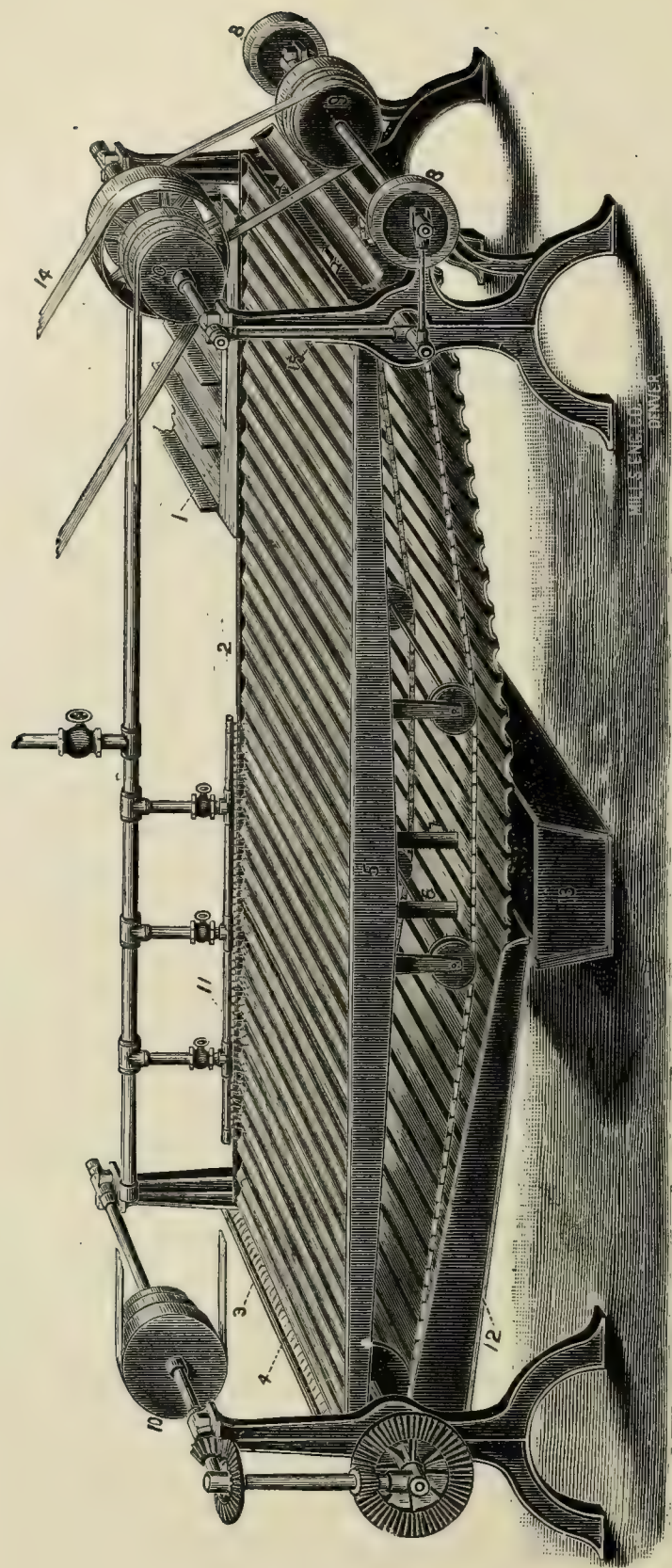
In 1879 he perfected and patented his slimer and concentrator, which he was forced by his other duties to neglect until recently; still it is already in operation in Colorado (where a \$1,000 challenge has been issued to equal its operations), in Mexico, and Utah. This machine is made in Ticonderoga and is, therefore, appropriately described herewith as intimately associated with the industries of the place.

Mr. Hooper was connected with the iron manufacture in Ticonderoga, and several years ago became owner of the foundry, machine shop, and hardware store here. In this branch of his business he is associated with D. C. Bascomb.

Mr. Hooper is a man of retiring nature; brief of speech but thoroughly capable of making himself understood on any subject; wins friends at once and remains staunch to those who earn his regard. If not brilliant in the outward acquirements, he possesses a good fund of sound practical common sense and judgment that seldom fails him in practical matters. He has done much for his adopted town, particularly as an employer and is counted among the solid men of his village.







THE HOOPER CONCENTRATOR.



Mr. Hooper has four children: Ellen, who is now a resident of Ticonderoga; George H. married Lena Woodward, has charge of the company's mills at Hague; Frank C. and Minnie Louisa are living at home.

#### THE HOOPER CONCENTRATOR.

This machine combines the *panning* and *sluicing* processes, long acknowledged to be the only true practical principal for concentrating all ores. It is an arrangement of sluices upon endless malleable iron chains, run with a forward movement, and a reciprocating motion obtained by gearing, pulleys, eccentrics and connecting rods.

The feed-table at the upper side of the machine supplies the ore from stamps or crushers, with the accompanying water, delivering it continuously into the heads of the sluices. The forward movement carries the sluices under perforated water-pipes, where they receive washing water. The reciprocating motion of the sluices, with their inclination across the machine, causes a panning motion of the water (not found in any other machine) which deposits the mineral and washes the "gangue" down and off into a trough at the lower side. The concentrates are carried on the sluices over and under the machine and deposited in a tank; the sluices being thus reversed are thoroughly washed and made to continue their movement on and up, to again be supplied at the feed-table. The inclination of the sluices, the amount of feed and water, the forward and reciprocating movements are *each and all under entire and instant control*; thus insuring the successful treatment of all ores, from ordinary *milling* down to the *finest slimes*. The simplicity of this machine, combining as it does the most natural application of the forces of gravity and water, will commend itself to every observer who is familiar with concentrating processes. Low grades of ores which are worthless when treated by any other means may be made valuable by the use of this concentrator.

#### EDWARD J. OWEN.

EDWARD J. OWEN (son of the Rev. John J. Owen, vice-president of the New York Free College) was born in the city of New York on the 28th day of November, 1835. He was graduated at the University of the City of New York in June, 1855, receiving the first honors of his class. He at once entered upon the study of law in the city of New York, and was admitted to the bar in the year 1858. He was subsequently admitted to practice in the United States District and Circuit Courts and subsequently, on motion, in the United States Supreme Court at Washington. In 1861 he was offered by Judge Samuel R. Betts the position of clerk of the United States District Court for the Southern District of New York and also United States Commissioner, but declined the same. He continued in the practice of his profession until the year 1869. In 1871 he moved to Moriah, N. Y., where he took charge of the school which in 1873 became known, by the endowment of George Sherman, as Sherman Academy, and has continued as principal to the present time (1885).

In connection with School Commissioner L. B. Newell and others he organized the Essex County Teacher's Association in July, 1874, and was the first president, continuing in office three successive years. As was stated by a leading paper of the county: "When Mr. Owen inaugurated this movement education was at a low ebb in the county; there were, doubtless, good schools but they were exceptional and not general. . . . By this agency much permanent good has been accomplished, much has been done to advance the people's cause and to have a better educational sentiment in the county."

Principal Owen has become well known on the platform as a public speaker. A writer of prominence says: "Professor Owen is a pleasant speaker, clear, sound, and ornate." In September, 1884, he delivered the annual address before the Essex County Agricultural Society at Westport.

One of the ablest of his associate teachers in the county says: "Professor Owen stands in the front rank of educators in Northeastern New York and gives tone and character to every effort for reform and advancement." Sherman Academy under his administration has entered

upon a career of eminent success. By its instrumentality the youth of Essex county can receive a practical education at a moderate expense, fitting them for a further advancement in college or directly for the duties of life.

#### ALEXANDER M'KENZIE.

AMONG the earliest settlers of the present town of Moriah was William M'Kenzie, who came in about the year 1784 from St. Johns, Canada. He located at what became known as M'Kenzie City, about a mile south of the present village of Port Henry. He and two of his brothers obtained grants of one hundred and fifty acres respectively in that locality, which was all subsequently transferred to William. The family were of Scotch descent. He brought with him his wife, Deborah (Towner) M'Kenzie and his oldest child, who was a daughter. In the year succeeding his settlement in the town, his oldest son was born, Alexander M'Kenzie, the subject of this sketch. He was the first white child born within the present limits of the town. This boy grew up with his father's family and took his share of the duties connected with the tavern, the ferry and the farm which his father conducted. William M'Kenzie became a leading man in the town; was the first supervisor, holding the office a number of terms; the first justice of the peace, and held other town offices. He died at the age of fifty-six years, and had long been known as "old 'Squire M'Kenzie."

Alexander M'Kenzie remained at home until after he was twenty-one, going to school a little, particularly in winter seasons, but spending most of his time in the hard labor which devolved upon all young pioneers. Though given but limited advantages for acquiring education, he developed quick intelligence and good common sense, and was given town offices before he reached his majority. When he was twenty-four years old he moved to the farm on the hill just east of Moriah Corners, on the north side of the road, which had been given him by his father. Deacon Jedediah Edgerton then occupied the farm on the opposite side of the road, where Lyman M'Kenzie now lives. Alexander was not yet married, but he began making a clearing and built a small frame-house, which is still standing among the farm buildings. In the year 1810, about a year after he began work on his farm, he married Lydia Edgerton, daughter of Deacon Jedediah Edgerton, who was one of the pioneers of the town and remembered as the "father of the Presbyterian Church" in the town. She was a woman of strong character and much intelligence, and became while she lived a real helpmate of her husband. Mr. M'Kenzie was successful as a farmer, and had a peculiar faculty of acquiring and retaining general information. Although at the age of sixteen he scarcely had the rudiments of the English branches, he filled out what leisure he had, even after his marriage, with reading and study; it became customary with him to board the school-teachers of the district gratuitously, so that he and his children might secure the advantages of evening instruction. He thus became an excellent penman, a fair accountant, and a good reader. In the year 1818 he erected the large dwelling on his farm which is still standing and now occupied by Charles Will.

Ten years later, February 14th, 1828, his wife died of consumption. At that time his family consisted of five children living, the oldest, Lyman, being then eighteen, and his sister, Mary Jane, fifteen. They, with the father's help, kept the family together and cared for them until he married the second time in 1831; in this marriage he was united to Amelia (King) Grosvenor, widow of Elijah Grosvenor, of Crown Point. By her he had two children; a son, Elijah, now living in Nebraska, and a daughter, who died in Kansas. Mr. M'Kenzie remained on his farm on the north side of the road until about the year 1847, when the valuable Edgerton farm of two hundred acres on the opposite side, formerly the property of Daniel Tarbell, came into market, and he and his sons Lyman and Jedediah purchased it. The large dwelling now occupied by Lyman M'Kenzie was then standing, having been built in 1831; there was another dwelling on the farm, which Jedediah occupied, while Lyman lived in a house on the north side of the road, a little further up the hill; the father took the large homestead.



Here he resided in peace and contentment, enjoying the eminent respect of all his acquaintances and the competence which his labors had accumulated. In recognition of the splendid natural ability with which Mr. M'Kenzie was endowed, his townsmen elected him to nearly every town office, in all of which he sustained his honorable reputation for the strictest integrity and performed his public duties with rare skill and judgment. He was known throughout the county and distinguished for his unpretentious worth. He was not ambitious for the distinction of public office or station, but conscientiously performed his duty wherever he saw it. While he in all business transactions exacted his due, no one could ever charge that the same was not awarded by him. When he died it was in the enjoyment of the general good will of all. Lyman M'Kenzie, the only son of Alexander now living in Essex county, still lives at the age of seventy-four on the homestead. We have noted his residence a little west of the present homestead, to which place he removed after his marriage in 1832. He was united with Arsinoe Havens, daughter of George H. Havens, one of the pioneers of the town. He remained there, successfully carrying on his part of the farm, until about the year 1858, when, on account of his father's failing health, he took his family and joined the household in the homestead. Here he remained and cared carefully for his father until the death of the latter, which event occurred on the 19th of November, 1873, at the age of eighty-eight years. Previous to his father's death, Lyman purchased the interest which his father had given his three daughters in the homestead farm, and has since owned and occupied it. Mr. M'Kenzie's wife died January 20th, 1884. They had three sons, all of whom are living. George A. is the oldest, and is in the land office at Stockton, Cal. The second son is named Marcus Collins, and now lives in Keeseville, Essex county. The third son, born in 1844, named Henry Clay M'Kenzie, lives on the place from which his father removed to the homestead, and which his father recently has given him.

Mr. M'Kenzie enjoys the respect and confidence of his townsmen, and the consciousness of a life given to industry and good works.

---

CHARLES W. WOODFORD.

HENRY E. WOODFORD, father of the subject of this sketch, was born in 1810 in Ottery, St. Mary's, near Exeter, England, and came to America about 1832, settling in Burlington, Vt. There he married Catharine A. Martin, an excellent woman of more than common strength of character, inherited from the old Puritan stock. Mr. Woodford was a general mechanic schooled under the rigid discipline of the English shops. He followed his trade for a time in Burlington, and went from there to Jericho, Vt., where he built and operated a grist-mill and turning shop. About the year 1836 or 1837 he removed to Montreal where he was drafted into military service as a British subject in the Papineau, or "Patriot" war. He subsequently returned to Jericho and went from there to Keeseville, N. Y., where he was foreman for Goulding, Green & Conro. He remained there from 1849 to 1856, when the great freshet swept the Ausable valley of all its workshops. Mr. Woodford then went to Watertown, N. Y., and was made superintendent of the steam engine manufactory of Hon. C. B. Hoard, then the largest establishment of the kind in the country. A year later he engaged with Goulding, Bagley & Sewell, of the same place, as agent to sell and erect their machinery. When the late war broke out he was employed in the great firearms manufactory of the Remingtons, at Ilion, N. Y., remaining there about a year. He then returned to Keeseville and took a contract to manufacture about one hundred of the Dodge horse nail machines, then recently perfected; the contract included the machines now in use in the Ausable Nail Works and by the Northwestern Nail Company, of Chicago. Soon after the completion of his contract he went to Plattsburg, where he was engaged as superintendent for Hartwell & Myers, founders and machinists; he remained there four years when he joined his son (the subject of this sketch) in Montreal, with whom he remained until his death, which occurred in Essex May 23d, 1884.

This much is said of the elder Woodford chiefly to show the kind of stock from which

Charles W. Woodford came. His father was a general mechanic of first-class ability and, moreover, possessed inventive genius of a high order; but lacked what his son seems to have inherited from his mother — excellent administrative and executive ability. He invented numerous machines and greatly improved others, for which patents were issued, but the avails of which have generally been secured by other persons.

Among his three sons is Charles W. Woodford, who was born at Jericho, Vt., April 11th, 1839. He lived there, attending school and otherwise filling out his youthful years until he was ten years old when his father removed to Keeseville. His studies were finished in the Keeseville Academy. At the age of fourteen he entered the shop and from that time to the present his life has been largely devoted to the higher class of mechanics and invention. Under the direct instruction of his father his advancement was so rapid that when he was seventeen he received journeyman's pay. After the great freshet he accompanied his parents to Watertown where he remained until the breaking out of the war when he promptly enlisted among the first recruits, joining the Thirty-fifth Regiment as a musician. At the end of his term of service (two years) he was offered a commission as engineer in the regular U. S. Navy, by Hon. Gideon Wells, secretary of the navy. Declining this he went to Keeseville and was associated with his father in the contract for making the Dodge horse nail machines, as before mentioned. He remained in Keeseville two years after the contract was executed, going then to Montreal (1868) where he erected a horse nail factory and built the machines — the first successful establishment of the kind in Canada. The factory was built for Morland, Watson & Co. After it was in successful operation Mr. Woodford leased it for ten years, they taking the product at a contract price. Four years later he erected the first successful establishment in Canada for the manufacture of horse shoes by machinery. This establishment he also leased and operated for six years.

With the approach of the panic of 1877 Mr. Woodford made arrangements to sell out his interests, which he did in 1878, to the Montreal Rolling Mill Company. He then remained for about two years without any business operations on hand.

It now becomes necessary to note the products of Mr. Woodford's inventive genius, which had not remained idle during the ten years preceding the sale above mentioned. The successful manufacture of horse nails by machinery was for many years a vexing problem to inventors and not until the machine made by Mr. Dodge, of Keeseville, came out (of which the elder Woodford made the first hundred) can there be said to have been much advancement made towards solving the problem. While Charles W. Woodford was engaged with his father on these machines, he invented several very valuable improvements which were adopted and successfully used in the Montreal factory, and are still in use. But what was wanting was a machine that would *finish* and *point* the nails after being forged by the Dodge machine. Mr. Woodford saw that if he could accomplish this branch of the work his fortune was made. It is one of his most prominent characteristics to persevere and push to final success anything he undertakes, and this instance proved no exception. He perfected a machine of great ingenuity which does its work perfectly and with great rapidity. It, of course, proved of great value, and is in use in all the successful works in this country, as well as in most of the prominent countries of Europe and the world. He also invented machinery for making horse-shoes, which is in successful operation. His other inventions take a wide range, but are of less importance than those mentioned. Most of his devices are covered by patents.

In 1879 the Essex Horse Nail Company was organized and works built in Essex village for manufacturing under the Mills patents. After loss of considerable money and failure of the machinery Mr. Woodford was sent for to resuscitate and reorganize the factory and put in his machinery. He came on in 1880 and entered first into a two years contract with the company which was extended to five years more, under which he was made superintendent of the works, which contract is still in force and the establishment in successful operation. He is now a large stockholder in the company and a director. Mr. Woodford has twice visited Europe in











C. W. WOODFORD.





connection with the introduction of his nail machinery there, and has traveled extensively in this country.

Personally Mr. Woodford is of nervous temperament; quick in movement; prompt in speech; persistent, active, and thoroughly energetic in whatever he undertakes and never disposed to give up to any kind of failure; he is social and domestic in his tastes and habits; always found prominent in local societies and institutions and lending his efficient aid to the success of their affairs. He is aggressive in his disposition towards those who disagree with him on important matters, such as politics, in which he is an uncompromising Republican, temperance, church, and public affairs generally. He is a ready debater and has often been sent to County conventions, and in 1884 was delegate to the State convention. In church affairs (Episcopalian) he has long been conspicuous and was made chairman of the building committee of St. Jude's church of Montreal. He is a strong advocate of temperance principles and prominent in the various organizations. He is also high in the order of Masonry. He is Commander of the G. A. R. Post at Willsborough, and a prominent member of the Essex Musical Union and the Essex Literary Society. In all of these institutions he is looked to by his associates as a leader, and in all emergencies as the one who can overcome all obstacles, of whatever character. In his business operations he has set up a high standard and nothing will induce him to depart from it; hence, wherever he has lived he has left an honorable record behind him.

Mr. Woodford was married in 1864 to Helen E. Collins, of Keeseville; they have four children living.

---

#### JOSEPH COOK.

JOSEPH COOK, son of William H. Cook (see history of Ticonderoga), was born in Ticonderoga on the 26th of January, 1838. After preliminary studies at Whitehall Academy and Keeseville Academy, and learning French at Pointe-aux-Trembles, near Montreal, he was prepared for college at Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., under the celebrated classical teacher, Dr. Samuel H. Taylor. He entered Yale College in the year 1858, but his health became impaired and he left the institution early in 1861. He entered Harvard College as a junior in 1863 and was graduated in 1865 with honors and bearing off several of the first prizes. He then entered Andover Theological Seminary and finished the 'regular three years' course. He devoted a fourth year at Andover to the special study of advanced religious and philosophical thought. He was licensed as a preacher of the gospel, and has acted in that capacity to a considerable extent, but he was never ordained and never sought, although he has often been offered, a settlement in the ministry. In September, 1871, he went to Europe for two years, where he studied at Halle, Leipsic, Berlin, and Heidelberg, under the guidance of Tholuck, Dorner, Julius Muller, and Kuno Fischer. After traveling in Italy, Egypt, Syria, Greece, Turkey and other countries of Europe, he returned to the United States at the close of 1873 and took up his residence in Boston. In the following year he entered upon his special labor as a lecturer on the relations of religion and science, and kindred topics.

His lectures have been delivered mostly in Tremont Temple, Boston, and are widely known as the "Boston Monday Lectures." They appeared in whole or in part in leading newspapers, and led to Mr. Cook's being called on to deliver, on other days of the week, courses of lectures in the principal cities of the United States.

Eight volumes of his lectures have been published in the United States, and ten in England, each containing "Preludes on Current Events," *i. e.*, short addresses discussing topics of urgent practical and religious importance, such as civil-service reform, temperance, fraud in elections, Mormonism, the Chinese question, the Bible in schools, etc.

His work on Biology has passed through sixteen editions, that on Transcendentalism through thirteen, and that on Orthodoxy through seven.

In Boston alone Mr. Cook has delivered one hundred and sixty-two lectures, on the most difficult philosophical, scientific, and political topics to audiences consisting chiefly of men, assembled at noon on Monday, the busiest hour of the busiest day of the week, and, up to the last, often overflowing Tremont Temple, which has seat and standing-room for about three thousand persons. For the last six years Mr. Cook's Monday lectures, as stenographically reported and revised, have been regularly published in full in Boston, New York, and London, and have appeared in large extracts in many leading religious journals at home and abroad, so that they have reached, at a moderate estimate, a million readers weekly — a highly gratifying proof of their innate worth.

In the year ending July 4th, 1878, Mr. Cook delivered one hundred and fifty lectures, sixty in the East, ten of them in New York city, and sixty in the West, besides thirty new lectures in Boston; issued three volumes, one of which is now in its sixteenth and another in its thirteenth edition, and traveled on his lecture trips 10,500 miles.

In the year ending July 4th, 1879, Mr. Cook delivered one hundred and sixty lectures, seventy-two in the East, twenty of them in Boston and ten in New York, seventy in the West, five in Canada, two in Utah, and eleven in California, of which five were in San Francisco. He twice crossed the Continent in the last four months of the season, and in the last nine months traveled on his lecture trips 12,500 miles. During the winter Mr. Cook conducted a Boston Monday-noon lectureship and a New York Thursday evening lectureship at the same time. On the closing evening of Mr. Cook's course of ten lectures in New York city, some two hundred people were turned away, unable to find standing-room, and the money for their tickets was refunded.

In 1880, 1881, and 1882 Mr. Cook, accompanied by his wife, made a lecturing tour of the world. In all the great cities visited there were immense audiences. It is believed that topics as difficult and serious as Mr. Cook's were never before carried through a tour of similar extent and success. During the two years and seventy days occupied by Mr. Cook's journey around the world, he spoke oftener than every other working day while on the land.

Mr. Cook made one hundred and thirty-five public appearances while in the British Islands. Of these, thirty-nine were in Scotland, thirteen in Ireland, and eighty-three in England and Wales. His audiences were of extraordinary size, quality, and enthusiasm. He was repeatedly called to leading towns to meet overflowing assemblies. Mr. Cook gave five lectures in Edinburgh during eight consecutive days, and the audiences crowded all available room in the largest halls, and grew in enthusiastic interest to the last.

After spending some months in Germany and Italy Mr. Cook went, by the way of Greece, Palestine, and Egypt, to India, where he arrived on the 5th of January, 1882, and where he spent about three months. During this period he lectured in Bombay, Poonah, Ahmednagar, Lucknow, Allahabad, Benares (the headquarters of Hindooism), Calcutta, Madras, Bangalore, etc., etc., to large, intelligent, and appreciative audiences, composed of both Europeans and natives. In eighty-four consecutive days he made forty-two public appearances in that country and Ceylon. Every one of the principal towns from the Himalayas to the sea gave him eager and overflowing audiences of educated Hindoos, and the results of his lectures to those people will doubtless be seen in future years. In Bombay, Calcutta, and Madras, hundreds were turned away from the doors, owing to the largest available halls being overcrowded.

During his stay in Calcutta Mr. Cook and the leaders of the Brahmo Somaj, or Society of Theists, exchanged repeated visits, and explained their religious opinions at great length.

From India Mr. Cook's tour extended to China, Japan, Australia, New Zealand, and the Sandwich Islands. In Japan he gave twelve lectures, six in English and six through an interpreter, to audiences composed chiefly of Japanese students, teachers, and public men. He gave one address in Canton, one in Foochow, and three elaborate lectures in Shanghai.

In Australasia, in the winter of the Southern Hemisphere, from July to October, 1882, Mr. Cook gave long courses of lectures to brilliant, crowded, and enthusiastic assemblies in Sydney,



Melbourne, Adelaide, Brisbane, and other leading towns. There were fifty-eight public appearances in all.

It is, perhaps, unnecessary to trace in detail Mr. Cook's seasons of public labor since 1882; it will be sufficient to state that they have been scarcely less active and comprehensive than the preceding ones, and no less popular. And this marvelous record does not, by any means, cover the entire field of his work. In the season of 1884-85, besides a full course of lectures in the Boston Monday lectureship to audiences of from 2,000 to 3,000 people assembled at noon, Mr. Cook's lecture tour extended to Manitoba, Oregon, Vancouver Island, California, Louisiana, New Brunswick and Nova Scotia, to say nothing of the Middle and Western States.

Of Mr. Cook's characteristics and personality as a lecturer, a writer and a man, it is not easy to give the reader a clear comprehension. He has been designated by one of the greatest educators in America, as "a phenomenon to be accounted for." Another writes him down as "a many-sided man; the greatest prophet of his time; a John the Baptist of the nineteenth century;" and another, as "one of the most remarkable men of our time." And the various reviews of his work, written by men eminently fitted to express themselves on such a subject, bristle with the most enthusiastic encomiums upon his great learning and research, his wonderfully vigorous and original thought, his fiery, impassioned eloquence, his almost marvelous "magnetic power," as it is termed, and his commanding presence and manner. A brief quotation from President James McCosh, of Princeton College, is of peculiar pertinence in this connection; he wrote as follows, in 1879:—

"Mr. Cook did not take up the work he has accomplished as a trade, or by accident, or from impulse; but for years he had been preparing for it, and prepared for it by an overruling guidance. He comes forth in Boston, which is undoubtedly the most literary city in America, and one of the great literary cities of the world. He has as much power of eloquence as Parker, and vastly more acquaintance with philosophy than the mystic Emerson. He lightens and thunders, throwing a vivid light on a topic by an expression or comparison, or striking a presumptuous error as by a bolt from heaven. He is not afraid to discuss the most abstract, scientific, or philosophic themes before a popular audience; he arrests his hearers first by his earnestness, then by the clearness of his exposition, and fixes the whole in the mind by the earnestness of his moral purpose."

Through all of Mr. Cook's varied experiences and extensive travels, he still retains the most ardent love for the quiet, historic scenes of his native town, where, in a beautifully situated home, called "Cliff Seat," which his excellent taste, combined with that of his accomplished wife, is annually rendering more attractive, he spends his summer months. At the summit of Roger's Rock, which is easily reached by a carriage road from Cliff Seat, Mr. Cook has a summer house with a bold and wide outlook over lake and mountains.

On the 30th of January, 1877, Mr. Cook was united in marriage with Miss Georgiana Hemingway, of New Haven, Conn., a lady who is fitted by nature and education to be the companion of such a man.

---

#### RAWSON CLARK BUCK.

**A**MONG the prominent families who early settled in the town of Crown Point were those of Hiram and Helon Buck, who located on Putnam's creek at what has since been known as Buck Hollow. Hiram, father of the subject of this notice, was born in 1804 in Bridport, Vt., and made the settlement in Crown Point when he was twenty years old. The two brothers became prominent citizens and were conspicuously identified with the interests and growth of the town. They purchased lands in the vicinity of Buck Hollow; built mills, a store, tavern, and numerous other structures. These mutual interests were subsequently dissolved, the business at Buck Hollow passing to the possession of Hiram. Leaving the immediate conduct of his mercantile business to others, he entered largely into the purchase and sale of wild lands

in this county, through the early land sales at Albany, and also dealt in improved real estate until he became one of the largest land owners in this section of the State. He was a man of broad views ; possessed a mind capable of grasping great enterprises and conducting them to successful issues ; farseeing judgment and a character founded upon principles of justice and integrity. He was prominent in the Masonic Order and through his early connection with the State militia in which he held several offices, he became known as Colonel Buck. Few men were more anxious for the growth and advancement of his town or did more for these objects than he ; and in all of his extensive operations he gained and maintained the good-will and esteem of his townsmen.

In 1836 he was married to Almedia Rawson, daughter of Clark Rawson, a prominent family of Schroon. She was born September 28th, 1810, and is now living in Schroon. Hiram Buck died February 7th, 1864.

Rawson Clark Buck, the subject of this sketch, was born at Crown Point, Essex county, N. Y., on the 2d day of October, 1844. His parents were Colonel Hiram Buck and Almedia Bass (Rawson) Buck, his wife, a lineage of which any citizen might be proud, Colonel Buck being a member of the well known family of that name who were for many years prominent in Vermont, and Mrs. Buck being a direct descendant in the seventh generation from Edward Rawson, who in 1654 was secretary of the colony of Massachusetts. With this ancestry of New England blood it was natural that Mr. Buck should develop those characteristics which subsequently made him one of the men of mark in his locality.

He was one of three children. His sister, Mrs. Captain Paris S. Russell resides at, and is largely identified with the business interests of Schroon Lake, in the town of Schroon adjoining Crown Point. He was educated at the common school in Crown Point until he had passed beyond its limits when he completed his education at Fort Edward Institute, and finally fitted himself for a business life by a course of study at Eastman's Business College in Poughkeepsie. He early identified himself with Crown Point's business enterprises, and soon established himself as a prominent and successful merchant at the Center, where he established, in connection with his other business, a drug store and fitted himself for carrying on that business by a careful study of the duties of a pharmacist. In a county so intensely opposed to his political views there was but little chance for political preferment had he been so inclined. He was ever ready however to cast his name and influence with the fortunes of his party ; several times he was a candidate for the important county offices on the Democratic ticket, where his reputation as a citizen carried his vote far beyond those of his party, though defeated for the office. His reputation for honesty and integrity in every way extended far beyond the limits of his own county, and that " his word was as good as his bond " was no idle boast with him.

He married, September 15th, 1868, Emma Adele Myrick, daughter of B. J. Myrick, of Bridport, Vt., by whom he had one child, a daughter (Almedia M.) born June 12th, 1870. This is not the place wherein to speak of the domestic virtues of those whose lives are sketched ; but if a kind and indulgent husband and parent are to be reckoned as a subject of comment, then the author of this memoranda can vouch for the fact that the sweet American word " home " never had a better exemplification than in the household of Rawson Clark Buck.

The death of Mr. Buck, which took place on the 8th day of February, 1885, was unexpected. A sufferer from asthma for many years and never in good health he hence fell an easy victim to pneumonia, which attacked him when he was debilitated from attendance upon the bedside of his sick child.

Thus ending a life which was from its inception one of devotion to his loved ones, of beautiful endeavors, and honest purposes, and whose epitaph might justly be " Here lies an honest man, the noblest work of God."

---

#### WILLIAM SIMONDS.

AS early as the beginning of the present century, Gardner Simonds came into Elizabethtown, from Shoreham, Vt. He brought with him his family and purchased a farm on











R. C. Buck.





what has since been known as "Simonds Hill." One of his sons was Erastus Simonds, father of the subject of this sketch. Erastus Simonds also became a farmer and lived in several different localities in the town, in the Simonds Hill region. To any one having a knowledge of this town as far as relates to its agricultural adaptation, it will not be surprising that many of the settlers were more or less discouraged with their prospects.

Here, on a wilderness farm, was born on the 10th day of September, 1808, the subject of this sketch, William Simonds. His early years were passed amid the toils and hardships of pioneer life, on the farm occupied by his father, interspersed with very meagre seasons of going to the early district schools. The first school he attended was kept in a primitive building which stood about half a mile north of the present school-house, on Simonds Hill. One of the first teachers was Huldah Little, who had a method of punishing her refractory pupils by making them climb up the logs on the gable of the school house, where they would get thoroughly smoked by the big chimney. William remained at home until he was about fourteen years old, all of which time he lived on the Hill farm. He then left the paternal roof and struck out for himself, working for six years for different farmers in the town, among whom were James Esterbrook, who lived up the valley of the Boquet, and Jesse Churchill, about one and a half miles northeast of Elizabethtown village. When he reached the age of twenty years, having saved a little money, he purchased a farm of one hundred and sixty acres on Simonds Hill, to which his father's family removed and he lived with them. There he built a log house and passed about twenty years of his life, in the arduous toil necessary to the improvement of a farm in this locality. His father died on the farm in 1842. When he was twenty-five years old, he married Lydia Minerva Hanchett, daughter of Squire Hanchett, who also lived on the Hill. She was a young lady of more than ordinary intelligence and strength of character, and has ever since shared the labor and enjoyment of her husband and still walks by his side in the serenity of contented age.

After twenty years of farm life, Mr. Simonds became convinced that he could better himself in another vocation, and accordingly sold out and removed to Black Pond, where he occupied and kept the hotel there. This house was on the road leading to Moriah, over which there was a large amount of teaming, drawing ore, lumber, etc., which gave the hotel a liberal support. It has been often said that few men know how to keep a hotel; if this is a correct statement, William Simonds is one of the few. He remained there three years, becoming more and more popular, at the end of which time David Judd, the owner of the old Valley House, in Elizabethtown (which stood nearer the branch of the Boquet than the present house of that name), induced him to come to the village and take the management of that hotel. That was previous to the period when each summer brought hundreds of tourists into and through this village; but it being the county seat, the hotel patronage has always been large, and Mr. Simonds soon proved his ability to secure the guests and to so take care of them that they would not willingly leave his house for another. He kept the Valley House about two years, reaping substantial success, when it was burned with all its contents. This was a terrible loss to Mr. Simonds, for his insurance had but recently expired and was not then renewed. He consequently found himself without house or home. Judge Henry H. Ross, of Essex, was then the owner of the Mansion House, in Elizabethtown, as it then existed, and two years after the fire Mr. Simonds purchased the property. Here his success in keeping a popular house was unqualified, and in 1874, with the growth of summer travel into the Adirondack region and the increased attendance at courts and for other county business, he found his house too small for his largely extended patronage. He accordingly rebuilt the hotel to its present splendid proportions. It is excellently planned for the comfort of guests, with large dining-rooms, so arranged as to secure perfect ventilation, broad piazzas, ample grounds and connected with a productive farm, from which fresh products for the table are procured. The Mansion House is now known and its merits appreciated throughout the country.

During his life Mr. Simonds has gained a reputation, outside of his business, as an esti-

mable citizen in all respects. His townsmen have elected him supervisor and to other town offices, although he has never sought public station of any kind. Indeed, he is of a retiring disposition naturally, though at perfect ease in any circle, and possesses the somewhat rare qualities that make the stranger feel as if he had long known him. Courtly and urbane in manner, possessed of sound common sense and excellent judgment, he quickly wins friends and their confidence, to which it is his nature to remain steadfast. Though not in any sense a public man, he nevertheless opens his hand liberally in support of all measures for the welfare of the community. He is a Republican in politics and came forward to the earnest support of the government in the time of its trial. He contributes liberally to the support of all the churches of the town, believing they are all engaged in good work.

Mr. Simonds's family consists of two daughters and his wife. The eldest daughter is the wife of T. C. Lamson, who is connected with the management of the Mansion House. The other daughter is the wife of Orlando Kellogg, proprietor of the Windsor, in Elizabethtown. A son died in infancy.

---

#### GEORGE SHERMAN.

IN the year 1802, Nathan Sherman joined the tide of emigration and left the town of Clarendon, Rutland county, Vt., for Moriah, Essex county, N. Y. He took with him his wife and two sons, the youngest being less than a year old. He was a farmer and located on a place a little south of Moriah Corners. He was a man of more than ordinary native ability, and became prominent in the community; was elected to the office of justice of the peace, town clerk and otherwise honored by his townsmen. Later in life he removed to near Rochester, locating on a farm where he remained until his death. His children were three sons and three daughters, as follows: Harry, George, Laura, Olive, Alfred and Mary Ann.

George Sherman, the subject of this sketch, was born in Clarendon, Vt., on the 22d of October, 1801, being the second son of Nathan Sherman, and came with his parents to Moriah, in 1802, when less than a year old. His early life did not differ materially from that of the children of other early settlers in the county, who made farming their occupation. That he found hard work to do is certain, and it was relieved but little by brief seasons, mostly in winter months, in the district schools; these were the only sources of his education, as far as schools were concerned. But he was a man of active intelligence and inquiring mind, and he soon added a fund of general information to the education obtained in the schools.

He remained on his father's farm until he reached his majority, when he was united in marriage with Thedy Tarbell, daughter of ——— Tarbell, and sister of Daniel Tarbell, one of the pioneer families of Moriah. He continued farming until about 1826, when he engaged in the lumber business and built a saw-mill a little west of Moriah Corners, on Mill Brook. The manufacture and shipment of lumber was then and for many years afterward, the chief industry of this region, and Mill Brook earned its name by turning many busy wheels.

In 1834 he sold out his property and removed to Moriah village; but he remained there only a short time, when he purchased a farm west of the village, and while living there, operated what was known as the stone saw-mills. This property was then owned by Messrs. Cole and Tarbell. He remained there several years, but finally disposed of his property and joined his father for one season, near Rochester. Returning he engaged in mercantile business at Moriah village. This continued until, in 1846, he, in company with John A. Lee and Lifelet Hall, (under the firm name of Lee, Hall & Sherman), purchased the mining property now owned by Witherbees, Sherman & Co. They began mining and shipping ore, and did something in iron manufacturing in the furnace at Port Henry. This was the beginning of the development in a profitable way, of the later vast iron operations in this town. Mr. Hall subsequently sold his interest in the business to A. J. Rousseau, from whom it passed to S. K. & J. G. Witherbee, in 1851-2. [See sketch of Jonathan G. Witherbee succeeding.] The firm now became Lee & Sherman, and the divided iron interests of the two parties named were











GEORGE SHERMAN.





operated separately for a short time, when Lee & Sherman sold sufficient of their interest in their new bed to the Witherbees firm to give them, when added to property they had acquired from the Nobles and the Port Henry furnaces, an equal share of the combined properties, and the firm of Lee, Sherman & Witherbees, was formed. Finally, Mr. Lee sold out to the other members of the firm (George R. Sherman coming in on the same purchase), and the firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. was formed, which has continued to the present time. Of this firm George Sherman was a conspicuous and influential member and prominent in the development of its vast mining, furnace, railroad and other interests, until his death. One of the principal obstacles to successful mining in early days, was the difficulty and expense of transportation of the ore from the mines, over about seven miles of wagon road, for shipment. This obstacle was overcome during Mr. Sherman's life, by the construction of a plank road, of which he was superintendent. This was supplemented in 1868-9 by the Lake Champlain & Moriah railroad, in which company Mr. Sherman was a director. In short in all of the various features of the great business of the firm, he was a leading and moving spirit.

Outside of his business Mr. Sherman was no less conspicuous in the town in all matters pertaining to its general welfare. It cannot be said that any good work ever appealed to him in vain; at the same time his best deeds were not done in a manner to draw attention to himself. He was not a self-seeker in any sense, his chief aim being to be considered one of the staunch business men of the town and to so order his daily life as to secure the respect and esteem of his townsmen. He was elected to the office of supervisor and might have risen to higher political station had his inclination led him in that direction. The churches, schools and other public institutions, all received substantial benefit at his hands, and the Sherman Academy, at Moriah, received the splendid endowment of thirty thousand dollars from him. [See history of the town of Moriah.]

Mr. Sherman had two children, both sons; George R., of the present firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Co., married Jane H. Douglass, daughter of Jno. C. Douglass. They have had two children, one of whom is deceased. George D., now lives in Port Henry. The other son of George Sherman was Kinsley Sherman, who married Sarah Holcomb, of Ticonderoga. He removed to Cleveland, O., where he became prominent in the iron industry. He died in 1873.

George Sherman died in Saratoga, September 7th, 1877, at the age of 76 years. His wife died in Saratoga, August 21st, 1882, aged 84 years.

---

#### JONATHAN GILMAN WITHERBEE.

THE subject of this sketch was born at Crown Point, Essex county, June 7th, 1821, and died at Port Henry, August 25th, 1875. He was a son of Thomas Witherbee, who was born April 2d, 1797, and came to this county from Shrewsbury, Mass. His mother was Milly Adams, born November 4th, 1797, in Barre, Mass. He was the oldest of eight children, and passed his youth with his parents at Crown Point, gaining such education as was afforded by the local schools of that period. When about eighteen years old he left home permanently, going first to Port Henry, where he worked for a short period about the furnaces, succeeding which he entered the store at that place (Cedar Point). He possessed a natural aptitude as an accountant and after one year in the store he went to Saugerties and engaged as book-keeper for J. & L. Tuckerman, iron manufacturers. His next employment was as book-keeper for the Bay State Iron Company. Upon the failure of this combination the agent of the company secured an appointment in Clinton prison and Mr. Witherbee was made his successor.

In the spring of the year 1849 the firm of S. H. & J. G. Witherbee was formed, the two members being uncle and nephew, and from that date until the death of Jonathan G., no one of the various large interests in which they engaged was attempted except upon an equal basis, and neither of them ever after conducted any individual enterprise. The firm first

leased the wharf at Port Henry. Lake transportation of all kinds was then at its height and they built up an enormous business, employing one year one hundred and fifty boats. This branch of their business was continued until 1868, when it was sold to the Whitehall Transportation Company. Meanwhile the affairs of the Bay State Iron Company had passed into a receiver's hands, from whom the property was leased by Mr. Witherbee and his uncle, and the development of their subsequent vast iron operations was begun. In the year 1851-52 they purchased of A. J. Rousseau nine twenty-fourths interest in the Sanford ore bed and one-third interest in the "new bed," and in the fall of 1852 purchased a sufficient interest to give them a one-half interest in the latter named bed, at the same time acquiring by lease such a share in the Nobles and Port Henry furnaces' interest in the Sanford ore bed as would give them a half-interest in the old (Sanford) bed, when all these interests were united and the firm of Lee, Sherman & Witherbees was formed. As noted in the preceding sketch of George Sherman, Mr. Lee soon sold his interest to them and George R. Sherman and the present well-known firm style of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. was adopted. The different interests then represented by the firm in this great property were S. H. Witherbee, one-third; Jonathan G. Witherbee, one-third; George Sherman, one-fourth; George R. Sherman, one-twelfth.

Tracing further the business operations of Mr. Witherbee we find that in 1852 S. H. & J. G. Witherbee formed a copartnership with Kinsley Sherman (brother of George R. Sherman) for the handling of iron ore in the west, with headquarters in Cleveland, O., where Mr. Sherman was in the immediate management of the business of the firm; the style being Sherman & Witherbees. The connection continued until the death of Mr. Sherman in 1873.

In the year 1863 the firm united with F. B. Fletcher, of Bridport, Vt., and erected a charcoal blast-furnace near Mineville, under the firm name of Witherbees & Fletcher. This connection existed until the death of Mr. Fletcher in 1874. From the iron made by this firm the first Bessemer steel produced in this country was manufactured.

In the year 1864 the firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. purchased a one-fourth interest in the Port Henry Iron Ore Company, forming a connection which still exists. J. G. Witherbee filled the office of director in this organization at various periods.

In 1868 the Lake Champlain & Moriah Railroad Company was organized, for the construction of a road from the lake to the mines of Witherbees, Sherman & Co. and the Port Henry Iron Ore Company, for the more rapid and economical transportation of their ores to the lake. The firm were one-half owners of the stock of this organization and the stockholders in the Port Henry Ore Company took the remaining half. Mr. Witherbee acted as one of the directors of the road at different times.

In 1870 the First National Bank of Port Henry was organized, with Mr. Witherbee as its first president. This office he continued to hold until his death.

In the year 1873 the Cedar Point Iron Company was organized, with J. G. Witherbee as president. They built the furnaces at Cedar Point and first introduced in this country from England the Whitwell hot blast stoves for utilizing high heats in iron-making.

Such is a brief resume of the principal business operations of Jonathan G. Witherbee. If it indicates anything it is that he was a remarkable man in his capacity to grasp and successfully direct great enterprises. In such undertakings, the detail of which would distract and paralyze the powers of men less favorably constituted for such operations, Mr. Witherbee seemed to see the end from the beginning. He looked over his ground, formed his judgment with rapidity and almost unerring accuracy, and after that proceeded to the execution of his plans with serene confidence that all would result according to his expectation. He was, as must be seen, a very busy man; but his manifold interests never worried him; in all these his power was sufficient for any emergency and his time adequate for all requirements. And he found time, too, for other duties than those confined to his business operations. He was the first president of Port Henry village and gave to all the duties of the office and, indeed, to every improvement that promised to add to the welfare or beauty of the place, the same care and efficient attention that was bestowed upon his own affairs. He was an earnest worker in











A. A. Boynton





the political field, on the Republican side, though never for his own advancement; he never sought nor accepted office, but his time and means were always ready for the good of the party, and when the government was threatened by internecine foes, none was more active and liberal in its support than he. Though not personally connected with the church, all religious organizations received his sympathy and material aid. In short, he not only succeeded in erecting a business and financial fabric of enormous proportions, but was in all respects the useful citizen, to whom the confidence and respect of his townsmen was not the least appreciated of his rewards.

This sketch may be appropriately closed with the following extract from the *New York Tribune*, printed at the time of his death:—

“J. G. Witherbee, universally known in connection with the large iron interests of Northern New York, died of apoplexy at his home in Port Henry, Wednesday, August 25th, at the age of fifty-four. He had not been in robust health for some years, but continued actively engaged in business to the last. Mr. Witherbee began life without means, and succeeded in amassing a large fortune. At the time of his death he was president both of the Cedar Point Iron Co. and of the First National Bank of Port Henry. He owned a third interest in the firm of Witherbees, Sherman & Co., and was a director of the Port Henry Iron Ore Company, besides being largely identified with the business interests of northern New York. Mr. Witherbee will best be remembered, however, for his large-hearted generosity, multitudes of poor families having been supported by his bounty, bestowed without the knowledge of others. Young men starting in business, as well as many persons afflicted with distress or perplexity, have found in him a sympathizing friend, a wise counselor, and a practical helper. In Port Henry the people deeply regret his death, as he had been for thirty years connected with the general interests of that town.”

---

#### ALBERT A. BOYNTON.

**A**MONG the very early settlers in the State of Vermont was the family from whom the subject of this sketch is descended. There in the town of Baltimore Joseph Boynton was born and lived until he reached maturity. He married Thusa F. Martin, who was also a resident of that place, and within a year or two afterward, in 1827, joined the tide of emigration to the westward and settled in the northern part of Lewis. He purchased one hundred and sixty acres of land, then covered with a heavy forest, made a clearing, built a log-house and thus began the trying struggle of making a productive farm and a comfortable home in a wilderness. On that farm he spent the remainder of his life. He had seven children, but two of whom are now living—Mrs. Letitia Leonard, wife of Lucius Leonard, a farmer of the town of Essex, and Albert A. Boynton, the subject of this sketch.

He was born on the homestead in Lewis, September 26th, 1843. His youth passed like that of most American boys in similar circumstances, in attendance at the district schools winters only, during the later years up to the time when he was sixteen years old, but in that period his application to study and his capacity to learn enabled him to acquire a good English education in the common branches. When he was sixteen years old his father died and the care of the family and the management of the farm devolved upon his young shoulders; but he proved himself equal to the responsibility and for fourteen years (until his mother's death in 1873) he managed the affairs of the family judiciously and with persistent energy.

In 1872 Mr. Boynton was married to Julia Emma Parrish, daughter of the late Hiram and Emily Parrish, of Lewis. In 1873 he purchased a farm in the southern part of the town of Lewis, which he occupied and worked until 1875, when he removed to the village of Lewis, but carried on a farm a little north of the place. This he continued until 1879. He soon afterward entered the store of W. R. Derby, in Lewis, as a clerk, remaining with him while he kept the store (about one year). He then accepted a similar position with M. Norton, where

he remained two and a half years. In August, 1884, he opened his present store in Lewis, where he does the largest mercantile business in the town.

During his career in the town Mr. Boynton has been able, while still a young man, to secure the unqualified confidence of his townsmen; this has been shown in their choice of him first for the office of constable in 1878; next for justice of the peace, which office he held for five years; and before his last term expired he was chosen town clerk, which position he held three successive years. In the spring of 1885 he was elected supervisor of the town. In these various offices he has administered his affairs with integrity and ability, gaining the approbation of his constituents and promoting the good of the community.

While Mr. Boynton may not be classed as a man of especial brilliance of intellect, and lacked educational advantages in his youth, he is yet noted for sound common sense, is well-informed on general affairs, and endowed with qualities which win him friends among all classes. Mr. and Mrs. Boynton have one daughter, Mabel C., born August 13th, 1874.

---

#### GEORGE DENTON CLARK.

**A**MONG the pioneers of Westchester county, in this State, was Daniel Clark; he was born in that county, in the year 1763. In 1791 he removed with his family to Shoreham, Vt., and about the year 1800 came to Ticonderoga. One of his children was Alexander Denton Clark, who located on the farm north of the site of Ticonderoga village, which has ever since remained the family homestead. He was born in 1787, and was consequently about thirteen years old when his father came to the town. His wife was Harma Treadway, daughter of Jonathan Treadway, a Revolutionary soldier, and one of the pioneers of Ticonderoga. He died on his farm on the 2d day of September, 1865, at the age of seventy-eight years. His wife died November 4th, 1864, leaving four children—George Denton Clark (the subject of this sketch); Julia A., married Cicero Sayre, of Westport, Essex county, where she now resides; Hosea T., now living at Ticonderoga; Polly E., married Azro Bailey, both living in the village of Ticonderoga. One daughter, Melissa A., died August 19th, 1864, wife of C. D. Smith.

George Denton Clark, one of the leading farmers and land-owners of Ticonderoga, was born on the homestead farm, February 19th, 1816. His educational advantages were limited to the district school of his home, and some attendance at a select school in the village; but he improved his opportunities and secured the ground work of a good English education. He found plenty of hard work on the farm, like most sons of early settlers, and he performed his share of it at home, until he was nineteen years of age, when his ambition prompted him to seek a different occupation. He accordingly engaged with the firm of H. & T. J. Treadway, to run a boat for them on the lake; this he continued for three seasons. He then took of the same firm their woolen factory, in Ticonderoga village, which he operated on shares for two years. At the end of that period he closed out the business and returned to the home farm, which he purchased. This was in the year 1840. In March of the same year he was united in marriage with Rosina Cook, daughter of Warner Cook, who was a son of Samuel Cook, the pioneer. She was born on the 6th of May, 1822, and still lives with the husband to whom she has been in all respects a helpmate for nearly half a century.

Mr. Clark at once took a foremost position among the farmers of the town, a position that he has since held. He was prominent in the introduction of fine breeds of sheep and other stock; brought the first mowing machine into the town and has since introduced much other improved farm machinery, a work that has been of great assistance in the advancement of better methods of agriculture. His industry, broad knowledge of general farming, and excellent practical judgment brought their rewards, and he has been able to add to his landed possessions, besides the homestead of two hundred and seventy acres, the place known as the "Cook farm" of three hundred acres; another farm lying near the homestead, embracing one hundred and sixty-four acres, and lots of two hundred and forty and one hundred acres of wild



lands in the towns of Hague and North Hudson. In all his varied business transactions Mr. Clark has maintained the principles of integrity and uprightness which have formed the foundation of his character; thus winning the esteem and confidence of his townsmen.

He has never sought public office, but has filled that of assessor for several terms. He was prominent in the old State militia, entering as Captain and retiring as Lieutenant Colonel. His politics are Republican.

The family of Mr. and Mrs. Clark consists of three sons and two daughters. The eldest is A. D. Clark, of Ticonderoga, who is married to Carrie Dake, of Cattaraugus county; Marion E., married Lorenzo Locke, now proprietor of the Leland House, at Schroon Lake. Ade, married Arthur L. Delano, now living in the town of Ticonderoga; Frank C., married Jennie Lee, daughter of Alexander Lee, living in the northern part of Ticonderoga, and James H., who lives with his parents.

---

#### HON. HENRY H. ROSS.

THE family of General Henry H. Ross has been prominent in the county of Essex from its earliest history. As far back as 1765, his grandfather (William Gilliland) on the maternal side, retiring from a successful mercantile business in New York, became the proprietor of large tracts of land on the west shore of Lake Champlain. This was but two years subsequent to the treaty of Paris, by which France relinquished to Great Britain her claim to the possession of that region, thus terminating the long contest known as the French and Indian war. The conflicting grants, however, which had been previously made by the respective governments, rendered titles for a time uncertain, producing much confusion and dissatisfaction. It was during this condition of affairs, that he, in conjunction with Phillip Skene, then governor of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, and others, contemplated, it is said, the establishment of an independent government, comprising the territory north of Massachusetts, and between the Connecticut and St. Lawrence Rivers.

All the aspiring plans, however, of the early settlers, were frustrated by the breaking out of the war of the Revolution. While Skene adhered to the king's cause, his former coadjutor in schemes of political aggrandizement espoused the cause of the patriots with zeal and energy. No man, perhaps, rendered more effective service in advancing the expedition of General Montgomery into Canada in 1776, than William Gilliland. Such was his influence that Carleton, governor of Canada, offered large rewards for his apprehension, and made vigorous but ineffectual attempts to secure his capture. His property suffered severely from the frequent inroads of the British, but his misfortune, in this respect, was small, in comparison with that he endured at the hands of Benedict Arnold, then in command of the fleet upon the lake, who unnecessarily destroyed his mills and dwellings and otherwise desolated his possessions. A remarkable evidence of his appreciation of the true character of Arnold appears in a communication transmitted by him to the Continental Congress, where he depicts the innate baseness, and foretells the ultimate apostacy of that arch-traitor to his country.

His son-in-law, Daniel Ross, father of the subject of this sketch, removed from Dutchess county, near the close of the Revolution, and established himself in business on the site of the present village of Essex. The country, at this time, was new, the population small, yet the sounds of war which for so many years had rang along those shores had died away, and nothing remained to distract attention from the arts of peace. The difficulties which had beset his immediate predecessors, rendering valueless all their toil, happily did not prevent his enterprise from being rewarded with success. His industry secured a competency, his character commanded respect. This last was manifested by his appointment to the office of chief judge of the county at its organization in 1779—an office whose duties he performed to the satisfaction of the community for three and twenty years.

General Henry H. Ross, was the second son of Judge Daniel Ross, and Elizabeth, the daughter of William Gilliland, and was born May 9th, 1790. He enjoyed excellent advan-

tages of education, having been placed at an early age in the best schools of Montreal, afterwards entering Columbia College, in New York, from which he graduated with honor. Having finished his collegiate course, he resolved to enter upon the study of the law, and to this end, continued in the office of David Ogden, until he was admitted to the bar.

Arrived now at the age of manhood, thoroughly read in the profession he had chosen, he turned away from the excitements and allurements of the metropolis, to the more congenial quiet of his native village. It too often happens that the young man at whose feet fortune has cast her favors, and whom the accident of an inheritance has relieved from the necessity of exertion, fails to develop the higher qualities he possesses, and sinks beneath the very blessings he enjoys; but his was a character too strong and solid to be enticed into the stream of idleness, down which so many, in the morning of their lives, have drifted to oblivion.

General Ross graduated at Columbia College, in 1803, and commenced, in early life, his military experience, in the Twenty-Seventh Regiment of militia. In the War of 1812, he was adjutant of that regiment, but at the battle of Plattsburg, was on the staff of General McComb, where he did good service in the cause of his country. Continuing in the militia, he held successively the positions of brigade inspector, colonel, brigadier-general and major-general. At the same time, as will appear, his advance was rapid in civil life. In his profession he stood at the head of the bar in Essex county for many years, and was held in esteem almost reverential by his juniors.

In the conduct of his legal business he was methodical, cautious, laborious. He discounted, rather than promoted litigation, and in his intercourse with clients, mature deliberation always preceded wise and conscientious counsel. He rarely indulged in rhetoric and never in ostentatious display. He addressed the understanding of his hearers, instead of appealing to their passions, and approached whatever subject he had in hand with dignity, self-possession, and in the light of principle and common sense. Upon all the political issues of his time he entertained clear and well settled convictions, and was frank and open in expression of them. His sentiments were emphatically conservative—naturally inclined to adhere to the established order of things, and not easily drawn into the advocacy of any of the isms of the day. During most of his life the principles he maintained were not in accordance with those of the prevailing party; nevertheless, a man of his mark could not well avoid being frequently pressed into the political arena, when personal influence and popularity, it was hoped, might turn the scale in a doubtful contest. Yet he was no office-seeker, but, on the contrary, a man whose elevated tone rendered him the reverse of all that constitutes that character. However gratifying might have been, and no doubt was, the confidence his fellow citizens so often expressed in his behalf, the offices he held and the nominations he received always came entirely unsolicited.

In 1825-26 he represented his district in Congress. At no period in our history has there been seen in the national capitol a body of men surpassing in character and ability that which composed the Nineteenth Congress. Webster and Everett, of Massachusetts; Taylor and Hasbrouck, of New York; McLane, of Delaware; Stevenson, of Virginia; McDuffie, of South Carolina; Buchanan, of Pennsylvania; Polk and Houston, of Tennessee; Mangum, of North Carolina, where among those who then held seats in the House of Representatives—men who have left their impress upon the history of the country. An examination of the proceedings of that congress, shows that all the great questions attracting the attention of the people at that time: The Panama mission, internal improvements, the judiciary system, the policy in reference to public lands, etc., received his close and careful consideration, and that his opinion in the national council, as in every other position, commanded the respect of his associates.

In 1828, although urged by many as successor to the Hon. Samuel Jones, in the office of chancellor of this State, with assurances that he was the preference of the appointing power, he refused to allow his name to be used in that connection. Indeed, he seemed to possess



little ambition for public place, his tastes leading him to choose the independence of private life, and the liberty to follow, unmolested, his private pursuits.

In addition to his strictly legal business, which was always large, the confidence in his judgment and integrity which the community entertained from the beginning, and which, if possible, increased as he advanced in years, led to his being selected to execute numerous trusts, and to manage the settlement of estates, to an extent demanding no inconsiderable portion of his time. He was also for years a director and president of the Steamboat Company, on Lake Champlain, and, in fact, but few enterprises originated in his vicinity with which he was not associated or in which his council and influence were not sought. A leading member of the legal profession, the trusted arbitrator of his neighborhood, an extensive landholder and agriculturist, connected with business and business matters, he was one whose relations to society around him extended to all its interests, the sundering whereof by the hand of death was felt as a public calamity.

He was the first judge of Essex county under the new constitution, as his father was under the old, all parties uniting in his unanimous election. The pressure of other duties, however, compelled him to resign the position before the close of his term.

In 1848 he was one of the electors at large, and president of the Electoral college that cast the vote of this State for General Taylor. Upon the dissolution of the Whig party he refused to join that portion of it which united with the Republican organization, and although never a member of the Know-Nothing order, was nominated by the Americans in the fall of 1875, to the office of Attorney-General. During the presidential election of 1860 he entered warmly into the contest, advocating the claims of Douglass, and was an elector on his ticket.

General Ross married the daughter of the late Hon. Anthony Blanchard, of Salem, Washington county. In his intercourse with the world, as we have intimated, he was grave, courteous and dignified, and it was only in his own house, surrounded by his family and his guests, that he exhibited those warm, social qualities, that endeared him to all. Very many will long remember his genial nature and his most generous hospitality.

The unhappy war that afflicted the land, however, at length brought desolation and grief to his hearth, as it has to so many others, darkening the closing days of his life. The death of his son, the late Lieutenant William D. Ross, of the Anderson Zouaves, was an affliction that fell heavily upon him. Added to this, he could see through the gloom and darkness of the present, but little hope in the future for his distracted country, and seemed to be borne down by the sorrowful thought that "when his eyes were turned to behold, for the last time, the sun in heaven, he should see it shining on the broken and dishonored fragments of the Union." The contemplation of "States dissevered, discordant, belligerent, of a land rent with civil feuds and drenched in fraternal blood," depressed his buoyant spirits and tinged with melancholy the whole current of his thoughts.

His ideas in regard to religion and his firm faith in church doctrines, are well stated in a letter at one time written to one of his sons in answer to inquiries made of him. It was as follows:

"In one of your letters you seem to express a desire to understand my opinion on questions of religion. If I should attempt an exposition of those principles it would be very confused. A few words will suffice.

"First. The scriptures are well authenticated.

"Second. That a church was inaugurated by Christ whose apostles must be credited.

"Third. That the doctrines established by the fathers are the only safe guides.

"Fourth. From which it seems to follow that we have nothing to hold to but the *succession, establishing* a church.

"Fifth. That every departure from the original church is without authority and an attempt to inaugurate fanaticism in the place of reason.

"Sixth. That the Episcopal church is the true church, as being founded on all the authorities to which we have access; that church being a *reformation* of the corruptions of the Romish bishops.

"Seventh. That the sects who dissent from the parent church are misled by supposing that the *spirit* descends and works upon the heart. If this be true, it establishes the principle that *ignorant mortals* who differ from each other ought to be credited rather than the Bible, the traditions of the apostles and the fathers of the church, in short, is a religion founded on the opinions of *ignorant men*, and is a *substitution* of feeling and caprice, in the place of doctrine, reason and common sense. This is all I can say in the compass of a letter. There is one great lesson:—'Do unto others as you would they should do unto you,' by which is meant, to be honest and remember that the means committed to us are intended to enable each one of us to aid his neighbors, and all within his reach to the reasonable extent of his abilities. This is the best rule I know of, and is in opposition to the course of those who make long prayers and prey upon the widow and fatherless. If my opinions are of any value, I think you may understand them from the few ideas thrown out above."

Subsequent to the death of Mr. Ross, at a meeting of the parish of St. John's church, the following preamble and resolutions were presented and unanimously adopted:

WHEREAS, It has pleased Almighty God, in His wise providence, to take out of this world, and from a position of great usefulness, our beloved and venerated friend and brother, Hon. Henry H. Ross, the founder of the parish, and who, from its foundation until his death, was the senior warden and its most efficient and liberal supporter; therefore,

*Resolved*, That while we bow in humble, uncomplaining submission, to this dispensation of our Heavenly Father, we can not but express the unfeigned sorrow of our hearts, that we have lost a firm friend and wise counselor; the bench and bar one of its brightest ornaments; the church, a firm, able, devoted and loyal son; and his family, an affectionate, tender and loving parent.

*Resolved*, That we are deeply conscious of the great and serious loss sustained by his profession, in his removal from the scene of his earthly labors. His ready and comprehensive grasp of subject; his accurate and solid learning; his spotless integrity; the impartiality and firmness of his judgment, all contributed to raise him to that high position which he so ably filled, and in which he commanded such universal respect.

*Resolved*, That as a slight testimonial of our appreciation of the worth of our departed brother, and of his devotion to the cause of the church, in providing for us a chapel, in which to worship God; the parish shall cause to be erected in the said chapel, a suitable tablet to his memory.

*Resolved*, That our sincerest and deepest sympathies be herewith tendered to the bereaved family, and we pray that "The God of the widow and the fatherless" will be their stay and comfort in their deep affliction.

*Resolved*, That a copy of the foregoing preamble and resolution be sent to the family of the deceased, and also that copies be transmitted to the *Church Journal*, the *Albany Atlas & Argus*, and the *Elizabethtown Post*, for publication.

On Saturday, September 14th, 1862, General Ross passed from earth, and on the 17th of the same month his remains were deposited in the family vault at Essex. The funeral service was conducted by the Rev. Joseph H. Coit, of Plattsburgh, who also pronounced an impressive and eloquent discourse upon the virtues and character of the deceased. A large concourse of citizens from the neighboring villages, assembled to pay the last tribute of respect to one who had exhibited to them for so many years, the model of an upright and honorable life.

Of his descendants now living, his youngest son, Anthony J. B. Ross, and his daughters, Ellen B. Fairbanks and Frances J. Ross, now reside in the old Ross mansion, built by General Ross, in 1822, "Hickory Hill," in the village of Essex. His former law office, built by him about 1814, is now occupied by his son, Anthony. His great-grandson, James H. H. Ross,



grandson of James B. Ross, also now resides in Essex village, with his mother, widow of Henry H. Ross, of whom a sketch is elsewhere given. Of his other descendants, William D. Ross, eldest son, was killed in the late war, in October, 1861. James B. Ross, second son, now a lawyer in Denver, Colorado; has two daughters living with him, both unmarried. Frederick H. Ross, third son, a merchant living at Dowagiac, Michigan; has a wife and two daughters living with him, both unmarried. John Ross, fourth son, is a member of the firm, the "Plattsburg Dock Company," residing at Plattsburg, N. Y.; has a wife and six daughters, all unmarried. Susannah Cooper, wife of Rev. Edmund Cooper, D. D., an Episcopal clergyman and Rector of the Church of the Redeemer, at Astoria, N. Y.

---

#### HENRY HOWARD ROSS.

THE subject of this sketch was a son of James B. Ross, now of Denver, Col., and grandson of General H. H. Ross, a sketch of whose life appears in these pages. He was born in the city of Detroit, Mich., on the 9th day of May, 1857, but his early life was spent in his father's native town, Essex, N. Y. His opportunities for acquiring an education were ample and judiciously improved. Arriving at a proper age, he was sent to the Jesuit College, of Montreal, and subsequently to Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y. Failing health, the first admonitory symptoms of the dread disease that was ultimately to cut him off, almost at the beginning of his career, forced him to leave the college before graduation. After a period spent in out-door life in the far west, he adopted the profession of the law, in which his father is conspicuous. He entered his father's office, in Essex, and finally completed his studies in the office of Symes & Foote, of Denver, Col. His removal to that city was prompted, to a great extent, by the continued advance of the alarming affection of the lungs. He was admitted to the bar of Colorado in the summer of 1881, and to practice in the Supreme Court of that State, in April, 1882. A few months previous to his admission, July, 1881, he was married to Anna Laura Noble, daughter of Harmon Noble, of Essex, N. Y., a young lady of excellent attainments and unusual personal attractions. Until the month of May following their marriage, Mr. and Mrs. Ross resided in Denver, when they returned to Essex.

In the fall of 1882, they returned to Denver, grave apprehensions still being felt by all friends of Mr. Ross, on account of his precarious health. They were accompanied to their western home by Mr. James Ross and daughter. A beautiful home was selected and purchased in the thriving western city, and a law office opened by father and son. Here, surrounded by almost everything that goes to make the future bright and promising, the young man and wife began their married life.

But the destroyer had not been idle, and a few days before his death, while speaking with a friend at the entrance of his office, he was seized with a hemorrhage of the lungs (a return of his former ailment), and on the 14th of December he breathed his last. Just before his death, his son, born but a few hours before, was brought to him for the first and last kiss and to receive the name he bears. Such a death under such circumstances is inexpressibly sad, and words cannot add to its impressiveness.

Henry Howard Ross was a young man of estimable personal qualities, genial and noble-souled in disposition and temperament, with inborn unflinching integrity, steadfast to his friends under all circumstances, and forgiving to any who might do him injustice; social and manly among his young friends, he was also gifted with qualities which rendered his companionship welcome to older circles, and his acquaintances of all classes and in all places soon ripened into the warmest friends. For years in the quiet village where he lived he was the life of the community; his strong hand was ever ready to join in any undertaking of pleasure or duty, and his open heart and generous disposition prompted his co-operation in all of the public gatherings and objects of the place. Eloquent in speech and captivating in manner and address, with native talent for above the commonplace, his presence was often sought

to enliven and render more successful various occasions where he lived. It will not be wondered at that his death caused a feeling of sincere and wide-spread sorrow wherever he was known.

---

HON. PALMER E. HAVENS.

THE Hon. Palmer E. Havens was born in the town of Moriah, Essex county, November 24th, 1818. He was the son of Deacon John Havens, a Baptist of the Roger Williams type and noted for his great devotion to his church and for his high integrity of character as a citizen and Christian, but was of such limited means that he could only give his children a common school education, which was all his son possessed when at the age of sixteen he commenced teaching district schools himself, and pursued that occupation during several years in the winter months. His father died in 1836, when it became the lot of his son to carry on the little farm on which the family resided, and by his industry upon the farm and teaching school winters he supported his widowed mother and younger children, until in the fall of 1839 he went to Essex and again engaged in teaching school the coming winter. In 1840 he entered the law office of the late General Henry H. Ross as a student at law. He was soon after admitted to the county court, and in that and the justice's court commenced an active practice in his profession, and in 1847 was admitted to the bar of the supreme court at Plattsburg, in the county of Clinton, and became a very active practitioner in all the courts of the State.

In 1841 he married Betsey E. Putnam, the daughter of Hiram Putnam, a well-to-do farmer in Essex, and settled in Essex village, where he has since resided.

The union was blessed with two children—Charles A. Havens, born 1842, who settled in Chicago and is now one of the leading musicians and organists in that city; and a daughter, Ellen M. Havens, born in 1844; married Augustus C. Sheldon and settled in Missouri, where she died in 1873. His wife died in March, 1872, and in February, 1873, he married Jane M. Ismon, widow of the late Henry D. Edwards, of Essex, with whom his life has continued in happiness and prosperity.

His professional skill and great activity gave him much success in business, and though at the time he left his native town for Essex he had not a dollar at his command, but was obliged to borrow money sufficient to pay his fare on the steamboat to Essex, he soon became able to purchase a home in Essex village for his family and entered upon a life of almost uninterrupted prosperity, not only in his profession, but in every enterprise in which he engaged, often honored with the different town offices by the citizens, and in 1861 he was elected as Member of Assembly from his county, largely leading his ticket in every town, and in his own town, though then strongly Democratic, receiving an almost unanimous vote, there being only twenty-one votes cast for his Democratic opponent.

Mr. Havens soon took a high rank in the Assembly, and his speeches upon the great and exciting questions of the day, which at that time so stirred the hearts of the people, soon gave him a high place as a legislator and a firm, eloquent and fearless supporter of the Union cause.

Mr. Havens was honored with a re-election to the Assembly, and in the fall of 1863 was elected to a seat in the State Senate from the Sixteenth district, composed of the counties of Essex, Warren and Clinton, and at the termination of his two years in the Senate retired from political life, declining further nominations.

But in the fall of 1866 a committee of his party waited upon him at Essex and requested him to accept another nomination to the Assembly, with a view to utilize the great influence he had gained in the Legislature in carrying through measures deemed of great importance to both Essex and Clinton. Mr. Havens, through the persuasion of his friends, consented to the nomination on one condition—that the same should be unanimously supported by his party.

His party took him at his word and every vote in the Republican convention was cast for



this his last nomination; in fact, all his previous nominations to the Assembly and Senate, "except the first to the Assembly in 1861," had been unanimously given him by his party, and he was elected this last time by a largely increased vote.

His speech made on national questions in the Assembly in 1867 was thought by many to be the best he ever made during his term in the Legislature.

This great speech was devoted largely to the proposed constitutional amendment abolishing and prohibiting slavery and the re-construction of the South, and its sound statesman-like arguments and enunciation of the great principles upon which our government was founded, as by the lapse of twenty years and the events which have since transpired in our country, renders it of historic interest, and is so illustrative of the life and character of this citizen of Essex county, that a few extracts therefrom, taken from a printed pamphlet published at that time are considered appropriate to this sketch.

The speech opens as follows :--

*"Errors in Original Construction Caused the War for Disunion.*—The Congress of 1776 prepared the timber for the framework of this free government.

"The convention of 1787 undertook the mighty task in political architecture of erecting from that timber the great American republic—the E Pluribus Unum of the western continent.

"The wise and skillful architects chosen by the people to perform the great work, found among the material furnished them, timber which showed signs of being spalt, worm-eaten and rotten at heart, and at first hesitated to blemish and weaken the national fabric by allowing such material in its structure; but, with the hope and expectation that before its strength should be seriously tested, repairs would be made, curing the acknowledged defects, they yielded to what then seemed a necessity, and by so doing exposed the whole superstructure to become a pile of ruins as soon as the first storm of civil strife and popular fury should burst against its walls.

"We should ever cherish the memory of the founders of our Government with profound reverence, and not look uncharitably upon their noble efforts to lay broad and deep the foundations of civil and religious liberty; but the history of our young nation in its development thus far, furnishes ample proof that, in thus tolerating an evil which sought protection at their hands, and admitting into our free constitution an element of despotism, under the plea of necessity and the hope of speedy removal, they made a mistake which cost their children rivers of blood and billions of treasure!

"Although most of the pillars of the great fabric which they reared stand firm, the long gathering storm, surcharged with the conflicting elements of popular fury, and the jarring, warring strife of antagonistic principles resulting from this great mistake, burst upon its dome ere the grass was scarcely green on the graves of its founders, and made most fearful rents and breaches, now awaiting reconstruction and repairs.

"Grief and sorrow over the ruins of our shattered national fabric are, however, greatly alleviated, if not fully driven from our hearts, by the consoling reflection that the great curse and crime of the age exists no more.

*"Epitaph of Slavery.*—Slavery was the most damning stain that ever blotted the fair escutcheon of a free government. It was a hideous excrescence—a fawning, leeching corrupting parasite, which fastened upon and drew its nourishment from the very vitals of the government.

"Like the poisonous Upas, its breath infected everything with which it came in contact.

"It gained a rank and fulsome growth within the halls of legislation, and gave direction to our national policy—moulding and shaping our laws in the interest of a most absolute and shameless despotism.

"The most commanding talents of our statesmen were subsidized by its omnipotent power and basely prostituted to foster and protect an incubus that was ever crushing out, with mountain weight, the noblest and most generous impulses of the human soul.

"It polluted the fountain of justice—it coiled its slimy length upon the judges' bench and our courts, established to protect the weak against the strong, symbolized with scales of even hand, serpent-like, hissed forth decrees and judgments, invoking deep and damning infamy upon the heads of their authors, and shaking the confidence of all mankind in the integrity of human tribunals. It spared not the sacred desk from its unhallowed influence; and if its occupant, prompted by that love which the glorious gospel inspires, and with lips anointed with fire from off the altar of the living God, desired to speak in behalf of the down-trodden and the oppressed, for whom as well as others the Son of God had shed his blood, its internal mandates and damp breath quenched the kindling flame of love and smothered to extinction the Heaven-born impulses of the heart.

"Its arrogance kept pace with its growth, and although at first it only craved permission to live in the Republic, it soon declared war against everything that opposed or thwarted its purposes, and demanded that nothing should survive that did not bow to its imperious will, thrusting its deadly fangs into the benefactor that warmed it into life.

"At last, in its desperation it sprang for the throat of the nation, and in the fearful struggle which ensued, the shafts of death were sent to the monster's heart, and it fell to the earth, the victim of its own madness, and its putrid carcass draped in the winding sheet of its own unutterable wickedness, still emits its poisonous stench over the land on which it grew; and the remarks I have thus made to its memory I desire inscribed as an epitaph over its eternal grave of infamy—a grave over which, under the blessing of God, we will reconstruct a free government—a government which shall have the soul as well as the name of freedom.

"*The Work of Reconstruction—Its Magnitude.*—This great work of repairing the breaches and reconstructing the Government fell upon the 39th Congress.

"The magnitude of the work is little less than that of original construction.

"Ten of the columnar supports of our political edifice are now lying around us like the giant columns of Tadmor and Palmyra, with shaft and capital and architrave alike shattered by the mighty convulsion that has laid them in ruins.

"The great problem in political architecture, now demanding solution, is, how shall we reconstruct and reunite these dissevered fragments, remove the rotten and condemned materials so unfortunately admitted in the original construction, and rear again to their places, and cover over with ivy the towers that have been rent from turret to foundation?

"What are to be the process and conditions on which the great criminals with whom we have to deal, are to be readmitted to the enjoyment of the privileges they have rejected and despised, and received again into the fellowship of the men they hated and the confidence and honor of the government they only failed to destroy, because it proved too strong for their deep-laid plots and unparalleled treachery?

"How far are these baffled and vanquished parricides to be trusted again, since the power of resistance has been taken from them—after the experience we have had and the bloody lesson they have taught us, and what safeguards are required to prevent in the future the evils of the past?

"The solution of these great questions may well embarrass the profoundest statesmen our nation affords, and demands the collective wisdom of them all.

"The war itself, with all its magnitude and stupendous operations, was nothing in comparison with this great work of reconstruction.

"Our national Congress, with the same patriotic devotion and zeal which marked its efforts throughout the struggle of the war, undertook the great work before them, and grappled manfully with the many difficulties which arose in this new and untried field of legislation.

"In its efforts to prepare the way for reconstruction, it soon found itself most bitterly opposed by the reckless, bigoted man, who had found his way to the executive chair through the crime which robbed the nation of its chosen chief.

"*Proposed Constitutional Amendment—Citizenship.*—The proposed constitutional



amendment under consideration, has probably elicited more examination and discussion in the nation, than any measure that ever before occupied the public attention.

"It was promulgated as the platform of the great Union party, and as the basis of reconstruction to be tendered to the rebels, and its discussion has done more to stimulate the American mind to an examination of the principles upon which our government is founded, and which should guide our action in the present great national crisis, than that of any other public measure since the government was founded.

"The principles involved in the proposed amendment will still bear discussion, and will hereafter as heretofore, work out their own triumph with the people, and sooner or later the rebels themselves, tired of combating truth and opposing the progress of the age, and yielding to the genial reformatory influence of an advancing and more general civilization; a more enlightened humanity will, I most earnestly hope, accept and adopt those principles, and unite with the friends of human progress in placing our whole country upon the great highway of national prosperity.

"The first section of the proposed amendment establishes and guarantees the right of citizenship and equal protection of the laws throughout the nation, and in every State and territory thereof.

"Will it be said there is no need of a declaratory provision of this character in the constitution?

"I grant that, by an enlightened and liberal construction of the constitution as it is, the rights of citizenship and the equal protection of the laws in all the States would be maintained and upheld, but through the caviling of courts, subsidized in the interest of a slave aristocracy, and the utter disregard of constitutional obligations, there has never been a time since the organization of our government to the present moment when these constitutional rights and privileges have been enjoyed in the Southern States of the Union.

"The man who dared to avail himself of the right of free speech—so highly valued by American citizens—and gave utterance to such thoughts and sentiments as are inspired by hatred of oppression and a love of freedom, who dared to advocate the great principles of equal rights set forth in the Declaration of Independence, or even to proclaim the doctrines contained in Christ's Sermon on the Mount, was almost sure to be lynched and driven from the State with violence, and, perhaps, treated to a coat of tar and feathers.

"Instead of meeting and combating truth upon the high ground of reason and argument, the bludgeon, the bowie-knife and other like slave-born arguments were resorted to, in utter violation of the rights guaranteed to each citizen of the nation in each and every of the States.

"Who has forgotten the action of South Carolina in 1835, providing by her public statutes that the free colored citizens of other States who entered her ports, should immediately be imprisoned and held in confinement till ready to pay their jail fees and leave the State, and in default of this to be sold into hopeless slavery?

"Massachusetts sought protection from this outrage by an appeal to the constitution and the law, and sent one of her ablest lawyers to Charleston to institute proceedings for redress in the high courts of the nation.

"Instead of meeting this action on the part of Massachusetts, in the true spirit of our constitution and submitting the question to an honorable and peaceable adjudication in the courts, the very officers and authorities of the State in high dudgeon, raised a mob and forcibly ejected the honored representative of Massachusetts from their borders, and continued their shameless violations of the rights of the citizens of other States.

"Twenty-two years later in our history, slavery had gained so great a power in the nation, through the yielding, compromising action of the North, and had become so arrogant and domineering in its barbarous claims and exactions, that it even ventured to enter the highest tribunal of the nation and demand an adjudication, that under our constitution the colored man had no rights whatever which a white man was bound to respect.

"Humiliating as is the confession, the demands of slavery were granted, and the monstrous spectacle was presented to the world of the highest court of a civilized nation, claiming to be founded on the eternal principles of justice and equal rights, solemnly adjudicating that a colored man, though born and bred in our own land, was not a citizen thereof, and had no right to sue in our courts, even to regain his liberty wrongfully taken from him, *that this was purely a white man's government*, and all who had a sprinkling of African blood in their veins could claim no protection to their rights under its constitution and its laws.

"This iniquitous decision, not content to pander to the local demands and interests of slavery, also sought to nationalize the institution, strike down the rights of free colored citizens of the North, and by a judicial construction, alike repugnant to the laws of God and humanity, and the spirit of our free government, to spread the damning curse of slavery over the free soil of the North.

"That decision yet stands unrepealed upon the records of the nation, sinking the names of its authors so deep in infamy as to place them forever beyond the hope of a resurrection.

"Shall we not purge the nation from this foul stain, by so amending the constitution of freedom, as to put it forever beyond the reach of such false construction—such horrid perversion?

"Sir, this noble Government of ours was made for all men and all classes of men.

"Its crowning glory is that none are so high or powerful that they can deny its obligation, and none so low, weak and humble that its protection cannot reach them. Its great strength lies in the universality of its principles and its most alarming danger in efforts to restrict, narrow and confine those principles in their application.

"From whence came this idea that this is a white man's government? Its founders did not thus establish it.

"They laid broad and deep its foundations upon the inalienable rights of man; not white men, or black men, but all men, and it was the ignoring of this great truth, and denying the application of this principle to black men, which finally wrapped our country in the flames of civil war and deluged the land in blood.

"Sir, I summon to this issue every battle-field with its carnage of blood, every soldier's grave and the surviving widow and orphans, and the army of mutilated heroes around us, to show that it is the declaration of Omnipotence that the colored man has rights that the Government is bound to protect.

"That man is dim-sighted, indeed, who cannot see in the great war through which we have passed the Hand of an overruling Providence, chastising the nation for the sins and wrongs which have so long cried to Heaven for redress.

"All the arguments that could be drawn from heaven, earth and hell, enforced with the highest power of reason and eloquence, were futile and powerless to reach the heart of the Southern slaveholder, and the men who sustained him at the North.

"The influence of the great sin to which they clung, seemed to steel their hearts and consciences against the light of reason and revelation, and the claims of suffering humanity; but that mysterious Providence, whose ways are past finding out, sent his chastising angel to purge and purify the nation in the flames of civil war.

"Shall we invoke further chastisement to our stricken land, before we, in deep humility, repent and put away from us as a nation the least and last remains of oppression and injustice to the colored man.

"We all desire relief from the great trouble which he brings upon our nation, whether as slave or freedman.

"We are all sick at heart of this trouble, and feel most keenly the correcting stripes so heavily laid upon us.

"Do you ask when it will end?

"I answer: When you have given the colored man equal rights, privileges and security with other citizens; when you have opened the way for him to be a man.



"Then, and not till then, you will have done that exact justice which will appease the wrath of Heaven, turn aside the avenging strokes, and insure stability, contentment and peace in all our borders.

"Shall we, then, longer tolerate the odious sentiment so foisted upon the nation by a slave-corrupted court, that this is a government where the white man only can enjoy protection to civil rights?

"Have we so soon forgotten the scenes of the great war; and shall we tempt the Almighty to put us again in the furnace of affliction, till purged from such ingratitude, such rank injustice?

"When the drain of Northern blood had become so great as to induce our Government, in its extremity, to accept the colored man to fill the shattered ranks of our army, did you ask him to enlist in the service to defend the white man's Government?

"When near two hundred thousand of them flocked to your standard, and shared with the white soldier in the toils of the march through mud, rain and snow till falling from the ranks with exhaustion, did you revive their drooping spirits with the encouraging assurance that this is the white man's government?

"When, through the cold and stormy night, they stood faithful sentinels around your camps to guard your armies from surprise, did you cheer their hearts and warm their congealing blood with an infusion from the altar of liberty, erected exclusively for the white man to enjoy?

"When news of the horrid massacre of Fort Pillow flashed over the wires and shocked the nerves of all Christendom with its hellish, unprovoked atrocity toward the colored race, did you tell them they must suffer this sacrifice to the demon of slavery, to prevent the overthrow of a white man's government?

"When, faithful to your orders, they made the deadly charge upon the enemy's guns, and the exploding shells sent their mangled bodies and dismembered limbs in every direction, covering glaciis, ditch and scarp, in the wildest havoc of human life, did you inform them that such bravery would be rewarded with a glorious triumph to the white man's government?

"And in that awful conflict at Fort Wagner, did you follow in the track of the Massachusetts Fifty-fourth, as they led the charge in the darkness of night, guided only by the flashing, roaring guns of the enemy, from which they received unflinchingly in their bosoms the missiles of death, that covered the earth with heaps of slain, and when the contest was over did you whisper in their ears the words of comfort and consolation that all this was suffered to defend the white man's government?

"No, sir; you did not then practice such solemn mockery—such shameless ingratitude. You beckoned them on by the guerdon of freedom, the blessings of an equal government and the elevation of their race to the rights of citizenship.

"Sir, the obligations thus contracted must be discharged, unless the nation shall again court the vengeance of a God of Justice and invoke further vials of wrath to be poured out upon our afflicted land.

"*Suffrage to the Colored Race.*—Shall the slave-lord, who held his vassal in darkness, lest a spark should fall upon his intellect and kindle a fire that would melt off his chains, be allowed thus to turn his own inextinguishable guilt into an obstacle in the way of freedom to his victim, and demand to hold him longer in slavery, to await the process of education?

"Thank Heaven, the love of liberty may take root and grow in the human heart without the discipline of mental culture in the schools.

"It is but the fear of this innate love of liberty in man, and that the natural struggles of humanity, aided only by the dim light which might reach the dark mind of the slave, would result in making him a freeman, upon which the whole infernal code of black laws is founded.

"The very effort to exclude all light from the mind of the colored man, is a pregnant confession that he is gifted with intellect and powers of mind that might be awakened into action, dangerous to slavery, and cultivated for the duties and responsibilities of citizenship.

"It is perhaps too late in this nation to raise the question whether the ignorance of the inferior classes, imported from abroad or raised at home, should disqualify for the enjoyment of the elective franchise.

"It seems to have been settled that the right of self-government cannot be justly made to depend on the measure of the education and intelligence of the voter. I am not disposed on this occasion to question this policy in a free government. Indeed, it is most powerfully supported by the two great leading truths, that the love of liberty is Heaven-born, and that the right to vote is the best educator of the freeman.

"But if this doctrine is to be unsettled, and a different policy pursued, I demand upon those principles of justice and equality, now fully vindicated and established by the war, that there shall be no partiality, no discrimination on account of race or color, and I will never by my voice or vote consent that one rule shall be applied to the imported Celt, and another to the home-bred African.

"The right of freedom is not, and never can be based upon race or color, but is the common inheritance of humanity.

"In the arrangements of God's providence, there are no aristocracies, save that which arises from moral worth and intellectual merit—qualities which are not transmissible by descent—nor the appanage of any particular class or race of men. The question is not whether the negro race is equal to the white, or whether the negro race is equal to another, or that all are equally qualified for self-government, but all should equally enjoy the Heaven-born gift of freedom, with those rights and privileges, without which it cannot exist.

"If, however, you should drive me to a choice of races for the elective franchise, I would, upon the evidence of the past few years, take the black man, instead of the equally ignorant white, who has become so sadly debauched and corrupted as to even love slavery, who allows the instincts of his better nature to be smothered, and who yields his conscience to the dominion of that policy, that would lock the treasures of knowledge and the light of revelation from the mind of his dusky neighbor, to hold him more securely in the fetters of slavery.

"Sir, this morbid apprehension of what is called negro equality, comes from a class of men in the south and those who sympathize with them in the north, whose real fear is that of negro *superiority*.

"They fear that with the qualities developed by the war, and armed with the ballot, the negro might possibly arise to a superiority over themselves.

"Sir, if there is really such alarming danger in this direction, that it cannot be overcome by the superior talents and training of the white man, then indeed both the ability and right of the negro to command is established by the highest possible test, and the negro has won the prize by the only standard which an enlightened civilization should establish—the standard of intellectual worth, of mental superiority.

"But in this struggle for superiority between the races, what will become of the man of mixed blood?

"If the smallest proportion of negro blood, the slightest crisp of the hair, shall deprive our unfortunate hybrid cousin from all voice in the government, then, of course, the features and flush of the Caucasian upon the other side should prove equally fatal to political rights.

"The records of history teach us that one distinction is as likely to prevail as the other.

"Sir, I fear no evil results in extending the rights of suffrage to the colored population of the South. The legitimate result will be, that both political parties will seek the confidence of the black man, and that party which goes farthest in its kindly efforts to secure his interest will receive his vote. He will be courted and respected by his late master, for the simple reason that he has become a repository of political power in the State.

"Arm him with the ballot, and the poor, 'white trash,' who spurned and despised him because he was a slave, will now respect him because he is a sovereign.

"The surest means of educating and elevating him to useful citizenship, is to make him interested in the government.



"The objection raised by the executive, and those who support his policy, that we have no power under the constitution to legislate upon this question of suffrage, comes with a strange and glaring inconsistency from a man who has himself so often exercised the same power under the Government.

"Has he not repeatedly, in dealing with these rebel States, and in his effects to carry out his one-man policy of reconstruction, *assumed to define the qualifications of voters?* If he had power and jurisdiction over this question at all, could he not have conferred suffrage upon the black as well as the white man? And if the executive had power to do all this, shall he be allowed to question the constitutional right of the law-making power of the nation, in which its true sovereignty resides to do the same thing?

"Sir, I hold that we are dealing with these rebel States as criminals at the bar of the nation, and have the right, by our very sovereignty, to prescribe any and all terms and conditions, which the future safety and peace of the nation may seem to require, before we extend absolution to the culprits and allow them back to seats of power.

"They abandoned their seats in Congress and plunged into crime to found a slave empire.

"Defeated and conquered by the Government, they now desire to be forgiven and reinstated; and if, as a government, we have not the power to dictate the terms upon which they may return, then our Government itself is a farce and a failure.

"Sir, I hope to see the day when the vision of the North will be so purged by the rising beams of universal liberty that it will see and acknowledge the justice of this measure, and use the power and right which it possesses to enforce it.

"Again, sir, I maintain that the peace and safety of our nation demands that suffrage should be extended to the negro race. To attempt to hold four millions of people in subordination to a superior race, taxing their property and exacting from them the duties of subjects without giving them any voice or representation in the Government, would sooner or later involve the nation in internecine strife and civil war. Even the despised African race, having tasted liberty, would not long consent to be thus cheated with its shadow, and contentedly submit to a condition of substantial slavery to a dominant race.

"Ground to the earth and kept in ignorance and degradation by black laws, enacted by Southern aristocrats, the seeds of rebellion against such unholy and unjust treatment would sooner or later germinate in their ranks, and the upheavings of revolution would, perhaps too late, warn the nation that it had, by its own wrong, invoked the bloody scenes of St. Domingo to be re-enacted within its borders, and the so much dreaded war of races would be upon us in all its wrangling violence and fury.

"Sir, this is no wild chimera, no fanatical delusion.

"History will not have repeated itself, unless the instinctive yearnings of humanity do not, sooner or later, drive the colored race to resist the tyranny of their oppressors, and involve them in savage horrors, before which their own revolt will pale.

"Shall such a scene be necessary to finish the great work of liberation?

"Sir, I hope the nation will not make this great mistake. It cannot afford to take the hazard. Its safest course, now, is to do exact justice to this long-oppressed race. It can be made the balance wheel of safety between the North and the South; and in any future struggle to preserve the integrity of our Government and its free institutions, the same instincts, motives and desires which induced the negro to use the bayonet in our defense, will control his action, and induce him to cast his ballot on the side of liberty and union.

"I hold, also, that the honor of our nation before the world is involved in this question.

"We boast our deeds, and take much credit to ourselves for liberating four millions of slaves, where no clearer proposition can be made than that the freedom given is merely nominal, unless the ballot is also given for its protection.

"Without arming the freedman with the ballot for his defense, you hand him over to the tender mercy of your worst enemy, who, unable to wreak his baffled vengeance upon you,

longs to pay the debt he owes you by visiting his impotent malice upon the humble instrument of your triumphs, and proving to the world the truth of what he has so often asserted, that you have only made his condition worse by elevating him to freedom.

"The rebel slave-lord is quite willing to recognize the results of the war in the nominal emancipation of the slave, if you will leave him subject to his authority, without the rights of citizenship and without any security for the practical enjoyment of the liberty you have given him.

"Such a gift of freedom is but a cheat and a delusion ; like the Dead Sea fruit, it ' tempts the eye, but turns to ashes on the lips.'

"Shall the nation thus dishonor itself by ' keeping its promise to the ear, and breaking it to the hope ?' Will you be guilty of the refined cruelty of creating such hopes only to disappoint them ?

"It would have been far better to have left the miserable victim of your guile under the bondage in which you found him, resting in the contentment of ignorance and hopeless despair, and dreaming of no change, than thus to lift him from the earth, only to dash him down again under the feet of his oppressor ; and far better would it have been for the honor which you boast among the nations of the earth.

"As the case now stands, the finger of scorn will be pointed at the government capable of the meanness of turning its back upon its benefactor, who sprang to its relief in the hour of its most extreme peril.

"I have dwelt thus long upon this question of negro suffrage, for the reason that it received but little attention in the recent political campaign.

"I would adopt this amendment as it is, thankful that so much progress has been made in the cause of freedom and justice ; but feeling, as I do, that it falls sadly short of doing our whole duty as a nation, I could not forbear the expression of my views upon what I regard the most important question now agitating the public mind — a question which I believe should have been forever settled at this time and in this same amendment of our constitution.

"I rejoice that this doctrine of universal, impartial suffrage has been established in the capital of our nation, and will soon be spread over its territories by the law-making power.

"The black pall of slavery with the last relic of barbarism which it shielded, is forever expunged and driven from the sacred soil, where annually gather the representatives of a free nation to make the laws and carry out the will of thirty millions of people.

"The fallen, back-slidden President finds himself unable to block the wheels of progress ; and the car of freedom, propelled by the voice and power of a mighty people, will continue to move forward in spite of all opposition until it carries universal suffrage over every foot of Columbia's soil.

"I shall touch but briefly upon the remaining features of the proposed amendment."

. . . . .

The closing sentences of this speech are as follows :—

"Sir, I need not dwell longer upon such scenes as this in proof that rebellion is still rampant in the South, and that these traitors are still unfit to be trusted with a return to power in the halls of legislation without the safeguards we demand in this amendment. If they will not accept the terms thus proposed, and submit to reconstruction upon their liberal basis, then I hold it to be the duty of the general government to interpose its own strong arm and reconstruct the rebel States upon the principles we fought to establish, *proclaiming universal suffrage to all loyal men, white or black*, and disfranchising every unrepentant rebel found within their borders.

"Believing, sir, that the same Almighty hand which guided us safely through the terrible war will continue to overrule the transpiring events for the ultimate good of our beloved country, and bring us out of all our conflicts a united, free and happy people, prospering under allegiance to those eternal principles of liberty, justice and equality which emanate from his











WILLIAM F. CALKINS.





own righteous throne, I yield the floor, with many thanks for your kindness in listening to my views so much at length."

Mr. Millsbaugh — "Mr. Chairman, I desire to ask the gentleman from Essex one question. If the rebels should accept and adopt the proposed constitutional amendment as the basis of reconstruction, would the gentleman from Essex vote to immediately admit them to representation in the government?"

Mr. Havens — "I will answer the gentleman squarely upon that point. I do not hold that the day of grace is yet passed for the rebels to accept the terms tendered them in this amendment; but —"

Mr. Millsbaugh — "Would the gentleman *now* — *to-day* — vote to receive back the rebels if this amendment were adopted?"

Mr. Havens — "I would — but I would give them no guarantee how long these liberal terms would be held open under their refusal to accept. I would say to them, that now is their day of salvation, and still invite them to come back; but if they continue to spurn the overtures thus made, I would reconstruct them in the manner I have before stated. I would, if need be, enter their territory, backed by the power of the nation, and with a different class of arguments and more effective measures administer to them far different terms of reconstruction than those contained in this amendment."

As Mr. Havens turned to his Democratic questioner and in a defiant ringing tone gave the above magnificent answer and took his seat, he was greeted with a burst of applause from the crowded galleries and on the floor of the house.

Mr. Havens made many other speeches in the Legislature upon the exciting questions of that day, many of which are thought to be fully equal to that from which the above extracts were taken, and it is but just to Mr. Havens in this historic sketch to allude to his speech in review of Governor Seymour's message made soon after he took his seat in the Senate in 1864.

The Governor's message was considered by Mr. Havens and others as leaning towards secession sentiments and questioning the vigorous war measures adopted by the Government for putting down the Rebellion.

This speech was so much admired by his Republican friends that the Republican State Committee published forty thousand copies of the same for distribution throughout the State.

After Mr. Havens retired from his more active political life he resumed his practice of the law, spending a large portion of his time in the Federal courts in the larger cities of the Union, until in 1879, at the urgent request of his townsmen, he became the president of a manufacturing company located in Essex, involving his retirement to a great extent from the labor of his profession, which position he still holds, honored and respected by all who know him, enjoying the health and strength of middle life, and the many blessings afforded by the competence he has gained.

---

#### WILLIAM E. CALKINS.

WILLIAM E. CALKINS was born in Burlington, Vt., December 23d, 1816, but has resided in Essex county since 1830. His father, William Calkins, was born in Canaan, N. H., in 1791, and was a lineal descendant of Hugh and Annie Calkins (Welsh-English), who came from Monmouth county, England, and landed at Plymouth, Mass., in 1740. He was educated at Randolph, Vt., and Dartmouth College, N. H., and was a teacher twenty-five years or more, in Burlington, Waterbury and Stowe, Vt.; Whitehall and Ticonderoga, N. Y., to which last place he removed in 1830; was admitted to the bar in 1835, his diploma being signed by Chief Justice John Savage; practiced law up to about the time of his death, in 1855, aged sixty-four years; he took an active part in official, educational and religious affairs, and is remembered as a man of sterling integrity, genuine Christian feeling and high moral worth.

His mother, Rosalinda Craig, was born in Windsor, Vt., of Scotch-English descent; her father, Thomas Craig, emigrated from Scotland, settled in Massachusetts, married Elizabeth

Allen, daughter of Joseph Allen, of Northampton, Mass., and a sister of Rev. Thomas Allen, who was pastor of the Congregational Church, at Pittsfield, Mass., from 1764, to his death, in 1810; he was chaplain of the Provincial troops, at White Plains (1776) with General Lincoln, and again at Ticonderoga, in 1777; "he manifested strong attachment to the principles of our free government, love of country, benevolence, charity and zeal for the temporal and eternal welfare of his fellow men," as the inscription on his monument at Pittsfield, Mass., recites. She died suddenly, at the advanced age of about ninety-one years, May 1st, 1875, which fact was announced by telegram to the subject of this sketch, then in the Legislature, at Albany, requiring him to leave Albany, "out of session;" he desired his co-member and friend, Hon. Thomas G. Alvord, to ask leave of absence for him, which, on the next assembling, he did, in the following feeling and truthful manner:

"MR. SPEAKER:—I ask leave of absence for Hon. William E. Calkins, who has gone home to lay away his mother, who, after a life of virtue and usefulness, of almost a century, has passed away."

Mr. Calkins was thoroughly educated by his father, up to the age of sixteen years; he was then placed in the store of Joseph Weed, bred to mercantile and general business pursuits, Mr. Weed then being one of the most extensive dealers in merchandise and lumber in Northern New York, and a man who drafted all papers pertaining to his business, which gave young Calkins opportunity to become acquainted with such matters, and he studiously improved it. He continued with Mr. Weed twelve years, never losing a day's time. Mr. Weed's "old book-keeper" (Captain Cornelius Van Veghten) left in 1833, when young Calkins took his place, and kept the books through to 1844, and by diligence, close application and trustworthiness, became confidential clerk and manager, and was intrusted with large and important transactions with business men and lawyers, in the cities of the Hudson, Canada and elsewhere.

In 1843 he married Amanda Weed, eldest daughter of his employer, and in 1844 entered into partnership with Hiram Wilson, in general merchandise, manufacture of lumber and iron, transportation, etc. Mr. Wilson was to look after matters in a general way, and Mr. Calkins was to attend to the details and every day management of the business; and such was the well earned reputation and business character of the firm, that numerous applications were made by first-class young men, to obtain positions at nominal pay, in order to acquire a business education.

The firm generally employed three or four clerks, among whom, at different times, were Captain Cornelius Van Veghten, who removed to Carroll county, Ill., and resorted to farming; Allen C. Calkins, who removed to Chicago, Ill., and carried on a large lumber trade for many years; Augustus C. Lemon, subsequently employed in the business of Messrs. Nichols & Co., Burlington, Vt.; Mason Stone, now of Ticonderoga; John T. Butolph, now banker at Iowa Falls, Iowa, and Henry G. Burleigh, now member of Congress from Washington and Rensselaer district. The last mentioned commenced in 1845, when he was about thirteen years of age, and continued through to the dissolution of the firm in 1852, and then for two or three years rendered more or less valuable service in settling up matters of the concern, and finally opened business at the same old stand, on his own account, which he successfully prosecuted for many years, until he removed to Whitehall, where he amassed a fortune.

In the spring of 1855 Mr. Calkins made arrangements with Messrs. Baker & Wilkie, who were doing a large trade in general merchandise, in Ticonderoga, and soon became delegated to buy most of the goods, handle and deposit the money received in bank, and by general power of attorney, authorized to check the same therefrom, pay the debts, and in short, was entrusted with the general management of the business, which was conducted to favorable issue, in April 1863, and such was the satisfaction of the firm, Mr. Calkins was allowed in settlement an equal share of the profits and goods on hand, at which time the goods were sold out to the junior partner of the concern.

In 1865 to 1870 Mr. Calkins bought several parcels of land of Edward Ellice, and of



Charles Wheeler, amounting to some eighty-five acres, near the business centre of the town, including a splendid water power, a portion of which he has cultivated, laid out about a mile into streets (and ceded the same to town without fee), and lots to sell, as wanted. In 1873 he sold fifteen acres and extensive water power to the Lake George Manufacturing Company, on which a large cotton mill was erected, which gave new impulse to the business of the place, and largely contributed to the prosperity and advance of the town. He has sold over \$30,000 of real estate and still holds a large amount of desirable land ready to sell.

In March, 1864, Colonel Calkins was in New York city, when the president (R. C. Manning) and several of the directors of the American Graphite Company, and the Ticonderoga Iron Company, applied to him to take charge of their business at Ticonderoga, as general superintendent, and a bargain was concluded at a salary of \$2,500 per year, and the keeping of his horse. He then held the office of county clerk, and immediately after his return home, he consulted many of the leading men of his party about the county, informing them what he had done, and that the salary was worth more than the whole income of the clerk's office, and proposed to resign; but every man consulted enjoined him not to resign on any consideration, which advice prevailed, and he discharged the duties of the clerk's office for about two years, largely through the aid of an efficient and experienced deputy and helpers, keeping a general oversight and attending to court duties in person.

He commenced service as superintendent of the companies mentioned in April, 1864, and continued about two years, and among other things, after careful personal inspection of the iron works of Messrs. J. & J. Rogers, at Ausable Forks and at Black Brook, he erected one of the best forges and buildings appurtenant, in Northern New York, with six fires and capacity for six more fires; made the bricks at Lake George and built several coal kilns; had at one time about 12,000 cords of wood cut on the shores of Lake George, and put the works in successful operation in 1865, acknowledging himself under great obligations to Messrs. J. & J. Rogers, for their untiring courtesy and kindness, valuable advice and suggestions.

Much of the time he had employed for the two companies 150 to 200 men, in the different departments, and also had the valuable experience and skill of William Hooper, in the management and working of the extensive black lead mill.

He was enrolled in the 9th Regiment, 40th Brigade, 11th Division, of the militia of this State in 1835, and performed his duties therein for about ten years, holding several non-commissions in company and staff, and several commissions during that period, including quartermaster, major, and closing out with lieutenant-colonel, commanding. The several commissions were respectively issued by Governors William L. Marcy, William H. Seward and William C. Bouck. Then an interim in military affairs until the breaking out of the Rebellion in 1861, when he was chosen one of the central military committee of the county (consisting of seven members), and contributed largely in money, with pen, speeches and active labor, at home and abroad, in raising men, caring for their support, and in general influence, to sustain the Government. The military committee above mentioned were H. H. Ross, George W. Goff, A. C. Hand, John A. Lee, Belden Noble, E. W. Rogers and William E. Calkins.

In politics he was formerly a Whig, but joined the Republicans on the formation of the party, and was among the first to organize in Ticonderoga, starting off with only twenty-seven votes, and has ever since acted and voted with that organization.

The public trusts he has filled in town and county have been very numerous.

In 1843 he was elected town clerk of Ticonderoga, by the unanimous vote of both Whigs and Democrats, and twice re-elected to the same office; then elected commissioner of highways, inspector of election, etc. In 1851 he was elected supervisor, and again in 1853-54-58, chairman of the board in 1853-54, declined nomination in 1855-56-59; elected again (after holding the office of county clerk twelve years), in 1873-74-75-76-77-78-79-80-81; chairman of the board in 1873-74-77-78. In 1859, when chairman of the caucus, he erased his own name from the report of the nominating committee, for supervisor, and inserted Henry G. Burleigh's name, and asked the caucus to ratify it.

He declined nomination for county clerk, in 1857, but accepted in 1860, and was nominated by acclamation, with the following comment in the report of the proceedings of the convention :

“ William E. Calkins is emphatically a people’s man and deservedly one of the most popular young men of the county. He could have held any office in the county, at any time for the last ten years, by simply asking for it ; but he has been no office-seeker, and has uniformly refused a nomination, etc.”

He was elected, and after holding the office about four months, he was offered and urged to accept the collectorship of the Northern District of New York, by competent authority “ to deliver,” with twenty-four hours to answer ; he finally replied, “ there are others that want it, and it’s against my judgment for me to accept it.”

He was nominated for county clerk three times, twice by acclamation and once by acclamation after one informal ballot ; he held the office twelve years, and prior to convention in the twelfth year he issued a card, withdrawing his name from further nomination. He was elected to the office of coroner four times, making twelve years.

In 1874 he was solicited by letter to let his name run for the Assembly, it being feared the vote might be close, and even doubtful, in consequence of a heavy influx of railroad men, then working in the county, constructing the W. & P. Railroad. He replied he would do so if it was the general wish of the Republican party ; he was nominated by acclamation, with the following comments in the report of the convention :

“ Colonel Calkins, known by everybody in the county, and familiar with almost every foot of land in the county, was nominated for the Assembly by acclamation. He knows our wants and interests, and will give them time and attention, as he has ever done, in whatever place he has served the public.”

He was renominated by acclamation in 1875, with the following comment touching “ our county nominations :” “ The convention did itself the honor to re-nominate for the Assembly, the old veteran of Ticonderoga, Hon. William E. Calkins. It is enough to say of Mr. Calkins that he has never failed the people in any reasonable expectation. \* \* The people have never learned for a moment to distrust Mr. Calkins,” and the convention by resolution heartily accorded “ the honors old Essex always renders her true and faithful servants.”

In 1875 (Democrats in majority) he had place on the insurance committee, and on expenditures of the executive department. In 1876 he was chairman of committee of internal affairs ; a committee upon which a large amount of labor devolved, and member of villages and printing. On the day of adjournment of the Legislature, Mr. Calkins was presented with the following warm and respectful testimonial, to which is appended his feeling response, as follows, copied from the *Albany Journal*, of May 10th, 1876 :

“ The final meeting of the internal affairs committee of the Assembly was made the occasion of a merited compliment from the members of the committee to their chairman, Hon. William E. Calkins. The address, signed by all the members of the committee, and Mr. Calkins’s feeling response, are given below, and speak for themselves :

“ *To the Hon. William E. Calkins, Chairman of the Committee of Internal Affairs of the Assembly :*

“ The time has nearly arrived when we shall bid each other adieu to mingle again in the home duties of life, and we, the humble members of the committee of which you are our honored chairman, cannot consent to sever the ties which have so entwined about our memories without expressing to you our appreciation of the very courteous and considerate manner in which we have been treated by you, to whom, in a great measure, is attributable the entire harmony and unanimity that has prevailed in our councils.

“ That no report has been made from this committee during the entire session of this Legislature with a dissenting vote of any member of the committee, is due, more than to any other cause, to the very kind and considerate manner of the conduct and rulings of our esteemed chairman.



"And we have this kind remembrance which each of us shall ever retain, that no discord has occurred to mar our friendly feelings while thus associated together; and when we shall have left the busy scenes of legislation and retired to the ordinary scenes of our daily lives, we can look back upon our companionship here in this committee room, where so many pleasant hours of labor, study and toil have been spent in perfecting or recommending legislation, as in the Assembly chamber, with naught but the most kindly feelings, and recollections that we have committed no intentional act that we did not think the people would endorse as right and just.

"When in the future our memories revert to our pleasant associations here, and the people are reaping the benefits or suffering the disadvantages of our actions here, may they have the magnanimity to accredit to us the best of motives, pardon our shortcomings, and retain for us, and accord to you the same generous, kindly feelings which we ourselves feel.

"Should we never meet again, may we all continue through life to retain the same friendly feelings which now exist; and wish for our successors the same kindly feeling towards each other, with increased wisdom to perform the high duties which will devolve upon them, that we, your humble associates have thus endeavored faithfully to perform.

"NEWTON H. GREEN,

"MORRIS N. CAMPBELL,

"JOHN M. ROSCOE,

"S. P. BOWEN,

"HIRAM MAXFIELD,

"SAMUEL B. GARDINER,

"HARRISON CHENEY."

Mr. Calkins replied as follows:

"*Gentlemen*:—I most sincerely thank you for your generous expressions of approval of my services as chairman of the committee on internal affairs of the Assembly. In the discharge of the duties devolved upon me, I cheerfully acknowledge your earnest and undivided co-operation and support. I, too, realize that the time is near at hand when we must dissolve our legislative relations and return to the pursuits of private life; and, in view of the pleasant relations I have here enjoyed, it generates feelings of sadness.

"It seems a singular coincidence that a committee, incidentally thrown together from different sections of the State, comparative strangers and differing in political and social views, should act with such uniform harmony on so many different bills, involving numerous important questions. Yet I cannot appropriate to myself the flattering compliment which you so generously bestow, but rather attribute the unanimity enjoyed to your own good judgment, forbearance and courtesy.

"Feeling assured that our intentions have been correct, I hope and trust that our action will conduce to public good. I believe we shall ever mutually revert to our legislative acquaintance with pleasant recollections, and should any of you wander to the locality of my humble home, 'ring,' the 'latch-string shall be out.' Be assured, gentlemen, that you, individually, have my best wishes for continued health, prosperity and happiness, and that I shall ever cherish the remembrance of your courtesy, consideration and kindness."

And here it may not be improper to add the comments of a correspondent, who was present at the capitol during the session, which read as follows:

"The Hon. William E. Calkins, of Essex county, has made a creditable record the past winter in the Assembly, by his careful, watchful interest and frank voting on all questions of public good. If all the members had shown such commendable zeal to hurry on public work, the session would have closed long before it did. Seldom vacating his seat, he has been ready for any emergency, and his clear, intelligent vote showed the Spartan ring. The Hon. William E. Calkins represents the bone and sinew of the public mind—the hard common sense men who have no other object but to deal with plain facts. His entire life has been one of actual contact with the people, in both a mercantile and civil capacity, and he has never been found wanting

to the trust reposed in him. For many years his life has been one of constant activity before the public as an extensive business man or a leader in his neighborhood, several times accepting offices, the duties of which were executed with the same fidelity to all concerned. He came up to the Legislature, not an aspirant for political honors or fame, but to do his duty in answer to the call of the people, and well and nobly has he done it. Wealthy and full of all that makes the afternoon of life a tranquil journey, politics could have no attractions for him, hence he belongs to the class of men who are above the intrigues of the lobby and machinations of bad men. Colonel Calkins's address at the centennial of Ticonderoga indicated the practical, clear-headed man. So in the Assembly he spoke but rarely, but when he did speak every one listened because he talked comprehensive and to the point."

He has been a prominent member of the local agricultural societies of Essex county; he was president of the Farmers' and Mechanics' Association of Ticonderoga, and at the same time president of the Essex County Agricultural Society, for several years, including the latter, 1873 and 1874, and delivered the annual address of the county society in 1871 and 1874 and addressed several town societies at different times.

He was one of the secretaries at the organization of the Whitehall and Plattsburg railroad company, at Plattsburg, January 6th, 1866, and subsequently a director (and secretary of the company after Mr. Stetson resigned), and purchased all the right of way from Port Henry to the lake crossing at Ticonderoga, making all the contracts, releases and conveyances, and made up the final account of all expenditures of the company, duly classified.

He was made chairman of the centennial committee, and president of the day (July 25, 1864), at the centennial of the settlement of the town of Ticonderoga, and opened the exercises of the day, with a graceful and appropriate speech of welcome, to about three thousand people.

He was also made president of the day (May 10th, 1875) at the centennial of the capture of Fort Ticonderoga, by Ethan Allen, where Rev. Joseph Cook opened his able and interesting address, by saying: "This, fellow-citizens, is soil older to fame than Plymouth Rock," to an audience estimated at seven thousand people. Mr. Calkins introduced the exercises of the day, in a brief pertinent speech, concluding as follows:

"I tender to one and all a hearty welcome, trusting that all will join heart and hand in the celebration of to-day. We cannot be unmindful that the actors of a hundred years ago heed not the drum beat of to-day, but we feel assured that their spirits are marching on, and when the marble which marks the resting place of Ethan Allen and his eighty-three Green Mountain boys, shall have yielded to the crumbling hand of time, their memories and example will live, gathering brighter lustre with increasing centuries."

He has been a delegate to the county convention many times, and several times called to the chair. Also several times a delegate to the state convention. Also a delegate to the judicial convention, at Rochester, in 1870; and an alternate delegate to the national convention, at Chicago, in 1868, which nominated General Grant.

The death of his only son, who died in November, 1878, at the age of twenty-five years, was a crushing blow; he has an only daughter, now Mrs. C. G. Wicker, who resides near him. Much of his time, late years, has been spent in looking after his real estate, and in attention to drafting deeds, bonds, mortgages, wills, contracts and other papers, settling estates, etc.

He has rendered his party valuable service as a public speaker; always concise and using apt illustrations to fasten his points, and is ever ready to speak for the "soldier boys," as he many times has.

From this sketch it will be observed that Mr. Calkins has served the public, in some way, continuously, for more than forty years; and during his long career, he has acquired wide repute as a man of strict integrity and high character, and has attained a foremost position in his county.



# BRIEF PERSONALS.

## CHESTERFIELD.

**ADGATE, MARTIN**, p. o. Keeseville, son of Martin and Hannah (Hawley) Adgate, was born in the town of Ausable, Clinton county, Nov. 5 1805, about a mile, from where he now resides. Is a farmer and owns 100 acres of land. Was married in 1835 to Mary Hubbell, of Vermont. Children three living: Adaline V., Rosamond H. and Adelia H.

**Andrews, Aaron C.**, p. o. Keeseville, born where he now resides, Oct. 20, 1833. Is a farmer and owns 120 acres of land; was formerly commissioner of highways. Wife, Martha E., daughter of Capt. N. H. and Melissa (Bedell) Winters, of Chesterfield. Was married Sept. 4, 1860. Children four: Mabel, Ruth M., Clifford W., and Wilfred R. Parents, Cyrus and Lydia P. (St. John) Andrews.

**Appleyard, Joshua**, p. o. Ausable Chasm, born near Leeds, England, Aug. 12, 1812; came to this country in 1820, to Keeseville in 1827. Was general merchant and postmaster a number of years, highway commissioner and assessor. Wife, Laura Allen, of Grand Island. Children three living: Edgar and Aureliaus, of Ausable Chasm, and Frank, of Colorado. Parents, Isaac B. and Mary (Hardcastle) Appleyard, who came here in 1827.

**Ashe, Jno.**, son of Jno. and Catherine (La Chappel) Ashe, was born at Long Point, Canada East, Jan. 28, 1817. Came to Essex county in 1839. Is a farmer and owns 200 acres of land. Was married Nov. 27, 1849, to Elizabeth Paranteau, daughter of Noel and Judict (La Valle) Paranteau. Children ten living: Alfred N., Jane E. (now Mrs. Jerome Bean), of Keeseville, Adaline E., Jno. Henry, Eugenie D. (now Mrs. Jno. A. Rivers), of Chesterfield, Ellen, M. Melvina, L. Philip, George and Frank.

**Barber, C. B., M. D.**, Keeseville, was born in St. Lawrence county, June 12, 1837. Is a practicing physician, and a graduate of Albany Medical College. Wife, Mary H. Wilson, a daughter of A. B. and Catherine (Adams) Wilson, of Lisbon. Second wife, Mary A. Davis. Children three: Halsey W., Hattie G. and Chas. W.

**Barnes, Enos**, Keeseville, son of Marcus and Lory Barnes, was born in the house where he now resides July 15, 1828, and owns 135 acres of land. Was assessor fourteen years. Wife, Amanda M. Andrews, daughter of Cyrus and Lydia P. (St. John) Andrews, of Vermont. Children three: Frank D., of Massachusetts, L. Kate, and Mary A.

**Barnes, Levi**, Keeseville, son of Joseph and Susan (Poland) Barnes, was born in Chesterfield, Feb. 7, 1842. Is a farmer and owns 249 acres. Mr. Barnes was married Nov. 12, 1860, to Armenia Abar, daughter of Jno. A. and Calista (Purcit) Abar, natives of Canada.

**Bigelow, Chas. E.**, p. o. Keeseville, was born in Chesterfield, June 10, 1853. Is a farmer and owns 570 acres. Was married Oct. 7, 1879, to Fannie Gough, a daughter of Robert and Hannah (Titus) Gough, of Orange county, N. Y. Children two: Chas. R. and Geo. W. Mr. Bigelow's parents were Artis Bigelow, born in Jay, Essex county, and Sarah (Smith) Bigelow, born in Peru, Clinton county.

**Colvin, Daniel**, (deceased), was born in Clarendon, Vt., Oct. 24, 1802, and came with his parents, Jonathan and Freelove (Bailey) Colvin, to Chesterfield in 1803. They settled on lot No. 5, and in Feb. 1813, received two grants or deeds from the State; they amounted to 408 acres. Daniel occupied it until his death, which occurred Aug. 16, 1876. Mr. Colvin was married to Betsey Brown, a daughter of Jno. and Amy (Mattison) Brown. Children ten: Harriet O. (now Mrs. B. J. Jacobs), Ruth A., of Chesterfield, Jno. B. of Wheaton, Ill., Amy L. (widow of Daniel H. Jacobs, of Keeseville), George, of Wheaton, Ill., Chas., living on the old homestead, Henrietta B. (now Mrs. Harmon Woodworth), of Illinois, Albert (deceased), Francis J. of Chesterfield, and Harvey E., M. D., of Burlington, Vt.

Davis, Jonathan W., p. o. Keeseville, was born in Rutland, Mass., April 19, 1801, and came to Essex county in 1826. Was married June 26, 1826, to Alice Moore. One child living: Mrs. George Monroe, of Rutland, Mass. His second wife was Mary Ann Blakesley, of Weathersfield, Vt. Children three: Lemuel B., Mrs. Chas. Baker, of Keeseville, and Alice M.

Dodge, Daniel, p. o. Keeseville, son of Rev. Jno. A. and Anna (Peake) Dodge, was born in Monkton, Vt., Feb. 23, 1820, and came to Keeseville in 1848. Is the inventor of the "Dodge horse nail machine," which is used all over the world. Is a director of the Ausable Horse Nail Works. Mr. Dodge was the first president of the village.

Gay, L. D., Clintonville, son of David and Deborah (Dudley) Gay, was born in North Elba, Sept. 19, 1821. Farmer and assessor; owns 300 acres. Was married Jan. 2, 1845, to Fidelia M. Weston, daughter of Harvey and Matilda (Mace) Weston. Children four living: Matilda D. (now Mrs. Francis Allen), of Colorado, Amelia F. (now Mrs. Myron D. Richardson), Elizabeth E., and Sidney W., of Kansas.

La Fountain, L., Keeseville, son of Mark and Elizabeth (Panno) La Fountain, was born in Chazy, Clinton county, March 7, 1820. Is a farmer and owns 80 acres. Wife, Nancy P. Hoag, a daughter of Sarah and Joshua Hoag, natives of Dutchess county, who came here in 1801. They have a daughter, Mary Hoag, who is now in her 85th year, who resides with Mr. and Mrs. La Fountain.

Lindsay, George, son of Thomas and Sarah V. Lindsay, the former of Scotland, the latter of Holland, was born in Chesterfield, Feb. 22, 1835. Is a farmer and owns 330 acres of land; first wife, Helen Dickerson, daughter of James and Aurilla (Beach) Dickerson. Second wife, Mara R. Bragg. Children two: Seward B. (now of Minnesota), and Geo., jr., of Chesterfield.

Lyon, Charles, Keeseville, son of Gresham and Lucretia (Buckminster) Lyon, was born in town of Essex, March 10, 1815. Is a retired farmer and owns 350 acres of land; formerly assessor. First wife was Mary Jane Garrett, a daughter of James and Roxie (Buckminster) Garrett; second wife, Jane Elliott, a daughter of William and Hannah (Morse) Elliott, natives of Vermont. One adopted child, Lucinda (now Mrs. Melvin A. Edwards), of Clinton county.

Macomber, Albert W., Clintonville, was born in Chesterfield, Feb. 26, 1826. Is a son of Wesson and grandson of John Macomber, known better as Judge Macomber, being one of the first judges of Essex county; is a farmer and owns 300 acres of land. Was married to Sarah Beardsley, daughter of J. and Sarah (Day) Beardsley, of Port Jackson, Clinton county. Children five: Eunice B. (now Mrs. Rev. Charles A. Bradford), of Peru, Adelaid (now Mrs. James Wardner), of Brighton, Franklin county, Lillian M., Edmund K. and George N., a doctor of Syracuse.

Macomber, George N., M. D., of Syracuse, was born in Essex county, N. Y., May 13, 1854. His father being a farmer, he was reared to agricultural pursuits. His early education was obtained at the Keeseville academy. His scientific knowledge, for which he always had a great desire, was acquired by his own exertions. Most of his time for two years was spent in teaching to obtain means to pursue his studies, having from childhood an inherent passion for medicine. He entered the office of Dr. H. A. Houghton, a very able physician of Keeseville, now of Boston, Mass. After three years of study he entered Pulte Medical college of Cincinnati, Ohio, from which he graduated in 1878. Immediately after graduating he located in Norwood, St. Lawrence county, where he remained in active practice for four years. Not being satisfied to remain longer in so small a town, in the spring of 1882 he sold out to a young physician who was desirous of purchasing an established practice, and at once removed to Syracuse, N. Y. He entered the office formerly occupied by the late Dr. Bigelow, 110 South Salina street, and by his close application to business and courteous and gentlemanly treatment, he has not only built up a large and lucrative practice, but enjoys the confidence of the entire community and the respect of the medical profession, who recognize in him a young man of very marked ability. In the treatment of chronic diseases he has been especially successful, often being called in consultation in difficult cases, in preference to older practitioners.

McGuire, M., p. o. Keeseville, son of Jno. and Catherine (Jordan) McGuire, was born in Lewis, Aug. 24, 1848. Is proprietor of the Commercial Hotel of Keeseville, which he erected in 1882. Was married April 1, 1884, to Sarah Doyle, of Keeseville.

Mills, James, Keeseville, was born in Orford, Oct. 17, 1820. Is retired from business. Came to Keeseville from Clintonville with his parents, Benjamin and Olive (Woodbury) Mills, in 1826. Was married to first wife, Adaline Strong, in 1845, and in 1861 to Asenath E. Smith, a daughter of S. K. and Almira W. Smith, from Hardwick, Vt.

Mussen, Jno. F., Keeseville, was born in Chesterfield. Is a farmer and owns 300 acres of land; also a wagon and brick-maker. He was married to Francine M. Willis, a daughter of Warren and Susan M. (Shaw) Willis. Mr. Willis was a native of Westford, Vt., and came



here about 1835. Mrs. W. was a native of Potsdam, St. Lawrence county, and came here when she was married, March 29, 1842. Edmund W., their son, was in Co. F., N. Y. S. V., was taken prisoner at the second battle of Fair Oaks, Oct. 29, 1864, and conveyed to Salisbury prison, N. C., where he died Jan. 4, 1865. Their other children are Francine, who was married Oct. 16, 1872, Harry I., who died March 29, 1872, and Warren L., who died Sept. 4, 1875.

Nichols, Rowland, Clintonville, was born in Pittstown, Rensselaer county, Aug. 24, 1800, and removed with his parents, Nathan and Mary (Reynolds) Nichols, to Elizabethtown in 1804. Was married to Elizabeth Durand, of Elizabethtown, May 24, 1825. Children seven: Mary, Elvira, Charles, Edward, La Fayette, John, and Amna. His second wife was Marcia T. Weston, a daughter of Samuel and Elouisa (McArthur) Weston. Mr. Nichols died June 16.

Pickle, Jno., Keeseville, son of Jno. and Hannah (Ferrand) Pickle, was born in the town of Broome, Canada East, April 3, 1822, and came to Essex county in 1848. Is a farmer and owns 90 acres. Was married Sept. 27, 1849, to Jane Hines, daughter of James and Susan Hines, of Chesterfield. Childred one, Elsworth J.

Prime, Henry M., p. o. Keeseville, was born in the town of Jay, Feb. 21, 1835. Is a general dealer in horses, harnesses, wagons, cattle, reapers, mowers, horse rakes, etc. Has been supervisor and collector for several years in Jay. Was married Nov. 7, 1868, to Mary L. Bartlit, a daughter of Elihu and Sarah (Martin) Bartlit, of Jay. Children three: Wilber P., born Aug. 18, 1870, Grace S., born July 27, 1874, and Anna M., born March 7, 1876, all born in Jay. Mr. Prime's parents were Henry and Minerva (Whitman) Prime, who came to Jay about 1820 from Nassau, Rensselaer county, N. Y.

Rivers, Peter, p. o. Clintonville, son of Augustin and Mary Rivers, was born at Three Rivers, Canada East, April 6, 1820, and came here in 1839. Is a farmer and owns 221 acres of land. Was married October 20, 1852, to Polly Cobb, a daughter of Ebenezer and Elizabeth (Moran) Cobb, of Jay. Children six: Ebenezer, who married Negaw Borie; Charles; John, who married Eugenie D. Ashe; Mary A., who married John H. Soper; Emily, and Peter A.

Rowe, Carlos W., Keeseville, was born in town of Lewis, May 3, 1835. Is a farmer and owns 380 acres of land. Was married September 11, 1866, to Lydia A. Andrews, a daughter of Cyrus and Lydia (St. John) Andrews. Children four: Sidney, Edna, Florence, May. Carlos W. Rowe enlisted in Company I, 77th N. Y. S. V., October 1, 1861; was taken prisoner at Spotsylvania Court-House, Va., at the battle of the Wilderness, May 10, 1864. He escaped from the rebels in about two weeks and rejoined his regiment.

Rowe, Norman, p. o. Keeseville, was born in Chesterfield, June 22, 1812; is a farmer and owns 100 acres of land. Wife, Arlina Briggs, a daughter of Elihu and Elizabeth (Smith) Briggs, who came from Rensselaer county in 1797. Children six living: Harriet (now Mrs. Benjamin Field) of Vermont, Luther B., of Chesterfield, Elizabeth S., and Stephen B., of Dalton, Mich.; Horace D., of Millville, Shasta county, Cal., Emma A. (now Mrs. Safford S. Taylor), of Schuyler Falls, Clinton county, N. Y.

Sawyer, C. D., Port Kent, was born at Port Kent, October 4, 1847, is a general merchant and agent for D. & H. C. Co. coal. Wife, Delia A. Kingsley, daughter of M. C. and Malissa D. (Smith) Kingsley, of Whitehall, Washington county. One child: Delia A. Sawyer, who is postmistress.

Stranahan, Geo. W., p. o. Keeseville, was born in Lewis, Essex county April 21, 1844; is a farmer and owns 265 acres of land. Wife, Rosetta A. Pitkin, daughter of O. F. and Maria (Skinner) Pitkin, natives of Poultney, Vt., who came to Chesterfield in 1822. Children two: Rosa P. and Mattie B. His parents were Chas. H. and Emeline (Blackner) Stranahan, natives of Canaan, Columbia County.

Weston, Blanchard W., Clintonville, is of English descent; was born May 20, 1826; is a farmer and owns 208 acres of land. Wife, Delia A. Howard, daughter of Stoddard and Jerusha Howard, natives of Vermont, who came here in 1833. Children five living: Emma A., Marcus, of Vermont, Philinda, Mercelia E., and Orrin E. Parents, Harvey and Matilda (Mace) Weston, who were among the first settlers of New Braintree.

Wilcox, Harvey, was born in the town of Underhill, Vt., April 2, 1818, and came to Essex county, about 1845; was married June 14, 1848, to Sarah Bailey, a daughter of William and Lydia (Dart) Bailey. Children five: Mary F. (now Mrs. Alambert Durand, of Elizabethtown), Henry N. (deceased), Lydia M., Amanda E. (now Mrs. Albert E. Bentley), Marriion S. Mr. Wilcox's parents were Elihu and Jerusha Wilcox.

Winter, Miss Sarah O., Keeseville, daughter of Minos and Sally (Orton) Winter, was born in the town of Chesterfield Aug. 22, 1817. Her father, Minos Winter, is a direct descendant of Admiral De Winter, of Germany, and Mrs. Winter is of the Orton family, of Connecticut, and came here about 1815. They have seven children living: Lorenzo D., of Milwaukee; Sarah O.,



of Port Douglass; Caroline, of Keeseville; R. H., of Iowa; Mary L. (now Mrs. Le Barr), of Nebraska; Francis B., of Keeseville; Elmira (Mrs. N. W. Robinson), of Chicago.

## WESTPORT.

**BETTS, HENRY R.**, p. o. Wadham's Mills, was born in the town of Essex, Jan. 7th, 1822; is a farmer and owns 200 acres of land. His wife, whom he married Dec. 8th, 1847, was Fidelia Royce, a daughter of Henry and Phoebe (Burrans) Royce, of Westport. Children three living: Chas. H., of Nebraska; Fred, of Westport; and Ella C., of Westport. Mr. Betts's parents were Hezekiah and Sally (Royce) Betts, natives of Essex.

**Buck, Henry F.**, p. o. Wadham's Mills, was born in Bridport, Vt., Sept. 2d, 1839, and came to Westport in 1844; is a farmer and owns 147 acres of land; was married April 3d, 1883, to Kate C. Tomlinson, a daughter of Daniel and Eliza (Kerr) Tomlinson, of Willsborough. One child: Hester V., born May 4th, 1885. Mr. Buck's parents were Apollos A., and Eleanor (Hayward) Buck, natives of Bridport, Vt., who came to Essex county in 1844.

**Clark, Merrit A.**, was born in the town of Lewis, Feb. 1st, 1845; is the proprietor of the Richards House and livery stable; also a farmer and owns 1,000 acres of land; was married May 17th, 1870, to Lillian C. Richards, a daughter of William and Mary A. (Henderson) Richards, of Westport. Children three: Jessie R., Florence and Cornelia A. Mr. Clark is secretary and part owner of the Westport Pulp Co.

**Eastman, Henry E.**, was born in the town of Lewis, in July, 1854, and came to Westport in 1871. Is a manufacturer of marble and granite monuments, school trustee, and inspector of election. His father, Robert E., was a soldier in company F, 118th N. Y. S. V., was taken prisoner and died in Libby prison. Henry Eastman was married to Mary E., a daughter of Sylvester and Eliza (Angier) Young, of Essex, Jan. 13th, 1874. Children three: Lizzie M., Sylvester B. and Mary E.

**Eggleston, Richard**, p. o. Wadham's Mills, was born in Essex, April 16th, 1821, and came to Westport in 1864; is a farmer and owns 115 acres of land. His wife, whom he married Jan. 14th, 1853, was Helen H. Pierce, daughter of Levi and Eliza (Boatwell) Pierce, formerly of New Hampshire. Mrs. Eggleston died April 15th, 1880, leaving two children: Rollin W., of Addison, Vt., and Frank L., of Westport. His second wife was Lucy L. Roberts, a daughter of Samuel and Gemina (Lee) Roberts; was married to her Jan. 3d, 1882.

**Fish, Elie W.**, was born in the town of Lewis, July 11th, 1829, and came to Westport in 1882; is a farmer and owns 87 acres. His wife, Sarah Swett, whom he married in March, 1857, was a daughter of Jno. and Aurilla (Matthews) Swett, of Lewis. Children two living: Allen C., of California, and Mattie. His second wife was Mary Stevenson, a daughter of Alexander and Margaretta (Richardson) Stevenson, of Westport. Mr. Fish has traveled through the Western States, where he lived from 1857 to 1881. His parents were Elie and Mary (Cross) Fish, natives of New Hampshire.

**Gibbs, Nelson J.**, was born in Westport, May 10th, 1840; is a dealer in stoves and hardware, and manufacturer of foundry implements; owns a factory at Wadham's mills, office and store at Westport. His first wife, Theresa A. Clarke, daughter of Aaron and Harriet P. Clarke, died Feb. 18th, 1877. His second wife, Jennie M. Richards, was a daughter of James and Sarah (Thompson) Richards, of Westport. Mr. Gibbs enlisted, Aug. 6th, 1862, in Company F, 118th N. Y. S. V. His parents were Warren and Abigail C. (Morrell) Gibbs.

**Hoffnagle, Jno. E.**, was born in Willsborough, March 19th, 1856, is a wholesale dealer in eggs, was married Sept. 19th, 1883, to Lucinda A. Payne, daughter of C. R. and Lucinda (Boutwell) Payne. Mr. Hoffnagle's parents were Daniel and Sarah (Towner) Hoffnagle, natives of Willsborough.

**Howard, Orrin B.**, was born in Westport, Sept. 14th, 1824; is a farmer and owns 241 acres. Was married to Delia Welch, daughter of Eleazer and Rosina Welch, of Vermont. Children six living: Prentice P., of Massachusetts; Jas. S., of Westport; Mart. A., of Connecticut; D. May, teacher in public school; Chase, of Westport, and Lizzie, of Westport. Mr. Howard's parents were Frederick T. and Catherine Howard, natives of Vermont.

**Howard, R. E.**, was born in the town of Westport, July 10th, 1845; is a farmer and owns 183 acres of land. His wife, whom he married March 31st, 1877, was Hannah Stafford, a daughter of Harris and Sabra (Rice) Stafford, old settlers of the town of Essex. One child, Harris Mansfield Howard. Mr. Howard's parents were Howard M. and Jerusha (Fisher) Howard. Mr. Howard, sr., was a native of Vermont and Mrs. Howard of Westport.

**Merrill, Henry H.**, son of Noel and Pamelia (Cole) Merrill, was born in the town of Westport, Nov. 20th, 1839; is a farmer and owns 120 acres of land.



Merriam, William P. (deceased), was born in Willsborough, Dec. 4th, 1816, and died June 4th, 1885. He was a manufacturer of iron and owned 500 acres of land in Westport. Has been railroad commissioner and supervisor of his town. Nov. 12th, 1849, Mr. Merriam was married to Caroline F. Barnard, a daughter of William and Fidelia (Mitchell) Barnard, of Stockholm, St. Lawrence county. Children four living: Annie M., Carrie A. (now Mrs. T. H. Rouse), of Albany, N. Y., Wm. D., U. S. Deputy Collector at Rouse's Point, and Jno. A., of Westport. Mr. Merriam's parents were Darius and Euseba (Potter) Merriam. Mr. Merriam, sr., was a native of Massachusetts and Mrs. Merriam of Vermont.

Page, F. H., was born in Hyde Park, Vt., Feb. 10th, 1824, and came to Westport about 1843. Is of the firm of Groves, Page & Co., wholesale grocers, River street, Troy, N. Y.; has been town clerk and is now supervisor. Was married Oct. 28th, 1847, to Ann P. Viall, a daughter of William and Polly (Greeley) Viall, of Westport. Children two: Evaline, now Mrs. Dan C. Halcom, of Plattsburg, now of Bay City, Mich., and Walter, who died at Bay City, July 21st, 1883. Mr. Page's parents were Lorenzo and Polly (Matthews) Page.

Pattison, Geo. W., was born at Whitehall, Washington county, N. Y., Nov. 1st, 1835; is a farmer and wood-buyer; owns 331 acres. He was married Dec. 17th, 1865, to Catherine Frisbie, daughter of Andrew and Sally (Nichols) Frisbie, natives of Connecticut. One child, Josephine M., now Mrs. F. E. Smith. Mr. Pattison's parents were Archibald and Mehitabel (Pratt) Pattison, natives of Washington county, who came here in 1840.

Pollard, Abiathar M. D., was born in Bridgewater, Windsor county, Vt., Feb. 22d, 1808, and came to Essex county in 1816. Is a graduate of Castleton Medical College, Vermont. Was married in 1835 to Hannah Douglass, daughter of Judge Ebenezer and Hannah (Pendleton) Douglass, of Westport. One child, Ellen M., now Mrs. James H. Allen. Mr. Pollard's parents were Abiathar and Comfort (Scisco) Pollard. The former of Massachusetts and the latter of Rhode Island.

Sheldon, Henry H., of Westport, was born in Westport, April 13, 1839; is a farmer and owns 300 acres of land; has been poormaster of the town four years. Was married Sept. 16, 1865. Children five: Arthur H., Will E., Harry M., Florence B., and Frank P. His wife was Emma Meeker, daughter of Josiah and Betsey (Woodruff) Meeker. Mr. Sheldon's parents were Platt R. and Asenith (Braman) Sheldon. Platt R. was a soldier in the war of 1812.

Smith, Gabriel A., was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Jan. 22, 1852, and came to Essex county in 1859; is a manufacturer of clay pipes; factory located three miles south of Westport. His wife, Clara West, was a daughter of Benoni and Caroline (Barton) West; they were married Sept. 23, 1873, and had one child, Lillie F. Mr. Smith's second wife was Effie Barker, daughter of Levi and Helen (Foster) Barker, of Moriah. One child, Chas. H. Mr. Smith's parents were James A. and Marietta (Munnett) Smith. Mr. Smith, sr., was an Englishman.

Spencer, Geo. W., was born in Port Henry, Sept. 21, 1840; is a farmer and owns 170 acres of land. Was married Oct. 4, 1871, to Electa J. Allen, daughter of Henry and Matilda (Curler) Allen. Mr. Spencer's parents were Jonathan Buck and Mary (Walker) Spencer, natives of Panton, Vt., who came to Westport in 1870.

Stevens, Chas. E., son of Guy and Mabel (Stoddard) Stevens, was born in Westport April, 26, 1839. Was married Jan. 10, 1864, to Eliza M. Lyon, daughter of Isaac D. and Lucinda (Holcomb) Lyon. Children two, one living: Harold. Mr. Stevens's second wife was Carrie E. Richards, daughter of James and Sarah (Thompson) Richards, of Westport. Children two living: Gertrude L. and Lizzie C. Sept 16, 1861, Mr. Stevens enlisted in Company A, 77th N. Y. S. V., and served until the close of the war; was promoted from second to first lieutenant and from that to captain, and commissioned as major January 1st, 1865. He was in the following battles: Yorktown, Williamsburg, Golding's Farm, Savage's Station, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Crampton's Gap, Fredericksburg, Wilderness, Rappahannock, Petersburg, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, Fort Stevens, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek, and surrender of Lee. He was in command of regiment from April 2, to May 1, 1865.

Torrance, Carlyle H., was born in town of Jay, April 25, 1845; is a farmer and leases 157 acres. Enlisted in Company L, 2d N. Y. V. Cavalry, Feb. 24, 1864, and was discharged in Nov. 1865. Mr. Torrance was married to Sarah Riddle, a daughter of William and Mary (Daily) Riddle, March 7, 1872. Children two: R. E. and R. W. Torrance.

Williams, Alfred E., was born in Westport, Nov. 22, 1838. Is a druggist and treasurer of Westport Pulp Co.; has been justice of the peace, town collector and is now treasurer of the Essex County Agricultural Society. Was married Feb. 3, 1869, to Emily G. Howard, daughter of Mansfield and Jerusha (Fisher) Howard. Was married second time July 27, 1875, to A. Fannie Thomson, a daughter of Rev. Jno. Thomson, of Saratoga county. Mr. Williams's parents were Elijah and Phebe (Greely) Williams.



Williams, Joseph M., was born in the town of Essex, March 26, 1827; is a pilot on the steamer running between Burlington and Whitehall. Was married Dec. 20, 1848, to Ruth Sheldon, daughter of Gideon and Sarah (Stafford) Sheldon, old settlers of Essex. Children three: Willis E., of Worcester, Mass., Charles M., and Sarah M. Mr. Williams's parents were Elijah and Phebe (Greely) Williams.

Young Sylvester, p. o. Wadham's Mills, was born in Canada, Aug. 27, 1809, and came to Essex county in 1840; is a farmer and owns 150 acres; has been justice of the peace. Was married to Eliza Angier, a daughter of Calvin and Betsey (Chandler) Angier, Jan. 24, 1842. Children three: Martha A., Mary E. (now Mrs. Henry Eastman), and Franklin F., deceased. Mr. Young's parents were Jacob and Charlotte (Covey) Young. Mr. Young, sr., was a native, of Lansingburgh, Rensselaer county, N. Y. and Mrs. Young of Vermont.

## JAY.

**B**ALDWIN, LEVI, is one of the substantial farmers of Jay, born in Orange county, Vt., June 8, 1807. His father, Jonathan, was also a farmer. Levi came to Jay and located on his present farm about 1824. Oct 16, 1829, he married Ruth, daughter of Gillman White, an early settler of Jay, and their children are: Elizabeth (deceased), Hannah, Mrs. Franklin Flint, Caroline (deceased), Loanda, Mrs. Isaac Page, Franklin, James (deceased), Wallace, Gillman, a physician, and Edwin R. Mr. Baldwin's farm comprises 115 acres in North Jay.

Barnett, Asa E., proprietor of the Ausable House, at Ausable Forks, is a native of Crown Point, son of James and Betsey (Burwell) Barnett, and was born Aug. 4, 1850; has followed farming for several years and later the meat market business at Crown Point. He entered the Ausable House Feb. 22, 1883. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Ransom Locke, a hotel keeper of Pottersville, Warren county, N. Y., in 1873; she was born in Crown Point, July 4, 1849. They have two children: Edward L., born in 1873, and Charles L., born in 1879.

Bartlett, Oliver J. (deceased), was a highly esteemed farmer of Jay. He was a son of Dr. Joshua Bartlett, a pioneer physician of Jay, and great grandson of Joseph Bartlett, signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was born May 12, 1811, at Compton, Canada. He married, Feb. 5, 1837, Miss Angelina B., daughter of Thomas Brewster, of Jay. She was born March 23, 1815, and had ten children, eight of them living: Mariah A., Lewis J. Adelia A., Daniel S., Thomas B., who was drowned Nov., 1852, Mary, Charles O., who died, Harriet E., Thomas, and Gertrude. Thomas conducts the farm of 300 acres. Mr. Bartlett died May 8, 1862.

Bee, Joseph (deceased), was a native of England and emigrated to America in 1833. He was a miner by occupation. He worked several years in the Arnold ore bed in Clinton county, afterwards at Danamora for about twelve years as foreman of the State Prison mine. He purchased his farm about 1848, which his family have since occupied. He was born April 5, 1809; married Jane Patterson in 1835. She was born in England, Dec. 24, 1813. Mr. Bee died July 23, 1870. Their children were: Hannah, Hugh (deceased), Sarah, Thomas (deceased), Joseph, jr. (deceased), and Will, who manages the farm of 200 acres. Hugh was a soldier of the 96th N. Y. V., and died at Fortress Monroe August 25, 1862.

Boynton. The Boyntons are a numerous and prominent family in Jay. They are descended from Ephraim Boynton, who located in Jay in 1806. His family consisted of eight children, all of whom are now dead. John, the third son, married Rachel Felts, of Andover, Vt. Of their eight children four are now living, viz.: Edward R., Wesson M., Mrs. David K. Day, of Jay, and John S. Edward R., the oldest, lives on the homestead of 275 acres, where he was born; married March 15, 1848, to Jane D., daughter of Gellman White. They have two children: Edmund L. and Rachel, now Mrs. Barney Bruce, of Jay. Wesson M. Boynton, of Keeseville, is the second living son; was born in Jay Oct. 17, 1824; is a farmer and owns a farm of 154 acres in Jay. April 7, 1849 he married Miraba, daughter of Joel Ball, of Jay. Their children are Adelbert W., a lawyer of Keeseville, Herman C. and Cassius. John Stratton Boynton is the third living son; was born on the homestead; has been twice married — first to Elizabeth Baldwin, who died in 1856. In 1857 he was again married to Martha A., daughter of Daniel B. Newell, who located in Mr. Boynton's present home. Their children are Lettie, John, A. Lincoln, Daniel N., Mollie, and Bulah. Mr. Boynton was lieutenant in Company K, 118th N. Y. Vol. infantry; he entered in 1862, and resigned in March, 1864. The great-grandfather of this family was a colonel in the Revolution, and one of the 71 Boyntons who served in that conflict. He commanded a regiment at Stony Point.

Brown, Henry K., p. o. Jay, a highly respected farmer of Jay village, was born July 16th, 1836. His farm consists of 216 acres. He married Kate S., daughter of Hiram Jordon, of Jay, in 1861. They have three children: Lizzie H., Linnie M., and Jamie H. Mr. Brown's father



was Dr. J. C. Brown, a native of Newport, N. H., and a prominent physician of Jay, where he practiced about thirty-five years. His mother was Harriet, daughter of Obediah Coolidge. They had three children besides the subject of this, viz.: Betsey J., who married Dennis Arthur, they have two children; Franky B. and Nellie A.; James M., who married Cornelia Coolidge, had one daughter, Eva S.; and Hellen H., who married Van Buren Keeler, of Vermont.

Bruce. The Bruce family is among the first families of Jay. Their ancestor, Benjamin Bruce, first settled in Jay in 1804. He was a shoemaker by trade, and a soldier of the Revolution. He died September 11th, 1839, leaving six children: Joseph, Jonah, Anna, Pollie, Phila, and Hannah. Joseph was married to Rebecca Houghton, a native of Vermont, and the venerable Joshua F. Bruce, of Jay, is her only son. He married Loraine, daughter of James Kimball; they have four children living: Mary, who is widow of Wesley Southmaid; Robert, a farmer of Essex; Martha, now Mrs. Henry Beckwith, of Schuyler Falls, N. Y.; and Cora, now Mrs. C. W. Smith, of Wells, N. Y.

Bruce, John B., a highly respected citizen of Jay, is the fifth youngest in a family of fourteen children of Jonah Bruce. He was born August 31st, 1822; was married September 2d, 1879, to Rachel, daughter of E. R. Boynton; they have one daughter, Sallie J. Abner H. Bruce, son of Benjamin Bruce, was born March 15th, 1835; he now resides in Black Brook, Clinton county; he has been twice married; first, in 1856, to Miss Whitney; she died, leaving two children, Selden and Minnie. For a second wife he married Minnie, daughter of Horace Smith, of Jay. Mr. Bruce served in the Rebellion; was a member of the 3d Cavalry eighteen months, and later in the 96th N. Y. Vol. Infantry twenty-two months; was wounded at Cold Harbor, and again at Pea Ridge. He had four brothers in the army: Orlin, Jonah, Franklin, and Joseph, who was wounded at Gettysburg and died at Washington, D. C. Martin J. Bruce, son of Joseph Bruce, was born in Lower Jay, February 26th, 1852; is a successful school-teacher and horticulturist; was married March 12th, 1877, to Sarah, daughter of John Otis, of Elizabethtown.

Bull, Seth J., represents one of the old settlers of Jay. He was born October 22d, 1833, is the youngest of six children of Benjamin Bull, who was a native of Connecticut, born in 1782, afterwards lived in Vermont, and came to Jay about 1805. He was by trade a carpenter; was twice married. Mother was Sallie, daughter of Seth Johnson, a Revolutionary soldier, of Vermont. He owns and occupies the old homestead of 100 acres near Jay village; was married June 29th, 1862, to Miss Mary E., daughter of Pierpont E. Jones, of Jay, and they have five children: Alice C., Mary E., Benjamin, Pierpont, and Harry. Mr. and Mrs. Bull are members of the Baptist Church of Jay.

Bullen. The Bullen family have figured conspicuously in the iron industry of Jay, and earlier in Black Brook, adjoining Jay. Samuel Bullen was a pioneer iron-maker and is said to have made the first hoop of iron in the Ausable valley. He was born June 22d, 1807, in Keene, N. H., and came to Clintonville with his father in 1819. His father became one of the original stockholders of the Perue Iron Company. Samuel married Elizabeth, daughter of Elihu and Martha (Adams) Emmonds, of Clintonville. They had thirteen children: Lowell, a hammersman by trade, lives in Jay village; Miss Sarah, with her mother, occupies the homestead in Jay; Jed H. is assistant postmaster and clerk; Charlotte is now Mrs. Benjamin E. Wells; Samuel is a hammersman for the J. & J. R. Iron Co.; Elizabeth is Mrs. George Everest. These all live in Black Brook, Clinton county, N. Y. Mr. Bullen died December 29th, 1884, leaving a handsome estate. Lowell was born in Black Brook, March 2d, 1834, married December 25th, 1859, to Sarah, daughter of James and Polly (Prime) Cutter. They have two sons, Franklin and Samuel, and one daughter, Cora. Jed H. was born in Black Brook, January 23d, 1845; August 28th, 1873, he married Amanda, daughter of Amos Avery, of Wilmington. They have several children.

Carpenter, Zimri, is doubtless the oldest living citizen in the town of Jay; was born in Keene, N. H., May 3d, 1795, and came to Jay in 1811, and lived with William Kees, a Quaker, near Keeseville. He was then a poor boy without money or friends, but by careful industry he finally gained a start in the world, and purchased a property in Jay which he improved and enhanced in value, and still owns and occupies in retirement. He was a soldier of the War of 1812; married to Betsey Mace of Ausable, N. Y., in 1819. They had ten children: Bernard, a son, was born in February, 1825; he occupies and manages the homestead; his wife is Mary, daughter of Almond Bigelow, of Keeseville. They have five children living. Zimri Carpenter is son of Nathan Carpenter, a cooper at Keene, N. H., and formerly a soldier of the Revolution.

Coolidge, Benjamin F., a venerable farmer of Jay, was born April 17th, 1817; married Almira, daughter of John Jaby, formerly of Vermont. Their children are Olvin B., Louisa, now Mrs. Stillman, Davy, Benjamin, and Diantha, who is now Mrs. Willis Dickenson, of Lewis. Mr. Coolidge's grandfather was Obadiah Coolidge, who settled in Jay about 1804. He



was a native of Vermont, and had previously lived in Lewis and Elizabethtown. Another grandson, Olvin Coolidge, was a member of the Harris Light Cavalry, and served his country until the close of the war. He now lives in St. Lawrence county.

De Kalb, John C., p. o. Ausable Forks, was born March 21, 1838; is a leading merchant in Ausable Forks; has been in trade seven years in Middle Granville, Washington county, N. Y., and three years at Ausable Forks. He owns 265 acres of land in Jay. Was married Oct. 17, 1867, to Joan A., daughter of D. B. Stickney, of Jay. Mr. De Kalb's grandfather, John De Kalb, was a native-born German, a shoemaker by trade, and while living in Washington and Essex counties, he pursued his calling from house to house, which was called "whipping the cat." He was a soldier of the War of 1812. He came to Jay about 1800, and married Lydia, daughter of Zephaniah Palmer. They had one son, John W., and three daughters, Caroline, Betsey, and Statira. John W. was married, April 17, 1832, to Submit, daughter of Captain Jesse Tobey, of Jay, and they had nine children: Betsey A., now Mrs. Wesley Ferrin, of Jay; Ermina, wife of W. W. Purmort, of Missouri, (deceased); Lydia P., Mrs. Augustus De Kalb, of Washington county; Martha, Mrs. B. F. Broughton, of Poultney, Vt.; Mary, Mrs. H. A. Griffin, of Cleveland, Ohio; William, Barron (deceased), and John C., the subject of this.

Devlin, John, p. o. Jay, was a native of the parish of Arboe, County Tyrone, Ireland. He was born November 17th, 1822; emigrated to America, landed at Quebec, July 14th, 1842; married to Delia, daughter of Ira Trumbull, of Jay. They have three children: Arthur, married, and Ellen and Alice, teachers. Mrs. Devlin died in 1885. Mr. Devlin is a highly respected farmer and owns 300 acres of land; has been highway commissioner.

Fairbanks, Ezra, is a native of Clinton county, N. Y., born at Moores November 15th, 1830. He has been identified with the business of Rogers & Co., iron manufacturers, since 1852; previous to 1863, at Ausable Forks, but since that date has had charge of their business at Jay village. In June, 1857, he married Miss Ida, daughter of Thomas Armstrong, of Ausable Forks, for many years an employee of Rogers & Co., and they have four children: George J., Thomas F., Kate L., and Ezra J. Mr. Fairbanks has held various town offices and owns about 200 acres of farm land in Jay.

Fay, Artemus W., p. o. Upper Jay, was born in the town of Keene, September 7th, 1834. Is a carpenter and paper-boatmaker by trade. June 22d, 1862, he married Delia, daughter of Oliver J. and Ann Bartlette, of Jay. August 11th, 1862, Mr. Fay enlisted in the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company C. He served until June 30th, 1865, participating in many of the severest struggles of the war and rising from the rank of private to fifth sergeant. His wife, Mrs. Delia Fay, the woman soldier of the 118th, followed her husband to the front, even to the field of battle, at Drury's Bluffs and again to Hanover Junction, where she dressed his wounds and administered to others wounded and dying. She never left the regiment except as rigidly enforced military rules demanded, and then only to join them at her first opportunity; often assisted by her cool strategy as a heroic and daring woman. Her services were at times sought and gladly rendered to Christian and Sanitary Commissions, both in hospitals and on the field. Turning a deaf ear to the entreaties of friends at home, she stood by the flag through the roar of smoke and musketry. At the close of the war she returned with the gallant 118th and was offered an honorary commission of major, which she declined. Mr. Fay received a wound on the right wrist at Drury's Bluff and also one on the back of his head at Cold Harbor, which resulted in the loss of the right eye and materially affected the sight of the other. Mrs. Fay is engaged in the millinery business at Upper Jay village. Among her keepsakes are two blankets pieced and quilted by the ladies of Westport. Many of the blocks bear words of encouragement and patriotic sentiment, names and post-office addresses of young ladies of the town, etc. Mr. Fay is a prominent Free Mason and a member of Apollo Commandery, Knights Templar, of Troy, N. Y.

Ferrin, Wesley, an able farmer of Jay, was born in Vermont, March 22d, 1825. His farm consists of 200 acres of land; March 7th, 1853, he was married to Betsey A., daughter of John W. De Kalb. They have four children living: Eber W., Maggie, Henry C., and John F. Mr. Ferrin's parents were Zebulon and Achsie (Darling) Ferrin, both natives of Morristown, Vt. They came to Jay in the spring of 1827, bringing with them four children besides Wesley, and located in North Jay.

Finch, Isaac C. (deceased), who was better known as Clark Finch, was a respected farmer of Jay, born on the old Finch homestead October 15th, 1813. His father was the Hon. Isaac Finch, who represented the 16th District of New York in Congress and was twice a member of the State Legislature. He received the military title of major in the War of 1812, and was a man of marked ability. He married Martha Barber, born in Worcester, Mass., November 26th, 1785, and they raised a family of ten children. Isaac C. Finch married Miss Esther, daughter of Horace Harrison, who owns and occupies the present Gale farm. Mrs. Finch was born



February 28th, 1827, and married March 14th, 1851, and has eight children: Flora B. (Mrs. Elijah Page), Walter B., of Minneapolis, Effie, widow of H. Abbot, Bell. (Mrs. Silas Bissell), Henry C., who manages the homestead, Hallie E., also of Minn., Mattie B. and Nettie N., at home. Mr. Finch by a former marriage had three children: Isaac, who died at Yorktown, a soldier of the Rebellion, Company C., 77th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Corinth S. (deceased), and Lydia (deceased).

Flanders, Martin P., p. o. Ausable Forks, is a native of the town of Jay, born March 20th, 1840. He is superintendent of the stamping mills for J. & J. Rogers Iron Co. Has been with the company for about twelve years and is a thorough mechanic; was married to Sarah, daughter of Joseph Bee. Children, four: Francis J., Bertha E., Sadie E., and Kittie G. Mr. Flanders's parents were Chapin and Caroline (De Kalb) Flanders, natives of Vermont.

Fuller, Dr. W. St. P., p. o. Jay, is a native of the town of Grand Isle, Vt.; was born April 20th, 1817. He began life as a poor boy, without friends or assistance; he acquired his education under most difficult and discouraging circumstances. He studied medicine with Dr. R. P. Allen, of Keeseville, and later with Dr. Haywood, of Clintonville. He attended lectures at Castleton, Vt., and in 1838 commenced practice in Jay, lower village; being a reliable and trustworthy young man, he soon acquired an extensive practice, won the confidence and esteem of his fellow-citizens, and has continuously practiced in Jay from that time. He has of late partially relinquished his practice and lives in comparative retirement, with a handsome competency. He married Maria L., daughter of John Levake, a captain in the War of 1812. Their children are Le Grand H., Frances M., both of New York city.

Griswold, George, p. o. Jay, one of the venerable and highly respected citizens of Jay, was born in Keene, N. H., in 1799, and came to Jay in 1812; was married to Polly Works, of Massachusetts. They have no children of their own, but have adopted two: Adam C., now professor of natural science in Wesleyan Seminary, and John M., of Chicago. Mrs. Griswold died April 27th, 1881. Mr. Griswold has for many years been a member and officer in the M. E. church of Jay valley. His parents were Stephen and Cynthia (Kingsbury) Griswold. They had four other children.

Heald, Clark (deceased), was born in Keene, August 9th, 1840. Was a carpenter by trade; married March 21st, 1869, to Elnora, daughter of Sylvanus and Lois (Smith) Nye. October 2d, 1861, he entered the U. S. Army from Jay in Company H, 1st Reg. N. Y. Sharpshooters, was taken sick and discharged July 11th, 1862. He died in Jay, December 8th, 1877.

Herron, Henry, p. o. Ausable Forks, has been a resident of the Forks since the fall of 1867. He came from Perue where he had been engaged in the tin and stove business. He afterwards did a very successful hardware business until May 12, 1885, when his entire establishment was destroyed by fire. Mr. Herron has been twice married, first to Mary J. Bushnell, of Perue, who died in 1878, leaving two children: Lillie H. and Clara (now Mrs. L. I. Everest, of Ausable Forks). His present wife was Ann Arnold, widow of Wilbur Jones. Mr. Herron has been postmaster for six years and owns one of the finest homes in the village.

Jones, Pierpont E., p. o. Ausable Forks, is a representative farmer and citizen of Jay. He was born June 27, 1819, near Upper Jay village. Has spent nine and one-half years in the treasury department at Washington and two and one-half years in the New York city post-office; was married August 18, 1841, to Beulah, daughter of Col. Daniel Blish, who located in Jay about 1806, on the present home of our subject. He was a colonel in the War of 1812; of his three children, Mrs. Jones is the youngest. Mr. and Mrs. Jones's children are: Mary, now Mrs. S. J. Ball, of Jay; Martha, who has served six years as a clerk in the Sixth Auditor's office, U. S. Treasury, at Washington, D. C.; Daniel, at Minneapolis, Minn.; Maggie, now Mrs. William C. Thompson of the same place; Lydia, now Mrs. Rev. W. W. Campbell, a missionary in India; Elijah B., a clergyman in Ohio; Nathan H., jeweler at Ausable Forks; Beulah B., wife of Daniel Tomlinson, Jr., of Willsborough; and Gilman M., an electrician and mechanic, of Minneapolis, Minn. Mr. Jones's father was a soldier in the Revolutionary War, a native of Connecticut, and came to Jay in 1799.

Jones, S. V. R., was born Dec. 7, 1825; is a respected and thrifty farmer of Jay. His wife was Ann Thompson, a daughter of Eliard Thompson, of Jay. Children eleven, viz: Elsie, Nettie, Emory, Josephine, Stephen V. R., William, Juliette, Byron, Lydia, Russell, and Annie. Nettie is Mrs. Aaron Weston, of Port Henry, and Elsie, Mrs. Almon Shorties. Mr. Jones's parents were Russell and Sally (Whitman) Jones. He was one of the early settlers and a soldier of 1812. They had eleven children, of whom Harry, Permelia, Eunice, Bushrod, S. V. R., Angelina, and Charles are still living.

Kendall, Frank E., M. D., a native of Keeseville, was born Oct. 17, 1858. Read medicine with Dr. Conant Sawyer, of Ausable Forks, and graduated in 1880 from the N. Y. University Medical department; in 1880 he commenced practice in Jay, and was married in 1883 to Kate,



daughter of Ezra Fairbanks, of Jay. They have one son, Charles, born June 25, 1884. Dr. Kendall's father was Chas. H. Kendall, formerly a merchant of Lewis and now proprietor of the Riverside House, at Saranac Lake. His mother was Winnie E. Bergen of Irish nativity.

Mussen, Henry, p. o. Upper Jay, was born in the town of Holland, Orleans county, Vt., Dec. 15, 1822. Has served three years in the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; was accidentally injured, for which he draws a pension. Mr. Mussen has been twice married; first to Jane E. Bigelow, in 1844. They had one son, George, who enlisted in the U. S. Army from Jay, in the Harris Light Cavalry; was a prisoner at Libby prison and Belle Isle. For his second wife he married Sally Floyd; her father's name was Michael. They have five children living: Charles A., Cassius P., Hurbert, Jane and Mary. Mr. Mussen's father was a farmer and jobber at Port Kent and afterwards Chesterfield.

Nye Bros., p. o. Jay. Wales and Wells Nye are twin brothers, born Jan. 28, 1852. In 1879 they purchased the mill property of Mrs. Clark Heald and are doing a successful business. Wales was married Nov. 16, 1880, to Rose M., daughter of Asa Heald, who was a soldier of the 16th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; served eight months and died in Washington, D. C. Wells was married Dec. 29, 1880, to Cora E., daughter of Alfred Lyon, of Valcour. The parents of Nye brothers were Sylvanus and Lois (Smith) Nye. Their other children are Elnora, Ida, Emerson, Percival, Frederick and Edna.

Obrist, Stephen, p. o. Upper Jay, was born Oct. 24, 1826; is a farmer and owns 300 acres of land. His father, Jacob, was one of the old citizens of Jay, a native of Switzerland, born in 1789. He served seven years a soldier under Napoleon; was twice captured by the British, and finally sent as a soldier to America. In the War of 1812, he deserted the British cause, having served eleven years, and came to Plattsburg, and to Jay about 1813. He first worked for the Purmorts, later for Mr. Wells, and finally located on the farm where his son now resides. He married in Jay Almira Whitman.

Otis, William B., p. o. Jay, represents one of the first settlers of his town. His grandfather, Robert, came from Connecticut, with his wife and one child, John, in 1794, and located on the present farm of John W. Otis, another grandson. They left one daughter, Hannah, in Connecticut. Joseph Lafayette, Sheldon, Loraine and Louis were born to them in Jay. William B. Otis is a son of Joseph Otis, who married Juda, daughter of William Barker, of Jay. William B. was born Sept. 7, 1824, married Nancy E., daughter of Thomas Martin, of Jay, and have four children: Bell A. (Mrs. Frank Reed), Carrie B., Linda C., and Nellie. Robert, an only son, is deceased.

Pierce, Benjamin, C., p. o. Ausable Forks, was born in Greenwich, Washington county, N. Y., Sept. 12, 1812; has been a resident of Essex county, since 1860; is a superintendent for J. & J. Rogers Iron Co. Mr. Pierce's wife was Catharine R., daughter of Isaac Finch, a representative citizen of Jay; she died April 12, 1883, aged 71 years. They had four children: Henry L., Isabel H., Earl, and Frank C. Henry L., now of Milwaukee, was a soldier of the 96th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; served five years; enlisted as first-lieutenant in 1860; he was engaged in thirty-three battles, and was a brave and daring soldier. Isabel H. is now Mrs. N. A. Throop, of Delevan, Wis. Earl, also of Milwaukee, entered the army in 1862, in the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry as private; was transferred to the 96th Regiment and made captain; he served until the close of the war, one year as provost marshal, at Richmond, Va. Frank C. is a farmer of Jay.

Prime, Henry, p. o. Upper Jay, a venerable citizen of Upper Jay village was born in Nassau, Rensselaer county, N. Y., May 14, 1810; has been twice married, first to Minerva, daughter of Benjamin Whitman, in 1834. She died in May, 1843, leaving Henry M., now of Keeseville, N. Y., a speculator; Ann, now Mrs. Charles Smith; Ashley S., of Jay; Ellen, now Mrs. Lewis Bartlett, of Jay; Minerva, Mrs. Hiram Parish. Aug. 22, 1843, Mr. Prime married Mary, daughter of Asa and Maria (Walker) Sumner. Their children are Silas W. and Spencer G., merchants of Upper Jay; Mary, now Mrs. Arthur Knappin; Etta, now Mrs. John Heald. Ashley Prime is a member of the drug firm of Smith & Prime, of Ausable Forks, and is also engaged in farming. Was married Feb. 8, 1862, to Helen L., daughter of G. H. Smith. They have four children: Peter C., Victor W., Emma L., and Matthew J. He was a soldier in the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company C; enlisted as private Aug. 11, 1862, was made sergeant and rose to the rank of second-lieutenant; was wounded in the second battle of Fair Oaks, gunshot in the neck, also in the face in front of Petersburg. Was discharged June 29, 1865.

Ryan, John, p. o. Ausable Forks, is a native of Ireland, born June 24, 1832. He emigrated to America with his parents, and was married Feb. 5, 1856, to Ellen, daughter of Matthew Judge, who emigrated to America in 1852. They have three children living: H. Timothy, Maggie, and Edward. Mr. Ryan owns a farm of 170 acres. Mr. Ryan is a native of the County Tipperary, Ireland; his wife of the County of Kildare, Ireland.



Ryan, Patrick, p. o. Jay, is foreman of J. & J. Rogers' coal yard; has been an employee of the company about eighteen years; was born in Ireland in 1830 and emigrated to America in 1861, bringing a wife and two children. They now have four children: James, Thomas, Mary and William. Mr. Ryan is a faithful worker, a good citizen, and owns a comfortable home in Jay village.

Southmaid, Nathan, was born May 23, 1796. He was one of the representative and public spirited men of Jay. He married Phebe, daughter of Jeremiah Smith. They had three children, now deceased. Mr. Southmaid died Dec. 28, 1882. He was a soldier of the War of 1812. Mr. Southmaid's father was one of the pioneers of Jay, a farmer and one of the original proprietors of the Arnold ore bed. Mrs. Southmaid's grandfather was a soldier of the Revolution and died a prisoner of war on a British ship.

Storrs, Elbridge G., p. o. Upper Jay, is a native of Beekmantown, Clinton county, N. Y.; born Jan. 24, 1832, and came to Jay with his parents in 1835. Is a contracting carpenter and undertaker; was married May 12, 1864, to Amanda M., daughter of Oliver J. Bartlett. Mr. Storrs's parents were Lemuel and Phebe (Parrot) Storrs. His father was a farmer, to which he added blacksmithing after coming to Jay; is now deceased. Besides Elbridge, they had three sons and one daughter, viz.: William, Orrin, Lemuel (deceased), and Susan, who is Mrs. O. L. Perkins, of Jay.

Taylor, Nathan, of Jay, is a native of Rupert, Vt. His parents were Israel and Rodah (Harmon) Taylor, who came to Jay about 1820. They had thirteen children: Nathan married Susan, daughter of Benjamin Bull, of Jay; she died in 1875 and left six children, viz.: Benjamin (deceased), Charles, Daniel C., Seth, Ellen (deceased), Eleazer, Maria (now Mrs. William Dudley, of Nebraska), and Florence (Mrs. Benjamin K. Coolidge), of Jay. Daniel C. is a representative farmer of Jay and one of the assessors of his town. He was born Nov. 6, 1839; married in 1862 to Sarah J., daughter of James Crary, of Saranac, N. Y. Their two children are Nettie and Warren. Mr. Taylor is an ex-soldier of the late war; enlisted in 1864 in 46th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company C; served ten months; was in front of Petersburg and other hot engagements. He has a good farm of 100 acres. Eleazer, the sixth of the family has been twice married, first to Laura E. Coolidge, of Jay, who died, leaving two children, Clark E., and Laura E. His present wife is Lottie E. Wither, of Perue, Essex county.

Thompson, Thomas (colored), is a hammersman for the J. & J. Rogers Iron Co.; is a native of North Carolina, was born a slave July 16, 1846. He left his master's plantation in 1862 to seek his liberty, and made good his escape into the Union army at Suffolk, Va. For two years he was employed by the officers of Co. K., N. Y. S. Vol. Infantry, as their cook, and then enlisted in the same company and served until discharged in 1865. He then came to North Elba, and later to Jay, where he learned iron making and hammering, which he has successfully followed for the last ten years. Since he came north he has by industry and frugal habits acquired some property and a good education. He is a member and class leader of the First M. E. Church of Jay.

Torrence. The Torrence family was founded in Jay by William Torrence, who came from Sandgate, Vt., with five sons: John, Louis, Daniel, Orrin, and Reuben, and settled in the locality known as Torrence Hill. Rusel Torrence, of Jay, a descendant of Jno., married Rhoda, daughter of Israel Taylor. William, an early settler of Jay, married Mary, daughter of Aaron Houghton. They have five children living: Luella, Maria, William, Martin and John; two deceased; Lydia and Nellie. Besides William, Mrs. Rhoda Torrence had seven children: William, Ephraim, who served nine months in the late war, Adoniram, who lost his life from wounds received in the battle of the Wilderness, Jane, Isaac, Elizabeth, and Elanora. William Torrence lives on the old Houghton farm and his mother resides with him. Ira Torrence was born Aug. 9, 1841. He is a farmer and owns 100 acres. Nov. 9, 1862, he married Lucy E., daughter of Sylvester and Lucinda Smith. They have one son, Fred, born Jan. 11, 1878. Ira was a member of the 2d N. Y. Harris Light Cavalry, Company E; enlisted in Sept. 1864, and served until the close of the war.

Trumbull, Thomas D., of Ausable Forks, represents one of the early families of Jay. Studied law at Keeseville with Gardner Storr and Lemuel Stetson, and was admitted to the bar in 1848. His wife is Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Chase, of Ausable Forks. They have six children: Richard and Thomas D. jr. are attorneys; the others are Charles, Fred, Clark and Virgil. Mr. Trumbull's father was Levi, who came with a brother from East Rupert, Vt., and located in the southern part of Jay in 1804. They had eight children: Ira, Olive, Typhenia, Harriet, Thos. D., Simeon, Betsey, and Clara. Mr. Trumbull, sr., was born in Suffield county, Vt. He was a soldier of the War of 1812, and was in the battle of Plattsburg.

Wells, Benjamin, p. o. Upper Jay, a venerable citizen of Jay, is a native of Williamsburg, Mass.; was born May 13, 1802; came to Jay in March, 1813. Oct. 3, 1826, he married Jane

A., daughter of Lunan Wadhams, of Wadham's Falls. In Feb. 1885, she died, leaving a family of six children, viz.: Chester W., of San Francisco, Cal.; Ermina P.; who is now Mrs. Monroe Hall, of Plattsburg, N. Y.; Edgar S. and Chas. W., of Saginaw, Mich.; and Harriet P., at home. Benjamin E. is secretary of the J. & J. Rogers Iron Co., at Black Brook, Clinton county, N. Y.; He married Charlotte, daughter of Samuel Bullen, of Jay, and has a family of five sons: Wallace H., Benjamin S., Edgar C., William W., and John R.

Wilkins, Cyrus, is a native of Jay, born in 1830, on what is now a portion of the Wesley Ferrin farm, where his father, Lyman Wilkin, resided for many years. His mother was Eliza Wilkins. Cyrus enlisted in the U. S. Army in 1864 in the 142d N. Y. V. He was in several severe battles, was wounded at Fort Fisher that same year and lay in the hospital at Point of Rocks; from there to Portsmouth, W. Va., until close of war. He is a pensioner. Was married June 26, 1850, to Perley A., daughter of Henry Sanders, of Jay. They have two children: Eliza J., now Mrs. Urih Palmer, and Eunice, Mrs. Geo. James. Their farm consists of 50 acres.

### NORTH ELBA.

**A** LLEN, HENRY, p. o. Lake Placid, was born in Vermont in 1848, and came to Lake Placid in 1865; is a hotel keeper; has been supervisor and highway commissioner for his town; was married to Sarah E. Demon in 1868. Mr. Allen was in the late war, serving in the 46th N. Y. Regiment.

Ames, Daniel, was born in New Hampshire in 1818, and came to North Elba in 1839; is a farmer and lumberman; has been supervisor, justice of the peace, commissioner, and assessor of his town. Mrs. Ames, formerly Jane S. Blake, was born in New Hampshire in 1818; they were married in 1839. Mrs. Ames died in 1883 leaving five children.

Ames, S., was born in this town in 1844; is a farmer and hotel keeper (summer hotel); has been assessor, supervisor, and town clerk for his town; was married in 1866 to Martha Scott, and they have three children.

Arnold, N. J. was born in Michigan in 1840, and came to Franklin Falls in 1860; has been supervisor three terms; is now in the mercantile business and also keeps a hotel and sporting house. His wife, who was Ann Goodspeed, was born at St. Armand in 1846; they were married in 1869, and have three children. Mr. Arnold was in the last war, serving in the 118th Regiment.

Baker, Andrew J., was born in Keeseville, Essex county, in 1840, and came to St. Armand in 1853. He is a farmer and land dealer; is also a guide and keeps a boarding-house; has represented the town of North Elba in the board of supervisors two terms; has been justice of the peace several years, also postmaster one year. In 1866 Mr. Baker was married to Mary H. Scott, and they have three children living.

Billings, Albert, was born in Vermont in 1853 and came to this town in 1876; is a guide and also keeps a boarding-house; has been town auditor and is now on his second term; his wife was Ella Brewster, born in 1856. They were married in 1877 and have one daughter.

Billings, Geo. W., was born in Vermont in 1849 and came to this town in 1871; is a mail carrier, farmer and market gardener; has been inspector of election, town auditor and collector. His wife was Elsa A. Brewster. They were married in 1875, and have five children.

Brewster, Byron L., was born in North Elba in 1846; is a farmer; has been justice of the peace, also supervisor, and is commissioner for the State Road from North Elba to Wilmington. His wife, Bidney Conoboy, was born in Wilmington in 1858. They were married in 1879 and have one son, Cassius J. Brewster.

Brewster, Emory, was born in this town in 1860; is a farmer. His wife is Ellen Bull, born in this county in 1865. They were married in 1883 and have one daughter, Mabell Brewster.

Brewster, Martin W., was born in North Elba in 1865. His business is farming and keeping a hotel, known as the Lake Placid House.

Bull, F. M., was born in Essex county in 1840, and came to Saranac Lake in 1881; is a druggist. Was married in 1860 to Corlista Bull, born in 1838 in Essex county. They have two children: C. W. and Nelly G. Bull. Mr. Bull was in the late war, serving in the 77th N. Y. Regiment.

Camron, Duncan, was born in Canada in 1844, and came to this town in 1862; is a farmer and keeps the Ray Brook House for summer boarders; has been commissioner for his town. Was married to Lettie J. Ames in 1866, and they have two children: Byron A. and Jennie Camron.



Chellis, Geo. T., was born in Clinton county in 1850, and came to Lake Placid in 1882. He is a mechanical engineer and lumberman by occupation having quite extensive saw and planing mills on Chub river one mile from Lake Placid. He is town clerk of his town, third term. His wife was Ella J. Isham, born in Clinton county in 1854. They were married in 1876, and have one daughter, Nellie Chellis.

Crawford, E. M., was born in this county in 1833. Is a merchant and lumberman; has been supervisor, justice of the peace and collector for his town; was married in 1856 to Eliza J. Dibble, a native of this county, they have three children.

Dibble, N. M., was born in Vermont in 1818, and came to this county in 1820; is retired from business; has been supervisor, commissioner of highways and collector for his town. Was married in 1837 to Eliza A. Snow, a native of this county.

Eglesfield, Geo. W., p. o. Keene, was born in Montreal in 1827, and came to North Elba in 1849; is a farmer and hotel keeper; has been commissioner of excise for his town. Was married to Miss Sophia Washburn, a native of this town.

Flagg, Arlo C., was born in Essex county in 1853, and came to Saranac Lake in 1875; is a boatman; has been constable in his town.

Holt, Chas. N., was born in this town in 1833; is a farmer; has held several local offices for his town, viz.: supervisor, justice of the peace, commissioner and assessor; has been twice married, first to Delia McFarlin, in 1869; she died in 1882, and he was married to Miss Hettie Stores.

Holt, Jas. S., was born in this town in 1847; is commissioner for his town. His wife was Mary Ann Morrison, born in this county in 1843. They have six children. Mr. Holt's father, also Jas. S. Holt, was born in this town.

Holt, Monroe, was born in this town in 1845; is a farmer and keeps a summer hotel; was married in 1873 to Amanda Blynn, and they have one son. Mr. Holt has been assessor and collector for his town. His father, Jas. Holt, came to this county from Vermont in 1807.

Kennedy, Melvin, was born in Wilmington in 1854; is a carpenter and joiner, also guide; has been constable and collector for his town.

Kennedy, Wesley, was born in Wilmington in 1844; is a carpenter and also keeps a summer hotel; is now town auditor, and has been constable and deputy sheriff. His wife, formerly Nancy Brewster, was born in this town in 1851. They were married in 1875.

Lamoy, Joseph, was born in the town of Moriah in 1844, and came to North Elba in 1866; is a guide. His wife was formerly Miss Ames; they were married in 1871, and have one daughter, Nelly. Mr. Lamoy was in the last war, serving in the 118th N. Y. Regiment.

Lyon, M. C., was born in Vermont in 1815, and came to this county in 1828; is now postmaster; has been justice of the peace and town clerk several terms; is state commissioner; is a farmer, lumberman, and also keeps hotel; was married in 1839 to Amanda Blynn, and they have two children.

Miller, Van Buren, was born in Wilmington, Essex county, in 1827, and came to Saranac Lake in 1857; is justice of the peace, has been town clerk, supervisor, assessor and deputy sheriff; has also taken the enumeration for the census; is now agent for the State lands in Franklin county. His wife was Sarah E. Malbone, born in Wilmington in 1828. They have seven children.

Moodey, B. R., was born in the town of North Elba, in 1842, is a farmer and wood-sawyer, and also a guide; has been commissioner and assessor of his town; has been twice married, first to Carry Pratt, and again in 1875 to Elnora Jones. They have two children: Daisy M. and Benjamin O.

Morhous, R. A., was born in Elizabethtown, Essex county, in 1851, and came to Saranac Lake in 1876; is a carpenter and joiner by trade, and has built some of the finest residences in this section; is also a dealer in furniture. Was married in 1880 to Lizzie Peck, and they have two children: Edith L. and Rosamond. Mr. Morhous has been collector for the town of St. Armand and inspector of election for Saranac.

Nash, Joseph V., was born in Vermont in 1825, and came to this county in 1840; was married in 1851 to Harriet C. Brewster. He died in 1884, leaving three daughters: Carrie C., Hattie J., and Fannie C. While living he held the office of supervisor, justice of the peace and other local offices.

Peacock, Wm., was born in England in 1819 and came to this town in 1849; is a farmer and gardener; is overseer of the poor for his town, has been justice of the peace, assessor, town auditor, and inspector of election. His wife was Louisa Herring, born in England in 1819; they were married in 1843, and have seven children. Mr. Peacock was in the late war, serving in the 118th Regiment.

Peacock, W. R., was born in North Elba, in 1855; is a farmer. His wife was Charlotte E. Hays, born in Essex county, in 1859. They were married in 1879, and have one son, Carlos R. Peacock.

Parkhurst, L. S., was born in Vermont in 1838, and came to this town in 1845; is a farmer; is assessor for his town, has been commissioner, constable, collector, town auditor and inspector of elections. His wife, formerly Ellen Kennedy, was born in Wilmington in 1850. They were married in 1874, and have three children: Willie N., Orvie W. and Mittie E.

Partridge, L. W., was born in this county, in 1824; is a farmer, and also keeps summer boarders. Was married in 1847 to Emily Gage, and they have seven children. Mr. Partridge's father came to this county from Vermont in 1789.

Peck, Chester W., was born in Jay, Essex county, in 1826. He is a carpenter and joiner and boat-builder; has been deputy postmaster for his town. His wife was Eunice Crary, born in Clinton county in 1838. They were married in 1855 and came to Saranac Lake in 1855. They have two children.

Potter, E. W., is a native of this county; was married in 1843 to Rev. John J. Trumble. He died in 1859, leaving four children. Mrs. Trumble then married John Potter, who died in 1881. She had one son in the last war, Melville J. Trumble.

Randle, Chas. M., was born in Wilmington, Essex county, in 1832; is a farmer. Mr. Randle has been three times married, first to Polly M. Hines, who died in 1859; afterward to Olive Airs, who died in 1877; and again to Ellen Taylor, a native of this county. He has seven children. Mr. Randle was a soldier in the war, serving in the 118th N. Y. Regiment.

Reynolds, Reuben, was born at Saranac Lake in 1842. His wife's name before marriage was Ida A. Taylor, and she was born in Lewis county in 1853. They were married in 1875, and have three children living. Mr. Reynolds is a farmer; he also keeps a boarding-house; has been excise commissioner and constable for his town.

Robbins, Plinney A., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Ohio in 1840 and came to Saranac Lake in 1855. Is a farmer, lumberman and hotel-keeper; was married in 1861 to Anna Butterfield.

Segua, Peter, p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Keeseville, Essex county, in 1845, and came to Bloomingdale in 1870. Is a carpenter and joiner, also carriage maker. His wife, formerly Mary Wilcox, was born in Wilmington in 1846. They were married in 1869, and have four children. Mr. Segua was in the late war, serving in the 12th U. S. Infantry for the term of six years.

Severance, Wm. E., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Clinton county in 1859 and came to Saranac Lake in 1882. He keeps a meat market and grocery store; is town clerk. His wife was formerly Mina A. Mace. They were married in 1880. They have one daughter.

Sheldon, Wm. R., was born in Keeseville, Essex county, in 1849, and came to Saranac Lake in 1867. He was formerly a guide, but is now a mail carrier between Upper and Lower Saranac Lake; is now excise commissioner and has been town auditor for his town. His wife, formerly Melinda Miller, was born in Essex county in 1850; married in 1870. They have five children.

Slater, John, was born in Jay, Essex county, in 1843; is a farmer and guide; is assessor for his town and has been justice of the peace and town auditor. His wife was Armeda J. Moody, born in North Elba in 1840. They were married in 1860 and have three children: Lula M., Howard J., and Kittie A.

Slater, W. J., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Jay, Essex county, in 1851. He is a carpenter and joiner; he is also a guide and boat-builder. His wife, formerly Emma Washer, was born in Essex county in 1855. They were married in 1876, and have two children: Francis H. and T. Moss. Mr. Slater was in the late war, serving in the 118th N. Y. and 96th N. Y. He has been town auditor and inspector of election for his town.

Somers, Henry L., was born in Vermont in 1849, and came to this county soon afterward; is excise commissioner for his town and trustee of the Library Association, and inspector of election; was married in 1866 to Hattie Preston, and they have one daughter, Minnie Somers. Was in the last war, serving in the 2d N. Y. V. Cavalry.

Stevens, John A., and George A., p. o. Lake Placid. The Stevens brothers were born in Black Brook, Clinton county, John A. in 1848, and George A. in 1856. They came to this county in 1877. Geo A. is now supervisor of his town. Their business is lumbering, and they also keep the Stevens House for summer guests.

Stickney, F. V., was born in Michigan in 1855, and came to Lake Placid in 1880. Is a merchant and postmaster and notary public; was married in 1879 to Mary Wood, and they have two children: Anna E., and Minnie M.



Taylor, Cyrus, p. o. North Elba, was born in Jay in 1821; is a blacksmith and farmer; is justice of the peace, which office he has held for about twelve years. Mr. Taylor has been twice married; first to Mary Lee; she died in 1858, leaving one child, and in 1859 Mr. Taylor married Mary E. Beede. They have ten children.

Thompson, Franklin P., p. o. North Elba, was born in Essex county in 1827; is a farmer, also carpenter and joiner; has been justice of the peace and assessor for his town. His wife was Julia Ann Demmon, born in Vermont in 1840. They were married in 1857 and have four children.

Thompson, Leander, p. o. North Elba, was born in this town in 1829. He is a carpenter and joiner; has been town clerk in his town; served in the last war in the 96th Regiment. His wife was Alma P. Demmon and they were married in 1863.

Torrance, Orrin, p. o. North Elba, was born in Clinton county in 1825, and came to this county in 1834; is a farmer and also keeps the Torrance Cottage. His wife, Betsey C. Hewitt, was born in this county in 1831. They were married in 1851, and have two children; N. H. and H. C. Torrance.

Ware, Judson C., p. o. North Elba, was born in Keene in 1842; is a farmer; has been constable, collector, supervisor, and assessor for his town and is now sheriff for Essex county. In 1870 he was married to Carry A. Brewster, and they have two children: Edward and Vernon Ware. Mr. Ware was in the last war for four years, serving in Company K, 96th Regiment.

Washburn, J. C., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Wilmington in 1840 and came to Saranac Lake in 1882; is a painter; was married in 1882 to Celia Thayer, and they have one son, Halsey.

White, Carlos H., p. o. Keene Valley, was born in this county in 1849. Has been town collector and commissioner of excise in North Elba; in 1874 was married to Polly Estes. Her grandparents, Stephen and Hannah Estes, were among the early settlers of this county.

White, George G., p. o. North Elba, was born in Jay, Essex county, in 1856; is a farmer; is excise commissioner on his second term. Mrs. White was Elnor C. Miller, born in Essex county in 1856. They were married in 1880 and have three children: Harry M., Laura E. and Bertha A. White.

Williams, George, jr., was born in Clinton county in 1854, and came to Saranac Lake in 1873. He is a mason. His wife was Rosana Riley, born in Harriettown in 1854. They were married in 1875, and have three children.

Wood, Benjamin, was born in Jay in 1842; is a farmer, carpenter and mason; was married in 1865 to Jane Benham, and they have four children. Mr. Wood was in the late war, serving in the 77th N. Y. Regiment.

Woodruff, R. E., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in the town of Lewis, Essex county, in 1841, and came to Saranac Lake in 1866; has been supervisor in the town of St. Armand, also in the town of Harriet; is a hotel and boarding-house keeper. His wife, who was Anna E. Rice, was born in Vermont in 1842. They were married in 1871, and have two children: Alice and Mina H. Woodruff.

Wright, A. S., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in the town of Ticonderoga, Essex county, in 1853, and came to Saranac Lake in 1884. He is a self-made man, having worked his way unaided to his present independent position. Ancestors came from North Adams, Mass., to Ticonderoga in 1792, when the country was new; father lost his life at Chantilly, Va., 1862, was a member of the 5th New York Cavalry; young Wright, then a mere child, thrown on the world, worked his way out, graduated at Fort Edward Institute, 1876; he is an architect and builder; his wife was Josie Hanchett, born in Elizabethtown in 1860; they were married in 1879, and have two children.

## SCHROON.

CRAWFORD, JOHN AND ELIZABETH, were natives of County Fermannah, Ireland, and emigrated from the Emerald Isle to Canada. In the year 1843 they came to Elizabethtown, Essex county, where they lived until 1851, when they removed to Schroon, where they settled permanently. Mr. Crawford died July 28th, 1882. His children were Thomas, who was killed at the second battle of Bull Run; James, living at Schroon; William Henry and John, both deceased; John R., of Schroon, Ellen E., now Mrs. Julius Smith, George W., of Clinton county, and Walter A., still of Schroon.

Drake, Peter, settled with his family at Crown Point in Essex county about the year 1795. Mr. and Mrs. Drake had four children: David, the oldest, married Sally Bigelow, and reared a family of eight children; his son, Amos B., married Lucinda, daughter of Timothy Chellis, of

North Hudson, and settled in Schroon. Their children were Harvey J., of Schroon, Sarah Jane (now Mrs. Harrington), of Crown Point, Orlando, who was killed in a skirmish with the guerillas in 1863, Emeline Cordelia (deceased), Eliza, Lyman C. (a merchant of Ticonderoga), Fidelia (deceased), and Mott C.

Ford, James, was born at Stillwater, Saratoga county, October 19th, 1799; he was twice married, first to Eliza Ford; they had three children, two of whom, Melinda E. and Sarah Ann, were born in Saratoga county; George was born in Schroon. After the death of his first wife James married Polly Everett, of Schroon; they had two children: John and Samuel. Melinda Ford is now Mrs. Benjamin Tripp, and Sarah Ann is Mrs. William Mends. George married Lydia Richardson, and John Pamela Taylor. Samuel, the youngest son, lives at Sugar Lake, Pa. The sons and daughters born to George and Lydia Ford are as follows: Fred L., Fletcher C., James E., George T. James and George T. are both deceased.

Hall, David, and his wife, with two children, Elijah B. and Lenora, came from Massachusetts about 1814 and settled in Schroon township, near the foot of Charley Hill. Their other children, born in Schroon, are as follows: Lester, Jacob C., William H., Lucretia, David C., and Joel. Through the effort of William H. Hall, the post-office at South Schroon was established and he held the office of postmaster for seven years.

Hayford, Alvin, was born April 18, 1805, and died January 5, 1884; came from Warren county in 1834 and settled in Ticonderoga; he had one son, James Lewis Hayford, who married Matilda Crawford, of Schroon. They had one child, Alvin L. His wife is Keziah Vaughn. Their children are: Alvin Erastus, Eveline K., James L., Albert, Edwin F., Marion, Ellen, Jane, Harriet M., Myron, Irving, Levi and Marietta.

Huntley. Among the early settlers of Schroon was Stallin Huntley, who came into the county about 1800 and settled with his family near the head of Schroon lake. His children were Alvin, Crara, Almira, Dorcas, Luman and John. Alvin married Phebe Butler, and their children were Almon, James L., Mary L., Keziah L., Seth B., Martha Ann, Philander T., and George W. James L., the second son, was twice married, first to Mary, daughter of Miles Traver, and after her decease to Achsah Huntley, of Minerva.

Letson, Samuel, of County Antrim, Ireland, came to Essex county and became one of the pioneers of Moriah. His wife was Alice Kalm, also a native of Ireland. Their children were Mary Ann, who married Richard Blair, William (deceased), Thomas, who married Sarah Stenson, Elizabeth, now Mrs. Michael Curran, Samuel, married to Rose Sage, of Crown Point. Sarah, James and Jane are all deceased.

Lockwood, Clark, came to Schroon township in 1809, and cleared sufficient timber lands for the erection of a building to accommodate his father's family on lots Nos. 8 and 9 of the Road Patent. In March, 1810, Jeremiah, father of Clark, came to Schroon and built on these lots. His family consisted of his wife and four boys, Leander, Clark, Abel and Jeremiah. Clark married Sarah Tombs, and he died in August, 1814; they had one child, Linus C. Lockwood, born in 1813.

Pitkin, Russell, and his wife were natives of Vermont. They came to Schroon township about 1820 and bought private lands near Charley Hill. Their oldest son, George, was born in Vermont. The other children, born in Schroon: Philo, Jerome, Abigail, Maria, Myron C., John and Eleanor C. Philo, the oldest of these, was twice married; first, to Sophia Richardson, of Schroon township, and afterward to Eliza Persons, of Warren county.

Powell, Charles, is the youngest child of Samuel and Susanna Powell. He was adopted by the family of Benjamin Bowker, and has ever since been known as Charles Bowker; was born in Schroon township. He was the second person in Schroon to enlist as a volunteer in the late civil war; was at first rejected on account of his extreme youth, but afterwards succeeded in becoming a soldier of the famous Hawkins Zouaves, Co. E, 9th N. Y. Vols.

Richards, Joseph, was born in Connecticut in 1780 and died Feb. 27, 1853; was a native of Vermont and one of the first settlers of Essex county; he came to Schroon in 1803. His wife was Lydia Wooster, of Vermont, born Oct. 22, 1788, died Nov. 8, 1825. Their children were Orilla, born April 6, 1805, died Sept. 25, 1837; Maria, born Aug. 15, 1807, died Oct. 23, 1825; Orson, born Aug. 13, 1811, died Sept. 4, 1879; Hoel S., born Feb. 3, 1814, died Jan. 22, 1878; Hester A., born Nov. 18, 1816; Caroline M., born Sept. 30, 1820, died June 21, 1841; Lucretia, born Feb. 1, 1823, died June 7, 1847. Hoel S. married Prudence, daughter of David Bartlett, of Essex county; their children are Mary Helen, now Mrs. Freeman N. Tyrrell, of Schroon, and Sylvia Ann, the wife of Egbert Dunn, of Schuylerville. The children of Mary H. and Freeman H. Tyrrell are Hoel R. and Florence.

Smith, Abijah, a pioneer of Essex county, was born Nov. 25th, 1762. His wife, Keziah Botsford, was born March 18th, 1767. They were married May 5th, 1792. Their children



were Abner, born April 16th, 1793, died March 15th, 1821; Ezra B., born Oct. 15th, 1794, died March 15th, 1881; Abijah, born May 6th, 1796, died Oct. 16th, 1870; Jacob, born Jan. 7th, 1798, died Feb. 23d, 1799; Mary, born Sept. 10th, 1799, died in 1875; Othniel, born Dec. 12th, 1800, died Sept. 28th, 1881; Jacob 2d, born Dec. 5th, 1802, died March 16th, 1883; Hepsibeth, born Sept. 5th, 1804; Ann Keziah, born March 3d, 1806, died May 13th, 1836; Peter Hornbell, born Jan. 14th, 1808; Eli B. born May 24th, 1829; Albert, born Jan. 21st, 1811.

Smith, Amasa, was born in Vermont, Aug. 20th, 1781. He came with his wife to Crown Point in 1825, and in Jan. 1832, the family moved to and settled in the southern part of Schroon township. Their children are Martha R., born Jan. 24th, 1810; Caroline, March 5th, 1812; Amasa, Jan. 14th, 1814; Caroline 2d, Jan. 9th, 1816; Emily, March 18th, 1818; Alfred, April 9th, 1820; James R., Aug. 2d, 1822; Alanson, March 18th, 1825; Luther, March 20th, 1827; Martha Jane, Oct. 9th, 1832; Zelphina M., Oct. 24th, 1834. Martha J. married Franklin Warren and had five children, viz.: Arthur W., Laura A., Emerson A., Ida F., and Alfred E.

Smith, Daniel, was born in the State of Vermont and came to Essex county in March, 1801. His son Hiram, then being but six weeks old, was taken into the family of George Moore, a pioneer living near Schroon river. At the age of nineteen he married Laura Powell, daughter of William Powell. They had nine children, viz.: Harrison, now living on the Alder Meadow tract; Lucilia, who married Oliver Knox; Adaline, now Mrs. Henry Daniels; Abial, who lives in California; Martin, Lyman and George, all of whom reside in Schroon township. Daniel died at the age of nine years and Laura is now Mrs. Nathan Brooks.

Smith, Jacob, of Schroon, was born Dec. 5, 1802; married Lurana Warren. Children: James and Jason, twins, born Oct. 16, 1829; Edwin A., born Aug. 27, 1831; Peter H., born May 14, 1834; and Mary Arvilla, born Oct. 11, 1836. James, Jason and Peter H., are all deceased. Mr. Smith's parents were Abijah and Keziah Smith. Edwin A. Smith married Anna Dresser, July 4, 1857. Children: Truman O., born Feb. 16, 1858; Chloe E., born July 25, 1863; Clara E., born Aug. 6th, 1875; Truman O. married Libbie Lowell, Dec. 22, 1880. Children: Edith L., born Dec. 20, 1882; Chloe E. married Lee B. Garfield, July 4, 1883.

Smith, Reuben, was born at Crown Point about 1815, removed in 1844 to Schroon where he settled in the north part of the township. His wife was Harriet Gray, and they had two children, one only of whom survives: Reuben A. (deceased), Luther is still living.

Stanard, Daniel, and his wife, Sophia, were natives of Vermont. They came to Schroon township and settled near Hoffman in the year 1822. Several of their children are deceased. Those living are Charlotte, now Mrs. John Huntoon; Mary, Mrs. Samuel Brown, of Hoffman; Harriet, Mrs. Milo Washburn, of Indian Lake, N. Y., and Joseph.

Stoel, Charles, was born in the vicinity of Paradox lake, Essex county; was married to Ann Eliza Scott, of Schroon, and they settled in the southern part of the township, near the Warren county line. Of their children two only are living: Betsey, wife of James Ross, and Francis, married to Clara Phillips. Mr. Stoel's father was John Stoel, one of the pioneers of Essex county. Others of his sons still live in the vicinity, but as a matter of taste spell their name Stowell instead of Stoel.

Stoel, John, was born in Clarendon, Vt., in 1802, and came to Essex county in 1809. His wife was Diantha Garfield. Children: Elizabeth, born April 16, 1829, died June 17, 1857; J. Sumner, born Jan. 17, 1831; Byron D., born March 29, 1833, died Nov. 5, 1864; Abigail, born Aug. 28th, 1835, died March 14, 1856; Hannah, born Oct. 29, 1837; George, born Aug. 28, 1839; Diantha M., born Dec. 17, 1841; Adelaide, May 5, 1846.

Tyrrell, Benajah, was a native of Rensselaer county, N. Y., and settled in Schroon in pioneer days. His wife was Rosamond Hermon. Of their two children, Samuel lives in Schroon and Charles died at Alexandria, Va.

Tyrrell, Rila, son of Benajah and Rebecca Tyrrell, was born in Massachusetts, on the 9th of June, 1790, and came to Schroon about 1805. His wife was Harriet Jones, of Schroon. Harriet Jones was born in Vermont, July 4, 1797. Their children were: Valorus, born Dec. 3, 1815, died Dec. 4, 1838; Elmira, born Aug. 27, 1817; Hannibal, born Feb. 21, 1820; Philander B., born June 17, 1822; Joel P., born Feb. 16, 1825; Rila, jr., born July 4, 1827; Benajah, born Sep. 5, 1829; Harriet, born January 19, 1832; Caroline, born March 26, 1834; Albert J., born July 22, 1836; Freeman N., born Nov. 13, 1838; Julius J., born April 13, 1841.

Warren, Erastus, was born in Connecticut, came to Essex county with his father and settled near South Schroon in 1810; wife, Hepsy Mason. Their children were Roxanna, Betsey, Laura Ann, Franklin, Edwin and Edgar (twins). Mr. Warren's father was Aaron Warren of Connecticut. Besides Erastus he had three other children, viz.: Aaron, jr., Zylpha and Lurana.

Whitney, George, settled in South Schroon in 1801. He was a native of Connecticut. His children, Eseck, Cyrus, and Delilah, came with the family. Their other children, Chauncey,



Celia, Ira, Marcia Ann, Betsey, Lansford, George M. and Edward, were all born in Schroon. George M., married Olive Baker, of Schroon. They had four children: Celia, Charles C. Halsey B., and Libbie, all of whom still live in Schroon.

Young, Chas., a native of Vermont came to Schroon in 1827. His family consisted of his wife, Mary Young, and five children: Lyman, Louisa, Albert, John and Lydia, all natives of Vermont. Mary is now Mrs. William Parker; Sylvia is Mrs. Luther Smith; Louisa married Chauncey Stannard, and their children were Sarah Jane, Betsey, Mortimer, Charles and Mary.

## LEWIS.

**B**ANKER, JOHN K., of Lewis Center, was born in Plattsburg, Clinton county, N. Y., August 2d, 1830. Is a successful farmer and owns 103 acres at Lewis Center. Worked at the iron business from twelve years of age to within two years, made iron first, commenced hammering at fifteen years of age, hammered iron thirty-eight years; then settled down to farming. Has been justice of the peace at Lewis for about ten years; takes a lively interest in local matters and is highly esteemed by all who know him. Mr. Banker was married January 13th, 1849, to Mary A., daughter of Edmund and Millie (Stoves) Soper, of Perue. Her ancestors on her mother's side were French, her grandfather being a soldier in the Revolution. Mr. and Mrs. Banker have raised a family of three children: Edmund E. (married to Emma Signer), of Saranac, Loyal (married to Jennie Bowdish), and Mina P., now Mrs. Myron A. Buck, of Clintonville. Mr. Banker's parents were Ezra and Sallie S. (Kent) Banker, natives of Plattsburg. They raised a family of nine children. Six of their sons were Union soldiers of the Rebellion, two of whom died in the service.

Bartlette, George, was born in the town of Jay October 22d, 1852. He is one of the self-made men of Lewis. Thrown on his own resources at a very early period, he has gained a prominent place in the community both as a farmer and a citizen. He located in his present home near Elizabethtown in 1876. He owns 170 acres of land. Was married December 31st, 1867, to Cornelia, daughter of Chester McAuley, a jobber in coal and lumber at Schroon lake. They have six children: Cora, Eva B., Helen M., Jessie L., Francis H. and Bernice E. Mr. Bartlette's father was Ithamer Bartlette, a blacksmith.

Beardsley, Samuel S., a farmer of Lewis, was born October 6th, 1823, on the present homestead. His father, Eliphalet Beardsley, was a root and herb doctor. April 3d, 1847, Samuel was married to Miss Betsey, daughter of James and Betsey (Poor) Fuller. Mr. Fuller was a native of Kingsbury, Washington county, N. Y., but lived for many years in Queensbury, Warren county. Of their seven children Mrs. Beardsley is the youngest. Children: two sons and one daughter, James and Samuel S., jr., and Ida, who married Willett W. Woodruff. They went to California, where she died in 1872, leaving one son, who died, and a daughter, Minnie M., who, since her mother's death, is a member of Mr. Beardsley's family.

Beardsley, Z. C., was born in Lewis March 1st, 1832; is a farmer and owns 300 acres located in the east part of the town; is one of the assessors of the town and has held other local offices of trust. April 25th, 1870, Mr. Beardsley married Eltha, daughter of Jeremiah Woodruff, of Lewis. Children six, viz.: Louise, Winslow, Harry, Maggie, Kittie and O. K. (O. K. is the only name he has). Mr. Beardsley's parents were Eliphalet and Mutual (Rolph) Beardsley. He was a physician and emigrated from Connecticut; had an extensive practice throughout this locality. He raised a family of ten children, all of whom lived to maturity.

Blood, Charles L., was born at Elizabethtown September 10th, 1821. He is one of the prominent farmers of Lewis and represents one of its oldest families. His wife is Elvira, daughter of Samuel Lee, and their children are Russell, a mechanic, of Wadham's Falls, and Clifford, who is associated with the management of the farm at home. Clifford married Mary Haskins, of Lewis Center, and they have one child, Bertha. Mr. Blood's grandfather, Robert Blood, came from Windsor, Vt., in 1806 and located in the present home of Charles. He was twice married.

Boynton, Albert A., merchant, of Lewis Center, and supervisor of the town of Lewis, was born September 26th, 1843; made farming his business until he entered the employ of W. R. Derby as clerk at Lewis Center, and later as clerk for Thompson & Norton, of the same place. Besides the office of supervisor, he has also held the offices of justice of the peace and clerk of his town. His wife is Julia E., daughter of Hiram and Emily (Morehouse) Parish, of Lewis. They have one daughter, Mabel C. Mr. Boynton's parents were Joseph and Thusa F. (Martin) Boynton, natives of Vermont. Mr. Boynton, sr., was a man of public spirit and business ability. He held the office of justice of the peace for many years; also other local offices; was deacon of the Baptist Church of Willsborough.



Brabau, Alexander, was born in France, April 9th, 1828. His father, who was a farmer, emigrated to Canada with the family in 1831. Alexander learned the trade of blacksmith in Canada and came to Westport in 1850. He located at Wadham's Falls where he has since resided. August 24th, 1848, he married Miss Mary, daughter of Frederick Shattuck, of Lewis. Their children are Mrs. J. Fisher, Emma, Eva, Mrs. Eugene Clark, Mary, Mrs. Aitkin Ducatt, and Nellie, who died in 1882. Mr. Brabau owns one of the finest stallions (Hamiltonian) in the State; weight 1400 lbs., 16 hands high, dark bay; speed, 2:45; has taken two premiums at New York State fairs.

Bull, Page, a thrifty farmer of Lewis, was born May 6th, 1858, in Westport, Essex county, N. Y.; came to Lewis in 1883, and purchased a farm of 150 acres two miles southeast of Lewis Center on the Boquet river. He was married June 11th, 1859, to Miss Eliza McGuire, of Essex. Their children are Hosea, Harley, Sheridan, Mary, Almon, Page, George, Lila and Flora. Nelson and Charles are deceased. Mr. Bull's father was Ephraim Page, a native of the same State. They had four children: Mary A., Hosea (deceased), Alma (now Mrs. Ambrose Lobdell), and the subject of this sketch.

Bullard, Joel, a native of Vermont, was born December 4th, 1832; is a farmer and owns a farm of 100 acres about one and a half miles south of Lewis Center. Was married in 1860 to Cleora Cobb, of Lewis. They have eight children, viz.: Fred E., Maggie C., Helen E., Francis G., Lucy, Effie, Laura and Byron B. Maggie is Mrs. A. P. Perrill, of Vermont. Mr. Bullard's parents were John and Hannah (Baldwin) Bullard. They came from Vermont and located in the town of Jay, N. Y., in 1826, where Mr. Bullard pursued farming as an occupation. Besides Joel, they had eleven other children.

Burpee, Stephen, was the ancestor of the family in Lewis. He emigrated from Rutland about the year 1808 or 1810, and located on what has since been known as Burpee Hill, about two and one-half miles west of Lewis Center. His family consisted of five sons and one daughter, viz.: Sullivan, Cheeny, Sparrahawk, Lyman, Samuel, and Lucinda, who died at eight years of age. The sons all married and settled on Burpee Hill. All died in the order of their birth and are buried in the cemetery at Lewis Center. Cheeny married Susan, daughter of Obid Holcombe, one of the first settlers of Lewis. They are now represented by James L. Burpee, a leading business man of Lewis Center. He has been several years engaged in mercantile business, but for a year past has manufactured carriages and wagons. Has been supervisor of his town eight years and held other local offices. He married Miss Ann Woodruff of Lewis, who died in 1882. Besides James L., a brother, Obid, and sister, Betsey, still survive.

Burpee, Lyman, was born October 11th, 1798; married Emma, another daughter of Obid Holcombe. They had six children: Lorenzo, Stephen A., Eudocia, Alva (deceased), La Rhette L., Alva (also deceased). Lorenzo, Eudocia and La Rhette occupy the homestead of 200 acres.

Burpee, La Rhette, is the youngest of the family of Lyman Burpee; was born November 11th, 1841; is a farmer and butcher of Lewis; his wife is Edna J., daughter of Samuel Ober, professor of Music, formerly of Crown Point, N. Y. They have three children: Leon, Melvin L. and William H.

Carson, Anthony (deceased), was born in 1809 in County Calvin, Ireland, and emigrated to America in 1850. He was a farmer by occupation and settled in Perue, Clinton county. He afterward lived in Chesterfield, Essex county, and from there removed to Lewis. He was married in 1836 to Mary Crawford in the parish of Noble, Ireland, and she had four children born in that country, viz.: Andrew, Mary A., Elizabeth and John. Another child, Robert, was born in Chesterfield, and William in Lewis. John Carson is one of the most extensive farmers of Lewis; owns about 700 acres of land and is a member of the Lewis Center Congregational Church; his wife is Jane, daughter of John Todd, of Lewis. They have one son, John, jr., and two adopted children: Cora and William. Robert Carson, the fifth of the family, was born May 12th, 1855, in Chesterfield; is a farmer and owns 83 acres of land. His wife is Martha, daughter of James McAlvin, of Lewis. William, the youngest of the family, was born in Lewis December 15th, 1857; is one of the most enterprising farmers of the town and the support of his aged mother. He owns 161 acres of land near Lewis Center.

Clark, Naham, for sixty-five years a resident of Essex County, was born August 29th, 1812, in Springfield, Vt. His father, Abraham Clark, emigrated from Vermont in 1816 and located at Crown Point; they afterward lived at Ticonderoga and Essex until 1868, when they moved to Lewis with their son James M. Naham was married to Miss Phila, daughter of Asa Eggleston, of Port Henry, and they had three children: Almon T., James M., and Mary F., who died May 9th, 1868. Almon T. is a Congregational clergyman, of Parishville, St. Lawrence county, N. Y.; his wife was Miss Mariette, daughter of Russell Whitney, of Westport. They have five children: Almon T., jr., Susan A., Maud E., Paul and Harvey F. James M. purchased his present home of 137½ acres in Lewis in 1838. May 10th, 1868, he married Mary J., daughter



of James Haskins, of Essex. They have five children: Elmer J., Richard A., Mary E., Charles H. and Margaret E.

Coonrod, John, was born in Carlisle, Schoharie county, October 10th, 1809, and has been since 1824 a resident of Lewis; is a farmer and owns 900 acres of land. His wife is Isabel, daughter of James Smith, of Essex town. Of six children four are living, viz.: George, Emery, Le Roy and Delia. His father, George Coonrod, came to Elizabethtown from Schoharie county about 1819, and to Lewis in 1824, where he died.

Cornwright, William H., one of the representative farmers of Lewis, is a native of the Isle of Wight, where he was born May 16th, 1840. He came to America with his mother about 1841; is a farmer, owns 160 acres of land and a house at Lewis Center; has held the offices of constable and inspector of elections. In 1861 Mr. Cornwright enlisted in the 38th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, served his time, two years, and re-enlisted in the 4th N. Y. Heavy Artillery, where he served until the close of the war. He received one injury at Hart's Island. December 20th, 1863, he was married to Miss Esther, daughter of Stephen Hathaway, of Lewis. Children six: William H., jr., Mary E., Susan E., Frank A., George E., and Grover Cleveland, who was born on the day of Cleveland's election to the presidency of the United States. Mr. Cornwright notified Mr. Cleveland of the happy event after his inauguration and received his autograph acknowledgment with a picture of the White House. Mr. Cornwright's parents were William H. and Jane (Dash) Cornwright. His father died on the Isle of Wight and his mother emigrated to America, where she was again married to Mr. Edward Cutting, of Albany.

Cross, Benjamin (deceased), was born in Clinton county, N. Y., October 4th, 1825; removed to Westport in 1842, and in September of that same year married Julia Folter, daughter of Charles H. and Julia (Baker) Folter. Children seven: Edgar, of Rutland, Vt., Silas P., William Albert, Mary (now Mrs. Alexander McDougall), Ida M. (now Mrs. Orrin Muzzy), and Joseph A. Charles Folter was a native of Hanover, Germany, and a soldier under Napoleon Bonaparte. He received his honorable discharge in 1816. Mr. Cross was a member of the 5th N. Y. Cavalry, in which he served until the close of the war. He received wounds from the effects of which he died December 8th, 1881. His son Edgar enlisted at sixteen years of age and served three years; was in 4th N. Y. Heavy Artillery. Mrs. Cross owns the homestead of 100 acres.

Cross, Freeman L., was born January 3d, 1860. He is one of the young and thrifty farmers of Lewis, and owns 115 acres of land on lot 46. February 2d, 1880, Mr. Cross married Miss Kate, daughter of Aaron and Rose (Reynolds) Van Orman. They have one son, Howard. Mr. Cross's parents were Levi H. and Sarah N. (Clark) Cross, both natives of New Hampshire. They first located in Lewis in 1840.

Cross, Thos. J., jr., is one of the reliable and substantial citizens of Lewis; is a native of the town, was born June 6, 1835. His wife was Betsey E., daughter of William Daniels, of Lewis. They have three children: Gifford W., Lucy E., and an infant son. Their farm consists of 100 acres. Mr. Cross's father, Thos. Cross, jr., was married in 1833 to Esther Brumley; is an early settler of the town and a native of Grafton, N. H.

Crowningshield. The Crowningshield family is one of the most ancient and numerous in Lewis. They are of New England ancestry. Comfort Crowningshield was the first settler in Lewis and came here prior to 1799 from Dutchess county. He located on the north branch of Boquet river, where he conducted a successful business in lumber. Roswell, Russell, and John are his grandsons. Roswell was born on the homestead June 22, 1826. He is a lumberman by occupation; has been twice married, first to Rosannah Perry, of Lewis; she died leaving three children, of whom Hezekiah only survives. For his second wife Mr. Crowningshield married Ellen, daughter of Henry Johuson. They have two children: Seth and Myrta. Seth is the miller at Lewis Center and also owns a farm of 100 acres. Russell Crowningshield lives adjoining the homestead where he was born Dec. 26, 1828. Is a farmer and owns 117 acres of land. In 1862 he enlisted in the 96th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, and was engaged in many of the severest battles of the war, viz.: Yorktown, Wilderness and Williamsburg; was married in 1855 to Annie Chase, of Willsborough; she died, leaving two children: Henry and Johanna (now deceased). His present wife is Sarah Kinney, of Willsborough. They have three children: Alma, Elmore, and Warren. John Crowningshield is the youngest of his father's family; was born May 13, 1839; is a farmer and still occupies the homestead of 198 acres. Oct. 26, 1869, he married Melvina, daughter of James and Persis (Feltt) Bowin. They have one daughter, Lila. Silas, next older than John, lost his life in the defense of his country in the battle of the Wilderness. Jane, Ruby, Eliza, Henry, and James all live in Lewis. Charlotte, the youngest and wife of Frank Van Ornam, lives in St. Paul, Minn. Barnet Crowningshield is a representative of another branch of the family; was a son of James and Sallie (Davis) Crowningshield; was born Aug 3, 1833. He still occupies his father's homestead. In 1862 he enlisted in Co. F. 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry and served until June 1864, when he received an



honorable discharge; his wife is Hannah J., daughter of Edmund Reynolds, of Willsborough. They have three children: Emmet, Aaron, and Ellen F.

<sup>a</sup> Cutting, Edward, was born in Albany Jan. 6, 1850; is one of the enterprising young farmers of Lewis and owns 70 acres of land. Wife, Jane Hathaway, of Lewis. Children one, John E. Mr. Cutting's parents were Edward and Jane (Dash) Cutting. Their family consisted of eight children, of whom Edward is the oldest. Of their other children, George is a resident of Lewis; Mary J. is Mrs. George Wescott; Eliza is single; James and Charles are twins; Jno. and Clarence were the two youngest.

Daniels, William, was born in Willsborough Aug. 10, 1822; learned the trade of bloomer and followed it for many years, but is now a farmer and owns a farm of 40 acres at Stower's Forge; was married Sept. 3, 1843, to Lucy, daughter of Ahira Perry, of Onondaga, N. Y. Children eight: Lucy M., William A., Phoebe Matilda, Harry K., Asa F., Betsey, Abial, and Grace, all living in Essex county. Mr. Daniels's father was Benager Daniels, a native of Sparta, N. J., and a volunteer soldier in the War of 1812. William is the oldest of a family of seven children.

Davis, George, son of Burton and Sarah (Slaughter) Davis, was born March 19, 1833, at Lewis. He is an enterprising farmer. In 1856 he was married to Celinda, daughter of Daniel Whittamore, of Lewis. Children three: Chas. W., Nellie M., and Ada A. Mr. Davis was a soldier of the Rebellion, a member of the gallant 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company F. He enlisted in Aug., 1862, and served until the close of the war. His regiment was engaged in twenty-one severe battles, some of them the hottest of the war. Mr. Davis's great-uncle was a soldier of the Revolution under General Washington's personal command, and witnessed his farewell to his army. Mr. Davis now has his great-uncle's canteen which was carried through the Revolution. It is a small wooden keg bound with iron hoops.

Demmon, Benjamin F., was born in Washington county, Vt., Feb. 13, 1835; in 1855 moved to North Elba, Essex county, N. Y., and in 1881 removed to a farm about three-quarters of a mile from Lewis Center, where he has since resided. The farm consists of about 300 acres of land. Was married March 13, 1848, to Virana, daughter of William and Malissa (Cottrell) Weeks, of North Elba. They have one son, David. Mr. Demmon is a Republican in politics and a member of the M. E. Church. His parents were Alpheus C. and Almira (Farrand) Demmon, who emigrated from Vermont to North Elba, Essex county, in 1855. They raised a family of four children, three of whom live in North Elba. They are Alma, now Mrs. Leander Thompson, Julia, now Mrs. Frank Thompson, and Sarah, now Mrs. Henry Allen.

Denton, Chauncy, one of the ambitious citizens of Lewis, was born February 23, 1842; has been twice married, first to Miss Elvira, daughter of Willard Simons, of Miggsville, N. Y. They had three children: Willard A., Lillie M., and Frank O. Mr. Denton's present wife is Ida, daughter of Alexander M. Benton, of Elizabethtown. They have one son, Irving L. Mr. Denton was a member of the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Co. F; served three years; was wounded in his left leg at the battle of Fort Harris, and was discharged May 25, 1865. Mr. Denton's parents were Alanson and Hannah (Davis) Denton. They had four sons.

Dickerson, Willis D., was born January 22, 1839; is a farmer and owns 200 acres of land. Mr. Dickerson has been twice married, first to Miss Eliza A., daughter of William and Julia M. (Singlehurst) Todd. Mrs. Dickerson died in 1870, leaving one son, John W. In September, 1871, Mr. Dickerson was married to Miss Diantha Coolidge, of Jay. They have four children: Leon G., Willis M., Mary E., and Carrie E. Mr. Dickerson was a son of Joseph and Mary (Wright) Dickerson. Weston A. Dickerson, also a son of Joseph and Mary Dickerson, was born in Willsborough, April 27, 1848; is a thrifty young farmer and owns 67 acres of land about two miles east of Lewis Center; was married January 1, 1881, to Carrie, daughter of Robert Parker, of Lewis. They have one son, Marshall J.

Farnsworth, Lebanon (deceased), was a native of Lewis, born February 12, 1827. He inherited his father's estate of 260 acres on the Boquet river; was justice of the peace and assessor of the town for several years, and a deacon of the Baptist Church, Elizabethtown; was married December 2, 1857, to Catharine, daughter of Lee and Louise Prouty. Children, five living: Floyd S., a physician; Elbertine (now Mrs. W. D. Macomber); Albert A., Katie, and Alice R. Mr. Farnsworth's parents were Asa and Abigail (Brown) Farnsworth, who came from New Hampshire and after residing on the State road south of Lewis Center for a time, removed to the place now occupied by Mrs. Farnsworth. Mr. Farnsworth died January 2, 1878.

Fish, Augustus J., one of the thrifty farmers of Lewis, is a native of the town; was born April 2, 1829; is the oldest of a family of seven children. In 1873 he was married to Miss Julia Burnham. They have four children: Mabel, Elda, Linda, and Hamilton. Mr. Fish's parents were Thomas and Levinia (Ballou) Fish. Another of their sons, Charles, is in Iowa, James in Glens Falls, N. Y.; a daughter, Elviria, is Mrs. Alanson Lewis, of the town of Lewis. An-



other, Martha, is Mrs. Ira Lewis, of Keene, N. H., and Emeline occupies the homestead with her brother.

Flagg, Ira, was born at Albury, Vt., September 5, 1821, and came to Lewis in 1874; is a ship-carpenter by trade, but of late years has turned his energies to farming; was married July 4, 1854, to Catharine Doughty, of Poultney, Vt. She died April 24, 1878, leaving one son, George H. Mr. Flagg's parents were Isaac and Asenith (Drew) Flagg. Mr. Flagg was a hotel-keeper and after removing from Canada, located at Colwell's Manor, where he remained until his death, which occurred in 1857. Of their seven children, Ira is the oldest.

Gardner, Aaron, is the affable and accommodating miller of Lewis Center. He is a native of the town of Essex, was born August 7, 1838; learned his trade at Wadham's Mills and has pursued it entirely within Essex County. He owns for a home 12 acres in Lewis known as the old Fullis place. His wife is Clara, daughter of Daniel and Amey (Banker) Bullis, of Lewis. They have two children: a daughter, Elizabeth E., and a son, Ambrose. Mr. Gardner's parents are Richard C. and Elizabeth (Johnson) Gardner. He a native of New Hampshire, and she of County Tyron, Ireland.

Goff, Nelson A. (deceased), was a native of Vermont, born September 2, 1816; was a lumberman by occupation; was married December 5, 1844, to Lucina, daughter of Jared and Polly (Austin) Nichols. He enlisted in 1861 in the 96th Regiment, Co. K; was in the battle of Fair Oaks and taken prisoner; was in Libby prison two months and 14 days. His children were Chesley, Jerry, Sylvester, Ashley, Augustus, Sylva, William, Nelson, and Phebe. Chesley was a soldier of the 96th New York Vol. Infantry and died at Newport News., July 24, 1862. Jerry was a member of the 69th and was wounded in front of Petersburg on picket and died of his injuries; Sylvester, Ashley and Augustus are farmers of Lewis; Sylvester was married March 7, 1869, to Martena Bordman, of Willsborough; they have two daughters, Flora and Ada. Ashley married Phebe Marshall; they have two children: Bessie and Hubert; he lives on the old homestead; Augustus married Lucinda, daughter of John Hathaway, they have two children; William married Mary Nailer, of Addison, Vt., they have two children. Sylva is Mrs. Charles Greenwood, has one child; Phebe is Mrs. Alfred Pratt, has two children, both residents of Vermont; Nelson also lives in Vermont. The family are thrifty and industrious and a credit to the community.

Hathaway, Alonzo S., was born September 9, 1852, is a farmer and occupies 117 acres of land. His wife is Mary E., daughter of Oliver Dodge, of Jay. They have two children, Oliver and Rossy. Mr. Hathaway's parents were Stephen and Rosina (Densmore) Hathaway. Besides Alonzo they had four other children, viz.: Albert, Carlos, Emergene, and Esther. Esther is now Mrs. Henry Cornwright, of Lewis. Emergene is Mrs. David E. Dickson, of Pennsylvania. Mr. Hathaway's grandfather was Josiah and his grandmother Kate (Hayes) Hathaway. His mother's parents were Amos and Susanah (Green) Densmore. Susanah's father, Uzziiah Green, was a soldier of the Revolution. Amos's father was Zebadiah Densmore, who died in the War of 1812.

Hodgkins, Edmund O., was born in his present home January 27, 1828; is a farmer and resides on the homestead, he owns two large farms, one of 161 acres and the other of 118½ acres; is a deacon and trustee of the First Congregational Church of Westport, and has held the office of assessor of his town for six years. September 16, 1857, he was married to Elminie E., daughter of Kingsbury Stafford. They have six children living, viz.: Samuel S., Winfield S., Lavinia J., Edmund J., Ezra K., and Elmina J. Mr. Hodgkins's parents were John and Diantha (Prouty) Hodgkins, natives of Charleston, N. H., who came to Lewis in 1820, bringing with them one son, John F. They purchased 154 acres of land lying on the Boquet river in the southeast corner of the town. Five children were born to them on this homestead: Lavinia, Richard M., Edmond O., Lewis W., and Samuel. Mr. Hodgkins died in 1881, aged ninety years, and Mrs. Hodgkins in 1882, aged eighty-two years.

Hulbert, Lucius, was born May 5, 1790, at Newport, Vt. His mother died when he was very young and he was adopted by an uncle, Jacob Sothwell, a maker of iron. Mr. Hulbert worked in a forge from boyhood, both as maker of iron and hammersman. His wife was Susan Davis, daughter of Robert Davis. They had twelve children, ten of whom are living, viz.: Lucius, in Missouri; Robert, a farmer of Lewis; Dennis, in Wisconsin; Charles and Leander, at Ausable Forks; Daniel, a blacksmith; Hiram, at Wilmington; Huldah A. (now Mrs. Stephen Kingman); Eunice, widow of George Phelps; Sallie, widow of H. L. Flagg. Robert Hulbert, who lives in Lewis, is the second son of Lucius Hulbert; was born August 31, 1818, in Westport. August 14, 1843, he married Miss Isabelle McDougall. The had three children, only one of whom is living, Lucius, who owns the homestead of 135 acres.

Jenkins, Levi G., a native of North Hudson, Essex county, was born February 22, 1837. He occupies a portion of his father's homestead of 150 acres; is present justice of the peace and



has held other local offices. For his first wife he married Eunice, daughter of Nathan Nichols. She died July 29, 1873, leaving a son, Fred. Mr. Jenkins was again married, February 2, 1875, to Mary Pulsifer, of Wilmington. They have three children: Lavinia, Harry, and Laura A. Mr. Jenkins's parents were Schuyler B. and Sally (Nichols) Jenkins. S. B. Jenkins was born in the town of Queensbury, Warren county, N. Y., February 14, 1804; his father's and mother's names were Palmer and Phebe (Simpson) Jenkins. Sally was the daughter of Nathan Nichols, who was born in Dutchess county, October 10, 1773, and married Mary Reynolds in 1798. The Nichols family were noted for their vigor and size. A brother of Sally, Nathaniel, weighed 400 pounds. A brother of Levi G. Jenkins, Orange F. Jenkins, served three years in the war, a member of Co. F, 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; returned home and died in 1866 of disease contracted in the war. Schuyler B. and Sally Jenkins had six children, four sons and two daughters, of whom five are now living. Their names are L. G., Martin T., Sarah E., Mary M., and Nathan L., all living in the town of Lewis excepting Nathan L., who resides in the town of Addison, Addison county, Vt.

Johnson, John, is a native of Lewis, born June 1, 1861; is an enterprising young farmer and owns 460 acres of land on lots 11, 13, and 16. His parents are Henry and Lucretia (Razie) Johnson and live at Crown Point. They had a family of nine children of whom seven are now living: Ellen (Mrs. R. Crowningshield), of Lewis; Nettie (Mrs. Aaron Dickerson), of Lewis; Jennie (Mrs. Elbert Pattison), of Crown Point; Annie, (Mrs. John Grover), of Saranac; James and Halsey, at Crown Point; and Betsey A. (now Mrs. William Bull), of Minneapolis, Minn.

Keith, Alfred, was born in the town of Warren near Montpelier, Vt., Aug. 4, 1825. He is of Scotch and English descent. He is a farmer and owns a foundry where he manufactures agricultural implements. The foundry is propelled by water power and is located on his farm in the southern part of Lewis. Mr. Keith served his country during the Rebellion, was a member of the gallant 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; serving three years until the close of the war, taking part in several of the most severe battles. He was married to Elizabeth, daughter of Lawrence Redman, of Peru, Clinton county, N. Y. Their children are Nelson R., Sarah E. (deceased), James A. (deceased), Albert W., A. Henry, James M., Lucy (deceased), and Geo. R. Mr. Keith's grandfather was Unite Keith, a soldier of the Revolution and a drum-major. After the war he located at Sheldon, Vt., and did an extensive foundry business. He raised a family of eleven children. James, the third son, was the father of Alfred.

La Bell, Dr. M. J., is the physician of Lewis; is a native of Canada and came to Lewis in 1879. Is a graduate of the Medical University of Vermont. Since locating in Lewis he has built up a lucrative practice, and enjoys the confidence of the public. He is active in the social affairs of the town. Has just built a new residence and office at the Center.

La Dieu, Chas., was born in Willsborough July 23, 1822. His father, Francis La Dieu, was of French nativity and emigrated to America in 1808, where he married Catharine, daughter of Joseph Shepard, of Clinton county, N. Y. Charles was married Jan. 1, 1842, to Matilda, daughter of Louis and Matilda (Cross) Grenough. Mr. Grenough was born in Essex, N. Y., and for sixty years was a resident of Lewis. Mrs. La Dieu is a member of the Congregational church of Lewis. Mr. La Dieu is a farmer and owns 100 acres.

Lambert, George, is one of the representative citizens of Lewis; was born June 21, 1812, in Yorkshire, England, and emigrated in 1833. He served an apprenticeship as a weaver in England, but being of an ambitious and independent nature, he decided to seek his fortune in a land of greater opportunities. He landed in America without friends and with but ninety-four cents in money; he worked on a farm in Vermont until 1834, when he purchased 50 acres at Underhill, Vt.; has spent about twenty years in the ministry, a member of the Champlain Wesleyan Methodist Conference. Of late years he has been a Sabbatarian or keeper of the seventh day. He came to Lewis in 1883, and located on Wells Hill, having previously lived in the town of Keene, in Essex county, N. Y., for about thirty-five years. His wife was Adeliza Sawtell, a native of Willistown, Vt. Mr. Lambert is one of the largest real estate owners in Essex county.

Lee. The name of Lee is among the most ancient of the town of Lewis. Noah and Samuel were two brothers who came from Farmington, Conn., in 1799, and located on lot No. 31; Noah settling on the northeast corner, and Samuel on the southeast corner. They returned to Connecticut the following year and brought their mother (who was Johannah Johnson) and two sisters, Anna and Rodah, and their brothers, Charles J., Seth and Timothy. Charles J. located on lot 29, being the present home of C. H. and J. F. Nichols. Seth settled on the southwest corner of lot 31, and Timothy eventually settled on lot 23, the present home of his son, Milford L. Lee. He and Chauncey (who is the son of Noah) are the only representatives of the family in Lewis.

Lee, Noah, married in the town of Lewis in 1806 Clarissa Nicholson, and she had five



children: Clarissa, Sarah A., Julia B., Ralza (who died in 1839), and Chauncey Lee, who occupies the homestead.

Lee, Chauncey, was born Aug. 25, 1820; married in 1865 Miss Amanda M. Wells, of Oakfield, Wis., daughter of Joseph Wells. They have two children living: Irvin E. and Ella E.

Lee, Timothy, was born at Farmington, Conn., June 11, 1789; was married Dec. 27, 1815, to Sarah Pratt, a native of Gardner, Mass.; born Nov. 1, 1796. He died Sept. 1, 1878, and she Dec. 25, 1870. Solomon I. (deceased), Laura L., Horace A. (deceased), William S., Lebeus, Evelyn M., Leander L. (deceased), Bernard A., Milford L. and Ralza S. (deceased) were their children. Milford L., who owns and occupies the homestead, was born July 7, 1838. July 10, 1874, he married Mary E., daughter of Alanson and Sophia (Weston) Jones. He is a native of Vermont, and she of Ausable Forks, but then living in Jay. Mr. & Mrs. Lee have four children: Adel, Gertrude, Lence and Carol. They are members of the Congregational Church of Lewis.

Livingstone, James G., (Deacon), is a native of Hebron, Washington county, N. Y.; came to Lewis in 1818 and settled in his present home; was married Jan. 20, 1822, to Rosetta, daughter of Roger H. Woodruff, one of the first settlers of the town. Of their three children, only one now survives, Major La Rhette Livingstone, U. S. A., a graduate of West Point. Mr. Livingstone's father, William Livingstone, was a native of Stillwater, Saratoga county, N. Y., and his mother was born in Connecticut. They came to Lewis in 1817. Their family consisted of four sons and four daughters; only our subject and a younger brother, Robert, now live in the county.

McCalvin, Sidney, was born at Keeseville, Sept. 10, 1839. He is one of the thrifty farmers of Lewis, owns a good farm of 128 acres and is respected by all who know him. He married Miss Adeline, daughter of Jno. Stevens, of Keeseville, and located in Lewis. Children four: Armina, Lois, Alma, and Charles. Alma is now Mrs. Edwin Whittamore, of Lewis, and Lois is Mrs. Irving Cross. Mr. McCalvin's parents were Jno. and Julia A. (Clough) McCalvin.

McGuire, Jno., a representative farmer of Lewis, was born in Ireland in 1813. In 1836 he emigrated to America, landing at Quebec, whence he proceeded directly to Lewis, where he located on his present estate of 220 acres, lying about three miles south of Poke-o-Moonshine Mountain. In Aug., 1824, he married Miss Katharine, daughter of Thos. Jordan, of Schuyler Falls. Children four: Barney, a merchant, Mike, a hotel keeper, Jno. and Mary E. Mr. McGuire has been justice of the peace of Lewis for twenty-four years. He is a first-class farmer and valuable citizen.

Marshall, William, was born April 15, 1819; is one of the representative farmers and business men of Lewis; owns 350 acres of land and also a saw-mill located on his farm. Has been assessor and supervisor and held other local offices. His wife is Mary, daughter of Archibald Parker. Mr. Marshall's parents were Elibeus and Elizabeth (Platt) Marshall, who emigrated from Connecticut to Lewis about 1803. They raised a family of twelve children, of whom William is next to the youngest.

Miller, Fayette L., was born in Elizabethtown, Dec. 29, 1841. He is serving his second term as school commissioner of District No. 1, having been elected by a handsome majority of 953 in the district and 103 in his own town. He is the owner of 200 acres of land in the southern part of Lewis, on the Boquet river. Mr. Miller married Miss Marcia, daughter of Leland and Phoebe (Wait) Simmonds, of Elizabethtown. Children four living: Mattie V., Alfred C., Anna, and Lizzie. His father, Charles Miller, was a native of Ticonderoga, and an iron manufacturer at Keene. His mother was Miss Sophia, daughter of Chas. Lee, one of the first settlers of Lewis. Mr. and Mrs. Miller, sr., had three sons and three daughters, viz.: Lavinia, Fayette L., Elizabeth, Rhoda, Henry, and Monah H.

Mitchell, George D., is a native of Essex county and town of Essex. He was born Jan. 26, 1859. He is a farmer and owns 159 acres of land on lot 46, which he purchased in 1884. Aug. 8, 1878, he married Miss Jennie, daughter of Deacon Peter F. Nichols, of Lewis. They have two children: Lynn and Madora. His parents were Andrew and Mary A. (Sartwell) Mitchell. Mr. Mitchell, sr., was of Scotch origin, and Mrs. Mitchell came from New Hampshire.

Moore, Edwin, a thrifty farmer of Lewis, was born August 17, 1835, in Willsborough; owns 155 acres of land in Lewis. His wife is Sarah J., daughter of Daniel Palmer, of Willsborough. Children five: Frank, Ernest, Merton, Eugene, and Rudolph. Ernest is a farmer in Vermont, and Merton is engaged in the same occupation at Willsborough. Mr. Moore's parents were Dual and Susan (Hamilton) Moore. His grandfather was Stephen Moore who emigrated from New Jersey to the town of Essex and latter to Willsborough.

Nichols, Andrew, was born at Crown Point, N. Y., July 19, 1817, and came to Lewis about 1834. He at first engaged in the lumber business for Ransom Noble & Sons, but is now a far-



mer owning 215 acres of land. In 1839 he married Miss Jane, daughter of John Crowning-shield, an old settler of Lewis. Children five living: Nelson, John, Jared, Mary, and Sophronia. Ansel, another son, was a member of the 2d N. Y. Vol. Cavalry; served six months, was taken sick and died at Winchester, Va. Mr. Nichols's parents were Jared and Mary (Austin) Nichols, natives of Crown Point.

Nichols, Charles, and John, are sons of Rowland Nichols. They are farmers and occupy the homestead of their father. Charles was married to Sarah Williams, daughter of Samuel Williams, of Elizabethtown, and has two children: Lizzie and William. John married Louise, daughter of Alexander Mack, of Elizabethtown, and has two children: Harry and Edna. The grandfather of Charles and John Nichols was Nathaniel Nichols, who was an early settler on the present Jenkins estate. His three sons, Nathaniel, Rowland, and Isaac, located on farms joining each other. Their children were Mary A., Elvira (deceased), Charles (deceased), Lafayette, Edward, John, Ellen (deceased), Amana (deceased), Nathaniel (deceased), Charles and John, who occupy the homestead. Mary A. married Erastus Lobdell, of Elizabethtown.

Nichols, Peter F., is a native of Westport, N. Y., was born September 2, 1839. In May, 1860, he married Elvira, daughter of Eben Safford, of Lewis. Their children are Jennie, Lynn C., Kirby S., Alfred H., and George R. Mr. Nichols is a deacon in the Congregational Church of Lewis. His parents were Sylvester and Catharine (Youngs) Nichols. Mr. Nichols, sr., was a farmer by occupation. He came to Lewis and located on the Pratt farm in 1848; was a member of the M. E. Church of Elizabethtown, died August 2, 1879, leaving a family of five children, viz.: George R., Alfred H., Julia S., Hattie P., and Peter F., the subject of this sketch.

Norton, Mortimer, an enterprising merchant and native of Lewis Center, was born June 15, 1845. November 18, 1884, he married Miss Ettie, daughter of William Whipple, one of the substantial farmers of Lewis. Mr. Norton's parents were William and Mary (Marshall) Norton. They died when Mortimer was quite young and Mortimer, with his brother Arthur, found a home with his uncle, William Marshall. He spent his early life on a farm and several years later in California, where he accumulated some means in the mining business. He returned to Lewis in 1881, and commenced business as a merchant. Arthur M., his brother, was also born at Lewis Center July 6, 1847; was married February 14, 1873, to Miss Emma, daughter of Cyrus Severance, of Lewis. Has spent several years in Dakota and the far West and has only recently returned home and connected himself with the business of his brother Mortimer. A sister of Mortimer and Arthur M. Norton is Mary, now Mrs. Martin Marshall, of New Russia, Essex county.

Lewis, Alanson M., was born in the town of Lewis June 2, 1823; is a farmer and owns 100 acres. His wife was Alvira, daughter of Thomas Fish, one of the early settlers of Lewis. They have one son, Adelbert. Mr. Lewis's parents were Henry and Elizabeth (Sheldon) Lewis. They came to Lewis about 1809. They had several children, viz.: Roxie, Keziah, Almira, Mary A., Alanson M., Elizabeth, George and Rosanna.

Lewis, Henry B., was born in Elizabethtown, March 31, 1830; is a farmer and owns 120 acres of land; his wife was Rose Ann, daughter of Lee Prouty, formerly of Langdon, N. H., and later of Lewis. Children two living: Etta, and Elton. Mr. Lewis's father, Thomas Lewis, was a farmer of Vermont, and his mother, Nancy (Wheelock) Lewis, was a native of Port Henry, N. Y. Besides Henry B., they had two children: Alvira J. and Eliza Ann.

Perket, Louis, a thrifty farmer of Lewis, was born in Canada August 25, 1828. His wife, Flovey Sharrow, also born in Canada. Their children are Maggie, Francis, Philamon (now Mrs. Charles Bassett, of Westport), Theodore, Odelia, Rosie, Oliver, and Charles. Mr. Perket's parents are Frank and Sarah Perket, of Canada, and of French parentage.

Ray, Wesley G., was born August 19, 1840, in the town of Lewis. He was among the first to enlist for the defense of the Union in 1861; was a member of the 28th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company A; served three months and was honorably discharged for disability. He draws a pension. His wife is Susan J., daughter of Thomas J. Enderton, of Niagara county, N. Y. They have two children living: Anthony, and Philinda H. Mr. Ray's father was William P. Ray, a minister for forty years in Essex county. Besides Wesley G. there were in the family Oscar B., and Sylinda H., who married Giles O. Smith.

Robbins, Anson, was born in Craftsbury, Vt., January 21, 1841, and came to Lewis in 1855. He is a farmer and owns 185 acres. He was a soldier in the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company F; enlisted in August, 1862, and served about three years under Grant in Virginia and later under Butler; was engaged at Cold Harbor, and Drury's Bluff battles, and was wounded at Petersburg. His wife was Rachel, daughter of Richard Gardner (deceased), and for many years lived at Lewis Center. Mr. and Mrs. Robbins have seven children, viz.: Asher, Ansel, Leon, Florence, Lizzie, Blanche, and Lila. Mr. Robbins's parents were Ansel and Elizabeth (Childs) Robbins, both natives of New England.



Roberts, Samuel, was one of the pioneers of Lewis, having settled in the town about 1820. He subsequently lived in the town of Moriah, Essex county, where he was born April 26, 1804. July, 21, 1828, he was married to Ermina, daughter of George Lee. She died December 25, 1836, leaving five children: Lucy, George, Oscar, Duane, and Carlton now deceased. Mr. Roberts was again married April 8, 1839, to Sarah, daughter of Noah Lee, of Lewis. Her children are Dr. R. R. Roberts (deceased), who was a prominent physician of Westport and Lewis, J. L. Roberts, a commercial traveler from Troy, N. Y., Austin M. (deceased), and C. Ermina, now Mrs. D. W. Dougan, of Elizabethtown. William F., a farmer of Lewis, has for six years past been a clerk of Saranac Lake House; his wife was Miss Rosa Wakefield, of North Hudson, Essex county.

Roscoe, Hudson (deceased), was a representative of one of the first families of Lewis. He was born March 1, 1822. His estate consisted of 250 acres of land. July 14, 1850, he was married to Abigail, daughter of Patrick Hines, of Lewis. Their children are Emma, now Mrs. Pardee Voran, of St. Johnsville, N. Y.; Friend, who lives on the farm; Ida (now Mrs. Charles McClintithen); Abby, Harry H., and Mary. Mr. Roscoe's father was James and his grandfather, Stephen Roscoe, who emigrated from Poultney, Vt., and settled on the large tract of land comprising the village of Elizabethtown, extending to and embracing the present Hudson Roscoe estate which he retained and occupied as his estate. Hudson Roscoe died October 15, 1870.

Sargent, Alfred I., was born in Lewis Feb. 23, 1828. Is a farmer and owns 225 acres nicely located between Lewis Center and Elizabethtown; has been highway commissioner and assessor. In 1858 Mr. Sargent married Anna, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth (Sheldon) Lewis, of the town of Lewis. Children six, viz.: Lizzie, Etta, Medda, Dora, Anna, and Elbert. Lizzie is now Mrs. William Baker, of North Elba, N. Y. Mr. Sargent's parents were Jacob and Sophia (Finney) Sargent, natives of Vermont. They came to New York and located on a farm in the town of Essex about 1810, bringing with them one child, Adaline, who married Stillman Pratt and returned to Vermont. They removed to Lewis in 1812 where other children were born to them, viz.: Jno. (who died in the army); Harriet, Mrs. Harley Clark; Elizabeth, Mrs. A. B. Willard; Alnora, Mrs. O. H. Burpee; and Alfred I.

Sawtell, J. W., of Lewis Center, is a native of Old Town, Maine; was born Oct. 22, 1837; is a lumberman by occupation. Mr. Sawtell, sr., was a soldier of the War of 1812; he was engaged at Plattsburg and subsequently a major in the Old Town military company; has always been an enthusiastic military man. He raised a family of twelve children, of whom Jerome W. is second youngest. Jerome W. came to Lewis in 1876; has spent most of his life as a merchant. Owns a farm near Lewis Center, and has held office in this town. He was married Nov. 1, 1860, to Olive Davis, of Plattsburg. They have one daughter, Mary A., a graduate of Plattsburg High School and now a teacher.

Severance, Cyrus G., was born in Essex in Jan. 1822; has been twice married, first to Phoebe M. Wardner, Oct. 9, 1847. She died Feb. 19, 1853, leaving Emma A., now Mrs. Arthur Norton, of Lewis Center, and Elva M., now Mrs. Ira Wakefield, of Lewis. In March, 1854, Mr. Severance was again married to Mrs. Amey E. (Reynolds) Angier; they have two sons: William A. and Chas. I. William, now of Lowell, Mass., was educated at Boston; is skilled in the execution of piano and vocal music, and also does repairing and tuning. Chas. I. is a farmer and blacksmith, of Lewis. Mr. Severance's parents were Samuel and Susan (Warren) Severance.

Shattuck, Frederick (deceased), was in his day the most active and successful business man of Lewis. He came to Lewis as a blacksmith in 1842. By perseverance, industry, and economy he became an extensive manufacturer of lumber and owner of vast quantities of real estate. His birth place was Huntington, Vt. He was three times married, first to Miss Edith Mary Evans. Their children were Mrs. Alex. Brabau, of Wackahamo Falls, and Mrs. Henry Jenkins, of Boston, Mass. His second wife was Electa Holcombe, daughter of Obed Holcomb, of Lewis. They had one daughter, Emily E., now Mrs. Edwin Dunton, of Lewis Center. His third wife was Miss Sallie, daughter of Samuel Lee. Mr. Shattuck was seven years assessor of his town and held other offices. He died Dec. 30, 1882.

Smith Orrin (deceased), was one of the pioneer physicians of Essex county; was born in Monkton, Vt., April 7, 1796; afterward lived at Bristol, Vt., and came from there to Essex in 1836. He was expert in his profession and had a practice second to none in the county. His first wife was Parmelia Moore and they had four children: Henry C., of Chicago, being the only one now living. Mrs. Smith died March 29, 1836. For his second wife Dr. Smith married Sophronia, daughter of Friend and Elizabeth (Stagg) Adams, a wealthy and influential family of New England. This marriage took place at Panton, Vt., Oct. 18, 1835. Mrs. Smith was born at Addison, Vt., May 31, 1815, and since her husband's decease has lived in retirement on her estate near Lewis Center. Orrin A. Smith, her oldest son, was born May 10, 1837; is one



of the assessors and an influential citizen of the town. Friend, the second son, is in the U. S. mail service at Chicago. William, who shares in the management of the estate, is a thrifty farmer; was born Dec. 25, 1841. His wife is Alma J., daughter of Stillman and Adaline (Sargent) Pratt, of Lewis. They have four children; Sylva S., Wm., jr., Inez, Francis, Friend, and Grover Cleveland, after President Cleveland.

Still, Henry W., an industrious young farmer of Lewis, is a native of Essex, born Sept. 19, 1860. Was married May 27, 1881, to Abbie, daughter of Horace and Martha Reynolds, of Lewis. They have two sons: Burtis and Chester. Mr. Still's parents are Cyrus and Sarah (Morehouse) Still, of the town of Keene. Mr. Still is a thoroughly reliable citizen and commands the respect of all who know him.

Suprise, Benjamin, is one of the well-to-do farmers of Lewis. He was born in Canada, Jan. 12, 1836, and came to Lewis in 1854; is the owner of 100 acres of land in Lewis; has served as school trustee in his district. His wife was Julia A., daughter of Jno. Emnott. They have four children: Eugene, Ella G., Benjamin, and Edwin.

Thompson, William, has resided in Lewis since 1832. He was born in county Cork, Ireland, in 1814; has served his town (Lewis) as postmaster, county clerk, overseer of the poor, justice of the peace and other minor offices. Was married April 10, 1836, to Miss Adela, daughter of James Woolfe, of Ausable Forks. They had five children, three of whom are deceased. Louise is now Mrs. Rev. H. M. Bien, of Vicksburg, Miss.; La Rhette was a soldier of the 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry, Company F, and died in the service at nineteen years of age. William C. now resides in Minnesota. Mr. Thompson's parents were George and Susanna (Dawson) Thompson, who emigrated from Ireland in 1832. They were of Anglo-Saxon descent, and members of the Protestant Episcopal Church.

Wakefield, Ira, a thrifty farmer of Lewis, was born Jan. 30, 1835, at Newport, N. H. He located in Lewis in 1863; is a farmer and owns 140 acres. Dec. 19, 1866, he married Eva, daughter of Cyrus T. Severance, of Lewis. They have one adopted daughter. Mr. Wakefield was a member of 118th N. Y. Vol. Infantry; served in the U. S. army for about three years during the war, engaging in the many battles in which his gallant regiment participated. He is a pensioner. Mr. Wakefield is a son of Ira and Prudentia (Wheeler) Wakefield, both natives of New Hampshire.

West, Frank J., was born in Willsborough, Dec. 28, 1842. He is a farmer and owns 140 acres of land in Lewis; his wife was Mary D., daughter of George Webb, of Lewis, and they have three children: Inez M., Clark R. and Edna A. Mr. West was a soldier in the War of the Rebellion; enlisted in 1862 in the 38th N. Y. Infantry and served two years. He engaged in the first battle of Bull Run, was in front of Richmond, also at Fairs Oaks, Malvern Hill, in the first and second battles of Fredericksburg, and others, making in all thirteen severe battles; was wounded at Williamsburg. Mr. West's parents were Joseph and Phila (Buck) West.

West, Geo. N., was born in Lewis, June 3, 1840; is a blacksmith; he first opened a shop at Flackville and in 1879 came to Lewis; owns a well-equipped shop, is a first-class workman, and also owns 43 acres of land. Was married to Phelura, daughter of Silas Hayes, of Schroon River, June 3, 1876. Mr. West's father was Jno. L. Lewis, for many years a resident blacksmith of the town. In 1861 Mr. West enlisted in Company A, 77th N. Y. V. Infantry; was in the battle of Fair Oaks, Richmond, Bull Run, and minor engagements. A brother, Henry, was in the same regiment and fell before Fredericksburg.

Whipple William, was born at Fair Haven, Vt., July 23, 1822. He left his native home and came to Crown Point in 1842. In 1852 he married Nancy Wheeler, a native of Shoran, Vt., and their children are George E., Ettie (now Mrs. Mortimer), Norton, of Lewis Center and Nellie, at home. Mr. Whipple owns a farm of 150 acres. His parents were Joseph and Anna (Hawkins) Whipple, both natives of Rhode Island. His grandfather, Ethan, was one of the first settlers of Fair Haven.

Whitman, Alvenus K., one of the substantial farmers and citizens of Lewis, was born in Rutland county, Vt., Dec., 9, 1825. He learned the trade of a bloomer which he followed for many years, but is now a farmer owning 152 acres at Stower's Forge. His wife was Sarah A., daughter of Chauncey Slater, a farmer of Jay. Mr. Whitman has held office of collector and other minor offices in his town. His parents were Benjamin and Mehitabel (Kilbourne) Whitman, who came to Jay in 1826.

Williams, Ransom, was born in Troy, Vt., Jan. 29, 1835, and came to Lewis in 1872. His first wife was Miss Mary Hart, who died Feb. 27, 1873. His second wife was Lavinia, daughter of Obediah Hitchcock. They had three children: Claron H., Mary S., and Nancy P. Mr. Williams is a deacon of the Congregational Church of Lewis.

Wilson, Joseph, the popular proprietor of the Lewis House at Lewis Center, was born in St.



Lawrence county, N. Y., Dec. 19, 1827. His parents emigrated from Windsor, Vt., in 1833 and located on lots 24 and 25, in the town of Lewis. Mr. Wilson is the third of eight children and succeeded to the ownership of the homestead, where he lived until 1883, when he sold out and purchased his present location. He has recently refitted the Lewis House throughout, rendering it pleasant and convenient for hotel and boarding-house purposes. His location in the heart of the sporting region and on the State road renders his house easy of access. Sept. 14, 1856, he was married to Sophronia, daughter of Simeon and Polly (Clark) Avery. They have two children living: Ada E. and Henry C. Mr. Wilson owns considerable property at Lewis Center.

Woodruff, Ansel W., was born in Lewis Dec. 25, 1832. In 1861 he married, in Lewis, Miss Julia E., daughter of Cheney Burpee, of Lewis. She died in 1871 and he was again married to Miss Amanda Rice, who died in 1881, leaving three children: Edith S., Susie M. (deceased), and Clayton W. For his third wife Mr. Woodruff married Carrie R. Rice, of Schroom. They have one son, Irving A. Mr. Woodruff's grandfather was Hooker Woodruff, who came here from New England and located on the farm now owned by his grandson, Winslow W. Woodruff. He raised a family of six children one of whom, Jeremiah R., is father of the subject of this sketch. Another son, Winslow W. Woodruff, was born March 31, 1850; is a merchant of Lewis Center. Aug. 20, 1885, he married Miss Marcia, daughter of William Brownson, of Elizabethtown. Mr. Woodruff owns a homestead, and a first-class general store and is a successful business man.

### ELIZABETHTOWN.

**B**ROWN, F. A., was born in this town March 20, 1846; is a farmer and owns 460 acres of land; has been town collector. His wife, whom he married Oct. 17, 1883, was Hila E. Partridge, a daughter of Adolphus and Elizabeth (Nichols) Partridge, of this town. Mr. Brown's parents were Levi D. and Lovina (Kneeland) Brown, natives of Lewis, Essex county and Montgomery county.

Glidden, Geo. H., was born in the town of Keene June 12, 1831; is a farmer and owns 290 acres; has been overseer of the poor for ten years. His wife, Juliette Calkin, is a daughter of Benjamin and Urania (Kellogg) Calkin, natives of Vermont. Children two: Fannie A., now Mrs. Joseph Houston (Mr. Houston is deputy county clerk of Essex county), and Hubert H. Mr. Glidden's parents were Harry and Hila (Partridge) Glidden.

Laverty, Allen and William, children of William and Mary Ann (Stewart) Laverty, are farmers and proprietors of the "Hunter's Home." They own 410 acres of land. Allen was born in West Chazy, Clinton county, Oct. 31, 1830; William was born in Hemingsford, Canada, in 1841. They came to Elizabethtown in 1865. Allen was married Feb. 1, 1866, to Mary Riddle, daughter of Jno. and Pamilla Hardy, of Smith's Falls, Canada West. Children five: James S., Jennie E., Amelia M., Jessie A., Isabel H. Both Allen and William Laverty were soldiers in Co. H, N. Y. Ira Harris Guards.

Perry, Milo C., was born in Elizabethtown Oct. 26, 1844; is attorney and counselor at law; was admitted to practice in April, 1868. Has been justice of the peace, town clerk, under-sheriff, jailor, and supervisor. Was married Aug. 28, 1873, to Sarah J. Fair, a daughter of Edward and Mary J. (Preston) Fair, of this town. Mr. Perry's parents were Abijah, and Eliza (Kellogg) Perry, natives of this town.

Scriver, Sidney and William, children of Edwin and Jane (Laverty) Scriver, are farmers and own 140 acres of land. Sidney was born in Moriah Jan. 15, 1849. William was born in Hemingsford, Canada, in 1853. They came here with their parents in 1863.

Walker, Jno. S., was born in the town of North Hudson, Essex county, Sept. 19, 1843, and came to Elizabethtown in 1881; is the proprietor of the Pleasant Valley grist and feed mills. Was married June 5, 1876, to Sarah Laverty, a daughter of William and Mary (Stewart) Laverty, of Elizabethtown. Children three: Rosie L., Ralph H., and Lizzie M. Mr. Walker's parents were Estes B. and Malissa (Pease) Walker, natives of North Hudson.

Wood, R. N., was born in Canada, Nov. 21, 1845; is a farmer and owns 255 acres; is constable and collector. He came to Essex county in 1865. Was married Nov. 17, 1874, to Mary A. Baird, daughter of Robert and Nancy (Allen) Baird, of Elizabethtown. Children four living: Elsie, Alice, Mary, and Robert. Mr. Wood's parents were Jno. and Elizabeth Wood, natives of Ireland, who came here in 1865.

### KEESEVILLE.

**A**MES, SAMUEL (deceased), was born in Napiersville in 1824, and came to Keeseville in 1834; was a practicing lawyer and admitted in 1847; was afterward cashier of the old Essex County Bank. In 1865 he was appointed attorney for the government to assist the



Hon. Robert S. Hale in investigating the claims for cotton destroyed during the war; in 1871 he was elected State Senator and Representative for the counties of Essex, Clinton and Warren; in 1871 he organized the Keeseville Bank, of which he was cashier until his death, which occurred in 1875. June 22, 1848, he was married to Elizabeth Thompson, a daughter of Andrew and Lucretia B. (Carpenter) Thompson, of Keeseville. Children three: Kate (now Mrs. C. F. Aberill, of Chicago, Ill.), Elizabeth, and William T., of Chicago.

Halcombe, M. B., M. D., son of Ephraim and Mercy (Hill) Halcombe was born at Isle La Motte, Grand Isle county, Vt., Oct. 18, 1850, and came to Keeseville in 1880. Is a graduate of Bellevue Hospital Medical College, 1879. Was married June 22, 1881, to Marcia Stearns, daughter of Nathan and Maria (Talcott) Stearns, of Brasher, St. Lawrence county, N. Y. Children one, Frank. M.

Matthews, Herman O., Keeseville, was born in Moorestown, Vt., and came to Keeseville about 1829 or 1830, where he went into the tin and barter business with his brother, and soon afterward went into the general mercantile business, in which he was very successful. He has also been supervisor and justice of the peace. In the great fire of 1882 Mr. Mathews had sixteen buildings destroyed. Was married in March 1846 to Robalina A. Sampson, daughter of Lester and Elizabeth (Van Tine) Sampson. Children three: Alice (now Mrs. Geo. H. Shattuck), Geo. W., and Fannie H., of Keeseville.

Mould, Henry M., Keeseville, son of Willis and Amanda M. Mould, was born at West Stockholm, St. Lawrence county, March 31, 1843, and came to Keeseville in 1850. In June, 1862, Mr. Mould commenced recruiting men for the army; was mustered into the U. S. service at Plattsburgh in Aug. and became second lieutenant of Company K, 118th N. S. V.; was discharged July 29, 1863, through sickness. Was formerly connected with his father in the drug business until the death of the latter in 1883, since which time he has conducted it alone. Was married to Salome Bushnell, daughter of Niles and Sophia (Brigham) Bushnell, of Keeseville, Nov. 19, 1867. Children one, Fred W.

Rowe, F. A., Keeseville, attorney and counselor at law, was born in Chesterfield, Essex county, May 28, 1853; was admitted to the bar in May 1876; has held office of supervisor and justice of the peace of Chesterfield. Was married May 11, 1880, to Minnie M. Wakefield, a daughter of Dana and Almira A. (Simmonds) Wakefield, of Elizabethtown. Children one, Grace E. His parents are Silas B. and Emily M. (Deyoe) Rowe, natives of this county.

Tallmadge, H. O., M. D., Keeseville, was born in Glens Falls, Warren county, July 25, 1820, and came to Keeseville in 1846; graduated from Castleton Medical College of Vermont in 1843; was appointed assistant physician and surgeon of Bellevue Hospital in 1844, where he remained for two years; was examining surgeon of Essex county at the commencement of the war; then went to Georgetown and, with Prof. Daniel Ayres, of Brooklyn, opened the government hospital to receive the wounded of the second battle of Bull Run. Mr. Tallmadge was married to Catherine L. Thompson, a daughter of Andrew and Lucretia B. (Carpenter) Thompson, of Keeseville, formerly of Lansingburgh. Children one, Andrew T., graduate of Long Island College Hospital, class of 1881, associated with his father. Mr. Thompson was formerly cashier of the old Essex County Bank of Keeseville.

## WILLSBOROUGH.

**A**DSIT, WM. H., Willsborough, son of Alvin and Keziah (Reynolds) Adsit, was born in Essex, May 5, 1840, and came to Willsborough in 1875; is a farmer and owns 210 acres of land. Wife, Helen Dickerson, daughter of Joseph and Mary (Wright) Dickerson, of Willsborough; married Feb. 16, 1862. Children two: Cora D., and Josie M.

Barton, Lyman, M. D., is a son of Simon and Olive (Cary) Barton; was born in Hebron, Washington county, N. Y. Sept. 19, 1812; studied medicine with his uncle, Dr. Ira Barton, of Waterford, Pa.; graduated at Dartmouth Medical College, in 1838. In 1839 he came to Willsborough and commenced the practice of medicine where he has been and still is in the active practice of his profession. Aug. 20, 1869, the University of Vermont conferred on him the honorary degree of master of arts. He was elected permanent member of the Medical Society of the State of New York, and was one of the founders of the Medical Association of the State of New York, organized in 1884. He has been supervisor of his town several times. Was married in Dec., 1840, to Minerva Aiken, daughter of Abram and Elizabeth (Boynton) Aiken, of Willsborough. Has five children, Elizabeth, now Mrs. C. W. Witters, of Milton, Vt.; Abba, now Mrs. B. J. Chatterton, of Willsborough; Susannah, now Mrs. G. A. Perry, A. M., of Germantown, Pa.; Sarah, now Mrs. K. M. Laurie, of Colorado; and Lyman Guy, a graduate of Granville Military School and for the past two years a student in Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y.



Boardman, Warren, was born in Willsborough in 1815; is a farmer and owns 207 acres. Was married Dec. 3, 1840, to Isabel Helm, daughter of Robert and Jane (Covin) Helm, who came from Scotland in 1823. Children five: Mary J., Alfred J., William H., Hattie L., now Mrs. Abner Reynolds, Emmet R., of Willsborough. Mr. Boardman's parents were Benjamin and May (Prescott) Boardman, who came from New Hampshire about 1811.

Baker, M. S., was born in town of Peru, Oct. 22, 1811, and came to Willsborough in 1837; is a farmer and owns 359 acres. In 1871 Mr. Baker met with a serious accident, depriving him of both hands. He was married Oct. 22, 1838, to Eliza H. Collins, a daughter of C. and Elizabeth Collins, of Whitehall, Vt. Children, three living: Marian (now Mrs. G. W. Palmer), Herbert L., of Essex, and Helen E., now Mrs. Geo. Calkins. Mr. Baker's parents were Wm. and Mary (Weatherwax) Baker, of Peru.

Cuyler, Jno. B., was born in Willsborough April 18, 1837; is a farmer and owns 70 acres; also a carriage manufacturer; has been justice of the peace and was elected supervisor in 1885. His parents were Jno. B. and Phoebe (Hoffnagle) Cuyler, who were early settlers in this county; they had six children, two of whom are deceased, Jane and Sally A.; there are now living Elbert A., of Ohio, and Chas. E., of California, Susannah, and Jno. B.

Chatterton, B. J., Willsborough, was born in Whitehall, Saratoga county, Dec. 18, 1838, and came to Willsborough in 1856; is a farmer and owns 100 acres of land. Was married March 29, 1870, to Abbie Barton, daughter of Dr. Lyman and Minerva (Aiken) Barton, of Willsborough. Mr. Chatterton's parents were Wm. F. and Mary (Kimberly) Chatterton.

Frisbie, Asa W., was born in Willsborough Oct. 27, 1823; is a farmer and owns 350 acres; has been assessor of town. Was married Oct. 22, 1853, to Margaret S. Jones, a daughter of Dudley H. and Susan (Densmore) Jones, natives of Massachusetts and Connecticut. Mr. Frisbie's parents were Guy C. and Jane (Ames) Frisbie. His paternal grandfather and grandmother were Asa and Sally (Green) Frisbie.

Fairchild, Frederick, Willsborough, son of Jno. and Grace (Follet) Fairchild, was born in Willsborough, Sept. 3, 1841; is a farmer and owns 360 acres of land, 110 of which was original purchase land, purchased by his grandfather Aaron, who came here from Newburgh about 1791. Was married to Lucetta A., daughter of Eli and Mary (Smith) Wood, of Westport, Essex county, Nov. 19, 1867. Children three: Nelson E., Henry E., and Irene E.

Higby, Edmund S., son of Levi and Eliza (Sheldon) Higby, was born in Willsborough, Nov. 19, 1829. He is proprietor of Higby's saw-mill, and manufacturer of lumber; also owns farm lands of 152 acres; has been assessor, town clerk and supervisor. Mr. Higby was married Jan. 15, 1863, to Lucy M. Jones, a daughter of David and Elizabeth (Chase) Jones, of Willsborough; children eight: Carrie L., Blanche M., Hamilton A., Winter R., Nora B., Maud, Lena E., and Walter. Mr. Higby's parents came from Connecticut about 1800. Mr. Higby died Sept. 27, 1882, aged 85 years. Mrs. Higby is still living, aged 85 years.

Hoffnagle, Edward, was born in Willsborough, Oct. 28, 1834; is a manufacturer of wagons and sleighs, and justice of the peace. Was married Sept 7, 1875, to Lucy A. Wood, a daughter of Eli and Mary (Smith) Wood. Children three: Carroll W., Edna M., and Ezra N. Mr. Hoffnagle's parents were Jno. and Sally (Cooley) Hoffnagle, natives of this town. Mr. Hoffnagle was born in 1796 and died in 1883. Mrs. Hoffnagle still survives him.

Hoffnagle, Abraham W., Willsborough, son of Edmund and Margaret J. (Weatherwax) Hoffnagle, natives of Willsborough, was born in Willsborough, Sept. 30, 1834; is of the firm of Hoffnagle & Scott, proprietors of the Phoenix grist-mill; has been town clerk since 1871. Was married Oct. 8, 1863, to Sarah J. Fairchild, daughter of Daniel and Annis (Sheldon) Fairchild. One child, Jennie J.

Jacobs, Joseph B., was born in Chester, Windsor county, Vt., June 3, 1806, and came to Willsborough in 1833; is a farmer and owns 170 acres of land. Was married Jan. 8, 1833, to Hannah Heald, of Andover, Vt., daughter of Simon and Betsey (Burnap) Heald, natives of Temple, N. H. Children three: Huldah, the oldest, (deceased). Hannah, and Joseph Henry, both living in Willsborough. Mr. Jacob's parents were John and Hannah (Bowker) Jacobs, natives of Vermont and New Hampshire.

Jones, Henry M., was born in Willsborough in Jan. 1837; is a farmer and owns 200 acres of land; is also a dealer in and breeder of fine horses. Was married Nov. 25, 1875, to Kate R. Martin, a daughter of Hugh and Sally (Goodell) Martin, of Franklin county, N. Y. Mr. Jones's parents are Daniel and Elizabeth (Chase) Jones, of Willsborough.

Jones, David, son of Bethuel and Lucy (Hosford) Jones, was born in Willsborough, Oct. 9, 1810; is a farmer and owns 750 acres; has been county superintendent of the poor nine years and overseer of the town poor for about thirty years. Wife, Elizabeth Chase, a daughter of Abram and Lucy (Cooley) Chase, natives of Danbury, Conn., who came here about 1800.



Children nine: Henry M., of Willsborough, Mrs. Edmund S. Higby, of Willsborough, Abram D., of Chicago, Eliza A. (now Mrs. Seth Calkins), of Ausable, Emmet A. (deceased), Frank S., Mrs. Alfred Howard, Nellie M. Jones, Mrs. B. Arnold, of Ausable.

Lyon, Edmund D., Willsborough, was born in Essex, Vt., Nov. 2, 1824; is a farmer and owns 194 acres; has been assessor and commissioner of highways. Was married Oct. 28th, 1852, to Mary T. Towner, daughter of Enos and Sarah (Bacon) Towner, of Willsborough. Children three: Wilbur F., Abalena, and Sarah E. Mr. Lyon's parents were Alfinzy A., and Abalena (Barber) Lyon. He was a native of Vermont and came here about 1828. She was a native of Willsborough.

Lynde, Denny T., was born in Willsborough, Jan. 22, 1799, and died in May, 1882; was a farmer and owned 110 acres of land. Jan. 13, 1823, he was married to Eunice Dodge. They had one child, Jno. D., of Philadelphia. His second wife was Alvira Blair, whom he married Nov. 11, 1833. They had two children: Henry, of Missouri, and Alva B., of Iowa. His third wife was Lucy Heald, whom he married March 19, 1840. Had one child, Edwin, of Iowa. Fourth wife, was Adelia L. Crouch, of Shelburne, Vt., whom he married March 18, 1846. Mr. Lynde's parents were Jonathan and Mollie (Franklin) Lynde, who settled here about 1783.

Morhous, Andrew, was born in Willsborough May 3, 1789, and died Jan. 26, 1867. His wife, Sally Woodruff, was born March 23, 1795, died Sept. 27, 1882. Children twelve: Chas. B., Rosanna (deceased), Edwin A. (deceased), Almira D., (now Mrs. B. G. Jones), Horace, Jane Ann (now Mrs. McDonald Ames), Emily (now Mrs. Hiram Parish), Sarah C. (now Mrs. Frederick B. Lyon), Geo. F., Mary E. (now Mrs. Smith), Martha M. (now Mrs. Woodruff), Annette L., who resides with Geo. F. on the homestead.

Morhous, Albert, was born in Willsborough, Sept 19, 1819; is a farmer and owns 120 acres of land. Wife, Ellen Otis, daughter of Jno. and Jane (Jackson) Otis. Children three: Leslie H., De Forris O. and Oakley A. Mr. Morhous's parents were Michael and Diadema (Stafford) Morhous, natives of Willsborough.

Morhous, Chas., Willsborough, was born in Willsborough, Oct. 11, 1798; is a farmer and owns 150 acres; has been at different times highway commissioner, poormaster and justice of the peace. Was married April 8, 1821, to Anna Vaughn, daughter of Russel and — (Button) Vaughn, natives of Wallingford, Vt. Children eight: Mary Ann (now Mrs. Leonard Nokes), Russel V. (deceased), Edward, George (of Illinois), Eliza (now Mrs. Wallace Smith), Harman H. (deceased), Hiram C., Oscar D. (deceased). Mr. Morhous's parents were Jno. and Rosanna (Hoffnagle) Morhous, who came here from Connecticut about 1784.

Morhous, Michael, was born in Willsborough, Sept. 1814; is a farmer and owns 185 acres of land; was formerly justice of the peace and supervisor of his town. Was married Feb. 17, 1846, to Charlotte Baker, a daughter of William and Mary (Weatherwax) Baker, of Perue, Clinton county. One child, Florence M., now Mrs. Benjamin Fairchild. Mr. Morhous's parents were Michael and Didema (Stafford) Morhous, both deceased.

Palmer, Daniel H., was born in New York in 1808, and came to Willsborough in 1837. He was a farmer and owns 125 acres. He died Jan., 1881. His first wife was Betsey Dikemon, daughter of David Dikemon, of Essex. Children two: William, of Clintonville, Clinton county, and Sarah Jane, now Mrs. Edwin Moore, of Lewis. His second wife was Jane French, a daughter of Noah and Eunice (Rolfe) French, of Essex. One child, Evert D.

Palmer, Geo. W., Willsborough, son of Clement C. and Lucinda (McEveny) Palmer, was born in Nicholsville, St Lawrence county, N. Y., Feb. 12, 1823; settled in Essex in 1839; came to Willsborough in 1874 as manager of J. N. Stower's store, proprietor of iron works; at Stower's failure was appointed receiver for B. Noble. Mr. Palmer commenced business as a general merchant in 1877, and built the large store he now occupies in 1884. Has been supervisor of Essex and Willsborough, also commissioner of highways. Wife, Mary A. Stafford, daughter of Stephen and Mary (Ring) Stafford, of Essex. Children three living: Emily, now Mrs. Herbert Baker; Elliott S. Palmer, of Willsborough; Fred C. Palmer, of Vermillion; second wife, Marion Baker, daughter of M. S. and Eliza (Collins) Baker, of Willsborough. Children two living: Lillian and Lulah Belle.

Phelps, Reuben P., was born in Willsborough, Aug. 4, 1826; is a farmer and owns 315 acres; has been overseer of the poor and assessor of the town. Was married Jan. 15, 1851, to Marian E. Lee, a daughter of Ashabel and Betsey (Foster) Lee, of Willsborough. Children three: Laura A. (now Mrs. Henry Rowley), Eugenie and Alma F. Mr. Phelps' parents were Truman and Eliza (Frisbie) Phelps, who came to this section in 1826.

Richardson, Edward W., Willsborough, son of Albert and Almira (Reynolds) Richardson, was born in Willsborough, March 21, 1851; is superintendent of the Champlain Fibre Works. Was married Oct., 1881, to Martha M. Lyon, daughter of Wesley G. and Mary J. (Farr) Lyon, residents of Essex. One child, Homer B.



Rowley, Geo. A., Willsborough, was born in Willsborough, Jan. 4, 1844; is a farmer and owns 200 acres of land. Wife, Lizzie Higby, daughter of Levi and Eliza (Sheldon) Higby. Levi Higby came from Canaan, Richland county, Vt., with his parents in 1800. Died Oct., 1882, aged 85 years. His wife was a daughter of Edmund Sheldon who came from Dutchess county in 1786. Mr. Rowley's parents were Daniel and Jane (Tracy) Rowley, natives of Willsborough. Geo. A. Rowley has one child, Charles H.

Samson, Loyal, p. o. Reber, son of Ephraim and Olive Gates Samson, was born at Crown Point, Aug. 25, 1803; is a retired farmer and owns 250 acres of land; has been assessor and justice of the peace until barred by age. Was married Jan. 15, 1827, to Margaret B. McCollom, daughter of Thos. and Nancy (Sargent) McCollom, who came from Cavendish, Vt., in 1824. One child, married to Adolphus Perry, of Lewis.

Severance, William, was born in Essex, Oct. 19, 1827; is a farmer and insurance agent; owns 60 acres of land; has been town collector and overseer of the poor and is now assessor. Was married June 15, 1852, to Eunice M. Hayes, daughter of Philo and Deborah (Moore) Hayes, of Willsborough. Children seven: B. W.; Eugene H., of West Cornwall, Vt.; Cora L., (now Mrs. Geo. W. Bond); Elbert D., Karl J., Rowland A., and Pearl S. Mr. Severance's parents were Samuel and Susannah (Warren) Severance, who came from Windsor, Vt., to Essex about 1810. Both deceased.

Shedd, Geo. M., Willsborough, son of Henry S. and Helen (Munn) Shedd. Was born in the town of Gregg, Lewis county, in July, 1856; is a general merchant of the firm of Shedd & Richardson. Was married to Catherine G. Morehouse, a daughter of Jno. and Mary (Baldwin) Morehouse, Jan. 10, 1883. One child, Helen E. His father, Henry S. Shedd, was a native of Acton, Mass., son of Marshall Shedd, who came from Acton, Mass., in a very early day.

Sheldon, Aikin E., was born in Willsborough, May 2, 1804; is a farmer and owns 238 acres of land; formerly justice of the peace and supervisor. Was married Jan. 17, 1833, to Phebe Perry, a daughter of Abijah and Elizabeth (Tippits) Perry, of Lewis. Children seven: Amelia now Mrs. Silas Lee; Isabella (deceased); Augustus C.; Martin A. (deceased); Edmund E.; Charlotte M. (now Mrs. Geo. W. Lee); Emma A. Mr. Sheldon's parents were Edmund and Mary A. (Haight) Sheldon, natives of Dutchess county, who came here in 1786; both deceased.

Sheldon, Geo. W., Willsborough, was born in Willsborough, April 23, 1828; is a farmer and owns 125 acres. Was married Feb. 9, 1859 to Jennie D. Norton, daughter of Eli and W. (Morse), Norton, of Addison, Vt. Children three: Nellie D., Dora A., and Ola M. (deceased). Mr. Sheldon's parents were Walter and Polly Sawtell Sheldon, who came from Dutchess county to Willsborough, about 1794.

Sheldon, Joseph, was born in Dutchess county in 1744, and died in 1836, aged ninety-two years. He was, with his brother-in-law, the first purchasers of the Gilliland Tract of 2,000 acres, where he settled in 1784. His wife, Ruth, was born in 1732, and died in 1852, aged ninety years. Edmund Sheldon, son of Joseph, was born in Dutchess county Feb. 23, 1869, died Aug. 22, 1850, aged eighty-one years. His wife, Mary Ann Haight, was born in Dutchess county, June 30, 1791, settled here in 1795, and died in 1880, aged ninety-nine years, seven months and twenty-five days. Charles, son of William, was born in Willsborough in 1819, died June 8, 1871, aged fifty-four years. He engaged in the mercantile business in 1846, was appointed postmaster in 1849 and again in 1861, which office he held to his death in 1871, since which time his wife has held the position. They had four children: Frank H., of Denver, Col.; Fred C. (deceased); Cora M.; and Arthur P., who was born Feb. 18, 1864, and is now a druggist and deputy postmaster of Willsborough.

Shepard, Warren, was born in Panton, Vt., Nov. 19, 1841, and came to Willsborough in 1880; is proprietor of the Riverside Hotel and livery. Was married Dec. 22, 1870, to Ellen S. Barnett, daughter of James K. and Betsey (Burwell) Barnett, of Crown Point, old settlers of that town. Children four: James F., Sarah J., Elton B. and Earl W. Mr. Shepard's parents were James and Sarah J. (Spaulding) Shepard.

Smith, Edward F., p. o. Willsborough, son of Lyman and Emily (Rowley) Smith, was born in Willsborough in November, 1836, is a farmer and owns 257½ acres of land, formerly assessor and excise commissioner; was married Dec. 1, 1859, to Asenath F. Fairchild, daughter of John and Grace (Follet) Fairchild, of Willsborough; children four: Nellie C., E. Lyman, Flora E. and Rena M. The grandfather of Mr. Smith, Caleb, came from Rutland, Vt., in 1788; married Sarah Ruebeck in 1791; died Nov. 7, 1844.

Smith, E. O., p. o. Willsborough, son of Lyman and Emily (Rowley) Smith, was born in Willsborough March 18, 1840; is a farmer and owns 310 acres of land; was married Sept. 6, 1861, to Clara A. Boynton, daughter of Paul B. and Rosamond (Aiken) Boynton; children four: Walter B., Oakley H., Dora M. and Rosamond D. His grandfather, Caleb, came from Rutland, Vt., in 1788; was married to Sarah Ruebeck in 1791; died Nov. 7, 1844.



Smith, Henry M., p. o. Willsborough, son of Lyman and Emily J. (Rowley) Smith, was born in Willsborough in May, 1845; is a farmer and owns 168 acres of land; was married, March 10, 1870, to Calista Fairchild, daughter of John and Grace (Follet) Fairchild, of Willsborough; one child, Stella M. The grandfather of Mr. Smith came from Rutland, Vt., in 1788.

Smith, James, son of Caleb Smith, was born in Shelburne, Vt., Oct. 2, 1793, and came to Willsborough with his father in 1795. March 31, 1819, he was married to Julia Adsit, a daughter of Jacob and Hannah (Hale) Adsit, who came from Dutchess county at a very early day. Children three: Wallace F., Alvira H. and Ira H.

Smith, Orville A., was born at Willsborough Point, Dec. 3, 1843; is a farmer and owns 486 acres; formerly town auditor and supervisor; was married Sept. 1, 1870, to Martha A. Hawley, daughter of Israel and Delia (Graves) Hawley; children five: Clayton O., H. Sherman, Mary C. Rolland H. and Gracie D. Mr. Smith's parents were Lyman and Emily J. (Rowley) Smith, natives of Willsborough.

Smith, Rev. Peter S., was born in the town of Schroon, Jan. 14, 1808. He became a minister of the M. E. Church in 1832, and preached until 1859; is now a farmer and owns 256 acres; was married in 1833 to Maria Leland, daughter of Thomas and Priscilla (Seaman) Leland, of Schroon; children two, both deceased. Mr. Smith's parents were Abijah and Keziah (Hubbell) Smith, who came from Long Island about 1800.

Stafford William W., was born in Lewis, Oct. 14, 1830, and came to Willsborough in 1837; is a farmer and owns 40 acres; was married Feb. 22, 1853, to Mary Parish, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth (Gwinn) Parish, of Rochester, Ill.; children two living: Frank W., of New Haven, Conn., and Willis A. Mr. Stafford's parents were Job and Eliza (Woodruff) Stafford, natives of Rhode Island and Connecticut.

Stevenson, William, son of Alexander and Margaret (Richardson) Stevenson, natives of Scotland, was born Dec. 12, 1832, in Whallonsburgh; when about four years old he moved to the south part of Westport, lived there twenty years, then went to work for the Cheever Ore Bed Co. the 1st of January, 1857, in the carpenter and car shop as foreman. On the 10th of April, 1867, was married to Miss Jennie M. Boardman, of Willsborough, a daughter of Warren and Isabell (Helm) Boardman. Have four children: William W., John A., Emmet A. and Hattie A. Lived at Cheever till the works closed, July, 1883; bought a farm in the southeast part of Willsborough, on the shore of Lake Champlain; moved here in November, 1883.

Stower, Asa, was a native of Willsborough, born in 1807, died in 1865; was a farmer, and married Sarah Aiken, daughter of Major Abraham Aiken, who was born in Willsborough in 1788 and came here when a small boy; Major Aiken died in 1828, leaving a widow and nine children: Carlos B. (deceased); Caroline M., Mrs. Hoffnagle (deceased); Sarah, now Mrs. Stower; Rosamond P., now Mrs. Boynton; Cecilia, Mrs. Stafford (deceased); Elizabeth; Minerva, now Mrs. Dr. Tyman Barton; Clarinda (deceased); Lucy M., Mrs. Horace Sheldon (deceased).

Townsend, Joshua B., came to Willsborough from Boston in 1813; he was a farmer and owned 49 acres of land; his wife was Elsie Smith, of Boston; both deceased; children: Louisa (deceased); Joshua (deceased); David, Seth, Sally and Matilda, all on the old homestead; Edwin, William, Solomon and Eliza, and Mary A. (deceased).

Tucker, James M., p. o. Willsborough, was born in the town of Essex, Sept. 23, 1832, and came here with his parents, Calvin and Nancy (Thayer) Tucker; is a farmer and owns 103 acres of land; formerly constable and collector; married Dec. 24, 1857, to Ellen M. Jones, daughter of Dudley H. and Susannah (Densmore) Jones, natives of Massachusetts; children two: Susan J., now Mrs. Charles H. Samant, of Willsborough; Marionette E., now Mrs. Asa J. Fiske, of Willsborough. Mr. Tucker's parents, Calvin and Nancy Tucker, settled in Willsborough in 1851; Mr. Tucker died Sept. 3, 1876, and Mrs. Tucker in December, 1879.

## ESSEX.

**P**ALMER, A. H., born in Essex, Essex county, February 4th, 1840; was a farmer until enlisting in the army in 1864; enlisted in Company H, 5th N. Y. Cavalry; served until the close of the war in 1865. During the war, in 1864, he was married to Miss Rosa Rice, of Willsborough. Children four, two sons and two daughters. In the spring of 1869 he purchased the place where he now resides, in the town of Essex. Mr. Palmer's parents were Heman and Lucy (Thayer) Palmer.

Robbins, Joseph, p. o. Reber, was born in Craftsbury, Orleans county, Vt., January 19th, 1835, and came with his parents, Ansel and Elizabeth (Childs) Robbins, to Essex in the summer of 1844; he remained with his parents on the farm until enlisting in Company K, 38th Regi-



ment, N. Y. S. V. While in that regiment he served in the following battles: Bull Run, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Malvern Hill, Fredericksburg; he returned home in June, 1863, and soon afterward married Helen M. French. They are the parents of six children. Mr. Robbins is an active man and a supporter of churches.

Sprague, B. T., son of Pardon and Hannah (Newton) Sprague, was born in Shoreham, Vt., September 8th, 1819. He remained at home with his parents until coming to Essex in 1839; he located at Crown Point. He was married February 5th, 1842, to Miss Lois Stratton. Children three living: George M., of Essex, Mary L., wife of Jonathan Lott, of Essex, and Willis J., at home. In the fall of 1845 Mr. Sprague went to Wisconsin where he purchased a place and remained for four and one-half years. In 1850 he moved back to Westport, bought a place, remained there until the fall of 1856, when he purchased the place in Essex county where he has since resided. Mr. Sprague is a self-made man. He and his two sons are the owners of five or six hundred acres of land. Has held the office of assessor for fifteen years. Was instrumental in building the M. E. church at Wadham's Mills.

Stafford, Harris, was born in the town of Essex, Essex county, August 5th, 1816. His grandfather, Benjamin Stafford, a native of Coventry, R. I., came to Essex county soon after the close of the Revolutionary War, about 1785, first located in an opening made by a Canadian squatter, on the place now owned by Isaac D. Sheldon, and afterward settled on the premises now owned by Ira A. Stafford. Four of his sons took an active part in the War of 1812. He died in 1826. Harris Stafford improved such educational advantages as the common schools of that day afforded, acquiring a knowledge of agricultural pursuits, and remaining upon the homestead until his twenty-eighth year. In June, 1844, he married Sabra, daughter of Abner Royce. Five of their seven children are now living, viz.: Abigail, wife of Daniel Stafford; Beliza, now Mrs. A. P. Baldwin, of Essex; Hannah M., wife of Rush Howard, of Westport; Martha M., at home; Mary E., wife of George Stickney. Immediately after marriage, Mr. Stafford settled on the place where he still resides. The first Mrs. Stafford died in 1857. He was again married in 1871 to Mrs. Anna Warner, of Crown Point. Mr. Stafford is one of the substantial farmers of Essex county, owning 400 acres of land in the town of Essex and 367 in Westport; a life-long Whig and Republican in politics and a hospitable and genial gentleman.

Sykes, Philo S., was born in the town of Lewis, Essex county, March 24th, 1816. He remained at home engaged in farming pursuits until 1838, when he went west and stayed until 1843. In 1854 he was married to Miss Harriet E. Stafford. Children, one living, Herbert W. Mr. Sykes's parents were David and Persa (Nicholson) Sykes. David was a native of Vermont, came to Lewis about 1800 and settled on the place now owned by Mrs. Julia Cross, cleared it up and continued to live there until his death.

Whitney, Hiram George, was born in Essex county June 25th, 1848; was married in 1877 to Miss Nettie Bellows. Children two, a son and daughter. Mr. Whitney's parents were Lucius and Minerva (Smith) Whitney. Mr. Lucius Whitney was born in Springfield, Vt., February 29th, 1804, and came to Essex county in 1807, where he settled on the place now owned by his son. His three brothers located in the same vicinity. The present family residence was built about 1820 by Benjamin W. Whitney.

## ST. ARMAND.

**BUNKER, SEWELL F.**, p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Canada in 1834, and came to Essex county in 1851. Is a mason by trade; also keeps a sporting-house; has been supervisor, overseer of the poor, town clerk and commissioner, and is now town auditor. Was married in 1855 to Jennie M. Lobdell, and they have seven children.

Burdick, E. K., was born in Vermont in 1830, and came to this county in 1849; is a cabinet-maker; has been excise commissioner for his town. Was married in 1860 to Clara Stevens, and they have two children, Mary and Henry Burdick.

Carr, George W., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county in 1842, and came to this county in 1855; is a farmer; was married in 1874 to Emily J. Chubb, a native of Clinton county. They have two children, George W. and Anna Carr. Mr. Carr has been commissioner of highways for his town.

Chubb, George W., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Vermont in 1819, and came to this town in 1855; is a farmer; has been justice of the peace in his town for sixteen years, also commissioner of highways, excise commissioner, and inspector of election. Was married in 1841 to Anna Wilcox, and they have five children.

Clark, Theodore, p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county in 1844; is a farmer. His wife, formerly Frank Lee Morey, was born in this county in 1859. They were married in 1877 and have three children: Ira, Carrie and Wesley.



French, R. I., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in the town of Franklin, Franklin county, in 1837; is a farmer, lumberman and hotel-keeper. His hotel is quite popular as a resort for people afflicted with hay-fever, as the climate is proof against it. Mr. French has been assessor and town auditor for his town. His wife was Anna Hewitt, born in Clinton county in 1837. They were married in 1866 and have two children: Flossie D. and Jenny F. French.

George, William Henry (deceased), was born in Essex county in 1820. At various times he held the offices of commissioner, assessor, and overseer of the poor. His wife, Caroline French, was born in Vermont in 1819. They had two children, both deceased. Mrs. George still resides on the homestead.

Hardy, Amos P., was born in Vermont in 1818, and came to Keene in 1820, to Jay in 1822, to Wilmington, his present home, in 1848; is a farmer, and has also done a good business as a merchant and manufacturer; has been supervisor several terms, often holding other local offices. Has been three times married. Has four children and two stepchildren. His first wife was Clarissa Chapel, whom he married in 1842. She died in 1843. In 1844 he married Loretta Dean Hall, a widow with two children. She died in 1872. His present wife was Jemcia S. Jones, to whom he was married in 1873.

Hays, D. B., was born in the town of Jay in 1822. Is a hammersman in the forge. Has been justice of the peace for his town and held other local offices. Was married in 1845 to Esther Preston, who died in 1868, leaving three children. In 1870 was married to Mrs. Lavinia Cooper.

Hays, Aaron, p. o. Wilmington, was born in this county in 1828; was formerly a bloomer, but is now a millwright and miller; is present assessor for his town, and has held the offices of overseer of the poor, collector and town clerk. His wife was Axcey Preston, born in this county in 1828. They were married in 1855 and have six children.

Hayes, Rawson, p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in this town in 1851; is a farmer, trapper and guide; was married in 1871 to Anna M. Boil. They have four children: Alta L., Irene M., Lois C., and Sanford C.

Hardy, Amos, p. o. Wilmington, was born in Vermont in 1818 and came to North Elba in 1820; is a farmer; has been supervisor several terms and has held other local offices. Has been three times married; first to Clarissa Chapel, in 1842. She died in 1843. In 1844 he was married to Loretta Dean. She died in 1872, leaving four children. His last wife was Jerusha Jones, whom he married in 1873. They have four children.

Hewitt, Clarence V., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in Clinton county, in 1857, and came to this county in 1861. Is now justice of the peace for his town.

Hickock, Roger, p. o. Wilmington, was born in this town in 1817; is at present a farmer but formerly a school teacher, having taught about forty years. Was married in 1840 to Mary A. Thayer, and they have eight children. Mr. Hickock has held various offices in his town. Was in the late Rebellion in the 142d Regiment.

Huntington, Henry J., p. o., Wilmington, was born in St. Lawrence county in 1842 and came to this county in 1857; is a carpenter and joiner; is supervisor of his town and has been town clerk for several years. Was married in 1868 to Ellen E. Hardy and they have four children: Amos J., Clara L., Guy W., and James H. Mr. Huntington was a soldier in the late Rebellion, serving in the 97th Regiment of N. Y. Volunteers.

Kendall, C. H., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Delaware county in 1835, and came to Saranac Lake in 1883. Is a hotel keeper and is also engaged in the livery business. His wife, Winifred, was born in Ireland in 1837. They were married in 1855 and have five children.

Ling, Baron D., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in Franklin county in 1859; is a farmer. Was married to Flora Green in 1880. They have two children: Arthur and Elmer Ling.

McIntyre, R. H., was born in Clinton county in 1846, and came to this county in 1870; is a hardware merchant; is now on his second term of justice of the peace. His wife was Emma C. Kendall, born in this county in 1856. They were married in 1878. They have two children: A. P. and H. K. McIntyre.

Miller, J. B., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county in 1837 and came to this county in 1847; has been a lumberman but is now a miller. Was married in 1858 to Florey Clough and they have three children: Herbert, Frank, and Ensign Miller. Mr. Miller was in the late Rebellion, serving in the 118th N. Y. Volunteers.

Miller, J. W., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in this county in 1832; is a boat-builder and lumber dealer; is now town auditor, and has been inspector of election. Was married to Patience Hays in 1859, and they have three children: George M., Charles E., and May L.

Norton M. J., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Essex county in 1831; is a superintendent of the Adirondack cottages. In 1852 he married Oliva J. Bull, and they have five children.



Pierce, Jas. H., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county in 1826 and came to this county in 1852; keeps a hotel and sporting house. While living in Franklin county he represented his county as assemblyman for three terms. Was supervisor of Franklin five years and of St. Armand seven years; was four years chairman of the board; is now postmaster. In 1856 he was married to Carrie O. Lennon. They have two children; Carrie E. and Alice A. During the Rebellion Mr. Pierce raised a company of men mostly at his own expense and went out as Captain of Company C. He was taken prisoner at Drury's Bluffs; was a prisoner seven months, being taken to Libby prison, Macon, Savannah, and Charleston.

Plumley, Wm. D., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in Massachusetts in 1836, and came to the town of Franklin in 1865; has been commissioner of highways. His wife, Hattie Smart, was born in Clinton county in 1859. They were married in 1876, and have five children. Mr. Plumley was in the late war, serving in the 8th Vermont.

Reid, Sylvester, p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county in 1842; is a farmer; has been assessor, overseer of the poor, and constable. Was married in 1877 to Fannie Walton, a native of Franklin county. They have two children: Byron M. and Alice M. Mr. Reid was in the late war, serving in the 13th N. Y. Cavalry.

Rice, Isaac Dr., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county, in 1847, and came to this county in 1872. Is a graduate from the medical department of Burlington University, Vt., in 1872. Was married in 1878 to Ida H. Bunker. They have one son and a daughter by adoption. Dr. Rice has been excise commissioner for his town.

Smith, R. S., p. o. Saranac Lake, was born in Warren county in 1832, and came to Harrietstown in 1839 and into St. Armand in 1850; is a farmer; has held the offices of supervisor, assessor and commissioners of highways. Was married in 1859 to Ellen Nord, a native of Warren county, and they have six children.

Stickney, Chas. J., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Malone in 1854, and came to this county in 1878; is a hotel-keeper; was formerly a merchant. Was married in 1881 to Mallie A. Wardner, and they have one son, Chas. W. Stickney. Mr. Stickney has been town clerk for several years.

Stors, J. H., p. o. Wilmington, was born in Vermont in 1828; is a merchant and hotel-keeper; has been justice of the peace for several years, also inspector of election. Was married in 1852 to Mary Ann Haselton, and they have five children. Mr. Stors was in the late Rebellion, serving in Company A, 12th U. S. Infantry, 1st battalion.

Town, Chas. F., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Vermont in 1833, and came to this county in 1846; is a blacksmith; is now supervisor and justice of the peace in his town; has held the latter office for about ten years. Was married in 1855 to Jennette Lamson, eldest daughter of Ida B., late wife of E. M. White, who died Feb. 2, 1885; and they have five children: Herbert W., Nettie E., Grant C., Ralph P., and Geo. F. Town. Mr. Town was in the late Rebellion, enlisting in 1862 in the 118th N. Y. regiment, and received a commission in the 29th Connecticut colored regiment, serving until the close of the war.

Walton, Daniel H., p. o. Bloomingdale, was born in Clinton county, in 1835; is a farmer; has been assessor and commissioner for his town. His wife was Mary La Fountain, born in this county in 1841. They were married in 1863, and have two children: Jennie, and Daniel E. Mr. Walton served in the late war, in the 2d N. Y. Cavalry.

Walston, Russell L., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in Vermont in 1821 and came to Franklin county in 1853; is a farmer; has held the offices of assessor and commissioner of highways. Mrs. Walston was Mary A. Purley, born in Vermont in 1823. They were married in 1852.

Weston, Elijah, p. o. Wilmington, was born in this county in 1832; is a farmer; has been supervisor, and road commissioner, and held other local offices in his town. In 1860 he was married to Phebe A. Owen, a native of this town. They have one son, named Vernon E. Weston. Mr. Weston is now justice of the peace.

Willson, John M., p. o. Franklin Falls, was born in New Hampshire in 1839 and came to St. Armand in 1844; is overseer of the poor; has been assessor and town auditor. His wife was Elizabeth Watson, who was born in Clinton county in 1844. They have five children: Harriet E., Thomas McDonough, Hubert A., Chas. W., and Purlina L. Willson. Mr. Willson was in the late war, serving in the 118th Regiment, N. Y. Vols.

Wood, Don Carlos, was born in this county in 1821; is a farmer; p. o. address, Franklin Falls. His wife, Hannah M. Tyler, was born in Vermont in 1837. They were married in 1860, and have four children.



## KEENE.

**B**EEDE, SMITH, was born in Vermont in 1818, and came to this county in October, 1828; is a farmer and in company with his sons keeps a hotel for summer boarders; has been commissioner and assessor for the town of Newcomb, also postmaster for the town of Keene. Was married in 1844 to Marion W. Chase, and they have six children.

Bell, Thurlow W., was born in Wilmington, in 1859. He is a merchant; is deputy postmaster and supervisor for his town; has been town clerk. Mr. Bell graduated from Elizabethtown high school in 1881. Was married in 1883 to Ida E. Palmer, of Elizabethtown.

Dudley, John K., was born in Genesee county, in 1819, and came to this county in 1821. His wife was Mrs. Mary Ann Beede, born in Vermont in 1826, and died April 12, 1883. He has four daughters. Mr. Dudley is now a farmer; is justice of the peace, which office he has held for about thirty years. He has also held all the other local offices of his town.

Egglefield, Geo. W., was born in Montreal, July 4, 1827, and came to this town in 1849. Is a farmer and hotel keeper. Was married in 1854 to Sophia Washburne, and they have two children.

Estes, Albert M., was born in this county in 1858; is a farmer; has held the office of excise commissioner for his town. Was married in 1882 to Miss McFarlane.

Holt, Chas. N., was born in this town in 1833; is a farmer; has held several local offices for his town, viz; supervisor, justice of the peace, commissioner, assessor, and overseer of the poor and was elected superintendent of the poor of Essex county in the fall of 1881, and re-elected in the fall of 1884, which office he now holds. Has been twice married, first to Delia McFarlin, in 1869. She died in 1882, and he was married to Miss Hattie P. Storrs, May 22, 1883.

Hull, Otis H., was born in this town in 1842; is a farmer and keeps a summer hotel. Was married in 1865 to Martha C. Bennings, a native of Vermont, born in 1844. They have six children.

Miller, Nicanor, was born in this county in 1813. Has been twice married, first to Marion Bede, of Vermont, in 1842. She died in 1854, and in 1859 he was again married to Ellen Goff. They have five children. Mr. Miller's father, Philip Miller, came to this county previous to 1800, so he was one of the first settlers of the town.

Murray, Wallace, was born in Vermont in 1849, and came to this county in 1853. He is a farmer and deals in live stock.

Sheldon, Silas, was born in Vermont in 1830, and came to this county in 1854; is a farmer; has been twice married; first, to Olive Smith in 1856. She died in 1872, and he was again married to Maria Stephens, a native of this county. They have five children.

Stetson, Alma Mrs., was born on the homestead where she now resides. Her occupation is hotel-keeping for summer boarders. Was married to Royal R. Stetson, a native of Canada, in 1873. He died in 1881, leaving Mrs. Stetson with two children. Mrs. Stetson's parents were early settlers in this county.

Washborne, Henry W., was born in this town in 1824; is a farmer and keeps a summer hotel at Keene Valley. His wife, formerly Harriet Lovey, was born in Albany in 1821. They were married in 1843 and have five children. Mr. Washborne's father, William Washborne, was one of the early settlers of this town.

Weston, W. F., was born in Vermont in 1849, and came to this county in 1874. Owns a part interest in the Keene Center and Cascade House and resides at Wilmington; is also in company with his father, S. H. Weston, in the iron works at Keene and Wilmington. Was married in 1873 to Ednah M. Wells and they have three children. Has been supervisor for his town, also member of assembly from his district.

White, Harvey, was born in Vermont in 1808, and came to this county in 1826; is a retired farmer. His wife, Abigail Washborn, was born in 1811. They were married in 1831 and have four children.

# I N D E X .

---

## A.

Abercrombie, General, 76, 84.  
     attack by on Montcalm at Ticonderoga,  
     84 et seq.  
 Adirondacks, 18.  
 Agricultural society, the county, 190, 277.  
     statistics, 194.  
 Allen, Ethan and the Vermont imbroglio, 151  
     et seq.  
     capture of Ticonderoga by, 117.  
 Alphonse, Jean, 45.  
 Amherst, operations of, 91 et seq.  
 Animals and fish, 28.  
 Arnold Benedict, at Quebec, 117, 124.  
 Aubert, early discoverer, 43.  
 Ausable chasm, 31.

## B.

Beauharnois at Crown Point, 65.  
 Bench and bar, 27 et seq.  
 Biographies :  
     Bradford, Enos, 674.  
     Boynton, Albert A. 689.  
     Buck, Rawson Clark, 683.  
     Calkins, William E. 705.  
     Clark, George Denton, 690.  
     Cook, Joseph, 681.  
     Cowan, Thomas, 674.  
     De Lano, Clayton H. 672.  
     Havens, Palmer E. 696.  
     Hooper, William, 675.  
     M'Kenzie, Alexander, 678.  
     Noble, Ransom, 668.  
     Noble, Harmon, 670.  
     Owen, Edward J. 677.  
     Ross, Henry H. 691.  
     Ross, Henry Howard, 695.  
     Sherman, George, 686.  
     Simonds, William, 684.  
     Smith, John, Dr. 673.  
     Woodford, Charles W. 679.  
     Witherbee, Jonathan Gilman, 687.  
 Bonds to pay volunteers, 201.  
 Boulamarque at Ticonderoga, 92.  
 Boundaries, final settlement of, 181.  
 Boynton, Albert A., biography of, 689.  
 Braddock, General Edward, 71.

Bradford, Enos, biography of, 674.  
 Brant (Thayandenegea), 121.  
 Bressani, Francis Joseph, 39.  
 British repulse at Concord, 117.  
 Brown, John, 663 et seq.  
 Buck, Rawson Clark, biography of, 683.  
 Burgoyne, General, 134 et seq.  
     surrender of, 142.

## C.

Cabot, John, 43.  
 Calkins, Wm. E., 399, 400, 403 et seq., 408,  
     419, 431 et seq ; biography of, 705.  
 Canada, famine in, 90.  
     invasion of, 120, 122 et seq.  
 Canal, the Champlain, 180, 261.  
 Carleton, Major, on Lake Champlain, 150.  
 Carleton, Governor, 122 et seq.  
 Cartier, Jacques, 44.  
 Champlain, Samuel, 17, 38, 43, 45 et seq., 259.  
     journal of, 48.  
     biographical sketch of, 52.  
 Champlain valley as a battlefield, 54.  
 Charlotte county, formation of, 127.  
     first officers of, 127.  
 Chastes, Aylmer de, 45.  
 Chauvin, early patentee, 45.  
 Chesterfield, town of, 493.  
     natural characteristics of, 494.  
     early settlements in, 495.  
     legendary lead mine in, 502.  
     physicians of 507.  
     attorneys of, 508.  
     civil list of, 509.  
     municipal history of, 570.  
     press of, 517.  
     Masonic lodges of, 518.  
     churches of, 519.  
     Birmingham Falls in, 526.  
 Claims to discovery by England, France and  
     Holland, 52.  
 Clark, George Denton, biography of, 690.  
 Clinton, Governor, 65, 69.  
     resignation of, 69.  
 Colden, Cadwallader, 96.  
 "Cold summer, the," 179.  
 Colonies, taxing of American, by England, 113.  
 Columbus, Christopher, 43.



Cook, Joseph, 168, 361, 366, 368, 370, 378, 379, 385, 390, 391 et seq., 396, 397, 400, 402, 403, 409, 416, 418, 429, 430, 431; biography of, 681.

Company, Northern inland lock navigation, 160.  
 Essex turnpike road, 174.  
 Great Ausable railroad, 186, 270.  
 Adirondack railroad, 186, 270.  
 Northern slackwater navigation, 186.  
 Whitehall and Plattsburg railroad, 271.  
 Crown Point iron, 343.

Concerted action of colonies, necessity for, 69.

Congress, vacillation of, regarding hostilities, 119.  
 measures of, to raise troops, 120.

Convention in 1690 of colonies, 59.

Cortreal brothers, 43.

County bar, 286.  
 buildings, 274.  
 clerks, 195.  
 courts, 283.  
 court-house, 274.  
 judges, 194.  
 medical society, 311.  
   officers of, 313.  
   members of, 314.  
 poor-house, 275.  
 seat, establishment of, 273.  
 treasurers, 195.

Counties, formation of new, 159.

Courts, first, 161.

Covenant of the people of Willsboro, 109.

Cowan, Thomas, biography of, 674.

Crown Point, surrender of, 119.  
 origin of name of, 64.  
 first occupation of, by the French, 65.  
 description of fort at, 65.  
 town of, origin of, 324.  
 location of, 325.  
 ruins of fortifications in, 326.  
 first town meeting in, 327.  
 settlers of, 327.  
 condition of early society in, 328.  
 early settlers of, 329 et seq.  
 first school in, 331.  
 early occupations of inhabitants of, 333.  
 early assessors' roll of, in 1818, 334, in 1835, 359.  
 the "cold summer" in, 336.  
 iron interests in, 341.  
 supervisors of, 345.  
 present officers of, 346.  
 lawyers of, 346.  
 physicians of, 346.  
 post-office of, 348.  
 press of, 348.  
 cemetery in, 349.  
 soldiers' monument in, 349.  
 churches of, 349.  
 Masonry in, 355.

Crown Point Center, 356.

## D.

Deall, Samuel, 111, 384.  
 letters of, 385.

De Boulamarque at Ticonderoga, 85.

Declaration of rights, adopted by congress, 116.

De la Barre, M., 57.

De Lancey, James, 69.

De Lano, Clayton H., biography of, 672.

Delegates to constitutional conventions, 196.

Denonville, Marquis, 57.

De Soto, Fernando, 44.

Dieskau, Baron de, 72.  
 attack upon and defeat by English, 73 et seq.

Distilleries, 172.

District attorneys, 196.

Donnegana, 45.

Dongan, Governor, 57.

Drake, Sir Francis, 44.

Dunmore, Lord, 115.

Dutch West India company, 52.

Duties imposed by parliament, 114.

## E.

Early discoveries, 43 et seq.

East India company, the, 115.

Early judicial system of the State, 278.

Elizabethtown, town of, 466.  
 natural characteristics of, 466.  
 early settlements of, 467.  
 county seat in, 470.  
 State arsenal in, 470.  
 schools of, 471.  
 early roads, etc., 471, 475.  
 mills, etc., 473.  
 iron interest in, 476.  
 lawyers of, 481.  
 physicians in, 485.  
 civil list of, 486.  
 municipal history of, 487.  
 press of, 490.  
 schools of, 490.  
 churches of, 491.  
 New Russia in, 493.

England, oppressive course of, 113.

English merchants, feelings of, concerning the tax measures, 114.

English government, apathy of, in 1738, 66.

English activity in 1759, 90.

Essex county, formation of, 17.  
 boundaries of, 18.  
 natural characteristics of, 18 et seq.  
 organization of, 161.  
 first courts of, 161.  
 first officers of, 162.  
 early iron interest in, 165.  
 early school-houses in, 165.  
 early houses in, 166.  
 description of pioneer life in, 169.  
 distilleries in, 172.  
 in the rebellion, 197.  
 population at date of organization, 274.

Essex, town of, 540.  
 natural characteristics of, 540.  
 early settlement of, 342.  
 the Gilliland tract, 544.  
 town officers, etc., 548.  
 municipal history of, 549.  
 churches of, 552.  
 Boquet in, 557.  
 Brookfield in, 558.  
 Whallonsburgh in, 558.  
 Evidences of early settlement, 96.  
 Evidences of prosperity, 189.  
 Expedition against Crown Point, 1756, 76.  
 Expeditions planned by General Braddock, 71.  
 three, planned in 1758, 84.

## F.

Factoryville, 358.  
 Fernis, 185.  
 Fifth New York cavalry, 218.  
 First occupation by Europeans, 43 et seq.  
 Five Nations, 17.  
 Flora, 28.  
 Forbes, General John, 84.  
 Forests, 27 et seq.  
 Fort Carillon, inception of, 72 ; 78 et seq.  
 Fort Clinton, burning of, 69.  
 Fort Du Quesne, 71, 76.  
 expeditions against, 84.  
 Fort Edward, 73, 76, 88.  
 Fort Niagara, 71, 76.  
 Fort St. Ann, Indian outrage at, 56.  
 Fort St. Frederic, 64, 75.  
 Fort William Henry, 75, 77.  
 massacre at, 80.  
 destruction of, 81.  
 Fort Winslow, 76.  
 Forty-fourth regiment, N. Y. volunteers, 211.  
 France, alliance with, 144.  
 French and Indians, beginning of difficulties  
 between, 55.  
 hostilities between, in 1684, 57.  
 in 1689, 57.  
 French, feebleness of the, in 1758, 83.  
 land grants by the, in the Champlain  
 Valley, 66.  
 memoranda of marauding expeditions,  
 67.  
 power in America, end of, 95.  
 violation of treaty by, in 1731, 64.  
 Frontenac, Count de, 56 et seq.

## G.

Gates, General, 128.  
 Geology and mineralogy, 23 et seq.  
 Gilliland, William, 98.  
 records of, 99 et seq.  
 progress of colony of, 108.  
 memorial of to congress, 132.  
 charges of disloyalty against, 133.  
 destruction of property of, by Arnold,  
 143.

Gilliland, William.  
 arrest of, 154.  
 financial difficulties of, 154 et seq.  
 Mr. Watson's statement concerning  
 career of, 158.  
 inscription on monument of, 159.  
 Gunnison's, 350.

## H.

Haldemand, Sir Frederick, 152.  
 Hale, Hon. Robert S. 303.  
 Hand, Hon. Augustus C., 297.  
 Hardy, Sir Charles, 76.  
 Havens, Hon. Palmer E. biography of, 696.  
 Hendrick, Mohawk chief, speech of, 70.  
 Hiawatha, legend of, 35.  
 Hooper, William, biography of, 675.  
 Howe, Lord, 84.  
 death of, 85.  
 Howe, Sir William, 136.  
 Houses, first, 166.  
 Hudson, Henry, 51.  
 Hunters' pass, the, 31.

## I.

Indians, occupation by, 32 et seq.  
 Algonquin, 32 et seq.  
 Adirondack, 33 et seq.  
 Iroquois, 33 et seq.  
 Five Nations 34.  
 legend of origin of, 35.  
 clan system of, 36.  
 Jesuits among the, 38.  
 missionaries among the, 39.  
 course of, in the Revolution, 121.  
 Immigration, early, 159.  
 Improvements, beginning of public, 159.  
 Iron interest, first, 165, 184.

## J.

James, Duke of York, grant to, 55.  
 Jay, town of, 454.  
 natural characteristics, 454.  
 early incidents in, 455.  
 supervisors of, 457.  
 municipal history of, 457.  
 churches of, 459.  
 Upper Jay in, 460.  
 Ausable Forks in, 461.  
 press of, 464.  
 schools of, 464.  
 churches, 464.  
 Jesuits, the, 38.  
 death penalty upon, 61.  
 Jogues, Father Isaac, 39.  
 Johnson, Colonel Beverly, 151.  
 Johnson, Colonel Guy, 121.  
 Johnson, Sir John, in the Champlain valley, 144.  
 Johnson, Sir William, 62, 68, 71, 78 et seq.,  
 121.  
 Justice court and court of special session, 285.



**K.**

- Keene, town of, 609.  
     natural characteristics of, 609.  
     early settlements in, 610.  
     supervisors of, 611.  
     municipal history of, 612.  
     churches of, 613.  
     Keene Valley in, 614.  
 Keeseville village, 510.  
 Kellogg, Hon. Orlando, 300.  
 Kieft, William, 52.  
 Knox, Henry, 120.

**L.**

- Lake Champlain, operations on 1776, 128  
   et seq.  
     commerce of, 258.  
     islands in, 259.  
     rivers entering, 259.  
     boys of, 259.  
     ferries of, 260.  
     steamboats on, 260.  
     statistics of trade upon, 266.  
 Land grants, conflicting, 97.  
 Land patents, 241 et seq.  
     French and English, 242.  
 Lead mine, legendary, 512.  
 Legislative acts for various purposes, 181 et seq.  
 Lewis, town of, 560.  
     natural characteristics of, 560.  
     early settlers of, 561.  
     municipal history of, 564.  
     records of, 565.  
     population of, 566.  
     present officers of, 565.  
 Lexington, battle of, 117.  
 Light-houses, 268.  
 Livy, Baron, 44.  
 Loudoun, Lord, 76.  
 Lumbering, 173.  
 Lyman, General, 75.

**M.**

- Macdonough's victory on Lake Champlain,  
   178.  
 M'Kenzie, Alexander, biography of, 678.  
 Magellan, Portuguese discoverer, 44.  
 Maps and difficulties of mapping, 255.  
 Masonry, 318.  
 Medical profession, 306 et seq.  
 Members of assembly, 195.  
 Members of the bar, 288.  
 Military movements, in 1756, 78.  
     in 1757, 78.  
     in 1758, 83 et seq.  
     in 1759, 91.  
     in 1760, 95.  
     in 1812, 176.  
 Mineral springs, 32.  
 Minerva, town of, 632.  
     natural characteristics, 632.

- Minerva, town of, 632.  
     settlement of, 633.  
     municipal history of, 635.  
     churches of, 636.  
     supervisors of, 637.  
 Mineville, 607.  
 Missionaries, early, to the Indians, 39.  
 Monkton, General Robert, 96.  
 Montcalm, Marquis de, 77.  
     expedition of against Fort William  
       Henry, 78 et seq.  
     Watson's opinion of, 80.  
 Montgomery, General Richard, 122 et seq.  
     death of, 125.  
 Monts, Sieur de, 46.  
 Moore, Sir Henry, 113.  
 Moriah, town of, 566.  
     natural characteristics of, 566.  
     early settlements of, 566.  
     records of, 571.  
     physicians of, 573.  
     attorneys of, 573.  
     lumber interest in, 574.  
     iron interest in, 575 et seq.  
     municipal history of, 584.  
     press of, 592.  
     schools of, 592.  
     churches of, 594.  
 Moriah Corners, 600.  
 Moriah Center, 608.  
 Mountains and mountain ranges, 19 et seq.

**N.**

- Names, Indian, of lakes, rivers, mountains,  
   etc., 40.  
 Natural curiosities, 30.  
 Navigation projects, 267.  
 Newcomb, town of, 641.  
     natural characteristics of, 641.  
     early settlers of, 642.  
     the Adirondack Iron company in, 644.  
     civil list of, 650.  
 New Hampshire grants controversy, 111 et seq.  
 Newspaper, the first, 180.  
 Nicolls, Admiral Richard, 55.  
 Ninety-sixth regiment N. Y. volunteers, 215.  
 Noble, Harmon, biography of, 670.  
 Noble, General Ransom, biography of, 668.  
 North Elba, town of, 660.  
     natural characteristics of, 660.  
     early history of, 662.  
     John Brown's residence in, 663.  
     schools, etc., of, 664.  
     supervisors of, 668.  
 North Hudson, town of, 656.  
     natural characteristics of, 656.  
     early settlements in, 656.  
     municipal history of, 659.  
     supervisors of, 660.

**O.**

- Occupation, first permanent, of the Champlain  
 Valley, 62.

Officers of the county, present, 196.  
 One hundred and eighteenth regiment N. Y. volunteers, 228.  
 One hundred and fifty-third regiment N. Y. volunteers, 240.  
 Osborne, Sir Danvers, 69.  
 Owen, Edward J., biography of, 677.

## P.

"Patriot war," the, 187.  
 Peace of Breda, 56.  
 Press, the, 315.  
     the *Reveille*, 316.  
     *Essex Patriot*, 316.  
     *Essex Republican*, 316.  
     *Keeseville Republican*, 316.  
     *Keeseville Argus*, 316.  
     *Essex County Republican*, 316.  
     *Northern Standard*, 316.  
     *Essex County Times*, 317.  
     *Elizabethtown Post*, 317.  
     *Ticonderoga Sentinel*, 317.  
     *Crown Point Budget*, 317.  
     *Port Henry Herald*, 318.  
     *Ausable River Gazette*, 318.  
     *Old Settler*, 318.  
     *Mountain Echo*, 318.  
     *Berean Guide*, 318.  
     *Westport Herald and Essex County Advertiser*, 318.  
 Present bar, 290.  
 Present officers of the county, 196.  
 Pioneer life, description of, 169.  
 Plattsburg, battle of, 178.  
 Ponce de Leon, 44.  
 Pont-Grevé, early navigator, 46 et seq.  
 Putnam, Major Israel, 84.  
     capture and torture of, 89.

## Q.

Queen Anne's War, 61.  
 Quebec, attack upon, 93.  
     fall of, 95.  
     attempt at recapture of, 95.  
     assault upon, by Montgomery and Arnold, 125.

## R.

Railroads, 269.  
 Rainbow Falls, 31.  
 Rebellion, Essex county in the, 197.  
     its effects, 192.  
 Regents of university, 196.  
 "Regiohne" rock, identification of, 62.  
 Representatives in congress, 194.  
 Revere, Paul, 117.  
 Revolution, the first bloodshed of, 115.  
 Roads, early, 160, 162 et seq.; 185 et seq.; 191.  
 Roberval, Jean Francis de, 45.  
 Rogers, Robert, 66, 76.

Rogers, Robert, 66, 76.  
     reference to journal of, 77; 78; 83.  
     financial course of, 89.  
 Ross, General Henry H., 292.  
     biography of, 691.  
 Ross, Henry Howard, biography of, 695.  
 Runy, Daniel de, Lord de Courcelles, 55.

## S.

St. Armand, town of, 651.  
     early settlement of, 651.  
     civil list of, 654.  
     municipal history of, 654.  
 St. Clair, General Arthur, 136 et seq.  
 St. Leger, General, 152.  
 Sammons, Frederick and Jacob, adventure of, 145 et seq.  
 School-houses, first, 165.  
 Schroon, town of, 528.  
     natural characteristics of, 528.  
     early settlement of, 529.  
     supervisors of, 534.  
     churches of, 535.  
     municipal history of, 537.  
     physicians of, 539.  
     South, 539.  
 Schuyler, John, expedition of, 59.  
 Schuyler, Major Peter, 60 et seq.  
 Schuyler, General Philip, 122, 135.  
 Second New York cavalry, 241.  
 Settlements, early, in the county, 160.  
 Seventy-seventh regiment, N. Y. volunteers, 211.  
 Sheep-raising, 190.  
 Sheriffs, 195.  
 Sherman, George, biography of, 686.  
 Simonds, William, biography of, 684.  
 Simmons, Geo. A. 299.  
 Skeene, the elder, 108.  
 Smith, Dr. John, biography of, 673.  
 Smith, Peter, 188.  
 Smith, Gerrit, 188.  
 Soil, early productions of, 172.  
 Soldiers' grants of land, 243.  
 "Sons of Liberty," the, 113.  
     trouble between, and the soldiers, 114.  
 Special judge and surrogate, 196.  
 Split Rock, 31.  
 Stamp act, the, 113.  
     repeal of, 114.  
 Stark, General, at Bennington, 141.  
     as ranger, 76, 78.  
 State arsenal, 275.  
 State senators, 195.  
 Statistics of commerce on Lake Champlain, 266.  
 Steamboats on Lake Champlain, 260 et seq.  
 Street, Alfred B., 33.  
 Stuyvesant, Peter, 55.  
 Sullivan, General, 126.  
 Superintendents of poor, 277.  
 Supreme court, 281.  
     judge, 197.



Surrogates, 196, 287.  
courts, 284.

## T.

Tea, duty on, 115.  
thrown overboard at New York and  
Boston, 116.  
Territorial claims, authority for, 63.  
Territorial limits of county, 324.  
Ticonderoga, capture of by Amherst, 92.  
capture of by Ethan Allen, 117.  
Allen's account of, 118.  
fort at, 72.  
expedition against in 1758, 84.  
town of, 361.  
early history of, 361.  
military history of, 362 et seq.  
Rogers's rock in, legend of, 365.  
description of ruins in, 370.  
natural characteristics of, 377.  
Indian battle grounds in, 381.  
early settlements in, 382 et seq.  
early schools, etc., in, 396.  
lumber interest in, 398.  
iron interest in, 399.  
the graphite industry in, 401.  
agriculture in, 403.  
prominent public events in, 405 et seq.  
list of soldiers of, 411.  
town records of, 413.  
supervisors of, 414.  
present officers of, 414.  
physicians of, 415.  
lawyers of, 416.  
municipal history, 417 et seq.  
village of, 417 et seq.  
the press of, 429.  
schools, 430.  
churches, 435.  
Thacher, Dr. James, journal of, 128 et seq.  
journal of, continued, 136, 139.  
Thirty-eighth regiment N. Y. volunteers, 209.  
Thirty-fourth regiment N. Y. volunteers, 208.  
Thomas, General, 126.  
Towns, formation of, 173, 183.  
Town histories:  
Crown Point, 324.  
Ticonderoga, 361.  
Willsborough, 441.  
Jay, 454.  
Elizabethtown, 466.  
Chesterfield, 493.  
Schroon, 528.  
Essex, 540.  
Lewis, 560.  
Moriah, 566.  
Keene, 609.  
Westport, 615.  
Minerva, 632.  
Wilmington, 637.  
Newcomb, 641.  
St. Armand, 651.  
North Hudson, 656.

Town histories:

North Elba, 660.  
Tories and Indians, course pursued by, in the  
Revolution, 121.  
Traces of Indian occupancy, 33.  
Tract, John Brown's, 19.  
Tracy M. de, 55.  
Traditon, Iroquois, 35.  
Treason in Vermont, 150 et seq.  
Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 69.  
Treaty of Ryswick, 61.  
rights under, 63.  
Treaty of Utrecht, 61.  
Tribal relations of the Iroquois, 36.  
Tryon, Governor, 112, 115, 121.  
Twenty-second regiment N. Y. volunteers,  
204 et seq.

## V.

Van Corlear, Arent, 56.  
Vandreuil, 77.  
Verrazzani, Jean, 44.  
Volunteers, official action concerning, 198.  
enlistments of, 203.  
companies of, 203.

## W.

Walpole, Robert, 65.  
War, declaration of, between England and  
France in 1744, 66.  
party, first, on Lake George, 60.  
French and English, 1756, 76.  
of 1812, 175 et seq.  
Queen Anne's, 61.  
Washington, General George, 120.  
plan of, to capture Quebec, 123, 135.  
Water system and drainage, 21.  
Watson, W. C., 23, 33, 44-46, 48, 50, 51, 53,  
56, 58, 59, 64, 65, 71-73, 75-78, 80,  
83, 85, 89, 91-93, 97-103, 105, 108,  
109, 126, 132, 137, 156-158, 190, 197,  
259, 270, 277, 288, 443, 494, 505,  
506, 522 et seq., 532.  
Webb, General, 79.  
pusillanimous conduct of, 80.  
Westport, town of, 615.  
natural characteristics of, 615.  
early settlers in, 615.  
records of, 616.  
supervisors of, 618.  
municipal history of, 618.  
press of, 619.  
physicians of, 622.  
churches of, 623.  
Wadham's mills in, 630.  
Wilderness, the great, 192.  
Williams, Colonel Ephraim, 73.  
death of, 74.  
Wilmington, town of, 637.  
natural characteristics of, 638.  
early settlements in, 639.  
supervisors of, 641.  
Notch, 30.

Willsborough, covenant of people of, 109.  
    early documents of, 110.  
    "Willsborough town book," 99.  
Willsborough, town of, 441.  
    origin of name of, 441.  
    boundaries of, 441.  
    natural characteristics of, 441.  
    resources of, 442.  
    settlement of, 443.

Willsborough, population of, 449.  
    municipal history of, 449.  
    physicians of, 451.  
    churches of, 451.  
Witherbee, Jonathan Gilman, biography of,  
    687.  
Wolfe, General, at Quebec, 94.  
Woodford, Charles W., biography of, 679.  
Wooster, General, 124.











**ESSEX  
COUNTY**

---

**NEW YORK**



KESLEY

COUNTY

AND WIFE











## Date Due

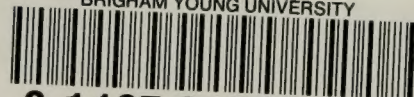
All library items are subject to recall at any time.

[illegible]

Brigham Young University



BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY



3 1197 21359 2733

42C 408



